



ORLANDO  
FVRIOSO  
IN ENGLISH  
HEROICAL VERSE, BY S<sup>r</sup>  
IOHN HARINGT<sup>o</sup>  
OF BATHE KNIGHT. Now  
secondly imprinted the yeere. 1607.

*Principibus placuisse viris non ultima laus est.*

*Horace*



Tho. Coxonius sculp.



A NOTE OF THE MATTERS CONTAINED IN THIS WHOLE VOLUME.

The Epistle dedicatorie to the Queenes Maiestie.

The Apologic.

An aduertisement to the Reader.

The first xxiiij Cantos, or bookes of Orlando Furioso, ending with Orlandos falling mad.

The other xxiiij Cantos of Orlando Furioso, in which he recouered his wits; ending with Bradamants marriage.

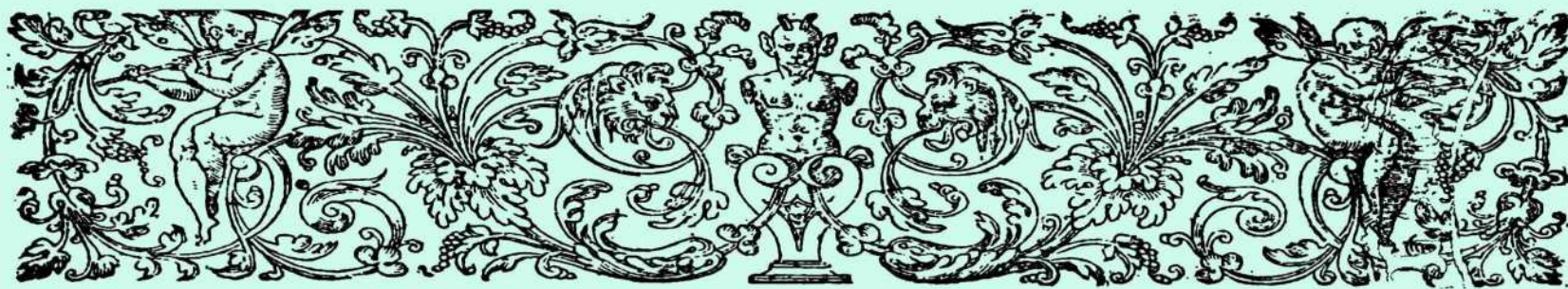
A generall Allegoric of the whole.

The life of Ariosto.

The Table of the booke.

The Tales





TO THE MOST EXCELLENT  
VERTVOVS, AND NOBLE PRINCESS  
ELIZABETH BY THE GRACE OF GOD QVEENE OF  
ENGLAND, FRANCE AND IRELAND, DEFENDER  
OF THE FAITH, &c.



**M**OST Renowned (& most worthy to be most renowned) foueraigne Ladie; I presume to offer to your Highnes this first part of the fruit of the litle garden of my slender skill. It hath bene the longer in growing, and is the lesse worthie the gathering, because my ground is barren & too cold for such daintie Italian fruites, being also perhaps ouershaded with trees of some older growth: but the beams of your blessed countenance, vouchsafing to shine so poore a soile, shal soone disperse all hurtful mists that wold obscure it, and easily dissolue all (whether they be Mel-dews, or Fel-dews) that would starue this shallow set plant. I desire to be brieft, because I loue to be plaine. VVhatsoever I am or can, is your Maiesties. Your gracious fauours haue bene extended in my poore familie euen to the third generation, your bountie to vs and our heirs. VVherefore this (though vnperfect and vnworthie worke) I humbly recommend to that gracious protection, vnder which I enioy all in which I can take ioy. If your Highnesse wil reade it, who dare reiect it? if allow it, who can reprove it? if protect it, what M o m v s barking, or Z o i l v s biting can any way hurt or annoy it? And thus most humbly crauing pardon for this boldnesse, I cease to write, though I will not cease to wish that your high felicities may neuer cease.

Your most humble seruant,

IOHN HARINGTON.





A PREFACE, OR RATHER A BRIEFE  
APOLOGIE OF POETRIE, AND OF THE  
Author and Translator of this Poeme.

**H**e learned *Plutarch* in his Laconicall Apothegmes, tels of a Sophister that made a long and tedious Oration in praise of *Hercules*, and expecting at the end thereof for some great thanks and applause of the hearers, a certaine Lacedemonian demanded him, who had dispraised *Hercules*? Me thinks the like may be now said to me, taking vpon me the defence of Poetrie: for surely if learning in generall were of that account among vs, as it ought to be among all men, and is among wise men, then should this my apologie of Poetrie (the very first nurse and auncient grandmother of all learning) be as vaine and superfluous as was that Sophisters, because it might then be answered and truly answered, that no man disgraced it. But sith we liue in such a time, in which nothing can escape the enuious tooth and backiting tongue of an impure mouth, and wherein euery blind corner hath a squint-eyed *Zoilus*, that can looke aright vpon no maiors doings, (yea sure there be some that will not sticke to call *Hercules* himselfe a dastard, because forlooth he fought with a club and not at the rapier and dagger:) therefore I thinke no man of iudgement will iudge this my labour needlesse, in seeking to remoue away those objections, whether either the malice of those that loue it not, or the folly of those that vnderstand it not, hath deuised against it: for indeed as the old saying is, *Scientia non habet inimicum prater ignorantem*: Knowledge hath no foe but the ignorant. But now because I make account I haue to deale with three sundrie kinds of reprobours, one of those that condemne all Poetrie, which how strong head soeuer they haue) I count but a very weake faction; another of those that loue Poetrie, but not this particular Poeme, of which kind sure there cannot be many: a third of those that can beare with the art, and like of the worke, but will find fault with my not well handling of it, which they may not onely probably, but I doubt too truly do, being a thing as commonly done as said, that where the hedge is lowest, there doth euery man go ouer. Therefore against these three I must arme me with the best defensive weapons I can: and if I happen to giue a blow now and then in mine owne defence, and as good fencers vse to ward and strike at once, I must craue pardon of course, seeing our law allowes that is done *se defendendo*: and the law of nature teacheth *vim vi repellere*. First therefore of Poetrie it selfe, for those few that generally disallow it, might be sufficient to alledge those many that generally approue it, of which I could bring in such an armie, not of souldiers, but of famous Kings and captaines, as not onely the sight, but the very sound of them were able to vanquish and dismay the small forces of our aduersaries. For who would once dare to oppose himselfe against so many *Alexanders, Cæsars, Scipios* (to omit infinite other Princes, both of former and later ages, and of forraine and nearer countries) that with fauour, with studie, with practise, with example, with honors, with gifts; with preferments, with great and magnificent cost, haue encouraged and aduanced Poets and Poetrie? As witnesse the huge Theaters and Amphitheaters, monuments of stupendious charge, made onely for Tragedies and Comedies, the workes of Poets to be represented on: but all these aides and defences I leaue as superfluous, my cause I count so good, and the euidence so open, that I neither need to vse the countenance of any great state to bolster it, nor the cunning of any suttle lawyer to enforce it: my meaning is plainly  
and



### *An Apologie of Poetrie.*

and *bona fide*, confessing all the abuses that can truly be objected against some kind of Poets, to shew you what good use there is of Poetrie. Neither do I suppose it to be greatly be-  
houefull for this purpose, to trouble you with the curious definitions of a Poet and Poesie, and with the subtil distinctions of their sundrie kinds, nor to dispute how high and super-naturall the name of a Maker is, so christned in English by that vnknowne Godfather, that this last yeare saue one, viz. 1589. set forth a booke, called the Art of English Poetrie: and least of all do I purpose to bestow any long time to argue, whether *Plato*, *Zenophon* and *E-rasmus*, writing fictions and dialogues in prose, may iustly be called Poes; or whether *Lucan* writing a storie in verse be an Historiographer, or whether Master *Faire* translating *Virgil*, Master *Golding* translating *Ouids* Metamorphosis, and my selfe in this worke that you see, be any more then versifiers, as the same *Ignoto* termeth all translators. for as for all, or the most part of such questions, I will referre you to Sir *Philip Sidneys* Apologie, who doth han-dle them right learnedly, or to the forenamed treatise, where they are discoursed more large-ly, and where, as it were a whole receipt of Poetrie is prescribed, with so many new named fi-gures, as would put me in great hope in this age to come would breed many excellent Po-ets, saue for one obseruation that I gather out of the very same booke. For though the poore gentleman laboreth greatly to proue, or rather to make Poetrie an art, and reciteth as you may see in the plurall number, some pluralities of patternes, and parcels of his owne Poe-trie, with diuers peeces of Partheniads and hymnes in praise of the most praise-worthy: yet whatsoeuer he would proue by all these, sure in my poore opinion he doth proue nothing more plainely, then that which *M. Sidney* and all the learned sort that haue written of it do pronounce, namely that it is a gift and not an art; I say he proueth it, because making himselfe and many others so cunning in the art, yet he sheweth himself so slender a gift in it, deseruing to be commended as *Martiall* praiseth one that he compares to *Tully*:

*Carmina quod scribis, musis & Apolline nullo  
Laudari debes, hoc Ciceronis habes.*

But to come to the purpose, and to speake after the phrase of the common sort that terme all that is written in verse Poetrie, and rather in scorne then in praise, bestow the name of a Poet on euery base rimer and ballad-maker. this I say of it, and I thinke I say truly, that there are many good lessons to be learned out of it, many good examples to be found in it, many good uses to be had of it, and that therefore it is not, nor ought not to be despised by the better sort, but so to be studied and employed, as was intended by the first writers and deu-isers thereof, which is to soften and polish the hard and rough dispositions of men, and make them capab<sup>le</sup> of vertue and good discipline.

I cannot denie but to vs that are Christians, in respect of the high end of all, which is the health of our soules, not onely Poetrie, but all other studies of Philosophie, are in a man-ner vaine and superfluous: yea (as the wise man saith) whatsoeuer is vnder the sunne is va-nitie of vanities, and nothing but vantie. But sith we liue with men and not with saints, and because few men can embrace this strict and stoicall diuinitie, or rather indeed, for that the holy Scriptures, in which those high mysteries of our saluation are contained, are a deepe and profound studie, and not subiect to euery weake capacitie, no nor to the highest wits and iudgements, except they be first illuminate by Gods spirit, or instructed by his teachers and preachers: therefore we do first reade some other authors, making them as it were a loo-king-glasse to the eyes of our mind; and then after we haue gathered more strength, we enter into profounder studies of higher mysteries, hauing first as it were enabled our eyes by long beholdi<sup>ng</sup> the sunne in a bason of water, at last to looke vpon the sunne it selfe. So we reade how great *Moses*, whose learning and sanctitie is so renowned o-uer all nations, was first instructed in the learning of the *Egyptians*, before he came to that high contemplation of God and familiaritie (as I may so terme it) with God. So the notable Prophet *Daniel* was brought vp in the learning of the *Chaldeans*, and made that



## *An Apologie of Poetrie.*

the first step of his higher vocation to be a Prophet. If then we may by the example of two such speciall seruants of God, spend some of our yong yeares in studies of humanitie, what better and more sweet study is there for a yong man then Poetrie? specially Heroicall Poesie, that with her sweete statelineffe doth erect the mind, and lift it vp to the consideration of the highest matters; and allureth them, that of themselues would otherwise doth them, to take and swallow and digest the wholesome precepts of Philosophie, and many times euen of the true Diuinitie. Wherefore *Plutarch* hauing written a whole treatise of the praise of *Homers* workes, and another of reading Poets, doth begin this latter with this comparison, that as men that are sickly and haue weake stomackes or daintie tastes, do many times thinke that flesh most delicate to eate, that is not flesh, and those fishes that be not fish: so yong men (saith he) do like best that Philosophie that is not Philosophie, or that is not deliuered as Philosophie: and such are the pleasant writings of learned Poets, that are the popular Philosophers and the popular Diuines. Likewise *Tasso* in his excellent worke of *Ierusalem Liberato*, likeneth Poetrie to the Physicke that men giue vnto little children when they are sicke: his verse is this in Italian, speaking to God with a pretie Prosopopeia:

*Plutarch de  
audiendis  
Poetis.*

*Tasso. Canio 1.  
stasse 3.*

*Sai, che la corre il mondo, oue piu versi  
Di sue dolcezze, il lusingier Parnaso:  
E che 'l vero condito in molli versi,  
I piu schiui allettando ha persuaso  
Così al egro fanciul porgiamo asperso  
Di soau liquor gli Orli del vaso  
Succhi amari ingannato in tanto ei bene  
E dal inganno suo vita receue.*

*Thou knowst, the wanton worldlings euer runne  
To sweete Parnassus fruites, how otherwhile  
The truth well sawe d with pleasant verse hath wome  
Most squeamish stomackes with the sugred stile:  
So the sicke child that potions all doth shunne,  
With comfets and with sugar we beguile,  
And cause him take a wholesome sowre receit,  
He drinckes, and saues his life with such deceit.*

This is then that honest fraud, in which (as *Plutarch* saith) he that is deceiued is wiser then he that is not deceiued, and he that doth deceiue, is honeste then he that doth not deceiue.

*Agrippa de  
vanitate scien-  
tiarum. cap. 4.*

*Four obiectiōs  
against Poetry.*

But briefly to answer to the chiefe obiections, *Cornelius Agrippa*, a man of learning and authoritie not to be despised, maketh a bitter inuectiue against Poets and Poesie, and the summe of his reproofe of it is this (which is all that can with any probabilitie be said against it): That it is a nurse of lies, a pleaser of fooles, a breeder of dangerous errors, and an inticet to wantonnesse. I might here warne those that will vrg this mans authoritie to the disgrace of Poetrie, to take heed (of what calling soeuer they be) least with the same weapon that they thinke to giue Poetrie ablow, they giue themselues a maim. For *Agrippa* taketh his pleasure of greater matters then Poetrie: I maruell how he durst do it, saue that I see he hath done it, he hath spared neither myters nor scepters. The courts of Princes, where vertue is rewarded, iustice maintained, oppressions releued, he calls them a Colledge of Giants, of tyrants, of oppressors, warriors: the most noble sort of noble men, he termeth cursed, bloudie, wicked, and sacrilegious persons. Noble men (and vs poore Gentlemen) that thinke to borrow praise of our auncestors deserts and good fame, he affirmeth to be a race of the sturdier sort of knaues, and licencious liuers. Treasurers and other great officers of the common wealth, with graue counsellors, whose wise heads are the pillars of the state, he affirmeth generally to be robbers and peelers of the realme, and priuie traitors that sell their Princes fauours, and rob wel-deseruing seruitors of their reward.



## *An Apologie of Poetrie.*

I omit as his *peccadilia*, how he nicknameth priests saying, for the most part they are hypocrites; lawiers, saying they are all theeves; phisitians, saying they are many of them murderers: so as I thinke it were a good motion, and would easily passe by the consent of the three estates, that this mans authoritie should be vtterly aduihilated, that dealeth so hardly and vniustly with all sorts of professions. But for the reiecting of his writings, I refer it to others that haue power to do it, and to condemne him for a generall libeller, but for that he writeth against Poetrie, I meane to speake a word or two in refuting thereof. And first for lying, I might if I list excuse it by the rule of *Poeticalicentia*, and claime a priueledge giuen to Poetrie, whose art is but an imitation (as *Aristotle* calleth it) and therefore are allowed to faine what they list, according to that old verse,

*Answer to the  
first of lying.*

*Iuridicis, Erebo, fisco, fas viuere raptis,  
Militibus, medicis, tortori, occidere Ludo est:  
Mentiri Astronomis, pictoribus atque Poetis.*

Which because I count it without reason, I will English it without rime.

*Lawyers, Hell, and the Checquer are allowed to liue on spoile,  
Souldiers, Phisitians, and hangmen make a sport of murder,  
Astronomers, Painters, and Poets may lye by authoritie.*

Thus you see, that Poets may ye if they list *Cum priuilegio*: but what if they lye least of all other men? what if they lye not a all? then I thinke that great slaunder is verie vniustly raised vpon them. For in my opinion they are said properly to lye, that affirme that to be true that is false: and how other arts can free themselues from this blame, let them look that professe them: but Poets neuer affirming any for true, but presenting them to vs as fables and imitations, cannot lye though they would: and because this obiection of lyes is the chiefeft, and that vpon which the rest be grounded, I wil stand the longer vpon the clearing thereof.

The ancient Poets haue indeed wrapped as it were in their writings diuers and sundrie meanings, which they call the fences or mytteries thereof. First of all for the literall sence (as it were the vtmost barke or ryne) they set downe in manner of an historie, the acts and notable exploits of some persons worthie memorie; then in the same fiction, as a second rine and somewhat more fine, as it were nearer to the pith and marrow, they place the Morall sence, profitable for the actiue life of man, approuing vertuous actions, and condemning the contrarie. Manie times also vnder the selfesame words they comprehend some true vnderstanding of naturall Philosophie, or sometime of politike gouernement, and now and then of diuinitie: and these same fences that comprehend so excellent knowledge we call the Allegorie, which *Plutarch* defineth to be when one thing is told, and by that another is vnderstood. Now let any man iudge, if it be a matter of meane art or wit, to containe in one historicall narration either true or fained, so many, so diuerse, and so deepe conceits: but for making the matter more plaine I will alledge an example thereof.

*Perseus* sonne of *Iupiter* is fained by the Poets to haue slaine *Gorgon*, and after that conquest atchieued, to haue flowne vp to heauen. The Historicall sence is this, *Perseus* the sonne of *Iupiter*, by the participation of *Iupiters* vertues that were in him; or rather comming of the stock of one of the kings of Crete, or Athens so called; slue *Gorgon* a tyrant in that countrey (*Gorgon* in greeke signifieth earth) and was for his vertuous parts exalted by men vp into heauen. Morally it signifieth thus much, *Perseus* a wise man, sonne of *Iupiter* endewed with vertue from aboue, slayeth sinne and vice, a thing base and earthly; signified by *Gorgon*, and so mounteth to the skie of vertue: It signifies in one kinde of Allegorie thus much the mind of man being gotten by God, and so the childe of God, killing and conquishing the earthlinesse of this Gorgonicall nature, ascendeth vp to the vnderstanding of heauenly things, of high things, of eternall things, in which contemplation consisteth the perfection of man: this is the natural allegorie, because man, one of

*Ouids Meta-  
morph. 4.*



## *An Apologie of Poetrie.*

the chiefe works of nature : It hath also a more high and heavenly Allegorie , that the heavenly nature, daughter of *Iupiter*, procuring with her continuall motion, corruption and mortalitie in the inferiour bodies , leuered it selfe at last from these earthly bodies, and flew vp on high, and there remaineth for euer. It hath also another Theologicall Allegorie, that the angelicall nature , daughter of the most high God the creator of all things ; killing and ouercomming all bodily substance, signified by *Gorgon*, ascended into heauen : the like infinite Allegories I could picke out of other Poeticall fictions , saue that I would auoid tediousnesse. It sufficeth me therefore to note this , that the men of greatest learning and highest wit in the auncient times , did of purpose couer these deepe mysteries of learning , and as it were couer them with the veile of fables and verse for sundrie causes : one cause was , that they might not be rashly abused by prophane wits, in whom science is corrupted , like good wine in a bad vessell : another cause why they wrote in verse, was conseruation of the memorie of their precepts , as we see yet the generall rules almost of euerie art , not so much as husbandrie , but they are ofner recited and better remembered in verse then in prose : another , and a principall cause of all , is to be able with one kinde of meate and one dish ( as I may so call it ) to feed diuers tastes. For the weaker capacities will feed themselues with the pleasantnesse of the historie and sweetnes of the verse , some that haue stronger stomackes will as it were take a further tast of the Morall sence , a third sort more high conceited then they , will digest the Allegorie : so as indeed it hath bene thought by men of verie good iudgement , such manner of Poeticall writing was an excellent way to preserue all kinde of learning from that corruption which now it is come to since they left that mysticall writing of verse. Now though I know the example and authoritie of *Aristotle* and *Plato* be still vrged against this , who tooke to themselues another manner of writing : first I may say indeed that lawes were made for poore men , and not for Princes , for these two great Princes of Philosophie, brake that former allowed manner of writing , yet *Plato* still preserued the fable , but refused the verse. *Aristotle* though reiecting both , yet retained still a kinde of obscuritie, insomuch he answered *Alexander* , who reprooued him in a sort , for publishing the sacred secrets of Philosophie , that he had set forth his bookes in a sort , and yet not se them forth ; meaning that they were so obscure that they would be vnderstood of few , except they came to him for instructions ; or else without they were of verie good capacitie and studious of Philosophie. But ( as I say ) *Plato* howsoeuer men would make him an enemy of Poetrie ( because he found indeed iust fault with the abuses of some comicall Poets of his time , or some that sought to set vp new and strange religions ) yet you see he kept still that principall part of Poetrie , which is fiction and imitation ; and as for the other part of Poetrie which is verse, though he vsed it not , yet his maister *Socrates* euen in his old age wrote certaine verses , as *Plutarke* testifieth : but because I haue named the two parts of Poetrie , namely inuention or fiction, and verse , let vs see how well we can authorise the vse of both these. First for fiction , against which as I told before , many inueigh , calling it by the foule name of lying , though notwithstanding , as I then said, it is farthest from it : *Demosthenes* the famous and renowned Orator , when he would perswade the Athenians to warre against *Philip* , told them a solemne tale how the Volues on a time sent Ambassadors to the sheepe, offering them peace if they would deliuer vp the dogs that kept their folds , with all that long circumstance ( needlesse to be repeated ) by which he perswaded them far more strongly then if he should haue told them in plaine termes , that *Philip* sought to bereaue them of their chiefe bulwarks & defences, to haue the better abilitie to ouerthrow them. But what need we fetch an authority so far off from heathen authors, that haue many neerer hand both in time and in place? Bishop *Fisher* a but Prelat ( though I do not praise his Religion ) when he was assaid by king *Henrie* the eight for his good will and assent for the suppression of Abbyes , the king alledging that he would but take away the superfluties, and let the substance stand still, or at least see it conuerted to better

and



*An Apologie of Poetrie.*

and more godly vses : the graue Bishop answered it in this kinde of Poeticall patable : He said there was an axe that wanting a helue came to a thicke and huge ouergrown wood, and belought some of the great okes in that wood, to spare him so much timber as to make him a handle or helue, promising that if he might finde that fauour, he would in recompence thereof, haue great regard in preserving that wood, in pruning the branches, in cutting away the vnprofitable and superfluous boughes; in paring away the briers and thornes that were combersome to the fayre trees, and making it in fine a groue of great delight and pleasure: but when this same axe had obtained his sute, he so laid about him, and so pared away both timber and top and loe, that in short space of a woodland he made it a champion, and made her liberalitie the instrument of her ouerthrow.

Now though this Bishop had no very good successe with his parable, yet it was so farre from being counted a lye, that it was plainly seene soone after that the same axe did both hew downe those woods by the roots, and pared him off by the head, and was a peece of Prophecie, as well as a peece of Poetrie: and indeed Prophets and Poets haue bene thought to haue a great affinitie, as the name *Vates* in Latin doth testifie. But to come againe to this manner of fiction or parable, the Prophet *Nathan*, reprouing king *David* for his great sinne of adulterie and murther, doth he not come to him with a pretie parable, of a poore man and his lambe that lay in his bosome, and eat of his bread, and the rich man that had whole flocks of his owne would needs take it from him? In which as it is euident it was but a parable, so it were vnreuerent and almost blasphemous to say it was a lye. But to go higher, did not our Sauour himselfe speake in parables? as that deuine parable of the sower, that comfortable parable of the Prodigall soune, that dreadfull parable of *Dives* and *Lazarus*, though I know of this last, many of the fathers hold that it is a storie indeed, and no parable. But in the first it is manifest, that he that was all holinesse, all wisdom, all truth, vsed parables, and euermuch as discreet Poets vse, where a good and honest and wholsome Allegorie is hidden in a pleasant and pretie fiction, and therefore for that part of Poetrie of Imitation, I thinke no body will make any question, but it is not onely allowable, but godly and commendable, if the Poets ill handling of it doe not marre and peruert the good vse of it. The other part of Poetrie, which is Verse, as it were the clothing or ornament of it, hath many good vses; of the helpe of memorie I spake somewhat before; for the words being couched together in due order, measure, and number, one doth as it were bring on another, as myselfe haue often proued, and so I thinke do many beside, (though for my owne part I can rather boast of the marring a good memorie, then of hauing one,) yet I haue euermuch found, that Verse is easier to learne, and farre better to preserve in memorie, then is prose. Another speciall grace in Verse is the forcible manner of phrase, in which if it be well made, it farre excelleth loose speech or prose: a third is the pleasure and sweetenesse to the eare, which makes the discourse pleasant vnto vs often time when the matter it selfe is harsh and vnacceptable; for my owne part I was neuer yet so good a husband, to take any delight to heare one of my ploughmen tell how an acre of wheat must be fallowd and twyfallowd, and how cold land should be burned, and how fruitfull land must be well harrowed but when I heare one read *Virgil* where he saith:

*Sape etiam steriles incendere profuit agros,  
Atq; leuem stipulam crepitantibus vrere flammis.  
Sine inde occultas vires & pabula terra  
Pinguia concipiunt; sine illis omne per ignem.  
Excoquitur vitium, atq; exsudat inutilis humor, &c.*

And after.

*Mulum adeo, rastris glebas qui frangit inertes  
Viminea q; trahit crates, iuuat arua.*

With many other lessons of homely husbandrie, but deliuered in so good Verse that me

Two parts of  
Poetrie,  
Imitation or  
invention, and  
Verse.



## An Apologie of Poetrie.

thinkes all that while I could find in my heart to drive the plough. But now for the authoritie of Verse, if it be not sufficient to say for them, that the greatest Philosophers, and, grauest Senatours that euer were, haue vsed them both in their speeches and in their writings, that precepts of all Arts haue beene deliuered in them, that verse is as auncient a writing as prose, and indeed more auncient, in respect that the oldest workes extant be verse, as *Orpheus*, *Linus*, *Hesiodus*, and others beyond memorie of man, mention almost of historie; if none of these will serue for the credit of it, yet let this serueth that some part of the Scripture was written in verse, as the Psalmes of *Dauid*, and certaine other songs of *Deborah*, of *Salomon* and others, which the learnedest diuines do affirme to be verse, and find that they are in meeter, though the rule of the Hebrew verse they agree not on. Sufficeth it me onely to proue that by the authoritie of sacred Scriptures, both parts of Poesie, inuention or imitation, and verse are allowable, and consequently that great obiection of lying is quite taken away and refuted. Now the second obiection is pleasing of fooles; I haue already shewed, how it displeaseth not wise men, now if it haue this vertue to, to please the fooles, and ignorant, I wold thinke this an article of prayse not of rebuke: wherefore I confesse that it pleaseth fooles, and so pleaseth them, that if they marke it and obserue it well, it will in time make them wise, for in verse is both goodnesse and sweetnesse, Rubarb and Sugercandie, the pleasant and the profitable: wherefore as *Horace* sayth, *Omne tulit punctum qui miscuit utile dulci*, he that can mingle the sweete and wholsome, the pleasant and the profitable, he is indeed an absolute good writer, & such be Poets, if any be such, they present into vs a prettie tale, able to keepe a childe from play, and an old man from the chimnie corner: Or as the same *Horace* saith, to a couetous man:

*Tantalus à labris sitiens fugientia captae  
Flumina, quid rides? mutato nomine de te  
Fabula narratur.*

One tels a couetous man a tale of *Tantalus*, that sits vp to the chinne in water, and yet is plagued with thirst. This signifies the selfesame man to whom the tale is told, that wallows in plentie, and yet his miserable minde barres him of the vse of it: As my selfe knew and I am sure many remember Iustice *Randall* of London, a man passing impotent in body but much more in mind, that leauing behind him a thousand pounds of gold in a chest full of old boots and shoes, yet was so miserable, that at my Lord Maiors dinner they say he would put vp a widgeon for his supper, and many a good meale he did take of his franke neighbour the widdow *Penne*: but to come to the matter, this same great sinne that is laide to betrie of pleasing fooles, is sufficiently answered if it be worth the answering. Now for the breeding of errors which is the third Obiection, I see not why it should breed any when none is bound to beleue that they write, nor they looke not to haue their fictions beleued in the literall sence, and therefore he that well examine whence errors spring, shall finde the writers of prose & not of verse, the authors and maintainers of them, and this point I count so manifest as it needes no prooffe. The last reproofe is lightnes and wantonnes, this is indeed an Obiection of some importance, sith as Sir *Philip Sidney* confesseth, *Cupido* is crept euen into the Heroicall Poemes, & consequently maketh that also, subiect to this reproofe: I promised in the beginning not partially to praise Poesie, but plainly and honestly to confesse that, that might truly be objected against it, and if any thing may be, sure it is this lasciuiousnesse; yet this I will say, that of all kinde of Poesie, the Heroicall is least infected therewith. The other kindes I will rather excuse then defend, though of all the kindes of Poesie it may be sayd, where any scurrilitie and lewdnesse is found, there Poetrie doth not abuse vs, but writers haue abused Poetrie. And brieflie to examine all the kindes: First the Tragicall is meere free from it, as representing onely the cruell and lawlesse proceedings of Princes, mouing nothing but pitie or detestation. The Comickall (whatsoeuer foolish play makers make it offend in this kind) yet being rightly vsed, it represents them

Answer to  
the second ob-  
iection.

Answer to  
the third.



*An Apologie of Poetrie.*

so as to make the vice scorned and not embraced. The Satyrike is meerly free from it, as being wholly occupied in mannerly and couerly reproving of all vices. The Elegie is stil mourning: as for the Pastorall with the Sonnet or Epigramme, though many times they saue of wantonnesse and loue and toying, and now and then breaking the rules of Poetrie, go into plaine scurrilitie, yet euen the worst of them may be not ill applied; and are, I must confesse, too delightfull, in so much a *Martial* saith,

*Laudant i. a. sed ista legunt.*

And in another place,

*Erubui posuitq. meum Lucretia librum:*

*Sed coram Bruto. Brute recede, leget.*

*Lucretia* (by which he signifies any chaste matron) will blush and be ashamed to reade a lasciuious booke: but how? not except *Brutus* be by, that is, if any graue man should see her reade it; but if *Brutus* turne his backe, she will to it againe and reade it all. But to end this part of my Apologie, as I count and conclude Heroicall Poesie allowable, and to be read and studied without all exception: so may I boldly say, that Tragedies well handled, be a most worthy kind of Poesie; that Comedies may make men see and shame at their owne faults, that the rest may be so written and so read, as much pleasure and some profite may be gathered out of them. And for mine owne part, as *Scaliger* writeth of *Virgil*, so I beleue, that the reading of a good Heroica Poeme may make a man both wiser and honest: and for Tragedies, to omit other famous Tragedies, that that which was played at Saint *Iohns* in Cambridge, o *hard* the third, would moue (I thinke) *Phalaris* the tyrant, and terrific all rannous mind men, from following their foolish ambitious humors, seeing how his ambition kill his brother, his nephewes, his wife, beside infinite others; and last of all after a shrt and troublesome raigne, to end his miserable life, and to haue his bodie harried after his death. Then for Comedies: how full of harmelesse mirth is our Cambridge *Pedantius*? and the Oxford *Bellum Grammaticale*? or to speake of a London Comedie, how much good matter, yea and matter of state, is there in that Comedie called the play of the Cards. in which it is shewed how foure Parasiticall knaues robbe the foure principall vocations of the Realme, *videl.* the vocation of Souldiers, Schollers, Merchants and Husbandmen. Of which Comedie I cannot forget the saying of a notable wise counsellor that is now dead, who when some (to sing *Placebo*) aduised that it should be forbidden, because it was somewhat too plaine, and indeed as the old saying is, *sooth boord is no boord*, yet he would haue it allowed, adding it was fit that *they which do that they should not, should heare that they would*. Finally, if Comedies may be so made as the beholders may be bettered by them, without all doubt all other sorts of Poetrie may bring their profite as they do bring delight; and if all, then much more the chiefe of all, which by all mens consent is the Heroicall. And thus much be said for Poesie.

*Sir Frances  
VValingham*

Now for this Poeme of *Orlando Furioso*, which as I haue heard, hath bene disliked by some, though by few of any wit or iudgement, it followes that I say somewhat in defence theréof, which I will do the more moderatly and coldly, by how much the paines I haue taken in it (rising as you may see to a good volume) may make me seeme a more partiall praifer. Wherefore I will make choise of some other Poeme that is allowed and approued by all men, and a little compare them together: and what worke can serue this turne so fitly as *Virgils Aeneidos*, whom aboue all other it seemeth my author doth follow, as appeares both by his beginning and ending. The one begins,

*Arma virumq. cano.*

The other,

*E. donne I canallieri l' arme gli amor*

*Le cortesie l' audace imprese io canto.*

*Virgil* ends with the death of *Turnus*:

*Vitaq. cum gemitu fugit indignata sub umbra*

*The second part  
of the Apology*



## *An Apologie of Poetrie.*

*Ariosto* ends with the death of *Rodomont*,

*Bestemiando fugi l'alma sdegnosa  
Che fu sì altero al mondo e sì orgogliosa.*

*Virgil* extolleth *Aeneas* to please *Augustus*, of whose race he was thought to come. *Ariosto* praiseth *Rogero* to the honour of the house of *Este* *Aeneas* hath his *Dido* that retaineth him: *Rogero* hath his *Alcina*: finally lest I should note eue y part, there is nothing of any speciall obseruation in *Virgil*, but my author hath with great elicite imitated it, so as whosoever will allow *Virgil*, must *ipso facto* (as they say) admit *Ariost* Now of what account *Virgil* is reckned, and worthily reckned, for ancient times witnesseth *Augustus* *Cæsars* verse of him:

*Ergone supremis potuit vox improba verbis  
Tam dirum mandare nefas? &c.*

Concluding thus,

*Laudetur, placeat, vigeat, relegatur, ametur.*

This is a great praise, comming from so great a Prince. For later times, to omit *Scaliger*, whom I recited before, that affirmeth the reading of *Virgil* may make a man honest and verueous: that excellent Italian Poet *Dant* professeth plainly, that when he wandred out of the right way (meaning thereby, when he liued fondly and loosely) *Virgil* was the first that made him looke into himselfe, and reclaime himselfe from that same dangerous and leud course. But what need we further witnesse, do we not make our children reade it commonly before they can vnderstand it, as a testimonie that we do generally approue it? and yet we see old men studie it, as a prooffe that they do specially admire it: so as one writes ery pretily, that children do wade in *Virgil*, and yet strong men do swim in it.

Now to apply this to the praise of mine author, as I said before, so I say whuer is praise-worthy in *Virgil*, is plentifully to be found in *Ariosto*, and some things that *Virgil* could not haue for the ignorance of the age he liued in, you find in my author, sprinkled ouer all his worke, as I will very briefly note, and referre you for the rest to the booke it selfe. The deuout and Christian demeanor of *Charlemaine* in the 14. booke with his prayer,

*Non voglia tua bonta per mio fallire  
Ch'l tuo popol fidele habbia a patire, &c.*

And in the beginning of the 17. booke that would besecme any pulpit:

*Il giusto Dio quando i peccati nostri.*

But aboue all, that in the 41. booke of the conuerfion of *Rogero* to the Christian Religion, where the Hermit speaketh to him, containing in effect a full instruction against presumption and despaire, which I haue set downe thus in English,

*Now (as I said) this wise that Hermit spoke,  
And part doth comfort him, and part doth checke:  
He blameth him that in that pleasant yoke  
He had so long deferd to put his necke,  
But did to wrath his maker still prouoke:  
And did not come at his first call and becke,  
But still did hide himselfe away from God,  
Untill he saw him comming with his rod.  
Then did he comfort him, and make him know,  
That grace is nere denide to such as aske,  
As do the workmen in the Gospell now,  
Receiuing pay alike for diuers taske*

And so after concluding,

*How to Christ he must impute  
The pardon of his sinnes, yet nere the later  
He told him he must be baptiz'd in water,*



## An Apologie of Poetrie.

The and infinite places full of Christen exhortation, doctrine and example, I could quote out of the book, saue that I hasten to an end, and it would be needles to those that will not read them in the booke it selfe, and superfluous to those that will: but most manifest it is and not to be denyed, that in this point my author is to be preferred before all the ancient Poets, in which are mentioned so many false Gods, and of them so many fowle deeds, their contentions, their adulteries, their incest, as were both obscenous in recitall, and hurtfull in example: though indeed those whom they tearmed Gods, were certaine great Princes that committed such enormous fautes, as great Princes in late ages (that loue still to be cald Gods of the earth) do often commit: but now it may be and is by some obiected, that although he write Christianly in some places, yet in other some, he is too lasciuious, as in that of the bawdy Frier, in *Alcina* and *Rogeros* copulation, in *Anselmus* his *Giptian*, in *Richardetto* his metamorphosis, in mine harts tale of *Astolfo*, and some few places beside; alas if this be a fault, pardon him this one fault; though I doubt to many of you (gentle readers) will be too exorable in this point; yea me thinks I see some of you searching already for these places of the book, and you are halfe offended that I haue not made some directions that you might finde out and read them immediatly. But I beseech you stay a while, and as the Italian saith *Pian piano*, sayre and softly, and take this caueat with you, to read them as my author meant them, to be read detestation and not delectation: remember when you read of the old lecherous Frier, that a fornicator is one of the thing that God hateth. When you read of *Alcina*, thinke how *Ioseph* fled from his inticing mistres; when you light on *Anselmus* tale, learne to loath beastly couetousnes, when on *Richardetto*, know that sweet meate will haue sowre sawce, when on mine harts tale (if you will follow my counsell) turne ouer the leafe and let it alone, I thinke that lewd tale may bring some men profit, and I haue heard that it is already (and perhaies not vnfitly) termed the comfort of cuckoldes. But as I say, if this be a fault, then *Virgil* committed the same fault in *Dido* and *Aeneas* entertainment: & if some will say, he tels that mannerly and couertly, how will they excuse that, where *Vulcan* was inteated by *Venus* to make an armour for *Aeneas*?

*Dixerat, & niuis hinc atq; hinc diua lacertis  
Cunctantem amplexu molli fouet, ille repente  
Accepit solitam flammam, notusq; per artus  
Intrauit calor. And a little after. Ea verba locutus  
Optatos dedit amplexus placitumq; petiuit  
Coniugis infusus gremio per membra soporem.*

I hope they that vnderstand Latin will confesse this is plaine enough, & yet with modest words & no obscenous phrase: and so I dare take vpon me that in all *Ariosto* (and yet I thinke it is as much as three *Aeneads*,) there is not a word of ribaldry or obscenousnes: farther there is so meet a decorum in the persons of those that speake lasciuiously, as any of iudgement must needs allow; and therefore though I rather craue pardon then prayse for him in this point; yet me thinks I can smile at the finesse of some, that will condemne him, and yet not onely allow, but admire our *Chamcer*, who both in words and sence, incurreth far more the reprehensio of flat scurrilitie, as I could recite many places, not onely in his *Millers tale*, but in the good wife of Bathes tale, & many more, in which onely the decorum he keepes, is that which excuseth it, and maketh it more tolerable. But now whereas some will say, *Ariosto* wanteth art, reducing all heroical Poems vnto the method of *Homer* and certaine precepts of *Aristotle*. For *Homer* I say, that that which was commendable in him to write in that age, the times being changed, would be thought otherwise now, as we see both in phrase & in fashions the world growes more curious each day then other: *Ouid* gaue precepts of making loue, and one way that one should spill wine on the boord & write his mistresse name there with, this was a quaynt cast in that age; but he that should make loue so now, his loue would mocke him for his labour, and count him but a slovenly sutor: and if it be thus chaunged since *Ouids* time, much more since *Homers* time. And yet for *Ariostos* tales that



## *An Apologie of Poetrie.*

imperfections soeuer they finde in this translation, yet taking all together they allow it, or at least wise they reade it, which is a great argument of their liking.

*Sir Thomas Moore* a man of great wisdom and learning, but yet a litle enclined (as good wits are many times) to scoffing, when one had brought him a booke of some shallow discourse, and preassed him very hard to haue his opinion of it, aduised the partie to put it into verse; the plaine me in man in the best maner he could he did so, and a twelue-month after at the least, came with it to *Sir Thomas*, who slightly perusing it, gaue it this *encomium*, that now there was rime in it, but afore it had neither rime nor reason. If any man had ment to serue me so, yet I haue preuented him; for sure I am he shal finde rime in mine, & if he be not voyd of reason he shal finde reason to. Though for the matter, I can challenge no praise, hauing but borrowed it, and for the verse I do challenge none, being a thing that euery body that neuer scarce bayted their horse at the Vniuersitie take vpon them to make. It is possible that if I would haue employed that time that I haue done vpon this, vpon some inuention of mine owne, I could haue by this made it haue risen to a iust volume, and if I would haue done as many spare not to do, flowne verie high with stolen fethers. But I had rather men should see and know that I borrow all, then that I steale any: and I would wish to be called rather one of the not worst translators, then one of the meaner makers. Specially sith the Earle of Surrey, and *Sir Thomas Wyatt*, that are yet called the first refiners of the English tongue, were both translators out of Italian. Now for those that count it such a contemptible and trifling matter to translate, I will but say to them as *M. Bartholomew Clarke* an excellent edm and a right good translator, saith in manner of a prettie challenge, in his preface (as I remember) vpon the Courtier, which booke he translated out of Italian into Latin. Yo (saith he) that thinke it such a toy, lay aside my booke, and take my author in your hand, and trie a leafe or such a matter, and compare it with mine. If I should say so, there would be enow that would quickly put me downe perhaps; but doubtlesse he might boldly say for I thinke none could haue mended him. But as our English prouerbe saith, many talke of *Robin Hood* that neuer shot in his bow, and some correct *Magnificat*, that know not *quid significat*. For my part I will thanke them that will amend any thing that I haue done amisse, nor I haue no such great conceipt of that I haue done, but that I thinke much amisse to be mended; and hauing dealt playnly with some of my plaine dealing friends, to tell me frankly what they heard spoken of it (for indeed I suffered some part of the printed copies to go among my friends, and some more perhaps went against my wil) I was told that these in effect were the faults were found with it. Some graue men misliked that I should spend so much good time on such a trifling worke as they deemed a Poeme to be. Some more nicely, found fault with so many two sillabled and three sillabled rimes. Some (not vnderferuedly) reprobued the fantasticalnes of my notes, in which they say I haue strained my selfe to make mention of some of my kindred and friends, that might verie well be left out. And one fault more there is, which I will tell my selfe, though many would neuer finde it; and that is; I haue cut short some of his Cantos, in leauing out many stauces of them, and sometimes put the matter of two or three stauces into one. To these reproofes I shall pray you gentle and noble Readers with patience heare my defence, and then I will end. For the first reproote, etither it is already excused, or it will neuer be excused; for I haue I thinke sufficiently proued, both the art to be allowable, and this worke to be commendable: yet I will tell you an accident that happen vnto my selfe. When I was entred a prettie way into the translation, about the seventh booke, comming to write that where *Actissa* in the person of *Rogeros Tutor*, comes and reprobues *Rogeros* in the 4. staffe.

*Was it for this, that I in youth thee fed  
With marrow? &c. And againe:  
Is this a meanes, or readie way you trow,  
That other worthie men haue trod before,  
e. A Caesar or a Scipio to grow? &c.*

*Four faults  
found in this  
worke.*

*Answer to the  
first*



*An Apologie of Poetrie.*

imperfections soeuer they finde in this translation, yet taking all together they allow it, or at least wise they reade it, which is a great argument of their liking.

*Sir Thomas Moore* a man of great wisdom and learning, but yet a litle enclined (as good wits are many times) to scoffing, when one had brought him a booke of some shallow discourse, and preassed him very hard to haue his opinion of it, aduised the partie to put it into verse; the plaine man in the best maner he could he did so, and a twelue-month after at the least, came with it to *Sir Thomas*, who slightly perusing it, gaue it this *encomium*, that now there was rime in it, but afore it had neither rime nor reason. If any man had ment to serue me so, yet I haue preuented him; for sure I am he shal finde rime in mine, & if he be not voyd of reason he shal finde reason to. Though for the matter, I can challenge no praise, hauing but borrowed it, and for the verse I do challenge none, being a thing that euery body that neuer scarce bayted their horse at the Vniuersitie take vpon them to make. It is possible that if I would haue employed that time that I haue done vpon this, vpon some inuention of mine owne, I could haue by this made it haue risen to a iust volume, and if I would haue done as many spare not to do, flowne verie high with stolen fethers. But I had rather men should see and know that I borrow all, then that I steale any: and I would wish to be called rather one of the not worst translators, then one of the meaner makers. Specially sith the Earle of Surrey, and *Sir Thomas Wyatt*, that are yet called the first refiners of the English tongue, were both translators out of Italian. Now for those that count it such a contemptible and trifling matter to translate, I will but say to them as *M. Bartholomew Clarke* an excellent English poet, and a right good translator, saith in manner of a prettie challenge, in his *reuerence* (as I remember) vpon the Courtier, which booke he translated out of Italian into Latin. You (saith he) that thinke it such a toy, lay aside my booke, and take my author in your hand, and trie a leate or such a matter, and compare it with mine. If I should say so, there would be grow that would quickly put me downe perhaps; but doubtlesse he might boldly say for I thinke none could haue mended him. But as our English proverbe saith, many talke of *Robin Hood* that neuer shot in his bow, and some correct *Magnificat*, that know not *quid significat*. For my part I will thanke them that will amend any thing that I haue done amisse, nor I haue no such great conceit of that I haue done, but that I thinke much may be mended; and hauing dealt playnly with some of my plaine dealing friends, to tell in frankly what they heard spoken of it (for indeed I suffered some part of the printed copies to go among my friends and some more perhaps went against my wil) I was told that these in effect were the faults were found with it. Some graue men misliked that I should spend so much good time on such a trifling worke as they deemed a Poeme to be. Some more nicely, found fault with so many two sillabled and three sillabled rimes. Some (not vnderferuedly) reproued the fantasticalnes of my notes, in which they say I haue strained my selfe to make mention of some of my kindred and friends, that might verie well be left out. And one fault more there is, which I will tell my selfe, though many would neuer finde it; and that is; I haue cut short some of his Cantos, in leauing out many stauces of them, and sometimes put the matter of two or three stauces into one. To these reproofes I shall pray you gentle and noble Readers with patience heare my defence, and then I wil end. For the first reproofe, etither it is already excused, or it will neuer be excused; for I haue I thinke sufficiently proued, both the art to be allowable, and this worke to be commendable: yet I will tell you an accident that happened vnto my selfe. When I was entred a prettie way into the translation, about the second booke, comming to write that where *Melissa* in the person of *Rogero* Tutor, comes and reproues *Rogero* in the 4. stasse:

*Was it for this, that I in yorthe thee fed  
With marrow? &c. And againe:  
Is this a meane, or readie way you trom,  
That other worthie men haue trod before,  
As Caesar or a Scipio to go*

*Four faults  
found in this  
worke*

*Answer to the  
first.*



## An Apologie of Poetrie.

Samuel Fleming of Kings  
colledge in  
Cambridge.

The second,

The third.

The fourth.

In the life of  
Ariosto.

Straight I began to thinke, that my Tutor, a graue and learned man, and one of a verie austere life, might say to me in like sort, Was it for this, that I read *Aristotle* and *Plato* to you, and instructed you so carefully both in Greek and Latin? to haue you now becom a translator of Italian toyes? But while I thought thus, I was aware, that it was no toy that could put such an honest and serious consideration into my minde. Now for them that finde fault with polysyllable meeter, me thinke they are like those that blame men for putting sugar in their wine, and chide too bad about it, and say they marre all, let end with Gods blessing on their hearts. For indeed if I had knowne their diets, I could haue saued some of my cost, at least some of my paine; for when a verse ended with *ciuillitie*, I could easier after the ancient manner of rime, haue made *see*, or *flee*, or *decree* to answer it, leauing the accent vpon the last syllable, then hunt after three syllabled words to answer it with *facillitie*, *gentillitie*, *tranquillitie*, *hostillitie*, *scurrillitie*, *debillitie*, *agillitie*, *fragillitie*, *nobillitie*, *mobillitie*, which who mislike, may tast lampe oyle with their eares. And as for two syllabled meeters, they be so approoued in other languages, that the French call them the feminine rime, as the sweeter: and the one syllable the masculin. But in a word to answer this, and to make them for euer hold their peaces of this point; *Sir Philip Sidney* not onely vseth them, but affecteth them: *signifie*, *dignifie*; *shamed is*, *named is*, *blamed is*; *hide away*, *bide away* I though if my many blotted papers that I haue made in this kinde, might affoord me authoritie to giue a rule of it, I would say that to part them with a one syllable meeter betweene them, would giue it best grace. For as men vse to sow with the hand and not with the whole sacke, so I would haue the eare fed but not cloyed with these pleasing and sweet falling meeters. For the third reproofe about the notes, sure they were a worke (as I may so call it) of supererogation, and I would wish sometimes they had bin left out, and the rather, if I be in such faire possibilitie to be thought a foole or fantasticall for my labour. True it is, I added some notes to the end of euery Canto, euen as if some of my friends and my selfe reading it together (and so it fell out indeed many times) had after debated vpon them, what had bene most worthie consideration in them, and so oftimes immediatly I set it down. And whereas I make mention here and there of some of mine owne frends and kin, I did it the rather, because *Plutarke* in one place speaking of *Homer*, partly lamenteth, and partly blameth him, that writing so much as he did, yet in none of his workes there was any mention made, or so much as inkling to be gathered of what stocke he was, of what kindred, of what towne, nor saue for his language, of what countrey. Excuse me then if I in a worke that may perhaps last longer than a better thing, and being not ashamed of my kindred, name them here and there to no mans offence, though I meant not to make euerie body so far of my counsell why I did it, till I was told that some person of some reckening noted me of a little vanitie for it: and thus much for that point.

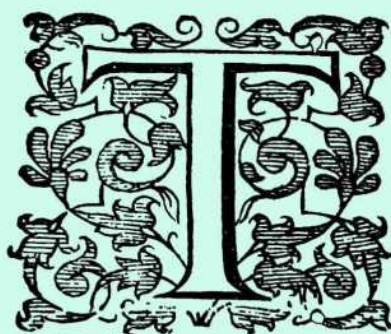
For my omitting and abreuiating some things, either in matters impertinent to vs, or in some too tedious flatteries of persons that we neuer heard of, if I haue done ill, I craue pardon; for sure I did it for the best. But if any being studious of the Italian, would for his better vnderstanding compare them, the first sixe bookes saue a little of the third, will stand him in steed. But yet I would not haue any man except, that I should obserue his phrase so strictly as an interpreter, nor the matter so carefully, as if it had bene a storie, in which to varie were as great a sin, as it were simplicitie in this to go word for word. But now to conclude, I shall pray you all that haue troubled your selues to read this my triple Apologie, to accept my labors, and to excuse my errors, if with no other than at least with the name of youth (which commonly hath need of excuses) and so presuming this pardon to be granted, we shall part good frends. Onely let me intreate you in reading the

booke ensuing, not to do me that iniurie, that a  
Potter did to *Ariosto*.



# AN ADVERTISEMENT TO THE READER BEFORE

HE READE THIS POEME, OF SOME THINGS TO BE OBSERVED,  
as well in the substance of this worke, as also in the setting forth thereof, with the use of the Pictures,  
Table, and annotations to the same annexed.



Here are peradventure many men, and some of those both graue and godly men, that in respect they count all Poetrie as meely tending to wantonnesse and vanitie, will at the very first sight reiect this booke, and not onely not allow, but blame and reprove the trauel taken in setting forth the same in our mother tongue. And surely su h censurers as will condemne without hearing the cause pleaded, I can be ntent to haue them spare the labor in reading, which they thinke I haue lost in writing; and appealing from them, if not to higher at least to more indifferent iudges, namely such as wil vouchsafe to heare what can be spoken in defence of the matter, and then will yeeld (as wise men euer should do) to the stronger reason: I do to them direct this my short aduertisement, which (because all that may reade this booke are not of equall capacities) I will endeour to explaine more plainly, then for the learned sort had haply bene requisite.

And first if any haue this scruple, that it might be hurtfull for his soule or conscience, to reade a booke of Poetry, as though it might alien his mind from vertue and religion, I referre him (beside many other excellent mens writings, both in defence and praise thereof) to a litle brieft treatise in the beginning of this booke, written by me generally in defence of Poemes, and specially of this present worke, which I dare affirme to be neither vicious nor profane, but apt to breed the quite ary effects, if a great fault be not in the readers owne bad disposition.

Secondly I haue in the marginall notes qu ted the apt similitudes, and pithie sentences or adages, with the best descriptions, and the excellent imitations, and he places and authors from whence they are taken.

Further, where diuers stories in this worke seeme in many places abruptly broken off, I haue set directions in the margent, where to find the continuance of euery such storie, though I would not wish any to reade them in that order at the first reading, but if any thinke them worthy the twise reading, then he may the second time not vnconueniently vie it, if the meane matter betweene the so deuided stories (vpon which commonly they depend ben quite out of his memorie.

Alto (according to the Italian maner) I haue in a staffe of eight verses comprehended the contents of euery Book or Canto, in the beginning thereof, which hath two good vies, one to vnderstand the picture the perfecter, the other to remember the storie the better.

As for the pictures, they are all cut in brasse, and most of them by the best workmen in that kind, that haue bi and this many yeares: yet I will not praise them too much, because I gaue direction for their making, and in regard thereof, I may be thought partiall; but this I may truly say, that (for mine owne part) I haue not seene any made in England better, nor (indeed) any of this kind in any booke, except it were a treatise set forth by that profound man master Broughton the last yeare, vpon the Reuelation, in which there are some three or foure e pictures (in octauo) cut in brasse very workmanly. As for other bookes that I haue seene in this Realme, eithe Latine or English with pictures, as Liuie, Gelner, Alciats emblemes, a booke de Spectris in Latine, and in our t gue the Chronicles, the booke of Martyrs, the booke of hauking and hunting, and M. Whitneys excellent Emblemes, yet all their figures are cut in wood, and none in metall, and in that respect inferiour to these, at least (by the old prouerbe) the more cost, the more worship.

The vse of the picture is euident, which is, that (hauing read ouer the booke) you may reade it (as it were a-gaine) in the very picture; and one thing is to be noted, which euery one (haply) will not obserue, namely the perspective in euery figure. For the personages of men, the shapes of horses, and such like, are made large at the bottome, and lesser vpward, as if you were to behold all the same in a plaine, that which is nearest seemes greatest, and the fardest shewes smallest, which is the chiefe art in picture.

If the name of any man, woman, country, towne, horse, or weapon seeme strange to any, I haue m a table where to find it. And in the same table, a direction for the seuerall tales, where to begin and end, those that may conueniently be read single, of which kind there are many, and those not vnpleasant.

Lastly, at the end of euery Book or Canto, because the Reader may take not only delight, but profit in reading, I haue noted in all (as occasion is offered) the Morall, the Historie, the Allegorie, and the Allusion.

Morall, that we may apply it to our owne manners and disposition, to the amendment of the same.

The Historie, both that the true ground the poeme may appeare, (for learned men hold, that a perfect poeme must ground of a truth) (as I shew more at large in another place) as also to explaine some things that are lightly touched by him, as examples of all tites, either of old or of late.

The Allegorie, of some things that ar ely fabulous, yet haue an allegoricall sence, which euery bodie at the first shew cannot perceiue.

The Allusion: of fictions, to be applied to some things done, or written of in times past, as also where it may be a plied without offence to the time present. But these happen in very few bookes.

And this is all that I haue to aduertise the Reader, for if any other notes happen to come after, it is but for want of room in the margent, that they were faine to be put out of their due place. It remaines onely to wish (because I find it will be delightfull to many) that it may be hurtfull to none, lest (if it should) both they and I be called to account for it, where not onely euill workes, but idle words shall be punished.

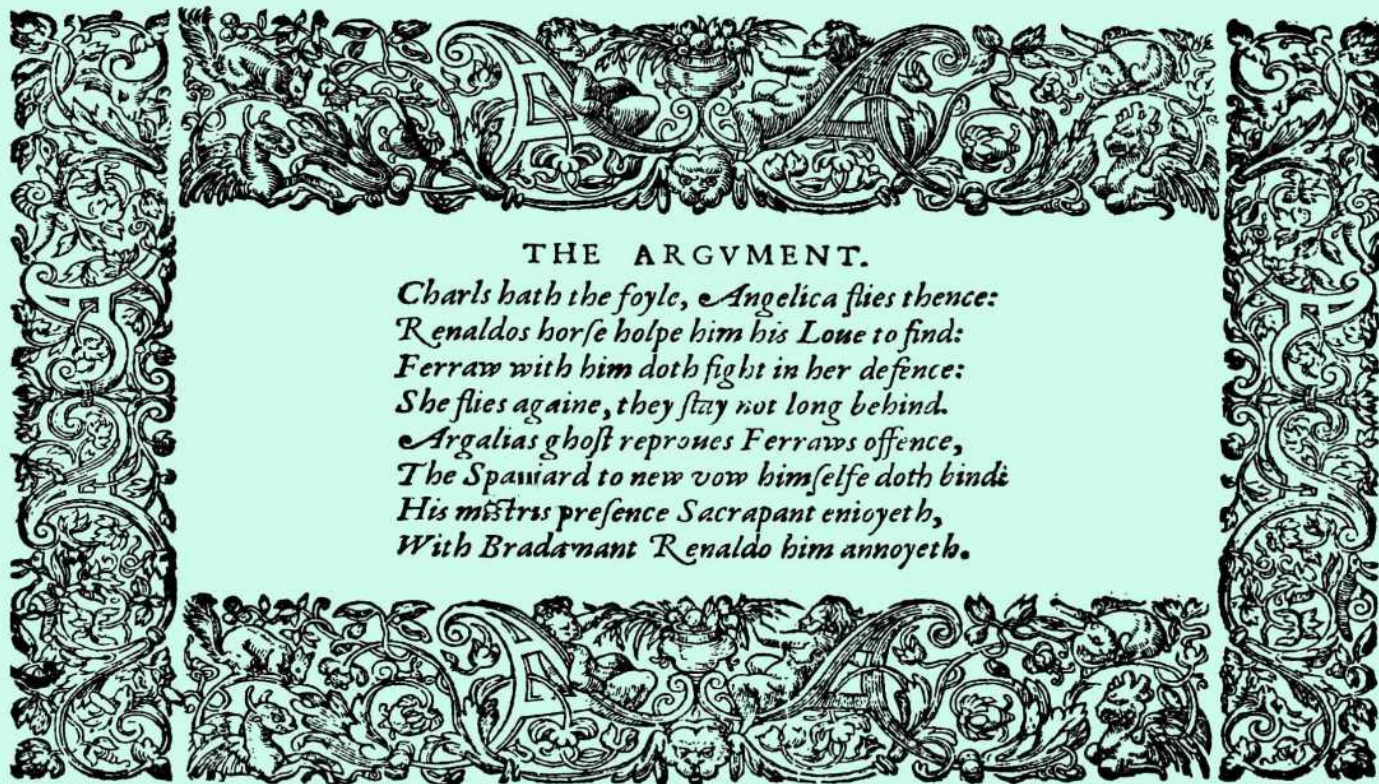
Jo. Harr.







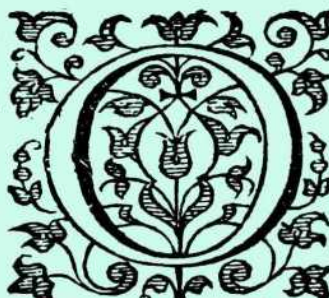
# THE FIRST BOOKE OR CANTO OF ORLANDO FVRIOSO.



## THE ARGVMENT.

*Charls hath the foyle, Angelica flies thence:  
Renaldos horse holpe him his Lone to find:  
Ferraw with him doth fight in her defence:  
She flies againe, they stay not long behind.  
Argalias ghost reprocues Ferraws offence,  
The Spaniard to new vow himselfe doth bind:  
His mistress presence Sacrapant enioyeth,  
With Bradamant Renaldo him annoyeth.*

*his beginning  
ken by mis-  
from t'ir-  
gil, the of his  
Eneads, as  
writing cano.*



*Of Agramant their king, that vovd to wreake  
The death of King Trayano (lately slaine)  
Vpon the Romane Emperour Charlemaine.*

*I will no lesse Orlandos acts declare,  
(A tale in prose ne verse yet sung or sayd)  
Who fell bestraught with loue, a hap most rare,  
To one that earst was counted wise and stayd:  
my sweet Saint b that causeth my like care,  
My slender mule afford some gracious ayd,  
I make no doubt but I shall haue the skill  
As much as I haue promist to fulfill.*

*itress,  
speales  
from the  
ffe.*

*Vouchsafe (O Prince of most renown ed race,  
The ornament and hope of this our time)  
T'accept this gift presented to your grace,  
Ryng your seruant rudely here in rime.  
And though I paper pay and inke, in place  
Of deeper debt, yet take it for no crime:*

*intended  
not to be  
not by the  
7 for to a  
re far more  
way.*

*It may suffice a poore and humble debter,  
To say and if he could it should be better.*

4

*Here shall you find among the worthy peeres,  
Whose praises I prepare to tell in verse,  
Rogeros him from whom of auncient yeeres  
Your princely stems deriued, I reherse:  
Whose noble mind by princely acts appeeres;  
Whose worthy fame euen to the skie doth persee:  
So you vouchsafe my d lowly stile and baile,  
Among your high conceits a little place.*

*d Imitatio of Vir-  
gil to Octavianus:  
Atque hanc sind  
tempora circum  
miser felices hedo-  
ram tibi serpente  
latus.  
e This hath refe-  
rence to a former  
treatise called  
Orlandos loue;  
written by one  
Boyardus.*

*Orlando who long time had e loued deare,  
Angelica the faire: and for her I  
About the world, in nations far and near  
Did high attempts performe and vndertake;  
Returnd with her into the West that yeare,  
That Charles his power against the Turks did make:  
And with the force of Germanie and France,  
Neare Pyren f Alpes his standard did aduance.*

6

*To make the Kings of Affrike and of Spaine,  
Repent their rash attempts and foolish vaunts,  
One hauing brought from Affrike in his traine,  
All able men to carry sword or launce,  
The other mou'd the Spaniards now againe  
To ouerthrow the goodly Realme of Fraunce.  
And hither (as I said) Orlando went,  
But of his comming straight he did repent.*

*f The hills that  
part France and  
Spaine.*

A ij



# THE FIRST BOOKE

7

For here (behold how humane iudgements arr,  
And how the wiser sort are oft mistaken)  
His Ladie whom he guarded had so farr,  
Not had in fights nor dangers great forsaken,  
Without the dint of sword or open warr,  
Amid his friends away from him was taken.  
For *Charles* the great, a valiant Prince and wife,  
Did this to quench a broile that did arise.

8

Betweene *Orlando* and *Renaldo* late,  
There fell about *Angelica* some brall,  
And each of them began the tother hate,  
This Ladies loue had made them both so thrall.  
But *Charles* who much mislikes that such debate  
Betweene such friends should rise, on cause so small,  
To *Namus* of Bauier in keeping gaue her,  
And suffred neither of them both to haue her.

*Namus Duke  
of Bauier.*

9

But promist he would presently bestow  
The damsell faire, on him that in that fight,  
The plainest prooue should of his prowesse show,  
And danger most the Pagans with his might,  
But (ay the while) the Christens take the blow,  
Their souldiers slaine, their Captaines put to flight,  
The Duke himselve a prisner there was taken,  
His tent was quite abandond and forsaken.

10

Where when the damsell faire a while had stayd,  
That for the victor pointed was a pray,  
She tooke her horse, ne farther time delayd,  
But secretly conuayd her selfe away.  
For she foresaw, and was full sore afraid,  
That this to *Charles* would proue a dismall day.  
And riding through a wood, she hapt to meet  
A knight that came against her on his feet.

11

His curats on, his helmet not vndone,  
His sword and target ready to the same,  
And through the wood so swiftly he did runne,  
As they that go halfe naked for a game.  
But neuer did a shepherds daughter shunne  
More speedily a snake that on her came,  
Then faire *Angelica* did take her flight,  
When as she once had knowledge of the knight.

12

This valiant knight was Lord of Clarimount,  
Duke *mon* nne, as you shall vnderstand,  
Who being lost his horse of good account,  
That by mishap was slipt out of his hand,  
He followd him, in hope againe to mount,  
Vntill this Ladies fight did make him stand,  
Whose face and shape proportiond were so well,  
They seeme the house where loue it selfe did dwell.

13

But she that shuns *Renaldo* all she may,  
Vpon her horses necke doth lay the raine,  
Through thicke and thin she gallopeth away,  
Ne makes she choise of beaten way or plaine,  
But giues her palfrey leaue to chuse the way,  
And being mou'd with feare and with disdain,  
Now vp, now downe, she neuer leaues to ride,  
Till she arriued by a riuer side.

*Simile.  
Imitatio of Vir-  
gil. 2. Aeneid.  
Improuisum af-  
firs velut qui  
sensibus anguē.*

*Renaldo his  
horses name was  
Baiardo.*

14

Fast by the stream *Ferrau* she sees anone,  
(Who noyd, in part with dust, and part with sweat)  
Out of the battell hither came alone,  
With drinke his thirst, with aire to swage his heat;  
And minding backe againe to haue bene gone,  
He was detaind with an vnlookt for let,  
Into the streame by hap his helmet fell,  
And how to get it out he cannot tell.

15

And hearing now the rise and mournfull crie  
Of one with piteous voice demanding ayd,  
Seeing the damke approaching nie,  
That nought but helpe against *Renaldo* prayd,  
What while was, he guesse'd by and by,  
Though looking pale, like one that had bene frayd,  
And though she had not late bene in his fight,  
He thought it was *Angelica* the bright.

16

And being both a stotit and courteous knight,  
And loue a little kindling in his brest,  
He prom' raight to aide her all he might,  
And to rior ne what euer she request.  
And though he want a helmet, yet to fight  
With old *Renaldo* he will do his best.  
And both the one, the other straight defied,  
Oft hauing either others value tried.

17

Betweene them two, a combat fierce began,  
With strokes that might haue pierst y hardest cks;  
While they thus fight on foote, and man to man,  
And giue and take so hard and heauy knocks,  
Away the damsell posteth all she can,  
Their paine and trauell she requites with cks.  
So hard she rode while they were at their fig,  
That she was cleane escaped out of fight.

18

When they long time contended had in vaine,  
Who should remaine the maister in the field,  
And that with force, with cunning, nor with p<sup>er</sup>ce,  
The tone of them could make the other yee d,  
*Renaldo* fir did moue the Knight of Spaine  
(Although he vld such curtesie but feeld)  
To make a truce; ne was he to be blamed,  
For loue his heart to other fight inflamed

19

You thought (said he) to hinder me alone,  
But you haue hurt your selfe as much or more.  
You see the faire *Angelica* is gone,  
So soone we leese that earst we fought so sore.  
Had you me tane or slaine, your gaine were none,  
Sith you were ner the nere your loue therfore.  
For while we two haue made this little stay,  
She lets vs both alone and goth her way.

20

But if you oue the Ladie, as you say,  
Then s both agree to find her out,  
To hau first will be our wisest way,  
And when o olding her there s no doubt,  
Then by consent let her remaine his pray,  
That with his sword can proue him selfe ri stout,  
I see not else after our long debate,  
How either of vs can amend his state.

*Ferrau a Span-  
nish Knight.*

*Ferrau*



OF ORLANDO FVRIOSO.

21

*Ferraw* (that felt small pleasure in the fight)  
Agreed a sound and friendly league to make;  
They lay aside all wrath and malice quight,  
And at the parting from the running lake,  
The Pagan would not let the Christen knight  
To follow him on oate for manners sake:  
But prayes him moe behind his horses backe,  
And so they seeke the danell by the tracke.

22

O auncient knights of true and noble hart,  
They riuals were, one faithfull iud not vnder,  
Beside they felt their bodies dily smart  
Of blowes late giuen, and yet (behold wonder)  
Through thicke and thin, suspicion set apart,  
Like friends they ride, and parted not afunder,  
Vntill the horse with double spurring driued  
Vnto a way parted in two arriu'd.

*Riuals* *eschse*  
*that* *ters to*  
*one woman, as*  
*are competitors*  
*to one offi.*

23

And being neither able to descrie  
Which way was gone *Angelica* the b  
Because the tracke of horses feet, were b  
They seeke her out, appare alike in sight  
They part, and either will his fortune try,  
left hand one, the other takes the right.  
The Spaniard when he wandred had a while,  
Came whence he went, the way did him beguile.

24

He arm'd but there, with all his paine,  
Where in the foord he let his helmet fall,  
And of his Ladie (whom he lou'd in vaine)  
He now had litle hope, or none at all.  
His et now he thinkes to get againe,  
And seekes it out, but seeke it while he shall,  
It was so deeply sunken in the sand,  
He cannot get it out at any hand.

*Pepler is* *ee*  
*that groweth*  
*the water like a*  
*Willow.*

25

by the banke a tall yong *Pepler* grew,  
ch he cut downe, thereof a pole to make,  
Wit which each place in feeling and in vew,  
To find his scull he vp and downe doth rake:  
But lo a hap vnlookt for doth ensue,  
While he such needlesse frutlesse paine doth take,  
He saw a knight arise out of the brooke,  
Breast hie, with visage grim, and angry looke.

26

*The ghost of Ar-* The knight was arm'd at all points saue the hed,  
And in his hand he held the helmet plaine,  
That very helmet that such care had bred  
In him that late had sought it with such paine.  
And looking grimly on *Ferraw* he sed,  
Ah faithlesse wretch, in promise false and vaine,  
It grieues thee now this helmet so to misse,  
That should of right be rendred long ere

27

Remember (cruell Pagan) when you kille  
Me, brother to *Angelica* the brigh  
You sayd you would (as I then dyng, willed)  
Mine armour drowne, when finisht were the fight,  
No fortune haue the thing fulfilled,  
Which thou thy self shouldst haue performd in right,  
Greeue not thy selfe, or if thou wilt be greeued,  
Greeue that thy promise cannot be beleued.

28

But if to wait an helmet thou repine,  
Get one wherewith thine honour thou maist saue;  
Such hath *Orlando* Countie Paladine,  
*Renaldo* such, or one perchance more braue,  
That was from *Almont* tane, this from *Mambrine*:  
Win one of these, that thou with praile maist haue,  
And as for this, surcease to seeke it more,  
But leaue it as thou promised me before.

29

*Ferraw* was much amazd to see the sprite,  
That made this strange appearance vnexpected,  
His voice was gone, his haire did stand vpright,  
His senses all were so to feare subiected.  
His heart did swell with anger and despight,  
To heare his breach of promise thus objected,  
And that *Argalia* (so the knight was named)  
With iust reproofe could make him thus ashamed.

30

And wanting time, the matter to excuse,  
And being guiltie of no litle blame,  
He rested mute, and in a senselesse muse,  
So sore his heart was tainted with the shame,  
And by *Lanfusas* life he vowd to vse  
No helmet, till such time he gat the same,  
Which from the stout *Almont* *Orlando* wan,  
When as they two encountred man to man.

*This is a fit dec*  
*rum, so to make*  
*Ferraw so swere*  
*by his mothers*  
*life, which is the*  
*Spanish manner.*

31

But he this vow to keepe more firmly ment,  
And kept it better then the first he had,  
Away he parted hence a malcontent,  
And many dayes ensuing rested sad.  
To seeke *Orlando* out is his intent;  
With whom to fight he would be very glad.  
But now what haps vnto *Renaldo* fell,  
That tooke the other way, tis time to tell.

32

Not farre he walkt, but he his horse had spide,  
That praunsing went before him on the way,  
Holla my boy holla (*Renaldo* cride)  
The want of thee annoyd me much to day.  
But Bayard will not let his master ride,  
But takes his beeles and faster goth away.  
His sight much anger in *Renaldo* bred:  
But follow we *Angelica* that fled.

*He finds Orlando,*  
*the 12. booke in*  
*Atlantes encha-*  
*ned pallace, the*  
*28. staffe.*

33

That fled through woods and deser  
Through places vninhabited and wa  
Ne could she yet repute her selfe secure,  
But farther still she galloped in hast.  
Each leafe that stirres in her doth feare procure,  
And maketh her affrighted and agast:  
Each noise she heares, each shadow she doth see;  
She doth mistrust it should *Renaldo* be.

*He finds his fe*  
*the book 77. sta*

34

Like to a fawne, or kid of bearded gnate,  
That in the wood a tyger fierce espide,  
To kill her dam, and first to teare the throate,  
And then to feed vpon the hanch or side,  
Both feare lest she might light on such a lot,  
And seeke it selfe in thickest brackes to hide,  
And thinkes each noise the wind or aire doth cause.  
It selfe in danger of the tygers clawes.

*Simile*



THE FIRST BOOKE

35  
That day and night she wandred here and there,  
And halfe the other day that did ensue,  
Vntill at last she was arriued where,  
A fine yong groue with pleasant shadow grew,  
Neare to the which two little riuers were,  
Whose moisture did the tender herbes renew,  
And make a sweete and very pleasing sound,  
By running on the sand and stonie ground.

36

Here she at last her selfe in safetie thought,  
As being from *Renaldo* many a mile,  
Tyr'd with annoy the heate and trauell brought,  
She thinkes it best with sleepe the time beguile,  
And hauing first a place conuenient sought,  
She lets her horse refresh his limbes the while,  
Who fed vpon the bankes well cloth'd with grasse,  
And dranke the riuer water cleere as glasse.

37  
Hard by the brooke an arbor she descride,  
Wherein grew faire and very fragrant floures,  
With roses sweet, and other trees beside,  
Wherewith the place adorne the natiue boures,  
So fenced in with shades on either side,  
Safe from the heate of late or early houres:  
The boughes and leaues so cunningly were mixt,  
No sunne, no light, could enter them betwixt.

38

Within; the tender herbes a bed do make,  
Inuiting folke to take their rest and ease:  
Here meanes this Ladie faire a nap to take,  
And fells to sleepe, the place so well doth please.  
Not long she lay, but her a noise did wake,  
The trampling of a horse did her disease,  
And looking out as secret as she might,  
To come all arm'd she saw a comely knight.

39

She knowes not yet if he be foe or friend,  
Twixt hope and feare she doubtfully doth stand,  
And what he meanes to do she doth attend,  
And who it was she faine would vnderstand.  
The knight did to the riuier side descend,  
And resting downe his head vpon his hand,  
All in a mufe he sitteth still alone,  
Like one transform'd into a marble stone.

40

He tarri<sup>e</sup>                    se an houre and more,  
itooke cast downe in sad and heauie guise,  
At last he did lament his hap so sore,  
Yet in so sweete and comely mournfull wise,  
So hard a heart no tyger euer bore,  
But would haue heard such plaints with watrish eies.  
His heart did seeme a mountaine full of flame,  
His cheekes a streame of teares to quench the same.

41

*The Lamentation of Sacrapane.* Alas (said he) what meanes this diuers passion?  
I burne as fire, and yet as frost I freeze,  
I still lament, and yet I moue compassion,  
I come too late, and all my labour leese.  
I had but words and lookes for shew and fashion,  
But others get the game, and gainefull fees:  
If neither fruite nor floure come to my part,  
Why should her loue consume my carefull hart?

42

Like to the rose I count the virgine pure,  
That groweth on native stem in garden faire,  
Which while it stands with wals enuiron'd sure,  
Where heardmen with their hearts cannot repaire  
To fauor it, it seemeth to allu e  
The morning dew, the hea the earth, the aire.  
Yong gallant men, an y dames delight  
In their sweet sent, an n their pleasing sight.

43  
But when at once tis gathered and gone,  
From proper st where late before it grew,  
The loue, the ling little is or none,  
Both fau , race and beautie all adew.  
So wh n a virgin grants to one alone  
The precious floure for which so many sew,  
Well he that getteth it may loue her best,  
But she forgoes the loue of all the rest.

44

She may deserue his loue, but others hate,  
To who loue she shewd her selfe so scant.  
(Oh th my uell fortune or my fa )  
Others aue store, but I am staru'd with want:  
Then leaue to loue this ladie so vngrate:  
Nay liue to loue (behold I soone recant),  
Yea first let life from these my limbs be rent,  
Ere I to change my loue shall giue consent.

45.  
If some perhaps desirous are to know  
What wight it was with sorow so opp  
Twas *Sacrapant* that was afflicted so,  
And loue had bred this torment in his brest:  
That trickling wound, that flattering crue  
Most happie they that know and haue it le  
The loue of her I say procur'd his woe,  
And she had heard and knew it long ago.

46  
Her loue allur'd him from the Ester land,  
Vnto the Westerne shores, where sets the Su  
And here he heard how by *Orlando*s hand,  
A passage se from th'Indies she had wonne.  
Her sequestration he did vnderstand,  
That *Charles* had made, and how the same was done  
To make the knights more venterous and bold,  
In fighting for the Floure de luce of gold.

47  
And furthermore himselfe had present bene  
When *Charles* his men were ouerthrowne andaine.  
Since then, he traueld farre to find this *Queene*,  
But hitherto it hath bene all in vaine.  
Now much despaire, and little hope betweene,  
So rudely thereof he doth complaine,  
And with such wailing words his woes rehearst,  
As might the hardest stonie heart haue pearst.

48  
And w<sup>h</sup> this most dolefull state he bides,  
And sighes ll oft, and sheddeth many a teare,  
And speaks these same, and many words besides,  
(Which I to tell for want of time forb<sup>r</sup> are  
His noble fortune so for him provides,  
That all this came vnto his mistresse eare,  
And in one moment he preuailed more  
Then he had done in many yeares before.

*Simile.*  
This is taken over  
of Catullus, but  
greatly be- ede  
Vt flos in sepium  
secreta nascit  
hortis, &c.

The flour de luen  
taken for  
it selfe, being the  
armes of Fra



49

At last with great attention hard,  
The mone, and plaint, that him tormented sore,  
Who long had loued her, with great regard,  
As she had triall, many yeares before,  
Yet is a marble pill cold and hard,  
She not inclines to pierce him the more.  
Like one that all the world doth much disdain,  
And deemeth none worth her loue againe.

50

But being now with danger compass'd round,  
She thought it best to take him for her guide.  
For one that were in water almightie found,  
Were verie stout, if for no helpe he cryd.  
If she let passe the fortune now she found,  
She thnkes to want the like another tyde.  
And furthermore for certaine this she knew,  
That *Sacrapant* had bene her loue true.

51

cant she tho to quench the raging fires,  
That ay consum'd his faithfull louing heart,  
Ne yet with that a louer most desires.  
T' assuage the paine in all, or yet in part:  
meanes he first shall pull her from the briers,  
him then with words and womens art,  
e him first of all to serue her turne,  
at done, to wonted coyneesse to returne.

52

Vnto riuer side she doth descend,  
And to him most goddesse like she came,  
And said, all peace to thee my dearest friend,  
With mod' st looke, and cald him by his name,  
And further said, the Gods and you defend  
My chastitie, mine honor and my fame.  
And neuer grant by their diuine permission,  
That I giue cause of any such suspicion.

53

ow great ioy a mothers minde is filld,  
To a sonne, for whom she long had mourned,  
Whom she hard late in battell to be kild,  
And saw the troopes without him home returned,  
Such ioy had *Sacrapant* when he beheld,  
His Ladie deere: his teares to smiles are turned,  
To see her beautie rare, her comely fauour,  
Her princely presence, and her stately hauour.

54

Like one all ransht with ner heavenly face,  
Vn-oued Ladie he doth runne,  
Whowas content in armes him to embrace,  
Which she perhaps at home wold not haue done,  
But doubting now the dangerous time and place,  
Sh must go forward as she hath begun,  
In hope by his good seruice and assistance,  
To make her home returne without resistance.

55

And in most lou'ly manner she doth tell,  
The strange aduentures, and the dis-ance,  
That since they two did part to her befall,  
h on the way, and since she came to France:  
And ad- aduised her right well,  
damp her from danger and mischance,  
And that his noble force and magnanimie,  
ill t' referu'd the floure of her virginie.

56

It might be true, but sure it was incredible,  
To tell to one that were discreet and wise,  
But vnto *Sacrapant* it seemed possible,  
Because that loue had dastled to his eyes:  
Loue caueth that we see to seeme invisible,  
And makes of things not seene, a shape to rise.  
It is a prouerbe vied long ago,  
We looue beleue the thing we would haue so.

57

But to himselfe thus *Sacrapant* doth say,  
B't it that my Lord of *Anglant* were so mad,  
To take no pleasure of so faire a pray,  
When he both time and place, and power had,  
Yet ain not I obliged any way,  
To imitate a president so bad,  
He rather take my pleasure while I may,  
Then waile my want of wit another day.

58

He gather now the fresh and fragrant rose,  
Whose beautie may with staring still bespent,  
One cannot do a thing (as I suppose)  
That better can a womans minde content:  
Well may they seeme much grieued for a glose,  
And weepe and waile, and dolefully lament,  
There shall no foolish plaints, nor fained ire,  
Hinder me to encarnat my desire.

59

This said, forthwith he did himselfe prepare,  
T' assault the fort that easily would be wonne,  
But loe a sodaine hap that bred new care,  
And made him cease his enterprise begonne,  
For of an enemy he was aware,  
He clapt his helmet late before vndone,  
And armed all, he mounteth one his best  
And standeth readie with his speare in rest.

60

Behold a warrior whom he did not know,  
Came downe the wood in semblance like a knight, *Bradaman*.  
The furniture was all as white as snow,  
And in the helme a plume of fethers white.  
King *Sacrapant* by prooffe doth plainly shew,  
That he doth take the thing in great despite,  
To be disturbd and hindred from that pleasure,  
That he preferd before each other treasure.

61

Approching nie, the warrior he defid  
And hopesto set him quite beside the eat:  
The other with such loftie words replide,  
As persons vse, in choler and in heat.  
At last when glorious vaunts were laid aside,  
They come to strokes and each to do his feat,  
Doth couch his speare, and running thus they sped,  
Their courters both encountred hed to hed.

62

As Lions meete, or Bulls in pastures greene,  
With teeth & hornes, & staine with blood the field,  
Such eager fight these warrriers was betwene  
And ethers speare had pearst the tothers shield,  
The sound that of these strokes had raised bene  
An echo lowd along the vale did ye ld  
T was happie that their curats were so good  
The Lances eie had pierced to the blood.

A iij

Sentence.

Orlando was  
lord of Anglant

Ouid. vni licet  
appelles, gratia est  
vis illa puellu,  
quod iuuat in-  
uise sepe dedisse  
volunt.

his is t  
of the  
sue p

ch; in respect  
of his  
son  
that he as  
ved afore.  
Smsle.



63

For quite vnable now about to wheele,  
They butt like rammes, the one the others head,  
Whereof the Pagans horse such paine did feele,  
That ere long space had past he fell downe dead.  
The tothers horse a little gan to reele,  
But being spurd, full quickly vp he sped.  
The Pagans horse thus ouerthrowne and flaine,  
Fell backward greatly to his masters paine,

*Simile.  
The like is in  
Dance of goats.*

64

That vnknowne champion seeing thother downe,  
His horse vpon him lying dead in vew,  
Expecting in this fight no more renowne,  
Determind not the battell to renew.  
But by the way that leadeth from the towne,  
The first appointed iourney doth pursue,  
And was now ridden halfe a mile at least,  
Before the Pagan parted from his beast.

65

Like as the tiller of the fruitfull ground,  
With sodaine storme and tempest is astonished  
Who sees the flash, & heares the thunders sound,  
And for their masters sakes, the cattell punished,  
Or when by hap a faire old pine he found,  
By force of raging winds his leaues diminished.  
So stood amazzd the Pagan in the place,  
His Ladie present at the wooll case.

*Simile.  
The like is in O-  
vid de tristibus 3  
Ele. Haud aliter  
stupui quam qui  
Iouis ignibus;  
ictus viuis est  
vix nescius ipse  
sua.*

66

He fetcht a sigh most deeply from his heart,  
Not that he had put out of ioynt, or lamed  
His arme, his legge, or any other part,  
But chiefly he, his euill fortune blamed,  
At such a time, to hap so ouerthwart,  
Before his loue, to make him so ashamed:  
And had not she some cause of speech found out,  
He had remained speechlesse out of doubt.

67

My Lord (said she) what ailes you be so sad?  
The want was not in you, but in your steed,  
For whom a stable, or a pasture had  
Beene fitter then a course at tilt indeed.  
Nor is that aduerse partie verie glad,  
As well appeares, that parted with such speed,  
For in my iudgement they be said to yeeld,  
That first leaue off, and do depart the feild.

68

Thus while she giues him comfort all she may,  
Behol! there came a messenger in post,  
Blowing his horne, and riding downe the way,  
Where he before his horse, and honor lost.  
And comming nearer he of them doth pray,  
To tell if they had seene passe by that cost,  
A champion armed at all points like a knight,  
The shield, the horse, and armour all of white.

69

I haue both seene the knight, and felt his force,  
(Said *Sacrapant*) for here before you came,  
He cast me downe and also kild my horse,  
Ne know I (that doth greue me most) his name.  
Sir (quoth the post) the name I will not force,  
To tell, sith you desire to know the same,  
First, know that you were conquerd in this fight,  
By vallew of a damsell faire and bright.

70

Of passing strength, but of more passing hew,  
And *Bradamant*, this damsell faire is named,  
She was the wight, whose meeting you may rewe,  
And all your life hereafter be ashamed.  
This said, he turnd his horse and bad adew.  
But *Sacrapant* with high d'ldaine enflamed,  
Was first to wroth, and then so shamed thereto,  
He knew not what say, nor what to do.

*This post our  
sake is Br. da.  
Bouke. ft. 6*

71

And after he had staid a while and musd,  
That at a wo s hands he had receiued,  
Such a disgr could not be excusd,  
Nor how might reuenge it he perceiued,  
Wit! thought hereof his mind was so confusd,  
He stood like one of wit and sense bereaued.  
At last he go'th, a better place to finde,  
He takes her horse and makes her mount behind.

72

Now hauing rode a mile, or there about,  
They heard a noyle, a trampling on the ground,  
They thought it was some compan or rout,  
That caused in the woods so great a sound.  
At last they see a warlike horse, and stout,  
With guilded barb, that cost full many a  
No hedge, no ditch, no wood no water wa,  
That stopped him where he was bent to passe.

*o Buccinalu  
that he would*

73

*Angelica* casting her eye aside.  
Except (said she) mine eies all dazle  
I haue that famous horse *Bayardo* spide,  
Come trotting downe the wood, as seemes to me  
(How well for vs our fortune doth prou  
It is the verie same, I know tis he:  
On one poore nag to ride we two were loth,  
And here he commeth fit to serue vs both.

74

King *Sacrapant* alighteth by and by,  
And thinkes to take him gently by the raine  
But with his heeles the horse doth streight reply,  
As who should say, his rule he did disdaine.  
It happie was he stood the beast not nye,  
For if he had, it had beene to his paine,  
For why, such force the horse had in his heele,  
He would haue burst a mountaine all of Steele.

75

But to the damsell gently he doth go,  
In humble manner, and in lowly sort.  
A spaniell after absence fauneth so,  
And seekes to make his master play, and sport,  
For *Bayard* cald to mind the damsell tho,  
When she vnto *Albracca* did resort,  
And vld to feed him for his masters sake,  
Who in she then lou'd, and he did her forsake.

*Simila*

*Albracca,*

*sable.*

76

She tak the bridle boldly in her hand,  
And ft his brest, and necke, with art and skill:  
The horse that had great wit to vnderstand,  
Like to a lambe, by her he standeth still,  
And while *Bayardo* gently there d'ista,  
The Pagan got him vp, and had his will.  
And she that erst to ride behind was faine,  
Into her saddle mounted now againe.

And



And being newly settled in her seate,  
 She saw a man on foote all armed runne,  
 Straight in her mind she gan to chafe and fret,  
 Because she knew it was Duke Ammons sonne,  
 Most earnestly he sud her loue to get,  
 More earnestly she f es his loue to shunne  
 Once she lou'd him, h ated her as much,  
 And now he loues, she iis hap was such.

The cause of this first from two fountaines grew,  
 Like in the tast, but in effects vnlike,  
 Plac'd in Ardenna, each in other w,  
 Who tast the one, loues dart his heart doth strike,  
 Contrary of the other doth ensue,  
 Who drinke thereof, their louers shall mislike.  
 Renaldo dranke of one, and loue much pained him,  
 The other dranke this damsell that disdained him.

is l uor thus with secret venom mingled,  
 Makes her to stand so stiffely in the way,  
 On whom Renaldos heart was wholly ki dled,  
 Though scarce to looke on him she can aw y,

But from his sight desiring to be singled,  
 With soft low voice the Pagan she doth pray,  
 That he approach no nearer to this knight,  
 But flie away with all the speed he might.

Why then (quoth he) make you so small esteeme  
 Of me, as though that I to him should yeeld?  
 So weake and faint my forces do you deeme,  
 That safe from him your selfe I cannot shield  
 Then you forget Albracca it should seeme,  
 And that same night, when I amid the field,  
 Alone vnarmed did defend you then,  
 Against king Agrican and all his men.

No sir, said she, (ne knowes she what to say)  
 Because Renaldo now approacht so nie,  
 And threatned so the Pagan in the way,  
 When vnder him his horse he did espie,  
 And saw the damsell taken as a pray,  
 In whose defence he meanes to liue and die.  
 But what fell out betweene these warriors feare,  
 Within the second booke I do rehearse.

*t booke may be noted in Angelica the vngratefulnes of women to their worthiest suters: In the foure knights, The Morall.*  
*nate affections of loue and fancy. And whereas first Bradamant, and after Renaldo interrupt Sacrapant of his*  
*la ous purpose, may be noted, both the weake holdfast that men haue of worldly pleasures, as also how the heauens do*  
*fauour hast desires. Lastly, in the two fountaines may be noted the two notable contrarieties of the two affections,*  
*of loue d dijdaine, that infinite sorts of people daily tast of, while they runne wandring in that inextricable labyrinth*  
*of loue.*

*Concerning the historie, we find that in the time of Charles the great (called Charlemaine) sonne of Pepin king of France, t e Turkes with a great power inuaded Christendome, Spaine being then out of the faith, (as some part thereof as enen n these fourscore yeares, namely Granada, which was held by the Moores.) And one Marcus Antonius Sab licus writeth, that for certaintie there liued in that time of Charlemaine, many of those famous Palladines, that are in this worke so often named, and especially he maketh mention of Renaldo and Orlando, affirming that they were indeed very martiall men, and how Charles obtained great victories by their seruice; and namely he telleth of one Fer-taw a Spaniard of great stature and strength, who tooke certaine Frenchmen prisoners, afterward rescued by Orlando, rlando fought with him hand to hand two whole dayes, and the second vanquishd him. Further, the same author affirmet that the same Charlemaine, for his great fauour shewed to the Church of Rome, was by Leo the third named Emperour of Rome: and that he was a iust, a fortunate, and a mercifull Prince, and one that within Europe as well as without did attaine great conquests, supp ssing the violent gouernement of the Lombards, and taming the rebellious Saxons, Huns and Bauarians, and conquering a great part of Spaine: all which testimonies shew, that the ground of this Poeme is true, as I shall haue particuler occasion in sundry of the books ensuing to note: and thus much for the story.*

*For the allegory, in this Canto I find not much to be said, except one should be so curious to search for an allegory where none is intended by the author himself: yet an allegory may not vnfitly be gathered of the description of Bayardos following Angelica, which may thus be taken. Bayardo a strong horse, without rider or gouernor, is likened to the desire of ma, that runs furiously after Angelica, as it were after leasure or honor, or whatsoever man doth most in affect.*

*Likew hat Angelica flieth from Renaldo, we may take an allegorical instruction, that the temptations of the flesh are ouerc me, chiefly by flying from them, as the Scripture it selfe teacheth, saying, Resist the diuel, but fly fornication.*

*Further, in that Bayardo striketh at Sacrapant, but yeeldeth to Angelica, it may be noted how the courage of our minds that cannot be abated with any force, are often subdued by flatterie and gentle vsage, till they be in the end en ridden as it were with slauerie.*

*And whereas Renaldo followes Angelica on foote, some haue noted thereby to be meant sensualitie, that is euer in e and earthly, or rather beastly affections, neu r looking vpward.*

*For Allusions, there are not any worth the notr g in this Canto, save that it seemes in Renaldos horse Bayardo, he Allusion.*  
*seemes to allude to Buccphalus Alexanders hors*





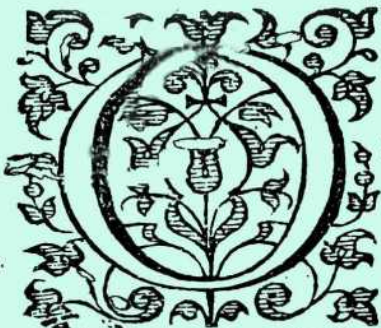


## THE ARGUMENT.

*A Frère betweene two riualls parts the fray,  
By magicke art : Renaldo hasteth home;  
But in embassage he is sent away,  
When tempest makes the sea to rage and fume.  
Bradamant seekes her spouse, but by the way,  
While she about the country myld did rome,  
Met Pinnabel, who by a craftie traine,  
Both fought, and thought the Ladie to haue slaine.*

*As who of  
bookes the first  
staffe, as  
some m*

*tal ce  
not impertinent  
he matter in*



**B**lind god Loue, why takst  
thou such delight,  
With darts of diuers force  
our hearts to wound?  
By thy too much abusing of  
thy might,  
This discord great in hu-  
mane hearts is found  
When I would wade the  
shallow foord aright,  
Thou draw'st me to the deepe to haue me dround,  
From those loue me, my loue thou dost recall,  
And place it where I find no loue at all.

Thou mak'st most faire vnto *Renaldas* seeme  
*Angelica*, that takes him for a foe,  
And when that she of him did well esteeme,  
Then he dislikt, and did refuse her thoe.  
Which makes her now of him the lesse to deeme,  
Thus *ey* (say) she renders *quit pro quo*.  
She hateth him, and doth detest him so,  
She first will die, ere she will with him go.

*aldo* (full of stately courage) cride,  
owne thee from of my horse, downe by and by,  
So robd to be I neuer can abide,  
But they that do it dearly shall aby,  
Also this Ladie you must leaue beside,  
Else one of vs in her defence will dye.  
A horte so good, and such a goodly dame,  
ue vnto a thee it were a shame.

What me a meepe? thou in thy throat dost lye,  
oth *Sacrapant*, that was as hot as he)

Theefe to thy selfe, thy malice I desie,  
For as I heare, the name is due to thee:  
But if thou dare thy might and manhood trie,  
Come take this Ladie, or this horse from me.  
Though I allow in this of thine opinion,  
That of the world she is the matchlesse minion.

Like as two mastiue dogges with hungrie mawes,  
Mou'd first to hate, from hate to raging ire,  
Approch with grinning teeth, and grisly iaws,  
With staring eyes, as red as flaming fire,  
At last they bite, and scratch with teeth and claws,  
And teare themselues, and tumble in the mire.  
So after byting and reprochfull words,  
Did these two worthy warriors draw their swords,

One was on foote, the tother was one horse,  
You thinke perhaps, the horsemans vantage had,  
No sure no whit; he would haue winne the force,  
For why, at last to light he must be glad,  
The beast did know thus much by natures force,  
To hurt his master were a seruice bad.  
The pagan could not nor with spur nor hand,  
Make him vnto his mind to go or stand,

He stops, when he should make a full carire,  
He runnes or trots, when he would haue him rest,  
At last to throw his rider in the mire,  
He plungeth with his head beneath his breast.  
But *Sacrapant* that now had small desire,  
At such a time, to tame so proud a beast,  
Did worke so well at last by sleight and force,  
On his left side, he lighted from his horte

*The, l & vn  
knightly words  
must be imputed  
he ra e of  
she a i e  
loue.*

*Simile.*



8

When from Bayardos ouer furious might,  
The Pagan had himselfe ditcharged so,  
With naked swords there was a noble fight,  
Sometimes they lye aloft, sometimes aloe,  
And from their blowes the fire flies out in fight:  
I thinke that *Vulcans* hammers beat more flow,  
Where he within the mountaine *Aetnas* chaps,  
Doth forge for Ioue, the fearfull thunderclaps.

9

*A description of  
a combats between  
two knights skil  
full in their wea-  
pon.*

Sometimes they profer, then they pause a while,  
Sometime strike out, like maisters of the play,  
Now stand vpright, now stoup another while,  
Now open lye, then couer all they may.  
Now ward, then with a slip the blow beguile:  
Now forward step, now backe a little way:  
Now round about, and where the tone giues place,  
There still the other preffeth in his place.

10

*Fusberta was  
Renaldos sword.*

*Renaldo* did the Pagan Prince inuade,  
And strike at once with all the might he coud,  
The other doth oppose against the blade,  
A shield of bone and Steele of temper good.  
But through the same a way *Fusberta* made,  
And of the blow resounded all the wood:  
The Steele, the bone like ylc in peeces broke,  
And left his arme benumbed with the stroke.

11

Which when the faire and fearfull damsell saw,  
And how great damage did ensue thereby,  
She looked pale, for anguish and for aw,  
Like those by doome that are condemn'd to dye:  
She thinks it best her selfe from hence withdraw,  
Else will *Renaldo* take her by and by,  
The same *Renaldo* whom she hateth so,  
Though loue of her procured all his wo.

12

Vnto the wood she turnes her horse in hast,  
And takes a little narrow path and blind;  
Her fearefull looks oft times she backe doth cast,  
Still doubting lest *Renaldo* came behind:  
And when that she a little way had past,  
A low the vale a Hermit she did find:  
A weake old man, with beard along his brest,  
In shew deuout, and holier then the rest.

13

*An vnchast her-  
mit, or rather hy-  
pocrite, in whose  
person he cou-  
cheth the holy  
Churchmen, that  
spend much de-  
uotion on such  
Saints.*

He seemd like one with fasts and age consumed,  
He a slouthfull going asle.  
And by his looke, a man would haue presumed,  
That of his conscience scrupulous he was.  
Yet her young face, his old sight so illumed,  
When as he saw the damsell by to passe:  
(Though weake and faint, as such an age behoued?)  
That charitie his courage somewhat moued.

14

The damsell of the Hermit askt the way,  
That might vnto some hav'n town lead most neare,  
That she might part from France with out delay,  
Where once *Renaldos* name she might not heare.  
The frier that could enchaunt, doth all he may,  
To comfort her, and make her of good cheare,  
And to her safetie promising to looke;  
Out of his bag forthwith he drew a booke,

15

A booke of skill and learning so profound,  
That of a leafe he had not made an end,  
But that there rose a sprite from vnder ground,  
Whom like a page he doth of arrants send.  
This sprite by words of secret vertue bound,  
Goes where the knight heir combat did intend:  
And while they two were fighting verie hard,  
He enters them bet without regard.

16

Good sirs (quoth he) for courtie sake me show,  
When one of you the tother shall haue slaine,  
And after all the trauell you bestow,  
What guerdon you expect for all your paine,  
Beho *Orlando* striking nere a blow,  
N breaking staffe, while you striue here in vaine,  
To Paris ward the Ladie faire doth carie,  
While you on fighting vndiscreetly tari

*This was a ly de-  
uised by the H  
mit to end  
away.*

17

I saw from hence a mile, or thereabout,  
*Orlando* with *Angelica* alone,  
And as for ou, they iest and make a flout,  
That fight w e praise and profit can be none.  
Twer best you ickly went to seeke them out.  
Before that an ther they be gone;  
Within the wa ls of Paris if they get,  
Your eye on her againe you shall not set.

18

When as the knights this message had re eued.  
They both remaind amazed, dumbe and f  
To heare *Orlando* had them so dec  
Of whom before great iealousie they had;  
But good *Renaldo* to great grieve conceiu  
That for the time, like one all raging  
He ware without regard of God or man,  
That he will kill *Orlando* if he can.

19

And seeing where his horse stood still vntide,  
He thither goes: such hast he makes away,  
He offers not the Pagan leaue to ride,  
Nor at the parting once adieu doth say.  
Now Bayard telt his maisters spurres in fide,  
And gallops maine, ne maketh any stay  
No riuers, rocks, no hedge, nor ditches wide,  
Could stay his course, or make him step aside.

20

Nor maruell if *Renaldo* made some hast,  
To mount againe vpon his horses backe.  
You heard before how many dayes  
Thar by his absence he had felt great lacke.  
The horse (that had of humane wit some tast,)  
Ran not away for any iadish knacke,  
His going onely was to this intent,  
To guide his master where the Ladie went.

*Bayardo  
pays  
company*

21

The horse had spide her when she tooke her flight,  
First the tent, as he thereby did stand,  
And wd her, and kept her long in fight,  
As then by hap out of his master hand,  
(His master did not long before alight,  
To combat with a \*Baron hand to harry  
The horse pursude the damsell all about,  
And holpe his master still to find her out.

*This on was  
Roger, as appe-  
reth in l  
e cal c. Or-  
lando manorato  
on which  
whole work: dash  
and.*

He



22  
He followd her through valley, hill and plaine,  
Through woods and thickets for his masters sake,  
Whom he permitted not to touch the raine,  
For feare lest he some other way should take,  
By which *Renaldo* though with mickle paine  
Twise found her out, if she did him forsake:  
For first *Ferraw*, then *crapant* withstood,  
That by twice finding he did no good.

*As appeared in  
the former booke.*

23  
Bayardo trusting to the lying sprite,  
Whose false (but likely) tale so late he hard,  
And doubting not it was both true and right,  
He doth his dutie now with due regard.  
*Renaldo* prickt with loue and raging spite  
Doth pricke apace, and all to Paris ward,  
To Paris ward he maketh so great shift,  
The wind it selfe seemes not to go so swift.

24  
Such haile made *Orlando* out to find,  
That he cant he ceast to trauell all the night,  
So deeply sticke the storie in his mind,  
That was of lye deuised by the sp  
Betimes and late as first he had signd,  
ode vtill he saw the town sight:  
whose chance a c ristned hearts did  
miall relikes of his powre withdrew. (rew,

25  
And for he kes to be assaulted then,  
Or be eg'd, he vseth all his care,  
o sto fe with victuall and with men.  
The ls eke of the towne he doth repare,  
And c aduice, both how, and where, and when,  
ce each thing he may prepare.  
ie new to make he doth intend,  
And for new souldiers into England send.

26  
He minds to take the field againe ere long,  
And trie the hap of warre another day,  
And all in hast to make him selfe more strong,  
He sends *Renaldo* Englands ayd to pray.  
*Renaldo* thought the Emperour did him strong,  
To send him in such hast, and grant no stay.  
Not that ill will to th'land he did carie,  
But for another cause he faine would tarie.

27  
Yet now although full sore against his mind,  
As loth to leaue the Lame he so loued,  
Who in Paris hoped had to find,  
Because to obey his Prince it him behoued,  
He taketh his embassage thus assignd,  
And hauing straight all other lets remoued,  
He posted first to Callis with great hast,  
And there embarkt ere halfe next day was past.

28  
Against the mariners and masters minds,  
(Such hast he made to haue returned backe)  
He takes the sea though swelling with great winds,  
And threatening ruine manifest and wracke.  
*Moreau* that him selfe despised finds,  
Doth leaue on seas with tempest foule and blacke,  
By force whereof the waues were raisd so hie,  
The very tops were sprinkled all thereby.

29  
The mariners take in their greater saile,  
And by the wind they lie, but all in vaine,  
Then backe againe they bend without auaille,  
Now they are out, they cannot in againe.  
No (said the wind) my force shall so preuaile,  
Your bold attempts shall put you to some paine.  
It was a folly any more to striue,  
Needs must they follow as the wind did drue.

*He makes the  
wind to speake,  
by a figure called  
Prosopopoeia.*

30  
In the foreship sometimes the blast doth blow,  
Straight in the poope, the seas breake to the skies.  
Needs must they beare a saile, though very low,  
To void the waues that higher still did rise:  
But sith my web so diuerse now doth grow,  
To weaue with many threds I must deuise,  
I leaue *Renaldo* in this dangerous place,  
And of his sister speake a little space.

*He comes to him  
againe. 4. booke  
stasse 21.*

31  
I meane the noble damsell *Bradamant*,  
Of *Ammon* daughter, and dame *Beatrice*,  
In whose rare mind no noble part did want,  
So full of value, and so void of vice,  
King *Charls* and France of her might rightly vaunt,  
So chaste, so faire, so faithfull and so wise,  
And in the feates of armes of so great fame,  
A man might guesse by that of whence she came.

*Bradamant whos  
he left in the first  
booke, stasse 64.*

32  
There was a Knight enamour'd on this dame,  
That out of Affricke came with *Agramant*,  
*Rogero* hight, so was his fathers name,  
(His mother was the child of *Agolant*)  
The damsell that of worthy lineage came,  
And had a heart not made of adamant,  
Disdained not the loue of such a knight,  
Although he had but seeld bene in her sight.

*Looke in the In-  
dex of names of  
the story of *Agol-  
ant* and *Rogero*'s  
mother named  
*Gabliacella*.*

33  
Long trauell and great paine she had endured,  
And rid alone her louer to haue found;  
Ne would she thinke her safetie more assured,  
If with an armie she were garded round.  
You heard before how she by force procured  
King *Sacrapant* to fall and kisse the ground,  
The wood she past, and after that the mountaine,  
Vntill at last she saw a goodly fountaine.

34  
A goodly fountaine running in a field,  
All full of trees, whose leaues do neuer fade -  
Which did to passengers great pleasure yeld,  
The running streame so sweete a murmur made,  
Vpon the South, a hill the Sunne did shield,  
The ground gaue floures, y groves a grateful shade:  
Now here the dame casting her eye aside,  
A man at armes fast by the brooke descrie.

*The laurell, the  
yeugh and the  
holily be ever  
greene.*

35  
A man at armes she spied by the brooke,  
Whose banks with flowres of diuers hew were clad,  
Of which sweet place he so small pleasure tooke,  
His face did shew his heart was nothing glad,  
His targe and helmet were not farre to looke,  
Vpon a tree where tide his horse he had:  
His eyes were swolne with tears, his mind oppressed,  
With bitter thoughts that had his heart distressed.

*Pisnabel son of  
Auselmus Earle  
of Maganza.*



36

The damsell faire entic'd by deepe desire,  
That all (but chiefly women) haue to know,  
All strangers states, doth earnestly require  
The dolefull knight his inward griefe to show.  
Who marking well her manner and attire,  
Her courteous speech with him preuailed so,  
He tel's his state, esteeming by the sight,  
That needs she must haue bene some noble knight.

*Asilais vs. le to  
Rogero a great  
Necromancer,  
who did worke  
this by enchant-  
ments.*

37

Good sir (said he) you first must vnderstand,  
I serued Charles against the king of Spaine,  
I horsemen had and footmen in my band,  
In ambush plac'd the Spanish king I haue slaine:  
I brought the fairest Ladie in this land,  
And my best loued with me in my traine,  
When todainly ere I thereof was ware,  
There came a horseman that procur'd my care.

38

Perhap a man, or some infernall sprite,  
In humane shape, I cannot certaine say,  
But this I say, he tooke the damsell bright,  
Euen as a faulcon sealeth on his pray,  
So he my louing Ladie did affright,  
And so affrighted bare her quite away.  
And when I thought to rescue her by force,  
Aloft in aire he mounted with his horse.

39

Euen as a rau'nous kite that doth espie  
A little chicken wandring from the other,  
Doth catch him straight, and carries him on hie,  
That now repents he was not with his mother.  
What could I do? my horse wants wings to flie,  
Scant could he set one leg before the tother,  
He traueled had before so many dayes,  
Among the painfull hills and stonie wayes.

*Simile.*

40

But like to one that were his wit beside,  
I leaue my men to do my first intent,  
Not caring of my selfe what should betide,  
(So strongly to my fancie was I bent)  
And tooke the blind god Cupid for my guide,  
By wayes as blind to seeke my loue I went.  
And though my sense, my guide, my way were blind,  
Yet on I go in hope my loue to find.

41

A senight space abating but a day,  
About the woods and mountaines I did range,  
In sau. parts wilde and void of way,  
Where humane steps were rare and very strange.  
Fast by the desert place a plaine there lay,  
That shewed from the rest but little change,  
Sauely onely that a castle full of wonder  
Did stand in rockes that had bene clou'n asunder.

*Atlantes castle  
made by enchants-  
ments.*

42

This castle shines like flaming fire a farre,  
Not made of lime and stone as ours are here:  
And still as I approch a little narre,  
More wonderfull the building doth appeare.  
It is a fort impregnable by warre,  
Compacted all of mettall shining cleare.  
The fiends of hell this fort of Steele did make,  
And mettall tempred in the <sup>\*</sup>Strigian lake.

*So they write  
that Achilles  
armor was tem-  
pered so make it  
impregnable.*

43

The towres are all of Steele, and polisht bright,  
There is on them no spot or any rust,  
It shines by day, by darke it giueth light,  
Here dwels this robber wicked and vniust,  
And what he gets against all lawes and right,  
The lawlesse wretch abuseth here by lust,  
And here he keeps my fauour and faithfull louer,  
Without all hope that I may her recouer.

44

Ah wo was me, in vaine I sought to helpe,  
I see the place that keeps that I loue best,  
Euen as a foxe that crying heares her whelpes,  
Now borne aloft into the Eagles nest,  
About the tree she goes, and faine would helpe,  
But is constrained for want of wings to rest.  
Therocke so steepe, the castle is so hie,  
None can get in except they learne to flie.

45

And as I tarri'd in the plaine, behold  
I saw two knights come riding downe the plaine  
Led by desire and hope to win this hold,  
But their desire and hope was all in vaine.  
Gradasso was the first of courage bold,  
A king of Serica at held the raine.  
Rogero next, a man of noble nation,  
Of yeares but yong, but of great estimation.

46

A little dwarfe they had to be their guide,  
Who told me that they came to trie their f  
Against the champion that doth  
Out of this castle on the winged horse.  
Which when I heard, to them for helpe I  
And prayd them of my case to take  
And that they would, if twere their chance  
Set free my loue that there was locked in.

47

And all my griefe to them I did vnfold,  
Affirming with my teares my tale too true:  
No sooner I my heavy hap had told,  
But they were come within the castles vew,  
I stood aloofe the battell to behold,  
And praid to God good fortune might ensue.  
Beneath the castle lies a little plaine,  
Exceeding not an arrow shoote or twaine.

48

And as they talkt who first should fight or last,  
They were arriued to the castle hill,  
At length Gradasso (whether lots were  
Or that Rogero yeelded to his will)  
Doth take his horne, and blew therewith a blast,  
The noise whereof the castle wals did fill.  
And straight with greater speed then can be guest  
Came out the rider of the flying beast.

49

And as we see strange cranes are wont to do,  
First stalke a while, ere they their wings can find,  
Then seare from ground not past a yard or two,  
Till in their wings they gatherd haue the wind,  
At last they mount the very clouds vnto,  
Triangle wise, according to their kinne  
So by degrees this Mage begins to flie,  
The bird of Ioue can hardly mount so hie.

*Stra. & cranes,  
becausee they him  
is a passenger  
that goes ouer  
sea.  
They  
gle, as Plu-  
mie useth.  
Mage or  
cian.*



50

And when he sees his time, and thinkes it best,  
He falleth downe like lead in tearefull quite,  
Euen as the faulcon doth the towle arrest,  
The ducke and mallard from the brooke that rise,  
So he descending with his speare in rest,  
Doth pierce the aire in strange and monstrous wise,  
And ere *Gradasso* were thereof admonished,  
He felt a stripe that made him halfe astonied.

51

The Mage vpon *Gradasso* brake his speare,  
Who strikes in vaine vpon the aire and wind,  
Away he flue without or hurt or teare,  
And leaue *Gradasso* many a pace behind.  
This fierce encounter was so hard to bear  
That good *Alfina* to the ground inclind,  
This same *Alfina* was *Gradasso*'s mare,  
The fairest and best that euer saddle bare.

52

res the forc'ers doth ascend,  
And wheelles about, and downe he comes againe,  
And on *Rogero* he his force doth bend,  
That had compassion on *Gradasso*'s paine:  
More th'assault *Rogero* did offend,  
For the force thereof could not sustaine,  
So strike againe he made account,  
With his foe vp to the clouds to mount.

53

Sometime the Mage *Rogero* doth assaile,  
Raig twa *Gradasso* he doth set vpon,  
They strike againe without auaille,  
So quickly he at whom they strike is gone,  
Hout as ships do vnder saile,  
Are wings, and rest he giues them none,  
But sets vpon them in so sudden wite,  
That he amazzd and dazeld both their eyes.

54

Betweene this one aloft, and two alow,  
This conflict did no little space endure,  
Vntill at last the night began to grow,  
With mistie clouds making the world obscure:  
I saw this sight, the truth thereof I know,  
I present was thereat, yet am I sure,  
That very few (except the wiser sort)  
Will credence giue to such a strange report.

55

This heauenly hellish warrior bare a shield  
On arme that had a silken case,  
I cannot say my cause or reason yeeld,  
Why he would keepe it equerd so long space:  
It had such force, that who so it beheld,  
Such shining light it striketh in their face,  
That dowie they fall with eyes and senses closed,  
And leaue their corps of him to be disposed.

6

The target like the carbuncle doth shine,  
Such light was neuer seene with mortall eye,  
It makes to ground the lookers on decline,  
Be they farre off, or be they standing nie:  
In their fight, it closed mine,  
That in a trance no little space was I.  
At last when I awakt and rose againe,  
The aire was darke, and voided was the plaine.

57

The forcerer hath taue them (I surmise)  
Into his cattle, as is likely most,  
And by this light that dazeld all our eyes,  
My hope is gone, their libertie is lost:  
This is the truth, ne do I ought deuise,  
You heare the same, I felt it to my cost,  
Now iudge if I haue reason to complaine,  
That haue and do endure such endlesse paine.

58

When as this Knight his dolefull tale had done,  
He fate him downe all chearleste in the place,  
This was the Earle *Pinnabel Anselmus* sonne,  
Borne in *Maganza* of that wicked race,  
Who like the rest so lewd a course did runne,  
He holpe the more his linage to deface:  
For onely vertue noblenesse doth dignifie,  
And vicious life a linage base doth signifie.

59

The Ladie faire attentive all this while,  
Doth hearken vnto this *Maganzes* tale,  
*Rogeros* name sometime doth make her smile,  
Sometime againe for feare she looketh pale:  
But hearing how a forcerer base and vile,  
Should in a castle so detaine him thrall,  
She pitied him, and in her mind she created,  
And oft desir'd to heare the tale repeated.

60

When at the last the whole she vnderstood,  
She said, sir Knight mourne not, but take some plea-  
Perhaps our meeting may be to your good, (sure,  
And turne your enemy vnto displeasure:  
Shew me this fort, for why it freats my blood,  
So foule a prison holds so faire a treasure.  
And if good fortune fauour mine intent,  
You will right well suppose your trauell spent.

61

Ah (said the Knight) should I returne againe,  
To passe these mountaines hard and ouertwarte?  
Though for my selfe it is but little paine,  
To toile my bodie hauing lost my hart:  
For you to go where as you may be slaine,  
Or taken prisoner were a foolish part:  
Which if it hap, yet me you cannot blame,  
Because I giue you warning of the same.

62

This said, he riseth vp his horse to take,  
The noble Ladie on the way to guide,  
Who meanes to venter for *Rogeros* sake.  
Or death or thraldome, or what ere betide:  
But loe a messenger great hast doth make,  
That comes behind, and (tarry ho) he cride,  
This was the post that told to *Sacripant*,  
How she that foyle him was Dame *Bradamant*.

63

This messenger brought tidings in great post,  
Both from *Narbona* and from *Mompelceere*,  
How they were vp in armes along the coast  
Of *Aquamort*, and all that dwelled neere,  
And how *Marsilias* men their hearts had lost,  
Because of her no tidings they could heare:  
And (for her absence made them ill payd)  
They sent to haue her presence and her ayd.

B ij

Virtus vera nobilitas.

And the mare  
Gi... rode  
on, hauing won-  
drous to ride  
orse til he could  
get Bayard Re-  
naldos horse.

Many times wise  
men are ready  
to believe strange  
reports of cred-  
ible persons than the  
foolish.

Of this shield  
much is spoken  
afterward. The  
take  
of Medusas

1. Book. staff. 70.



The limits of  
Provence.

64

These townes and others many to the same,  
Betweene the streames of Rodon and of Vare,  
The Empror had assignd this worthy dame,  
Committing them vnto her trust and care.  
Her noble value gat her all this fame,  
Because in armes her selfe she brauely bare,  
And to the cities vnder her subiection,  
This meslage sent, requiring her direction.

65

Which when she heard, it made her somewhat pause,  
Twixt yea and no she stood a pretie space,  
Of one side honor and her office drawes,  
On th'other side loue helpes to pleade the case,  
At last she meanes t'enlue the present cause,  
And fetch *Rogero* from th'enchanted place:  
And if her force cannot to this attaine,  
At least with him a prisoner to remaine.

66

In curteous sort her answer she contriued,  
With gracious words, and sent away the post,  
She longs with her new guide to haue arriued,  
To that same place where both their loues were lost.  
But he perceiuing now she was deriued,  
From *Clarimont* that he detested most,  
Doth hate her sore, and feareth to the same,  
Lest she should know he of *Maganza* came.

67

There was betweene these houses auncient hate,  
This of *Maganza*, that of *Clarimont*,  
And each of them had weakned others state,  
By killing men in both of great account.  
This *Pinnabel* (a vile and wicked mate,  
That all his kin in vices did turmount)  
Meanes with himselfe this damsell to betray,  
Or else to slip aside and go his way.

68

And this same fancie so his head did fill,  
With hate, with feare, with anger and with doubt,  
That he mistooke the way against his will,  
And knew not how againe to find it out,  
Till in the wood he saw a little hill,  
Bare on the top, where men might looke about,  
But *Bradamant* such amorous passions feesles,  
She followeth like a spaniell at his heeles.

69

The craftie guide thus wandering in the wood,  
Intending now the Ladie to beguile,  
Said vnto her forsooth he thought it good,  
Sith night grew on, themselves to rest a while:  
Here is, quoth he (and shewd which way it stood)  
A castle faire, and hence not many a mile:  
But tarry you a little here vntill  
I may descric the countrey from the hill.

70

This said, he mounted to the higher ground,  
And standing now the highest part vpon,  
He cast about his eyes and looked round,  
To find some path whereby he might be gone.

When vnawares a monstrous caue he found,  
And strange cut out and hollowd in the stone,  
Deepe thirtie cubits downe it doth descend,  
Hauing a faire large gate at lower end.

71

Such as great stately houses wont to haue,  
Out of which gate proceeds a shining light,  
That all within most some makes the caue,  
And all this while on this felonious knight  
This noble Ladie due attendance gaue,  
And neuer suffred him go out of sight.  
She followd *Pinnabel* hard at his backe,  
Because she was afeard to leese the tracke.

72

When as this villaine traitor did espie,  
That his designements foolish were and vaine,  
Either to leaue her, or to make her die,  
He thought it best to trie a further traine,  
Perswading her for to descend and trie,  
What Ladies faire within the caue remaines  
For why (said he) within this little space  
I saw a goodly mesell in the place.

73

Both rich arayd and very faire of hew,  
Like one of noble linage and degree,  
And this her fortune made me more to rewe,  
That here against her will she seemd to be.  
And when I thought for to descend and see,  
The cause of this her griefe to know and see  
I was no looner from my horse alight  
But with infernall hags I was afrighted.

74

The noble *Bradamant* that was more stout,  
Then warre who it was did her perswade,  
Hath such desire to helpe a damsell out,  
That straight the caue she meaneth to inuade,  
She finds by hap a long bough thereabout,  
Thereof a pole of mightie length she made,  
First with her sword she hewes and pares it fit,  
That done she lets it downe into the pit.

75

She giueth *Pinnabel* the bigger end,  
And prayes him stand aboue and hold it fast,  
And by the same intending to descend,  
Vpon her armes her whole waight she doth cast.  
But he that to destroy her did intend,  
Doth aske if she would learne to leape a  
And laughing, loold his hands that were  
And wisht that all the race of them were with her.

76

Yet great good hap the gentle damsell found,  
As well deseru'd a mind so innocent:  
For why the pole strake first vpon the ground,  
And though by force it shiuerd all and rent,  
Yet were her limbes and life kept safe and sound,  
For all his vile and traitorous intent,  
Sore was the damsell mazed with the fall,  
As in another booke declare I shall.

The Morall.

In this second booke in the combat betwene *Renaldo* and *Sacrapant*, we may obserue how the passion of loue, whether with the termes that men stand vpon for their reputation & credit, are oftentimes occasions of bitter quarrels: and in their soldaine parting and great perplexities, that both of them were stricken into by the false tale that the spirit told it

of



of Orlando, we may gather how very apt ielousie is to conceive and beleue every false report. By Renaldos obedience to Charles in going on embassage notwithstanding all his priuat affaires and affections, we may take example of dutiful obedience to our lawfull Prince. And in that Pinnabel seekes to betray Bradamant, and to kill her by letting her fall into the caue, into the which she trusted he would haue let her downe safely and friendly, we may note two speciall things, one, that it is good to be warie into whose hands we commit the sauegard of our liues and state: the other, that base minded men being wickedly set on reuenge, care not by what treason or villanie they worke the ouerthrow of their enemies.

For the Historie of this Canto, I will not affirme too precisely, for I find not in any credible author of Renaldos embassage into England, neither is it very likely, if the King of England were then in Paris, (as in another place of this worke is affirmed) that a Peere of France should be sent hither, and not rather some English noble man sent from the King to his other subiects in England, with directions and instructions from him.

That Paris and Charles himselfe were in some distresse about that time, is not vnprobable, and that the Turkes at their first arriuall preuailed very farre against the Christians, though it lasted but a while.

As for Rogero, whom he toucheth in this booke, and that is so much spoken of in this whole worke, as *Aeneas* is in *Virgil*, though in both rather in fabulous and in Allegoricall sence, then plainly and historically: yet I find it in very good Authors, that a man of that name was indeed the chiefe raiser of the house of Este the now Dukes of Ferrara.

For the Allegorie, as I noted in the first booke of Bayardo, so the same is still continued or rather repeated, namely, that the horse, which is meant mans feruent and furious appetite, which is more plainly signified where it is said of the horse:

His going onely was to this intent,

To shew his master where the damsell went.

So that still this reuerend fire figured by Bayardo, leades Renaldo on foote, wherely is vnderstood sensualitie to pursue Angelica, with a base desire of the most base pleasure.

In the shield whose light amaze lookers on, and made them fall downe astonied, may be Allegorically meant the great pompes of the world, that make shining shewes in the bleared eyes of vaine people, and blind them, and make them to admire and fall downe before them, hauing indeed nothing but shining titles without vertue, like painted sheathes without apones, or like straw without the graine: either else may be meant the flaring beauties of some gorgeous women, which astonish the eyes of weakeminded men, apt to receiue such louing impressions, as *Atlantas* shield did amaze their senses that beheld it.

For the Allegorie of the horse, what is meant thereby, I referue to another place, where I will follow it more at large when a little space will giue me leaue, and in that booke where he is more treated of.

Which this flying horse is referred, and from whence it is taken, is from *Pegasus*, the flying horse that *Alusion* findes of, bred of the bloud of *Medusa*, on which beast *Bellerophon* was wont to ride, flying the false accusation of etc. etc.

in shield it selfe seemes to allude to the fable of *Medusas* head, that turned men into stones.







## THE ARGUMENT.

*Faire Bradamant was slaine in Marlins caue,  
Melissa meetes her there her ancient friend,  
And there to her she persue notice gaue,  
Of such braue men as should from her descend.  
She told her where she should Rogero haue,  
Whom old Atlanta had in prison pend,  
And from Brunello how to take the ring,  
That vnto libertie her deere might bring.*

**O** I that my head were so  
well storde with skill,  
Of such a noble subiect fit  
to treat,  
Oh that my wits were e-  
quall to my will,  
To frame a phraze fit for so  
high conceit:  
Ye muses that do hold the  
sacred hill,

Inspire my heart with flame of learned . . eat,  
While I presume in base and lowly verse,  
The names of glorious Princes to reherse.

1  
Such Princes as excell all Princes far,  
In all the gifts of bodie and of mind,  
Tenn in peace, victorious eake in war,  
The . . . es most noble, come of noble kind,  
And such (except my guesse do greatly erre)  
As are by heau'ns eternall doome assignd,  
In wealth, in fame, in rule and in prosperitie,  
The hue th' . . . selues, their children and posteritie.

2  
For can I now their feuerail actes most rare,  
Archeend by eu'rie one of them recite,  
No though my verse with *Vergils* might compare,  
Or I as well as *Homer* could endite:  
With their great praite, great volumes filled are,  
The . . . ge of *Uourle*, by them that stories write.  
I onely meane to shew what was foreshowne,  
Long er then persons or their deeds were knowne.

3  
But of *Pemabel* a word to speake,  
When at you heard with traiterous intent,

The bonds of all humanitie did break,  
For which er long himselfe was after shent,  
Thus while base minds their wrōgs do basely wreak  
They do that once that often they repent,  
And curse that time, a thousand times, too late  
When they purlude their vnreunged hate.

*Horace: dum pe-  
nas cin per vincta  
festinat muto.*

4  
With fainting heart, (for sin is full of feare,)  
By stealing steps from hence he doth depart,  
And as he goes he prieth here and there,  
His fearefull looke bewrayes his guiltie hart,  
Nor yet his dread doth moue him to forbear,  
To heape more sin vpon this ill desert.  
Appald with feare, but toucht with no remorse,  
Supposing she was slaine, he takes her horse.

*Sentence.*

*Sentence: Ouid:  
heu quam diffi-  
cile est crimen nō  
prouere vultu?*

5  
But let him go vntill another time,  
For I do meane hereafter you shall heare,  
How he was dealt with, when his double crime,  
In secret wrought, most open did appeare,  
Now vnto *Bradamant* I bend my rime,  
Who with her fall, was yet of heauie cleare:  
And had bene taught a gamball for the nonce,  
To giue her death and buriall at once.

*Booke 22. R. 576.*

6  
Now when she came to her selfe againe,  
And had reconerd remorie and fence,  
She gets her on her feete, although with paine  
In mind to take some way to get fro thence,  
When loe, be . . . face she seeth plaine,  
A stately portall built with great expence,  
And next behind the same she might descie,  
A larger roome and fairer to the eye.



*Merlins tombe.* This was a church most solemn and deuout,  
That stands on marble pillars small and round,  
And raied by art on arches all about,  
That made ech voyce to yeeld a double sound.  
A lightsome lampe that neuer goeth out,  
Did burne on altar standing in the ground:  
That though the rooms were large & wide in space,  
The lampe did serue to lighten all the place.

*Christ our saviour.*

The noble damsell full of reu'rent feare,  
When as her selfe in sacred place she sees,  
(As one that still a godly minde did beare,)  
Begins to pray to him vpon her knees,  
Whose holy side was perft with cruell speare,  
And who to saue our liues his owne did leese:  
And while she stayes deuoutly at her prayre,  
The sage *Melissa* doth to her repaire.

Her gowne vngyrt, her haire about her hed,  
Much like a priest or prophetesse arraid,  
And in her booke a little while she red,  
And after thus vnto the damsell said:  
O thou by Gods appointment hither led,  
O *Bradaman*, most wise and worthy maid,  
I long haue looked here for this thy comming,  
Foretold thereof by prophet *Merlines* cunning.

*The description of  
Merlins tombe,  
out of the book of  
king Arthur, but  
this is poetical  
licence to saue it  
to be in France,  
for it is in Wales.*

Here is the tombe that *Merline* erst did make,  
By force of secret skill and hidden art,  
In which sometimes the Ladie of the lake,  
That with her beautie had bewicht his hart,  
Did make him enter fondly for her take,  
From whence he neuer after could depart.  
And he was by a woman ouer reached,  
That vnto others prophesied and preached.

*End doomes day.*

His carkas dead within this stone is bound,  
But with dead corse the liuing soule doth dwell.  
And shall vntill it here the trumpet sound,  
That brings reward of doing ill or well.  
His voyce doth liue, and answer and expound,  
And things both present past and future tell,  
Resolving men of eu'rie doubtfull case,  
That for his counsell come vnto this place.

About a month or little more or lesse,  
It is since I repaied to *Merlins* graue,  
Of him about the studie I professe,  
Some precepts and instructions to haue.  
And (for I willing was I must confesse)  
To meete you at your comming to this caue:  
For which he did prefixe this certaine day,  
This moued me of purpose here to stay.

Duke *Ammons* daughter silent and still,  
The while the wise *Melissa* to her spake,  
Astonished at this vnusuall sight,  
And doubting if she were a cepe or wake,  
A modest shame with graue her eyes doth fill,  
With which downe cast, it is a ver she doth make:  
Alas what good or merite is in me  
That prophets should my comming so foresee?

And glad of this aduenture vnexpected,  
She followeth her guide with great delight,  
And straight she saw the stately toombe erected,  
Of marble pure that held his bones and sprite,  
And (that which one would little haue suspected)  
The verie marble was so cleare and bright,  
That though the sunne n light vnto it gaue,  
The toombe it selfe did lighten all the caue.

For whether be the nature of some stone,  
A darke some place with lightsonnes to fill,  
Or were it done by magike art alone,  
Or else by helpe of Mathematike skill,  
To make transparencies to meete in one,  
An so conuey the sunne beames where you will:  
But sure it was most curious to behold,  
Set to with carued workes and guilt with gold.

Now when the damsell was (plaf),  
To this strange toombe where *Merlins* bones were  
Forth of the stones that shine like flaming fire,  
His liuely voyce such speeches out doth cast:  
Let fortune euer vour thy desire,  
O *Bradaman*, a noble maid and chaste  
From out whose wombe an issue sha  
That all the world in glorie shall exceed.

The noble blood that came of ancient T  
By two cleare springs in thee  
Shall breed the flowre, the iewell an  
Of all on whom the sunne his beames hat  
Twixt those that heat, and those that  
From *Tage* to *Inde*, *Danub* and *Nile* bet  
Emp'rors and kings, and dukes and lords for ay,  
Of this thy linage carrie shall the sway.

*In the old time.*

*these  
is vnderstood  
East, West,  
North and  
South.*

And many a Captaine braue and worthy Knig  
Shall issue from this stocke, that shall restore  
By warlike feates the glorie shining bright,  
That Italy possessed heretofore.  
And magistrates to maintaine peace and right,  
As *Numa* and *Augustus* did before,  
To cherish vertue, vice so to assuage  
As shall to vs bring backe the golden age.

Wherefore sith God hath by predestination,  
Appointed thee to be *Rogeros* wife,  
And means to blese thine heirs and generation,  
With all the graces granted in this life,  
Persist thou firme in thy determination,  
And stoutly overcome each storme of strife,  
And worke his worthy punishment and pain  
That doth thy liues delight from thee detaine.

This said: the prophet *Merline* holds his peace,  
And giues *Melissa* time to worke her will,  
Who when she did perceiue the voice to cease,  
She purposeth by practise of her skill,  
To shew the damsell part of the creature,  
That should with fame the world hereafter fill.  
And for this end she calls a great assemblie,  
Of spirits that might their persons all resem

*Wb.*



22

Who straight by words of secret vertue bound,  
In numbers great vnto the caue repaire,  
Of whence I know not, whether vnder ground,  
Or else of those that wander in the aire:  
Then thrise she drawes about a circle round,  
And thrise she hallowe it with secret praire.  
Then opens she a triple clasped booke,  
And softly whispering in it she doth looke.

*Som. - old opini-  
on it as there be  
suris in the aire  
likewise in  
th.*

23

o This done she takes the damsell by the hand  
Exhorting her she should not be afraid,  
And in a circle causeth her to stand,  
And for her more securitie and aid,  
And as it were for more assured band,  
Vpon her head some characters she laid.  
Then hauing done her due and solemne rites  
She doth beginne to call vpon the sprites.

24

Behold a c: come rushing in,  
In sundrie shapes wit persons great and tall,  
And now they filled all the roome within,  
So readily they came vnto her c:  
When *Bradaman* to feare did right begin,  
Her t was cold, her colour pall.  
y: rcle kept her like a wall,  
So she needed not to feare at all.

25

Howbeit *Méniss* caused them be gone,  
en e next adioyning caue,  
e to come before them one by one,  
iter notice of their names to haue,  
leisure they may talke thereon,  
ccasion so may seeme to craue.  
Although (quoth she) this short time cannot serue  
To speake of eu'rie one as they deserue.

26

Lo her he first thy first begotten sonne,  
That beares thy fauour and his fathers name,  
By whom the Lombards shall in fight be wonne,  
To *Desiderius* their kings great shame,  
Who shall at Pontyr make the streames to runne,  
With blood in fields adioyning to the same,  
And shall reynge the deeds and minds vnpure,  
Of such as did his fathers fall procure.

*Rogero-L in  
the history in the  
end of this third  
booke.  
This imitation is  
taken out of the  
6. booke of Ver-  
gils Aeneads.*

27

And for this noble act among the rest,  
The our shall giue him in reward,  
rs great of *Calaon* and *Est*,  
y which his familie shall be prefard.  
The next *Uberto* is whose valiant brest,  
Shalbe vnto the holy church a gard.  
ending & with valiant heart and hand,  
To th'honor of *Hesperian* armes and land.

*Hi-  
gras. se locu  
Hesper. in G  
cog. t  
Verg. Aene.  
Uberto.*

28

*Alberto* he is nam'd that third comes in,  
Whose triumphs are most famous eu'rie where,  
Then his sonne *Hugg* that did Millain winne,  
And for his crest two vipers v'd to beare,  
e so is ext to him of kinne,  
That cri g ombardie the crowne shall weare.  
Then *Albertasso* by whose meanes are wonne,  
\* *Beringers* both father and the sonne.

*Hugo.  
The Vipers are  
the ancient crests  
of the Viscounts  
at 11.  
At 30.  
Albertaz. 20.  
Of the Ber-  
gars, looke the  
notes of 16*

29

To him shall *Othons* fauour so encline,  
He shall in marriage giue to him his daughter,  
Now *Hugo* comes againe, o happie line,  
And happie man that sau'd so great a slaughter,  
When at Christ vicars rule Rome did repine,  
He daunteth them and so restord them after:  
The which by wit without the dint of sword,  
He shall effect in *Othons* time the thurd,

*Hugo. 29.*

30

Now *Fulke* comes that to his brother gaue,  
His land in Italy which was not small,  
And dwelt in Almany his land to saue  
Of *Samsony*, that vnto him d: fall.  
A dukedome great that did with Castels braue,  
Accrew to him for want of issue male.  
By him that noble house is held and cherished,  
That but for him would be extinct and perished.

*Fulke.*

31

Then cometh *Atfo* that misliketh warre,  
But yet his sonnes *Bertold* and *Albertasso*,  
With second *Henrie* shalbe still at iarre,  
And bring the Dutchmen to a wofull passe.  
Next young *Renaldo* shining like a starre,  
Shalbe vnto the church a wall of brasse,  
And worke the vtter ouerthrow and losse,  
Of wicked *Fredrike* named *Barbarosse*.

*Atfo.  
Bertaldo  
Albertasso. 31  
Renaldo.*

32

Behold another *Atfo* shall possesse,  
*Verona* with a stately territorie,  
Of *Oton* and *Honorius* no lesse,  
Shalbe a marques made to his great glorie,  
It would be long their names all to expresse,  
That shall protect the sacred consistorie,  
And in most valerous and marshall manner,  
Display and eke defend the Churches banner.

*Atfo.*

33

*Obyso* next and *Folke* you may view,  
With *Henries* two, the father and the sonne,  
Both *Guelfis* that frutfull *Humbrya* shall subdew,  
And keepe the dukedome there by conquest won.  
Behold him that the good state doth renew,  
Of Italy that late was quite vndone.  
Cald *Atfo* fitt that brauely ouerthrew,  
The cruell *Esselino* and him flew.

*Obyso.  
Folke.*

34

That cruell *Esselino* that was thought,  
To haue beene gotten by some wicked diuell,  
That neuer any goodnesse had beene taught,  
But sold his soule to sinne and doing euill,  
Comparing with the cruell acts he wrought,  
Fierce *Nero* were but myld and *Sylla* ciuell.  
Beside this *Atfo* shall in time to come  
The powre of second *Fredrike* overcome.

*Atfo.*

35

And then he shall his b ther *Albandrine*,  
Vnto the Florentines r monie gage,  
And *Othon* with the ion *Gibellin*,  
He shall suppress an d the furious rage,  
And raise the church, or letting it decline,  
But spending to it all his age.  
For which good ce he shall iustly merite, o  
The dukedome of *Ferrara* to inherite.



36  
*Reynoldus* Next him *Reynoldus* now ensuth, whose lot  
 Shall be at Naples to be made away,  
 A death his verrtuous deeds deserued not,  
 But wo to them that guiltlesse blood betray.  
 Now followeth a worthy crue and knot,  
 Whole acts alone to tell would spend a day:  
*Olyss.* *Nicolas* and *Aldbrandine*,  
*Nicolas.* Whole noble deeds shall honour much their line.

37  
*Nicolas. 2.* Then *Nicolas* is he that next ensuth,  
 That rul'd in tender yeares both neere and farre,  
 That findes and eke reuengeth their vnruth,  
 That fought his state by ciuill strife to marre.  
 The sports and exercises of his youth,  
 Are blowes and fights, and dangers great & warre,  
 Which makes that ere to manly state he came,  
 For martiall deeds he gets the onely name.

38  
*Lyonell.* Lo *Lyonell* the glorie of his age,  
 Maintaining peace and quiet all his time,  
 And keeping that with ease by wisdomes sage,  
 To which some others by much paine do clime.  
 That fettred furie and rebuked rage,  
 That locks vp *Mars* in wals of stone and lime:  
 That all his wit, his care and trauell bent,  
 To make his subiects liue in state content.

39  
*Hercules.* Now *Hercules* comes, an *Hercules* indeed,  
 Whose deeds shall merite euerduring fame:  
 That by his paines his countries ease shall breed,  
 And put his enemies to flight and shame.  
 Sharpe to deuise, to execute with speed,  
 Both stout attempt, and patient to the same,  
 No prince shall euer rule his countrie better,  
 No prince had euer countrie more his detter.

40  
 Not onely that he shall their moorish grounds,  
 By great expence to pasture firme reduce,  
 Not that the towne with wall enuiron round,  
 And store with things behooffull to their vse.  
 Not that when warre in ech place shall abound,  
 He shall maintaine them peaceably in truce,  
 Not that he shall according to their asking  
 Disburden them of payments and of tasking.

41  
 But that he shall more and aboue all thease,  
 Leauie them behind him such a worthy race,  
 As search within the circuit of the seas,  
 You shall not find two to supplie their place.  
 So shall the one the other strue to please,  
 So shall the one the others loue embrace,  
 As may for louing brotherly regard,  
 With *Castor* and with *Pollux* be compar'd.

42  
*Alfonso.* The elder of these two *Alfonso* might,  
*Hippolito.* The next of them *Hippolito* we call,  
 Both passing stout and valiant in fight,  
 Both passing wise and prudent withall:  
 And both in due defence of countries right,  
 Shall seeme a bulwarke and a brazen wall:  
 They both shall haue of *heaven*'s good store,  
 They both shall still subdue their euermore.

43  
 Their mother (if I may a mother name,)  
 One more like *Progne* and *Medea* sell,  
 Vnto her endlesse infamie and shame,  
 Against her sonne *Alfonso* shall rebell,  
 And ioyne with Venice force (for this to blame)  
 Though for the same ere long they paid full well,  
 For those they thought to hurt, they did this good,  
 To make the ground more fruitful with their blood.

44  
 Nor far fro thence the Spanish souldier hired,  
 By pastors purse and in that pastors pay,  
 That with a forcible assault aspired,  
 To take a fort, and eke the captaine slay.  
 But loe he comes and they perforce retyred,  
 And haue to short a pleasure of this pray,  
 Scarce one of them in life is left abiding,  
 To notice of so heauie tiding.

45  
 His wit and valour shall him so aduance  
 To haue the honour of *Alfonso*'s field,  
 Where by his meanes vnto the force of France,  
 The Pope and Spaniards, forced are to yeeld:  
 And there in Christian blood, o fatal chance,  
 Shall horses and men, such number shall be keeld,  
 Nor shall not men enough aliue re  
 To burie those shall be in battell slaine.

46  
 The while his brother vnder Card'nals care,  
 Shall couer, nay shall shew a present head  
*Hippolito* (I meane) who shall haue  
 With band of men but small (yet wisely  
 To giue to the Venetians such a cla  
 As few the like in stories haue bene reae  
 To take three times five Gallies at one tie,  
 And barks and boates a thousand more beside.

47  
 Behold two *Sygfmonds* both wise and graue,  
*Alfonso* next, whose fame is talkt of rife,  
 With his five tonnes, then *Hercules* that shall haue  
 The king of France his daughter to his wife,  
 That towards him, her selfe shall so behaue,  
 Shall make him liue most happie all his life,  
*Hippolito* it is that now comes in,  
 Not least for praise and glorie of his kin

48  
 Next *Francis* named third, *Alfonso* two,  
 With many others worthy of renowne  
 The which to name might finde one  
 From *Phœbus* rising to his going downe.  
 Now therefore if you will consent thence to,  
 I here will end and lend the spirits downe:  
 To this the worthy damsell said not noy,  
 And straight the spirits vanisht all away.

49  
 Then *Bradamant*, that all well marked had,  
 Of whom her selfe should be the ancient mother,  
 Did say, to learne she would be very glad,  
 What two those were that suffered from the other,  
 That came with backward steps to loo  
 Vpon the good *Alfonso* and his brother.  
*Melyssa* light, mistaking that suggestion,  
 That moued her to aske so grieuous question.

And

I do not see  
 Elowise  
 mother's  
 here, for  
 vnto  
 booke. In  
 ther the  
 church the  
 measure to  
 D. of Ferrara.

Of this  
 in his  
 booke.

ismund.  
 Al  
 Hercules.

Hippolito.

Francis.  
 Alfonso. 2.



OF ORLANDO FURIOSO.

50

And then as in a trance these words she spake,  
O thou more worthy sonne of worthy fire,  
They are thy blood, on them compassion take,  
Let grace allwage, though iustice kindle ire:  
Then vnto *Bradamant* as new awake,  
I must (said she) denie you this desire,  
I say no more, content you with the sweet,  
For you this lower mortell is not meet.

*In this manner  
of elysius spea-  
o Alfonso,  
he mistakes P. r-  
gill in his booke  
of the Enneids of  
Marcellus.*

51

To morrow when the Sunne at breake of day,  
With light shall dim the light of eu'ry starre:  
I meane my selfe to guide you on your way,  
So as I will be sure you shall not erre.  
The place whereas your loue is forc'd to stay,  
Is from the salt sea shore not very faire:  
That were you past a mile beyond this wood  
The other way would easie be and good

52

Of this night stay the damsell was content,  
And in the caue where she doth remaine,  
And most thereof in *Merlins* toombe she spent,  
Whose voice with talke did her selfe entertaine:  
Emboldning her to giue her selfe consent,  
To loue where she should sure be clou'd againe,  
The messenger of day to cro,  
her guide and she away did go.

*The cocke called  
de fust.*

53

The way they went was darke and vnaccessible,  
Secret vaults and hollowes of the hill,  
And bene a thing impossible,  
A guide of knowledge great and skill:  
They came vnto a path more passible,  
By which they ceate not to ascend, vntill  
The light had left the darke and lothsome place,  
And saw the beames of *Phœbus* chearefull face.

54

And while that vp this hill they slowly stalke,  
Wit. pausing panting oft, and taking wind,  
To make lesse wearie seeme their wearie walke,  
*Meiysse* still doth store of matter find,  
And now of this, and then of that doth speake,  
But chiefly she the damsell puts in mind,  
Of her *Rogero*, how he had bene trained  
Into the prison where he now remained.

55

*Atlanta* that Magician strange is he  
That holdeth him (I trust) vnto his cost,  
In *Pallas* strength or *Mars* (quoth she)  
And eke of armed men a mightie host,  
Yet to attempt by force to set him free,  
Your trauell and your labour all were lost.  
Art must be wonne by art, and not by might  
Force cannot free your welbeloued knight.

*Sensence*

56

For first the castle mounted is on hie,  
Impregnable with wals all ouer steeld,  
And next, the horse he rides hath wings to flie,  
And gallops in the aire as in the field:  
And so he dazleth eu'ry mortall eie,  
By his defence of his enchanted shield,  
With light whereof mens senses are so dazed,  
With sight thereof they fall downe all amazed.

57

In all the world one onely meane hath beene,  
And is yet still to worke so rare a feat,  
A ring there is which from an Indian Queene,  
Was stolne sometime, of price and vertue great:  
This ring can make a man to go vntene,  
This ring can all enchantments quite defeat:  
King *Agramant* hath sent his secretarie,  
Vnto *Rogero* this same ring to carie.

*The ring was  
stolne from  
Angelica.*

58

*Brunello* is his name that hath the ring,  
Most leud and false, but politike and wise,  
And put in trust especiall by his king,  
With it *Rogeros* safetie to deuise:  
Which sith I wish not he, but you should bring,  
To bind him to you by this enterprise,  
And for I would not haue the Turke protect him,  
Because I know he greatly doth affect him.

*A machiavilian  
secretarie.*

59

Do therefore this, when you do meete this man,  
Whose marks I wish in memory you beare,  
His stature is two cubits and a span,  
His head is long and gray, and thin of haire,  
His nose is short and flat, his colour wan,  
With beetle brow, eyes watric not with teare,  
His beard growes on his face without all tint,  
And to conclude, his looke is all a squint.

60

Now when as you this comely man shall meet,  
As sure you shall within a day or two,  
You may with curteous words him seeme to gree,  
And tell him partly what you meane to do:  
But speake not of the ring although you see't,  
For so you may the matter all vndo,  
Then he great courtesie to you will offer,  
And straight his companie to you will proffer.

61

But when vnto the castle you come nie,  
Then see you set vpon him on the way,  
And take away the ring and make him die,  
Nor giue him any time, lest he conuay  
The ring into his mouth, and so therby  
Out of your sight he vanish quite away.  
The worthy damsell markes her speeches well,  
And to the one the other bids farewell.

62

Next day she hapt *Brunello* to espie,  
She knew him straight, she found him at her Inne,  
She growes to question with him by and by,  
And he to lie doth by and by beginne,  
And she dissembles too, and doth denie  
Her countrey, stocke and name, and sex and kinne.  
*Brunello* pleasantly doth talke and tippie,  
Not knowing he did halt before a cripple.

63

Now when they almightie broken had their fast,  
She marking more his fingers than his eies,  
When much good was between them two had past,  
The most whereof were false and forged lies,  
Behold mine host come vnto them in hast,  
And told them new that made them sooner rest  
But here I meane to take a litle pause,  
Before I tell what was thereof the cause.



Morall.

In the third booke we may note in Bradamant a worthy example of deuotion, that in her sodaine mishap, had recourse to prayer. In the great praise of Rogero and Bradamant his posteritie, noblemen and gentlemen of good house ay take comfort of their vertuous ancestors, and thinke themselues beloued of God, and blessed with great temporall blessings, if themselues degenerate not from their worthy forefathers. Also we may note, that commonly good parents bring good children.

Storie.

Bellarmine de  
Antichristo.

And where as Melyssa brings Bradamant by intricate wayes from the caue, and instructs her how to confound Atlantes deuices, it shewes how good and godly counsel makes men ouercome all troubles, and enables them to withstand all wicked practises. And in that Bradamant dissembles with Brunello, we may gather a lesson, which in this age we be too apt to learne, namely, to dissemble with dissemblers.

Concerning the history of this booke, it is diuers, and therefore I meane to note the principallest of them, as far as my litle reading is able to discouer: and first for Merlin (called the English Prophet) I know many are hard of beleef, and thinke it a meere fable that is written both of his birth, of his life, and chiefly of his death: for his birth, indeed I beleue not that he was gotten by an Incubus, yet the possibilitie thereof might be proued by discourse, saue it were too tedious, and perhaps too full of vnmanerly termes for this place: I rather hold with the great clerk Bellarmine, that such birth is either impossible, or peculiar to the great Antichrist when he shall come. But concerning his life, that there was such a man, a great counsellor to King Arthur, I hold it certaine: that he had a castle in Wiltshire called after him Merlinsburie, (now Marlborough) it is very likely, the old ruines whereof are yet seene in our highway from Bath to London. Also the great stones of vnmeasurable bignesse and number, that lie scattered about the place, haue giuen occasion to some to report and others to beleue wondrous stratagemes wrought by his great skill in Magic, as likewise the great stones at Stone on Salisbury plaine, which the ignorant people beleue he brought out of Ireland: and indeed the wiser sort can rathe maruel at, then tell why or how they were set there. But for the manner of his death, and place of his buriall, diuersly written of, and by so sundry countreys challenged, as a man may be bolder to say that all of them are false, then that any of them be true. Some will haue him buried in Cornewall, some in Wales (where they say as borne,) Ariost by Poeticall licence, makes this tombe for him in France, and the fiction of the tombe is taken of a true fiction in King Arthurs booke, namely, that Merlin being exceedingly in loue with the Ladie of the Lake (to be his cunning) shewed her one day among other deuices of his, a tombe that he had made of sufficient capacitie to hold him and his wife withall shewed her a charme, which being pronounced in an order that he shewed her, the tombe would close, and neuer againe be opened. She hauing no mind to him, or rather indeed flatly hating him, grew on the sodaine very gamesome with him, and shewed him some extraordinary kindnesse, and in the end for want of better pastime would needs persuade him to proue if it would hold them both, and so offered her selfe to go in with him: he suspecting nothing then her purpose, went simply in, and straight she shut him in with the couer, and bound it so fast with the charmer more be loosed. This I thought good to set downe for expounding the II. staffe of this booke the plainer, no matter herein is worth the noting, without it be to warne men not to tell such dangerous secrets to women will take occasion to imitate the wisdom of Cato in repenting it after. And thus much for Merlin. There is in a manner all a true historie, and is a repetition of the pedigree of Alfonso Duke of Ferrara, with some briefe touches out of auncient histories of their great exploits in Italie: the exposition of all which, I will not pursue at length, as being needlesse to the learned that haue read those stories, and not very pleasant to the ignorant, nor familiar to our nation. Wherefore I will onely note some very few of them, such as I thinke most necessary, and omit the rest, or referre those that be desirous better to informe themselues to some authors where they may reade it more at large.

Rogero sonne of Bradamant, and this Rogero so much spoken of in this whole booke, came with Charles the great into Italie, where among other Venetian captaines that holpe to suppress Defiderius king of Lombardie: this Rogero was thought to do so good seruice, that the Emperour in reward gaue him and his heires the honors of Calan and Este, neare Padua.

The vipers came to be the crest of the Vicounts of Millaine by this occasion: Otho a valiant man of that family, in the iourney that Godfrey of Bullen made to Ierusalem, called the holy warres, did fight at the siege of Ierusalem hand to hand with Voluce, captaine of the Painims, and slue him, who to make himselfe more terrible, did carry on his crest a huge viper deuouring of a child. Euer since in memory hereof that house carries the viper.

Beringars, of this name there were three, but the chiefe man (meant here) was nephew to the first, and after the death of his grandfather into Italie, and preuailed so farre, that he was proclaimed Augustus, and made king of Lombardie with title King of Romanes: but Agapitus then Bishop of Rome, called in Otho King of the Alma to deliuer Italie from the tyranny of the Beringars, who ouercame them, and vsed them after with great lenency, till afterward they seeking by helpe of an vsurping Pope to tyrannize as before, the same Otho came againe, and in fine destroyed them both, in which it seemes Albertazzo did some great seruice.

Of Frederike Barbarossa Sabellicus writeth, that he maintained Octauius Antipapa (or vsurping Pope) against Alexander, by which great broiles grew in Italy, and much bloodshed, and that the Romanes were so crushed in one battel that he writeth they would neuer be able againe to hold vp their heads. But after this, Barbarossa both prosecuted by his enemies, and punished with the plague in his camp, was glad to fly into Germany: and comming back with new forces, was by the confederats vanquished and quite put downe, and driuen in the end to craue Pope Alexanders fauour. Of this Alexander the Venetians make great boast how they restored him, and haue the story ingrauen or painted in one of their principall Churches: for the Pope being thither in disguised apparell, and liuing closely in the town, he a poore noble man one Ciano discouered him, and made him be greatly honoured by the whole city, by whom as is aforesaid he was restored.

Whereas the two factions of Guelfs and Ghebellines is spoken of (though it would ask a long discourse to tel the origin how



how it first grew) yet somewhat I must needs say of it: the faction first rose of a discord betweene two Dutchmen in Italie being naturall brothers, though vnnaturally falling out, and either drawing parties, it grew in the end to such a faction as neither Sylla and Marius, or Cæsar and Pompey in Rome, nor ours of Lancaster and Yorke in England, nor any other growne of religion, or what cause soeuer besides, hath bene more violent. *Reade of this the Orestia de variis lectione.*

Essellino a notable tyrant, whom one Musatto a Padoan in a tragedie he wrote, affirms to haue bin gotten by the diuell: His crueltie was such, he would cut vp women quicke with child, and burned at one time 12000. men aliue. He was after taken prisoner, and died of famine.

Of Hercules of Este, as the praises are great he giues him, so it appeares in Guychardine, they are well deserued. For when Charles the eight came into Italie like a thunder (as writers of those times call him) this Hercules with his prudent cariage so ordered himselfe, as he and his countrie escaped that tempest.

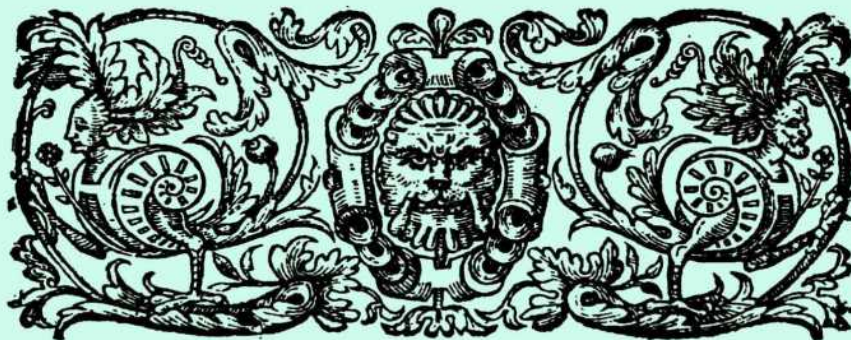
Concerning the victorie that this Hippolito had of the Venetians, I shall haue more occasion to speake of it in the 40. booke.

The two that Bradamant asketh Melyssa of, were brothers to Alfonso Duke of Ferrara, their names are Ferdinand and Iulio: the storie is this. It happened that being all yong men, Hippolito and one of these yonger brothers fel both in loue with one Curtisan, but she entertained the loue of the yonger with most kindnes; whereupon Hippolito asked her one day very instantly, what it was that moued her to prefer his brother afore him; and she said it was his beautifull eie: whereupon Hippolito made some of his pages to thrust out his eies. Notwithstanding he afterward recouered his eies, and finding no redresse but complaining to Alfonso, he and one of his brother conspired to kill him; but at the time of the execution, their hearts faile them, or their minds altered: and as the conspiracie being discovered, they were kept in perpetuall prison.

And in this he alludes to that of Marcellus in Virgil, *Luctus ne quære tuorum.*

*Allusion.*

C









## THE ARGUMENT.

*Bradamant ouercomes the false Magician,  
And sets Rogero free, who by and by  
Leapt on a horse not knowing his condition,  
Who bare him quite from sight of any eye.  
Renaldo failed as he had commission,  
To England ward, but borne by wind awrie,  
At Calidon in Scotland he arrived,  
When faire Iseults foule death was contriued.*

*This is rather an  
when  
se uis muer.  
bling.*

*Some see.*

*Some disbelles  
haue bin conuen-  
dable and neces-  
sary, as that of  
Brutus in Tar-  
quinus time to  
saue himselfe  
from the tyrant.  
Trespass  
exemplum.*

*Connecter blisping  
flars for the m<sup>th</sup>  
part cause great  
wondring.*

**H**ough he that vseth craft  
and simulation,  
Doth seldome bend his  
acts to honest ends,  
But rather of an euill in-  
clination,  
His wit and skill to others  
mischiefe bends:  
Yet sith in this our world-  
ly habitation,  
We do not euer dwell among our frends,  
Dissembling doubtlesse oftentimes may saue  
Mens liues, their fame and goods, and all they haue.

<sup>2</sup>  
If man by long acquaintance and great prooffe,  
To trust some one man can can be allured,  
To whom he may in preience or aloofe,  
Vntold the secrets of his mind assured:  
Then doth this damsell merite no reproofe,  
That with *Brunello* to all fraud inured)  
Frame her selfe to counterfeite a while,  
For to deceiue deceiuers is no guile.

<sup>3</sup>  
Now while thesetwo did to conferre begin,  
She to his fingers hauing still an eie,  
The host and other seruants of the Inne,  
Came on the todaine with a wofull crie,  
And some did gaze without, and some within,  
(As when men see a Comet in the skie)  
The caute of this their wondring and their crying,  
Was that they saw an armed horseman flying.

<sup>4</sup>  
And straight by th'host and others they were told,  
How one that had in Magicke art great skill,

Not farre from thence had made a stately hold,  
Of shining steele, and plac'd it on a hill,  
To which he bringeth Ladies yong and old,  
And men and maids according to his will,  
And when within that castle they haue beene,  
They neuer after haue bene heard or scene.

<sup>5</sup>  
No sooner can he spie a pretie maide,  
But straight he takes her vp into the aire,  
The which his custome makes them all afraid,  
That either are or thinke that they be faire.  
Those hardie knights that went to giue them aide,  
Of which fort many hither did repaire,  
Went like the beasts to the sicke Lions den,  
For all went in, but none returnd agen.

<sup>6</sup>  
This tale in worthy *Bradamant* did breed  
A kind of pleasure and confused ioy,  
In hope (which after she performd indeed)  
The sight of her beloued to enioy,  
She praid the host procure a guide with speed,  
As though each little stay did breed annoy:  
She sweares that in her heart she longd to wastle  
With him that kept the captiues in his castle.

<sup>7</sup>  
Because that you sir knight should want no guide,  
(*Brunello* said) will my selfe be he,  
I know the way and somewhat haue beside,  
By which may fortune you may pleasur'd be.  
He meant the ring of offorce and vertue trade,  
Although he meant not she the same should see.  
Great thanks (quoth she) that you will take & paine.  
In hope hereby the precious ring to gaine.

*Simile.  
Horace: Omnia  
se aduersum spe-  
ctantia nulla  
resorsum.*



8

Thus each from other hiding their intent,  
They forward set like friends by breake of day,  
*Brunello* sometime foremost of them went,  
Sometime behind, as chanced on the way.  
Now had they certaine houres in trauell spent,  
When they arriued where the castle lay,  
Whereas mount *Pyrene* stands aboue the plaine,  
So high as may discouer France and Spaine.

From this mount  
one may see both  
the one sea and  
the other.

9

When as the castle did in sight appeare,  
So strange, so faire, so stately, and so hie,  
In which that knight whom she esteem'd so deare,  
With many others, prisoner did lie.  
She thought her fittest time drew very neare,  
To take the ring, and make *Brunello* die.  
Wherefore with open force she doth assaile him,  
Whole strength with age and feare soon gan to faile

10

(him,

Her meaning was the Caitife to haue kild,  
But vnto that her noble heart said nay,  
Small praise would come from bloud so basely spild,  
She meanes to get the ring another way:  
But first she bound him wher he wild or mild,  
And though with teares he did for pittie pray,  
Yet left she him vnto a tree fast tide,  
And with the ring away she straight did ride.

11

And being in the greene fast by the towre,  
Straight (as the fashion was) her horne she blew,  
Out came that armed knight that present houre,  
And seeing there a challenger in vew,  
He seemeth to assault her with great powre,  
But by the ring she all his talshood knew:  
She law he caride neither sword nor speare,  
Nor any weapon that one need to feare.

12

He onely caride at his saddle bow,  
A shield all wrapped in a crimson case,  
And read a booke by which he made to show  
Some strange and strong illusions in the place:  
And many that these cunnings did not know,  
He had deceiu'd and tane in little space.  
And could both swords and lances to appeare,  
When neither sword nor lances then were neare.

13

But yet the beast he rode was not of art,  
But gotten of a Griffeth and a Mare,  
And like a Griffeth had the former part,  
As wings and head, and clawes that hideous are,  
And passing strength and force and ventrous hart,  
But all the rest may with a horse compare.  
Such beasts as these the hils of *Ryfee* yeeld,  
Though in these parts they haue bin seene but feeld.

14

This monster rare from farthest regi ns brought  
This rare Magician ordred with such skill,  
That in one month or little more he tought  
The sauage monster to obey his will:  
And though by coniurations strange he wrought,  
In other things his fancie to fulfil,  
(As cunning men stil trie each range conclusion)  
Yet in this Griffeth horse was o illusion.

15

The Ladie faire protected by the ring,  
Found all his sleights (although she seemd not so)  
Her purpose to the better passe to bring,  
And first she seemes to ward a coming blow,  
And then to strike, and oft to curse the wing,  
That caride still away her flying fo,  
And sith to fight on horsebacke did not boote,  
She seemes as in a rage to light on foote.

16

The Necromancer, as his manner is,  
Disclosed at the last his shining shield,  
Supposing that the vertue would not misse,  
To make her (as it had done others) yeeld:  
So haue I seene a craftie cat ere this,  
Play with a silly moule of house or field,  
And let it go a while for sport and play,  
But k at last and beare it quite away.

17

I say that he cat, the other misse,  
Resem ed had in euery former fight  
But now this ring had made this one wife,  
That when she saw the strange enchanted light,  
She falleth not ff ce, but of deuise,  
As though she were oned at the sight,  
And lay like one e and sense bereaued,  
By which the poore Magician was deceaued.

18

For straight he lighted from the flying horse,  
To take her as he had done many mo,  
The shield and booke in which was all his for  
He left behind him at his saddle bow,  
But thinking to haue found a senselesse corse,  
Amazd and dead, he finds it nothing so  
For vp she starts, so quite the case was altered,  
That with the cord he brought, himselfe was haltred.

19

And when with those selfe bonds she had him tide,  
By which he thought before her to haue snared,  
She strong and yong, he witherd, old and dride,  
Alas an vnmeet match to be compared,  
Forthwith determining he should haue dide,  
To strike his head from shoulders she prepared,  
Till she was mou'd to mercie with his teares,  
And with the sight of white and hoary haire.

20

For when he saw his force was ouerlaid,  
And that her strength was not to be withstood,  
O pardon life thou heauenly wight (he saie)  
No honour comes by spilling aged blood.  
Which words to mercie mou'd the noble maid,  
Whose mind was alwayes merciful and good.  
Then why he built the castle she demanded,  
And what he was to tell her him commanded.

21

With wofull words the old man thus replide,  
I made this castle for no ill intention,  
For couetice or any fault beside,  
Or that I loued rapine or contention,  
But to preuent a danger shall betide  
A gentle knight, I framed this inuention:  
Who as the heauens hath shewd me in this season,  
Shall die in Christian state by filthy treason.

Rozet



22

Rogero named is this worthy youth,  
 Whole good and safetie faine I would aduance,  
 My name *Atlante* is to tell you truth,  
 I bred him of a child, till his hard chance,  
 And valiant mind (that breeds alas my ruth)  
 With *Agramant* entist him into France.  
 And I that (like mine owne child) alway lou'd him,  
 From France and danger faine would haue resnou'd

23

(him.

By art and helpe of many a hellish elfe,  
 This castle for *Rogero* I did build,  
 And tooke him as I meant to take thy selfe,  
 But that with greater art I was beguile,  
 From daintie fare, and other worldly pelfe,  
 Because he should not thinke himselfe exild,  
 For company I brought him worthy wights,  
 Both men and women, Ladies faire and Knights.

24

They haue all plentie of desired pleasure,  
 I bend to their contentment all my care,  
 For them I spend my trauell and my treasure,  
 For musicke, clothes and games, and daintie fare,  
 As hart can thinke, and mouth require with measure,  
 Great store for them within this castle are.  
 Well had I traueled, well my time bestowed,  
 But you haue mard the fruits that I had sowed.

25

But our mind be gracious as your looke,  
 Ifst e heart bide not in tender brest,  
 Behold I offer thee my shield and booke,  
 Horse, and grant my iust request;  
 two or three, or all the Knights I tooke,  
 thee free, let but *Rogero* rest:  
 Whole health whose wealth, whose safty and welfare  
 I haue euer bene (and euer shall) my care.

26

Your care (quoth she) is very ill bestowne,  
 In thraldome vile to keepe a worthy wight:  
 As for your gifts you offer but mine owne,  
 Sith by my conquest you are mine in right.  
 Those dangers great you say to be forshowne,  
 And vpon him in time to come m light,  
 With figures cast and heavenly planets vewed,  
 Cannot be knowne or not be eschewed.

27

How can you others harmes foresee so farre,  
 And not preuent your owne that were so nic?  
 I certaine shall suppose your art doth erre,  
 the rest the end the truth shall trie:  
 I now intend your matter all to marre,  
 And that before these bonds I will vntie,  
 You shall set free and loose your prisoners all,  
 Whom in this castle you detained thrall.

28

When as the poore old man was so distrest,  
 That needs he must for feare and dread obey,  
 And that this same imperious dames behest,  
 Could neither beare deniall nor delay,  
 To do as she commands he deemes it best,  
 And therefore takes th'enchanted place away.  
 He brings some hollow fuming pots of stone,  
 And straight the wals and buildings all were gone.

Sentence.  
 Sir Tho. Moore.  
 Sinque presciteris  
 vitandi est nulla  
 facultas. Quid  
 presciteri iuuat  
 que patiētia ca-  
 men?

Some hold opinio  
 that natures  
 kind spirits in  
 paine or hollow  
 ones, by  
 worke shew  
 vantage, &c.

29

This done; himselfe eke vanisht out of sight,  
 As did the castle at that present hower,  
 Then Ladies, Lords, and many a worthy knight,  
 Were straight releast from his enchanted power:  
 And some there were had taken such delight  
 In those so statelie lodgings of that tower,  
 That they esteemd that libertie a paine,  
 And wisht that pleasant flauery againe.

30

Here were at freedome set among the rest,  
*Gradassio*, *Sacrapant*, two kings of name,  
*Prasylde* and *Iroldo* that from th'Est  
 Into this country with *Renaldo* came.  
 Here *Bradamant* found him she loued best,  
 Her deare *Rogero* of renowned fame,  
 Who after certaine notice of her had,  
 Did shew to see her he was very glad.

31

As one of whom he great account did make,  
 And thought himselfe to her most highly bound,  
 Since she put off her helmet for his sake,  
 And in her head receiu'd a grievous wound,  
 Twere long to tell what toile they both did take,  
 Both night and day each other to haue found,  
 But till this present time they had no meeting,  
 Nor giu'n by word nor writing any greeting.

32

Now when before him present he beheld  
 Her that from danger had him sole redeemed,  
 His heart with so great ioy and mirth was fild,  
 The happiest wight on earth himselfe he deemed:  
 And cristall teares from her faire eyes distild,  
 Embracing him whom she most deare esteemed.  
 As oft we see a strong and sodaine passion,  
 Bring forth effects quite of another fashion.

33

The Griffeth horse the while vpon the plaine,  
 Stood with the target at his saddle bow,  
 The damsell thought to take him by the raine,  
 But he then mounteth vp, and like a crow  
 Chast by a dog forthwith descends againe;  
 And standeth still, or soareth very low,  
 And when that some come nie in hope to take him,  
 He flies away that none can ouertake him.

Simile.

34

But neare vnto *Rogero* soone he staid,  
 Which by *Atlantas* care was sole procured,  
 Who for *Rogeros* danger was afraid,  
 And thinkes his safetie neuer well assured,  
 Wherefore he sent this monster for his aid,  
 And by this meanes from Europe him allured,  
 To his welfare his cares and thoughts he bendeth,  
 To succor and preserue him he intendeth.

35

*Rogero* from his horse forthwith alighted,  
 (The horse he rode on was *Frontyno* named)  
 And with this flying horse was so delighted,  
 That though he saw him wanton and vntamed,  
 Yet vp he leapt, and soone was sore afrighted,  
 He finds he would not to his mind be framed,  
 For in the aire th' Griffeth soard to hie,  
 As doth the Faulcon that at towle doth lie.

C iii



36

The damsell faire that now beheld her deare,  
Borne farre away by force of monsters wing,  
Was sorowfull and of so heauie cheare,  
That to their course her wits she scant could bring.  
The tale of *Ganymed* she once did heare,  
Whom Poets faine to tend the heauenly king,  
She doubts may true of her *Rogero* be,  
That was as comely and as faire as he.

*Ganymed* fained  
by the Poets to be  
*Iupiters* cupbea-  
rer, & carried up  
to heauen by an  
eagle.

37

As long as eyficht could at all preuaile,  
So long she viewd him still in all and part:  
But when his distance made the sight to faile,  
At least she followd him in mind and hart,  
To sob, to sigh, to weepe, lament and waile,  
She neuer leaues these chances ouerthwart.  
And seeing plaine her loue and shee were parted,  
She tooke *Frontyno* and away departed.

It followes in the  
7 booke. 30 staff.

38

Now was *Rogero* mounted vp so hie,  
He seemd to be a mote or little pricke,  
For no man could distinguish him by eie,  
Except his sight were passing fine and quicke:  
All southerly this *Griffeth* horse doth flie,  
(Was neuer iade that seru'd man such a trick)  
But let him on his way, God speed him well,  
For of *Renaldo* somewhat I must tell.

It followes in the  
6 booke. 16 staff.

39

Who all the while with raging tempest strided,  
Borne where him selfe nor no man else did know,  
By cruell stormie winds and weather driued,  
That dayes and nights surceased not to blow:  
At last in Scotland weary he arriued,  
Where woods of *Callidony* first do show,  
A famous wood wherein in times of old,  
Braue deeds were done by ventrous knights & bold.

A famous forrest  
of Scotland.

40

Here haue those famous knights great honour won,  
At whose rare worth the world it selfe did wonder,  
Here were most valiant acts atchieu'd and done,  
By knights that dwelt there neare or far afunder,  
And many a man hath here bene quite vndone,  
Whose feeble force his enemy was vnder.  
Here were, as proued is by ancient charter,  
The famous *Tristram*, *Lancelot* and sir *Arther*.

41

At this same wood *Renaldo* from his fleet,  
Well mounted on his Bayards backe did part,  
He points his men at *Barwicke* him to meet,  
The while him selfe alone with valiant heart,  
Sometime on horsebacke, sometime on his feete,  
Doth march in mind to do some worthy part.  
But seeing now the night came on so fast,  
Vnto an Abbey he repaires at last.

Here you must  
begin to read the  
single tale of *Ge-  
neura*, vnto the  
10 staff. of the 6.  
booke.

42

The Abbot and his Monks with comely grace,  
As holy men of humane mann skilled,  
Did welcome him, and in a lit space,  
With costly fare his emptie stomach filled.  
*Renaldo* straight enquired of the place,  
What feates of armes had there bene late fulfilled,  
And where a man by valiant may show,  
If his exploits deserue disprais or no.

43

They said that in that wood and forrest, find  
Aduentures strange and feates of armes h night,  
But as the place, so are the actions blind,  
That oft their doings neuer come to light.  
But if (say they) we may perswade your mind,  
Attempt an action worthy of a knight,  
Where if you passe the perill and the paine,  
Eternall fame shall vnto you remaine.

44

For if you would performe an act indeed,  
Whereby great name and honour may be wonne,  
Then this would be the best and noblest deed,  
That late or long time past was euer done:  
Our Princes daughter standeth now in need,  
Of great defence, a danger great to shunne,  
Against a knight *Lurcanio* by name,  
Th seekes her life to take away and fame.

45

This knight hath her vnto the king accused  
I thinke of malice rather then of right,  
That he hath seene how she her selfe accus'd,  
And closely tooke her louer vp by night.  
Now by the lawes that in this land are vs'd,  
Except she haue a champion that by might  
Within a month *Lurcanio* proue a liar,  
She shall be straight condemned to the fier

This bloudie Law,  
shanked by G. 1.  
is disannulled in  
this Island this  
good wile.

46

The Scottish law that breedeth all this strife,  
Appoints that all of base or better sort,  
That take a man except she be his wife,  
And spends her time with him in court  
By cruell torment finish shall her life,  
Except she find some knight that will supp  
That she the hainous fact hath not committed,  
But that in law she ought to be acquitted.

47

The King for faire *Geneura* takes great thought,  
Both for her safetie and her estimation,  
And seeks by all good means that may be wrought  
For her defence, and maketh proclamation,  
That by whose helpe from danger she is brought,  
(Prouided be one of noble nation)  
Shall haue the good damsell for his wife,  
With liuings large to e him all his life.

our daugh-  
ter to the king of  
Scots.

48

But if within this month that now ensuth,  
(So little time for her defence is left her)  
No knight will come that will defend her truth,  
Then friends and fame, and life will be b  
This enterprife would much commend you, you  
The praise whereof would last a great while after:  
And from *Atlantas* pillars vnto Inde,  
A fairer Ladie you shall neuer finde.

49

Now then beside the honour and the praise,  
To haue a state, may make you liue content,  
The Princes loue (that helpeth many waies,  
Whose honour now is halfe consum'd and spent.  
Againe true knights should helpe at all allies,  
When any harme to Ladies faire is ment.  
The very law of knighthood doth comend you,  
To graunt this aide that we do now dema  
nd you.

Knights  
sworne to defend  
iustice with she  
rd and to re-  
leue he oppres-  
sed.

*Renaldo*



50

*Renaldo* pausd, and after thus he spake,  
 Why then (said he) must this faire damsell die,  
 That for her true and secret louers sake,  
 Did condescend within his armes to lie?  
 Accurst be they that such a law did make,  
 Accurst be they that meane to liue thereby,  
 Nay rather point a punishment and paine  
 For such as do their louers true dildaine.

51

If faire *Geneura* had her friend or no,  
 I stand not now the matter to decide,  
 Yea I would praise her had she done it so,  
 That by her foes it had not bene eside.  
 Be as be may, my meaning is to go  
 To fight for her, it I may haue a guide  
 That will but shew me where is her accuser,  
 And I shall quickly proue he doth abuse he

52

I know not if the fact she haue con- ed,  
 Nor can I say in this the certaine ture:  
 But this I say, it ought to remitted,  
 Much rather then she should distresse endure.  
 I further they were but meanly witted,  
 That did so straight a statute first procure.  
 I also say, this law they ought recall,  
 In place thereof a better to enstail.

53

Sith desire the fancies doth possesse,  
 Both of the male and of the female gender,  
 To do that thing that fooles count great excesse,  
 Which the flame that *Cupid* doth engender,  
 Grant the men more scope, the women lesse,  
 Is it for which no reason we can render.  
 Men vsing many neuer are ashamed,  
 But women vsing one or two are blamed.

*Women should  
 some be  
 more with an  
 opinion.*

54

This law I say is partiall and naught,  
 And doth to women plaine and open wrong,  
 I trust in God they shall be better taught,  
 And that this law shall be reuokt ere long.  
 The Abbot and his Monks in word and thought,  
 Allowd *Renaldos* speech, both old and yong:  
 They all condemne the law and partly blame  
 The king that may endeth not the same.

*In this point I  
 think my are  
 of religion.*

*In this fourth booke, whereas dissembling is praised, we may note in what sort and with what persons it is allowable, Morall.*  
*seeing generally in it selfe it is a most vnnoble and unworthy qualitie. In that Bradamant by the ring doth discover*  
*Atlantas enchantments, and frustrate all his purpose, we may note how reason tempered with courage, preuailes to the o-*  
*ther all deceits and subtill practises. In Rogero, that was caried away vnawares by the winged horse, we haue*  
*example to make vs take heed of rash & vnadvised enterprises. In Renaldos speech, condemning the rigor of the law,*  
*that adulter was punished by death in women rather then in men, as we may with him iustly mistake such partialitie*  
*awes: so we may note the manner and phrase of speech of yong gentlemen (as Renaldo was) that make so light of*  
*their sweet game of lechery, as they call it, not regarding how sower heavy punishment hangs ouer it, and what a foule*  
*reproach it is to both sexes. And so much for the Morall.*

*For the Historie of this booke, little is to be said of the time of Charles the great, because the booke digresseth to other Historie.*  
*matters, but whereas mentron is made of Calledon Forrest in Scotland, and of King Arthurs his knights, I thought it not a-*  
*miss, as in the former booke I told you, what I thought of Merlin that was Arthurs great counseiler, so now somewhat to*  
*touch the peace will permit, the reports that are true and probable of king Arthurs. It is generally written and beleued*  
*that King Arthurs was a notable valiant and religious Prince, and that he gouerned this Land in that rude age with*  
*great love of justice, and honour of forraigne nations, he instituted an order of the knights of the round table, and*  
*as it seemeth of some meriment of hunting, or some pleasant exercises. He was himselfe of stature very tall, as appeares*  
*by the proportion of him selfe (as they say here in our countrey of Somerset) in a doore of a Church by the Countrey of Somerset.*

55

Next morning when *Renaldo* doth perceau  
 The Sunne appeare, and sturres their heads to hide,  
 He thanks them for his cheare, and taketh leaue,  
 And takes a target-bearer for his guide,  
 For feare lest vnkowne paths should him decaue.  
 Himselfe all armed doth on Bayard ride,  
 And to the Scottish court he goes a stranger,  
 For to defend the damsell faue from danger.

56

And for they thought to take a way more nie,  
 They leaue the common way a mile or twaine,  
 When suddenly they heard a piteous crie,  
 Well like to one that feared to be flaine.  
 In hast they spurre their hortes by and by,  
 Along the vale, and looking downe the plaine,  
 A maide betweene two murderers they saw,  
 That meant to take her life against all law.

57

The caitifes put the damsell in great feare,  
 And shewd that they were come to end her dayes,  
 Which made her weepe, and shed full many a teare.  
 To moue their minds she trieth many wayes:  
 And though the fact a while they did forbear,  
 Yet now they had remoued all delays,  
 When as *Renaldo* came vnto her aid,  
 And made the malefactors sore afraid.

58

Away they fled and left the wench alone,  
 For dread of death appald and sore affrighted,  
 Who all her cause of danger and of mone,  
 Vnto *Renaldo* straight would haue recited,  
 But so great hast he maketh to be gone,  
 He gaue no care, nor from his horse alighted,  
 But to ensue the iourney first assignd him,  
 He could the guide to take her vp behind him.

59

And now on horsebacke marking well her face,  
 And marking more her gesture and behauour,  
 Her pleasing speech, and modest sober grace,  
 She now hath wonne a great deale more his fauour.  
 And after he had rode a little space,  
 To tell her hard aduenture he would haue her:  
 And she began with humble voice and low,  
 As more at large hereafter I will show.



## THE FOVRTH BOOKE

of Glassenbury, in which Abbey his wife Queene Gueneuer was buried, and within our memory taken vp in a coffin, with her body and face in shew plainly to be discerned, saue the very tip of her nose, as diuers dwelling thereabout haue reported. But what manner of death King Arthur himselfe died, it is doubtfull, and that which they report seemes meerly fabulous, namely that he was caried away in a barge from a bridge called Pomperles, neare the said Glassenbury, and so conueyed by vnknowne persons, (or by the Ladie of the Lake) with promise to bring him backe againe one day: vpon which it seeme the foolish people grounded their vaine saying (King Arthur comes againe.)

For my part I confesse my selfe to haue bin more inquisitiue of such trifles then a wiser man would; and viewing that bridge and all that countrey about Glassenbury, I see good reason to guesse, that all that countrey which now we call our moores (and is reduced to profitable and fertill ground) was sometime recovered from the sea, and might be nauigable vp to Glassenbury in those times: and so I suppose the said King being drowned there by some mishap, and being well beloued of the people, some fained (to content their minds) that he was but gone a little way, and would come againe: as the Senate of Rome, hauing killed Romulus for his tyrannie, deuised a tale of I know not what *deus* to make the people beleue he was turned to a god. M. Camden the best antiquarie of our time, writeth that King Arthurs body was taken vp at the foresaid Glassenbury in the time of King Henrie the second, which indeed is most credible, as he there proueth. But this I conclude, that this Prince was so worthy a man in his time, as not onely true histories haue greatly recommended to the posteritie, but almost all Poeticall writers that haue bin since, haue mentioned this famous Prince Arthur of England, as a person of whom no notable exploit was incredible. And thus much for King Arthur.

Camd. in Britania. vide Somerses.

Allegoric.

For the Allegorie of this booke, much might be said of Atlant, of his horse and his shield, but I will onely touch what I thinke will be thought most worth the noting, and let passe the rest for claustrinat conceit. Atlant by many of his gestures and actions here specified, may signifie Cupid, or that fond fan that all loue: and whereas he takes vp such braue captains and souldiers, as well as women and weaklings: it seemes consonant to that pretie fantastick verse of Ouid:

*Militat omnis amans & habet sua castra Cupido.*

*All louers warriers are, and Cupid hath his campe.*

Further, the wings of this strange beast called the Griphith horse, agree with Petrarks description of Cupids wings:

*Sopra gli homeri hauea sol due grand' ali, di color mille.*

*Vpon his shoulders were two mightie wings, of thousand colours.*

Atlant takes, and imprisons those he takes. Loue is as close and inextricable a prison as his.

The wayes to Atlants castle are described to be craggie, headlong, and vnpleasant. Such be the wayes of that son. The castle is said to be placed in the middle of a rockie mountaine crouen in sunder: by which is meant, that totally we speake of possesseth vs, and dwels in vs most of all about the middle of our age, as Dant saith,

*Nel mezzo del camin di nostra vita,*

*Mi retrouai per vna selua oscura,*

*Che la dritta via era smarrita.*

*While yet my life was in her middle race,*

*I found, I wandred in a darke some wood,*

*The right way lost with mine vnsteddy pace.*

This is that wandring wood, of which the dolefull Petrark complains so often in those his sweete mourning sonets, in which he seemes to haue comprehended all the passions that all men of that humour haue felt. And this he saith of it:

*Ond' Io son fatto vn' animal siluestro,*

*Che co pie vaghi solitari e lassi,*

*Porto il cor graue, e gli occhi humidi e bassi,*

*Al mondo che e per me vn deserto.*

*Thus I am growne a sauage beast and vild,*

*That still with wandring steps and solitarie,*

*A heauy heart and watred eyes do carie,*

*About the world which is my Forrest wyld.*

Also whereas it is said what plentie of all pleasures they had in Atlantas castle, it signifieth, that delicious fare and such Epicuriall and idle life, are the chiefe nurses of this fond affection, according to that saying of Ouid,

*Otia si tollas periere cupidinis arcus,*

*Contemptæque iacent & sine luce faces.*

*Take idlenesse away, and out of doubt*

*Cupids bow breakes, and all his lamps go out.*

Finally, the fortification of the castle, the fuming pots of stone, the situation and height, and euery thing that is said of the man, the horse, the house, the shield, are so easie to vnderstand in allegoricall sence, as I thinke it needlesse to proceed any further in this matter.

Allusion.

For allusions, I find little to be said, saue of Gencura her selfe, which I will referre to the next booke.





io  
aang

Polingio

Rinaldo

Rinal

Rinaldo

SCVDIER

RINALDO

DALINDA

SPINES

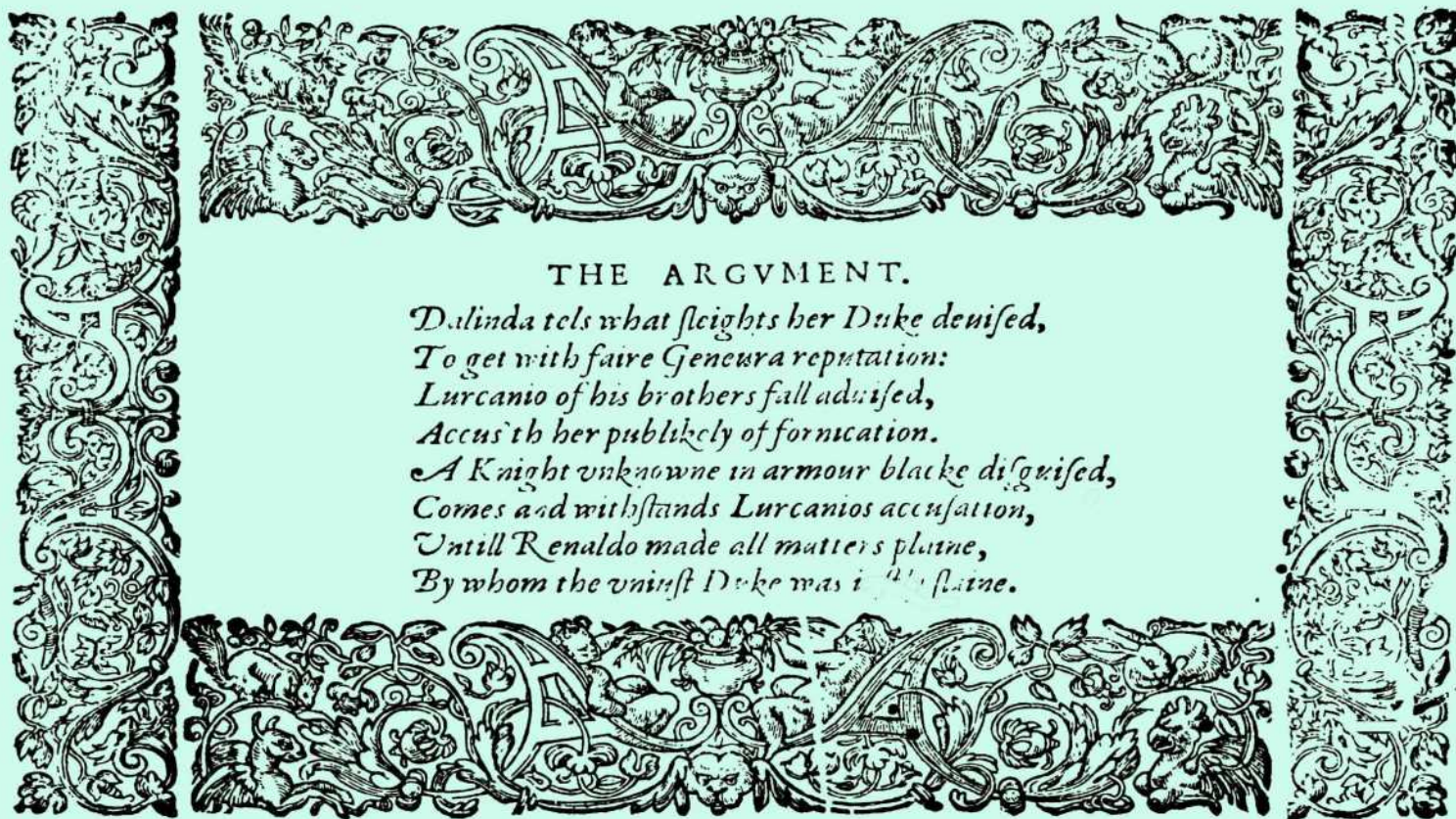
LVRCA  
NIO

ARJODANTE

RINALDO

SCVDIER





## THE ARGUMENT.

*Dalinda tels what sleights her Duke deuised,  
To get with faire Geneura reputation:  
Lurcanio of his brothers fall aduised,  
Accuseth her publicly of fornication.  
A Knight unknowne in armour blacke disguised,  
Comes and withstands Lurcanios accusation,  
Vntill Renaldo made all matters plaine,  
By whom the vniust Duke was iustly slaine.*

*Looke more at  
large in the end  
of the booke, of  
this morall.*



Against the law of nature will rebell.  
The sauage Lions, Beares and Bulls most wyld,  
Vnto their females shew themselues most myld.

1  
E see the rest of liuing  
creatures all,  
Both birds and beasts that  
on the earth do dwell,  
Liue most in peace, or if  
they hap to brall,  
The male and female still  
agreeth well.  
The fierce, the faint, the  
greater nor the small,

2  
What fiend of hell, what rage raignes here so rife,  
Disturbing still the state of humane harts?  
How comes it that we find twixt man and wife,  
Continuall iarres bred by iniurious parts?  
The vndefiled bed is filde by strife,  
And teares that grow of words vnkind and thwarts:  
Nay oft all care and feare is so exiled,  
Their guiltie hands with blood haue bene defiled.

*S. Paul c llesh  
marriage by the  
Synonyma of the  
bed vndefiled.*

3  
No doubt they are accurst and past all grace,  
And such as haue of God nor man no feare,  
That dare to strike a damsell in the face,  
Or of her head to minish but a haire:  
But who with knife or poison would vnlace  
Their line of life, or flesh in peeces teare,  
No man, nor made of flesh and blood I deeme him,  
But sure some hound of hell I do esteeme him.

4  
Such were these theeues that would the damsell kill,  
That by Renaldos comming was recovered:

They secretly had brought her downe the hill,  
In hope their fact could neuer be discouered  
Yet such is God, so good his gracious will  
That when she looked least she was deliuer'd,  
And with a chearfull heart that late was sore,  
She doth begin to tell the wofull store

5  
Good sir (said she) my conscience to discharge,  
The greatest tyrannie I shall you tell,  
That erst in Thebes, in Athens or in Arge,  
Was euer wrought, or where worst tyrants dwell  
My voice and skill would faile to tell at large  
The filthy fact, for I beleue it well,  
Vpon this countrey Phoebus shines more cold,  
Because he doth such wicked acts behold.

*In these three et-  
tles. Thus, s. c. 11  
tyra. ... haue  
bene committe.*

*Nec auct  
equos tyranis  
vngit ab urbe.*

6  
Men seeke we see, and haue in euery age,  
To toke their foes, and tread them in the dust:  
But there to wreake their rancor and their rage,  
Where they are lou'd, foule and too vniust.  
Loue should preuaile, iust anger to asswage,  
If loue bring death, whereto can women trust?  
Yet loue did breed my danger and my feare,  
A thousand heare if you will giue me care.

*Sentences.*

7  
For entring first into my tender spring  
Of youthfull yeares, vnto the court I came,  
And serued there the daughter of our king,  
And kept a place of honor with good fame,  
Till loue (alas that loue such care should bring)  
Enuide my state, and sought to do me shame.  
Loue made the Duke of Alban seeme to me,  
The fairest wight that erst mine eye did see.

And



8

And (for I thought he lou'd me all aboute)  
I bent my selfe to hold and loue him best,  
But now I find that hard it is to proue,  
By fight or speech what bides in secret brest,  
While I (poore I) did thus belecue and loue,  
He gets my bodie bed and all the rest.  
Nor thinking this might breed my mistres danger,  
I vld this practise in *Geneuras* chamber.

9

Where all the things of greatest value lay,  
And where *Geneura* sleepes her selfe so metime,  
There at a window we did finde a way,  
In secret sort to couer this our crime:  
Here when my loue and I were bent to play,  
Ght him by a scale of cord to elime,  
And at the window I my selfe would stand,  
And let the ladder downe into his hand.

10

we meete together at this sport,  
As *Geneuras* absence giues vs leaue,  
So vld to other chambers to resort  
In summer time, and this for heat to leaue:  
And this we carried in so secret sort,  
As none there was our doings did perceaue,  
For why, this window standeth out of sight,  
Where none do come by day nor yet by night.

11

Twixt vs is vse continu'd many dayes,  
Yea many months we vld this priuie traine,  
e set my heart on fire so many wayes,  
Th still my liking lasted to my paine.  
I might haue found by certaine strange delayes,  
That he but little lou'd and much did faigne,  
For all his sleights were not so closely couered,  
But that they might full easly be discouered.

12

last my Duke did seeme enflamed sore,  
One faire *Geneura*: neither can I tell,  
If now this loue began or was before,  
That I did come to court with her to dwell.  
But looke if I were subiect to his lore,  
And looke if he my loue requited well,  
He askt my aid herein no named,  
To tell me how of he was enflamed.

13

Not all of loue, but partly of ambition,  
He beares in hand his minde is onely bent,  
Because of her great state and hie condition,  
To haue her for his wife is his intent:  
H othing doubreth of the kings permission,  
I d he obcaind *Geneuras* free assent.  
e was it hard for him to take in hand,  
That was the second person in the land.

14

He sware to me, if I would be so kind  
His hie attempt to further and assist,  
That at his hands I should great fauour finde,  
A re king pr cure me what me list:  
How he would euer keepe it in his mind,  
And in his er loue to me persist,  
And not t istanding wife and all the rest,  
I shg e sure that he would loue me best.

15

I straight consented to his sond request,  
As readie his commandment to obey,  
And thinking still my time employd best,  
When I had pleas'd his fancie any way:  
And when I found a time then was I prest,  
To talke of him, and good of him to say.  
I vld all my art, my wit, and paine,  
*Geneuras* loue and liking to obtaine.

16

God knowth how glad I was to worke his will,  
How diligent I followd his direction,  
I spar'd no time, no trauell, nor no skill,  
To this my Duke to kindle her affection:  
But alwayes this attempt succeeded ill,  
Loue had her heart alreadie in subiection,  
A comely knight did faire *Geneura* please,  
Come to this countrie from beyond the seas.

17

From Italy for seruice (as I heare)  
Vnto the court he and his brother came,  
In tourneys and in tilt he had no peere,  
All Brittain soone was filled with his fame.  
Our king did loue him well and hold him deere,  
And did by princely gifts confirme the same.  
Faire castels, townes, and lordships, him he gaue,  
And made him great, such power great princes haue.

18

Our Soueraigne much, his daughter likt him more,  
And *Ariodant* this worthy knight is named,  
So braue in deeds of armes himselfe he bore,  
No Ladie of his loue need be ashamed:  
The hill of Sicil burneth not so sore,  
Nor is the mount Vesuuio so inflamed,  
As *Ariodantes* heart was set on fire,  
*Geneuras* beautie kindling his desire.

*Aetna and Vesuuio, two mountains that did cast out flames.*

19

His certaine loue by signe most certaine found,  
Did cause my sute vnwillingly was hard,  
She well perceiu'd his loue sincere and sound,  
Enclining to his sute with great regard,  
In vaine I seeke my Dukes loue to expound,  
The more I seeke to make the more I mard.  
For while with words I seeke to praise & grace him  
No lesse with workes she striueth to deface him.

*Pe amoris amabilis esto.*

20

Thus being oft repulst (so euill sped I),  
To my too much beloued Duke I went,  
And told him how her heart was fixt alredie,  
How on the stranger all her mind was bent:  
And praid him now sith there was no remedie,  
That to surceale his sute he would content,  
For *Ariodant* so lou'd the princely wench,  
That *Neptunes* floods vnneeth his flames cold quene.

21

When *Polynesse* (so the Duke we call)  
This tale vnpleasant oftentime had hard,  
And found himselfe his likel'hood verie small,  
When with my words her deeds he had compar'd,  
Greeu'd with repulse, and greeued therewithall,  
To see this stranger thus to be prefard,  
The loue th late his heart so sore had burned,  
Was cooled all, and into hatred turned.

*Geneura.*

*A poeitic vld  
sometime so woo  
she maid so with  
she mistres.*



22

Intending by some vile and subtil traine,  
To part *Geneura* from her faithfull louer,  
And plant so great mislike betweene them twaine,  
Yet with so cunning shew the same to couer,  
That her good name he will so foule distaine,  
Aliue nor dead she neuer shall recouer.  
But lest he might in this attempt be thwarted,  
To none at all his secret he imparted.

23

Now thus resolu'd (*Dalinda* faire) quoth he,  
(I so am cald) you know though trees be topt,  
And shrowded low, yet sprout yong shoots we see,  
And issue from that head so lately lopt:  
So in my loue it fareth now with me.  
Though by repulse cut short and shrewdly cropt,  
The pared tops such buds of loue do render,  
That still I proue new passions do engender.

*Simile.*  
*The like is in Ho-*  
*race bu 4. Ode of*  
*the fourth booke:*  
*Durus ut illex*  
*sensa bipennibus.*

24

Ne do I deeme so deare the great delight,  
As I didaine I should be so reiect,  
And lest this griefe should ouercome me quight,  
Because I faile to bring it to effect,  
To please my fond conceit this very night,  
I pray thee deare to do as I direct:  
When faire *Geneura* to her bed is gone,  
Take thou the clothes she ware and put them on.

25

As she is wont her golden haire to dresse,  
In stately sort to wind it on her wire,  
So you her person liuely to expresse,  
May dresse your owne and weare her head attire,  
Her gorgets and heriewels rich no lesse,  
You may put on t'accomplish my desire.  
And when vnto the window I ascend,  
I will my comming there you do attend.

26

Thus I may passe my fancies foolish fit,  
And thus (quoth he) my selfe I would deceiue.  
And I that had no reason nor no wit,  
His shamefull drift (though open) to perceiue:  
Did weare my mistresse robes that seru'd me fit,  
And stood at window, there him to receiue.  
And of the fraud I was no whit aware,  
Till that fell out that caus'd all my care.

27

Of late twixt him and *Ariodant* had past,  
About *Geneura* faire these words or such,  
(For why there was good friendship in times past  
Betweene them two, till loue their hearts did tuch)  
The Duke such kind of speeches out did cast,  
He said to *Ariodant*, he marueld much,  
That hauing alwayes lou'd and well regarded him,  
That he againe so thanklesly rewarded him.

28

I know you see (for needs it must be seene)  
The good content and matrimoniall loue,  
That long betweene *Geneura* and me hath beene,  
For whom I meane ere long the king to moue.  
Why should you fondly thrust your selfe betweene?  
Why should you roue your reach so farre about?  
For if my case were yours I would forbear,  
Or if I knew that you so loued were.

29

And I much more (the other straight replies),  
Do maruell you sir Duke are so vnkind,  
That know our loue, and see it with your eyes,  
(Except that wilfulnesse haue made you blind)  
That no man can more sured knots deuise,  
Then her to me, and me to her do bind,  
Into this sute so rashly are intruded,  
Still finding from all hope you are excluded.

30

Why beare you not to me the like respect,  
As my good will requireth at your hand?  
Since that our loue is growne to this effect,  
We meane to knit our selues in weddings band  
Which to fulfill ere long I do expect,  
For know I am (though not in rents or land)  
Yet in my Princes grace no whit inferiour,  
And in his daughters greatly your superiour.

31

Well (said the Duke) errors are hardly moued,  
That loue doth breed in vnaduised brest.  
Each thinkes himselfe to be the best beloued,  
And yet but one of vs is loued best.  
Wherefore to haue the matter plainly proued,  
Which should proceed in loue, and which shold rest,  
Let vs agree that victor he remaine,  
That of her liking sheweth signes most plaine.

32

I will be bound to you by solemne oth,  
Your secrets all and counsell to conceale,  
So you likewise will plight to me your troth,  
The thing I shew you neuer to reueale.  
To trie the matter thus they greed both,  
And from this doome hereafter not repeale:  
But on the Bible first they were deposed,  
That this their speech should neuer be disclosed.

33

And first the stranger doth his state reueale,  
And tell the truth in hope to end the strife,  
How she had promist him in wo and weale,  
To liue with him, and loue him all her life:  
And how with writing with her hand and seale,  
She had confirmed she would be his wife,  
Except she were sorbitten by her father,  
For then to liue vnmarride she had rather.

34

And furthermore he nothing doubts (he said)  
Of his good seruice so plaine prooffe to show,  
As that the king shall nothing be afraid,  
On such a Knight his daughter to bestow:  
And how in this he needeth little aid,  
As finding still his fauour greater grow,  
He doubts not he will grant his liking after  
That he shall know it pleaseth so his daughter.

35

And thus you see so sound stands mine estate,  
That I my selfe in thought can wish no more,  
Who seekes her now is sure to come too late,  
For that he seekes is granted me before,  
Now onely rests in marridge holy state,  
To knit the knot that must dure euer more.  
And for her praise, I need not to declare it,  
As knowing none to whom I may compare it.



36

Thus *Ariodant* a tale most true declared,  
And what reward he hoped for his paine.  
But my false Duke that him had foully snared,  
And found by my great folly such a traine,  
Doth sweare all this might no way be compar'd  
With his, no though himselfe did iudge remaine,  
For I (quoth he) can shew signes to expresse,  
As you your selfe inferiour shall confesse.

37

Alas (quoth he) I see you do not know  
How cunningly these women can dissemble,  
They least to loue where they make greatest show,  
And not to be the thing they most relemble.  
But other fauours I receiue I trow,  
When as we two do secretly assemble,  
As I will tell you (though I should conceale it)  
Because you promise neuer to reueale it.

38

Truth is this, that I full oft ha  
ruiory corpes, and bene with her all night,  
And naked I, and she naked armes betwene,  
And full enjoyne the fruites of loues delight:  
Now iudge who hath in greatest fauour beene,  
To which of vs she doth pertaine in right,  
And then giue place, and yeeld to me mine owne,  
Sith by iust proofes I now haue made it knowne.

39

Yes (quoth *Ariodant*) nay shamefull lies,  
Or will I credit giue to any word:  
Is this the finest tale you can deuise?  
What, hop'd you that with this I could be dord?  
No, no, but sith a slander foule doth rise  
By thee to her, maintaine it with thy sword,  
I call thee lying traitor to thy face,  
And meane to proue it in this present place.

40

Tush (quoth the Duke) it were a foolish part,  
For you to fight with me that am your friend,  
Sith plaine to shew without deceit or art,  
As much as I haue said I do intend.  
These words did gripe poore *Ariodant*'s hart,  
And owne all his limbes a shiuering doth descend,  
And still he stood with e' cast downe on ground,  
Like one would fall to a deadly sound.

41

With wofull mind, with pale and chearlesse face,  
With trembling voice that came from bitter thought,  
He said he much desir'd to see this place,  
Where such strange feats and miracles were wrought.  
faire *Geneura* granted you this grace,  
That I (quoth he) so oft in vaine haue sought?  
How sure except I see it in my vew,  
I neuer will beleuee it can be trew.

42

The Duke did say he would with all his hart  
Both shew him where and how the thing was done,  
And straight from him to me he doth depart,  
Vnto his purpose wholly he had wonne:  
With best of vs he playth so well his part,  
That both of vs thereby were quite vndone.  
First he shew'd him that he would haue him placed  
Amongst his page, boy, and quite d. faced.

43

Some ruyn'd houses stood oppos'd direct  
Against the window where he doth ascend,  
But *Ariodant* discreetly doth suspect  
That this false Duke some mischief did intend,  
And thought that all did tend to this effect,  
By trechery to bring him to his end,  
That sure he had deuised this pretence,  
With mind to kill him ere he part'd thence.

44

Thus though to see this sight he thought it long,  
Yet tooke he care all mischief to preuent,  
And if perhap they offer force or wrong,  
By force the same for to resist he ment.  
He had a brother valiant and strong,  
*Lurcanio* call'd, and straight for him he sent,  
Not doubting but alone by his assistance,  
Against twice twentie men to make resistance.

45

He bids his brother take his sword in hand,  
And go into a place that he would guide,  
And in a corner closely there to stand,  
Aloofe from tother threelcore paces wide,  
The cause he would not let him vnderstand,  
But prayes him there in secret sort to bide,  
Vntill such time he hapt to heare him call,  
Else (if he lou'd him) not to stirre at all.

46

His brother would not his request denie,  
And so went *Ariodant* into his place,  
And vndiscouerd closely there did lie,  
Till hauing looked there a little space,  
The craftie Duke to come he might descric,  
That meant the chaste *Geneura* to deface,  
Who hauing made to me his wonted signes,  
I let him downe the ladder made of lines.

47

The gowne I ware was white, and richly set  
With aglets, pearle, and lace of gold well garnish'd,  
My stately tresses couerd with a net  
Of beaten gold most pure and brightly varnish'd.  
Not thus content, the vaile aloft I let,  
Which only Princes weare: thus stately harnish'd,  
And vnder *Cupid's* banner bent to fight,  
All vnawares I stood in all their fight.

48

For why *Lurcanio* either taking care,  
Lest *Ariodant* should in some danger go,  
Or that he sought (as all desirous are)  
The countels of his dearest friend to know,  
Close out of sight by secret steps and ware,  
Hard at his heeles his brother follow'd to,  
Till he was nearer come by fiftie paces,  
And there againe himselfe he newly places.

49

But I that thought no ill, securely came  
Vnto the open window as I said,  
For once or twice before I did the same,  
And had no hurt, which made me lesse afraid.  
I cannot boast (except I boast of shame)  
When in her robes I had my selfe afraid,  
Me though before I was not much vnlike her,  
But certaine now I seem'd very like her.

D

By the Duetto  
which is not  
in the  
original  
of any report  
of the  
Duetto.

Sensu.

So that he stood  
within ten paces  
of his brother.



50

But *Ariodant* that stood so farre aloofe,  
Was more deceiu'd by distance of the place,  
And straight belceu'd against his owne behoofe,  
Seeing her clothes that he had seene her face.  
Now let thole iudge that partly know by prooffe,  
The wofull plight of *Ariodantes* case,  
When *Polynesse* came by faithlesse friend,  
In both their fights the ladder to ascend.

51

I that his comming willingly did wait,  
And he once come thought nothing went amisse,  
Embrac'd him kindly at the first receit,  
His lips, his cheeks, and all his face did kisse,  
And he the more to colour his deceit,  
Did vse me kinder then he had ere this.  
This sight much care to *Ariodante* brought,  
Thinking *Geneura* with the Duke was nought.

52

The grieve and sorrow sinketh so profound  
Into his heart, he straight resolues to die,  
He puts the pummell of his sword on ground,  
And meanes himselfe vpon the point to lie:  
Which when *Lurcanio* saw and plainly found,  
That all this while was closely standing by,  
And *Polynesse* comming did discerne,  
Though who it was he neuer yet could learne.

53

He held his brother for the present time,  
That else himselfe for grieve had surely slaine,  
Who had he not stood nigh and come betime,  
His words and speeces had bene all in vaine.  
What shall (quoth he) a faithlesse womans crime,  
Cause you to die or put your selfe to paine?  
Nay let them go, and curst be all their kind,  
Ay borne like clouds with eu'ry blast of wind.

Not all women  
kind, but faith-  
lesse women.

54

You rather should some iust reuenge deuise,  
As she deserues to bring her to confusion:  
Sith we haue plainly seene with both our eyes,  
Her filthy fact appeare without collusion.  
Loue those that loue againe, if you be wise,  
For of my counsell this is the conclusion,  
Put vp your sword against your selfe prepared,  
And let her sinne be to the king declared.

55

His brothers words in *Ariodantes* mind  
Seeme for the time to make some small impression,  
But still the curelesse wound remaind behind,  
Despaire had of his heart the full possession.  
And though he knew the thing he had assignd,  
Contrary to Christend knights profession:  
Yet here on earth he torment felt so sore,  
In hell it selfe he thought there was no more.

For despaire is  
the damnablest  
thing that may  
be, by the rules of  
Christens religion

56

And seeming now after a little pause,  
Vnto his brothers counsell to consent,  
He from the court next day himselfe withdrawes,  
And makes not one priue to his intent,  
His brother and the Duke both knew the cause,  
But neither knew the place whereto he went:  
Diuers thereof most diuersly did iudge,  
Some by good will! perswaded, some by grudge.

57

Seu'n dayes entire about for him they sought,  
Seu'n dayes entire no newes of him was found,  
The eight a peasant to *Geneura* brought  
These newes, that in the sea he saw him drownd:  
Not that the waters were with tempest wrought,  
Nor that his ship was stricken on the ground.  
How then? Forsooth (quoth he) and therewith wept  
Downe from a rocke into the sea he leapt.

58

And further he vnto *Geneura* told,  
How he met *Ariodant* vpon the way,  
Who made him go with him for to behold  
The wofull act that he would do that day.  
And charged him the matter to vnfold,  
And to his Princes daughter thus to say,  
Had he bene blind, he had full happie beene,  
His death should shew that he too much had seene.

59

There stands a rocke against the Irish ile,  
From thence into the sea himselfe he cast:  
I stood and looked after him a while,  
The height and steepnesse made me sore agast.  
I thence haue traueled hither many a mile,  
To shew you plainly how the matter past.  
When as the chawne this tale had told and verifide,  
*Geneuras* heart was not a little terrifide.

60

O Lord what wofull words by her were spoken  
Laid all alone vpon her restless bed!  
Oft did she strike her guiltlesse brest in token  
Of that great grieve that inwardly was bred:  
Her golden tresses all were rent and broken,  
Recounting still those wofull words he sed,  
How that the cause his cruell death was such,  
Was onely this, that he had seene too much.

Ouid: Infesta  
tunc flexi ror

61

The rumor of his death spred farre and neare,  
And how for sorrow he himselfe had killed,  
The King was sad, the court of heauy cheare,  
By Lords and Ladies many teares were spilled.  
His brother most, as louing him most deare,  
Had to his mind with sorrow ouerfilled,  
That he was scantly to refraine,  
With his owne hands himselfe for to haue slaine.

62

And oftentimes repeating in his thought,  
The filthy fact he saw the other night,  
Which (as you heard) the Duke and I had wrought,  
I little looking it would come to light,  
And that the same his brothers death had brought,  
On faire *Geneura* he doth wreake his spight,  
Not caring (so did wrath him ouerwhelme)  
To leese the kings good will and all his realme.

63

The king and nobles sitting in the hall,  
Right penfue all for *Ariodantes* destruction,  
*Lurcanio* vndertakes before them all,  
To giue them perfect notice and instructio.  
Who was the cause of *Ariodantes* fall:  
And hauing made some little introd vpon,  
He said it was vnchast *Geneuras* crime,  
That made him kill himselfe before his tim.

What



64

What should I seeke to hide his good intent?  
His loue was such as greater none could be,  
He hop'd to haue your highnesse free assent,  
When you his value and his worth should see:  
But while a plaine and honest way he went,  
Behold he saw another climbe the tree,  
And in the midst of all his hope and sure,  
Another tooke the pleasure and the frute.

65

He further said, not that he had surmised,  
But that his eyes had seene *Geneura* stand,  
And at a window as they had deuised,  
Let downe a ladder to her louers hand,  
But in such sort he had himselfe disguised,  
That who it was he could not vnderstand.  
And for due prooffe of this his accusation,  
He bids the combat straight by proclamation.

66

More the king was grieu'd to heare these newes,  
Aue it as a thing not hard to guesse,  
*Lurcanio* plaine his daughter doth accuse,  
Of whom the King did looke for nothing lesse:  
And this the more his feare and care renews,  
That on this point the lawes are so expresse,  
Except by combat it be prou'd a lie,  
Needs must *Geneura* be condemn'd to die.

67

How hard the Scottish law is in this case,  
I do not doubt but you haue heard it told,  
While that doth another man embrace,  
Hee his wife, be she yong or old,  
Must die, except within two fortnights space,  
She find a champion stout that will vphold,  
That vnto her no punishment is due,  
But he that doth accuse her is vntrue.

68

The King (of crime that thinks *Geneura* cleare)  
Makes offer her to wed to any knight,  
That will in armes defend his daughter deare,  
And proue her innocent in open fight.  
Yet for all this no champion doth appaere,  
Such feare they haue of this *Lurcanios* might.  
One gazeth on another as they stand,  
But none of them the combat takes in hand.

69

And further by ill fortune and mischance,  
Her brother *Zerbin* now is absent thence,  
And gone to Spaine (I thinke) or else to France,  
Where were he here, she could not want defence,  
Or if perhap so luckie were her chance,  
To send him notice of her need from hence,  
Had she the presence of her noble brother,  
She should not need the aide of any other.

70

The King that meanes to make a certaine triall,  
If faire *Geneura* guiltie be or no,  
(For still she stiffly stood in the deniall,  
That wrought her vnderferued wo)  
Examines all her maids, but they reply all,  
That of the matter nothing they did know.  
Which made me seeke for to preuent the danger,  
That he like and I might haue about the stranger.

71

And thus for him more then my selfe afraid,  
(So faithfull loue to this false Duke I bare)  
I gaue him notice of these things, and said,  
That he had need for both of vs beware.  
He prais'd my constant loue, and farther praid,  
That I would credit him, and take no care,  
He points two men (but both to me vnknowne)  
To bring me to a castle of his owne.

72

Now sir, I thinke you find by this effect,  
How soundly I did loue him from my hart,  
And how I prou'd by plaine course and direct,  
My meaning was not any wayes to start:  
Now marke if he to me bare like respect,  
And marke if he requited my desert.  
Alas how shall a silly wench attaine,  
By louing true to be true lou'd againe?

73

This wicked Duke vngratefull and periured,  
Beginneth now of me to haue mistrust,  
His guiltie conscience could not be assured,  
How to conceale his wicked acts vnjust,  
Except my death (though causlesse) be procur'd:  
So hard his heart, so lawlesse was his lust:  
He said he would me to his castle send,  
But that same castle should haue bene mine end.

74

He wild my guides when they were past that hill,  
And to the thicke a little way descended,  
That there (to quite my loue) they should me kill,  
Which as you say they to haue done intended,  
Had not your happie comming stopt their will,  
That (God and you be thank't) I was defended.  
This tale *Dalinda* to *Renaldo* told,  
And all the while their iourney on they hold.

75

This strange aduenture luckily befell  
To good *Renaldo*, for that now he found,  
By this *Dalinda* that this tale did tell,  
*Geneuras* mind vnspotted cleare and found,  
And now his courage was confirmed well,  
That wanted erst a true and certaine ground:  
For though before for her he meant to fight,  
Yet rather now for to defend the right.

76

To great S. Andrews towne he maketh hast,  
Whereas the King was set with all his traine,  
Most carefull waiting for the trumpets blast,  
That must pronounce his daughters ioy or paine.  
But now *Renaldo* spurred had so fast,  
He was arriu'd within a mile or twaine,  
And through the village as he then was riding,  
He met a page that brought them fresher tiding.

77

How there was come a warriour all disguised,  
That meant to proue *Lurcanio* laid vntrue,  
His colours and his armour well deuised,  
In maner and in making very new:  
And though that sundry sundrily surmised,  
Yet who it was for certaine no man knew.  
His page demaunded of his masters name,  
Did sweare he neuer heard it since he came.

D ij

*A iust quarrell is  
a great encourage-  
ment in fight.*



78

Now came *Renaldo* to the citie wall,  
And at the gate but little time he staid,  
The porter was so readie at his call:  
But poore *Dalinda* now grew sore afraid,  
*Renaldo* bids her not to feare at all,  
For why he would her pardon beg he said:  
So thrusting in among the thickest rout,  
He saw them stand on scaffolds all about.

Because of the  
law that was  
then so rigorous.

79

It straight was told him by the standers by,  
How there was thither come a stranger knight,  
That meant *Geneuras* innocence to try,  
And that already was begun the fight:  
And how the greene that next the wall did lie,  
Was railed about of purpose for the fight.  
This newes did make *Renaldo* hasten in,  
And leaue behind *Dalinda* at her inne.

80

He told her he would come againe ere long,  
And spurs his horse that made an open lane,  
He pierced in the thickest preasse among,  
Whereas these valiant knights had giu'n and tane,  
Full many strokes, with sturdy hand and strong,  
*Lurcanio* thinks to bring *Geneuras* bane,  
The tother meanes the Ladie to defend,  
Whom (though vnknowne) they fauor & commend.

81

There was Duke *Polynesso* brauely mounted,  
Vpon a courser of an exc'lent race,  
Sixe knights among the better sort accounted,  
On foote in armes do marshall well the place.  
The Duke by office all the rest surmounted,  
High Constable (as alwayes in such case)  
Who of *Geneuras* danger was as glad,  
As all the rest were sorrowfull and sad.

82

Now had *Renaldo* made an open way,  
And was arriued there in luckie howre,  
To cause the combat to surcease and stay,  
Which these two knights applide with al their powre.  
*Renaldo* in the court appeard that day,  
Of noble chiuallrie the very flowre,  
For first the Princes audience he praid,  
Then with great expectation thus he said.

83

Send (noble Prince) quoth he, send by and by,  
And cause forthwith that they surcease the fight,  
For know, that which so ere of these doth die,  
It certaine is he dies against all right.  
One thinks he tels the truth, and tels a lie,  
And is decciud by error in his sight,  
And looke what cause his brothers death procured,  
That very same hath him to fight allured.

84

The tother of a nature good and kind,  
Not knowing if he hold the right or no,  
To die or to defend her hath assignd,  
Left so rare beautie should he spilled so.  
I harmelesse hope to saue the faultlesse mind:  
And thole that mischiefe mind to worke them wo,  
But first o Prince to stay the fight gi order,  
Before my speech proceedeth any farder.

85

*Renaldos* person with the tale he told,  
Mou'd so the king, that straight without delay,  
The knights were bidden both their hands to hold,  
The combat for a time was cauld to stay,  
Then he againe with voice and courage bold,  
The secret of the matter doth bewray;  
Declaring plaine how *Polynesso* lecherie  
Had first contriu'd and now betrayd his trecherie.

86

And proffreth of this speech to make a prooffe,  
By combat hand to hand with sword and speare:  
The Duke was cald that stood not farre aloofe,  
And scantly able to conceale his feare;  
He first denies, as was for his behoofe,  
And straight to battell both agreed were,  
They both were armd, the place before was ready,  
Now must they fight there could be no remedy.

87

How was the king, how were the people glad,  
That faire *Geneura* faultlesse there did stand,  
As Gods great goodnesse now reuealed had,  
And should be proued by *Renaldos* hand.  
All thought the Duke of mind and manners bad,  
The proudest and cruellst man in all the land,  
It likely was euery one surmised,  
That this deceit by him should be deuised.

88

Now *Polynesso* stands with doubtfull brest,  
With fainting heart, with pale disinayed face,  
Their trumpets blew, they set their speares in rest,  
*Renaldo* commeth on a mightie pace,  
For at this fight he finish will the feast,  
And where to strike him he designes places:  
His very first encounter was so fierce,  
*Renaldos* speare the tothers sides did pierce.

89

And hauing ouerthrowne the Duke by force,  
As one vnable so great strokes to bide,  
And cast him cleane sixe paces from his horse,  
Himselfe alights and th'others helme vntide,  
Who making no resistance like a corse,  
With faint low voice for mercie now he cride,  
And plaine confest this his latter breath,  
The fault that brought this deserued death.

90

No sooner had he made this last confession,  
But that his life did faile him with his voyce.  
*Geneuras* double scape of foule oppression,  
In life and fame did make the King reioyce:  
In lieu of her to leese his crownes possession,  
He would haue wisht, if such had bene his choise.  
To leese his realme he could haue bene no sadder,  
To get it lost he could haue bene no ghadder.

91

The combat done, *Renaldo* straight vntide  
His beauer, when the King that knew his face,  
Gave thanks to God that did so well prouide,  
So doubtlesse helpe in such a dangerous case.  
That vnknowne knight stood all this while aside,  
And saw the matters passed in the p  
And eu'ry one did muse and maruell m  
What wight it was whose curtesie was succ



The king did aske his name becau'e he ment,  
With kingly gifts his seruice to reward,  
Assuming plainly that his good intent,  
Deferred thanks and very great regard.

The knight with much intreatie did assent,  
And to disarme himselfe he straight prepar'd,  
But who it was if you vouchsafe to looke,  
I will declare it in another booke.

This very beginning of this booke being as it were a morall of it selfe, were sufficiēt for the point it treats of without any Morall more speech to that purpose: but because the matter is such as cannot be too much spoken of, namely to perswade me to concord in matrimonie, I must needs adde a word or two thereof. And first for mine opinion, I professe that I thinke it a vertue for a mā to be kind to his wife, & I am of the Censor Cato his mind, who being a marvellous austere mā otherwise, yet pronounced flatly that a man could not be an honest man, that was not to his wife a kind mā. And I wil go thus much farther, that you shall hardly find a discreet louing husband, I mean (without dissimulation or flattery) but is withal a vertuous good minded mā, be they of what calling they list: wherfore I honor matrimonial loue in my superiors, I loue it in my equals I praise it in my inferiors, I commend it in all, and to all of what sort or sex soeuer, & I wish them but to call to mind his comparison before set down in verse, and to this effect in prose, that if the male & female in beasts and foule, for the most part, liue in concord & agreement, what a foule and worse then beastly thing is it, for man & wife to be euer bralling & snarling, (for as for smiting) I count it more then monstrous: & let all sorts embrace this honest loue, not only comended but commanded by God, in holy Scriptures, where they are called both one flesh, to giue vs thereby to vnderstand, that as we would not willingly breake our owne shins, nor let our finger ake if we could remedie the same, & if we see one strike himselfe, or kicke his head to the wall, we thinke him Bedlem mad. So he that shall willingly grieue the wife of his bosome, or badly hurt her, we may thinke him to a sober, & farther frō an honest man. And euen as if one haue an ach or any this toe or finger, straight he doth lapt that part in warm cloth, & easeth it al he can, & cherisheth it more then be-  
lie it be sound again: so if any thing eith' il don, or il takē (perhaps though not il ment, (haue bred a litle pouting or lowering toward vnkindne,) we must lapt the part thus griued in warm imbracements, & heale it with sweet words. And if it be but a greene wound, annoint it with the precious balsamū (which all good surgeons know to be a soveraigne medicine for such griefes) and so we shall soundly cure it without any maim or scarre, but we must neuer come to the extremitie of cutting or searing, except the disease grow to a Gangrena or some cankred malice vnpossible to be cured.

Another good morall obseruation to be gathered in this cato, is the choyse of GENEURA, who being a great Lady by birth yet chose rather a gallant faire conditioned gentlemā thē a great Duke. For first it is no disparagement for the greatest Emperesse in the world to marie one that is a gentlemā by birth, according to the old proverb, A gentlemā may make a king, and a clarke may proue a Pope. Secondly, if we marke generally the successe of all mariages, we may find the saying of Themistocles true, Better is a man without mony, then mony without a man. To many and to too pitifull are the examples that we haue hard of, I will not say seene, of those Ladies that to match thēselues or their daughters on step higher may but euē the higher end of the same step higher thē they might otherwise haue don, haue with that ambition vnder thē, making them liue with great discontent, or to say the truth, flat misery, with their proud & vnkind Lord. And yet cannot such euident & neare examples moue some both fair, & modest, & vertuous, to keep thē out of such gilded gyues. Heleene a Lady, to whōsoeuer I speak it, that a happie womā is seene in a white apron, as often as in an embroded kirtie, & hath as quiet sleeps & as contented walings in a bed of cloth as vnder a spaurer of tissue. Boccasio speaking of the cōynes of some graue widowes, as well as nice damsel, saith as I remember in the labyrinthe of louers to this effect. Be a mā (saith he) neuer so diseased, deformed, decrepit, vnholysome, vnauourie, yet if he haue bene either so good a store for mony, that he may leue his wife wealthy, or be so great in titles though a begar in being, that she may take her place the higher, they will (saith he) be contented to lay their so delicate and daintily preserved morsels, in such lothsome dishes to be daily smacked & lauered, binding themselves to suffer such a penance God knowes how long, only to satisfie thōse humors of conetousnesse and pride, staruing to their griefe, the third humour (if they be so vertuous) that is by some thought the predominant humor in that sex, and many times dwels vnder the same roofe with the other two. Yet surely I could rather commend his curtesan that he writes of in his Decameron, who hauing bargained with a Dutchman, one M. Bruffaldo, for seven dayes board and lodging at a great rate, hauing found him for one or two nights to be but an vnauourie beefellow, she chose rather to leese those two nights hire, then to endure five more at so painful a price. But I doubt I grow too tedious while I shoot out such blots out of a Boccas. Now to go forward in the morall. You may note in Polynesse an enuious and treacherous mind: in Ariodant the hart of a credulous ielousie: in Lurcanio the vehemencie of a wrong surmise. In Polynesse intent to kill Dalinda, you may obserue how wicked men often beuay their owne misdeeds with seeking to hide them. In GENEURAs accusation and deliuerie, how God euer defends the innocent. And lastly in Polynesse's death, how wickednesse ruines it selfe.

For the historie of this booke, either the whole is a historie, or there is no matter historiall in it to be placed on.

Answer: there is none in this booke at all.

Storie.

Allegorie.

Allusion.

Reason there is in this tale of GENEURA, vnto a storie writtē in Alciats duello, of a matron in France accused in such sort by two men, and a certaine souldier of Breckona came with a companion of his, and took vpon them the defence of those men, and being fighting, the companion of the souldier fell notwithstanding he of Breckona with his courage and courage gat the victorie of the other two, and so in strange attire went home to his country vnknown, to whom Aristotle saith, to a male. Some others affirme, that this very matter, though set downe here by other names, happened in Ferrara to a kinde man of the Dukes, which here figured vnder the name of GENEURA, and that kinde man was praiised by a great Lady, and doted vpon by a damsell as is here set downe. How once it was, for the tale is a verie comall matter, and hath been written in English verse some few years past, learnedly and with good grace, though in verse of another kind, by M. George Turbuid.

The scene from which Ariodant leapt into the sea, is the castle of the Duke of Tewecade, where men that were put to death, being cast into the water, and washed away, is the thought, that as the Sibylle calls the fatalis amara mors.







## THE ARGUMENT.

*Geneura faire to Ariodant is giuen,  
And he a Duke is made that verie day.  
Roger with the Griffeth horse is drinen,  
Vnto Alcynas ile, and there doth stay.  
A mirle in the middle strangely riuen,  
Alcynas frauds doth vnto him bewray:  
Of which enformd he thence would haue departed,  
But yue way he finds his purpose thwarted.*



oft wretched he, that thinks  
by doing ill,  
His euill deedes long to  
conceale and hide,  
For though the voice and  
tongues of men be still,  
By foules or beasts his sin  
shalbe discride:  
And God oft worketh by  
his secret will;

That sinne it selfe the sinner so doth guide,  
That of his owne accord, without request;  
He makes his wicked doings manifest

The gracelesse wight, Duke P<sup>er</sup>lesso thought,  
His former fault shoul<sup>d</sup> re haue bin concealed,  
If that Dalinda vnto death were brought,  
By whom alone the same could be reuealed.  
Thus making worfe the thing before was nought,  
He hurt the wound which time perhaps had healed.  
And weening with more sinne the lesse to mend,  
He hastned on his well deserued end.

Ap<sup>er</sup> lost at once his life; his state, and frends,  
And honour to, a losse as great or more.  
o (as I sayd) that vnknowne knight intends,  
euerie one to know him sought so sore,  
And sith the king did promise large amends,  
To shew his face which they saw oft before,  
An<sup>d</sup> Ariodant most louely did appeare,  
Whom they thought dead as you before did heare.

He whom Geneura wofully did waile,  
He wh<sup>o</sup> Lurcanio deemed to be dead,

He whom the king and court did so bewaile,  
He that to all the realme such care had bred,  
Doth liue: the clownes report in this did faile,  
On which false ground the rumor false was spread.  
And yet in this the peasant did not mocke,  
He saw him leape downe headlong from the rock.

But as we see men oft with rash intent  
Are desperate and do resolute to die,  
And straight do change that fancie and repent,  
When vnto death they do approach more nie:  
So Ariodant to drowne himselfe that ment,  
Now plung'd in sea repented by and by,  
And being of his limbes able and strong,  
Vnto the shore he swam againe erre long.

And much dispraising in his inward thought,  
This fond conceit that late his minde posselt,  
At last a blind and narrow path him brought,  
All tyrd and wet to be an hermits guest:  
With whom to stay in secret sort he sought,  
Both that he might his former griefe digest,  
And learne the truth, if this same clownes report,  
Were by Geneura tane in griefe or sport.

There first he heard how she conceiu'd such griefe,  
As almost brought her life to wofull end,  
He found of her they had so good beleefe,  
They thought she would not in such sort offend:  
He further heard except she had releefe,  
By one that would her innocence defend,  
It was great doubt Iurcanio's accusation,  
Would bring her to a speedie condemnation.

*Leuesius a Poet  
saith so this*

*Hope vobis se  
culet per somni  
inuenies  
dians etc.*

*Sensense.*



8

And looke how loue before his heart enraged,  
So now did wrath enflame, and though he knew wel  
To wreake his harme, his brothers life was gaged,  
He nathles thought his act so foule and cruell,  
That this his anger could not be asswaged,  
Vnto his flame loue found such store of fewel:  
And this the more increast his wrath begun,  
To heare how euerie one the fight did shun,

9

For why *Lurcanio*, was so stout and wise,  
Except it were for to defend the truth,  
Men thought he would not so the king despise,  
And hazard life to bring *Geneuras* ruth,  
Which caused euerie one his friend aduise,  
To shunne the fight that must maintaine vtruth.  
But *Ariodant* after long disputation,  
Meanes to withstand his brothers accusation.

10

Alas (quoth he) I neuer shall abide,  
Her through my cause to die in wo and paine,  
For danger or for death what care betide,  
Be she once dead my life cannot remaine,  
She is my saint, in her my blisse doth bide,  
Her golden rayes my eies light still maintaine,  
Fall backe, fall edge, and be it wrong or right,  
In her defence I am resolu'd to fight.

11

I take the wrong, but yet ile take the wrong  
And die I shall, yet if I die I care not,  
But then alas, by law she dies et long,  
O cruell lawes so sweete a wight that spare not:  
Yet this small ioy I finde these griefes among,  
That *Polinesso* to defend her dare not,  
And she shall finde how little she was loued,  
Of him that to defend her neuer moued.

12

And she shall see me dead there for her sake,  
To whom so great a damage she hath done:  
And of my brother iust reuengement take  
I shall, by whom this strife was first begun,  
For there at least my death plaine proof shall make  
That he this while a foolish thred hath spun,  
He thinketh to auenge his brothers ill,  
The while himselfe his brother there shall kill.

13

And thus resolved, he gets him armour new,  
New horse and all things new that needfull beene  
All clad in blacke, a sad and mournfull hew,  
And crost with wreath of yellow and of greene,  
A stranger bare his shield that neither knew,  
His masters name nor him before had scene,  
And thus as I before rehearst, disguised  
He met his brother as he had deuised.

14

I told you what successe the matter had,  
How *Ariodant* himselfe did then discouer,  
For whom the king himselfe was euen as glad,  
As late before his daughter to recouer,  
And since he thought in ioyfull times and sad,  
No man could shew himselfe a truer louer  
Then he that after so great wrong intended  
Against his brother her to haue extended,

15

Both louing him by his owne inclination,  
And praid thereto by many a Lord and knight,  
And chiefly by *Renaldos* instigation,  
He gaue to *Ariodant* *Geneura* bright,  
Now by the Dukes atteint and condemnation,  
*Albania* came to be the kings in right.  
Which dutchie falling in so luckie houre,  
Was giuen vnto the damsell for her dower.

16

*Renaldo* for *Dalinda* pardon praide,  
Who for her error did so sore repent,  
That straight she vowd, with honest mind and staid,  
To liue her life in prayre and penitent:  
Away she packt, nor further time delaid,  
In *Datia*, to a nunrie there she went.  
But to *Rogero* now I must repaire,  
That all this while did gallop in the aire.

*Hee ends the  
sale of Geneura*

*Hee returns to  
Renaldo's book  
ft. 16.  
Roge*

17

Who though he were of mind and courage stout  
And would not easly feare or be dismayd,  
Yet doubtlesse now his minde was full of doubt,  
His hart was now appald, and sore afraid.  
Farre from *Europa*, he had trauaild out,  
And yet his flying horse could not be staid,  
But past the pillars xij. score leagues and more,  
Pitcht there by *Hercles* many yeares before.

18

This Griffeth horse a birde most huge and rare,  
Doth pierce the skie with so great force of wing,  
That with that noble birde he may compare,  
Whom Poets faine, Ioues lightning downe to bring  
To whom all other birds interior are,  
Because they take the Eagle for their king.  
Scarfe seemeth from the clouds to go so swift,  
The thunderbolt sent by the lightnings drift.

*The Eagle called  
Iouis aies.*

19

When long this monster strange had kept his race,  
Straight as a line bending to neither side,  
He spide an Iland distant little space,  
To which he bends in purpose there to bide,  
Much like in semblance was it to the place,  
Where *Arethusa* vsd her selfe to hide,  
And seekes so long her loue to haue beguild,  
Till at the last she found her selfe with child.

*Arethusa was  
in the gable.*

20

A fairer place they saw not all the while,  
That they had trauild in the aire aloft.  
In all the world was not a fairer ile,  
If all the world to finde the same were sought:  
Here hauing trauild many a hundred mile,  
*Rogero* by his bird to rest was brough  
In pastures greene, and hils with coole fresh aire.  
Cleere riuers, shadie banks, and meddowes faire.

21

Heere diuers groues there were, of daintie shade,  
Of Palme, or Orange trees, of Cedars tall,  
Of sundrie fruites and flowres that neuer fade,  
The shew was faire, the plentie was not  
And arbours in the thickest places made,  
Where little light, and heat came at all:  
Where Nightingales did straine their throtes,  
Recording still their sweete and pleasant notes.

Amid



22

Amid the lilly white and fragrant rose,  
 Preferu'd still tresh by warme and temprate aire,  
 The feartull hare, and cunnie carelesse goes,  
 The stag with stately head and bodie faire,  
 Doth feed secure, nor fearing any foes,  
 That to his damage hither may repaire,  
 The Bucke and Doe doth feed amid the fields,  
 As in great store the pleafant Forrest yeelds.

23

It needlesse was to bid *Rogero* light,  
 When as his horse approched nigh the ground,  
 He cast himselfe out of his saddle quight,  
 And on his feet he falleth safe and sound,  
 And holds the horses raines, lest else he might  
 Flye away, and no<sup>r</sup> againe be found,  
 And to a mirtle by the water side,  
 Betweene two other trees his beast he tide.

24

And ending thereabout a little brooke,  
 Neare vnto a shadie mountaine stands,  
 His helmet from his head forthwith he tooke,  
 His shield from arme, his gantlet from his hands,  
 And from the higher places he doth looke,  
 Full oft to sea, full oft to fruitfull lands,  
 And seekes the coole and pleafant a<sup>i</sup>re to take,  
 That doth among the leaues a murmure make,

25

Oft with the water of that cristall well,  
 He seekes to quench his thirst and swage his heate,  
 With which his veines inflam'd did rise and swell,  
 And cauld his other parts to fry in sweate:  
 Well may it seeme a maruell that I tell,  
 Yet will I o<sup>n</sup>ce againe the same repeate,  
 He traueled had about three thousand mile,  
 And not put off his armour all the while.

26

hold his horse he lately tied there,  
 Among the boughs in shadie place to bide,  
 Straue to go loose, and started backe for feare,  
 And puls the tree to which the raines were tide,  
 In which (as by the sequell shall appeare)  
 A humane soule it selfe did strangely hide.  
 With all his strength the steed st<sup>a</sup>ues to be loosed,  
 By force whereof the mirtle fore was broosed.

27

*Simile taken out  
 of Dante.*

And as an arme of tree from bodie rent,  
 By peasants strength with many a sturdie stroke,  
 When in the fire the moisture all is spent,  
 The emptie places filld with aire and smoke,  
 Do boile and striue, and find at last a vent,  
 When of the brand a shiuer out is broke,  
 So did the tree striue, bend, writhe, wring and breake,  
 Till at a litle hole it thus did speake.

28

Right curteous knight (for so I may you deeme,  
 And must you call not knowing other name)  
 If so you are as gracious as you seeme,  
 Tell me your friend<sup>ly</sup> deed confirme the same,  
 Whoote this monster, sent as I esteeme,  
 To adde so<sup>o</sup> arther torment to my shame.  
 Alas, mine inward griefes were such before,  
 By out<sup>ward</sup> plagues they need be made no more.

29

*Rogero* mazed looked round about,  
 If any man or woman he might see,  
 At last he was resolu'd of his doubt,  
 He found the voice was of the mirtle tree,  
 With which abasht, though he were wise and stout,  
 He said, I humbly pray thee pardon me,  
 Whether thou be some humane ghost or spright,  
 Or power deuine that in this wood hast right.

*Ouid 3. Metam.  
 Quisquis es o fa-  
 nctus.*

30

Not wilfulnesse, but ignorance did breed  
 Thine iniury, mine error in this case:  
 And made me do this vnaduised deed,  
 By which vnwares thy leaues I did deface:  
 But let thy speech so farre forth now proceed,  
 To tell me who thou art that in this place,  
 Dost dwell in tree amid the desert field,  
 As God from haile and tempest thee may shield.

31

And if that I for this amends may make,  
 Or now or after, or by paine or art,  
 I sweare to thee by her, and for her sake,  
 That holds of me, and shall the better part,  
 That I shall not surcease all paines to take,  
 To worke thy ioy, or to aswage thy smart.  
 This said, he saw againe the mirtle shake,  
 And then againe he heard that thus it spake.

*Bradamant.  
 To whom Rogero  
 was a sister.*

32

Sir knight, your curtesie doth me constraîne,  
 To shew to you the thing that you desier,  
 Although I sweat (as you may see) with paine,  
 Like greenest boughes vpon the flaming fier,  
 I will discouer vnto you her traine,  
 (Wo worth the time that euer I came nie her)  
 That did for malice and by magicke strange,  
 My liuely shape to liuelesse branches change.

33

I was an Earle, *Astolfo* was my name,  
 Well knowne in France in time of warre and peace,  
*Orlandos* cosen and *Renalds*, whose fame  
 While time shall last in earth shall neuer cease.  
 Of *Oton* king of English Ile I came,  
 And should succeed him after his decease.  
 Both comely, yong, carelesse of worldly pelfe,  
 To none an enemie but to my selfe.

34

For as we turned from the Ester Iles,  
 Whose banks are worne with surge of Indian waue,  
 Where I and many more with witching wiles,  
 Were straight inclosed in a hollow caue,  
 Vntill *Orlando* did auenge the guiles,  
 And found by force a meane his friends to saue,  
 We Westward went vpon the shore and sand,  
 That lieth on the North side of the land.

*This hath refe-  
 rence to the booke  
 called Orlando,  
 Inamorato.*

35

And as we traueled homeward on our way,  
 As chance did leade or destinie vs driue,  
 It was our fortune once on breake of day,  
 Hard by *Alcynas* castle to arriue,  
 Where she alone, to sport her selfe and play,  
 Such kind of gins for fishes did contriue,  
 That though we saw no net, no bait, no hooke,  
 Yet still we saw that store of fish she tooke.



36

The Dolphin strong, the Tunnie good of tast,  
The Mullet, Sturgeon, Samon (princely fish)  
With Porpose, Seales, and Thornpooles came as fast,  
As she was pleased to commaund or wish.  
And still she tooke of each kind as they past,  
Some strange for shew, some daintie for the dish,  
The horsefish and the huge and monstrous whales,  
Whose mightie members harvest are with scales.

37

Among the rest that were too long to count,  
We saw the fish that men Balena call,  
Twelue yards about the water did amount  
His mightie backe, the monster is so tall:  
And (for it stood so still) we made account,  
It had bene land, but were deceiued all,  
We were deceiu'd, well I may rewe the while,  
It was so huge we thought it was an Ile.

38

I say this potent witch *Alcyna* tooke  
All sorts of fish without or net or aide,  
But onely reading in a little booke,  
Or mumbling words, I know not what she said,  
But seeing me, so well she likt my looke,  
That at her sport but little time she staid,  
But sought forthwith to trap me by her skill,  
Which straight fell out according to her will.

39

For toward me with pleasant cheare she came,  
In modest maner and in comely sort,  
And did withall her speech demurely frame,  
And praid me to her lodging to resort,  
Or if I would be partner of her game,  
She offered me to shew me all the sport,  
And all the kinds of fish in seas that were,  
Some great, some smal, some smooth, and some with

40

(haire.

And if you list a Mermaid faire to see,  
That can with song the raging stormes appease,  
At yond same little banke you may (quoth she)  
To which we two will safely passe with ease:  
(The banke which she pretends to shew to me,  
Was that same fish the monster of the seas)  
And I that too much loued to aduenter,  
Vpon the fishes backe with her did enter.

41

My cousins *Dudon* and *Renaldo* beckned  
To draw me thence, I heard not what they said,  
But of their speech and signes I little reckned,  
I had not wit enough to be afraid:  
But soone my courage was appald and weakned,  
I straight was faine in vaine to crie for aid,  
The monstrous fish that seemd to me an Ile,  
Straight bare me from the shore full many a mile.

42

There was *Renaldo* like to haue bene drownd,  
Who swam to saue me if perhaps he might,  
But sodainly of him and of the ground,  
A mistie cloud did take away the sight:  
*Alcyna* and I with seas enuironed round,  
Did trauell on that monster all the night,  
And then with gracious speeches she began  
To giue me all the comfort that she can.

43

And thus at last to this place we repaire,  
Of which by wrong *Alcyna* keepes possession,  
Deposing forcibly the rightfull heire,  
(Her elder lawfull sister) by oppression:  
The other two more vicious then faire,  
Are bastards, and begotten in transgression,  
I heard it told, and haue it not forgotten,  
She and *Morgana* were in incest gotten.

44

And as their first beginning was of sinne,  
So is their life vngodly and defamed,  
Of law nor iustice passing not a pinne,  
But like the heifer wanton and vntamed,  
By warre they seeke their sisters right to winne,  
Their elder sister *Logistilla* named,  
And haue so farre preuailed with their powers,  
They haue of hers about an hundred towers.

45

And had ere this time taken all away,  
Saue that the rest is strongly fenced round,  
For of one side the water way,  
On th'other side the vantage of the ground,  
Which with a mightie banke doth make a stay,  
Much like the English and the Scottish bound:  
And yet the Bastard sisters do their best,  
And labour still to spoile her of the rest.

46

And why, because they see her good and holy,  
They hated her because themselves are vicious  
But to returne, and tell you of my folly,  
That turnd to me so hurtfull and pernicious,  
I now againe grew somewhat bold and iolly,  
I see no cause to feare or be suspicious,  
And finding she lou'd me by signes most plaine,  
I wholly bent my selfe to loue againe.

47

When I her daintie members did embrace,  
I deemed then there was none other blisse,  
Me thought all other pleasures were but base,  
Of friends nor kin I had no want nor misse,  
I onely wisht to stand in her good grace,  
And haue access to her corall lips to kisse.  
I thought my selfe the happiest of all creatures  
To haue a Ladie of so goodly features

48

And this the more confirmed my ioy and pride,  
That toward me she shew'd such loue and care,  
By night and dayly I was by her side,  
To do or speake against me no man dare,  
I was her stay, I was her houses guide,  
I did commaund, the rest as subiects are:  
She trusted me, alone with me she talked,  
With me within she sat, without she walked

49

Alas why do I open lay my fore,  
Without all hope of medicine or releefe?  
And call to mind the fickle ioy before,  
Now being plungd in gulfes of endlesse greife  
For while I thought she lou'd me more and mo  
When as I deemd my ioy and blisse as cheefe,  
Her waiting loue away from me was tak  
A new guest came, the old was cleane fo'ken.

Then

*Looke  
in the table.*



50

Then did I find full soone, though too to late,  
Her wanton, wauering, wily womans wit,  
Accustomd in a trice to loue and hate,  
I saw another in my seate to sit:  
Her loue was gone, forgone my happie state,  
The marke is mist that I was wont to hit:  
And I had perfect knowledge then ere long,  
That to a thousand she had done like wrong.

51

And least that they about the world might go,  
And make her wicked life and falshood knowne,  
In diuers places she doth them bestow,  
So as abroad they shall not make their mone,  
Some into trees, amid the field that grow,  
beasts, and some into a stone:  
In rockes or riuers she doth hide the rest,  
As to her cruell fancie seemeth best.

52

And that are arriu'd by steps so strange,  
To is vnfortunate and fatall Ile,  
Although in yorts a while you range,  
And though *Alcina* fauour you a while,  
(Although you little looke for any change,  
Although she friendly seeme on you to smile,  
Yet looke no lesse, but changd at last to be,  
Into some brutish beast, some stone or tree.

53

Thus though perhap my labour is but lost,  
Yet haue I giu'n you good and plaine aduise,  
Who can themselues beware by others cost,  
May be accounted well among the wise:  
The waues that my poore ship so fore hath tost,  
You may auoid by heed and good deuise,  
Which if you do, then your successe is such,  
As many others could not do so much.

54

*Rogero* did with much attention heare  
*Astolfo*s speech, and by his name he knew  
*Bradamant* he was of kindred neare,  
Which made him more his wofull state to rewe:  
And for her sake that loued him most de re,  
To whom from him all loue againe was dew,  
He sought to bring him aid and some releefe,  
At least with zomfort to allwage his griefe.

55

Which hauing done, he asked him againe,  
The way that would to *Logistilla* guide,  
For were it by the hills, by dale or plaine,  
He thirther meant forthwith to runne or ride.  
*Astolfo* answerd it would aske much paine,  
And many a weary journey he should bide,  
Because to stop this way *Alcina* lets  
A thousand kinds of hindrances and lets.

56

For as the way it selfe is very steepe,  
Not passable without great toile and paine,  
So she that in her mischiefe doth not sleepe,  
make the matter harder to attaine,  
placing men of armes the way to keepe,  
Of which she hath full many in her traine.  
*Rogero* ga *Astolfo* many thanks,  
For giu'g him this warning of her pranks.

57

And leading then the flying horse in hand,  
Not daring yet to mount a beast so wilde,  
Least (as before I made you vnderstand)  
He might the second time haue bene beguild:  
He meanes to go to *Logistillas* land,  
A vertuous Ladie, chaste, discreet and mild,  
And to withstand *Alcina* tooth and naile,  
That upon him her force might not preuaile.

58

But well we may commend his good intent,  
Though missing that to which he did aspire,  
Who iudgeth of our actions by th'euent,  
I wish they long may want their most desire.  
For though *Rogero* to resist her ment,  
And feared her as children feare the fire,  
Yet was he taken to his hurt and shame,  
Euen as the flie is taken in the flame.

*Quid: Careat  
successibus opto  
quisquis ab euen-  
tu facta nosanda  
putat.*

*Simile.  
Petrarch.*

59

For going on his way, behold he spies  
A house more stately then can well be told,  
Whose wals do seeme exalted to the skies,  
From top to bottome shining all of gold,  
A sight to rauish any mortall eyes,  
It seemd some Alcumist did make this hold,  
The wals seemd all of gold, but yet I trow  
All is not gold that makes a golden show.

*Sentence.*

60

Now though this stately sight did make him stay,  
Yet thinking on the danger him foretold,  
He left the easie and the beaten way,  
That leadeth to this rich and stately hold,  
And to her house where vertue beares the sway,  
He bends his steps with all the hast he could:  
But ere he could ascend the mountaines top,  
A crew of caitiues sought his way to stop.

61

A foule deformd, a brutish cursed crew,  
In bodie like to antike worke deuised,  
Of monstrous shape, and of an vgly hew,  
Like masking Machachinas all disguised.  
Some looke like dogs, and some like apes in vew,  
Some dreadfull looke, and some to be despised,  
Yong shamelesse folke, and doting foolish aged,  
Some nakd, some drunk, some bedlem-like enraged.

*Look in the Alla-  
gory.*

62

One rides in hast a horse without a bit,  
Another rides as slow, an asle or cow,  
The third vpon a Centaurs rumpe doth sit,  
A fourth would flie with wings, but knows not how,  
The fift doth for a speare employ a spit,  
Sixt blowes a blast like one that gelds a sow.  
Some carrie ladders, others carrie chaines,  
Some sit and sleepe while others take the paines.

63

The Captaine of this honorable band,  
With belly swolne, and puffed blubberd face,  
Because for drunkenesse he could not stand,  
Vpon a tortesse rode a heauy pace:  
His sergeants all were round about at hand,  
Each one to do his office in his place:  
Some wipe the sweat, with fans some make a wind,  
Some stay him before, and some behind.



64

Then one of these that had his feet and brest  
Of manlike shape, but like vnto a hound  
In eares, in necke, and mouth, and all the rest  
Doth vtter barking words with currish sound,  
Part to commaund, and partly to request  
The valiant knight to leaue the higher ground,  
And to repaire vnto *Alcynas* castle,  
Or else (forsooth) they two a pull would wrastle.

65

This monster seeing his request denide,  
Strake at *Rogeros* beauer with a launce,  
But he that could no such rude iests abide,  
With *Ballisarda* smote him in the paunch.  
Out came the sword a foote on th'other side,  
With which he led his fellowes such a daunce,  
That some hopt headlesse, some cut by the knees,  
And some their arms, and some their eares did leese.

*Rogeros sword,  
against which no  
enchanted armor  
could hold.*

66

In vaine it was their targets to oppose  
Against the edge of his enchanted blade,  
No Steele had force to beare those fatall blowes,  
Vnto the quicke the sword a passage made:  
But yet with numbers they do him inclose,  
Their multitude his force did ouerlade:  
He needs at least *Briarius* hundred armes  
To foile the foes that still about him swarmes.

67

Had he remembered to vnfold the shield,  
*Atlanta* carrid at his saddle bow,  
He might haue quickly overcome the field,  
And cauld them all without receiuing blow,  
Like men dismaid and blind themselves to yeeld:  
But he perhaps that vertue did not know,  
Or if he did, perhaps he would disdain,  
Where force did faile, by fraud his will to gaine.

68

But being full resolved not to yeeld  
Vnto such beasts, but ere he parted thence  
He would his carkasse leaue amid the field,  
And manfully would die in his defence,  
Then lo good hap that failes the forward seeld,  
Prouided him a meane to rid him hence.  
There came two Ladies, either like a Queene,  
And each of them moit stately to be scene.

*Sentence.  
Audaces fortuna  
iuuauit.*

69

For each of them an Vnicorne did ride,  
As white as Lillies, or vnmolten snow,  
And each of them was deckt with so great pride,  
As might most richly set them forth to show,  
But each of them was so diuinely eide,  
Would moue a man in loue with them to grow,  
And each of them in all points was so choice,  
As in their sight a man would much reioyce.

*Looke the Alle-  
gory.*

70

Then both of them vnto the meadow came,  
Whereas *Rogero* fought with all that rout,  
And both of them those brutish beasts did blame,  
That sought to harme a knight so strong and stout,  
*Rogero* blushing now with modest shame,  
Thankt them that had of danger holpt him out,  
And straight consented with thos Ladies faire,  
To *Alcynas* castle to repaire.

71

Those ornaments that do set forth the gate,  
Emboist a little bigger then the rest,  
All are enricht with stones of great estate,  
The best and richest growing in the East.  
In parted quadrons, with a seemly rate,  
The collons diamonds as may be guests:  
I say not whether counterfait or true,  
But shine they did like diamonds in vew.

72

About these stately pillars and betweene  
Are wanton damsels gadding to and fro,  
And as their age, so are their garments Greene,  
The blacke oxe hath not yet trod on their toe,  
Had vertue with that beautie tempred beene,  
It would haue made the substance like the flow  
These maids with curteous speech and manners nice  
Welcome *Rogero* to this paradise.

73

If so I may a paradise it name,  
Where loue and lust haue built their habitat  
Where time well spent is counted as a thame,  
No wise staid though care of estimation,  
Nor nought but courting, dauncing, play and game  
Disguised clothes, each day a sundry fashion,  
No vertuous labour doth this people please,  
But nice apparrell, belly-cheare and ease.

74

Their aire is alway temperate and cleare,  
And wants both winters storms, and summers heate,  
As though that Aprill lasted all the yeare,  
Some one by fountaines side doth take his seate,  
And there with fained voice and carelesse cheare,  
Some sonnet made of loue he doth reate:  
Some others other where with other fashions,  
Describe vnto their loues their louing passions.

75

And *Cupid* then, the captaine of the crew,  
Triumphs vpon the captiues he hath got,  
And more and more his forces to renew,  
Supplies with fresh the arrowes he hath shot,  
With which he hits (his leuell is to true)  
And wounds full deepe, although it bleedeth not.  
This is the place which *Rogero* went,  
And these the things to which our youth is bent.

76

Then straight a stately steed of colour bay,  
Well limbd and strong was to *Rogero* brought,  
And deckt with faire capparison most gay,  
With gold and pearle and iewels richly wrought,  
The Grisseth horse (that whilome to obey  
The spurre and bit was by *Atlanta* taught)  
Because his iourney long required rest,  
Was carrid to a stable to be drest.

77

The Ladies faire that had the knight deforted,  
From that same wicked and vngracious band,  
Which as you heard at large before pretended,  
*Rogeros* passage stoutly to withstand,  
Told now *Rogero* how that they intended,  
Because his valew great they vnd  
Of him to craue his furtherance and aid,  
Against their fo that made them oft afraid.

C. These



78

There is (quoth they) a bridge amid our way,  
To which we are alreadie verie nie,  
Where one *Erisila* doth all she may,  
To damage and annoy the passers by,  
A Giantesse she is, she liues by pray,  
Her fashions are to fight, deceiue and lye:  
Her teeth be long, her visage rough with heare,  
Her nayles be sharpe, and scratching like a Beare.

79

The harme is great this monster vile doth doe,  
To stop the way that but for her were free,  
She spils and spoiles, she cares not what uor who,  
That grieve to heare, and pittie is to see:  
And for to adde more hatred her vnto,  
Know this, that all yon monsters you did see,  
Are to this monster either sonnes or daughters,  
And liue like her by robbery and slaughters.

80

*Rogero* thus in curteous sort replide,  
Faire Ladies gladly I accept your motion,  
If oth service I may do beside,  
You may command, I stand at your deuotion:  
For this I weare this coat and blade well tride,  
Not to procure me riches or promotion,  
But to defend from iniurie and wrong,  
All such as haue theit enemies too strong.

81

The Ladies did *Rogero* greatly thanke,  
As well deseru'd so stout and braue a knight,  
That proferd at the first request so franke,  
Against the gyantesse for them to fight.  
Now they drew nye vnto the riuers banke,  
When as *Erisila* came out in fight:  
But they that in this storie take some pleasure,  
May heare the rest of it at further leasure.

Mora.

In *Ariodants* combat with his brother, we may note how the loue of kinred often giues place to the loue of carnalitie. In *Dalandas* going into religion, after she had her pardon, we may note, that amendment of life is necessary after true repentance. In *Rogero* travelling threethousand miles, and then resting at *Alcynas*, we may obserue how the thoughts of men ranging a rode into a thousand matters, lastly abide in the pleasantest.

In *Astolfos* metamorphosis into a myrtle tree (which tree is said to be dedicated to *Venus*) we may note, how men giuen ouer to sensualitie, lose in the end the verie forme of man (which is reason) and so become beastes or stockes: but these two last notes will be more aptly considered in the Allegorie.

Historie.

Historie there is none in this booke, but the continuation of the tale of *Geneura*, amplified probably, though I thinke no way truely.

Allegorie.

The rest of this whole booke is an Allegorie, so plaine to those that will indeed looke heedfully into it, as needs no exposition, and it is continued in the next booke, and in a manner there expounded, to the vnderstanding of any reasonable capacitie, yet for plainnes sake I will touch some things with my accustomed briefenes, and leaue the rest to the discreet reader to scan, and to applie to his owne profit. First therefore of *Rogero*, (as we haue in part touched before) we may vnderstand the *Griffeth* horse that carried him, to signifie the passion of the minde contrarie to reason, that caries men in the aire, that is in the height of their imaginations, out of Europe, that is, out of the compasse of the rules of Christian religion and feare of God, vnto the Ile of *Alcyna*; which signifieth pleasure and vanities of this world.

The example of *Astolfos* mishap, and his good counsell which *Rogero* followed so slenderly, shew how neither the counsels of friends, nor no examples, can for the most part stay a man in his youthfull course, from that which he shall after surely repent. *Rogeros* offering to go to *Logestilla*, which betokens vertue, signifies the good motives that men haue often, by reading good bookes, or hearing good sermons to amend their lines: but then the monstrous crew that stoppeth *Rogero*, signifying the base conceits of men, and foule desires that assaile them, as namely those seauen finnes which be called the deadly finnes: by strong temptations and lewd suggestions, do put vs out of that right way, or at least encomber it. As we proceed but slowly: howbeit these do not preuaile so farre, but that an honest and well giuen minde doth withstand them, and yeeldeth not to them till the two Ladies riding vpon *Unicornes*, which some vnderstand by chaste loue, or at the least a shew of honorable loue, or rather I suppose thereby to be meant ambition and desire of aduancement, these two driue away all those base thoughts that assailed him, but yet they bring him at last vnto the court of *Alcina*, where he is held fast, as shall be shewed in the next booke.

By *Erisila* is ment couetousnesse, as the name it self shewes, which must be beaten downe ere we can come to honour or loue.

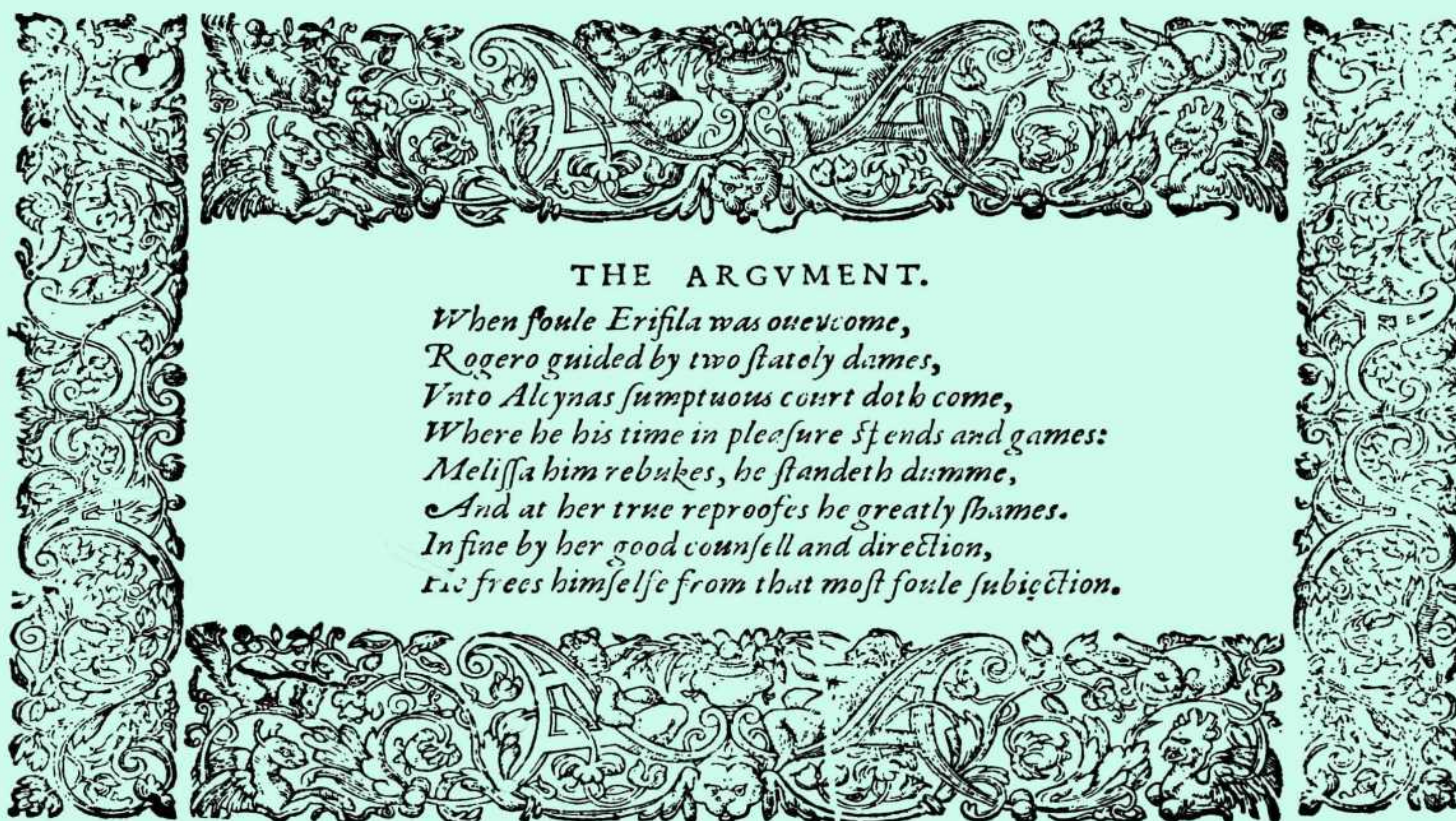
By *Logestilla*, that is inuaded by the two bastard sisters, is ment allegorically, the true Christian religion and there is another coven of theirs called heresie, and the graundfire of them all, called Atheisme, that are of late very busie with her. But she is defended with the water, which signifies the holy Scripture, and with the mountaine, which in the Scripture it selfe is taken for preachers, as *S. Augustine* noteth vpon the *Psalmes*. I list vp mine eies to the hills, whence cometh my saluation.

The transformation of *Astolfo*, alludes to *Cyrces* witchcraft in *Homer*.









## THE ARGUMENT.

*When foule Erisila was ouercome,  
 Rogero guided by two stately dames,  
 Vnto Alcynas sumptuous court doth come,  
 Where he his time in pleasure spends and games:  
 Melissa him rebukes, he standeth dumme,  
 And at her true reproofes he greatly shames.  
 In fine by her good counsell and direction,  
 He frees himselfe from that most foule subiection.*

1

**A**LL they that to far coun-  
 tries do resort,  
 Shall see strange sights, in  
 earth, in seas, in skies,  
 Which when agone at  
 home they shall report,  
 Their solemne tales, esteem-  
 ed are as lyes.  
 For why the fond and sim-  
 ple common sort,

Belceue but what they feele or see with eyes,  
 Therefore to them, my tale may seeme a fable,  
 Whose wits to vnderstand it are not able.

2

But carelesse what the simple fots surmise,  
 If they shall deeme it a deuice or deede,  
 Yet sure to those that are discrete and wise,  
 It will no wonder nor no passion breed:  
 Wherefore my tale to such I do deuise,  
 And wish them to the same to take good heed,  
 For some there are, may fortune in this booke,  
 As in a glasse their acts and haps to looke.

3

For many men with hope and show of pleasure,  
 Are carri'd far in foolish fond conceit,  
 And wast their pretious time, & spend their treasure,  
 Before they can discouer this deceit.  
 O happie they that keepe within their measure,  
 To turne their course in time, and sound retreit,  
 Before that wit with late repentance taught,  
 Vere better neuer had then so deare bought.

4

A little while before I did rehearse,  
 How that Rogero by two dames was brought,

To combat with Erisila the feerce,  
 Who for to stop the bridge and passage sought:  
 In vaine it were for to declare in verse,  
 How sumptuously her armor all was wrought,  
 All set with stones, and gult with Indian gold,  
 Both fit for vse, and pleasant to behold.

5

She mounted was but not vpon a steed,  
 Instead thereof she on a Wolfe doth sit,  
 A Wolfe whose match Apulia doth not breed,  
 Well taught to hand, although she vsd no bit,  
 And all of sandie colour was her weed,  
 Her armes were thus (for such a champion fit)  
 An vgly Tode was painted on her shield,  
 With poyson swolne, and in a fable field.

6

Now each the other forthwith had descride,  
 And each with other then prepared to fight,  
 Then each the other scornefully deside,  
 Each seekes to hurt the other all he might.  
 But she vnable his fierce blowes to bide,  
 Beneath the vizer smitten was so right:  
 That from her seat sixe paces she was heaued,  
 And lay like one of life and sense bereaued.

7

Rogero readie was to draw his sword.  
 To head the monster lying on the sand,  
 Vntill thote dames with many a gentle word,  
 Aswagd his heat and made him hold his hand:  
 He might in honour now her life asoord,  
 Sith at his mercie wholly she doth stand:  
 Wherefore fir knight put vp your blade (say thay)  
 Lets passe the bridge and follow on our way.

E ij

The

*Tarda solet mag-  
 nis rebus inesse  
 stiles.*

*That is to those  
 that cannot vn-  
 derstand the al-  
 legorie of it.*

*Horace. Quale  
 portentum eq-  
 militari Diana  
 in litu abis jere-  
 sentis.*



8

The way as yet vnpleasant was and ill,  
Among the thornie bushes and betweene,  
All stony, steep, ascending vp the hill,  
A way lesse pleasant seldome hath bene seenet  
But this once past according to their will,  
And they now mounted vp vpon the greene,  
They saw the fairest castle standing by,  
That erst was seene with any mortall eye.

9

*Alcyna* met them at the outer gate,  
And came before the rest a little space,  
And with a count'nance full of high estate,  
Salutes *Rogero* with a goodly grace,  
And all the other courtiers in like rate,  
Do bid *Rogero* welcome to the place,  
With so great shewes of dutie and of loue,  
As if some god descended from aboue.

10

Nor onely was this pallace for the sight,  
Most goodly, faire, and stately to behold,  
But that the peoples courtisie bred delight,  
Which was as great as could with tongue be told.  
All were of youth and beautie shining bright,  
Yet to confirme this thing I dare bebold,  
That faire *Alcyna* past the rest as farre,  
As doth the Sunne another little starre.

11

A shape whose like in waxe twere hard to frame,  
Or to expresse by skill of painters rare,  
Her haire was long, and yellow to the same,  
As might with wire of beaten gold compare:  
Her louely cheekes with shew of modest shame,  
With roses and with lillies painted are,  
Her forehead faire and full of seemely cheare,  
As smoth as polisht Iuorie doth appeare.

*Ouid. Candida  
purpureis liliis  
mixta rosas.*

12

Within two arches of most curious fashion,  
Stand two black eyes, that like two cleare suns shind,  
Of stodie looke, but apt to take compassion,  
Amid which lights, the naked boy and blind,  
Doth cast his darts that cause so many a passion,  
And leaue a sweet and curelesse wound behind:  
From thence the nose in such good sort descended,  
As enuie knowes not how it may be mended.

*Ouid. Audaces  
faciem suorum  
quoque.*

13

Conioynd to which in due and comely space,  
Doth stand the mouth staine with Vermilion hew,  
Two rowes of precious perle serue in their place,  
To show and shut, a lip right faire to vew:  
Hence come the courteous words, and full of grace,  
That mollifie hard hearts and make them new:  
From hence proceed those smilings sweet and nice,  
That seeme to make an earthly paradise.

14

Her brest as milke, her necke as white as snow,  
Her necke was round, most plum and large her brest  
Two Iuory apples seemed there to grow,  
Full tender smooth, and fittest to be prest:  
They waue like seas, when winds most calme doth  
But *Argos* selfe might not discerne the rest, (blow,  
Yet by presumption well it might be est,  
That that which was concealed was best.

*Ouid. Si qua la-  
sens meliora pu-*

15

Her armes due measure of proportion bare,  
Her faire white hand was to be vewed plaine,  
The fingers long, the ioynts so curious are,  
As neither knot appeared nor swelling vaine.  
And full to perfect all those features rare,  
The foote that to be seene doth sole remaine,  
Both slender, short, little it was and round,  
A finer foote might no where well be found.

*Ouid. Pes er  
exiguus, pedis  
hec apertissima  
forma.*

16

She had on euerie side prepar'd a net,  
If so she walke, or laugh, or sing, or stand:  
*Rogero* now the counsell doth forget,  
He had receiued late at *Astolfo* hand:  
He doth at nought those wholsome precepts set,  
That warned him to shun *Alcynas* land,  
He thought no fraud, no treason nor no guile,  
Could be accompani'd with so sweete a smile.

17

The dame of France, whom he so loued erst,  
He quite forgets, so farre awry he swarued:  
The tale *Astolfo* had to him reh  
He thinketh false, or else by him esarued:  
*Alcynas* goodly shape his heart so perit,  
She onely seemd a mistresse to be sarued:  
Ne must you blame *Rogeros* inclination,  
But rather blame the force of incantation.

18

Now as abrode the stately courts did sound,  
Of trumpets, shagbot, cornets, and of flutes,  
Euen so within there wants no pleasing sound,  
Of virginals, of vials and of lutes,  
Vpon the which persons not few were found,  
That did record their loues and louing sites,  
And in some song of loue and wanton verse,  
Their good or ill successes did reherse.

19

As for the sumptuous and luxurious fare,  
I thinke not they that *Nynus* did succeed,  
Nor *Cleopatra* faire, whose riot rare,  
To *Antoine* such loue and losse did breed,  
Might with *Alcynas* any way compare,  
Whose loue did all the others farre exceed,  
So deeply was she rauisht in the sight,  
Of this so valiant and so comely knight.

*These musicians  
were in such a  
sweet and pleasant  
place  
that they were  
apt to sing.*

20

The supper done, and tables tane away,  
To purposes and such like toyes they went,  
Each one to other secretly to lay  
Some word, by which some prettie toy is ment,  
This helpt the-louers better to bewray  
Each vnto another what was their intent,  
For when the word was hither toft and thither,  
Their last conclusion was to lie together.

21

These prettie kinds of amorous sports once ended,  
With torches to his chamber he was brought,  
On him a crew of gallant iquires attended,  
That euerie way to do him hono sought.  
The chambers furniture could not be mended,  
It seemd *Arachne* had the hangings ght,  
A banket new was made, the which once finished,  
The companie by one and one diminished.

*These  
new weaver of  
saphire.*

Now



22  
Now was *Rogero* couched in his bed,  
Betweene a paire of cambricke sheets perfumed,  
And oft he hearkens with his wakefull hed,  
For her whole loue his heart and soule consumed:  
Each little noise hope of her comming bred,  
Which finding false, against himselfe he fumed,  
And curst the cause that did him so much wrong,  
To cause *Alcyna* tarry thence so long.

*And: Atribus  
anseritum vocem  
saptamus, et  
omnem aduentus  
sit utrum creda-*

23  
from bed he softly doth arise,  
And looke abroad if he might her espie,  
Sometime he with himselfe doth thus deuise,  
Now she is comming, now she drawes thus nie:  
Sometime for very anger out he cries,  
What meaneth she, she doth no faster hie:  
Sometimes he casts le any let should be,  
Betweene his hand and t s desired tree.

24  
But faire *Alcyna*, when with odors sweet,  
She was perfum'd according to her skill,  
The time once come she deemed fit and meet,  
When all the houte were now asleepe and still:  
With rich embroderd slippers on her feet,  
She goes to giue and take of ioyes her fill,  
To him whom hope and feare so long assailed,  
Till sleepe drew on, and hope and feare both failed.

25  
Now when *Astolfo*s successor espide  
Those earthly starres, her faire and heau nly eies,  
As sulphur once inflamed cannot hide,  
Euen so the mettall in his veines that lies,  
So flam'd that in the skin it scant could bide:  
But of a sodaine straight he doth arise,  
Leaps out of bed, and her in armes embraced,  
Ne would he stay till she her selfe vnaced.

26  
So vtterly impatient of all stay,  
That though her mantle was but cyprous light,  
And next vpon her smocke of lawne it lay,  
Yet so the champion hasted to the fight,  
The mantle with his fury fell away,  
And now the smocke remained alone in sight,  
Which smocke as plaine her beauties all discloses,  
As doth a glasse the lillies faire and roses.

27  
And looke how close the Iuie doth embrace  
The tree or branch about the which it growes,  
So close the louers couched in the place,  
Each drawing in the breath the other blowes:  
But how great ioyes they found that little space,  
We well may guesse, but none for certaine knowes:  
Their sport was such, so well they leere their couth,  
That oft they had two tongues within one mouth.

*This lasciuious  
description of  
carnall pleasure  
neues not offend  
the chaste eares  
or thoughts of a-  
ny, but rather  
shame the un-  
chaste, that haue  
bene*

*at such  
bankers.*

*Sentence*

28  
ow though they keepe this close with great regard,  
Yet not so close but some did find the same,  
For though that vertue oft wants due reward,  
Yet feldome vic wants due deserued blame.  
*Rogero* still was more and more prefard,  
Each one to him with cap and courtie came,  
For faire *Alcyna* being now in loue,  
Would haue him plait the others all about.

29  
In pleasure here they spend the night and day,  
They change their clothes so often as they lust,  
Within they feast, they dance, disport and play,  
Abrode they hunt, they hauke, they ride, they iust,  
And so while sensuall life doth beare the sway,  
All discipline is troden in the dust.  
as while *Rogero* here his time mispends,  
He uite forgets his dutie and his friends.

30  
For while *Rogero* bides in feast and ioy,  
King *Agramant* doth take great care and paine,  
Dame *Bradamant* doth suffer great annoy,  
And traueled farre to find him all in vaine:  
She little knew *Alcyna* did enioy  
Her due delights, yet doth she mone and plaine,  
To thinke how strangely this same flying horte,  
Bare him away against his will by force.

31  
In townes, in fields, in hils, in dales she sought,  
In tents, in canpes, in lodgings and in caues,  
Oft she enquit'd, but yet she learned nought,  
She past the riuers fresh and salt sea waues,  
Among the Turkes she leaues him not vnought,  
(Gramercy ring that her from danger saues:)  
A ring whose vertue workes a thing scant possible,  
Which holding in her mouth she goes inuisible.

*Of this ring look  
the Table.*

32  
She will not, nor she cannot thinke him dead,  
For if a man of so great worth should die,  
It would some great report or fame haue bred,  
From East vnto the West, both farre and nie:  
It cannot sinke nor tettle in her head,  
Whether he be in seas, in earth or skie,  
Yet still she seekes, and her companions are  
Sorrowes and sighes, and teares, and louing care.

33  
At last she meanes to turne vnto the caue,  
Where lie the great and learned *Merlins* bones,  
And at that tombe to crie so loud and raue,  
As shall with pitie moue the marble stones:  
Nor till she may some certaine notice haue  
Of her belou'd to stay her plaints and mones,  
In hope to bring her purpose to effect,  
By doing as that Prophet should direct.

34  
Now as her course to Poytiers ward she bent,  
*Melyssa* vsing wonted skill and art,  
Encountred her, her iourney to preuent,  
Who knew full well, and did to her impart,  
Both where her loue was, and how his time he spent,  
Which grieu'd the vertuous damsell to the hart,  
That such a knight, so valiant erst and wise,  
Should to be drown'd in pleasure and in vice.

35  
O poyfond hooke that lurkes in sugred bait,  
O pleasures vaine, that in this world are found,  
Which like a subtyle theefe do lie in waite,  
To swallow man in sinke of sinne profound:  
O Kings and peeres, beware of this deceit,  
And be not in this gulf of pleasure drown'd:  
The time will come, and must I tell you all,  
When these your ioyes shall bitter seeme as gall.



36

Then turne your cloth of gold to clothes of heares,  
Your feasts to fasts, to sorrowes turne your songs,  
Your wanton toyes and smilings into teares,  
To restitution turne your doing wrongs,  
Your fond securenesse turne to godly feares,  
And know that vengeance vnto God belongs  
Who when he comes to iudge the soules of n  
It will be late alas to mend it then.

37

Then shall the vertuous man shine like the sunne,  
Then shall the vicious man repent his pleasure,  
Then one good deed of almes sincerely done,  
Shall be more worth then mines of Indian treasure,  
Then sentence shall be giu'n which none shall shun,  
Then God shall wey and pay our deeds by measure,  
Vnfortunate and thrice accursed thay,  
Whom fond delights do make forget that day.

38

But to returne vnto my tale againe,  
I say *Melyssa* tooke no little care,  
To draw *Rogero* by some honest traine,  
From this same place of feasts and daintie fare,  
And like a faithfull friend refusd no paine,  
To set him free from her sweet senselesse snare,  
To which his vnkle brought him with intent  
His destinie thereby for to preuent.

*Atlant.*

39

As oft we see men are so fond and blind,  
To carry to their sonnes too much affection,  
That when they seeme to loue, they are vnkind,  
(For they do hate a child that spare correction)  
So did *Atlanta*, not with euill mind,  
Giue to *Rogero* this so bad direction,  
But of a purpose, thereby to withdraw  
His fatall end that he before foresaw.

*Sentence:*

40

For this he sent him past so many seas,  
Vnto the Ile that I before did name,  
Esteeming lesse his honour then his ease,  
A few yeares life then euerlasting fame.  
For this he caused him so well to please  
*Alcyna* that same rich lasciuious dame;  
That though his time old *Nestors* life had finished,  
Yet her affection should not be diminished.

41

But good *Melyssa* on a ground more sure,  
That lou'd his honor better then his weale,  
By sound perswasions meanes him to procure,  
From pleasures court to vertues to appeale:  
As leeches good that in a desprate cure,  
With steele, with flame, and oft with poison heale,  
Of which although the patient do complaine,  
Yet at the last he thanks him for his paine.

*Simile.*

42

And thus *Melyssa* promised her aid,  
And helpe *Rogero* backe againe to bring,  
Which much recomforted the noble maid,  
That lou'd this knight aboute each earthly thing.  
But for the better doing this (she said)  
It were behouefull that he had her ring,  
Whose vertue was that who so did it weare,  
Should neuer need the force of charrees to feare.

43

But *Bradamant* that would not onely spare  
Her ring (to do him good) but eke her hart,  
Commends the ring and him vnto her care,  
And so these Ladies take their leaue and part.  
*Melissa* for her iourney doth prepare,  
By her well tried skill in Magicke art,  
A beast that might supply her present lacke,  
That had one red foot and another blacke.

44

Such hast she made, that by the breake of day  
She was arriued in *Alcynas* Ile,  
But straight she changd her shape and her array,  
That she *Rogero* better might beguile:  
Her stature tall she makes, her head all gray,  
A long white beard she takes to hide the wile  
In fine she doth so cunning dissemble,  
That she the old *Atlas* doth resemble.

*Atlant Rogeros  
vnkle and schoo-  
master.*

45

And in this sort she waiteth till she might  
By fortune find *Rogero* in fit place,  
Which very seldome hapt, for d night  
He stood so high in faire *Alcynas* grace,  
That she could least abide of any wight,  
To haue him absent but a minute space.  
At last full early in a morning faire,  
She spide him walke abroade to take the aire.

46

About his necke a carknet rich he ware,  
Of precious stones, all set in gold well tride,  
His armes that erst all warlike weapons bare,  
In golden bracelets wantonly were tide:  
Into his eares two rings conueyed are,  
Of golden wire, at which on either side  
Two Indian pearles in making like two pearles,  
Of passing price were pendent at his eares.

*A description  
an effeminat  
comiser.*

47

His locks bedewd with waters of sweet fauour,  
Stood curled round in order on his hed,  
He had such wanton womanish behauiour,  
As though in Valence he had long bene bred:  
So changd in speech, in manners and in fauour,  
So from himselfe, beyond all reason led,  
By these inchantm<sup>nts</sup> of this am'rous dame,  
He was himselfe in nothing but in name.

48

Which when the wise and kind *Melyssa* saw,  
(Resembling still *Atlantas* person sage)  
Of whom *Rogero* alwayes stood in aw,  
Euen from his tender youth to elder age,  
She toward him with looke austere did draw,  
And with a voice abrupt, as halfe in rage,  
Is this (quoth she) the guerdon and the gaine,  
I find for all my trauell and my paine?

49

What was't for this that I in youth thee fed,  
With marrow of the Beares and Lions fell?  
That I through caues and deserts haue thee led,  
Where serpents of most vgly shape do dwell,  
Where Tygers fierce and cruell Leopards bred,  
And taught thee how their forces all to quell:  
An *Atis* or *Adonis* for to be,  
Vnto *Alcyna* as I now thee see.



50  
Was this foreshewd by those obserued starres,  
By figures and natiuities oft cast,  
By dreames, by oracles that neuer artes,  
By those vaine arts I studide in time past,  
That thou shouldst proue so rare a man in warres,  
Whose famous deeds to endlesse praise should last?  
Whose acts should honor be both farre and neare,  
And not be matcht with such another peare.

51  
...ane or ready way you trow?  
Which other worthy men haue trod before,  
A *Cæsar* or a *Scipio* to grow,  
And to increase in honor more and more?  
But to the end a man may certaine know,  
How thrall thou art vnto *Alcynas* lore,  
Thou wearest here he...aines and flauish bands,  
With which she binds th...arlike armes and hands.

52  
If thou regard not thine owne estimation,  
To which the heau'ns ordaine thee if thou would,  
Defraud not yet thine heires and generation,  
Of which I haue thee oftentime foretold,  
Appointed by eterne predestination,  
Except thou do their due from them withhold,  
Out of thy loines and bowels to proceed  
Such men whose match the world did neuer breed.

53  
Let not so many a worthy soule and mind,  
Fram'd by the wisdom of the heau'nly King,  
Be hindred of the bodies them assignd,  
Whose offspring chiefe must of thy issue spring:  
Be not vnto thine owne blood so vnkind,  
Of whose Great triumphs all the world shall ring,  
Whose successors, whose children and posteritie,  
Shall helpe our country to her old prosperitie.

54  
What good hath this great Queene vnto thee done,  
But many other queenes can do the same?  
What certaine gaine is by her seruice wonne,  
That soone doth fancie, sooner doth defame?  
Wherefore to make thee know what thou hast done,  
That of thy doings thou maist haue some shame,  
But weare this ring, and next time you repaire  
To your *Alcyna*, marke if she be faire.

55  
*Rogero* all abasht and mute did stand,  
With silent tongue, and looke for shame downe cast,  
The good enchantresse tooke him by the hand,  
And on his finger straight the ring she plast,  
But when this ring had made him vnderstand  
His owne estate, he was so sore agast,  
He wisht himselfe halfe buride vnder ground,  
Much rather then in such place once be found.

56  
But she that saw her speech tooke good effect,  
And that *Rogero* shamed of his sinne,  
She doth her person and her name detect,  
And as her selfe (not *Atlant*) doth beginne,  
By counsell and aduice him to direct,  
To rid him life from this so dangerous ginne:  
And giues him perfect notice and instruction,  
How these deceits do bring men to destruction.

57  
She shewd him plainly she was thither sent,  
By *Euclamant* that lou'd him in sinceritie,  
Who to deliuer him from bondage ment,  
Or her that blinded him with false prosperitie.  
How she tooke *Atlants* person to th'intent  
Her countenance might carry more austeritie,  
Surrounding now him home reduc'd againe,  
She saith she will declare the matter plaine.

58  
And vnto him forthwith she doth impart,  
How that faire dame that best deseru'd his loue,  
Did send that ring, and would haue sent her hart,  
If to her heart his good so farre might moue,  
The ring this vertue had, it could subuert  
All magicke frauds, and make them vaine to proue;  
*Rogero* as I said, no time did linger,  
But put the ring vpon his little finger.

59  
When truth appeard, *Rogero* hated more  
*Alcynas* trumpries, and did them detest,  
Then he was late enamored before,  
(O happie ring that makes the bearer blest)  
Now saw he that he could not see before,  
How with deceits *Alcyna* had bene drest,  
Her borrowd beauties, all appeared stained,  
The painting gone, nothing but filth remained.

60  
Eu'n as a child that taking from the tree  
An apple ripe, and hides it in some place,  
When he returns the same againe to see,  
After a senight or a fortnights space,  
Doth scant beleue it should the same frute be,  
When rottenesse that ripenesse doth deface,  
And where before delight in it he tooke,  
Now scant he bides vpon the same to looke.

61  
Eu'n so *Rogero* plainly now describe,  
*Alcynas* foule disgraces and enormitie,  
Because of this his ring she could not hide,  
By all her paintings any one deformitie:  
He saw most plainly that in her did bide,  
Vnto her former beauties no conformitie,  
But lookes so vgly, that from East to West,  
Was not a fouler old mishapen beast.

62  
Her face was wan, a leane and writheld skin,  
Her stature scant three horseloanes did exceed:  
Her haire was gray of hue, and very thin,  
Her teeth were gone, her gums seru'd in their steed,  
No space was there between her nose and chin,  
Her noisome breath contagion would breed,  
In fine, of her it might haue well bene said,  
In *Nestors* youth she was a pretie maid.

*Simile.*

*The deformities of  
pleasure when it  
is beheld with  
reason.*

*Nestor liued as  
some write 300.  
years.*

63  
I feare her arts are learned now a dayes,  
To counterfait their haire and paint their skin,  
But reasons ring their crafts and guiles bewrayes,  
No wise men of their paintings passe a pin,  
Those vertues that in women merit praise,  
Are sober shewes without, chaste thoughts within  
True faith and due obedience to their make,  
And of their children honest care to take.

*Sentences.*



64

Now though *Rogero* (as before I sed)  
 Detested sore the vgly witches sight,  
 Yet by *Melyffas* counsell wisely led,  
 He doth conceale the matter for a night,  
 Till of prouision he were better sped,  
 With which he might more safely take his flight.  
 And taking care his meaning close to hide,  
 He doth forthwith his armour all prouide.

65

And tels *Alcyna* he would go and trie,  
 If that he were not waxen grosse or no,  
 Because that idle he so long did lie,  
 And neuer fought with any armed fo:  
 His sword vnto his girdle he doth tie,  
 With armour on, a walking he doth go,  
 And with a scarfe about his arme he lapt  
 The shield that in the cypresse case was wrapt.

66

And thus arraid, he commeth to the stable,  
 And tooke a horse (as wise *Melyssa* taught)  
 A horse as blacke as any ieat or sable,  
 So made as if in waxe he had bene wrought,  
 Most swift for course, and strong of limbes and able,  
 This horse hight *Rabican* was thither brought  
 By Duke *Astolfo*, who by sorcerie  
 Was turned late into a myrtle tree.

*Rabican, looke  
 she table.*

**Morall.**

In *Erifila* that is ouerthrowne by *Rogero* and not killed, we may obserue, that the liberalitie that men make great shew of in their youthfull pleasures and entertainments, is not the true vertue that doth indeed quite extinguish and kill that monster of couetousnesse. In *Alcyna* and *Rogeros* lasciuious loue, from whom *Rogero* is glad at last to runne away, we may note the notable allurments of fleshly sensualitie, and take a good lesson to auoyd them onely by flying from them, as hath bene in part touched before. *Melyffas* good counsell, euery yong *Rogero* may apply to himselfe, and learne thereby to be gone to *Logestillas* in time, lest he be turned into some beast or tree, as these notable enchantresses do daily transforme their followers. But of all this I will speake more at large in the Allegorie.

**Historie.**

Concerning the Historie of this booke, there is no matter historicall therein: Only where there is a comparison of the riot of *Alcyna* with that of the Persian kings, and that of *Cleopatra*, those to whom the storie is not knowne, shall find an explanation thereof in the Table or Index.

**Allegorie.**

Is shewed before how by *Erifila* is meant couetousnesse, which our young gallants beate downe but kill not, nay oft it riseth againe and ouercomes them, and makes them fall to meere rapine and extortion. Wherein in the eight staffe, the way was said to be vnpleasant (though that seeme contrary to the saying of *Hercules* two wayes of vice and vertue) yet no doubt but euen in this way of pleasure, there be many ill fauoured and dangerous passages, as one of the fathers well noteth, that a wretched worldling doth oftentimes toile more to go to hell for his labour, then a vertuous man doth to win heauen. The things that allure most to sensualitie, are set downe in order: in the ninth staffe kind entertainment: in the tenth, sumptuous building: in the eleuenth and so forward to the sixteenth, artificiall behauiour and exquisite beautie, set forth with all cunning, as *Ouid* saith, *Et meruit formosa videri*, that is, she deserved with the paine she took to seeme handsome: in the eighteenth, musicke and wanton sonets of loue: riotous fare in the nineteenth, with all kind of delicacies to prouoke venery: in the twentieth, wanton discourses and purposes, of which commonly their last conclusion is to lie together, as there is said: in the two and twentieth, perfumes and allestinate delicacies, in a which we see, the eye, the eare, the tast, the smelling, the feeling, the wit, the thoughts, all fed with their objects of delight, making men quite to forget God and all good counsell, as *Rogero* quite forgot *Bradamant* and the counsell of *Astolfo*. And sure it is worth the noting where it is said in the sixteenth staffe, that the tale *Astolfo* late to him rehearst, he thinketh false or else by him deserued. How yong men that at the first haue seemed very well giuen, very religious, comely and studious of all vertue and good learning, yet after when they come to be aduanced to high fauours or to great lining, they despise all that was taught them before, and count religion but a pollicie, and philosophie but a folly, and the admonition of godly men that reprove their ambition, or their sensualitie, or their extreme couetousnesse, to proceed but of enuie to their high estate and felicitie, which they would be glad to come to themselves and cannot. And surely if any will but take a note of any speciall persons, toucht with any or with all three of these enormous vices, let them but marke if they haue not in their whole liues and actions (and some perhaps in plaine words) discouered this their contempt of religion and vertuous discipline: I would this age were barren of examples of this kind.

Now concerning the inchantments that bring men into this blindness to think *Alcyna* so faire a woman, is nothing but a shew of vertue, of beautie, of graciousnesse, that the foolish louer perswades himself that he seeth in the person or uoile of his mistress, of which *Petrarke* saith, *Da questi magi transformato fui*: These are the witches that transfomed me.

67

As for the Griffith horse that there was by,  
*Melyssa* wisheth him to let him stand,  
 And sayth, that she her selfe ere long would trie,  
 To make him gentle to the spurre and hand.  
 And that she would hereafter time espie,  
 To bring it him, and let him vnderstand,  
 How he should do with very little paine,  
 To make him yeeld to spurre, to rod and raine.

68

She further said, his flight would be suspected  
 Except he let the flying horse to stay.  
*Rogero* none of all her words neglected,  
 But did her counsell wise and sage obey:  
 And so before his meaning was detected,  
 From this mishapen hag he stole away,  
 And meanes (if God will) grant him so much grace)  
 To be at *Logestillas* in short space.

69

Such men of armes as watched at the gate  
 He slue, the rest he sodainly assailed,  
 He happie was scapt with a broken pate,  
 They tooke their heeles when as their hearts them  
*Alcyna* now had notice all too late, (failed.)  
*Rogero* was so farre it nought auailed:  
 But in another booke shall be contained,  
 How him dame *Logestilla* entertained.



The griefe that Bradamant takes for Rogeros mispending his time, may note to vs the grace and long sufferance of God, when man runneth astray after the worldly vanities. Melissa that offereth her service to go to reciaime Rogero doth figure vnto vs both preachers & philosophers, that shew vs by the ring (which hath bene expounded before to be reason) our foule errours and our wandring courses, and so makes vs see our owne deformities, and the deformitie of that we esteemed so dearely, as in this booke you see what manner of monster Alcyna appeared in her owne likenesse, when the ring of reason had dissolued all enchantments. Infinite matter more might be applyed in allegoricall sence out of this booke, if I would couet to stand vpon euerie small matter, for as I said at the first, these two bookes be in a manner a meere allegorie from the beginning to the ending.

The comming of Melissa to Rogero alludeth to the comming of Mercurie to Æneas in Virgil, who was then at Carthage stayd by the loue of Dydo as Rogero was here by Alcyna. Allusion

And that had the vertue beside dissoluing enchantments, to make one go inuisible, alludeth to Gyges ring, of which it is sayd, that by the helpe thereof he became King of Lydia.









## THE ARGUMENT.

*Rogero fled: Melissa after staid;  
 Astolfo with some others to restore:  
 Renaldo musters souldiers for aid,  
 To Charles the great, who neuer needed more:  
 Angelica by dromsie hermit laid,  
 tane and bound all naked to the shore:  
 Orlando is so troubled with his dreame,  
 He leaues the seruice of his king and reame.*



**O** strange enchantments  
 vsed now a dayes,  
 Oh charmers straunge a-  
 mong vs dayly found,  
 That find so many charms  
 and subtle wayes,  
 Wherewith they hold fond  
 louers hearts fast bound,  
 Not with coniuers spi-  
 rits that they raise,  
 Nor knowledge of the stars and skill profound,  
 But blinding mens conceits, and them fast tying,  
 With simulation, fraud, deceit and lying.

But he that had the rule and ring of reason, (couer,  
 Should soone their frauds, their crafts and guiles disc-  
 And finde a hoord of foule and lothsome treason,  
 To lurke within the shew of such a louer:  
 Well may they seeme most louely for a season,  
 When all their wrinkles they with painting couer,  
 But vnto men of wit and reason learned,  
 Their subtleties shall quickly be discerned.

Rogero (as I said) in secret sort,  
 With Rabican out of the castle went,  
 And made the watch and guard vnpleasant sport,  
 That most of them his comming might repent:  
 Some had their armes, and some their heads cut  
 All put to flight, the gates in peeces rent. (shot,  
 And then vnto the wood he entred, when  
 He met by chance one of Alcynas men.

This man did beare a faulcon on his fist,  
 With which he went on hauking day by day,

To flie in field, or riuer as he list,  
 The cuntry full of game still yeelded pray;  
 He had a spaniell could not well be mist,  
 And eke a hauking nagge not verie gay,  
 And meeting good Rogero halfe disguised,  
 That he was fled away he straight surmised.

The seruant rideth on, and at their meeting,  
 He askt Rogero why he rode so fast,  
 Rogero gaue him verie slender greeting,  
 As though on such a squire he little past:  
 Well (quoth the faulkner) though thou now art  
 I trust er long to shew thee such a cast, (fleeing;  
 That with my dogge, my faulcon and my horse,  
 I do not doubt to fetch thee backe by force.

And first he lets the faulcon take her flight,  
 But Rabican as fast as she did flie,  
 Then from his horse the faulkner doth alight,  
 His horse flue like an arrow by and by.  
 Then went the dogge, who was of course so light,  
 As is the wind that bloweth in the skie:  
 And last of all him selfe ran with such shift,  
 It seem'd the lightnings flame was not so swift.

Rogero thinketh it a foule disgrace,  
 That any man should thinke he fled for feare,  
 And more because he now was had in chase;  
 Wherefore he doth a while the flight forbear,  
 And manfully to them he turnes his face,  
 And seeing no man but the faulkner there,  
 And that no weapon in his hand he saw,  
 He much disdained on him his sword to draw.



8

But straight the dog doth bite his horses heeles,  
The hauke his head amazed with her wings.  
When *Rabyean* such strange foes forces feelles,  
He riseth vp before, behinde he flings:  
*Rogero* thought the world had run on wheelles,  
And *Balifarda* out at once he brings,  
But they, it seemd, so well were scene in fence,  
That all his blowes to them brought no off nce.

*Rogero's sword.*

9

Both loth to stay, resolued not to yeeld,  
He takes his target from his saddle bow,  
And with the dazling light of that same sheeld  
Whose force *Melyssa* lately made him know,  
He made them fall as if their eies were seeld,  
So that no farther let from them did grow,  
But hauing vanquish't them this wise with ease,  
He now may ride at leasure where he please.

10

These foes once foild, their forces overcome,  
*Alcyna* straight had notice of his flight,  
For of the watchmen one to her was come,  
That while these things were done did stand in sight.  
This made her stand like one halfe dead or dumme,  
And after put her into such a fright,  
That forthwith for auoiding further harme,  
Through all the towne she made them crie alarme.

11

And calling oft her selfe a foolish beast,  
Because *Rogero* so from her was slipt,  
Sometime she beates her head, her face and breast,  
Sometime in rage her garments all she ript:  
She calleth all her men from most to least,  
A part of whom vnto the sea she shipt,  
And of the rest she makes a mightie band,  
To fetch *Rogero* backe againe by land.

12

All were so busie to this seruice bent,  
That none remaind the pallace faire to gard,  
Which greatly helpt *Melyssa's* good intent,  
Which chiefly was as you before haue hard,  
To set at large poore prisoners so long pent,  
Which now to do (she absent) was not hard,  
Dissoluing all her circles and her knots,  
And stroying all her figures and her lots.

13

And thus in fields, in houses, and in woods,  
She set at large as many as she found,  
That had bene turnd, to trees, to stones and floods,  
And in that state by magicke art fast bound:  
Likewise to them she rendred all their goods,  
Who when they saw themselues so cleare vnbound,  
Departing thence with all the hast they might,  
To *Logessilla* they arriu'd that night.

14

And first of all and chiefe of all the rest,  
The English Duke came to himselfe againe,  
Because *Rogero* lou'd and wisht him best,  
And lends the ring that makes inchantments vaine.  
But good *Melyssa* could by no meanes rest,  
Vntill she could his armour eke regaine,  
And that same famous worthie guilded launce,  
That had to him such honor done in Fraunce.

15

With which *Argalia* got no little fame,  
Who vled oft the same in fight to beare.  
Now when *Melyssa* to the castle came,  
She found his other armour with the speare,  
And this atcheu'd, the sage and frendly dame,  
Mounts on the Griffith horse without all feare,  
And Duke *Affolfo* mounting on his crupper,  
To *Logessilla* came that night to supper.

16

Now was *Rogero* with no small a do,  
Tiring himselfe amid those craggie wayes,  
And struiuing all that he with paine may do,  
To cut of all those lothsome long delayes,  
That hindred him for sooner comming to  
That Ladie faire whose vertues merit praise,  
Till neare the Southern sea with mickle paine,  
He came vnto a sandy desert plaine.

17

Here was he plagu'd with thirst and parching heat,  
And with the sunne reflecting on the sand,  
Which from the South vpon the banke did beat,  
Enflaming still the aire on either hand,  
But leauing now *Rogero* in this sweat,  
That still I may not in one matter stand.  
To Scotland now I will returne againe,  
And of *Renaldo* talke a word or twaine.

*He follow  
master 100. e12,  
staffe 33.*

18

Great was his entertainment and his cheare,  
Made by the king and people of the land,  
Which feasts once done, the worthie valiant peare,  
As was his charge, doth let them vnderstand,  
How *Charles* the great, whose state doth touch them  
In no small need of their good aid did stand, (neare)  
And how for this he sent him to their nation,  
And to this tale he ads an exhortation.

19

Then was it answerd him without delay,  
That for king *Charles* and for the Empires sake,  
They all were readie to do all they may,  
And would for this behoofe short order take,  
And offred him to shew (if he would stay)  
What store of horse and footmen he could make  
Namely the king himselfe would be right glad,  
To go in person, but his age forbad.

20

Nor yet should age with him so much haue done,  
As make him from the baill to abide,  
Saue that he had a wife and valiant sonne,  
Well able such a band of men to guide,  
Whose valure had already praises wonne,  
And of his youth was now in floure and pride.  
This noble toward impe he doth intend,  
As captaine of his armed men to send.

*Zerbyno.*

21

Wherefore about his realme forthwith he sent,  
To get of horses and of men good store,  
With ships, and things to war most pertinent,  
As needfull meate, and mony needfull more:  
The while *Renaldo* into England went,  
The king to Barwicke companie him bore,  
And men report that when they should depart,  
The king was scene to weepe for tender hart.

*Scuzengas**Renaldo*



22

*Renaldo* went with faire and prosprous wind,  
And past along vpon the English coast,  
Vntill he hapt the noble Terns to find,  
Of which all London iustly make their boast :  
Here he tooke land as first he had assign'd,  
And in twelue houres iourney riding post,  
Vnto the Prince of Wales he was conducted,  
Whom of these matters fully he instructed.

23

That was Vicegerent to the King,  
(That *Oton* hight) who sojournd now in France,  
From whom *Renaldo* did commision bring,  
To take vp horse, and men, and ordinance.  
When he had once true knowledge of that thing,  
Which of all other he would most aduance:  
He marshald men of arms without delay,  
And points them meet at all place by a day.

24

*He follows it in his booke,*  
But here I must a while from hence digresse,  
Left to one tale my pen should still be bound,  
As good musitians do their skill expresse,  
By playing on the strings of diuers sound:  
While *Renald* here is cheard with greet excessse,  
(As euer in the English land is found)  
I meane to tell how that faire Ladie fled,  
That twise before from this *Renaldo* fled.

25

*Angelica.* I told you how *Angelica* the bright,  
Fled from *Renaldo* in a thicke darke wood,  
How on a hermit there she hapt to light,  
And how her sight reuiu'd his aged blood:  
But she that tooke in him but small delight,  
Whose hoary haire could do her little good,  
With this good hermit made but little stay,  
But turnd her horses rains and went away.

26

The hermit seeing he contemned was,  
(Whom age long since, and loue did newly blind)  
Doth spurre a thousand times his silly asse,  
Who still remained more and more behind,  
And sith he saw he could not bring to passe,  
To stop her courle (afflicted much in mind)  
In vaine he doth his poore asse beate and curse,  
His trot was very bad, his gallop worse.

27

And being out of hope of comming nire,  
As hauing almost lost her horses tracke,  
He studies now to compasse his desire,  
With some rare stratageme to bring her back:  
Vnto that art forthwith he doth retire,  
(That damned art that is furnamed blacke)  
And by his bookes of magicke he doth make  
A little le the Ladie ouertake.

28

And as the hound that men the Tumbler name,  
When he a hare or conie doth espie,  
Doth seeme another way his courle to frame,  
As though he meant not to approach more nie,  
But yet he meeteth at the last his game,  
And shaketh it ntil he make it die;  
So doth the hermit trauerse all about,  
At eu ry turne to find the damsell out.

29

What he intends to do, full well I wot,  
And meane ere long the same to you to show,  
The damsell traueled still that knew it not,  
The spright to do his office was not slow,  
For straight within the horse himtelfe he got,  
As she on sands of Gascoigne seas did go,  
The spright that fully had possest the horse,  
Did driue her to the sea with all his force.

30

Which when the faire and fearfull damsell saw,  
Although she tride full oft with rod and raine,  
Her palfrey from his dangerous courle to draw,  
Yet seeing plainly she did striue in vaine,  
With colour chang'd for anguish and for aw,  
And casting oft her looke to land againe,  
At last she sitteth still, nor further striueth,  
For needs they must go whom the diuell driueth.

Sentence.

31

In vaine it was to strike the horse her bare,  
It was not done by that poore palfreys falt,  
Wherefore she tucks her garments, taking care  
Left they should be bedewd with waters salt,  
Vpon her haire, which then all loose she ware,  
The aire doth make an amorous assalt,  
The greater winds were still, I thinke of deutie,  
That they acknowledge to so rare a beutie.

32

The waters more, the land still lesse she sees,  
At last she saw but one small peece of land,  
And that small peece in small time she doth leese,  
Now sees she neither shore nor any sand.  
Then cold despaire all liuely hope did freeze,  
When as her horse did turne to the right hand,  
And at the twilight, or not long before,  
Did bring her to a solitary shore.

33

Here she remaining helpless and alone,  
Among the fruitlesse trees and senslesse rocks,  
Standing her selfe all like the marble stone,  
Saue that sometime she tare her golden locks,  
At last her eyes to teares, her tongue to mone,  
She doth resolue, her faire soft breast she knocks,  
And blames the God of heau'n and powre diuine,  
That did the fates vnto her fall incline.

34

O fortune, fortune, (thus the damsell cride)  
Fill now thy rage and execute thine ire,  
And take this life that takest all beside,  
And let my death accomplish thy desire:  
I haue and dayly do thy force abide,  
Feare still my mind, trauell my limbs doth tire,  
And makes me think in this great storme and strife,  
That death were sweet to shorten such a life.

35

Can all thy malice do me further spite?  
Can any state be worse or more vnstedy?  
That am from princely scepter banisht quite,  
A helpless hap and hurt past all remedy,  
And worse then this, mine honor shining bright  
Is stained sore, and eu'n defast alreedy,  
For though in act no ill I euer wrought,  
Yet wandring thus wil make men think me no ght.

F

*Casir pua every  
hu wife for sus-  
pition, alledging  
Non solis à male,  
sed à suspitione  
cauendum.*

*able cons-  
at for-  
rain mas  
pute so on  
the ty. e  
es so far up  
rs*



36

What can a woman hold of any price,  
If once she leese her honor and good name?  
Alas I hate this beautie and despite,  
And wish it neuer had bene of such fame:  
Ne do I for this gift now thanke the skies,  
By which my spoile and vter ruine came,  
Which could my brother *Argal* shed his blood,  
Ne could his armes enchanted do him good.

37

*All this storie or  
fable is set downe  
at large in Boi-  
ardos Orla do  
inamorato.*

For this the king of Tartar *Agricane*,  
Sought of my father *Galafron* the spoile,  
Who whilome was in India cald great Cane,  
And after dide with sorrow of the foile.  
For this I d'yly doubting to be tane,  
From place to place do passe with endlesse toile,  
And now to loose alas what halt thou left me,  
Since fame, and goods, and friends are all bereft me?

38

If drowning in the sea were not a death  
Seuere enough to quench thy raging spite,  
Then send some beast out of this desert heath,  
To teare my limbs and to deuoure me quite:  
I shall thee thanke for stopping of my breath,  
If to torment me thou haue no delight,  
These wofull words vtterd the Ladie bright,  
When straight the hermit came within her sight.

39

Who all the while had in a corner stood,  
And heard her make this piteous plaint and mone,  
Proceeding from her sad and mourning mood,  
Enough to moue a heart as hard as stone:  
It did the *senex fornicator* good,  
To thinke that he was there with her alone,  
Yet so deuoutly commeth this old carrion,  
As though it had bene *Paul* or *Saint Hillarion*.

40

When as the damsell saw a man appeare,  
In such a desert solitary place,  
She straight began to be of better cheare,  
Though feare and dread appeare still in her face:  
And with a voice so loud as he might heare,  
She praid him pitie this her wofull case,  
Recounting all her dangers ouerblowne,  
To him to whom they were already knowne.

41

No sooner had the hermit heard her out,  
But straight to comfort her he doth begin,  
And shewes by many reasons and deuout,  
How all these plagues were sent her for her sin:  
The while he puts his sawcie hands about,  
Sometime her breasts, sometime her neck and chin,  
And more and more still gathering heart of grace,  
He offers boldly her for to embrace.

42

But she that much disdaind this homely fashion,  
Doth staine her cheekes with red for very shame,  
Thrust back his carren corpes without compassion,  
Reuiling him with many a spitefull name,  
Who testie with old age and with new passion,  
That did him now with wrath and loue inflame,  
Drawes out a bottle of a strange confection,  
That sleepe procureth by a stroue infection.

43

With this he sprinkleth both the damselfs eies,  
(Those eyes whence *Cupid* oft his arrowes shot)  
Straight found asleepe the goodly damsell lies,  
Subiected to the will of such a sot:  
Ne yet for ought he did or could deuise,  
He could procure his curtall stir a iot,  
Yet oft he kist her lips, her cheekes, her brest,  
And felt and saw the beauties of the rest.

44

The duller iade still hangeth downe his h  
Sturring or spurring could not make him prounce,  
The sundrier wayes he said, the worse he sped,  
His youthfull dayes were done, he could not daunce  
His strength was gone, his courage all was dead,  
His weapon looked like a broken launce:  
And while himselfe in one he thus doth cumber,  
He falleth downe b r into a slumber.

45

But now another euill chance befell,  
(For one ill turne alone is seldome done)  
The which to th'end I may the better tell,  
Know this, about the setting of the sunne,  
There is an Ile, *Ebuda* as men tell,  
Whose habitants are welnigh all yndone,  
By meanes that mightie *Proteus* thither sent  
An Orke that doth the people teare and rent.

46

Within this Ile, as auncient stories tell,  
(I not affirme how false they are or true)  
Sometime a king of mightie powre did dwell,  
That had a daughter passing faire of hue,  
The which faire Ladie *Proteus* likt so well,  
When her on sands in wa ing he dr' vew,  
That though he dwelt in waters salt and cold,  
Yet fresh hot loue on him had taken hold.

47

Which heate when all the sea could not assuage,  
He thought her milkwarm flesh could only quenech,  
And (for he saw she was of lawfull age)  
With her consent he forst the princely wench:  
Which sinne did set her father in such rage,  
That straight condemning her in open bench:  
Her of her life he publikely bereaued,  
Nor spar'd the infant in her wombe conceaued.

48

This cruell act her louer so inflamed,  
On King and Iland he doth wreake his spite,  
He sends that monster that before I named,  
With other beasts to stroy the Iland quite:  
These monsters hurt their men, beat, kild and lamed,  
In fine put all the people in such frigh,  
That to escape the beast deuoid of pitie,  
They leit their fields, and fled vnto the tie.

49

And though men armd the gates and wals defend,  
Yet they within scant thought themselues secure,  
And sith their harmes haue neither ease nor end,  
And tir'd the tedious trauel to endure,  
Vnto *Apollos* oracle they send,  
To know how they their safetie might procure,  
Who after humble sute and sacrifice,  
Answerd them of *Ebuda* in this wise.

Blood



50

Blood guiltlesse spilt did breed great *Proteus* ire,  
Inflamd with loue, and fed with beautie rare,  
Blood guiltlesse must be spilt to quench this fire,  
Till one be found may with the first compare:  
This you must do and if you peace desire,  
To take of damfels those that fairest are,  
And offer one a day vpon the shore,  
Till he find one like vnto that before.

51

Il answer breeding much despaire,  
And more dislike within their carefull harts,  
To thinke that eu'ry day a damsell faire,  
Must for a prey be giu'n without defaults:  
This is the cause that maketh them repaire,  
(To find sufficient store) to sundry parts,  
And get them virgins f e and vndeasured,  
Of this most vgly Orke t e deuoured,

52

Now if this be of *Proteus* true or not,  
I meane not in defence of it to stand,  
But this is certaine so, full well I wot,  
Men vse this cruell custome in that land,  
And day by day a maid is drawne by lot,  
And left for prey vpon the rocke or sand,  
Vnto the monster that doth them deuoure,  
Eu'n in their prime of youth and tender floure.

53

O wretched wights, whom subtle snares haue brought  
To this vnfortunate and fatall Ile,  
Where damfels faire and handsome out are sought,  
To serue for food vnto a monster vile:  
Their pyrats bring them home, their vessels fraught  
With such hey take by force, or trap with wile,  
With which they fill their prisons and their towres,  
To haue them ready at appointed howres.

54

Thus sending out their vessels day by day,  
It chanc'd that one of them with tempest tost,  
Hapt to arriue whereas the hermit lay  
With that faire Lady hard vpon the cost:  
Oh cruell chance, oh precious peerlesse pray,  
Among the pirats either to be lost,  
Or to be caried to the fatall Ile,  
To be deuoured of a monster vile.

55

That beautie rare that *Sacrapant* ay deemed  
More deare then liuing, libertie or life:  
That beautie rare that to *Orlando* seemed  
Most fit of all the world to be his wife:  
That beautie rare in India so esteemed,  
That bre' so many a blow and bloody strife,  
Is now so quite of aid and comfort rest,  
Not o o speake a word for her is left.

56

The damsell faire drownd in a deadly sleepe,  
Was tane and bound before she could awake,  
Also the drowsie frier, to make him keepe  
Her companie, away with them they take:  
This done, they lanchd out into the deepe,  
And with this precious prey they homeward make,  
Where in a castle they detaind her thrall,  
Vntill to die her lucklesse lot should fall.

57

Yet such great force her passing beautie had,  
Among these barbarous and sanage wights,  
That they appeared sorrowfull and sad,  
To wey the danger of her dolefull plights,  
It seemed all of them would haue bene glad,  
To haue preferu'd her many dayes and nights:  
But such small store of others there remained,  
At last to offer her they were constrained.

58

Who can the woes, the teares, the plaints rehearse,  
The lamentations and the mourning sound,  
That seemd y heau'ns theselues with noise to pearce,  
To rend the rocke, and stir the stedie ground?  
Her iu'ry corps conuayd (as in a hearse)  
By wailing wights, where they must leaue it bound.  
The thought hereof in me such pang doth breed,  
I can no further in this tale proceed.

59

Wherefore I must some other matter find,  
Vntill my Muse her sorrow may allwage,  
For sure no cruell beast were so vnkind,  
Nor Tyger in their greatest wrath and rage,  
Nor any cruell tyrant can we find,  
(Although there are good store in eu'ry age)  
That could behold or thinke without compassion,  
A Ladie bounden in so vile a fashion.

60

Oh had *Orlando* notice of her smart,  
Who was to Paris gone to seeke her out,  
Or those two knights whom late the fiend did part,  
The which for loue of her together fought,  
They would for her vse all paine, care and art,  
Of death nor danger they would put no doubt:  
But if they helpe not now, it is no wonder,  
Sith they and she were plac'd so farre asunder.

He returnes to  
Angelica, 10.  
like staffe 78.

61

Now in this time to Paris siege was layd,  
By famous *Agramant Traianos* sonne,  
Of which at last they grew so sore afrayd,  
The towne had almost of the Turks bin wonne,  
Had not their vowes procur'd them heau'nly ayd,  
They had bin ruind all and quite vndone,  
The force of France had welnigh then bin foyled,  
The holy Empire had almost bin spoyled.

62

For when that now the citie was on fire,  
And when all hope of humane helpe was past,  
Then mightie God forgetting wrath and ire,  
Vpon their teares, repentance true, and fast,  
At *Charles* his humble prayer and desire,  
With helpe from heau'n releu'd them at the last,  
And sent such raine to aide the noble Prince,  
As feld was scene before, and neuer since.

63

Now lay *Orlando* on his restless bed,  
And thinks with sleepe to rest his troubled sprite,  
But still a thousand thoughts posselt his head,  
Troubling his mind, and sleepe expelling quite:  
As circles in a water cleare are spread,  
When sunne doth shine by day, and moone by night  
Succeeding one another in a ranke,  
Till all by on and one do touch the banke.

Smile.



64

So when his mistress enterd in his thought,  
(As lightly she was neuer thence away)  
The thought of her in him such circles wrought,  
As kept him waking euer night and day,  
To thinke how he from India had her brought,  
And that she should thus on the sodaine stray,  
Nor that he could of her true notice know,  
Since *Charles* at *Burdels* had the ouerthrow.

65

The griefe hereof did him most nearely tuch,  
And could him often to himselfe to say,  
What beast would haue bin ouerruld so much?  
That when I might haue made her with me stay,  
(For why her loue and zeale to me was such,  
That in her life she neuer said me nay)  
Yet I must suffer *Namus* for to guard her,  
As though my selfe but little did regard her.

66

I should to *Charles* my selfe haue rather scused,  
And as I did, haue kept the damsell still;  
Or if excuses all had bin refuted,  
I might in stead of reason pleaded will:  
And rather then haue bin so much abused,  
All those that should resist me slay and kill,  
At least I might haue got her safer keeping,  
And not haue let her thus be lost with sleeping.

67

Where bidest thou, where wanderst thou my deare?  
So yong, so louely, and so faire of hew?  
Euen like a lambe when starres do first appeare,  
(Her dame and shepheard being out of view)  
Bleateth aloud to make the shepheard heare,  
And in her kind her euill hap doth rew,  
Vntill the wolfe doth find her to her paine,  
The silly shepheard seeking her in vaine.

68

Where is my loue, my ioy, my lifes delight?  
Wanderst thou still? do not the wolues offend thee.  
Or needst not thou the seruice of thy knight?  
And keepest thou the flowre did so commend thee?  
That flowre that me may make a happie wight,  
That flowre for which I euer did defend thee,  
That I forbare, to please thy mind (too chaste)  
Is not that flowre (alas) now gone and past?

69

O most vnfortunate and wretched I,  
If they haue tane that sweet and precious floure,  
What can I do in such a case but die?  
Yea I would kill my selfe this present houre,  
I would this world and that to come desie,  
Earth first my coarfe and hell my soule deuoure.  
And this vnto himselfe *Orlando* said,  
With care and sorrowes being ouerlaid.

70

Now was the time when man, and bird, and beast  
Giu to his traueled bodie due repose,  
When some on beds, and some on boords do rest,  
Sleepe making them forget both friends and foes.  
But cares do thee *Orlando* so molest,  
That scarce thou canst thine eyes a little close,  
And yet that fugitiue and little slumber,  
With dreames vnpleasant thee doth vex and cumber.

71

He dreamt that standing by a pleasant greene  
Vpon a bank with fragrant flowres all painted,  
He saw the fairest sight that erst was seene,  
I meane that face with which he was acquainted,  
And those two stars that *Cupid* sits between, (tainted,  
Whence came that shaft whose head his heart hath  
The sight whereof did breed in him that pleasure,  
That he preferd before all worldly treasure.

72

He thought himselfe the fortunatest wight  
That euer was, and eke the blessedst loue:  
But lo a storme destroyd the flowers quite,  
And all the pleasant banke with haile did couer:  
Then suddenly departed his delight,  
Which he remaind all hopelesse to recouer;  
She being of this tempe afraid,  
That in the wood to her selfe she straid.

73

And there (vnhappy wretch) against his will,  
He lost his Ladie in vnluckie howre:  
But her to find againe he traueled still,  
Employing to her safetie all his powre,  
The wood and deserts he with plaints doth fill,  
And cride, alas, turnd is my sweet to sowre:  
And while these same and such like words he said,  
He thought he heard her voice demaunding aid.

74

At this same voice (well knowne) a while he staid,  
Then followd as the sound him guided most,  
With this mischance his mind was much dismayd,  
His body sore with toile and trauell tost:  
When straight he heard another voice, that said,  
Now hope no more, for all thy hope is lost.  
And of the sodaine waking with the sound,  
His eies all full of watry teares he found.

75

So sore he was affrighted at this vision,  
That eu'n as though it had bene so indeed,  
And not a fancie vaine or apparition,  
Thinking his Lady stood of him in need:  
In secret sort he getteth all prouision,  
To make repaire vnto her aid with speed:  
And (for he would not willingly be knowne)  
He tooke nor man nor armor of his owne.

76

His coate of armes, of colour white and red,  
He left behind for doubt of ill successe,  
That if it fortund he but euill sped,  
At least the losse and toile should be the lesse,  
Vpon his armor cypresse blacke he spred,  
With colour sad, his sorrow to expresse  
And thus disguisd in sad and mourning hue,  
He parts, and biddeth not his friends ad

77

Not of king *Charles*, whose kinsman he is neare,  
Nor taketh he his leaue of *Brandimart*,  
Nor yet to kinsman kind, or friend most deare,  
Doth he his meaning open or impart:  
Nor vntill day did all abroad appeare,  
Was *Charles* aduised that he did depart.  
But in great rage and choler when he knew it,  
He sware and vowd *Orlando* sore should rue it,



78

At which good *Brandimart* was greatly greued,  
 As one that deem'd it was without desert,  
 And (that his friend by him might be releued)  
 To find him out from thence he straight doth part,  
 For by his words, he certainly beleued,  
 That he could ease his friend *Orlandos* smart,  
 But this to *Fiordeledge* he not imparted,  
 For feare that she his purpose would haue thwarted.

*Fiordeledge wife*  
*so Rr. marts.*

79

This *Fiordeledge* of him was dearly loued,  
 A Lady of great beautie and cleare fame,  
 Of parents good, of manners vnreproued,  
 Both wealthie, wise, and modest to the same,  
 Yet taketh he no leaue of his beloued,  
 But early in the morning from her came,  
 To turne that night was his determination,  
 But was deceiued of his expectation.

Moral.

In the hard aduentures of *Angelica*, we may note how perilous a thing beautie is if it be not especially garded with the grace of God, and with vertue of the munde, being continually assailed with enemies spirituall and temporall: In *Orlandos* dreame we may see how vnquiet thoughts are bred in the mindes of those that are giuen ouer to the passion of loue or ambition, or whatsoeuer else may be vnderstood by *Angelica*. Lastly in that *Orlando* abandons his Prince and country in their greatest extremitie, we may obserue the vncomely and carelesse actes that dishonest or vnordinat loue do prouoke euen tire noblest vnto, if once they get harbour in their mindes, and be not ouerruled with reason and grace.

Historic.

In this booke is little historicall matter, saue of the distresse of the Parisians, of which I will not greatly stand more then that I said before it is not improbable that they were about that time assailed by the Turke: as for other matters that be here lightly touched, as the deuotion of *Paule* or *Hylarion*, the fable of *Proteus* or such like, the table shall set it downe more plaine.

Allegoric.

The former Allegoric is here continued of *Rogeros* flying from *Alcyna*, by which must still be vnderstood, a man reforming his course of life, and flying from sensuality and pleasure: now whereas it is said in this booke that *Alcynas* man or her faultner with his horse hauke and dog did impeach *Rogeros* passage, I take it that by these foure are ment the foure passions that most trouble the minde when it begins to encline to vertue, namely by the seruant feare may be vnderstood, which is euer seruite and base, by the hauke couetousnesse that is euer seeking new prey and is neuer satisfied: by the dog griefe and discontentment that is alway biting and enuying and greening at others well doing: by the horse is vnderstood inordinat ioy, which is in another kinde an enemy to vertue and constancie, for as soone is a temperat and moderate minde discovered in prosperitie as in aduersitie, and (as *Tully* saith) a wise man is neither *Aduersis rebus oppressus* nec *elatus secundis*: to which effect I remember a verse of my fathers, written to an Earle many yeares since.

Such one is ware by what degrees he clymes,  
 Rather pleasant then proud in high estate,  
 Rather bold then abashit in lowring times,

And can in both so well uphold his state,  
 As many would, but few can do or none,  
 Of which few sort, I wish your Lordship one.

But to proceed in the Allegoric, these impediments that disturbe men in their good course, are all but like owls or bats driuen away with sunne shine: for the light of vnderstanding and the shining of true worthines, or (as *M. Dyer* in an excellent verse of his termeth it) the light that shines in worthines, dissolueth and disperseth these dustie impediments, that let a man in his iourney to *Logestillas* Court, that is, to the court of vertue, of temperance, of pietie, where all good lessons are taught, as shall be showed more plaine in that part of this booke, where *Rogero* comes to *Logestilla*.

By *Melyssa* that recouers from *Alcyna* *Astolfos* armour and the *Lancia d'oro* or *Goldelaunce*, and likewise restores *Astolfo* to his former state and shape by vertue of the ring, in the absence of *Alcyna*, by her (I say) we may vnderstand some graue and ghostly counsellor, that with strong reasons and godly perswasions, hauing driuen away for the time, a mans sinfull thoughts and desires, takes occasion vttrly to extinguish them and deliuer a man from them with the same reasons, and to draw him to vertue and Religion. *Alcynas* forces she prepares by sea and by land, signifie the meanes our ghostly enemies vse to bring vs backe againe to our old vices (like the dog to his vomit) by land she followes him, and after by sea she encounters him, which briefly shewes, that the remembrance of passed pleasures make a man often in perill to be drawen backe as it were by land, and then by sea (as a place of terrour and danger) we are assailed with greivous aduersities, as without speciall succour we should be quite cast away.

*Rogers* hard trauell, stormy wayes, and after ward the sweat and drought he abode, signifie Allegorically the vnpleasantnes of the change of euill life to an austere course of liuing, which after notwithstanding is most exceeding comfortable and delishtsome.

Allusion.

The hardy Frier that by his impotencie more then his honestie saved *Angelicas* maydenhead, is alluded by my author (as some haue suppose) to some such Prelate in Italie of his acquaintance, and but for good manners sake might be alluded to some that haue bene so illuded by such good men that notwithstanding they might sue their writ of dotage yet will still be as forr'd, as the youngest in that seruice. Atque iacent pigro crimen onulque toro.

*quid. a. corum*

*Angelicas* horse that carried her into the sea, Alludes to the bull that bare *Europa* such another voyage





Orlando

Porto



## THE ARGUMENT.

*Orlando hastes his iourney when he hears,  
What costly food Proteus his Orke allowes,  
But by the way mou'd with Olympian tears,  
Th' it did lament her late captiued spouse,  
His hastie iourney be a while for' ears,  
To wreake her wrong upon her foe he vomes,  
Which done, no longer in the place he carries:  
Byreno false the faue Olympian merries.*



Las what damage cannot  
Cupid bring  
A noble hart once thral-  
led to his lore?  
That makes Orlando care-  
lesse of his king,  
To whom of late most  
faithfull loue he bore.  
Who earst so gane & wise  
in euerie thing,

And of the church a champion was before,  
Now that in lones blind pathes, he learns to plod,  
Forgets himselſe, his countrie and his God.

2

Faine would I him disburden of this blame,  
Had in my faults a fellow such to finde,  
For to my good I feele me dull and lame,  
But prompt to ill, and twifter then the wind:  
He not bethinking him how great a shame,  
It was to leaue his helpleſſe friends behind,  
Went where the kings of Affricke and of Spaine,  
Did ly in field encampt with all their traine.

3

Yet not encampt I can them call, for why  
They lay abroad disperſed with the raine,  
Some twentie, ten, or eight together lie,  
Fixe, or ſiue, or foure, or three, or twaine:  
Some farther off, and ſome are lodged nie,  
All wearie with their former taken paine:  
He might haue kill'd of them a worthie crew,  
Ne yet is Durindana once he drew.

4

If the cauſe was this, ſo noble was his minde,  
To murder men aſleepe he thought it baſe.

He lets them reſt, and ſeekes his loue to finde,  
By eu'rie perſon, and in eu'rie place,  
And thote he meets, with words and ſpeeches kind,  
(Deſcribing her apparell and her face)  
He prayes of all good fellowſhip to ſhoe,  
Or where ſhe is, or whither ſhe did goe.

5

When light apporcht, and day began to breake,  
By day he ſeekes her in the hoſt of Turkes,  
His paſſions ſtrong, do make his reaſon weak:  
Yeeld to the fit that in his fancie workes.  
Some helpe it was, he could their language ſpeake,  
By which the ſater he among them lukes:  
His words, his weeds, ſo like to theirs were ſcene,  
As though that bred in Tripoly he had beene.

6

But when he ſaw his ſtaying was for nought,  
At three dayes end away from thence he ſlang,  
He left no towne of France and paine vnſought,  
Ne yet this paine could ought aſwage that pang:  
Him Autumne firſt this wandring humor brought,  
When frutes do fade, his fruitleſſe loue firſt ſprang,  
And laſte I ſtill his force and rage renning,  
Both all the ſpring and ſummer next enſuing.

7

Now having traueled as his cuſtome was,  
From realme to realme, he came vpon a day,  
Where as the riuier cleare ſometime as glaſſe,  
That twixt the Britains and the Normans lay,  
Was growne to high as now he could not paſſe,  
The ſnow and raine had borne to great a way,  
By force wherof the bridge was ouerthrowne,  
The paſſage ſtopt, the tooords were ouerflowne.

F. auj

*The frutes of ſea  
were left lone.*

*Orlando the pri-  
or of Medea.  
Protesilaos  
prophet, deſerious  
ſequer.*



8

And looking round about the shore at large,  
Deuising how to passe to th'other side,  
He saw alittle way from thence a barge,  
That seemed toward him the course to guide,  
Of which a certaine damself had the charge,  
To whom with voice aloud *Orlando* cride,  
Intreating her because his hast was great,  
Within the barge him to afford a feat.

9

The maid affirm'd no price the barge could hire,  
And to command it he had no commission,  
But promist she would grant him his desire,  
Vpon a certaine cou'nant and condition;  
Which was to vndertake by sword and fire,  
For to destroy an Ile, without remission,  
A cruell Ile, *Ebuda* cald by name,  
The wickedst place where euer creature came.

10

For know( quoth she) beyond the Irish land,  
There lies among the rest this gracelesse Ile,  
That yearely sends of wicked wights a band,  
To rob, to spoile, to fraud and to beguile:  
All women kinde that happen in their hand,  
They giue for food vnto a monster vile,  
A monster vile that vseth euerie day,  
To haue a maid or woman for his pray.

Looke in the end  
of this booke in  
the Allegoric.

11

Of merchants and of pyrates that do come,  
They get them store, and of the fairest most:  
Now guesse by one a day how great a somme,  
Of women kinde within this Ile are lost.  
If then of loue you euer tasted cromme,  
Make one within the king of Irelands host,  
That make them readie shortly to proceed,  
To take a faire reuenge of this foule deed.

12

No sooner had *Orlando* heard her out,  
But vovd to be as forward as the first,  
To ioyne himselfe with that fame worthie rout,  
And now (for loue doth euer cast the worst)  
Within himselfe begins to cast this doubt,  
Least that this wicked monster and accurst,  
Had got his Ladie for a daintie bit,  
Because he heard no newes of her as yet.

Sent Ouid.  
Est res sollicita  
plena timoris  
amor.

13

And this conceit his minde so much posselt,  
And in his heart made such a deepe impression,  
(For both in nature he did still detest  
All such as vnto others do oppression)  
And much he fear'd his loue among the rest,  
Might fall into the monsters vile possession,  
That straight he shipt, and by their due account,  
Within three dayes he past saint *Michels* mound.

Sentence.  
A true propertie  
of nobilitie.

14

But hauing passed now the milke white sand,  
Of which the Ile of Albion takes his name,  
The wind that in the South before did stand,  
With so great furie to the Northwest came,  
In vaine it was against the same to stand,  
And therefore to retire it was no shame,  
Backe in one night the tempest draue them more  
Then they had sayl'd three dayes and nights before.

15

For when they saw it was no boote to striue  
Against the furie of so fearce a winde,  
They went euen as the weather did them driue  
Vntill the streame of *Antwerpe* they did finde,  
Where they to land with safetie did arriue:  
There loe, an aged man with yeares halfe blinde,  
Who deemd *Orlando* of that crew the chiefe,  
To this effect vtterd to him his grieve.

ere beg  
sare of O.

16

How that a certaine dame of noble blood,  
Of vertue verie great, of beautie rare,  
Of sober cheare and of behauiour good,  
(Though now opprest with miserie and care)  
Requested him, except his hast withstood,  
That she to him a matter might declare,  
In which to aske his wisdome she ment,  
To which *Orlando* quie y did consent.

17

The Ladies pallace stood within the land,  
To which the Earle conducted was with speed,  
Where at the entrie did the Ladie stand,  
In mourning shew, and sorrowfull in deed,  
Who brought *Orlando* sadly by the hand,  
Into a chamber hang'd with mournfull weed,  
First him by ner to sit she doth beseech,  
And then in ruefull sort she vs'd this speech.

18

First (worthy knight) I would you vnderstood,  
I was the Earle of Hollands daughter deare,  
Who was to me so tender and so good,  
That though my brothers both were him as neare,  
Yet my desire in nothing he withstood,  
Nor spake the word that I was loth to care:  
Thus whiles in state most stedie I did stand,  
A certaine Duke arriued in this land.

19

The Duke of Zeland and his arrant was,  
To Bisky there against the Moores to fight,  
His age and beautie that did others passe,  
Moo'd me that had not tasted loues delight,  
Nor arm'd against his darts with steele or brasse,  
To yeeld my selfe his prisoner without fight,  
Beleeuing then as still I do and shall,  
That he to me doth carrie loue not small.

20

For while the windes contrarie here him stay,  
Though naught for his, yet exc'lent for my drift,  
What time me seem'd each weeke was but a day,  
The pleasant houres did slide away so swift,  
We kept our selues together day by day,  
Till at the last we made vs so good shift  
That er we parted we had so procured,  
Each was to other man and wife assured.

21

*Eyreno* was from hence but newly go,  
(So is my deare beloued husbands name)  
But that a great Ambassador anon:  
Directly from the king of *Fr* eland came,  
To treat a certaine marriage vpon  
With other of that nation of goome,  
That to my Sire from Holland did repaire,  
That I might marrie with his sonne and haire.

But



22  
But I in whom faith tooke so deepe a roote,  
I could not change my new made choise, and tho  
I would, to striue with loue it was no boote,  
That wounded me so lately with his bow,  
To stop the motions newly set on foote,  
Before they might to farther matter grow:  
I would not go, I flatly told my father,  
That I to die a thousand deaths had rather.

23  
My louing fire that chiefeft care did take,  
That all he did might me his daughter please,  
Agreeing to my will, and for my sake,  
My griefe so new conceiued to appeale,  
Straightway the motion of this marriage brake,  
Which did so fore the Friseland king displease,  
He made sharpe warres in Holland in short space  
By force whereof he ruine all my race.

24  
For first he is of limbes and bodie strong,  
To meete his enemies in open field,  
And then so politike in doing wrong,  
He makes their force vnto his fraud to yeeld:  
He hath his other weapons strange among,  
A weapon strange, before this scene but seeld,  
A trunke of iron hollow made within,  
And there he puts powder and pellet in.

25  
All closed saue a little hole behind,  
Whereat no sooner taken is the flame,  
The bullet flies with such a furious wind,  
As though from clouds a bolt of thunder came.  
And whatsoever in the way it find,  
It burnes, it breakes, it teares and spoiles the same.  
No doubt some fiend of hell or diuellish wight,  
Deuis'd it to do mankind a spite.

26  
And thus with this deuice and many other,  
In open field our battels twise he brake,  
And first in fight he slue mine elder brother,  
(The bullet through his curat way did make)  
And next in flight he tooke and kild the tother,  
Which caus'd my fathers aged heart to quake,  
Who notwithstanding stoutly did intend,  
His honor and my safetie to defend.

27  
But in a hold that onely now was left him,  
They him besieg'd that all the rest had wonne,  
And by sharpe battell all the rest had rest him,  
Where to a loup one leueld so a gunne,  
The blow thereof of life and sense bereft him,  
So swif it came as none the same may shun.  
A weapon vile, wherewith a foolish boy  
May wo y captaines mischief and annoy.

28  
as my father and my brothers slaine,  
Before this furious king his warre would cease,  
And I sole heire in Holland did remaine,  
Which made his former fancie more increase:  
He thinks by match with me my land to gaine,  
And offerd to my people rest and peace,  
If I *Arbante* marry would his sonne,  
Which I before refused to haue done.

29  
And I (as well for hatred I did beare,  
Most iust to him and all his generation,  
By whom my fire and brothers killed were,  
By whom was spoild and robbed all our nation,  
As that to breake my promise I did feare,  
Which I *Byreno* made with protestation,  
That howloeu'er fortunes wheele should turne,  
Yet none should marry me till his returne)

30  
Made answer this, that if for euery ill  
I now abide I should haue thousands more,  
Though they my corpes with cruell torments kill,  
I would not breake my promise giuen before.  
My councitmen perswade me change this will,  
First praying me, then threatning me full fore,  
Except I do, to yeeld me and my land  
(Desired prey) into mine enemies hand.

31  
But finding still their threats and prayers vaine,  
And still that in my former mind I staid,  
Me and my country by a priuie traine,  
Vnto the king of Friseland they betraid;  
Who thinking now with flatterie me to gaine,  
First bid me not to feare or be dismayd,  
Then offerd free to giue me lands and life,  
If I would be his sonne *Arbantes* wife.

32  
Then I that see my selfe inforced so,  
Although I meant that death should set me free,  
Yet loth as vnreuenged hence to go,  
On those that had so greatly iniur'd me:  
Did muse on many meanes to helpe my wo,  
At last I thought dissembling best to be,  
Wherefore I fained that I was relented,  
And that to haue his sonne I was contented.

33  
Among some seruants that my father had,  
Two brethren strong and hardy I did chuse,  
Most apt to do what euer I them bad,  
And for my sake no danger to refuse,  
For each of them was brought vp of a lad  
Within our house, I did their seruice vie  
In warre and peace, and found their faiths as great,  
As were their hearts to any hardy feat.

34  
To these two men I open made my mind,  
They promist me their seruice and their aid,  
One into Flanders went a barke to find,  
The tother with my selfe in Holland staid:  
Now was our day for marriage a'singd,  
When flying newes the strangers made afraid,  
With many sailes *Byreno* was reported,  
Into these parts newly to haue resorted.

35  
For when the first conflict and broile was fought,  
Wherein my brother cruelly was slaine,  
I straight by letters with *Byreno* wrought,  
To make all speed to succor vs from Spaine.  
But while prouision for each thing was sought,  
The Friseland king gat all that did remaine,  
*Byreno* hearing not what late was past,  
Conducts his nauie hither in great hast.

*This simple description of an  
hargabush, being  
shown to the 2. host  
in the 2. ch. he  
seems to be  
well*

*Looke in the end  
of the book in  
the history.*



36

The Friteland king that heard of his repaire,  
Doth leaue the marriage for his eldest sonne,  
And to the sea he goes with nauie faire,  
They meet, they fight, the king of Friteland wonne,  
And to expell all comfort with despaire,  
*Byreno* prisoner tane, I quite vndone,  
Abrode *Byreno* captiue like was carried,  
At home vnto his en'my I was married.

37

But when he thought in armes me to embrace,  
And haue that due that wiues their husbands owe,  
My seruant standing in a secret place,  
Which I to him did for this purpose show,  
Affords him to his sport but little space,  
And with a Pollax strake him such a blow,  
That staggering straight, and making little strife,  
He left his loue, his liuing and his life.

38

And thus this youth borne in vnhappie houre,  
Came to his death as he deserued well,  
In spite of all his fire *Cymestis* powre,  
Whose tyrannie all others did excell:  
Whose sword my fire and brothers did deuoure,  
And from my native soile did me expell,  
And meant to enter vpon all my lands,  
While I by marridge should be in their hands.

39

But when we once performed had this deed,  
And taken things of greate price away,  
Before that any noise or tumult breed,  
Out of the window we deu'd a way:  
And packing thence with all expedient speed,  
We came to sea before the breake of day,  
Where as my seruant waited with a barge,  
As he before receiued of me in charge.

40

I know not if *Cymestis* tooke more grieffe,  
Or wrath or rancor kindled in his mind,  
To see his sonne that lay past all relieffe,  
To find no thing of value left behind,  
Then when his pride and glory should be chiefe,  
Then when to make a triumph he assignd,  
And hoping all were at a wedding glad,  
He finds them all as at a buriall sad.

41

His hate of me and pittie of his sonne,  
Torment him night and day with endlesse grieffe:  
But sith by teares no good the dead is done,  
And sharpe reuenge asswageth malice cheefe,  
From dolefull teares to rage he straight doth runne,  
And seeks of all his sorrow this releefe,  
To get me in his hands with subtile traines,  
Then me to kill with torments and with paines.

42

Those of my friends or seruants he could find,  
Or that to me did any way retaine,  
He all destroyd, and left not one behind,  
Some hang'd, some burn'd, and some with torment  
To kill *Byreno* once he had assignd, (slaine,  
Of purpose onely to procure my paine,  
But that he thought his life would be a net,  
To e sooner me into his hands to get.

43

Wherefore he set a hard and cruell law,  
Except *Byreno* could in twelue months space,  
Find meanes by fraud or forces me to draw,  
To yeeld my selfe a prisoner in his place,  
(Such Princes are that haue of God no awe)  
Then die he should without all hope of grace:  
So that to saue his life, my death alone  
Must be the meanes, for other can be none.

44

All that by paine or cost procure I could,  
With diligence I haue already done,  
Sixe cattles faire in Flanders I haue sold,  
The mony spent, and yet no profit wonne,  
I sought to bribe those that him kept in hold,  
But they my craft with greater craft did shunne.  
Also moud our neighbor, ours neare and faire,  
English and Dutch on him to make sharpe warre.

45

But those I sent when they long time had staid,  
I thinke they would not, or they could not speed:  
They brought many words, but little aid,  
My ster'd death, and a greater grew my need:  
And now the thought whereof makes me afraid)  
That some drawes neere, when neither force nor need,  
As soone as tili expired is the yeare,  
From cruell death can safe preferue my deare.

46

For him my father and his sonnes were slaine,  
For him my state and liuing all is lost,  
For him those little goods that did remaine,  
I haue consum'd to my great care and cost,  
For him with hearts disease and bodies paine,  
With troublous waues of fortune I am tost,  
Now last of all I must lay downe my life,  
To saue my spouse from blow of bloody knife.

47

And finding that my fortune is so bad,  
I must to saue his life lay downe mine owne,  
To leese mine owne I shall be faine and glad,  
Where sorrow springs of seeds that loue had sowne:  
This onely feare and doubt doth make me sad  
Because I know not how it may be knowne,  
If I shall sure release *Byrenos* bands,  
By yeelding me into the tyrants hands.

48

I feare when he hath shut me in this cage,  
If all the torments I shall then endure,  
His fury to *Byreno* may asswage,  
Whose libertie I study to procure:  
I rather feare least following his rage,  
When he shall find he hath vs both secure.  
He will not care his oath and vow to breake,  
Vpon vs both at once his wrath to wreake.

49

Behold the cause why I did long so fast  
To speake with you, demanding your aduice,  
As I haue oft of others done before,  
Yet found I none so hardy nor so wise,  
That would assure his freedome to restore,  
Whose loue doth me to hate my selfe intice,  
The cause no doubt is this, they stand in feare  
Of those his guns, whose force no Steele can beare.

But

Sentence.  
Horace: Quippe  
nulli miseris fle-  
tus lamentaq;  
profuat.



50

But if your vertue do not disagree,  
With this your comely shape and manly show,  
Let me request you sir to go with me,  
Where I my selfe in prison shall bestow,  
And promise me to set *Byreno* free,  
If so the tyrant from his promise go.  
For I shall die with great content and ioy,  
If by my death *Byreno* scape annoy.

51

Her dolefull tale the damsell here did end,  
Which oft was interrupted with her teares:  
*Orlando* louing not the time to spend  
In idle talke, all answers long forbears,  
But in his mind he fully doth intend  
To foile her foes and rid her of her feares,  
He briefly said, that she should him commaund.  
To do much more then she did him demaund.

52

He meanes not tho that she her selfe should yeeld  
Vnto the cruell tyrant as a pledge,  
Except his sword (that failed him but seeld)  
Had on the *Sodaine* lost his force and edge,  
He meanes (like common birders in the field)  
To catch the birds and neuer hurt the hedge,  
And thus resolu'd to do this worthy deed,  
From *Flanders* now by sea they go with speed.

53

The skilfull Pilot doth the vessell steare,  
Sometime on th'one, sometime on th'other side,  
The Iles of *Zeland* some before appeare,  
And some behind as fast themselues do hide,  
And straight to *Holland* they approached neare,  
*Orlando* went to land, but bids her bide:  
His meaning is that she shall vnderstand,  
The tyrants death before she come on land.

54

Himselfe forthwith was mounted on a steed,  
A darke browne bay, with white starre in his face,  
Both large and strongly limbd (like *Flemish* breed)  
But not so full of life nor swift of pace,  
Yet good enough to serue him at his need,  
When as his *Brillador* was not in place:  
And thus he came to *Dordreck*, where he found  
With men of armes the gates enuironed round.

55

The wayes, the wals, with arm'd men watched were,  
For tyrants still are most of such condition,  
(And chiefly new) that ay they stand in feare,  
And further now some newes had bred suspicion,  
How that an armie great approached neare,  
Well stor'd with men, and stuffed with munition,  
The which they said *Byrenos* cofin brought,  
By force his kinsmans freedome to haue wrought.

56

*Orlando* wils a chman carry word  
Vnto their King, how that a wandring knight  
Desires to proue his force with speare and sword,  
Whom if the King could ouercome in fight,  
Then he should haue the Ladie by accord,  
That she *Arbante* on his wedding night:  
For he had taken her into protection,  
And could deliuer her to his subiection.

57

But craued eke the King should bounden be,  
By promise firme (if he were ouercome)  
To let his prisoner (cald *Byreno*) free,  
And of his message this was all the summe:  
And this was told vnto the King, but he  
That of true vertue neuer tasted cūme,  
Bent all his will and wit against all reason,  
To falshood foule, to false deceit and treason.

58

He makes account if he this knight can stay,  
The which to do he meanes great meanes to make,  
That then the Ladie quickly get he may,  
And make him yeeld her for his safetie sake:  
He sendeth thirtie men a priue way,  
Him to inclose about and prisoner take,  
Who fetching compasse to auoid suspicion,  
At last arriued where they had commission.

59

In this meane time with words he foded out,  
The worthy Earle, vntill he saw his men,  
According as he had them come about,  
Enclosing all the way behind, and then  
Out of the gates he rusheth with a rout,  
Of men on horse and foot of three times ten,  
As hunters do inclose the beasts in woods,  
Or fishers do inclose the fish in floods.

60

So doth the king *Cymoseo* care and strue,  
To stop the wayes with all foresight and heed,  
And meaneth sure to haue him tane aliue,  
And thinks the same is such an easie deed,  
That of those guns with which he did depriue  
So many liues, he thinks there is no need,  
For such a weapon serueth very ill,  
Where he did meane to take and not to kill.

61

As cunning fowlers do the birds referue,  
That first they take in hope of greater pray,  
And makes them for a bait and stale to serue,  
To take the rest by sport and pretie play,  
So meanes the king aliue him to preferue,  
But vnto this *Orlandos* force said nay:  
He meanes not to be handled in that sort,  
But breakes the nets and marreth all the sport.

62

The noble Earle with couched speare in hand,  
Doth ride where as he finds the thickest prease,  
Two, three and foure, that in his way did stand,  
The speare doth pierce, nor at the fist doth cease,  
It past the fixt the brodenesse of a hand,  
Nor that same handbreadth maketh any peace,  
The seuenth so great a blow therewith he strake,  
That downe he fell and neuer after spake.

63

Eu'n as a boy that shoots abroad for sport,  
And finds some frogs that in a ditch haue bred,  
Doth picke them with an arrow in such sort,  
One after one vntill such store be dead,  
As that for more his shaft may seeme too short,  
From fethers fild already to the head,  
So with his speare *Orlando* him besturd,  
And that once left, he draweth out his sword.

A great many of  
valer &  
80 v words

Sentence.  
Malus custos  
dum custodit  
perit.

Simile.

Simile.

Simile.



64

That sword that neuer yet was drawne in vaine,  
Against whose edge doth armour little boote,  
At eu'ry thrust or blow he gaue was slaine,  
A man on horse, or else a man on foote.  
The edge whereof with crimson still doth staine,  
And where it lights it pierceth to the roote.  
The Friseland king repents him now too late,  
That he for hast his guns behind forgate.

65

With voice alowd, and many a boistrous thret,  
He bids them bring his gun, but none doth heare,  
Who once within the gate his foote can get,  
He dare not once peepe out againe for feare:  
But when he saw none by his words did set,  
And that almost they all departed were,  
He thought it best to saue himselfe by flight,  
From so great force of this same furious knight.

66

He backe retires, ne drawes the bridge for hast,  
Because *Orlando* now approacht so nie,  
And had not then his horse him speeded fast,  
As though he did not runne but rather flie,  
*Orlando* would haue made him sore agast,  
Who caring not to make the poore sort die,  
Past by the rest and kept the King in chafe,  
That sau'd himselfe by his good horses pace.

67

But yet ere long againe he doth returne,  
And brings with him his iron cane and fire,  
Wherwith he doth beate down, and bruse and burne  
All those whom he to mischief doth desire:  
He hopes this weapon well shall serue his turne,  
Yet for all this he meanes to come no nire,  
But like a hunter priuily doth watch,  
Where he the heedlesse beast may safest catch.

68

The King with this his engine ly'th in wait,  
A weapon tearing trees and rending rocks,  
Whose force no fence can ward with any sleight,  
It giues so sound and vnexpected knocks:  
Thus hauing layne at little at receit,  
And watcht his vantage like a craftie foxe,  
When once the Earle within his reach he spide,  
He setteth fire vnto his peeces side.

69

Straight like a lampe of lightning out it flies,  
And sendeth forth withall so great a sound,  
As seemd to shake the euerlasting skies,  
And to remoue the vnremoued ground,  
The shot gainst which no armour can suffice,  
But breaketh all that in the way is found,  
Doth whiz, and sing, and kindles as it went,  
Yet did not that effect the tyrant ment.

70

For whether twere his ouerhastie speed,  
And too great will to hurt did make him swerue,  
Or whether feare posselt him in the deed,  
That not to guide his hand his heart could serue,  
Or whether God of mercie meere and meed,  
Was pleas'd his champion longer to preferue:  
It onely strake the horse with so great paine,  
That downe he fell and neuer rose againe.

71

The horse and horseman downe together fell,  
Downe lay the horse, vp quickly rose the knight,  
And on his feet was straight recouerd well,  
More earnestly bent then before to fight,  
And as the stories of *Antheus* tell,  
In whom each fall increased more his might:  
So though *Orlando* with his fall was troubled,  
His force and fury seemed to be doubled.

*Antheus. Look  
in the Table*

72

But when the king of Frizland plainly saw,  
How this bold knight grew fiercer then before,  
He thought it best by flight himselfe withdraw,  
His fainting heart with feare was pierst so sore:  
A side he turnes the horses forming iaw,  
Now full resolu'd to proue his force no more,  
*Orlando* with such speed doth him pursue,  
As doth an arrow from a bow of Yue.

73

And what he could not riding erst atchieue,  
He doth the same and more vpon his feet,  
And runs so swift as few men would belieue,  
Except themselues had present bin to see it,  
Vntill at last so hard he him did driue,  
He ouertooke him in a narrow street,  
And with his sword he cleft his head in twaine,  
The senselesse corpes doth on the ground remaine.

74

Now as *Orlando* did this feate contriue,  
There grew new broiles from thence a litle distance,  
For then *Byrenos* cosin did arriue,  
With men on horse and foot for his assistance,  
And finding none that durst against him striue,  
He entred had the gates without resistance,  
So late a feare was in the people bred,  
That none of them durst come to make a bed.

75

The silly Burgers knew not what to say,  
Nor who these were, nor what was their desire,  
Vntill the Zelanders themselues bewray,  
Both by their speech and manner of attire:  
Then made they peace, and promist them straight-  
To do what ere the captaine should require, (way,  
Against the men of Friseland them to aid,  
Who yet in prison still *Byreno* staid.

76

For why that people alwayes had in hate,  
The king of Friseland and his men of warre,  
Their Dukes late death, and altring their estate,  
Had mou'd their minds, but that that all did marre,  
Was ouertaxing them in such a rate,  
As alwayes breeds a great dislike and  
*Orlando* twixt these men made such conclusion,  
As turnd vnto the Friseland mens confusion.

*Sentence:*

77

For straight to ground they threw the prison gate,  
They fetcht the prisoners out without a key,  
*Byreno* to the Earle is not vngrate,  
With thanks a part of his due debt to pay:  
And then they go to shew *Byrenos* state,  
To faire *Olympia*, that at anchor lay,  
For to the call they Lady chaite and faire,  
That of that country was vndoubted haire.

She



78

She that was thither by *Orlando* brought,  
Without all hope of any such successe,  
Who lately (filly creature) onely sought,  
Her death might bring her loue from distresse:  
Now was her safetie and *Byrenos* wrought,  
When she suppo'd and lookt for nothing lesse:  
The ioy cannot with many words be told,  
Wherewith the tone the tother did behold.

79

The people do the damsell faire restore,  
Vnto the state that vnto her was due:  
But she that vovd her selfe for euermore,  
To be vnto *Byreno* loue true,  
Persisting now as faithfull as before,  
Nor fearing any harme that might ensue,  
Doth grant to him for loue and meere affection  
Of her and her estate the full protection.

80

*Byreno* leaues his cosin in his place,  
To guide that countrie with sufficient gard,  
His louing wife in Zeland he will place,  
That done, with forces marche to Friseland ward:  
And hopes to conquer it in little space,  
If that his fortune were not ouer hard,  
And that which most assur'd him of thi thing,  
He had in hold the daughter of their king.

81

Whom he did meane to marrie (as men say)  
Vnto a younger brother of his name:  
*Orlando* shipt himselfe that present day,  
*Byreno* with him to his shipping came,  
And offerd him a large part of the pray,  
Because his valew cheefly won the same,  
Who nothing tooke but that same engin rare,  
Which we before to lightning did compare.

82

Ne tooke he this away because he ment,  
To proue the force thereof vpon his foe,  
Or vse the same when he to battell went,  
His courage would not suffer him do so:  
To hurle away the same was his intent,  
Where it mankinde might neuer damage moe:  
He lets n<sup>or</sup> powder nor the shot remaine,  
Nor ought that did vnto the same pertaine.

*In Orlando that at the first motion entertained the enterprize of Ebuda, we may learne to be prone and readie to all honorable exploit: In his comming to succor the distressed Olympia, we may note how God sends vnexpected reliefe to the honest afflicted: In Olympia we may see a rare mirror of constancy, which I doubt too few of her sex will imitate. By Cymolcost tyrannie and death, all Princes may take a warning, that no engins nor stratagems can keepe a tyrant safe in his estate, but onely clemency and bountie, that to lawfull Princes breeds euermore loue and loyalty in the subiect.*

Historie,

Concerning the inuention of gunnes, he seemeth to insinuate that they haue bene inuented long before the time that our writers speake of in Germany, which was about Richard the second his time: Virgil hath a verse in the sixth of the *Encados*, that sounds much to this effect; and my selfe haue wondered at it many times, to see how plainly it expresseth the qualitie of a peece of Ordenance. He telles that one Sallomoneus a Gyant had an engin of warre with which he imitated piters thunder & lightning: & surely this he would not haue fained, but that he heard of some such thing: the verse is this. Dum flammas Iouis & sonitus imitatur Olympi. Some of our far trauelled men tell vs that they of Chyna had vse of peeces some thousands of yeares, which I could be willing to credit, saue that they also tell of the records there since before Adams creation many yeares.

Allegorie.

*Allegorie* I finde none but of the Ile of Ebuda where women he giuen to monsters to be deuoured, of which I will speake in another of the Cantoes that followes of that matter.

Allusion.

*In the monstrous effectes of gunnepowder he alludes perhap to that huge damage done at Venice when their Arsenall or storhouse was blowne vp: as a like mishap though not so terrible, happened in the Tower my grandfather Sir Iohn Markham being then Lieutenant of the Tower.*

83

And when that now the shelles and shallow shore,  
Some twentie leagues or there about was left,  
No land discern'd behind nor yet before,  
Vpon the right hand or vpon the left,  
Because (said he) hereafter neuer more,  
May any knight of life and limb be rest  
By thee, or coward vaunt him with the stout,  
Lye there alow vntill I fetch thee out.

84

O curst deuce found out by some foule fend,  
And fram'd below by *Belzebub* in hell,  
Who by thy meane did purpose and intend,  
To ruine all that on the earth do dwell,  
From whence thou camst, I thither thee do send:  
(This said) the peece vnto the bottom fell:  
*Orlando* maketh all the speed he may,  
Himselfe vnto Ebuda to conuay.

85

I say the noble Earle in hast him hide,  
Vnto that cruell Ile to finde that wight,  
Whom he more lou'd then all the world beside,  
On whom his thoughts were running day & night,  
Nor would he by the way one whit abide,  
Lest of new stay might new occasion light,  
And cause him when he had his purpose mist,  
To crie with late repentance, had I wist.

86

His course he meanes of neither side to bend,  
Nor South nor North, such hast he meanes to make,  
But goes as that blinde archer doth him send,  
That deepe with dart of golden head him strake.  
And here a while to leaue him I intend,  
Returning to the match of which I spake:  
For you may thinke I lost it in the carriage,  
If you should heare no more news of the marriage.

*He returns to Orlando in the xij. booke st. 25.*

87

Great feasts were made in Holland, and great sport,  
Because of this new match and copulation;  
But greater shall in Zeland by report,  
For which there was great care and preparation:  
Yet would I not you thither should resort,  
Except you knew *Byrenos* inclination,  
For chaunces fell that spoiled all the cheare,  
As in the booke ensuing you shall heare.







## THE ARGUMENT.

*Wicked Byreno fals in love of new,  
And in an Ile his kind Olympia leaues:  
Roger bids Alcynas realme adew,  
But Logestilla gently him receaues:  
She shewes him how to tie the horse that flew:  
He flying in the air from thence perceaues  
Renaldos musters: after which he found  
Angelica vnto the rocke fast bound.*



By iust desert requireth to be plait:  
Whose stedfast loue (to say I dare be bold,  
Doth passe the patterns of the new or old.

How could she signes more euident impart,  
Vnto *Byreno* of her louing hand?  
No, though she should haue open laid her hart,  
Yet could she not haue prou'd her selfe more kind:  
And if such loue and datie, by desert  
May looke of due like rōue againe to find,  
Her faith requires vnto *Byreno* shōwne,  
That he should seeke her safetie as his owne:

Nor on not to leaue her in annoy,  
Or er reiect for any other dame,  
Nor for her that bred the bale of Troy,  
Nor any othe of more worthy name,  
But her preference before all worldly roye,  
Before his sente. due, before his tame,  
Or any other thing of greater price,  
To be exprest by word or by deuice.

If *Byreno* did her well requite,  
If that he shewd to her the like good will,

If he regarded as he ought of right,  
To bend vnto her liking all his skill,  
Nay if forgetting all her merits quite,  
Vngrate, vnkind, he sought her life to spill:  
Behold I shall a tale to you recite,  
Would make a man his lip for anger bite.

And when that I shall haue declared plaine  
His crueltie, her loues vnkind reward,  
I thinke you Ladies neuer will againe  
Beleeue mens words, your hearts will wax so hard;  
For \*louers loued Ladies loues to gaine,  
Do promise, vow and sweare without regard,  
That God doth see and know their falshood still,  
And can and shall reuenge it at his will.

Their eies but words, their words are all but wind,  
Vnto in haist, and with like haist forgotten,  
With which their faiths they do as firmly bind,  
As bundels are trust vp with cords all rotten:  
Coynesse is naught, but worse to be too kind,  
Men care not for the good that soone is gotten:  
But women of their wits may iustly boast,  
That are made wiser by an others cost.

Wherefore I wish you lovely dames beware,  
These beardless youths, whose faces shine so neate,  
Whose fancies soone like strawne fire kindled are,  
And sooner quencht amid their flaming heate:  
The hunter chafeth still the flying hare,  
By hill by dale with labour and with sweate,  
But when at last the wished prey is taken,  
They seeke new game, the old is quite forsaken.

## Sentence

\* Catull. Nil in-  
sumus iurare ni-  
hil promittere  
parcunt.

Quid: Inpiter ex  
alto periuaria ri-  
des amantium.  
Tibullus: Veneris  
periuaria uentis  
irruat per terras  
et freta summa  
ferunt.

Callimachus: Iu-  
rauit quidem, sed  
amatoria iura-  
menta deoris non  
subeunt aures.

## Sentence.

Sentence: Tæle  
quem facit  
altera per cula  
cautum  
Quid: Flammam  
de stramine tra-  
hentem fuit.  
Quid: Te ator  
sequitur fugien-  
tia cap. a reum-  
que.  
Simile



8

Even so these youths, the while you say them nay,  
In humble sort they seeke, they sue, they serue,  
They like, they loue, they honor and obey,  
They wait, they watch your fauours to deserue:  
A part they plaine, in presence oft they pray,  
For loue of you they mourne, they pine and starue:  
But hauing got that erst they fought so fore,  
They turne their failes vnto another shore.

*Quid? Sine te fore  
non possunt omnia  
N. 1. 1272. 1273*

9

Though this be true, I not perswade you tho,  
To leaue to loue, for that were open wrong,  
To cause you like a vine vnd. est to grow,  
Vncared for the brires and thornes among:  
But least on youths you should your selues bestow,  
That neuer in one fancie tarry long;  
The meane is best, yong fraites the stomacke gripe,  
The elder cloy when they be euer ripe.

*Sentence.*

10

I shewd you in the tale I told you last,  
How that *Byreno* had *Cymoseos* daughter,  
To marry whom a morion late was past,  
Because his brother lou'd and greatly fought her,  
But his owne mouth was of too lickrish tast,  
To leaue so sweet a mortell, hauing caught her:  
He thought it were a point of foolish kindnesse,  
To part withall, a peece of so rare finenesse.

11

The damsell little passed fourteene yeare,  
Most tender, sweet and louely, fresh and faire,  
As when the budding rose doth first appeare,  
When sunny beames in May make temprate aire,  
*Byreno* likes her face, her sober cheare,  
And vsd to her to make so oft repaire,  
That eu'n as Brimstone quickly taketh flame,  
So loue tooke him to his perpetuall shame.

*Simile.*

*Simile.*

12

The streame of teares that for her fire she shed,  
A flaming fornice bred within his brest,  
The plaints she made, and dolefull words she sed,  
Doth breed his hope of getting his request,  
Thus foule desires with hopes as foule are fed,  
As water hote from boiling straight doth rest,  
When liquor cold is powred in the pot,  
So with new loue his old was quite forgot.

*Simile.*

13

From flow to ebbe thus turned was the tide,  
His late belou'd *Olympia* lothsome grew,  
To looke on her his heart could scant abide,  
His thoughts were all so settled on the new,  
Yet till the time might serue he thinks to hide,  
His filthy hate with faire and painted hew,  
And though in fancie he did her detest,  
Yet still great kindnesse he in shew profest.

14

And if he shewd the other signes of loue,  
(Although such loue was worse then any hate)  
Yet none there was herein did him reprove,  
But tooke his meaning in another rate,  
They thought some good remorse his mind did  
In gracious sort to pitie her estate, (moue,  
And that to her he charitably ment,  
Because she was so yong and innocent.

*Quid: Hic amor  
est odio masius  
scelus.  
Of Mirrha.*

15

O mightie God, how much are men mistane?  
How oft with fained shewes they are deceaued?  
*Byreno* wicked meaning and prophane,  
For good and godly was of men receaued:  
The marriners their oares in hand had rane,  
And from the shore the ship was quickly heaued,  
To Zeland ward the Duke with all his traine,  
With helpe of oares and sailes doth passe amaine.

*Quid? O  
Nietam. or - or  
Quamantur  
kalia - or  
ex noctu  
ipso sceleris mui  
mine Terentius  
dissat esse pime*

16

Now had they lost the sight of Holland shore,  
And marcht with gentle gale in comely ranke,  
And (for the wind was westerly) they bore  
To come within the lue of Scottish banke,  
When as a sodain tempest rose so fore,  
The force thereof their ships had well nie sanke,  
Three dayes they bare it out, the fourth at night  
A barren land hapned in their sight.

17

Here faire *Olympia* from her ship to land,  
From lands he passeth to the higher ground,  
*Byreno* kindly led her by the hand,  
(Although his heart another harbour found)  
They sup in their pauillion pitcht on land,  
Enuironed with a tent about them round:  
The supper done, to bed do go they twaine,  
The rest vnto their ships retorne againe.

18

The trauell great she lately did endure,  
And had three dayes before her waking kept,  
And being now vpon the shore secure,  
(Now glad of that for which er long she wept)  
And taking her amid his armes secure,  
All this did cause that she the sounder slept,  
(Ah silly teale) when she was least afraid,  
Of her false husband thus to be betraid.

19

The trecherous *Byreno*, whom deceit  
And thought of leud intent doth waking keepe,  
Now hauing time for which he long did wait,  
Supposing faire *Olympia* found asleepe,  
Vnto his ships he hies with short retreat,  
And makes them all lanch forth into the deepe;  
And thus with wicked practise and vniust,  
He her forooke that chiefly him did trust.

20

Now were the sailes well charged with the wind,  
And beare him lighter then the wind away,  
The poore *Olympia* now was left behind,  
Wh' neuer waked till that breake of day,  
To lightfomnesse had changd the darknesse blind,  
And sunnie beames had driu'n the mist away,  
She stretcht her armes betweene a sleep and wake,  
And thinks *Byreno* in her armes to take.

21

She findeh none, and drawing backe againe,  
Again she reacheth them out, but findeth none,  
Her leg likewise she reached out in vaine,  
In vaine for he for whom the fables is gone,  
Feare sleepe expels, her eyes she opens plaine,  
Nor yet she heares the snorfees not one,  
With which amaid the clothes away she cast,  
And to the shore she runneth in great hast.

With



22

With heart dismayd, and seeing her before  
 Her fat all hap, vnto the sea she hies,  
 She smote her brest, her haire she rent and tore,  
 Now looking (for all lightsome were the skies)  
 If ought she could discerne, but euen the shore;  
 But euen the shore, no other thing she spies:  
 Then once or twise she cald *Byrenos* name,  
 Then once or twise the caues resound the same.

23

And boldly then she mounted on the rocks,  
 All rough and steepe, such courage sorrow brought,  
 Her wofull words might moue the stones and stocks,  
 But when she saw, or at the least she thought,  
 She saw the ships, her guiltlesse brest she knocks,  
 By signes and cries to bring them backe she sought,  
 But signes and cries but little now auails,  
 That wind bare them away that fild their sail.

24

What meanest thou (thus poore *Olympia* spake)  
 So cruelly without me to depart?  
 Bend back thy course, and cease such speed to make,  
 Thy vessell of her lading lacks a part:  
 It little is the arkas poore to take,  
 Since that it doth already beare the hart:  
 Thus hauing by the shore cride long in vaine,  
 Vnto the tent she backe returns againe.

25

And lying groueling on her restless bed,  
 Misting the same with water of her eyes,  
 Sith two on thee did couch last night (she sed)  
 Why did not two from thee together rise?  
 Accurst the wombe that false *Byreno* bred,  
 Accurst the day that first I saw the skies:  
 What shall I do? what can I here alone,  
 Or who (wo me) can mitigate my mone?

26

I see no man, nor any signe I see,  
 That any man within this Ile doth dwell:  
 I see no ship that hence may carry me,  
 With (at the least) some hope of being well:  
 I here shall starue, it cannot other be,  
 And buried how to be I cannot tell;  
 Ah how if wolues that wander in this wood,  
 Deuoure my flesh, or drinke my guiltlesse blood?

27

Alas I doubt, and stand eu'n now in feare,  
 Left that some rau'nous wolfe that here abides,  
 Some Lion, Tyger, or some vgly Beare,  
 With teeth and clawes shall pierce my tender sides,  
 Yet what beast could with greater torment teare,  
 Then thou more fierce then any beast besides?  
 For thou contented a while to kill,  
 But my life a thousand times dost spill.

28

I suppose some vessell here arriue,  
 And take me from this place for pittie sake,  
 And so perchance I may be left aliue,  
 The Beares nor Lions neuer shall me take,  
 Yet will it be in vaine for me to strue,  
 Againe to Iolland my repaire to make:  
 Thou keepst by force the place where I was borne,  
 Whence by deceit thou broughtst me (false forsworn)

29

Thou tookst from me my lining, by pretence  
 And colour of thy friendship and alliance,  
 Thy men of armes were paid by my expence,  
 I gaue thee all, such was my fond affiance:  
 Or shall I turne to Flanders? fith from thence  
 I sold my selfe, and am at flat defiance  
 With all the nation, whom to set thee free,  
 I quite forlooke, that now ah wo is me?

30

Is there for me in Friseland any place?  
 Where I refused for thee to be a Queene,  
 The which refusall ruind all my race,  
 As by the sequell was too plainly scene?  
 O cruell hap, o strange and monstrous case,  
 The righteous God iudge thee and me betweene:  
 Was euer Tyger carried heart so hard,  
 For so firme loue to pay so foule reward?

31

But what and if some pyrat wanting feare  
 Of God and man, shall take me as a slaue?  
 Thou God forbid, let Tyger, Wolfe and Beare,  
 First carry me a prey into their caue,  
 And there my flesh in peeces all to teare,  
 That dying, I my chastitie may saue.  
 This said, her raging grieve her hands addrestes,  
 To offer force vnto her golden tresses.

32

And euen as *Hecuba* fell raging mad,  
 With grieve of mind and sorrow sore oppressed,  
 To see her *Polydorus* little lad,  
 By kinsmans fraud and crueltie distressed:  
 So rau'd *Olympia* faire, as though she had  
 With twentie thousand diuels bene possessed:  
 At last she sitteth on the rocks alone,  
 And seemes as senselesse as the senselesse stone.

33

And in this state I meane to let her stay,  
 Till of *Rogero* I haue talkt a while,  
 Who traueled in the hot and sandy way,  
 Full many weary and vnpleasant mile:  
 And now it was the middle of the day,  
 When as vpon the South side of the Ile,  
 He saw three Ladies neare a little towre,  
 Did sport themselues within a pleasant bowre.

34

These Ladies faire were of *Alcynos* crew,  
 And there refreshed themselues a little space,  
 They had great store of wines both old and new,  
 And sundry kind of iunkets in like cate:  
 A pretie barke there lay within their vew,  
 That did attend their pleasures in the place,  
 And wait when any little gale should blow,  
 (For now was none) that they might homeward go.

35

Then one of these that had espide the knight,  
 At such a time, and in such way to ride,  
 With courteous speech inuites him to alight:  
 The second brings him wine on th'other side,  
 And makes him farre more thirstie with the sight  
 But these enticements could not cause him bide,  
 He feares *Alcyna* prisoner to might take him,  
 As by this stay she hapt to ouertake him.

Sink.

He folloves this  
 of *Olympia* wher  
*Orlando* found  
 her naked in *E-*  
*buda*, booke xi.  
 stasse 23.  
*Rogero*.



Sivola.

Sivola.

Tooke in the Mo.  
wall.

36

Euen as salt peeter mixt with brimstone pure,  
Inflameth straight when once it feelles the fire,  
Or as the sea with winds and aire obscure,  
Doth worke and swell, and euer riseth hie;  
So they that saw their words could not allure,  
His noble mind to follow their desier,  
Tooke high dildaine that they were to contemned,  
And him of great discourtesie condemned.

37

And straight the third as in a raging mood  
Said thus, O creature void of all gentilitie,  
And borne (no doubt) of base vnworthy blood,  
And bred where neuer vied was ciuilitie,  
Ay during life fro thee depart all good,  
Nor maist thou die in quiet and tranquillitie,  
But burned maist thou be, or cut in quarters,  
Or driuen to hang thy selfe in thine owne garters.

38

With these and many bitter speeches mo,  
They raile on him, and then they take their barke,  
And coast along vpon the Southerne shore,  
That they his passage and his course might marke.  
But he that now was gotten farre before,  
Did little to their threats or curses harke:  
And notwithstanding all that they contriued,  
Yet to his ship in safetie he arriued.

39

The Pilot doth *Rogero* much commend,  
That from *Alcyna* so himselfe did saue,  
And as a wife and well experienc'd frend,  
Sound counsell and good precepts him he gaue,  
And wisht that he his time would better spend,  
And leaue fond toyes, embracing wise dome graue,  
And from the good the euill to discerne,  
As *Logestilla* vied men to learne.

40

There is the food that fills and neuer cloyeth,  
There is the loue, the beautie and the grace,  
That maketh him most blest that them enioyeth,  
To which compar'd, all other ioyes are base:  
There hope, nor feare, nor care the mind annoyeth,  
Respect of persons, nor regard of place:  
The mind still finding perfit contentation,  
That rests it selfe in vertuous contemplation.

41

There are (said he) some better lessons taught,  
Then dancings, dallyings, or daintie diet,  
There shal you learne to frame your mind & thought  
From will to wit, to temperance from riet:  
There is the path by which you may be brought  
Into the perfect paradise of quiet.  
This tale the Pilot to *Rogero* told,  
And all the while their course they forward hold.

42

But lo, they see a nauie vnder saile,  
Of ships that toward them in hast did bend,  
*Alcyna* wrathfull striuing tooth and naile,  
Doth thinke to fetch againe her fleeting frend:  
But all her diligence could not auaille,  
*Rogero* to returne doth not intend,  
And of her forces he was not afraid,  
Because that *Logestilla* sent him aid.

43

For straight a watchman standing in a towre,  
So high that all the hils and shore was vnder  
Did ring the larum bell that present houre,  
He saw her fleet, though distant farre asunder:  
And when that now approched was their powre,  
With cannon shot they made them such a thunder,  
That though *Alcyna* threatned much and braued,  
Yet was *Rogero* from her malice saued.

44

Then at his first arriuall to the shore,  
Foure damfels met him sent by *Logestilla*,  
*Andromica* that wisely sees before,  
And *Tronesis* the iust, and chaste *Drusilla*,  
And she that boldly fights for vertues lore,  
Descending from the Romane race *Camilla*:  
And straight rusht out of men a worthy band,  
y prest to meet their foes on sea and land.

45

Within a large and very quiet bay,  
A nauie was of vessels big and tall,  
That readie at an howers warning lay,  
To go to fight at any litle call:  
And now there was begun a great affray,  
By land and sea the conflict was not small,  
Which did the realme in hurly burly set  
*Alcyna* late did from her sister get.

46

Tis strange to see of wars the strange successe,  
She that of late was counted of such might,  
Is now so driu'n in danger and distresse,  
That scant she could preserue her selfe by flight,  
*Rogero* parting brought her grieve no lesse,  
Then did the foile, which both bre such despite,  
And such despaire, to die she had intended,  
(If so she might) to haue her torments ended.

47

And as her selfe the dame of Carthage kild,  
When as the Troyan Duke did her forsake:  
Or as her blood the Queene of *Aegypt* spild,  
For that so famous Romaine captaines sake:  
Euen so *Alcyna* with like sorrowes filld,  
Wisht of her selfe with like death end to make,  
But (either auncient folke beleeu'd a lie,  
Or this is true) a fairy cannot die.

48

But leaue we now *Alcyna* in this paine,  
That from her elder sister fled apace,  
A to *Rogero* let vs turne againe,  
That was conducted to a beeter place,  
Where finding now that he did safe remaine,  
He thanked God that gau him so much grace,  
To see his foes of forces all depriued,  
Himselfe within the castle safe arrined.

49

And such a castle that in stately show  
And costly substance others all surmountd,  
The value of the wals can no man know,  
Except he first vpon the same had mounted:  
Men haue not iewels of such price below,  
For Di'monds are to these but drosse accounted,  
And Pearles but pelfe, and Rubies all are rotten,  
Where stones of such rare vertue can be gotten.

These

Here ends  
*Alcyna*.The pray of *Lo-  
gestilla* homje.



50

These wals are built of stones of so great price,  
All other vnto these come farre behind:  
In these men see the vertue and the vice,  
That cleaueth to the inward soule and mind.  
Who looks in such a glasse, may grow so wise,  
As neither flattery praises shall him blind  
With tickling words, nor vnderferued blame,  
With forged faults shall worke him any shame.

51

From hence doth come the euerlasting light,  
That may with *Phæbus* beames so cleare compare,  
That when the Sunne is downe there is no night,  
With those that of these iewels stored are:  
These gems do teach vs to discern a right,  
These gems are wrought with workmanship so r  
That hard it were to make true estimation  
Which is more worth the substance or the fashion.

52

On arches raifd of porphiry passing hie,  
So hie that to ascend them seemd a paine,  
Were gardens faire and pleasant to the eie,  
Few found faire below vpon a plaine:  
Sweet smelling trees in order standing by,  
With fountaines watring them in steed of raine,  
Which do the same so naturally nourish,  
As all the yeare both flowres and frutes do flourish.

53

No weeds or fruitlesse trees are in this place,  
But herbs whose vertues are of highest price,  
As soueraigne sage, and thrift, and herbe of grace,  
And time, which well bestowed maketh wise,  
And lowly patience, proud thoughts to abase,  
And hearts ase, that can neuer grow with vice.  
These are the herbs that in this garden grew,  
Whose vertues do their beauties still renew.

54

The Ladie of the castle greatly ioyed,  
To see the safe arriuall of this knight,  
And all her care and trauell she employed,  
That honor might be done him in her sight.  
*Astolfo* (in his passage lesse annoyed,  
Doth take in his acquaintance great delight,  
And all the other his good fauour sought,  
That by *Melyssa* to themselues were brought.

55

Now hauing all themselues some dayes reposed  
In *Logestillas* house, and taken rest,  
And finding all themselues right well dispose,  
To make returne againe into the West,  
The od *Melyssa* for them all proposed,  
Vnt ighri this request,  
Th her leaue without incurring blame,  
T cy: ight returne them all frō whence they came.

56

nom da *Logestilla* thus replide,  
That after th day or two had staid,  
She would for t1 a most carefully prouide,  
For all their journey furniture and aid:  
And first she taught *Rogero* how to ride  
The flying horte (of whom he was afraid)  
To make him pace or passe a full careere,  
As readily as other hortes here.

57

When all was ready now for him to part,  
*Rogero* bids this worthy dame farewell,  
Whom all his life time after from his hart  
He highly honored and loued well.  
First I will shew how well he playd his part,  
Then of the English Duke I meane to tell,  
How in more time, and with far greater paine,  
He did returne to *Charles* his court againe.

58

*Rogero* mounted on the winged steed,  
Which he had learnd obdient now to make,  
Doth deeme it were a braue and noble deed,  
About the world his voyage home to take.  
Forthwith beginneth Eastward to proceed,  
And though the thing were much to vndertake,  
Yet hope of praise makes men no trauell shunne,  
To say another day, we this haue done.

59

And leauing first the Indian riuer Tana,  
He guides his iourney to the great Caray,  
From thence he passeth vnto Mangiana,  
And came within the sight of huge *Quinsay*:  
Vpon the right hand leauing *Sericana*,  
And turning from the *Scythians* away,  
Where Asia from Europa first doth draw,  
*Pomeria*, *Russia*, *Prutina* he saw.

60

His horse that hath the vse of wings and feet,  
Did helpe with greater haste home to retire,  
And tho with speed to turne he thought it meet,  
Because his *Bradaman* did so desire,  
Yet hauing now of trauell felt the sweet,  
(Most sweet to those to knowledge that aspire)  
When Germany and Hungry he had pass,  
He meanes to visit \* England at the last.

61

Where in a medow on a morning faire,  
Fast by the Terns at London he did light,  
Delighted with the water and the aire,  
And that faire citie standing in his sight,  
When straight he saw that souldiers did repaire,  
To muster there, and asking of a knight,  
That in the medow he had met by chance,  
He vnderstood that they were bound for France.

62

These be the succors (thus the knight him told)  
*Renaldo* sude for at his comming hither,  
With Irish men and Scots of courage bold,  
To ioyne in hearts and hands and purse together.  
The muisters tane, and each mans name enrold,  
Their onely stay is but for wind and wether,  
But as they passe I meane to you to shew them,  
Their names and armes, that you may better know  
(them).

63

You see the standerd that so great doth show,  
That ioynes the Leopard and the Flouredeluce,  
That chiefest is, the rest do come below,  
And reuerence this according to our vse:  
Duke *Leonell* Lord generall doth it ow,  
A famous man in time of warre and truce,  
And nephew deare vnto the King my master,  
Who gaue to him the Dukedome of Lancast.

G iij

*Horace: Falsus  
honor iuuat, &  
mendax infamia  
ret, Quem?  
us i mendosum  
mendacem.*

*Duid: Materiam  
superabas opus.*

*Sentence.*

*Sentence:*  
\* *Aristo* calls vs  
ultima Ingleser-  
ta the uttermost  
countrie. Som  
time past the old  
Romans wrote.  
Et pensus toto  
diuisos orbe Bri-  
tannos.

*Aristo* doth  
roue at these no-  
ble mens names,  
and if any of vs  
should write of  
the noble men of  
that time, we  
should do the  
like.



64

This banner that stands next vnto the kings,  
With glittering shew that shakes the reit among,  
And beares in azure field three argent wings,  
To *Richard* Earle of Warwicke doth belong.  
This man the Duke of Glosters banner brings,  
*Atheons* head, except my guesse be wrong,  
The fierbrand the Duke of Clarence is,  
The tree the Duke of Yorke doth claime for his.

65

The launce into three sundry peeces rent,  
Belongs vnto the worthy Duke of Norfolke:  
The lightning longs vnto the Earle of Kent,  
The Griphyn longs vnto the Earle of Pembroke:  
The ballance eu'n by which iust doome is ment,  
Belongs vnto the noble Duke of Suffolke.  
The Dragon to the valiant Earle of Cumberland,  
The garland is the braue Earls of Northumberland.

66

The Earle of Arundell a ship halfe drownd,  
The Marqueſſe Barkly giues an argent hill:  
The gallant Earle of Essex hath the hound,  
The bay tree Darby that doth flourish still:  
The wheele hath Dorset cuer running round,  
The Earle of March his banner all doth fill  
With Cedar trees: the Duke of Somerset  
A broken chaire doth in his ensigne set.

67

The Faucon howering vpon her nest,  
The Earle of Deu'nshire doth in banner beare,  
And brings a sturdy crew from out the West.  
The Earle of Oxenford doth giue the Beare:  
The banner all with blacke and yellow drest,  
Belongs vnto the Earle of Winchester.  
He that the cristall croſſe in banner hath,  
Is sent from the rich Bishop of the Bath.

68

The archers on horse, with other armed men,  
Are two and fortie thousand more or lesse,  
The other footmens number doubles them,  
Or wants thereof but little as I guesse:  
The banners shew their captains noble stem,  
A croſſe, a wreath, an azure bar, a fesse,  
*Geffray* and *Ermant*, *Edward* bold and *Harry*,  
Vnder their guide the footmen all do carry.

69

The Duke of Buckingham that first appeares,  
The next to him the Earle of Salisbury:  
Burgany next, a man well stricke in yeares,  
And *Edward* next the Earle of Shrewsbury.  
Now turne about, and lo the Scottish peares,  
Braue men, and well appointed you shall see,  
Where *Zerbin* sonne vnto the Scottish king,  
Vnto the field doth thirtie thousand bring.

70

All chosen men from many a shire and towne,  
All ready to resist, assaile, inuade,  
Their stander is the beast of most renowne,  
That in his paw doth hold a glittering blade,  
This is the heire apparant to the crowne,  
This is the goodly impe whom nature made,  
To shew her chiefeſt workmanship and skill,  
And after brake the mould against her will.

71

The Earle of Otton commeth after him,  
That in his banner beares the golden barre.  
The spotted Leopard that looks so grim,  
That is the ensigne of the Duke of Marre.  
Not far from him there commeth *Alcubris*,  
A man of mightie strength and fierce in warre,  
No Duke, nor Earle, nor Marqueſſe as men say,  
But of the sauages he beares the sway.

72

The Duke of Trafford beares in ensigne bright,  
The bird whole yong ones stare in *Phœbus* face:  
*Lurcanio* Lord of Angus, valiant knight,  
Doth giue a Bull, whom two dogs hold in chafe:  
The Duke of Albanie giue blue and white,  
(Since he obtained faire *Geneuras* grace)  
e *Bohune* in his stately banner beares  
A vulture that with clawes a Dragon teares.

73

Their horsemen are with iacks for most part clad,  
Their hortes are both swift of course and strong,  
They run on horseback with a slender gad,  
And like a speare, but that it is more long:  
Their people are of warre then peace more glad,  
More apt to offer then to suffer wrong:  
These are the succors out of Scotland sent  
That with the noble Prince *Zerbino* went.

74

Then come the Irish men of valiant harts,  
And actiue limbs, in personages tall,  
They naked vse to go in many parts,  
But with a mantle yet they couer all:  
Short swords they vse to carry and long dart,  
To fight both neare and farre aloofe withall,  
And of these bands the Lords and leaders are,  
The noble Earles of Ormond and Kildare.

75

Some sixteene thousand men or thereabout,  
Out of the Irish Ile at this time went,  
Beside the other Ilands thereabout,  
Sweeland and Island other succors sent;  
To good king *Charles*, for why they stood in doubt  
If he were conquerd they should all repent,  
And full their numbers daily did increate,  
Of those that better like of warre then peace.

76

Now while *Rogero* learns the armes and name  
Of euery Brittiſh Lord, behold a rout  
Of citizens and folke of all sorts came,  
Some with delight, and some with dread and doubt,  
To see a beast so strange, so strong, so tame,  
And wondring much, that he might past him out:  
They thought it was a strange and monſtrous thing,  
To see a horse that had a Griffons wing.

77

Wherefore to make the people marvell more,  
And as it were to sport himſelfe in play,  
He spurd his beast, who straigh oft did soare,  
And bare his master Westward quite away:  
And straight he was beyond our English shore,  
And meanes to passe the Irish sea that day,  
Saint *George* his channell in a litle while,  
He past, and after saw the Irish Ile.

Where



78

Where men do tell strange tales, that long ago  
 Saint *P* *ricke* built a solitary caue,  
 Into the which they that deuoutly go,  
 By purging of their sinnes their soules may saue:  
 Now whether this report be true or no,  
 I not affirme, and yet I not depraue.  
 But crossing from hence to Island ward he found  
*Angelica* vnto the rocke fast bound.

79

Both nakt and bound at this same Ile of wo,  
 For Ile of wo it may be iustly called,  
 Where peerlesse peeces are abused so,  
 By monster vile to be deuour'd and thrall'd,  
 Where pyratts still by land and sea do go,  
 Assaulting forts that are but weakly walled:  
 And whom they take by flattery or by force,  
 They giue a monster quite without remorse

80

I did declare not many books before,  
 If you the same in memory do keepe,  
 How certaine pyratts tooke her at a shore,  
 Where that chaste hermit lay by her asleepe,  
 And how at last for want of other store  
 Altho' h their hearts did melt, and eyes did weepe,  
 Mou' with a helpelesse and a vaine con passion,  
 Perforce they bound her on this wofull fashion.

81

And thus the caitiues left her all forlorne,  
 With nothing but the rocks and seas in sight,  
 As naked as of nature she was borne,  
 And void of succor, and all comfort quite,  
 No vaile of lawne as then by her was worne,  
 To shade the damask rose and lillies white,  
 Whose colours were so mixt in euery member,  
 Like fragrant both in Iuly and December.

82

*ogero* at the first had surely thought,  
 She was some image made of allablaster,  
 Or of white marbie curiously wrought,  
 To shew the skilfull hand of some great master.  
 But vewing nearer he was quickly taught,  
 She had some parts that were not made of plaster:  
 Both that her eyes did shed such wofull teares,  
 And that the wind did waue her golden beares.

83

To see her bound, to heare her mourne and plaine,  
 Not onely made that he his iourney staid,  
 But caus'd that he from teares could scant abstaine,  
 Both loue and pitie so his heart assaid,  
 At last with words to mitigate her paine,  
 Thus much to her in low'ly sort he said,  
 O Lad worthy y o those bands,  
 Wh 1 1 loue binds the hearts and not the hands.

84

What wight so these or any such,  
 What wight soound so cruell and vnkind,  
 To banish all hu itie so much,  
 Those polisht iuory ands in chaines to bind,  
 About that corps whom none can worthely tuch  
 With hurtfull hands, vnworthy bands to wind?  
 This said, she blusht, seeing those parts were spide,  
 The which (though faire) yet nature striues to hide.

85

Faine would she with her hand haue hid her eyes,  
 But that her hands were bound vnto the stone,  
 Which made her oft to breake to wofull cries,  
 (Sole remedy where remedy is none)  
 At last with sobbing voice she doth deuise  
 To tell the knight the cause of all her mone:  
 But from the sea a sodaine noise was heard,  
 That this her speech and all the matter mard.

86

Behold there now appeard the monster great,  
 Halfe vnderneath and halfe about the waue,  
 As when a ship with wind and weather beat,  
 Doth hasten to the hau'n it selfe to saue.  
 So doth the monster hast, in hope to eate  
 The daintie morsell he was wont to haue:  
 Which sight so sore the damsell did appall,  
*Rogero* could not comfort her at all.

87

Yet with his speare in hand, though not in rest,  
 The vgly Orke vpon the brow he strake,  
 (I call him Orke, because I know no beaft,  
 Nor fish from whence comparison to take)  
 His head and teeth were like a bore, the rest  
 A masse, of which I know not what to make,  
 He gaue him on the brow a mightie knocke,  
 But pierst no more then if it were a rocke.

88

And finding that his blow so small hurt brings,  
 He turnes againe on fresh him to assay,  
 The Orke that saw the shadow of great wings,  
 Vpon the water vp and downe to play,  
 With fury great and rage away he flings,  
 And on the shore doth leaue the certaine pray,  
 The shadow vaine he vp and downe doth chase,  
 The while *Rogero* layth him on a pace.

89

Euen as an Eagle that espies from hie,  
 Among the herbs a partie colour'd snake;  
 Or on a bank sunning her selfe to lie,  
 To cast the elder skin, a new to make,  
 Lies howering warily till she may spie  
 A vantage sure the venom'd worme to take,  
 Then takes him by the backe, and beates her wings,  
 Mauger the poison of his forked stings.

90

So doth *Rogero* both with sword and speare,  
 The cruell monster warily assaile,  
 Not where he fenced is with grizly heare,  
 So hard as that no weapon could preuaile,  
 But sometime pricks him neare vnto his eare,  
 Sometime his sides, sometimes his vgly taile;  
 But nature had with such strong fences armd him,  
 As all his blowes but small or nothing harmd him.

91

So haue I seene ere this a silly flie,  
 With mastiue dog in summers heate to play,  
 Sometime to sting him in his no'e or eie,  
 Sometime about his grizly iawes to stay,  
 And buzzing round about his eares to flie,  
 He snaps in vaine, for still she whips away,  
 And oft so long she dallies in this sort,  
 Till one snap comes and marreth all her sport.

Sentence.

Simile.

Simile.

*Ouid. Met. O so-  
 lus digna castenis  
 cum quibus i r  
 se Cupidis iungit  
 sur amantes.*



92

But now Rogero doth this sleight deuise,  
Sith that by force he cannot make him yeeld,  
He meanes to dazle both the monsters eies,  
By hidden force of his enchanted sheeld,  
And being thus resolu'd, to land he flies,  
And from all harme the Ladie faire to sheeld,  
He puts the precious ring vpon her hand,  
Whose vertue was enchantments to withstand.

93

That ring that worthy Bradamant him sent,  
When she from false Brunello had it tane,  
With which Melyssa into India went,  
And wrought his freedome, and Alcynas bane,  
That ring he lends the damsel, with intent  
To saue her eyes by vertue of the same,  
Then takes he forth the shield, whose light so dazed  
The lookers on, they fall downe all amazed.

94

The monster now approaching to the shore,  
Amazd at this, resistance none did make,  
Rogero hewes vpon him more and more,  
But his hard scales no harme thereby did take.  
Oh sir (said she) vnloosen me before  
Out of this maze the monster do awake,  
And let your sword slay me this present houre,  
So as this monster may not me deuoure.

95

These wofull words mou'd so Rogeros mind,  
That straight he did vnloose the Lady faire,  
And cauld her by and by to get behind  
Vpon his horse, then mounting in the aire,  
He leaues his Spanish iourney first assignd,  
And vnto little Brittain doth repaire,  
But by the way be sure he did not misse,  
To giue her many a sweet and friendly kisse.

96

And hauing found a solit ry place,  
A pleasant groue well waterd with a spring,  
Which neuer herd nor herdman did deface,  
Where Philomela vsed still to sing,  
Here he alights, minding to stay a space,  
And hither he the Lady faire did bring,  
But sure it seemd he made his full account,  
Ere long vpon a better beast to mount.

97

His armour made him yet a while to bide,  
Which forced stay a more desire did breed,  
But now in him it was most truly tride,  
Oft times the greater hast, the worse the speed,  
He knits with hast two knots, while one vntide.  
But soft tis best no further to proceed,  
I now cut off abruptly here my rime,  
And keepe my tale vnto another time.

Sentence.

Morall.

In Byreno that abandoned his kind Olymphia in a desolate Iland, and fell in loue with another, we may note an example of ingratitude, the monstrous fault of all faults, and most odious before God and man: and herein learne to hor and detest this vice in him and in all others, that hauing receiued preferment or aduancement, either by men or women, when they haue done, shake them off like horses that be lame, or garments that be old, preferring one to the mill, the other to the dunghill: or as our Stukley said, make as much of his wife as he could, and if any could make more of her, they might take her, after he had gotten many thousand pounds by making much of her. In the spiteful words that one of Alcynas women spake of Rogero, we may obserue the maner of wanton worldlings, that if they see a yong man liue temperatly, or go plainly, or speake deuoutly, straight they say he is a base fellow, and one that knowes not what belongs to a Gentleman: which foolish maner of phrase, by Rogeros example we must learne to contemne, and know that such men are indeed base as thinke temperance, and sobrietie, and deuotion base qualities. Finally in Rogeros trauell about the world, we may see how commendable it is for a yong gentleman to trauel abroad into forrain nations, but yet we may note withall an inconvenience that comes many times with it, to see some Angelicas naked, that will tempt men of very stanch gouernment and staid yeares to that which they shall after repent, as Rogero did this his wantonnesse, as appears more plainly in the next booke, where you shall find he lost both his horse and the ring by the vngratefulnessse of Angelica.

Historie.

For the matter historicall of this tenth booke, there is litle to be said, and nothing to be affirmed: for the succors sent to France from England, Scotland, Ireland, and many places thereabouts, though I cannot affirme precisely of the time, yet sure it is that many haue bin sent hence against the Turke to France and elsewhere. And whereas he speakes of S. Patrick the Irish Saint, I would haue them that would know the story of him to look in Surius de vitis Sanctorum, and there they may see it at large: for mine owne part, at my being in Ireland, where I taried a few moneths, I was inquisitiue of their opinion of this Saint, and I could learne nothing, other then a reuerent conceit that they had of him, as becomes all Christians to haue of deuout men, and chiefly of those by whom they are first instructed in the Christian faith: but for his purgatory, I found neither any that affirmed it or beleued it.

Allegoric.

Logestillas castle, the ornaments thereof, the herbs of the garden all these figure the true magnificence, glory, comfort, and vtilitie of vertue. The foure Ladies sent to rescue Rogero, are the foure Cardinall vertues which being well vnited together, are able to ouerthrow whole nauies of vicious pleasures. And so whatsoeuer else is contained in Logestilla in Allegory is taken for vertue.

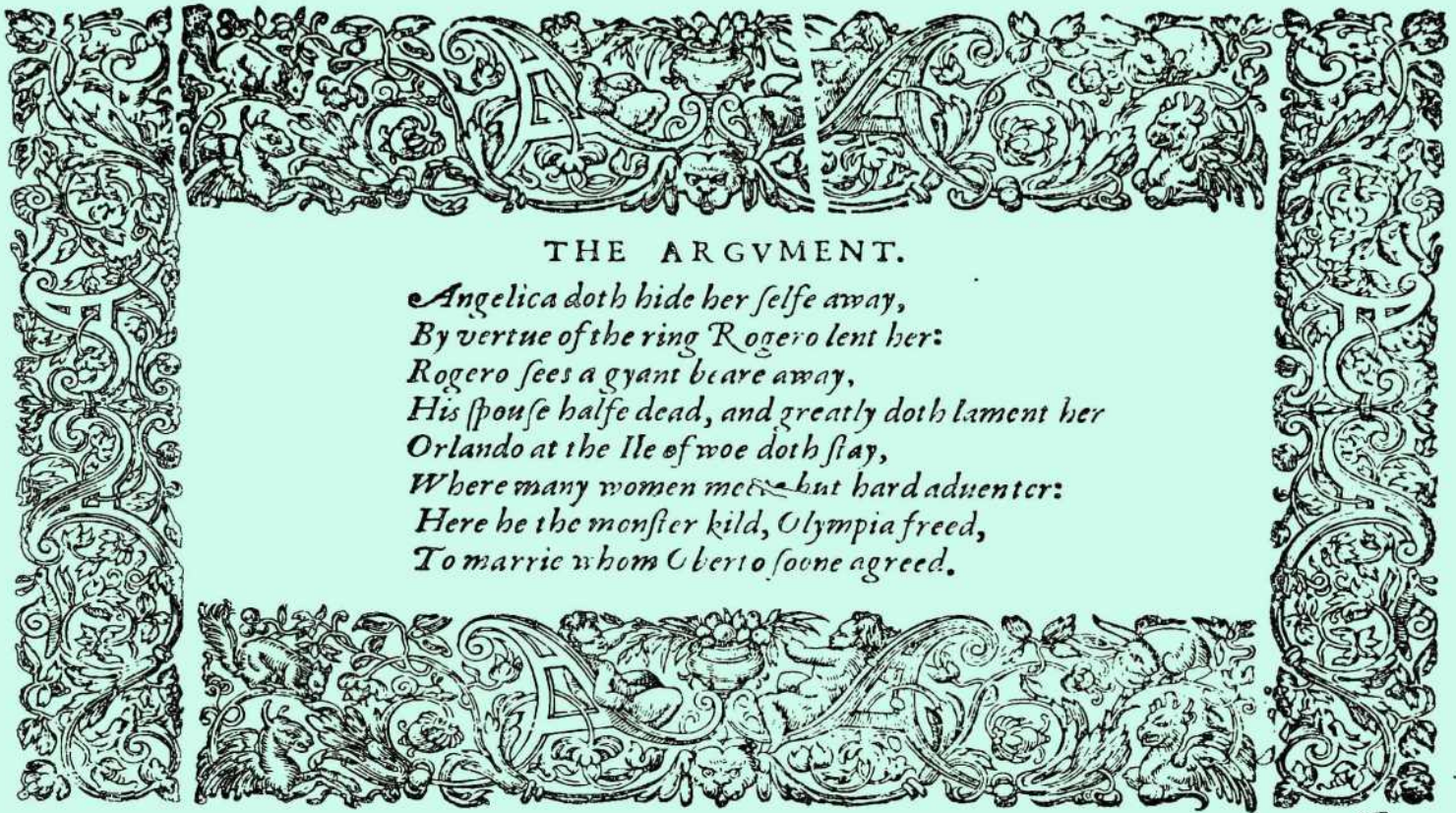
Allusion.

In Angelica tied to the rock, and deliuered by Rogero, he alludes manifestly to the tale in Ouid of Andromeda Perseus, who with his shield turned the beholders into stones.



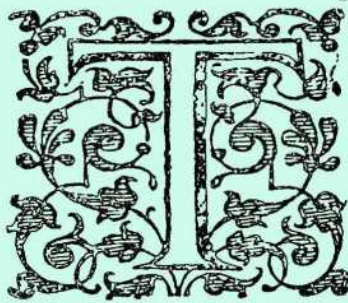






## THE ARGUMENT.

*Angelica doth hide her selfe away,  
By vertue of the ring Rogero lent her:  
Rogero sees a gyant beare away,  
His spouse halfe dead, and greatly doth lament her  
Orlando at the Ile of woe doth stay,  
Where many women meet but hard aduenter:  
Here he the monster kild, Olympia freed,  
To marrie whom Uberto soone agreed.*



He gallant courser in his  
full carrire,  
Is made by man, to stop  
with slender raigne:  
But man himselfe his lust  
and fond desire,  
Is seldome drawn by rea-  
son to refraine:  
Tis hard to stop, but har-  
der to retire,

When youthfull course ensueth pleasure vaine,  
As Bears do breake the hiues and weake defences,  
When smell of honic commeth to their fences.

Simile.

No maruell if Rogero could not hold,  
But that he would now take a little sport,  
That naked did Angelica behold,  
Within a groue alone from all resort;  
His loue to Bradamant now waxeth cold,  
Or at the least is temperd in such sort,  
He meanes therewith at this time to dispence,  
And not to let this go a maiden hence.

Whose beautie was so rare as well it might,  
Haue made Zenocrates an Epicure,  
No maruell then if this same gentle knight,  
Could not so great temptation well endure:  
But while he hastend to his hopt delight,  
Of which he thought him in possession sure,  
There fell a strange and v unexpected thing,  
By meanes Angelica did know the ring.

A notable Stoick.

This was the ring that she with her had brought,  
To France, the verie first time she was there,

What time by ayd thereof so well she wrought.  
She help her brother to th' enchanted speare,  
By vertue of this ring she set at nought,  
Those magicke arts, that men so greatly feare:  
With this Orlando Countie Pallas he,  
She did release from wicked Dragontine,

By helpe of this inuisible she went,  
Out of the towre where Atlant had her set:  
For this same ring Brunello falle was sent  
By Agramant, who longd the same to get,  
To tell that storie is not my intent,  
For feare it might my other matter let,  
But certaintis, that when this ring was lost,  
In fortunes wayes she had bene euer tost.

*All this is taken  
of in the  
Orlando name-  
tise.*

Now when she saw this ring was on her hand,  
She was so strooke with maruell and with ioy,  
That scarce she could discerne and vnderstand,  
If she were wake or if she dreamd some toy:  
But to make triall how the case doth stand,  
And know if she this treasure doth inioy,  
Into her mouth the ring  
And straight inuisible she goeth away.

Rogero that each minute thought an powre,  
(His armour off, and ready for play)  
Expecting now the damsell bowre,  
Where he had pointed her him to stay,  
Found all too late, that by the rings strange powre  
She had vnscene conuayd her selfe away.  
He lent it her to saue her eyes from blindnesse,  
And for reward she quits him with vnkindnesse.

With



8

With which her act displeas'd and ill apaid,  
He curst himselfe, and chafed in his mind:  
O cruell and vnthankfull wench (he said)  
Is this the loue that I deseru'd to find?  
Dost thou reward him thus that brought thee aid?  
To thy preseruer art thou so vnkind?  
Take ring and shield, and flying horse and me,  
This onely barre me not thy face to see.

9

This said, he go'th about where she had beene,  
Still groping as the weather had bin darke,  
Embracing oft the aire his armes betweene,  
In steed of her, then heedfull he doth harke,  
To find her by the sound that was not seene,  
And whence the same doth come he wel doth mark.  
On went she vntill it was her lote  
To come into a silly shepheards cote.

10

And though this same were far from any towne,  
Yet there she quickly did her selfe prouide  
Of meate and drinke, and of a simple gowne,  
Sufficient to the time her bare to hide,  
Not caring for a Ladie of renowne,  
That had bin euer clad in pompe and pride,  
Had gownes of crimson, purple and carnation,  
Of eu'ry colour, and of eu'ry fashon.

11

But yet no kind of weed so base or ill is,  
Her of her princely beautie to bereaue,  
They that so much extoll faire *Amarillus*,  
Or *Galate*, do but them themselues deceaue:  
Cease *Tyterus* to praise thy golden *Phyllis*,  
Peace *Melebe*, this passes by your leaues;  
Ye souldiers all that serue in *Cupids* garrison,  
May not presume with this to make comparison.

12

Now here the damsell faire a palfrey hired,  
With other things most needfull for her way,  
And means to her owne home to haue retired,  
From whence she had bin absent many a day.  
The while *Rogero* now with trauell tied,  
Lamenting he had lost so faire a pray,  
Doth seeke his horse who had not long bin idle,  
But in his masters absence brake his bridle.

13

Which when he found, the raines in peeces torne,  
The horse soard far aw ay with mightie wing,  
How could such haps with patientnesse be borne,  
Of one great losse to find a greater spring?  
Sitteth in a dumme, like one forlorne,  
For his misfortune, and of his ring  
Whose vertue great did make him much repent it,  
But yet much more her vertue that had sent it.

14

And in this rage he puts his armor on,  
And on his shoulder carieth his shield,  
Pursuing that first path he lights vpon,  
He found it brought him to a goodly field,  
On side whereof when he a while had gone,  
It seemd the wood adioynd some sound did yeeld,  
And still the neare and nearer that he goes,  
The plainer sound he heard of sturdy bloes.

15

A combat twixt a Giant and a Knight,  
He sees hard by most furiously begunne,  
The Giant with a club doth think by might,  
The battell of the tother to haue wonne;  
The tother with his sword and nimble fight,  
His furious blowes with watchfull eye doth shunne.  
*Rogero* seeing this great inequalitye,  
Yet standeth still and shewes no partialitie.

16

But in his mind he wisht the Knight to win,  
When lo the Giant with new fury fed,  
To lay on lode with both hands doth begin,  
And with one blow he layes him downe for dead,  
And straight in cruell fort he steppeth in,  
For to disarm him, and cut off his head:  
But when the Giant had the face disarmed,  
*Rogero* knew the partie he had harmed.

17

He saw it was his *Bradamant* most deare,  
Whom this same Giant would haue made to die,  
Wherefore with courage stout he steppeth neare,  
The Giant to new combat to desie,  
Who either heares him not, or would not heare,  
Or meaneth not a conflict new to trie,  
But tooke her vp, and on his shoulders layd her,  
And so in hast away from thence conuayd her.

18

So haue I seene a wolfe to beare away  
A lambe from shepheards fold, to haue I seene  
An Eagle on a silly Doue to pray,  
And soare aloft the skie and earth betweene:  
*Rogero* hies him after as he may,  
Vntill he came vnto a goodly greene,  
But th'other eu'ry step so much out stept him,  
That in his view *Rogero* scantly kept him.

19

But now a while of him I speake no more,  
And to *Orlando* I returne againe,  
Who hauing lost the sight of Holland shore,  
Did hasten to Ebuda with much paine:  
I did declare not many books before,  
How he *Cymoseos* engin strange did gaine,  
And to the bottome of the sea did throw it,  
That none might find it out againe or know it.

20

And though his meaning and intent was so,  
Yet vaine it was, as after was perceiued,  
For why, that serpent vile our auncient so,  
That *Eua* first in Paradise deceiued,  
Not much aboue two hundred yeares ago,  
(As we from our forefathers haue receiued)  
From out the sea by necromancie brought it,  
And then in Almanie afresh they wrought it.

21

They wrought it both in iron and in brasse,  
The cunning and the art increasing still,  
As oft by prooffe we find it comes to passe,  
The worse the worke, the greater growes the skill,  
And to each kind a name assignd there was,  
According to the first inuenters will,  
To tell the names of all were but a trouble,  
Some demicars, some are called double.

H

He comes to Ro-  
gero again in the  
12 book, staff. 14.

Sentence.

• He comes to An-  
gelica in the 12.  
book, staff.



22

The Culuerings to shoot a bullet farre,  
The Falcon, Saker, Minion and the Sling,  
Not armed men, but walled towues to marre,  
Such diu'llish force is in this hellish thing.  
Ye souldiers braue, and valiant men of warre,  
Now cease to field your manly darts to bring,  
And get a hargubush vpon your shoulder,  
Or elle in vaine you sue to be a souldier.

23

How didst thou find (oh filthy foule inuention)  
A harbor safe in any humane hart?  
Thou mak'st a coward get the souldiers pension,  
And souldiers braue thou rob'st of due desert,  
Whole millions haue bin slaine, as stories mention,  
Since first deuised was this wicked art,  
France, Italy and England chiefe may rewe it,  
Since first they vld this art, and first they knew it.

24

The English bowmen may go burne their boes,  
And breake their shafts, and cut in two the string,  
That weapon now may keepe the corne from crocs,  
That did the French at Agincourt so sting:  
But to that wight I wish a world of woes,  
That did to light, deuice to diu'llish bring,  
I let him be giu'n into the hands of Sathan,  
To be tormented ay with *Core* and *Dathan*.

25

Now good *Orlando* though he greatly strided,  
With speed to get him to the Ile of wo,  
Yet first the Irish King was there arriued,  
By chance, or else that God would haue it so,  
Because it might the better be contriued,  
On wrongfull wights his iudgements iust to show.  
But when *Ebuda* once in fight appeared,  
*Orlando* all the companie straight cheared.

26

And putting off his armes of colour sable,  
He bids the master out to launch his boate,  
And in the same an anker strong and cable,  
With which he meanes vnto this Ile to floate,  
Not doubting (if lucke serue) he will be able,  
To put the anker in the monsters throate.  
And thus alone the noble Knight doth venter,  
Into the Ile *Ebuda* then to enter.

27

Now was the time when as *Aurora* faire,  
Began to shew the world her golden head,  
And looke abroad to take the coole fresh aire,  
*Tytho* lying still in ialous bed,  
When as *Orlando* hither did repaire,  
By two blind guides, *Cupid* and *Fortune* led,  
When lo vnto the shore his shipboate turning,  
He seemd to heare a noise as one were mourning.

28

At which strange sound casting his eye aside,  
He might discerne a goodly damsell naked,  
With armes abroad vnto the rocke fast tide,  
That what with cold and what with terror shaked,  
Eftsoones the hideous monster he espide,  
Whose sight might well haue made stout harts haue  
*Orlando*'s mind therewith is not amated, (quaked,  
Nor his high courage any whit abated.

29

He gets betweene the monster and his pray,  
That pray that he so hotly doth pursue,  
And (for before he was resolu'd what way  
He would attempt the monster to subdue)  
Vpon his shoulder doth the anker lay,  
And when he came within his vgly vew,  
Euen mauer all his malice, might and rancor,  
Into his open iawes he beares the ancor.

30

As they that dig in mine of cole or stone,  
The same in sundry places vnderprop,  
Lest it should fall when least they thinke thereon,  
And so their breath or else their passage stop:  
So is this anker fastend in the bone,  
Both in the bottome of his mouth and top,  
though he would againe he could not it,  
Nor wider open it for to vnloose it.

31

Now hauing gagd his hideous chaps so sure,  
That out and in he can with safetie go,  
He enters with his sword the place obscure,  
And there bestoweth many a thrust and blow,  
And as the citie cannot be secure,  
That hath within her wals receiu'd her so,  
No safer could this Orke be now from danger,  
That in his entrals hath receiu'd a stranger.

32

But griped now with pangs of inward paine,  
Sometime he plungeth vp vnto the skie,  
Sometime he diueth to the deepe againe,  
And makes the troubled sands to mount on hies  
*Orlando* feels the sea come in amaine,  
That forced him at last his swimming trie,  
He swims to shore with body strong and able,  
And beares vpon his neck the ankers cable.

33

And as a sauage Bull that vnaware  
About his hornes hath now a cord fast bound,  
Doth strue in vaine to breake the hunters snare,  
And skips, and leaps, and flings, and runneth round,  
So though *Orlando* with his strength so rare,  
Aflaid to draw him nearer to the ground,  
Yet doth he fetch an hundred frisks and more,  
Ere he could draw him vp vpon the shore.

Simile,

34

His wounded bowels shed such store of blood,  
They call that sea the red sea to this howre,  
Sometime he breathed such a sudden flood,  
As made the clearest weather seeme to lowre,  
The deuous noise filed the caue and wood,  
So that *Proteus* doubtles was awoke,  
Fled straight fro thence, himself in cornering,  
Not daring longer here to make biding

The red sea is in-  
deed called the  
red sea because  
the blood  
at the bottome as  
makes it cast red

35

And all the gods that dwell in surging caues,  
With this same tumult grew in feare,  
They hid themselues in rocks and hollow caues,  
Lest that *Orlando* should haue found them there:  
*Neptune* with triple mace by flight him saues,  
His charret drawne with dolphins doth him beare,  
Nor yet behind *Glaucus* or *Triton* taried,  
For feare in these new broiles to haue miscaried.

Those



36  
Those Ilanders that all this while attended,  
And saw the monster drawne to land and tane,  
With superstition moued much, condemned  
This godly worke for wicked and profane;  
As though that *Proteus* would be new offended,  
That had before, and now might worke their bane.  
They doubt he wold (thus fools their good haps con-  
Send to their land his flock of vgly monsters. (sters)

37  
And therefore *Proteus* anger to appease,  
They meane to drowne *Orlando* if they can,  
Whose deed they deemed his godhead did displease:  
And eu'n as fire doth creepe from bran to bran,  
Vntill the pile of wood it wholly cease,  
So doth this fury grow from man to man,  
That they concluded all vpon the matter,  
To throw *Orlando* bound into the water.

38  
One takes a sling, another takes a bow,  
This with a sword is armd, he with a speare,  
And some afore, and some behind him go,  
Some neare approach, some stand aloofe for feare:  
He misset such what his vngratefull fo  
Shot meane, for benefits such min to beare:  
And wardly he was displeas'd and fery,  
To find such wrong where he deserued glory.

39  
As little cures that barke at greatest Beare,  
Yet cannot cause him once his way to shunne,  
No more doth he these curlike creatures feare,  
That like a sort of mad men on him runne.  
And (for they saw he did no armor weare)  
They thought the feat would haue bin easily done,  
They knew not that his skin from head to foote,  
Was such to strike on it, it was no boote.

40  
But when that he his *Durindana* drew,  
He layd therewith about him in such sort,  
That straight their faintnes and his force they knew,  
They found to fight with him it was no sport.  
Thrice ten of them at blowes but ten he slew,  
Their fellows fled that saw them cū so short,  
Which foes thus foild, *Orlando* now intended  
To loose the Ladie whom he had defended.

41  
But now this while, behold the Irish band  
Arriued neare vnto their chiefeſt citie,  
Who had no sooner set their foote on land,  
But that forthwith they put apart all pittie,  
And flue all sorts that came vnto their  
The fa . . . foolish and t . . . e,  
Thi . . . oome, or were it crue . . . ge,  
They spar'd of . . . ither sexe nor neither age.

42  
The Ile of . . . is made a wofull Ile,  
And for the . . . peoples sake they plague the place,  
*Orlando* sets the . . . dy free the while,  
That there was bound in that vnseemly case,  
To haue bin giuen vnto the monster vile:  
And viewing well, he cald to mind her face,  
And that it should *Olympia* be he guesſed,  
But twas *Olympia* that had thus bin dressed.

43  
Distrest *Olympia* thus vnkindly serued,  
Whom loue and fortune made a double scorne  
For first of him, of whom she best deserued,  
She was forsaken quite and left forlorne.  
And next by pyratts taken and reſerued,  
Of monster vile to be in peeces torne.  
And in this case the good *Orlando* found her,  
And then with great compassion he vnbound her.

44  
And thus he said, now tell what strange annoy,  
Or euill hap hath hurt thy happie raigne?  
Whom late I left in solace and in ioy,  
Why do I find in danger and in paine?  
How is the blisse that thou didst then enioy,  
So chang'd and turnd to misery againe?  
And she in wofull maner thus replied,  
When shame her cheeks with crimson first had died:

45  
I know not if my chance or else my choice,  
If fortune or my folly be in blame,  
Shall I lament, or shall I now reioyce,  
That liue in wo, and should haue did in shame?  
And as she spake, the teares did stop her voice:  
But when againe vnto her selfe she came,  
She told him all the wofull story weeping,  
How false *Byreno* had betrayd her sleeping.

46  
And how from that same Ile where he betrayd her,  
A crew of curſed pyratts did her take,  
And to this wicked Iland had conuayd her,  
For that same foule and vgly monsters sake,  
Where now it was *Orlando's* hap to ayd her:  
She walked naked when these words she spake.  
Looke how *Diana* painted is in tables,  
Among the rest of *Ouids* pleasant fables.

47  
Of whose sharpe doome the Poet there doth tell,  
How she with hornes *Actæon* did inuest,  
Because he saw her naked at the well:  
So stands *Olympia* faire, with face and brest,  
And sides, and thighes to be discerned well,  
And legs and feet, but yet she hides the rest.  
And as they two were talking thus together,  
*Oberto* king of Irish Ile came thither.

48  
Who being moued at the strange report,  
That one alone the monster should assaile,  
And gag him with an anker in such sort,  
To make his strength, and life, and all to faile,  
Then draw him to the shore as ship to port:  
Is tow'd with ropes, without or oares or saile  
This made him go to find *Orlando* out,  
The while his souldiers spoiled all about.

49  
Now when the King this worthy Knight did see,  
Though all with bloud and water foule distained,  
Yet straight he guesſt it should *Orlando* be,  
For in his youth in France he had remained,  
And knew the Lords and Knights of best degree,  
In *Charles* his court a page of honor trained:  
Their old acquaintance caus'd at this new meeting,  
They had a louing and a friendly greeting.



50

And then *Orlando* told the Irish king,  
How and by whom *Olympia* was abused,  
By one whom out of danger great to bring,  
She had no paine nor death it selfe refused,  
How he himselfe was witnessse of the thing.  
While they thus talke, *Oberto* her perused,  
Whole sorrows past, renewd with present feares,  
Did fill her louely eyes with watry teares.

51

*Ouid. 3 Metam.  
Quis color infelix  
aduersi solis ab  
estus, nubibus esse  
soles aut purpura  
re aurora.*

Such colour had her face, as when the Sunne  
Doth shine on watry cloud in pleasant spring,  
And eu'n as when the sommer is begunne,  
The Nightingales in boughes do sit and sing,  
So that blind god, whose force can no man shunne,  
Sits in her eyes, and thence his darts doth sling,  
And bathes his wings in her cleare cristall streames,  
And sunneth them in her rare beauties beames.

52

In these he heates his golden headed dart,  
In those he coolerth it, and temperd so,  
He leuels thence at good *Obertos* hart,  
And to the head he drawth it in his bow,  
Thus is he wounded deepe and feelles no smart,  
His sarmor cannot fend so fierce a blow:  
For while on her faire eyes and limbes he gaped,  
The arrow came that could not be escaped.

53

*The description  
of Olympias  
beautie.*

And sure *Olympias* beauties were so rare,  
As might well moue a man the same to note,  
Her haire, her eyes, her cheeks most amorous are,  
Her nose, her mouth, her shoulders and her throte,  
As for her other parts that then were bare,  
Which she was wont to couer with her cote,  
Were made in such a mould as might haue moued  
The chaste *Hipolytus* her to haue loued.

54

A man would thinke them framd by *Phydias* arts,  
Their colour and proportion good was such,  
And vnto them her shamefastnesse imparts  
A greater grace to that before was much:  
I cease to praise those other secret parts,  
As not so fit to talke of as to tuch,  
In generall all was as white as milke,  
As smooth as iuory, and as soft as silke.

55

Had she in valley of *Idea* beene,  
When *Pastor Paris* hap did so befall,  
To be a iudge three goddessees betweene,  
She should haue got, and they forgone the ball.  
Had she but once of him bene naked scene,  
For *Helena* he had not car'd at all,  
Nor broke the bonds of sacred hospitalitie,  
That bred his country warres and great mortalitie.

56

*Zeuxes, looke in  
she Table.*

Had she but then bene in *Crotana* towne,  
When *Zeuxes* for the goddesse *Iunos* sake,  
To paint a picture of most rare renowne,  
Did many of the fairest damfels make  
To stand before him bare from foote to crowne,  
A patterne of their perfect parts to take,  
No doubt he would haue all the rest refused,  
And her alone in steed of all haue chused.

57

I doubtlesse deeme *Byreno* neuer vewd  
Her naked corps, for certaine if he had,  
He could not so all humane sence exclude,  
To leaue her thus alone in state so bad:  
But briefly all this matter to conclude,  
It seemd *Oberto* would haue bin full glad,  
In this her wo, her misery and need,  
To comfort her by either word or deed.

58

And straight he promist that he would attend her,  
And set her in her country if he may,  
And mauger all her enemies defend her,  
And take reuenge on him did her betray.  
And that he might both men and money lend her,  
He would to pawne his realme of Ireland lay,  
Nor till she were restor'd aske no repayment,  
And straight he sought about to get her raine nt.

59

They need not trauell farre to find a gowne,  
For why immediatly they found good store,  
By sending to the next adioyning towne,  
The which his men of warre had poild before,  
Where many a worthy Ladie of raine wone  
That had bene naked tide vnto the shore,  
And many a tender virgin and vnfoiled,  
Were of their raiment and their lues de poiled.

60

And yet for all they were so richly gownd,  
*Oberto* could not cloath her as he wold,  
No not in Florence (though it doth abound  
With rich embroderies of pearle and gold)  
Could any peece of precious stufte be found,  
Of worth to serue to keepe her from the cold,  
Whose shape was so exact in euery part,  
Euen hard to match by nature or by art.

61

*Orlando* with this loue was well content,  
As one that hither came with other end,  
For sith he mist *Angelica*, he ment  
His iourney backe to France againe to bend,  
With them by ship to Ireland first he went,  
As in his way, and with the king his frend,  
Not hearing, had his loue bin here or no,  
For all were dead that could haue told him so.

62

At both their sutes he scant staid there one day,  
His passing loue such passions in him bred,  
But ere he went he doth *Oberto* pray  
To do for her as much as he had led,  
And parting so from thence he tooke his way,  
Euen fortune and his fancie led,  
But *Oberto* need not  
To do as much or more then he required.

63

For few dayes past but that with her he went  
To Holland, where he raised such commotion,  
That straight *Byreno* taken was shent,  
Recciuing on three trees a iudgment promotion:  
And all those countries did forthwith consent,  
To sweare them faith and be at their deuotion.  
Thus of a Countesse she is made a Prince,  
And liues in ioy and solace euer since.

Orlando



The end of the  
of Oluspa.

Orlando bends his course to Brittain shore,  
Whence he not long before to ship did mount,  
Where he had left his famous Brilliadore,  
A goodly courser and of good account,  
No doubt of valiant acts he did good store,  
Though what they were I cannot here recount,  
For such a minde he carrie still vnto them,  
He cared not to tell them, but to do them.

But in what fashion he did passe the rest  
Of that vnfortunate and fatall yeare,  
I say by me it cannot be exprest,  
Because thereof no record doth appeare;

But when the spring did ground with green inuest,  
And sunne in Gemini made weather cleare,  
Then did he acts both worthie of reciting,  
And to be kept in euerlasting writing.

From hils to dales, from woods to pastures wide,  
From waters fresh vnto the salt sea shore,  
To seeke his loue he vp and downe doth ride,  
The lesse he finds he seeketh still the more;  
At last he heard a voice for helpe that cride,  
He drawes his sword and spurs his Brilliadore.  
But to refresh the reader now tis reason,  
And stay my storie to a better season.

In the beginning of this eleuenth booke is a notable morall of temperance, with two comparisons, one of the horse, and the Beare, which I iudge fit for this place rather to be repeated then expounded. If (saith he) a horse, with a little sinne, may be stopt in his full carriere, what a shame is it for a man not to bridle his disordinate affections with reason, but to be like a Beare so greedie of honie, that he breakes downe the hieues, and deuoureth the combes, till his tongue, eyes and iawes be stong, readie to make him runne mad: so do young men deuoure with extreme greedinesse, these sensuall pleasures, of venerie, surfetting, drinking, pride in apparrell, and all intemperance, till in the end they are plagued with sicknesse, pouertie, and many other inconueniences to their vtter ruine and confusion. Wherefore in the person of Rogero young men may weigh the losses he had by following his present fancie to Angelica; namely his ring and his horse: by the one is lost reason, by the other courage. In Angelica whose beutie so exceedingly shined in her poore apparel, you great Ladies may see, that your true natural beauties becom you best, beside that it hath euer bene counted a great signe of modestie and chaste disposition in women, to be rather cleanly then sumptuous in apparrell, for the vaine expence therein hath bene often occasion both to corrupt the minds and manners of many not ill disposed. And therefore that excellent verse of Sir Philip Sidney in his first Arcadia (which I know not by what mishap is left out in the printed booke) is in mine opinion worthie to be praised and followed, to make a good and vertuous wife.

Who doth desire that chaste his wife should bee,  
First be he true, for truth doth truth deserue,  
Then be he such as she his worth may see,  
And alwayes one credit with her preferue:  
Not toying kind, nor causlesly vnkind,  
Not stirring thoughts, nor yet denying right:  
Not spying faults, nor in plaine errors blind,  
Neuer hard hand, nor euer rayns too light:  
As far from want, as far from vaine expence,  
Tone doth entorce, the tother doth entice.  
Allow good companie, but driue fro thence,  
All filthie mouths that glorie in their vice.  
This done, thou hast no more but leaue the rest,  
To nature, fortune, time, and womans breitt.

Which you see his opinion of the two extremities of want and vaine expence. Of the inuention of gunnes, as I somewhat touched two bookes before, so here you see how he affirmeth in a manner that they were inuented in Germanie. And so I haue read, that the first time they were vsed was in the yeare 1391. in the Venetians war against the Genoas, but it is maruell that the inuentors name of so monstrous a thing is not knowne.

Baken the great English Necromancer wrote many yeares before that time, that he knew how to make an engin, that with salt peter and brimstone wel tempered togeth, should proue notable for batterie, but he said he would not discover it, for feare it would be a meane to destroy all mankind.

destruction of the Ile of Ebuda, as hath bene sayd of it before, with the monsters that are said to deuoure women when forsaken, this Allegor sence is to be picked out (though to some perhaps it will seeme greatly strayned.) By the Il it is signified pride, and loosnesse of life, that they are brought to (by pirats) which signifie flatterers, that so rouin about to tise them hither, robbing them indeed of all their comely garments of modestie, and so bribe and at last leaue them naked vpon the shore, despised and forsaken, to be deuoured of most ugly and misshapen monsters signified by the Orke, as filthie diseases, deformities, and all kinde of contemptible things, which monsters, a good plaine friend, with an anker of fidelitte will kill, as Orlando did this, and so cloth againe the nakednesse, that before pride and flatterie made vs lay open to the world.

And whereas is it said that Neptune and Proteus fled from Orlando, it is meant that a true Christian drives away all superstitious idolatrie, where soeuer he commeth.

I finde no Allusion worth the noting.



IL  
PALAZZO  
D'ATEANTE





## THE ARGUMENT.

*Orlando doth pursue with great disdain,  
One that did seeme his loue by force to carrie:  
Rogero led by such another traine,  
With him doth in the charmed pallace tarrie:  
Orlando parting from the place againe,  
He sees indeed her whom he faine would marrie,  
Fights with Ferraw, and foiles two Turkish bands,  
And findes faire Isabell in outlawes hands.*



*F*aire Ceres when she hast-  
ned backe againe,  
From great Ideahomward  
to returne,  
There where *Enceladus*  
with endles paine,  
Doth beare mount *Ætna*  
that doth euer burne,  
When she had sought her  
daughter long in vaine,

Whose losse so strange did make y<sup>e</sup> mother mourne,  
She spoiles for spite her brest, cheeks, eyes and heare,  
As last two boughs from Pyne tree she doth teare.

*Vulcans* forge she sets on fire the brands,  
And giues them powre for euer to be light,  
And taking one a peece in both her hands,  
And drawne in coach by yoked serpents might,  
She searcheth woods and fields and seas and lands,  
And brooks and streames and dens deuoyd light,  
And hearing here on earth no newes to like her,  
At last she went to hell it selfe to seek.

Were good *Orlando* powre to be compared,  
As well with *As* as his louing minde,  
He would no paine, no place, nor time haue spared,  
His deare belou'd *Angelyca* to finde,  
To go to rocke and caues he would haue dared,  
And place to founts, and place to fens assignd,  
He onely wanted one of *Ceres* waggons,  
In which she carried was with flying draggons.

How he did search all France before he told,  
Now Italy to search is his intent,

And Germany and Castill new and old,  
And then to Affrica to passe he ment,  
And as he thus determined, behold  
He heard a voice that seemed to lament,  
And drawing nye, to vnderstand what tyding,  
On a great horse he saw a horse man ryding.

Perforce he bare vpon his saddle bow,  
A Lady sorrowfull and sore afraid,  
That cryde a loud still making open show,  
Of inward griefe, and thus to him she said,  
O worthy wight (Lord of *Anglante*) know  
I dye, I dye, without you bring me ayd,  
And then he thought coming more nie to vew her,  
It was *Angelyca*, and that he knew her.

I say not that it was, but that it seemd,  
To be *Angelyca* that thus was caryd,  
But he that iustly great disgrace it deemd,  
Thus in his sight, to haue his mistresse haryd,  
Whose loue about all treasures he esteemd,  
To take reuenge hereof he nothing taryd,  
But put his spurs to *Brilliadores* sides,  
And in great hast to that same horseman rydes.

With many bloodie words and cruell threats,  
He bids that horseman to come backe againe,  
But he at naught his wordes and speeches sets,  
Reioycing in so rich a gotten gayne,  
The vilen still ground of *Orlando* gets,  
Vntill they came into a faire large plaine,  
Wherein a house of great estate was built,  
The gate her of in gorgeous fort was gilt.

*Quid illa ducibus  
stans infans puerus  
ingens successu  
discebat. Agone.  
Interea patula  
cuniculam filia  
ma. omnibus  
inter omnia  
quiescit. ofundo  
Ceresu. f. Leo  
draw her coach  
with serpents.*



8

The building all of marble faire was wrought,  
Most costly caru'd and cunningly contriued,  
To this faire house, his pray the foule thief brought,  
Straight after him *Orlando* there arriued:  
Then he alights and all about he sought,  
For him that had him of his ioy depriued,  
He maketh search in chambers all about,  
And galleries and halls to finde them out.

9

Each roome he finds set forth with rich aray,  
With beds of silke, and gold of curious art,  
But yet he finds not that desired pray,  
The want whereof did sore torment his hart.  
There might he finde with like affliction stray,  
*Gradasso*, *Sacrapant* and *Brandimart*,  
And feare *Ferraw* possest with strange confusion,  
Procured in that place by strong illusion.

10

They all complaine in anger and in rage,  
How of this house the master them hath vsed,  
One lost his horse, another lost his page,  
Another doubts his mistresse is abused:  
Thus are they kept like birds within a cage,  
And stand with sense and wits and words confused,  
And manie with this strange deception carried,  
Within this place both weeks & months had tarried

11

*Orlando* when he saw he could not learne,  
Where this same theefe his mistresse had conuaid,  
Thought she was carride out at some posterne;  
Wherefore within no longer time he staid,  
But walkes about the castle to discerne,  
If that were true of which he was affraid:  
But as he walked vp and downe the plaine,  
He thought he heard her call him backe againe.

12

And to a window casting vp his eye,  
He thought he saw her face full of diuinitie,  
And that he heard her plainly thus to crie,  
O noble wight of proued magnanimitie,  
Helpe now, or neuer helpe, alas shall I  
In mine *Orlandos* sight leese my virginity?  
Kill me, or let a thousand deathes befall me,  
Rather then let a villaine so to thrall me.

13

These wofull speeches once or twice repeted,  
Cau'd him returne into the house againe,  
And searching once againe he chafte and freted,  
(Hope still asswaging somewhat of his paine)  
And oft he heard the voice that counterfeted  
The speech of his *Angelica* most plaine,  
From side to side he follow'd still the sound,  
But of *Angelica* no signe he found.

14

Now while *Orlando* tarried in this traunce,  
In hope for to auenge his mistresse harmes,  
*Rogero* (who I told you had this chaunce)  
To see his *Bradament* in gyants armes,  
(Drawne to this place with such another daunce)  
Namely by force of some vnusuall charmes,  
Saw first the gyant in this castle enter,  
And after him he boldly doth aduenter.

15

But when he came within the castle walls,  
And made much narrow search, as in such case,  
In garrets, towrs, in parlors and in halls,  
And vnder staires and many a homely place,  
Oft casting doubts what hurt his loue befalls,  
Or lest the theefe were gone in this meane space,  
Forthwith he walketh out into the plaine,  
And heares a voice recall him backe againe.

16

That voice that lately did *Orlando* make,  
Returne in hope *Angelica* to finde,  
*Rogero* now for *Bradament* doth take,  
Whose loue no lesse possest his carefull minde:  
And when the voice vnto *Gradasso* spake,  
Or *Sacrapant*, or *Brandimart* most kinde,  
To euerie one of these it plainly seemed,  
To be her voice whom ech one best esteemed

17

*Atlanta* had procur'd this strange inuention,  
Thereby to keepe *Rogero* from mischance,  
Because he saw, it was the heauens intention,  
That he by treason should be kild  
ce,  
*Ferraw* and those of whom I last made mention,  
Whith all hom vallew highest did aduan,  
To keepe him companie he here detained,  
With good prouision while they here remained.

18

And while these knights with strange enchanments  
Do here abide, behold the Indian queene (bound  
*Angelica* that late her ring had found,  
(Whose vertue can her cause to go vnseene, *Angelica*  
And also frustrate magicke skill profound)  
Now longing home, where long she had not been,  
And being now of needfull things prouided,  
Yet wants she one that her might hom haue guided

19

*Orlandos* companie she would haue had,  
Or *Sacrapant*, she car'd not which of twaine,  
Not that of eithers loue she would be glad,  
For them and all the world she did disdain.  
But (for the way was dangerous and bad,  
In time of warre to trauell France and Spaine)  
She wisht for her owne safetie and her ease,  
To haue the companie of one of these.

20

Wherefore a while she trauels vp and downe,  
To seek for them that long in vaine had sought her,  
A passing many woods and many a towne,  
Vnto his place at last good fortune brought her,  
Wh she saw these nights of great renowne  
Ther for her, she sca  
To see *Atlantas* cunning and d mbling, ter,  
Her person and her voice so righ embling.

21

Her selfe vnseene, sees them and all the rest,  
Now meanes she sure to take one of them two,  
But yet she knowes not which (er doubtfull brest  
Did stay as vnresolued what to do)  
*Orlandos* vellew could defend her best,  
But then this doubt is added thereunto,  
That when she once so highly had prefard him,  
She shall not know againe how to discard him.

But



But *Sacrapant* although she should him lift  
High to heauen, yet maketh she no doubt,  
But she will find some sleight and pretie shift,  
With her accustom'd coyneſſe him to lout:  
To him she goes, reſolued of this drift,  
And ſtraight the precious ring ſhe taketh out  
From of her mouth, which made her go concealed,  
With mind to him alone to be reuealed.

But ſtraight came in *Orlando* and *Ferraw*,  
That both deſired, her to haue enioyd,  
Thus all of them at once their goddeſſe ſaw,  
Not being now by magick art annoyd,  
For when the ring on finger ſhe did draw,  
She made vnwares all their enchantments voyd,  
Theſe three were all in complet armor ſaue  
no headpeece had, nor none would haue.

The cauſe was this, he ſolemnely had ſworne,  
Vpon his head no helmet ſhould be ſet,  
But that that was by ſtout *Orlando* worne,  
Which he did criſt from *Trains* brother get,  
*Ferraw* are a helmet had forborne,  
Since with the gholt of *Argail* he had met:  
hus in this ſort they came together ned,  
By vertue of her ring now all vncharmed.

*Almonte* brother  
to *Trasano*.

All three at once do now the damſell vew,  
All three at once on her would ſtraight haue ſeaſed,  
All three her faithfull louers were ſhe knew,  
Yet with all three at once ſhe is diſpleaſed,  
And from all three ſhe ſtraight her ſelfe withdrew,  
Who (haply) one at once would her haue pleaſed,  
From henceforth none of them ſhe thinks to need,  
But that the ring ſhall ſerue in all their ſteed.

She haſtens hence and will no longer ſtay,  
Diſdaine and feare together make her ſwift,  
Into a wood ſhe leades them all the way,  
But when ſhe ſaw there was none other ſlift,  
Into her mouth the ring ſhe doth conuay,  
That euer holpe her at the deadeſt li:  
And out of all their ſights forthwith ſhe vaniſhed,  
And leaues them all with wonder halfe aſtoniſhed.

Onely one path there was, and that not wide,  
In this they followed her with no ſmall haſt,  
But ſhe firſt cauſd her horſe to ſtep aſide,  
And ſtandeth ſtill a while till they were paſt,  
And then at better leiſure ſhe doth ride  
re more eaſie pace and not ſo fa  
Vntil th continuing ſtill their ri  
Came to a way undry parts diuiding.

And comming where they found no further tracke,  
*Ferraw*, that was before the tother two,  
In choler and in very great turnd backe,  
And aſkt the other what they meant to do,  
And (as his maner was to brag and cracke)  
Demanded how they durſt preſume to wo,  
Or follow her, whoſe propertie he claimed,  
Except they would of him be ſlaine or maimed.

*Orlando* ſtraight replide, thou fooliſh beaſt,  
Saue that I ſee thou doeſt an helmet want,  
I would ere this haue taught thee at the leaſt,  
Hereafter with thy betters not to want:  
*Ferraw* doth thanke him for his care (in eaſt)  
And ſaid it ſhewd his wits were very ſcant,  
For as he was he would not be afraid,  
To proue againſt them both that he had ſaid.

Sir, ſaid *Orlando* to the Pagan King,  
Lend him your headpeece, and er we go hence,  
I will this beaſt in better order bring,  
Or ſharply puniſh him for his offence.  
Nay ſoſt (ſaid *Sacrapant*) that were a thing,  
The which to grant might ſhew I had no ſence,  
Lend you him yours, for he not go to ſchoole,  
To know as well as you to bob a foole.

Tuſh (quoth *Ferraw*) fooles to your faces both,  
Aſthough if I had bin diſpold to weare one,  
I would haue ſufferd (were you leue or loth)  
The beſt and proudeſt of you both to beare one.  
The truth is this, that I by ſolemne oth  
Vpon a certaine chance did once forweare one,  
That on my head no helmet ſhould be donne,  
Vntill I had *Orlandos* helmet wonne.

What (quoth the Earle) then ſeems it vnto thee,  
Thy force ſo much *Orlandos* doth ſurmount,  
That thou couldſt do the ſame to him, that he  
Vnto *Almonte* did in *Aſpramonte*?  
Rather I thinke, if thou his face ſhould ſee,  
Thou wouldſt ſo farre be wide of thine account,  
That thou wouldſt tremble ouer all thy body,  
And yeeld thy ſelfe and armour like a nody.

The Spaniſh vaunter (like to all the nation)  
Said he had often with *Orlando* met,  
And had him at aduantage in ſuch faſhion,  
That had he liſt he might his helmet get,  
But thus (quoth he) the time brings alteration,  
That now I ſeeke, I then at naught did ſet,  
To take his helmet from him then I ſpared,  
Becaule as then for it I little cared.

Then ſtraight *Orlando* mou'd in rightfull anger,  
Made anſwer thus, thou foole and murren lier,  
I cannot now forbear thee any longer,  
I am whom thou to find doeſt ſo deſier,  
When met we two that thou didſt part the ſtronger?  
Thou thoughtſt me ſaſider, thou ſhalt feele me mer  
Try now if thou beſt able me to boyle,  
Or I can thee of all thy armour ſpoyle.

Nor do I ſeeke to take this ods of thee,  
This ſaid, forthwith his helmet he vntide,  
And hung the ſame faſt by vpon a tree,  
Then drew his *Durindana* from his ſide,  
And in like ſort you might the Spaniard ſee,  
That was no whit abated of his pride,  
How he his ſword and target ſtright prepar'd,  
And lay moſt manfully vnto his ward.



36

And thus these champions do the fight begin  
Vpon their courfers fierce, themselves more fierce,  
And where the armour ioynes and is most thin,  
There still they striue with sturdy strokes to pierce:  
Search all the world, and two such men therein  
Could not be found, for as old bookes rehearse,  
Their skins were such, as had they bin vnarmed,  
Yet could they not with weapons haue bin harmed.

37

*Ferraw* had in his youth inchantment such,  
That but his nauell, hard was all the rest,  
Vnto *Orlando* there was done as much,  
By prayer of some saint (as may be guest)  
Saue in his feet, which he let no man tuch,  
Take it for truth, or take it for a iest,  
Thus I haue found it wrote, that they indeed  
Ware armor more for shew then any need.

38

Thus twixt them two the fight continues still,  
Yet not so sharpe in substance as in show;  
*Ferraw* imploying all his art and skill,  
Sharpe thrusts vpon the tother to bestow:  
*Orlando* that hath euer strength at will,  
Layth on the Spaniard many a lustie blow:  
*Angelica* doth stand fast by vnseene,  
And sees alone the battell them betweene.

39

For why the Pagan Prince was gone the while,  
To find her out, when they together fought,  
And by their strife, that he might both beguile,  
He hopes, and had conceiued in his thought:  
He rides away, and trauels many a mile,  
And still his deare beloued mistris sought,  
And thus it came to passe that she that day,  
Was onely present at so great a fray.

*You shall heare of  
Sacrapant againe  
27 book, 15 staff.*

40

Which when she saw continue in such sort,  
Nor yet could guesse by ought that she did see,  
Which was most like to cut the other short,  
She takes away the helmet from the tree,  
And thinks by this to make her selfe some sport,  
Or they by this might sooner sundred be,  
Not meaning in such sort away to set it,  
But that the worthy Earle againe may get it.

41

And with the same away from hence she goes,  
The while they two with paine and trauell tired,  
In giuing and in taking deadly bloes,  
*Ferraw* (that mist the headpeece first) retired,  
And for he did most certainly suppose,  
That *Sacrapant* had tane it vndeired,  
Good Lord (said he) what meane we here to do?  
This other knight hath couened vs two,

42

And vnawares the helmet tane away.  
*Orlando* hearing this, doth looke aside,  
And missing it, he doth belecue straightway,  
As did *Ferraw*, and after him they ride:  
They came at last into a parted way,  
That in two parts it selfe doth there deuide,  
Fresh tracke in both of them was to be seene,  
This of the Knight, that of the Indian Queene.

43

*Orlando* hap was to pursue the Knight,  
*Ferraw*, that was more luckie of the twaine,  
Happend vpon *Angelica* to light,  
Who to refresh her former taken paine,  
Fast by a fountaine did before alight,  
And seeing sodainly the knight of Spaine,  
Straight like a shadow from his sight she past,  
And on the ground the helmet left with hast.

44

But as the sight of her did make him glad,  
In hope by this good fortune her to get,  
So thus againe to loose her made him sad,  
And shewd that she did him at nothing let:  
Then curst he as he had bin raging mad,  
Blapheming *Tryuigant* and *Mahomet*,  
And all the Gods adord in Turks profession,  
The grieft in him did make so deepe impression.

45

Yet when he had *Orlando* helmet spide,  
And knew it was by letters writ thereon,  
The same for which *Traianes* brother dide,  
He takes it quickly vp and put it on  
And then in hast he after her doth ride,  
That was out of his sight so strangely go  
He takes the helmet, thinking little sham  
Although he came not truly by the same.

46

But seeing she away from him was fled,  
Nor where she was he knew nor could not guesse,  
Himselfe from hence to Paris ward he sped,  
His hope to find her waxing lesse and lesse:  
And yet the sorrow that her losse had bred,  
Was part asswag'd, the helmet to possesse,  
Though afterward when as *Orlando* knew it,  
He swore great othes that he would make him rew it.

47

But how *Orlando* did againe it get,  
And how *Ferraw* was plagued for that crime,  
And how they two betweene two bridges met,  
Whereas *Ferraw* was killed at that time,  
My purpose is not to declare as yet,  
But to another story turne my rime:  
Now I must tell you of that Indian Queene,  
By vertue of her ring that goeth vnseene.

48

Who parted thence all sad and discontented,  
That by her meanes *Ferraw* his will had got,  
That she (with this vnlookt for hap preuented)  
Let him the helmet, though she meant it not,  
And heart her selfe she sore repented,  
And for her selfe she felt  
If she had tooke it with good intention,  
Thereby to breake their strife and sharp contention.

49

Not that thereby this filthy Spaniard might  
By helpe of my deceit and doin wrong,  
Keepe that by fraud he could not win by might,  
Alas to thy true loue and seruice long,  
A better recompence then this of right,  
From me (my good *Orlando*) should belong:  
And thus in this most kind and doletull fashion,  
She doth continue long her lamentation.

Now



50

Now meaneth she to trauell to the East,  
Vnto her natiue soile and country ground,  
Her iourney doth her other griefes digest,  
Her ring doth in her iourney keepe her sound,  
Yet chanced she, ere she forooke the West,  
To trauell neare a wood, whereas she found  
A fine yong man betweene two dead men lying,  
With wound in bleeding breist euen then a dying.

51

all come  
me  
she 19.  
37  
But here a while I cease of her to treat,  
Or *Sacrapant*, or of the knight of Spaine,  
First I must tell of many a hardy feate,  
Before I can returne to them againe:  
*Orlandos* actions I will now repeate,  
That still endur'd such trauell and such paine,  
it selfe, that sorrowes doth appease,  
Could grant to this his griefe an end or ease.

52

And first the noble Earle an headpeece bought,  
By late ill fortune hauing lost his owne,  
For temper or the strength he neuer sought,  
So it did him but from being knowne.  
Now *Plibus* charret had the daylight brought,  
and his the starres that late before were showne,  
aurora was new risen when  
*Orlando* met two bands of armed men.

53

One hand was led by worthy *Manilard*,  
A man though stout, yet hoary haire for age,  
Who with his men did make to Paris ward,  
He not for warre, but fit for counsell sage:  
*Alfyrd* of the other had the guard,  
Then in the prime and chiefe floure of his age,  
And one that passed all the Turkish warriors,  
To fight at tilt, at turney or at barriers.

54

These men with other of the Pagan host,  
Had layne the winter past not far fro thence,  
When *Agramant* did see his men were lost,  
By vaine assaults vnto his great expence,  
And therefore now he sweares and maketh boast,  
That he will neuer raise his siege fro thence,  
Till they within that now had left the field,  
Were forst by famine all their goods to yeeld.

55

And for that cause, now sommer comes againe,  
He gets together all the men he may,  
With new supplies of Affrike and of Spaine,  
And some of France that did accept his pay,  
that in order due they may remain  
He put him in one  
Who by commandment hither came in c...rs,  
To make appe...ce at the pointed musters.

56

Now when *Alfyrd* saw *Orlando* there,  
Inflam'd with pride and glory of his mind,  
He longed straight with him to breake a speare,  
And spurs his horse, but quickly he doth find  
Himselfe too weake so sturdy blowes to beare,  
And wisheth now that he had staid behind,  
He falleth from the horses back downe dead,  
The fearfull horse without his master fled.

57

Straight there was raised a mightie cry and shout,  
By all the souldiers of *Alfyrdos* band,  
When as they see their captaine (late so stout)  
Throwne downe and killed by *Orlandos* hand:  
Then out of ray they compass him about  
On eu'ry side, in number as the sand,  
They that are nie, with blowes do him assaile,  
And those aloofe throw darts as thicke as haile.

58

Simile.  
Looke what a noise an herd of sauage swine  
Do make when as the wolfe a pig hath caught,  
That doth in all their hearings cry and whine,  
They flocke about as nature hath them taught:  
So do these souldiers murmur and repine,  
To see their captaine thus to mischief brought,  
And with great fury they do set vpon him,  
All with one voice, still crying, on him, on him.

59

I say the nearer fight with sword and speare,  
And those aloofe send shafts and many a dart,  
But he that neuer yet admitted feare  
To lodge in any harbour of his hart,  
Vpon his shield a thousand darts doth beare,  
And thousands more on euery other part,  
Yet of them all makes no more care nor keepe,  
Then doth a Lion of a flocke of sheepe.

60

For when at once his fatall blade he drew,  
That blade so often bath'd in Pagans blood,  
No Steele there was of temper old or new,  
Nor folded cloths the edge thereof withstood,  
About the field, heads, legs, armes, shoulders flew,  
The furrowes all did flow with crimson flood,  
Death goeth about the field reioyeing mickle,  
To see a sword that so surpast his sickle.

61

This made the Pagan rout so sore agast,  
He that could swiftest runne was best apaid,  
And as they came, so fled they now as fast,  
One brother for another neuer staid:  
No memory of loue or friendship past,  
Could make one stay to giue another aid,  
He that could gallop fastest was most glad,  
Not asking if the wayes were good or bad.

62

Onely one man there was in all the field,  
That had so long in vertues schoole bin bred,  
That rather then to turne his backe or yeeld,  
He meaneth there to leaue his carcas dead:  
Old *Manylard*, who taking vp his sheeld,  
Euen as his valiant heart and courage led,  
Sets spurs to horse, and in his rest a lance,  
And runs against the *Palladin* of France.

63

Vpon *Orlandos* shield his speare he brake,  
Who neuer stird for all the manly blow,  
But with his naked sword againe he strake,  
And made him tumble ore the saddle bow:  
Fortune on vertue did some pitie take,  
For why, *Orlandos* sword fell flarling tho,  
That though it quite amazd and ouerthrew him,  
Yet by good hap it maimd him not nor slew him.



64

With great confusion all the other fled,  
And now of armed men the field was voyd,  
Saw such as were or seemed to be dead,  
So as *Orlando* now no more annoyd,  
Went on his journey as his fancie led,  
To seeke her, in whose fight he onely ioyd,  
Through plains and woods, through sandy ways and  
He trauels making still of her enquiry. (miry,

65

Here you should  
begin to read the  
tale of *Isabella*.

Untill it was his fortune toward night  
To come fast by a mountaine in whose side  
Forth of a caue he saw a glims of light,  
And towards it he presently doth ride:  
Then at the mouth thereof he doth alight,  
And to a bush fast by his horse he tide,  
He doubts, as euer loue is full of feare,  
That his belou'd *Angelica* was there.

66

*Synile.*

Eu'n as the hunters that desirous are,  
Some present pastime for their hounds to see,  
In stubble fields do seeke the fearfull hare,  
By eu'ry bush, and vnder eu'ry tree:  
So he with like desire and greater care,  
Seeks her that sole of sorrow can him free,  
He enters boldly in the hollow caue,  
And thinks of her some tidings there to haue.

67

The entrance straight and narrow was to passe,  
Descending steps into a place profound,  
Whereas a certaine faire yong Ladie was,  
Kept by some outlawes prisoner vnder ground,

*Moral.*

In that *Angelica* would haue chosen *Sacrapant* before *Orlando*, we may note how women for the most part in their choise follow rather some priuat respect, then the true worth of the men that offer themselves at their deuotion. In that she took away the helmet, with purpose to make sport with it, though at last *Orlando* by that means luff it against her wil, we may see that things done in iest, oft turne to earnest: and therefore that excellent rule of civilitie is euermore to be kept.

Play with me and hurt me not,  
Iest with me and shame me not.

*Historie.*

In the quarrell betweene *Orlando* and *Ferraw*, we may see the common originall of all quarrels, namely honour and women. Of *Ferraw* I spake in the first booke of his strength and stature, but whether it be true, or might be true, that his body should be made impenetrable by sorcery and witchcraft, I can neither affirme it was so, nor maintaine that it could be so, yet I know some that beleue the contrary, and (as they thinke) vpon good grounds: and some say it is a great practise in Ireland to charme girdles, and the like, perswading men that while they weare them they cannot with any weapon and who can tell whether the diuel may not sometime protect some of his seruants? but one notable example I haue heard tending much to this effect: *Roric Oge* (a notable rebell of Ireland) hauing taken in a vile and treacherous Parlee, my valiant cosin sir *Henric Harington* prisoner, had one night his cabin or little houell where he lay beset with one hundred souldiers of the said sir *Henric* his band, meaning to rescue their captaine by force, with the rebels demands for his deliuey were such as sir *Henric* himselfe (being his prisoner) would not condescend vnto, but would rather hazard his life as he knew he should: I say these hundred well appointed, beset the house strongly, being made of nothing but hardels and durty, yet the villain ere they could get in: came in his shir and gaue the knight xiiij. wounds very deudly, and after gat thorough them all without hurt, where a manise almost could not see them, and I haue heard it affirmed in Ireland, that it was with meere witchcraft.

*Allegoric.*

In the pallace, where euery one hath that he liketh best presented vnto him, yet no man can enioy it to be vnder, good that he that followes his owne vaine desires without the rule of reason, shal euer run astray, and neuer attaine to the true contentment he desires.

*Allusion.*

In *Orlando* and *Ferraw*, he alludes to the fight of *Cygnus* and *Achilles*, who were both in like sort fained to haue bin inviolable.

Her beautie did the common sort surpasse,  
So farre as scant her match was to be found,  
So as that darke and solitary den,  
Might seeme to be a paradise as then.

68

On her an aged woman there did wait,  
The which (as oft with women doth befall)  
About some matter of but little waight,  
Did happen at that time to chide and brall,  
But when they saw a stranger comming, straight  
They held their peaces, and were quiet all,  
*Orlando* doth salute them with good grace,  
And they do bid him welcome to the place.

This old woman  
was *Gabrins*, of  
whom you haue  
heard a bad  
tale xxi

69

Then after common words of salutation,  
Although at first of him they were afraid,  
Yet straight he enterd in examination,  
By whom in that same caue they had bin stai  
And who they were in so vnseemly fashion,  
That kept a comely and a noble maid  
And said, he saw it written in her face,  
Her nurture and her linage were

70

She told him straight how long she there had  
And by what hap she had bin thither brought,  
Amid her words the sighs do passe betweene,  
The corall and the pearle by nature wrought,  
Sweet teares vpon her tender cheeks were seene,  
That came from fountaine of her bitter thought,  
But soft, lest I should do the Reader wrong,  
I end this booke, that else would be too long.

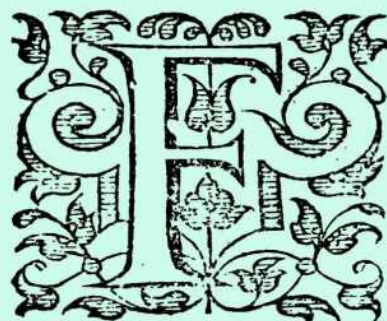






## THE ARGUMENT.

Orlando heares Zerbynos loue to tell,  
 Her strange misfortune and her hard aduenter:  
 These outlawes that in that vast caue did dwell,  
 Orlando hang'd, that had in prison pent her.  
 Bradamant though Melissa did her tell  
 Atlantis frauds, yet doth his Pallace enter,  
 Where she is staid by force of Atlants charmes,  
 While Agramant musters his men of armes.



<sup>1</sup>  
 Vll ventrous were the no-  
 ble knights of old,  
 And worthy that their fame  
 should ay endure,  
 That durst with valiant  
 heart, and courage bold  
 Find out in dens and pla-  
 ces all obscure,  
 Such as in courts we now  
 but seeld behold,

Faire dames, of beautie, mind and manners pure:  
 As erst I told you how Orlando found,  
 A braue young Ladie hidden vnder ground.

<sup>2</sup>  
 Now in my former matter to proceed,  
 I say when he had vewd her person well,  
 And markt her face and hauiour with great heed,  
 He doth request the damtall faire to tell,  
 Who was the auther of so foule a deed,  
 To force her in so vnfit place to dwell:  
 And she as plaine and briefly as she can,  
 In this sweet sort her wofull speech began.

<sup>3</sup>  
 Most worthy knight (she said) although I know,  
 That I shall buy my speech to you full deare,  
 (For sure I am, this woman here will show,  
 My words to him that first did place me heare)  
 Truth I will tell, though truth increafe my woe,  
 And make him looke on me with angrie cheare:  
 Dispaire hath euer danger all contemned,  
 What should she feare that is eu'n now condemned?

<sup>4</sup>  
 I am that Isabel that somtime was,  
 A daughter deare vnto the king of Spaine,

Well did I say I was, for now alas,  
 I am the child of anguish and of paine:  
 Leue, onely loue, this great change brought to passe  
 Leue, onely loue, of thee I may complaine,  
 That flattring alwaies in thy first beginnings,  
 Yeeld't certaine losse in steed of hoped winnings.

See

<sup>5</sup>  
 Then in good state I spent my happie dayes,  
 Noble and young, honest and rich, and faire,  
 Now base, despised, poore, and wanting prayes.  
 Drownd in a dungeon of most deepe dispaire,  
 Thus loue throws downe, whom fortune hie doth  
 And mers the sport in which he is a plaire. (raise  
 He that in art of loue did show his skill,  
 Saith loue and maiestie agrees but ill.

On  
Spiritor. M.

<sup>6</sup>  
 But that I plainly may declare my mind,  
 Thus it fell out: my father twelue months since,  
 To make a famous triumph had assignd,  
 Vnto the which came many a Lord and Prince,  
 Whether liking did mine eies so blind,  
 is vertue did it selfe conuince:  
 (me thought) the king of Scotlands sonns,  
 In this same triumph hono' chiefe had wonne.

<sup>7</sup>  
 The passing feates of armes I saw him do,  
 In which he was compared with the best,  
 His person and his beautie ioynd thereto,  
 In which he far surpassed all the rest,  
 Did cause that he no sooner did me woe,  
 But I as quickly granted his request:  
 Interpreters nor other means none wanted,  
 To make the seeds to grow that loue had planted.

Draior est pub  
chro  
scripte vrsui



8  
When as these feasts and solemne shewes were ended,  
My *Zerbin* backe againe to Scotland hasted,  
Wherewith how grieuously I was offended,  
Well may you guesse if euer loue you tasted:  
But he that cannot be too much commended,  
Whose loue to me no lesse in absence lasted,  
With purpose and with promise firme to marry me,  
Studed all meanes away from hence to carry me.

9  
Twere vaine he thought to aske me of my fire,  
(*Zerbin* a Christen, I a Sarazine)  
Our country law contrarid that desire,  
To which our loues so wholly did encline:  
This feat doth some new stratagem require,  
More needfull, secret, circumpect and fine:  
In our loue hath knit two hearts in perfite vnitie,  
They seldome faile to find their oportunitie.

*In eence. Oas  
et esse  
quod x  
uo  
Sir x blyp Sad-  
made at this.  
For why no reio-  
sie can that pre-  
one, so which  
swop- es once  
guesfu c*

10  
An house of great estate in Bayon towne,  
My father had with gardens sweet and faire,  
In which with large descents still going downe  
Vnto our comes the garden staire,  
Here (ill fortune on vs do not frowne)  
I canes when I shall walke to take the aire,  
Soone to surprise me walking in an ally,  
And so conuey me to his armed gally.

11  
But with him the case did then so stand,  
Not to be present at this enterprise,  
He sent me letters written with his hand,  
By *Oderike* of Byskie stout and wise,  
Experienc'd twice both off sea and land,  
And wils me do as he should me aduise,  
Whose faith he nothing doubteth to be sound,  
As one to him by benefits much bound.

12  
This firme and fast, and sure obliged frend,  
Of proued courage, value and of skill,  
Against the time appointed he doth send:  
And I that for their comming looked still,  
Against the time appointed did descende,  
To giue him scope to worke his masters will,  
And he accordingly came vnespide,  
With armed men vnder the garden side.

13  
I seeing them, my selfe most fearfull faine,  
They seeing me, soone of their purpose sped,  
Those that resistance made, forthwith were slaime,  
And some afraid and faint like cowards  
The rest with me as prisoners do remain  
Then straight we were vnto the gally led  
And gone so far we could not be recovered,  
Before my father had the fact discovered.

14  
Of this departure I my selfe was glad,  
In hope ere long my *Zerbin* to haue found,  
But lo a sodaine tempest made vs sad,  
And neare to Rochell almost had vs dround,  
The master of the ship no cunning had,  
To keepe the keele from striking on the ground:  
It booted not against the waues to striue,  
Vpon sharpe rockes the tempest doth vs driue.

15  
In vaine it was to pull downe all our sailes,  
And on the foreboord close to couch the mast,  
No paine against the raging sea preuailes,  
On land we looke each minute to be cast:  
Diuine helpe oft doth come, when humane failes,  
And when in reason all releefe is past:  
For doubtlesse I do deeme by powre diuine,  
We were preserued in this dang'rous time.

16  
The Byskin that the danger well doth note,  
Doth meane a desprate remedy to trie,  
He straightway launcheth out the little bote,  
He and two more go downe therein and I,  
This done, he cuts the rope and lets her fote,  
Threatning with naked sword that he should die,  
That durst presume to giue so bold aduenter,  
Against our wils into the bote to enter.

17  
The rope now cut, away the bote was carried  
By force of waues vnto the shallow shore,  
And by geat fortune none of vs miscarried,  
So great a plunge I neuer scapt before,  
But they (poore soules) that in the gally tarried,  
Were drownd, the vessell quite in peeces tore,  
Where though my losse of stuffe and jewels greeu'd  
My hope to see my *Zerbin* still releu'd me. (me,

18  
Now being come to land (in lucklesse houre)  
And trusting onely *Oderikes* direction,  
Loue (that doth euer loue to shew his power,  
In tempring and distempring our affection)  
My good to ill, my sweet doth turne to fower,  
My hope to hurt, my health into infection:  
He in whose trust *Zerbin* so much relieth,  
Freezeth in faith, and in new fancie frieth.

19  
Now whether first at sea this humor grew,  
Or else he moued was with new occasion,  
To haue me here alone with so small crew.  
As from his will I could not make euasion,  
He bids all faith and honestie adew,  
And yeelds himselfe vnto this foule perswasion;  
And that he may his pleasure surely warrant,  
He sends the seruants of a sleecuelefle arrant.

20  
Two men there were that had so luckie lot,  
With vs into the shipbote to descend,  
One hight *Almonio*, by birth a Scot,  
A valiant man, and *Zerbins* trustie frend,  
*Odrike* tels him that it becomed not,  
So few vpon a Princesse to attend,  
And that the daughter of the King of Spaine,  
Should go on foote and with so small a traine.

21  
Wherefore he wisheth him to go before  
To Rochell, there a palfrey to provide,  
And hire some men, a dozen or a score,  
Me to my lodging mannerly to guide:  
*Almonio* went, then was there left no more,  
But *Coreb*, one of wit and courage tride,  
In whom the Byskin put the more affiance,  
Because that he was one of his alliance.



22

Yet long he seemd in doubtfull mind to houer,  
Faine if he could he would haue rid him thence,  
At last he thinks so fast a friend and loue,  
Will with his friends iniquitie dispence:  
Wherefore he doth to him his mind discouer,  
In hope that he would further his offence,  
And do as friends in our dayes haue a fashion,  
Aduance their pleasure more then reputation.

Sentence.

23

But he whose honest mind could not suppose,  
That *Oderike* had had so little grace,  
The fact not onely threatens to disclose,  
But cals him false and traitor to his face:  
From bitter words vnto more bitter bloes,  
They came and fought together in the place,  
And I in this prospect no whit delighting,  
Fled to the wood while they two were a fighting.

24

Betweene them two the combat was not long,  
But lo the worser cause the better sped,  
Whether he were more skilfull or more strong,  
*Odrike* doth lay *Corebo* there for dead:  
That done, he runs the woods and ferne among,  
And followes fast the way that I had fled,  
I thinke that he god *Cupids* wings did borrow,  
He made such halt to hasten on my sorrow.

*Ouid. Metamor.*  
*Qui tamen in se-*  
*quitur pēus ad-*  
*sus amoris otio-*  
*rit, &c.*

*Hic spe, celer illa*  
*simore.*

25

Feare made me swift, for fore I was afraid,  
Loue made him swifter runne to ouertake me,  
Then fore against my will my courte he staid,  
Then sundrily both foule and faire he spake me,  
Sometime he promised, sometime he praid,  
Sometime he threatned he by force would make me:  
With suit, with gifts, with threats he oft did proue me,  
With suit, with gifts, with threats he nought did moue

*Ouid. de fastis.*  
*Instat amans*  
*hostis presio pre-*  
*cibusq; missis.*  
*Nec prece nec*  
*precio, nec mouet*  
*ille minus.*

26

But when he could not with his words preuaile,  
He doth resolute no farther time to stay,  
With open force he then did me assaile,  
As doth a hungry Beare cease on his pray,  
And I defended me with tooth and naile,  
And cries and skreeks, and all the wayes I may,  
Nor was I in mine owne defence afraid,  
To scratch his eyes, and pull away his beard.

27

I know not if it were my skreech and crie,  
That might haue well bin heard a league and more,  
Or if it were their vse that dwell there by,  
To come to seeke some shipwracks on the shore,  
But straight vpon the hill we might descrie,  
Come toward vs of companie good store,  
Which makes my Byskie man away to runne,  
And to surcease his enterprife begunne.

28

Proverbe.

Thus this vnlookt for crew preferu'd me then,  
And hinderd him of his vniust desire:  
But I was sau'd, as is the flounder when  
He leapeth from the dish into the fire.  
For though these barbarous and sauage men,  
To touch my person did not once aspire,  
No vertuous thought did breed this moderation,  
But hope of gaine and greedie inclination.

29

The leader of this miserable band,  
Did thinke his market will be raised much,  
In selling me, when men shall vnderstand,  
He fels a maid whom none did euer tuch,  
And now I heare a merchant is in hand,  
Of him to buy me if his lucke be such,  
From whom into the East I shall be sent,  
Where to the Souldan they will me present.

30

And in this sort her wofull tale she told,  
And mingled sighes with teares in rufull fashion  
Expressed with such dolefull words as would  
Haue mou'd a stonie heart to take compassion:  
It cald in part her mind, thus to vnfold  
The bitter cause of her vnpleasant passion  
Now while *Orlando* to this tale attended,  
The crew of caitiues to the caue descended.

31

A barbarous and foule mishapen crew,  
Armed, one with a spit, one with a prong,  
Mouthe, eyes and face, most vgly were to vew,  
One had no nose, anothers was too long,  
But when their leader somewhat nearer w,  
And saw *Orlando* standing there among  
Turning to his companion, he said,  
Lo here a bird for whom no net we laid.

32

Then to the Earle he said, I am right glad  
To find one so well armed in my caue,  
For long for such an armor longd I had,  
And surely now this I suppose to haue:  
How thinke you, when my person shall clad  
With this your coate, shall I not then be braue?  
Wherefore good sir, think not your welcome scant,  
That come so fitly to supply my want.

33

*Orlando* turning with a sower smile,  
Answerd, his armor was of price too hie,  
And that he greatly did himselfe beguile,  
That thought of him his armor there to buy:  
And as they nearer came, he stoopt the while,  
And tooke a brand that in the fire did lie,  
And straight he threw it at the caitiues head,  
And laid him there along the floore for dead.

34

A short thicke planke stood on a scrubby post,  
That seru'd them for a boord to drinke and cate,  
This like a coight at them *Orlando* toft,  
A (the same full heauy was and great)  
It ne there among them to their cost,  
Thuer saw before so strange a feat:  
By which scarce one of them ped harme,  
In head, in leg, in brest, in side or arme.

35

So shall you see a country man that takes  
In time of spring a brickbat or a stone,  
And throwes the same vpon a knot of snakes,  
That lie together clusterd all in one,  
How great a spoile the stone among them makes,  
And those that scape, how quickly they be gone:  
So did *Orlando* with these peasants pl  
That glad were they that scapt to runne away

Those



36

Those that could scape the heauie tables fall,  
Vnto their feete commended their defence,  
Which were (as *Turpin* writes) but seuen in all,  
Which seuen were glad to runne away from thence:  
But yet their flying brought them helpe but small,  
*Orlando* meanes to punish their offence,  
Their feete, nor yet their fence, could them so guard,  
But that he brought them to the hanging ward.

37

Now when the foresaid aged woman saw,  
In how bad sort these trends of hers were serued,  
She was affeard, for well she knew by law,  
That no lesse punishment she had deserued,  
Forthwith from thence she stole away for aw,  
And downe the desert wood she swarued,  
Vntill at last a warrior stout her met,  
But who it was I may not tell as yet.

his  
woman  
of againe in the  
into abos  
he

38

The tender damsell doth *Orlando* pray,  
Her chastitie and honour to protect,  
Who her go with him, and from that day,  
Had to her a fatherly respect:  
Now as they went, a prisoner by the way,  
Whose name I may not now detect:  
Now should I speake of *Bradamant* by right,  
Whom erst I left in such a dolefull plight.

In the 23 booke.  
Staff. 4

in damant.

39

The valorous Lady looking long in vaine,  
When her *Rogeros* would to her returne,  
Lay in *Marfilia* to the Pagans paine,  
Wher vnder day she did them some shrowd turne,  
For some of them in *Prouence* did remaine,  
And *Languedock* where they did spoile and burne,  
Till with her valew she did them rebuke,  
Supplying place of captaine and of duke.

40

Now on a day as she sat still and mused,  
The time of his appointment long expired,  
Doubting lest she by him might be abused,  
Or that her companie he not desired  
And often whom she blamd, she straight excused,  
Thus while with carefull thought her selfe she tired,  
*Melissa* whom she thought not to be neare her,  
Came suddenly of purpose for to cheare her.

41

With pleasant countenance *Melissa* sage,  
Much like to those that carrie welcome newes,  
Wils her, her causelesse sorrow to assuage  
And good *Rogeros* absence doth ex-  
Swearing that she durst lay her life to  
He would no sent be, if he might chule,  
And that he had now in his promise hault,  
Was not by his but by anothers fault.

42

Wherefore (quoth she) get you to horsebacke straight  
If you would set your faithfull louer free,  
And I my selfe intend on you to wait,  
Till you his prison with your eye shall see,  
Whereas *Atlanta*, with a strange deceit  
Detaineth men, of base and hie degree,  
And shoves by strange illusion distrest,  
Each one the partie whom he loueth best.

43

Each one doth deeme he sees in great distresse,  
His loue, his frend, his fellow or his page,  
According as mens reasons more or lesse,  
Are weake or strong such passion to aswage,  
Thus do they follow this their foolish guesse,  
Vntill they come like birds into a cage,  
Searching the pallace with a pensue hart,  
The great desire not suffering them to part.

44

Now then (said she) when you shall once draw nye,  
Where this same Necromancer strange doth dwell,  
He will your coming and the cause descrye,  
And to delude you (marke me what I tell)  
He straight will offer there vnto your eye,  
By helpe of some inhabitants of hell,  
*Rogeros* person, all in wofull plight,  
As though he had beene conquered in fight.

45

And if you follow, thinking him to ayd,  
Then will he stay you as he doth the rest,  
But kill him therefore and be not affraid,  
For so you shall your frend deliuer best,  
So shall your foe *Atlanta* be betrayd,  
In his owne trap when as he looketh left,  
And feare not when he commeth by to strike him,  
Though he your deare resemble, and looke like him.

46

I know full well how hard twill be to trye,  
And how your heart wil faile, and hand wil tremble  
When you shall go about to make one dye,  
That shall *Rogeros* shape so right resemble:  
But in this case you may not trust your eye,  
But all your sprites, and forces all assemble,  
For this assure you, if you let him go,  
You worke your owne and your *Rogeros* wo.

47

The Prouerbe saith, one that is warn'd is armd,  
The which old saw, doth proue by due construction,  
That they, that after warning had are harmd,  
Did ill regard or follow good instruction.  
Now *Bradamant* rides to the place so charmd,  
And vowd that old Magicians destruction,  
And that they may the tedious way beguile,  
They spend the time in pleasant talke the while.

Sentence or Pro-  
uerbe.

48

And oft *Melissa* doth to her repeat  
The names of those that should be her posteritie,  
That should in force, and deeds of armes be great,  
But greater in Religion and sinceritie,  
Atchiuing many a strange and worthy feat,  
And vs both head, and hand, with great dexteritie,  
In ruling iust, and bountifull in giuing,  
*Cesars* in fight, and saints in godly liuing.

49

Now when *Melissa* sage such things did show,  
The noble Lady modestly replide,  
Sith God (quoth she) doth giue you skill to know,  
The things that shall in future times betide,  
And meanes on me (vnworthy) to bestow  
An issue such as few shall haue beside,  
Tell me among so many men of name,  
Shall there no woman be of worthy fame.



50

Yes many a one (saide she) both chaste and wise,  
 Mothers to such as beare imperiall crownes,  
 Pillars and stayes of roiall families,  
 Owners of realmes, of countries and of townes,  
 Out of thy blessed offspring must arise,  
 Such as shalbe eu'n in their sober gownes,  
 For chastitie and modestie as glorious,  
 As shall their husbands be in warre victorious.

51

Nor can I well, or do I now intend,  
 To take vpon me all their names to tell,  
 For then my speech would neuer haue an end,  
 I finde so many that deterue so well,  
 Onely I meane a word or two to spend,  
 Of one or two that do the rest excell:  
 Had you but talkt hereof in *Merlins* caue,  
 You should haue seen the shapes that they shal haue.

For there she  
 saw all the men  
 of that flocke.  
*Booke. 3.*

52

Shall I begin with her whose vertue rare  
 Shall with her husband liue in happie strife,  
 Whether his valiant actions may compare,  
 Or be preferd before her honest life?  
 He fights abroad against king *Charles* at *Tare*,  
 She staid at home a chaste and sober wife:  
*Penelope* in spending chaste her dayes,  
 As worthie as *Plysses* was of praise.

Sentence.

53

Then next dame *Beatrice* the wife sometime  
 Of *Eodwicksforze*, surnamed eke the More;  
 Wife and discreet, and knowne without all crime,  
 Of fortunes gifts and natures hauing store:  
 Her husband liu'd most happie all her time,  
 And in such state as few haue liu'd before:  
 But after fell from being Duke of *Millen*,  
 To be a captiue fetterd like a villen.

54

To passe the famous house I should be sorie,  
 Of *Aragon*, and that most worthie queene,  
 Whose match in neither greeke nor latine storic,  
 Or any writer else hath euer beene:  
 And full to perfite her most worthy glorie,  
 Three worthie children shall of her be seene,  
 Of whom the heauens haue pointed her the mother,  
*Isbell* by name, *Alfonso* and his brother.

He calls her  
 queene because  
 she was a kings  
 daughter.

55

As siluer is to tinne, as gold to brasse,  
 As roses are to flowres and herbs more base,  
 As diamonds and rubyes are to glasse,  
 As cedars are to fallows: in like case  
 Shall famous *Leonora* others passe,  
 In vertue, beautie, modestie and grace:  
 But aboue all, in this she shall excell,  
 In bringing vp her children passing well.

56

For as the vessell euer beares a taft,  
 Of that same iuyce wherwith it first was filled,  
 And as in fruitfull ground the seed growes fast,  
 That first is sowne when as the same is tilled:  
 So looke what lore in youthfull yeares is plait,  
 By that they grow the worse or better willed,  
 When as they come to manly age and stature,  
 Sith education is another nature.

Simile.

Simile.

Sentence.

57

Then next her neece, a faire and famous dame,  
 That hight *Renata* I may not forget,  
 Daughter to *Lews* the xij. king of that name,  
 Whom of the Britten Dutches he did get:  
 Whose vertue great shall merite lasting fame  
 While fier shalbe warme and water wet,  
 While wind shall blow, & earth stand firm & sound,  
 And heau'nly sphears shall run their courses round.

58

I passe all those that passe all these some deale,  
 Whose soules aspiring to an higher praite,  
 Despising pompe and ease, and worldly weale,  
 In sacred rites shall spend their blessed dayes:  
 Whose hearts and holy loue and godly zeale,  
 To heau'nly ioyes, from earthly thoughts  
 That to good workes, to prayre and pure diuinitie,  
 Shall consecrate their liues and their virginities.

59

Thus doth *Melyssa* vnto her discourse,  
 Of those should come hereafter of her seed,  
 And while they talked oft by enterco  
 They in their iourney onward do procees  
 And oftentimes *Melyssa* hath recourse,  
 To will her of *Atlanta* take great heed  
 And least she should with faint and foolish kindnes,  
 Be led vnwares in error and in blindness.

60

Now when they neare approched to the place,  
 Then *Bradament* departed from her guide,  
 And after she had rode a little space,  
 She saw one brought with hands together tide,  
 Exceeding like *Rogero* in the face,  
 In voice, in stature, haire and all beside:  
 Bound fast with chaines betweene two gyants led,  
 That threttend him er long he should be ded.

61

But when the damsell saw within her vew,  
 The lamentable state and hard condicion,  
 Of him whose face she certaine thought she knew,  
 She changeth straight her trust into suspicion,  
 Doubting *Melyssa* of some malice new,  
 Or hidden hate had giu'n her such commission,  
 To make *Rogero* for a greater spite,  
 Be slaine by her in whom he doth delight.

62

Is not this he (thus to her selfe she spake)  
 Whom still mine heart and now mine eies do se  
 If my *Rogero* I can so mistake,  
 I neuer shal haue knowledge which is he:  
 I eith' heame and am not now awake.  
 Or else no doubt it can none other be,  
*Melyssa*? what, may not *Melyssa* ly  
 Shall I belecue her tale, and not mine eye

63

Now while that thus she thought, and thus she said,  
 And in this vnwise doubt did thus perseuer:  
 She thought she heard him speake and aske for aid,  
 Saying (my loue) assist me now or neuer;  
 What shall I in thy sight be so betraid?  
 Doeft thou forsake me? then farewell for euer:  
 These vnkind words her heart so greatly daunted,  
 She followes him into the house inchaunted.

No



64

No sooner was she enterd in the gate,  
But at the common error, her posselt,  
Wandering about the house betimes and late,  
Nor night nor day she taketh any rest;  
The strange enchantment brought her in that state,  
That though she saw the man that lou'd her best,  
And spake with him, and met him eu'rie howe,  
To know the tone the tother had no powre.

65

32. book. 1. 1. 1.

8 But let not now the reader be displeased,  
Although I leaue her in this charmed place,  
I meane er long her trauell shall be eased,  
And she shall see and know Rogeros face.  
Eu'n as the tast with diuers meats is pleased,  
I by this storie in like case,  
The rendly reader shall be lesse annoyed,  
If with one matter long he be not cloyed.

66

With fundrie threds a man had need to weaue,  
To make to large a web as I intend,  
Wherefore all other matters I must leaue,  
Of Agramant a little time to spend:  
Who sorely at the flour deluce did heaue,  
And all his might to mar the same did bend,  
Sending for men to Affricke and to Spaine,  
Those to supply that in the field were slaine.

67

Thus all on war his heart was wholly fixt,  
His new supplies with fundrie captaines led,  
Were come, with men of fundrie nations mixt,  
With whom that no disorder may be bred,  
A day for vews and musters was prefixt,  
That eu'rie one might know his guide and hed,  
Then fell they to their mustering and their vewing,  
As shall be shewd you in the booke ensuing.

*In this tragicall discourse of Isabella (for it is in conclusion an excellent tragedie) young Ladies might take this good Moral. lesson, that though they make choise of most worthie men (as Isabella did) yet if it be without their parents good will, it seldome prospereth but is full of diuers misadventures and hazards, that many times be the cause of their vtter ruine. In that Oder giueth place to his disordinate lust, forgetting all faith and loyalty, we may note the frailtie of young men, and what fit tutors they are for such charmes, who when they haue broken all the bands of faith and honestie, they think in they haue made a sufficient excuse for the matter, if they may lay the fault vpon (sauiing your reuerence) Cupid. In Orlando, that would not be wonne to consent to his friends desire in so foule a matter, we may take good example of faith and loyalty, that must neither for frendship nor kindred yeeld to any dishonorable act. In the execution of the beeuies we may learne, that such an end is fit for men that liue by robberie and spoile, and will take no honest trauell for their liuing, as fit (to vse the old Prouerbe) as a rope is for a theefe,*

*The notable women that are so commended by Melissa in this booke, were of the house of Ferrara, & many of them worthise this exquisite praise that is here giuen them. The first he speakes of is the Duchesse of Mantua, whose husband had a great victorie at Tere a riuer of Italie, against Charles the eight of France. Ariosto therefore compares her chastitie with this vertue according to that excellent wise saying, it is a greater vertue to conquer ones owne affections then to win cities.*

*Beatrice wife to Lodwick Sforze of whom in the three and thirtieth booke there is more said, only here he notes (which was true indeed) that during his wiues life he liued more happy then he did after: for at her death began his miserie*

*Hercules of Este married Alfonso's daughter, of who had Alfonso Hippolito and Isabella.*

*Concerning Renata, Lewis the xij. king of France married the Duchesse of Brittain, and had by her issue this Renata, one of whose offspring was after matched into the house of Austria, so as that Dukedome is in great danger to be gotten by the Spaniards, now that line of France that came of the elder sister is extinguished. But this is beside the booke, onely I thought good to touch the particular stocke of some of these famous women, that my Author so much extolleth: as I haue my selfe read of some of them in Guicciardi and Frances Villosa that wrote the life of Charles the first in Italian: and this I will note withall, that my author doth with great discretion commend three speciall vertues in the women of the house of Este. First deuotion, for he alledgeth that many of them entred into religion, and liued all their time deuoutly, which he praiseth chiefly, though in the last place, saying. I passe all those that passe all these some deall. Next chastitie. Penelope in spending chaft her dayes, as worthie as Vlysses was of praise. Thirdly education of children, as is likewise touched before in another place.*

*The vertues that in women merit praise,  
Are sober shewes without chaste thoughts within.*

*True faith and due obedience to their make,  
And of their children honest care to take.*

*Bradamant, that after Melissas warning came vnto her of Atlantas illusion, yet is caried away with the sight of Allegoric. Rogero falsly represented vnto her: signifi- egorie, that a Christian, hauing receiued ghostly counsell for the health of his soule, and instructed in true belief, et after, when the world and his owne grosse sense represents vnto him some contrarie imaginations, he thinks Melissa (that is, the preacher or instructor) doth but abuse him, and tell him a tale of Robinhood, and so they are caried into the diuels pallace, where they find nothing but shadows and illusions.*

*Where Orlando takes vp a firebrand, and killed one of the outlaws therewith, it alludes to two like matters in Qui. Allusion.*

12. Met.

*Ecce rapit medijs flagrantem Rhetus ab aris,  
Primitium torrem dextraque a parte Charaxi,  
Tempora perfringit.— And in the xij. of Virgil.  
Obuius ambustum torrem Corineus ab ara  
Corripit, & venienti ebuso plagamque ferenti,  
Occupat os flammis. Illi ingens barba reluxit  
Nidoremque ambusta dedit.—*





Re Marsilio



## THE ARGVMENT.

*Agramant mustring of his men, doth misse  
Two bands that by Orlando late were slaine:  
Mandricard voves to be reuengd of this,  
But by the way he haps to entertaine  
Dame Doralice, whose beautie was his blisse.  
An Angell brings Renaldo and his traine  
Inseene, there where the Pagan did encampe,  
And sendeth discord to the Turkish campe.*



**A**mong the fierce assaults,  
and cruell bloes,  
That France hath felt from  
Affrick and from Spaine,  
In which so many men fed  
Wolues and Croes,  
That were on both sides in  
the battell slaine,  
Although the French were  
foiled by their foes,

That long they came not to the field againe,  
Yet was this foile sore to the Pagans cost,  
For diuers Lords and Princes that they lost.

**B**loodie was the victorie they gaue,  
That scunt this ioy did counteruaile that wo,  
And if we may compare things done of late,  
(Renownd *Alfons*) to things done long ago,  
Rauennas fall by fortune or by fate,  
In which your vertue great did flourish so,  
To win the \*field so bloody and so hard,  
With this of theirs may iustly be compar'd.

**F**or when the sould'rs of the Spanish band,  
Whom then the Pope retained in his pay,  
Had almost got the victory in hand,  
The Frenchmen ready now to runne away,  
Thou camst to succor with that noble band  
Of valiant youths, that merited that day  
The honor of the gilded spurre and hilt,  
In recompence of blood so brauely spilt.

**S**o didst thou brue the \*Akorns rich of gold,  
So didst thou breake the yellow staffe and red.

So didst thou then the Flowre de luce vphoid,  
When as the captaine was in batte'l dead,  
For which the Laurell crowne they waite of old,  
By iust desert belongeth to thy head;  
And Ciuill crowne, no lesse in honor precious,  
For sauing vnto Rome her owne *Fabricius*.

**C**olumna nam'd a collum true indeed,  
Vnto the state of Rome and Romane name,  
Whom you by value tooke and sau'd by meed,  
By which more honor true and worthy fame,  
Vnto your selfe you did procure and breed:  
Then in the ouercomming all that came,  
From Aragon, from Castil and Nauar,  
For all their speares and new deuic'd car.

**N**ow though we all our liues and safeties ow,  
To you that this great conquest did atchieue,  
Yet our side did receiue so great a blow,  
As scarce that ioy this sorrow did relieue:  
And that the damies of France most plainly show,  
Whom this to bloudie triumph still doth grieue,  
Witnesse their widdows in their mourning gownes,  
And watry eyes in villages and townes.

**K**ing Lews of France had need in time prepare,  
For captains new to these vnruely bands,  
That wickedly without all feare of core,  
Of lawe of God, of nature, or of lands,  
No fort, nor sex, nor age, nor order spare,  
From force of their vnchast and bloudie hands,  
Christs bodie in the sacrament they tare it,  
To beare away the siluer plate that bare it.

*The laurel by the  
ancient Romans  
was giuen to him  
that had slaine or  
saue about 5000  
in battell.  
Ciuitica corona  
was his that sa-  
ued a citizen of  
Rome.*

*In this battell the  
Spaniards dis-  
cussed to haue been  
placed in carcs,  
but drawing them  
a intent'yon their  
enemies, disfor-  
ced them.*

*Feys was slai  
at this battell.*

*As the 4. booke is  
mentioned how  
Charlaine haue left  
the French at Bur-  
de's son, and at  
some time kept  
the same, and  
dur'd not come to  
settle it.  
This, answers  
Duke of Ferrara  
of who she speaks  
in the 3. booke, bro-  
ther to Hippolyto.  
\* Of this be tell  
lack Guiccardin*

*By the honour of  
gilded spurre and  
hilt, is understood  
knights.  
\* Akorns, a name  
for the nuts, the  
one with a kernel  
of gold.  
\* The King of A-  
ragon's coat was  
yellow and red*



3

Guicciardini sets  
down the orders of the gen-  
erals at the battle  
of Ravenna.

Wretched Rauenna better had it beene,  
That thou the French shouldst not at all resist,  
Thou mightst by Bretcy haue bene warnd I weene,  
Now thou a warning art for such as list,  
To thin like losse by thy mishaps foreseee,  
Not stubbornly in folly to persist;  
So Rimini and Faens were preserued,  
By marking in what sort thou hadst bene serued.

9

As now king *Iews* (I say) had need to send  
New captains to supply their roomes were dead,  
So then the Pagan Princes did intend  
To see their men from sundry countries led,  
And all disorders and defects to mend,  
To point them captains that do lacke a head;  
First then *Murfilio* all his souldiers veweth,  
And *Aggramant* next after him enleuweth.

10

*The States of  
Spain are here  
set down in these  
musters.*

The chiefe of those are of *Marfilios* traine,  
Are first the *Catalins*, men of great land,  
And of the best and noblest blood of Spaine:  
The next that do to them in order stand,  
Are of Nauar, whose King was lately slaine  
At Burdels by *Renaldos* valiant hand,  
*Marfilio* sore laments the forie case,  
And pointeth *Isolir* supply his place.

11

If any be desirous  
to understand  
these names, I  
refer him to the  
Table.

*Bulligant* governeth those of Lion,  
*Grandonius* for th'Algarbys doth provide,  
*Marfilios* brother called *Falsiron*,  
Doth thote of lesser Castile rule and guide:  
Those of Mallaga do attend vpon  
*Madraffo*, so doth Ciuiil all beside,  
There where as Betis water so abounds,  
As all about it makes them fruitfull grounds.

12

*Teffyra, Baricord and Siordilan,*  
Vnto the field do bring their forces in,  
Granado this, Maiorick he hath tane,  
The first to rule in Lisbon doth begin,  
Where *Larbin* late was brought vnto his bane,  
*Teffyra* vnto *Larbin* next of kin,  
Those of *Gallicia Serpentine* doth guide,  
Since valiant *Maricold* in battell dide,

13

Those of Toledo and of Calatraue,  
Whom *Synagon* did leade not long ago,  
Now *Matulsi* their gouernment must haue,  
Because that he was slaine by Christen fo:  
Then *Pisardin* a man in battell braue,  
With all the band of Salamance doth go,  
With many other souldiers of Pagenza,  
Of Auila, Zamorra and Palenza.

I4

**Ferran.**

Those of the court and of *Marfilins* traine,  
With those of *Saragose*, *Ferraw* doth guide,  
The chiefeft flowre, and the chiefe host of Spaine,  
Well armd, well horst, well furnished beside,  
With whom two kings that late had lost their raine,  
*Morgant* and *Malsatise* did there abide,  
And in the state of priuate men remained,  
And were by him most friendly entertained.

51

The name of many a Duke, and Lord and Knight,  
For breuitie I purpose to omit,  
Such as were stout and hardie men in fight,  
Such as were wise and polittike in wit,  
With th' Earle of Sagunt Archibant that hight,  
*Iangiran, Ammirant and Mulagut :*  
There was great *Iullirou, Marfillos* bastard,  
That in that fight did shew himselfe no dastard.

16

After the Spanish hoast was viewd and past,  
Before king *Agramant*, the next that came,  
Was one that all the rest in stature past,  
The gouernor and king of great Orane,  
Then came a band, whose leader small time past,  
At Burdels field was brought vnto his bane,  
Lamenting that the king of Garamant  
Was conquerd by the Ladie *Bradamante*

*Agrammatis*  
 stor for sig.  
 Note that this  
 word past. is  
 used in three  
 primary senses,  
 as *nause* in the  
*Apologie*.

17

Then came the third, and that a headlesse crew,  
Whose capitaine *Arguff* was in battell slain,  
To this the second and the fourth, a new  
King *Agramant* doth leaders fresh ordaine.  
But few there were that for these roomes did sew,  
So few sufficient men there did remaine;  
*Euraldo* and *Argonio* for the best,  
And *Ormuda* he chose among the rest.

18

Then came *Brunello* with a chearlesse face,  
And looke for shame still fixed on the ground,  
For late he fell in *Agramants* disgrace,  
Who doubted that his faith had not bene found,  
Ere since he went vnto th'enchanted pl.  
Where to a tree dame *Eradamant* him bound,  
Because he lost his ring, whose losse so greued him,  
That though he told him true, he not beleued him.

**Brunello.**

Of the  
in the beginning  
of the world

8

But *Iſolir* the brother of *Ferraw*,  
That was the fiſt that found him and vntide him,  
Anought to *Agramant* the thing he ſaw,  
How there by force ſome enemy had tide him,  
So as the King his anger did withdraw,  
Although he neuer after well could bide him,  
But ſwore the next offence that he committed,  
An halter ſhould vnto his necke be fitted.

20

With those of *Esperie* came *Soridano*,  
And *Doridon* did come with those of *Set*,  
With those of *Natomanie* *Prufiano*,  
King *Agricola* *Amoros* charge did get,  
*Malabus* came with them of *Filano*,  
The rest doth *Finadure* in order set,  
*Ballastro* those that followd erst *Cardosce*,  
Those of *Canaria* and of *Morocco*

21

From Mulga and Arfilla others came,  
The first their former captain's bell doth hold,  
Vnto the next the King a new doth name,  
One *Corincus* a true man and bold,  
Then *Balmesse* a noble eull fame.  
*Clarindo* next of whom great deeds are told,  
*Sobrimo* next a man of e' der age,  
In all the campe was none more wise and sage.

Sabrina

Those



22

Those of Getulia came with *Rimedont*,  
 With *Maribaldo* those of *Bolga* went,  
 And those of *Colca* came with *Balnifront*,  
 Their former Lord his life in battell spent:  
 Then came the king of *Algier* \**Rodomont*,  
 That lately into *Turkie* had bene sent,  
 To bring some new supplies of horse and men,  
 And backe againe was new returnd as then.

\**Rodomont* a  
 notable *Turke*, of  
 whom much en-  
 sueth in the book.  
 He was king of  
*Algier*, & a val-  
 iant *Al-*  
*gier*, or a *Sar-*  
*an* king.

23

In all the campe was not a man more stout,  
 In all the campe was not a man more strong,  
 Nor one of whom the French stood more in doubt,  
 Was there the *Turkish* armie all among,  
 In *Agramants* nor in *Marfilios* rout,  
 Nor all the followers did to them belong.  
 Betwixt he was (which made them dread him chiefe)  
 The greatest enemy to our beliefe.

24

Then *Puliano* came, a gallant king,  
 And *Agramantes* cousin *Dardanell*,  
 Whether some Owle did at their window sing,  
 Or other lucklesse bird I cannot tell,  
 As oft we see it is an usuall thing,  
 That some presage ones mischief shall fortell;  
 But iure was prefixt in heau'n on him,  
 What time and hour next day they both should die.

25

Now all their bands were musterd sauing two,  
 Those of *Noritia* and of *Tremisen*,  
 King *Agramant* doth maruell what they do,  
 He knowes not where to heare of them nor when:  
 Now as he was dispatching hencunto  
 Some messenger, behold one of the men,  
 That seru'd the king of *Tremisen*, in hast  
 Came and discoverd all that had bene past.

26

Sir king (quoth he) by fortune and ill chance,  
 The noble kings *Alfred* and *Manilard*,  
 Happend to meet a cruell knight of France,  
 While with their bands they traueled hitherward,  
 He ouerthrew them both, (oh hard mischance)  
 And kild, and spoild, and draue away their guard,  
 And iure (quoth he) I thinke his force is such,  
 To all your campe he would haue done as much.

anso 12.  
 latter end.

27

Among the rest that to this tale gaue eare,  
 There was a Prince that late from *Affricke* came,  
 To whom king *Agramant* great loue did beare,  
 And *Mandricardo* was the Princes name,  
 His heart was stout, and far from any feare,  
 His bodi strong and able to the same,  
 And that which greatest glorie did him yeeld,  
 He had in *Sorie* conquerd *Hectors* sheeld.

*Mandricard.*

28

Now that the messenger his tale had done,  
 Which made the hearers hearts for sorrow cold,  
 This valiant Prince king *Agricanes* sonne,  
 Straight was resolu'd (with heart and courage bold,  
 That to win praise no paine did euer shonne,  
 Although his purpose secret he de did hold,  
 To be reuenged on this bloodie knight,  
 That had so manie slaine and put to flight.

29

He askt the messenger what cloths he ware,  
 And in what collour'd garments he was clad?  
 Blacke (quoth the messenger) his rayments are,  
 No plume nor brauerie his helmet had:  
 And true it was, *Orlandos* inward care,  
 That made his heart so sorrowfull and sad,  
 Causd that his armour and his open shoes,  
 Had like resemblance of his inward woes.

30

*Marfilio* had before a day or twaine,  
 Giu'n vnto *Mandricard* a gallant steed,  
 His colour bay, but blacke his taile and maine,  
 Of *Frizland* was the dame that did him breed,  
 The Sier was a villan braue of Spaine: (speed,  
 On this braue beast this braue man mounts with  
 Swearing he will not to the campe turne backe,  
 Till he had found the champion all in blacke.

Looke heretof in  
 the Allusion.

A race of horses  
 in Spaine, called  
 villan di Spagne  
 inferior to the  
 Gines.

31

He meetes the fillie people in the way,  
 Halting, or maymd, or weeping for their frends,  
 Their woofull lookes, their fearfull hearts bewray,  
 (Weeping in such a losse but small amends)  
 But when he came where the dead bodies lay,  
 In vewing of their wounds some time he spends,  
 As witnesses of his strong hand that gaue them,  
 Him he enuies, and pities them that haue them.

32

Eu'n as a Wolfe, by pinching famine led,  
 That in the field a carren beast doth find,  
 On which before the dogs and rau'ns haue fed,  
 And nothing left but hornes and bones behind,  
 Stands still, and gazeth on the carkasse dead:  
 So at this sight the Pagan Prince repind,  
 And curseth oft, and calls himselfe a beast,  
 For comming tardie to so rich a feast.

Simile.

33

But when the mourning knight not here he found,  
 From thence he traueled many a wearie mile,  
 Vntill he found a meadow compast round,  
 With running streames that almost made an Ile;  
 Saue one small entrance left of solid ground,  
 Which guarded was with armed men that while,  
 Of whom the Pagan asketh why they stand,  
 To guard the place with weapons in their hand.

34

Their captaine viewing well his braue attire,  
 Doth thinke he was a man of great regard,  
 And said king *Stordilano* did then hire,  
 Into these parts his daughter deare to guard,  
 Espou'd to king of *Sarza* by her Sire,  
 Who shortly for the marriage prepar'd:  
 And here (quoth he) we do this passage keepe,  
 That none may trouble her while she doth sleepe.

*Dorahye.*

35

To morrow to the campe we minde to go,  
 Where she vnto her father shall be brought,  
 Who meanes on *Rodomont* her to bestow,  
 By whom this noble match is greatly sought  
 Now when the captaine had him answerd so,  
 This Prince that setteth all the world at nought,  
 Why then (quoth he) this maid belike is faire,  
 I pray thee caue her hither to repaire.



36

My hast is great, but were it greater far,  
Yet would I stay to see a prettie maid:  
Alas you misse your marke, your aime doth arr,  
(Gentle sir foole) to him the captaine said:  
Thus first they gan with bitter words to iar,  
And then from blowes but little time they staid,  
For straight the Prince did set his speare in rest,  
And smot therewith the captaine through the brest.

37

And straightwayes he recouered his speare,  
And at the next that came therewith doth runne,  
For why none other weapon he did weare,  
Since he the Troian *Hectors* armor wonne,  
At what time he most solemnly did sweare,  
To win the sword worne by *Traianos* sonne,  
Cald *Durindan*, a blade of temper rare,  
That *Hector* erst, and now *Orlando* bare.

38

Great was the force of this Tartarian knight,  
That with his speare and weapon none beside,  
Durst with so many ioyned together fight:  
Yet sets he spurs to horse, and stoutly cride,  
Where is a man that dare withstand my might,  
Who dares forbid me where I list to ride?  
And with that speare himselfe he so besturd,  
That small preuaile against him bill or sword.

39

But when his speare in peeces burst he saw,  
The trunchen huge he takes in both his hands,  
His blowes were such, not blood but life to draw,  
All dead or fled, not one his force withstands:  
As *Ebrew Samson* with the *Asses* iaw,  
Did heape on heaps the proud *Philisten* bands,  
So *Mandricard* smote oft with so great force,  
As one stroke kild both horfman and his horse.

Simile.

40

Now though they tooke this thing in high disdain,  
To be thus conquerd with a broken sticke,  
Yet when they learned had vnto their paine,  
It was in vaine against the wall to kicke,  
Though vnreuenged lie their fellowes flaine,  
They leaue the dead, rather then loose the quick:  
But he so eager was to kill and slay,  
That scant he sufferd one to scape away.

41

And as the reeds in marishes and lakes,  
Dride with the sunne, or stubble in the field,  
When as by hap the fire among it takes,  
May not it telfe, against that furie sheeld;  
Eu'n so this crew, but small resistance makes,  
And eu'n of force is driu'n at last to yeeld,  
And leaue her vndefended to their shame,  
For whose defence they from *Granata* came.

Simile.  
*Ouid. Vag. leues  
Bipula dempsis  
adolemsur arsit.*

42

Now when the passage open did appeare,  
He hastens in the Ladie faire to see,  
Whom he doth finde in sad and mourning cheare,  
And leaning of her head against a tree,  
All downe her cheekes ran streames of cristall cleare  
She makes such mone as greater could not be,  
And in her countenance was plainly showne,  
Great griefe for others harmes, feare of her owne.

43

Her feare increast when as he nearer drew,  
With visage sterne and all with blood distained,  
The cries were great of her and of her crew,  
That to their gods of their ill haps complained,  
For why, beside the guard whom late he slew,  
She had, that priuatly with her remained,  
Laund'ers and nurses, playfellowes and teachers,  
With leard Philitions, and heathnish Preachers.

44

Now when the Pagan Prince saw that faire face,  
Whose fairer was not to be found in Spaine,  
He thinks if weeping giue her such a grace,  
What will she proue when she shall smile againe?  
He deemeth *Paradise* not like this place,  
And of his victorie he seekes this gaine,  
To haue his prisoner suffer him to wooe her,  
And yeeld himselfe a prisoner vnto her.

45

Howbe't he maketh her against her minde,  
Vpon her ambling nagge with him to ride,  
Her masters, maides, and seruants left behind,  
And promised them he will for her prou  
He will be frutor, and nurse, and hind,  
And playfellow, and gouernor, and guide,  
Adew my friends (quoth he) I you enl  
For of your Miltres I will take the charge.

46

The wofull folke all mourning part away,  
With scalding sighes, cold hearts and watric eyes,  
And one vnto another thus they say,  
How deepe reuenge will her stout ipouse deuise,  
How will he rage to leese to faire a pray  
Oh that he had bene at this enterprite,  
No doubt but he wold quickly wreak this slaughter  
And bring againe king *Stordilanos* daughter.

47

Of this faire pray the Prince was well apaid,  
Which fortune gate him ioyned to his might,  
And now it seemd his hast was well alaid,  
That late he made to meete the mourning knight,  
Before her he in post, but now he staid,  
Bethinking where to rest himselfe that night,  
To finde a place was now his whole desire,  
Where he might quench his lately kindled fire.

48

And first to comfort and assuage the paine,  
Of *Ladie Doralyce* (so was her name)  
He frames a tale and most thereof doth faine,  
And sweares that he allured by her fame,  
Had purposely forfooke his home and raigne,  
And for her loue into these quarters came,  
Not that he ought to France and Spaine that dutie,  
But onely to the beames of her rare beutie.

*Mandricara  
wast Doralyce*

49

If loue deserueth loue (quoth he) then I,  
Deserue your liking that haue lou'd you long,  
If stocke you do esteeme, my stocke is hie,  
Sith I am sonne to *Agrican* the strong,  
If state may stand in steed, who can denie,  
To God alone our homage doth belong:  
If valew in your choise be of behoofe,  
I thinke this day thereof I haue shoud proofe.

These



50

These words and such as loue had then him taught,  
Who lent him eloquence to serue his turne,  
So sweetly in her tender fancie wrought,  
That in a little while she ceast to mourne,  
And first her feare aswag'd, and then her thought,  
A pleasing looke doth to her eye returne,  
By which the Prince (in loue no nouice) guest,  
That she ere long would grant him his request.

51

Now doth the night approach, and *Phœbus* face  
In Ocean sea begins it selfe to hide,  
The which did cause them somewhat mend their pace  
And on their way with greater speed to ride:  
And now they traueled had but little space,  
When first a smoke and then a light they spide,  
Thence where they where they heard the bandogs bark  
When as the aire was now obscure and dark.

52

A few poore cotages where heardmen dwen,  
They find, and there together they allight,  
The houses poore, but such as very well  
Might fitt them to repose them for a night,  
Their fare was meane, fit hunger to expell,  
To which the heardmen friendly ther invite,  
A oft times in simple bowres  
Is found as great as in the stately towres.

53

After supper what did passe betweene  
Damsell *Oralyce* and *Agricane's* haire,  
May not be told, because it was not seene,  
But they may guesse, that haue with Ladies faire  
By night alone in place conuenient beene,  
Where to disturbe them no man did reaire,  
I doubt he did not so his passion bridle,  
To let so faire a dame lie by him idle.

54

But sure I am when day light did appeare,  
They both arose well pleased and well content,  
And thank't the heardmen for their friendly cheare,  
And so from thence they both together went,  
Vntill they came vnto a riuer cleare,  
Before the forenoone of the day was spent,  
And riding downe along the riuer side,  
Two horsemen with a damsell they espide.

55

But let them go, for why my high conceat  
Forbiddeth me long in one path to tread,  
And calls me back of *Agramant* to treat,  
Who being newly troubled in his head,  
To heare there were from England succors great,  
Vnder the conduct of *Renaldo* led,  
To counsell cald the Princes sage and wise,  
Some remedie for mischiefes to deuile.

56

They all conclude the next ensuing day,  
With scaling ladders on the wals to mount,  
Lest dangers new be bred by long delay,  
And succors fresh hinder their first account:  
Thus *Agramant*, thus doth *Marsilio* say,  
*Sobrino* sage, and cruell *Rodolmont*,  
Who to destroy Paris alone doth threate,  
And to pull downe the sacred Romane seate.

57

And to this end they straight prouide in hast,  
Innumerable ladders apt to scale,  
With timber towres vpon great wheelles so plast,  
As that they may approach the citie wall,  
From whence they may broade bridges safely cast,  
And passe without all reopardie to fall,  
And throw their balls compact of firy matter,  
Then haue they rams, the walls to bruse and batter.

58

But *Charles*, the day that went before that day,  
The *Painims* meant to do their worst and best,  
Did cause the Priests and Friers masse to say,  
Did cause the people all to be coniest,  
And humbly prostrate vnto God to pray,  
To saue and pittie them that were oppress't,  
And then they all recei'd in Christen vnion,  
The blessed sacrament, that high communion.

59

Himselfe with Lords and Barons of great fame,  
(An humble teare of blood in him so wrought)  
In person publicly performes the same,  
And by example others duties taught,  
And calling on our Sauours blessed name,  
O Lord (said he) though I my selfe be nought,  
I let not my sinne, my wickednetle and ill,  
Moue thee thy faithfull peoples blood to spill.

60

And if it be thy sacred will (O God)  
To punish vs for our so great transgression,  
And make vs feeble thy hand and heauy rod,  
At least defer this plague and iust oppression,  
That by thy toes we be not ouertrod,  
We that of thy true faith do make profession,  
Lest they blaspheme thy name (we ouerthrowne)  
And say thou couldest not defend thine owne.

61

So shall our fall make them thy law despise,  
So shall their wicked number still increate,  
So shall the powre of Babylon arise,  
So shall thy sacraments and Gospell cease,  
Looke on this people Lord with gracious eyes,  
Turne foiles and warres to victories and peace,  
That when these dogs and runnegates be daunted,  
Thy tombe and temple may be dayly haunted.

62

Alas our merits are of none effect,  
To pay a portion of our grievous debt,  
Except thy grace our weaknesse to protect,  
That our misdeeds out of thy sight be set,  
Lord heale our soules with grievous vice infect,  
Forgiue our faults, our errors all forget,  
And though our sinnes the bands in number passe,  
Yet let thy mercies greatnesse them surpasse.

63

Thus praid the Prince most sorrowfull and sad,  
With humblenesse of heart and great contrition,  
And to this prayre he then a vow doth ad,  
Well futing to his state and high condition.  
Nor small effect these voves and prayers had,  
For presently without all intermission,  
His Angell good vp to our Samour mounted,  
And there his voves and prayers all recounted.

K

gil. v. am  
summa proda  
i. l. am cul-  
na i. m. am.

ch. m. m.

Th. m. m. in  
the m. m.  
she 55 f. m.

Agramant.

The example of  
the Prince doth  
much with the  
people.  
Charles his prayer



64

And thousand pray'rs alike at that same time,  
By messengers alike to God were brought,  
When to the goodnesse, and the powre diuine,  
That neuer shall, nor neuer vaine was sought,  
His gracious care doth to their prayre incline,  
Thote who he made, and who he deare had bought.  
Then to the Angell *Michael* straight he beckned,  
Who not a little of his calling reckned.

65

And thus he said, go thither straight in post,  
Where now in Picardie the Christens land,  
And so to Paris guide that English host,  
Let not their foes their comming vnderstand,  
In this attempt shall Silence helpe you most,  
Will him this enterprife to take in hand,  
This done then see you find dame *Discord* out,  
And will her haile vnto the Pagan rout.

66

And charge her there according to her skill,  
Among the best to sow such roule diffension,  
That they may one the other wound and kill,  
And fill their camp with brauls and with contention:  
Let some men like their entertainmēt ill,  
And grudge becaule they haue no bigger pension,  
And let them all to vary out of measure,  
That they may do their Pince but litle pleasure.

67

The blessed Angell not a word replies,  
But doth his makers holy will obey,  
Forthwith euen in a moment downe he flies,  
And where he goe, the clouds do fleet away:  
But by the way he thinks and doth deuise,  
Of eu'ry place where Silence find he may,  
Though he an Angell were he could not tell,  
Where this same enemy of speech doth dwell.

68

At last he fully doth himselfe periwade,  
To find him in some houses of deuotion,  
That first for his monastical were named,  
Where godly men, despisers of promotion,  
Dwell farre from all this worldly wicked trade,  
With minds abhorring flesh and fleshy action,  
Where idle words should counted be a thame,  
And where on eu'ry wall they write his name.

69

Wherefore into an Abbey he doth go,  
And makes no question Silence there to find,  
And Peace and Charitie, and loue also,  
And lowly thoughts, and well contented mind:  
But soone he was aware it was not so,  
All contrary their humors were inclined,  
For Silence in that Abbey doth not host,  
His name was onely writ vpon a post.

70

Nor Quietnesse, nor Humblenesse, nor Peace,  
Nor Charitie, nor godly loue was here,  
They were somtimes, but now those times do cease,  
Now Couetise, and Eale, and Belly cheare,  
Pride, Enue, and Louth, and Anger to increase,  
That Silence banisht is and comes not neare.  
With wonder great the Angell them doth vew,  
And findeth *Discord* in this curled crew.

*This reproofe is  
soo true in most of  
them, & hath bin  
sharply punished  
in our Reigne.*

71

Her whom the heau'nly King did will him find,  
Next after Silence, her he findeth first,  
To seeke her out in hell he had assignd,  
Among the spirits damned and accurst,  
It fore did grieue his pure vnspotted mind,  
Where he expected best, to find them worst,  
It seemd to him a thing vncomth and strange,  
In sacred place to find so great a change.

72

He knew her by her weed of sundry hew,  
All patcht with infinite vnequall lists,  
Her skin in sundry places naked vew  
At diuers rents and cuts, he may that lists:  
Her haire was gray, and red, and bla. ke and blew,  
And hard, and soft, in laces some she twists  
Some hangeth downe, vpright some standeth staring  
As if each haire with other had bene squaring.

73

Her lap was full of writs and of citations,  
Of processe, of actions and arrests,  
Of bills, of answers, and of replications,  
In courts of Delegates, and of Requests,  
To grieue the simple sort with great vexations:  
She had resorting to her as her guests,  
Attending on her circuits and her tour,  
Seruicers and clarks and lawyers and attorneys.

74

The Angell calleth her, and bid her go,  
Vnto the Turks as fast as she can lie,  
Among their kings such seeds of strife to sow,  
As one of them may caule the tother die.  
Then he demaundeth her if she do know  
Within what place Silence doth vse to lie,  
He thought that she that travel'd much about,  
In stirring strife might hap to find him out.

75

I cannot call to mind (quoth she) as yet,  
That I haue talkt with Silence any time,  
I heare them talke of him, and praise his wit,  
And secretnesse to couer any crime;  
But my companion *Fraud* can serue you fit,  
For she hath kept him companie sometime,  
And which was *Fraud* she pointeth with her finger,  
Then hence she hies and doth no longer linger.

76

*Fraud* shewd in comely clothes a louely looke,  
An humble cast of eye, a sober pace,  
And so sweet speech, a man might her haue tooke,  
For him that findeth hile *Marie* full of grace,  
For all the yett deform'd he did looke,  
For all the fish in the sea, and foule disgrace  
And vnder long large garments that she ware,  
Close vnder which a poisoned knife she bare.

77

The Angell asked her if she do know  
The place where Silence makes his habitation,  
Forsooth (quoth *Fraud*) he dwelled long ago  
With the wise sages of the Greckish nation,  
*Archyras* and *Pythagoras* (I trow)  
That chiete to vertue had their inclination,  
And after ward he spent these latter yeers  
With *Carmelit* and with *Saint Bennet* friers.

*Discord*

*Discords appoynt  
and description.  
Virgil. Es jussa  
garden. vadit  
disc. dicitur.*

*Fraud.*

*Description of  
Fraud.*

Bac



78

But since these old Philosophers did faile,  
And these new saints their saintlike life did change,  
He sought new places for his most auail,  
And secret and vncertaine he doth range:  
Sometime with theeuers that true men do assaile,  
Sometime with louers that delight in change,  
Sometime with traitors he doth bide, and furdere,  
I saw him late with one that did a murder.

79

With clippers and with coynerers he doth stay,  
Sometime in secret dens and caues obscure,  
And oft he changeth places day by day,  
For long he cannot in a place endure.  
But I can tell you one most ready way,  
Where you to find him out shall be most sure,  
Go where as Sleepe doth dwell, and out of doubt,  
At midnight you shall find him thereabout.

80

Though Fraud by custome vse to lie and faine,  
Yet was this tale so euidently trewe,  
The Angell now no longer doth remaine,  
But with his golden wings away he flew  
To Arabie, where in a country plaine,  
Far from all villages and cities vew,  
There lieth a vale with woods so ouergrowne,  
As scarce at noone the day light there is showne.

81

*The house of  
sleepe.*

Amid this darke thicke wood, there is a caue,  
Whose entrance is with luie ouerspread,  
Whereby there is no light within, nor none they craue,  
Here Sleepe doth couch his euer drowfie head,  
And Slouth lies by, that seems the gout to haue,  
And Idlenesse, not so well taught as fed,  
They point Forgetfulness the gate to keepe,  
That none come in nor out to hinder Sleepe.

*Idlenesse.**Forgetfulness.*

82

She knowes no names of men, nor none will learne,  
Their messages she list not vnderstand,  
She knowes no businesse doth her concerne,  
There sentinell is Silence to this band,  
And vnto those he comming doth discerne,  
To come no neare he beckens with his hand,  
He treadeth soft, his shoes are made of felt,  
His garment short, and girded with a belt.

*Silence.*

83

To him the Angell go'th, and in his care  
He tels him thus, Iehouah bids you guide  
Renaldo, with the succors he doth beare,  
To Paris walls, so as they be not spide,  
Nor let the Pagans once suspect or feare  
Their comming, nor for it at all prouide,  
And let them heare no incling of these foes,  
Vntill they find their force and feele their bloes.

84

No answer Silence made, but with his head  
He made a signe, as who should say he would,  
And with the Angell straight himselfe he sped,  
In greater hast then can be thought or told,  
To Picardie, from whence the Angell led,  
That present day the bands of souldiers bold,  
To Paris walls, an hundred miles asunder,  
Yet no man was aware it was a wonder.

85

And Silence still surueyeth all the rout,  
Before, beside, behind, with great regard,  
And with a cloud doth compasse them about,  
No man of them was seene, no noise was heard,  
Then walketh he among the Pagans scout,  
And vnto them that kept their watch and ward,  
And brought them somewhat (what I do not find)  
That made them for the time both deafe and blind.

86

Now while Renaldo came with so great hast,  
As well it seemd an Angell did him guide,  
And as he went, with so great silence past,  
As by his foes his comming was not spide:  
King Agramant had now his footmen plait  
By Paris walls, fast by the ditches side,  
He meanes the citie to assaile that day,  
On eu'ry side by all the meanes he may.

*He returns so  
Renaldo in the  
16 Cant. 24. last.*

87

He that would take vpon him to declare,  
Of Agramantas host the certaine number,  
That to destroy this Citie did prepare,  
Shall seeme himselfe as frutelesly to cumber,  
As if he told what flowres in Hyble are,  
What fish in sea, what water drops in Humber,  
What starres in skie at midnight when it couers,  
The vnchast acts of close and secret louers.

88

The larum bell in eu'ry place doth ring,  
About the towne with strange disorderd sound,  
In Churches Mattens they do say and sing,  
Some kneeling down, some groueling in y ground,  
If gold were vnto God so gratefull thing,  
As fond men think, no doubt there would be found,  
Enough in this extremitie, that would  
Make all the taints new images of gold.

89

There might you see godly old men and iust,  
Lamenting that their liues so long did last,  
And call them happie that were laid in dust,  
And buried many yeares and ages past;  
But gallant youths, deuoid of all mistrust,  
Not with these perils any whit agast,  
Whom enemies nor engines none appalls,  
Go to defend right manfully the walls.

*Virgil. Oserque  
quaterque beas.*

90

Bold Barons, Earles and Dukes of great degree,  
With souldiers, forreiners, and of the towne,  
Did come to Charles, and praid him to agree,  
To let them out, and let the drawbridge downe:  
Glad was king Charles their forward minds to see;  
To fight for Christs religion and his crowne,  
But yet as then he doth not thinke it best,  
In this one point to grant them their request:

91

He rather thinks it better them to place,  
The forces of the fierce assault to breake,  
With distant bands a great or little space,  
According as the wall was strong or weake:  
Himselfe with chearfull vigor in his face,  
Vnto them all most curteously doth speake,  
These he doth comfort, them he doth encourage,  
And fill the stout with hope, the faint with courage.

K ij



The situation of  
Paris.

92  
Faure Paris lieth in a pleasant plaine,  
Eu'n in the nauell, rather in the hart  
Of France, the riuer cuts the same in twaine,  
And makes an Iland of the better part,  
The rest that doth in greatnesse more containe,  
A ditch and wall doth from the plaine depart,  
King *Agramant* assaults the Westerne side,  
As hauing Westward gotten all beside.

93  
*Marsilio* with the warlike bands of Spaine,  
He points to keepe the field in armed ranks,  
*Sobriuo* sage and those with him remaine,  
Are placed vpon Sequans fruitfull banks.  
Himselfe with an innumerable traine,  
With ladders, bridges, fagots, barres and planks,  
Doth thinke to fill the ditch and make it leuell,  
And at the walles do keepe vnruely reuell.

94  
What should I speake of *Rodomont* most fell,  
Blaspheming God, not onely scorning men,  
That knew to vse a glittering blade so well,  
As I so well know not to vse my pen:  
His deeds alone would aske a day to tell,  
That in few houres he did performe as then:  
As for the rest they came like swarmes of flies,  
And filld the aire with shouts and hideous cries.

A description of  
the assault of a  
towne well de-  
fended.

95  
And they no lesse provided are within,  
With rampers, bulwarks, and with double dikes,  
And where their foes to climbe do once begin,  
They push them down with bills, with staues & pikes;  
If one be kild, another steppeth in,  
No man his place for feare of hurt mislikes, (water,  
Some throw down bricks, some stones, some scalding  
And grieue them much with all, most with the later.

96  
Some throw among them newly slacked lime,  
That burneth most when most it seems to quench,  
With pots of brimstone, pitch and turpentine,  
Annoying them with heate, and smoke, and stench,  
The rest are still employd, and leese no time,  
With wreathed stakes to fortifie the trench:  
Thus all within were busie, all without,  
On both sides fortune standing still in doubt.

*Rodomonts de-  
feat.*

97  
The while the king of Sarza brought about  
His owne and men of diuers other lands,  
Himselfe to shew his might and courage stout,  
That made him counted valiant of his hands,  
From *Cupids* campe was not excluded out,  
But rather soly subiect to such bands,  
A Lion geuls he giues in loftie banner,  
A Ladie bridling him in lowly manner.

98  
So by the beast he meant his owne fierce mind,  
And by the dame his mistris faire was ment,  
The bridle was to shew how loue could bind  
His loftie heart, and bow it to her bent.  
He little knew, that shewd himselfe so kind,  
How of his purchase others tooke the rent:  
He knew not *Mandricard* did pleade possession,  
Of her to whom he makes this kind profession.

99  
Straight to the wals are thousand ladders plast,  
With double ranks that two may climbe at once,  
And vp the souldiers get on them in haft,  
One shoulders vp another for the nonce:  
He that goes slow, and he that climbs too fast,  
Are each in perill of a broken sconce.  
Their enemies assailing still the bier,  
Their captains those that linger or retier.

100  
Thus eu'ry one do clammer vp the wall,  
For value some, and other some for feare,  
And some are slaine, and some are made to fall,  
Repenting late that euer they came there:  
Fierce *Rodomont* alone (contemning all)  
No paine, no place for perill doth forbear,  
But rusheth on, more despratly then sto  
Blaspheming God while others pray deuoutly.

101  
A paire of curats passing hard he ware,  
Made of an vgly Dragons scaly skin,  
This armour his great auncestor first bare,  
He that to build Babel did first begin.  
(A towre whose height shold with the clouds copare)  
And thought from God the rule of heau'n to win:  
And to the same effect likewise he ma  
Of passing prooffe an helmet, shield and blade.

102  
Thus *Rodomont* that came of *Nimrods* kind,  
As proud and irreligious as was he,  
Regardeth not a passage safe to find,  
Or where the wall might weakest guarded be,  
But with a heart to mischief all inclind.  
Where he the same defended best doth see,  
(Protected with his shield) he makes no bones,  
To go through fire and water, darts and stones.

103  
When once vpon the battlement he was,  
Where all the wall was broade and largely paued,  
How did he slay the Christens then alas,  
How fierce he vnto them himselfe behaued?  
His blade doth pierce their plates of Steele and bras,  
Al were not priests whose crowns that day were sha-  
He kild alone so many as their blood  
Did cause the ditch to fill with crimson flood.

104  
Beside the baser sort, these men of name,  
At this same first conflict by him were slaine,  
*Orgetto* Duke, that late from Flanders came,  
*Arnold* and *Hugo*, two of *Charles* his traine,  
And *Lew* that gouerned Prouence with great fame,  
*Walter* and *Denis*, *Hawnce* of Satallaine  
Some were thrust through, some had (past all releefe)  
Their helmets and their heads clou'n to the teeth.

105  
And some by force from off the wall he cast,  
Among the which was one *Moschino* hight,  
That by his will would neuer water tast,  
But still in wine did put his whole delight:  
But so his lucke was to be drown'd at last,  
Within this dirtie dish for further spite,  
And he that neuer water cou'd abide  
In all his life, now here in water did.

Have, is parue  
in scala,



106

Thus while that Rodomont did kill and slay,  
All that he found vpon the vtmost wall,  
His band of men the while had found the way,  
To passe the ditch and to the wall to scale.  
But now within another dike there lay,  
The sight whereof their courage did appall,  
For why the Christens sent such store of shot,  
As this lame place did seeme to them too hot.

107

The dike was drie, the bottome eu'n and plaine,  
Both sides were steep, but steepest next the towne,  
At this the souldiers curtesie do straine,  
Which of them first shall venter to go downe,  
Within the citizens had made a traine,  
With labour great and cost of many a crowne,  
That w<sup>th</sup> the ditch with armed men was filled,  
With heat and smother they should all be killed.

108

It cubits had in bredth thrise ten and more,  
And in the bottome there were closely plast,  
Barrels of pitch, brimstone, and oyle good store,  
All matter quicke to kindle, long to last.  
The capitaine led them all the way before,  
And thousand souldiers followd them a last,  
But Rodomont as though he had had wings,  
Quite ore the dike like to a grewnd he springs.

A stratagem  
used  
practised  
gunpowder.

109

And being placed on the inner side,  
Armed and vnarmed men to him are like,  
No Steele there was his forces could abide,  
Death followth eu'rie blow that he doth strike:  
Which when a while to their great cost they tride,  
They do of force abandon quite the dike,  
He follows slaying without all remorte,  
So sharpe his sword, so furious is his force.

110

But when the souldiers thought the banke to mount,  
With scaling ladders, as they did the wall,  
They found themselues deceiu'd of their account,  
For straight the fier works were kindled all,  
Whose sudden flames the clouds thetelues surmount  
Which sight the Pagans greatly did appall;  
And to increase their terror and their wonder,  
It made a noise like to continuall thunder.

111

The Christens do reioyce at this reliefe,  
To see their practise had succeeded well:  
The Pagans plagu'd, with heat, and smother chiefe,  
In great dispaire do rore alowd and yell:  
Thus twixt the noise of fier and cries of grieffe,  
They make an harmonie most meete for hell.  
And here I meane to leaue them in the fire,  
For to repose my selfe I now desire.

In Mandricardo that after his great exploits atchieued in other countries, is still ready to hazard his person for more **Moral.**  
honour may be obserued, that ambition is as vn-satiable as any other humour of man. In his wooing of Doralice, we may see  
s men many times, not onely valiant, but eloquent. In the assaulting and defending of Paris, is set downe  
what sundry accidents happen when such populous cities come to so great extremitie. In Charles that first makes his prai-  
ers to God, and after makes all prouident preparation for defence of the towne, we see a lively patterne of an excellent  
and worthy Prince, both for deuotion and policie.

Concerning the historie, I haue quoted many things in the margent, as the straightnesse of roome would permit, that the **Historie.**  
simplest reader may vnderstand what is meant by the fourth staffe: here onely I will ad a word of Rauenna, referring  
the reader that is desirous to be better informed hereof, to Guicciardin, who sets it downe at large. Rauenna was besie-  
ged by the French vnder the conduct of one Foix, a notable capitaine of so young a man. The Spaniards and Pope Iulio  
tooke vpon them to defend it, but in the heat of that assault Foix was slaine: yet the souldiers either by force or by parlee  
gat into the towne, and being within, they committed the notablest outrages that haue bene heard of, neither absta-  
ining from rapes nor sacriledge. Concerning the Catalyns, who he nameth formost in the musters, they are the chiefe house  
in all Spaine: and it is to be noted, that Spaine is deuided into five kingdomes, Nauar, Castill, Catalogna (which is now  
called Aragon) Portugall, and Granata. For Gallicia is counted none, because it had a king but a while. The rest of the  
strange names you may find in the table.

the description of Discord and Fraud, and finding Silence in the house of sleep, being long since banished from philo- **Allegoric.**  
sophers and diuines: the allegorie is so plain, as it were time lost to spend time to expound it, because it expounds it selfe so  
plainly: onely I will obserue one thing, in which mine Author is thought to keep an excellent decorum. For, making Discord  
and Fraud of the feminine gender, he still makes Silence the masculine; as the like pretie conceit is in our Cambridge  
Comedie Pedantius, (at which I remember the noble Earle of Essex that now is, was present) where the Pedantius him-  
selfe, examining the Gramaticall instruction of this verse: Cædant arma togæ, concedat laurea linguæ, vpon speciall  
consideration of the two last words, taught his scholler Parillus, that laurea, lingua sunt vtraque fœmininæ generis,  
sed lingua potissimum, and so consequently silence might not by any meanes haue bene of the feminine gender.

In Mandricardos rape of Doralice, he alludes euidently to a notable villany in the like kind, done by Cæsar Borgia son **Allusion.**  
to Pope Alexander the sixth. For one Caraccio a capitaine of Venice, hauing bene lately contracted to a gentlewoman of  
good account, she came with an honorable train neare to a citie called Cesenna in Romagna: here Borgia with a band of  
men, set vpon her company, and took her away by force, and neither by threats nor intreatie of the Venecian Ambassador  
would restore her again: the allusion holds in many parts, as first where he saith in the 29. staff. That Marfilio had giuen  
Mandricardo an horse.

Of colour bay, but blacke the taile and maine,  
Of Frizland was the mare that did him breed,  
The fier was a villan braue of Spaine.

This notes Borgia, whose father was a Spaniard, his mother a Flemming, and he a mungrel bastard. In the one and thirtieth  
staffe, in the simile of the Wolfe, he noteth his crueltie: in the eight and fortieth staffe where he saith,

If state may stand in stead, who can denie, Onely to God our homage doth belong:  
In that he alludes plainly to the Pope that is reputed Christs Vicar on earth.

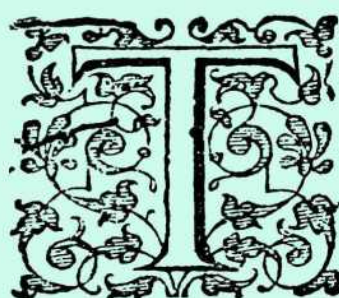






## THE ARGUMENT.

*Faire Paris is assaild on eu'ie part,  
By those of Affricke, and by those of Spaine:  
From Logestill Astolfo doth depart,  
And takes Calligorant in his owne traine,  
Then slew Orillo, that by Magicke art  
Reniu'd, when by the brothers he was slaine:  
Stout Sansonet Astolfo kind doth use,  
But Gryppin of his mistres heares ill news.*



<sup>1</sup>  
I winne the field against  
our armed foes,  
Is counted honorable anie  
wayes,  
Although it be with poli-  
cie or blowes,  
Yet bloodie conquests stain  
the Captaines praiſe  
But chiefeſt honour doth  
belong to thoſe,

Whom Fortune to ſuch height of hap doth raiſe,  
To haue their foe ſuppreſt and overthrowne,  
With little loſſe and damage of their owne.

<sup>2</sup>  
It was the victorie that you then gaind,  
O ſtout Hyppolito you conquerd ſo,  
When the Venetian Nautic had obtaind,  
With armed veſſels all the ſtreame of Poe,  
Your policie and vantage them conſtraind,  
With loſſe ineſtimable thence to go:  
Their mariners and ſouldiers all deſtroying,  
Our mariners and ſouldiers not annoying.

<sup>3</sup>  
The Pagan Rodomont did want this ſkill,  
That forſt ten thouſand men the trench to enter,  
By his commandment fore againſt their will,  
Vpon ſo perillous a place to venter,  
Where ſtraight the ſmother doth their bodies kill,  
And ſend their ſinfull ſoules beneath the center,  
I himſelfe in ſafetie ſees them there a dying,  
Still ſwearing, curſing, heau'n it ſelfe deſying.

<sup>4</sup>  
Now Agramant an hot aſſault and fearce,  
Came where he thought the ſame was leſt expected

He ſtrikes the wals to batter, break and pearce  
With engins ſtrong, and rams thereto erected:  
Thoſe kings whole names I did before rehearſe,  
Brought men, ſome ſtout, & ſome with fear infected,  
And ſuch as rather wiſh to ſtand aloofe,  
Then weare a corſlet of the ſureſt prooffe.

<sup>5</sup>  
But Agramant herein was much deceaued,  
For where he thought them weake and vnprepared,  
He found that manfully he was receaued,  
And that the king himſelfe the place did guard,  
With thouſands more readie to be hereaued  
Of life and limbe, and ſuch as nought regard,  
Before that they would take ſo great diſgrace,  
As in their maſters ſight to leeke their place.

<sup>6</sup>  
But here I ceaſe vntill another time,  
To tell of theſe aſſaults the hard ſucceſſe,  
Of damage like to both ſides: now my rime  
Vnto the Engliſh Duke I muſt addreſſe,  
Aſtolfo ſonne of Oton whom ſometime,  
Alecynas witchcraft held in great diſtreſſe,  
Who like another Cyree men transformed,  
To trees, to beaſts, and ſoules of ſhapes deformed.

<sup>7</sup>  
You heard before how all her ſtrange deceits,  
Meliffitage did with the ring diſcouer,  
And how ſhe gaue them alſo good receits,  
As made them all their former ſhapes recouer,  
How after hauing ſcaped all their ſleights,  
They did no longer in ſuch fancieſ houers,  
But to be ſurely able to reſiſt her,  
They fled vnto her vertuous elder ſiſter.

K iiii

Sentence.

This ſpeech of S  
before, the 3.  
book, you ſhall  
find it in Guye-  
cardus as large.

In the next book.  
in the next.

A. 1522. 15



8

Where when they had with comfort great remained,  
Desirous to their countries to retire,  
They asked leaue of her, and leaue obtained,  
Of her that neuer hinders iust desire:  
But er they went she frendly them constrained,  
With precious gifts to be endowed by her,  
Such gifts as were of precious price indeed,  
And all their liues should stand them all in steed.

9

*Astolfo.*

But chiefly to this English Duke she gaue,  
Of secret skill a little written booke,  
Containing many a precept wise and graue,  
The which of her most thankfully he tooke;  
These teach a man from charmes himselfe to saue,  
That in the same aduisedly doth looke,  
And that to find them out he may be able,  
The booke had in the end a perfit table.

10

Beside this booke on him she doth bestow,  
Another gift of as great price and more,  
A horne in which if he do once but blow,  
The noise thereof shall trouble men so fore,  
That all both stout and faint shall flie therefro,  
So strange a noise was neuer heard before;  
When to the Duke these rare gifts were imparted,  
He humbly tooke his leaue and thence departed.

11

*Looke in the Allegorie.*

And least *Alcyna* should by force attempt,  
To bring him backe or worke him some discafe,  
*Andronica* was with a nauie sent,  
To wafte him safe till he were past those seas,  
And vertuous *Sophrosina* with him went,  
To see him passe with safetie and with ease,  
So good a conductor, so sure a guide,  
As was not found in all the world beside.

12

And thus she saild along that Indian shore,  
And sees and leeceh sight of sundrie Iles,  
Those called fortunate and others more,  
That distant are, some few, some many miles,  
And (for he neuer heard of them before)  
He askt his guide some questions others whiles,  
As whether from those Indian seas perchance,  
A ship may faile to England, Spaine, and France.

13

She answerd thus; to put you out of doubt,  
First know the earth it selfe it like an Iland,  
Inuironed with waters round about,  
That compasse in on eu'ry side their drie land,  
And though to this day no man hath found out,  
Nor thinks there can be any way but by land,  
Because they iudge the lands length there is such,  
That it the other Hemispher doth tuch.

14

Yet I foresee, er many ages passe,  
New marriners and masters new shall rise,  
That shall find out that erst so hidden was,  
And shall discover where the passage lies,  
And all the men that went before surpasse,  
To find new lands, new starres, new seas, new skies,  
And passe about the earth as doth the Sunne,  
To search what with *Antipodes* is done.

*There is a promontorie beyond Fesse, called Capodino, as one would say that be that went beyond could neuer returne.*

*\* Sir Francis Drake followed the sunne till he gained a day in account from sun rising to sun setting.*

15

Behold I see the signe of holy crosse,  
A signe within these quarters scene but seeld,  
I see where ten a thousand put to losse,  
And to th' imperiall banner all do yeeld,  
I see in spite of eu'rie thwart an i crosse,  
The house of *Aragon* still wins the feeld,  
I see that fortune is dispold to lift,  
Vp vnto heau'n the name of *Charles* the fift.

16

It pleaseth God to keepe the wayes vnkowne,  
Vnto these parts as they haue bene and are,  
Vntill seuen hundred yeares be ouerblowne,  
What time he meanes to raise an Emp'ror rare,  
That shall both finde and make them all his owne,  
And one that shall most worthily compare,  
In warre for courage, and in peace for iustice,  
With *Traian*, with *Aurelius* or *Augustus*.

17

I see the will of heau'n doth so incline,  
The house of *Austria* and of *Arragon*,  
Shall linke together in a happie line,  
And be by match vnited both in one:  
I see a braun h grow by the banke of *Ryne*,  
Out of this house, as like there hath bene none,  
Whose match (thus much to say I dare be bold)  
May not be found in writers new or old.

*Charles the fift, borne in the citie of Graunt.*

18

By him againe *Astrea* shall be brought,  
And be restored from her long exile,  
And vertues that haue long bene set at nought,  
Shall raigne and banish fraud deceit and guile;  
For which great works by him so nobly wro  
God meanes to grant him all this earthly Ile,  
And vnder this wise Prince his deare annointed,  
One shepheard and one flocke he hath appointed.

*It was thought, that Charles meant to raigne in some region and Pope and Emperors both, which this verse seems to say, but it was but a vain conceit of some idle head.*

19

Which that it may the better be effected,  
He giues them Captaines both by sea and land,  
That shall win places neuer yet detected  
And none shall dare their forces to withstand;  
*Cortese* first, by whom shall be erected,  
The Emp'rors banner in the Indian land,  
Who by his valiant hand and wise direction,  
Shall win and keepe those Indies in subiection.

20

Loe, with the noble Marques of *Pescare*,  
*Proser Coloma* prosperous in fight,  
Loe, him that may with both of them compare,  
Or be preferred if you do him right,  
I meane the Marques *Vast*, whose vallew rare,  
In tender youthfull yeares shall shine most bright,  
Like to a horse that running swiftest pace,  
Doth last set out, and first doth win the race.

*Simile*

21

In him shall faith and courage be so mixt,  
That when his years shal seeme but young & tender  
As passing not the twentie yeare and fixt,  
Yet shall his fame and forces not be slender;  
On him shall eyes and hearts of men be fixt,  
To him shall townes and forts, and castels render,  
As to a Captaine with such worth endowed,  
As he alone the world might haue subdewd.

*What*



22

*Andrew D'oria.* What should I speake of famous *Andrew D'Orie*,  
 hat to the pyrats so much terror breeds,  
 As *Pompey* so much prais'd in Latin storie?  
 This *Andrew* either matches or exceeds:  
 What nobler name can be, what greater glorie,  
 Then to roote out such hurtfull curst weeds?  
 So as men may with safetie and with ease,  
 From Italy to Nylus passe the seas.

23

By his assistance, furtherance and his aide,  
 In Italy *Cæsar* a crowne obtaines,  
 For which good seruice though he be well paid,  
 Yet for himselfe thereby he nothing gaines:  
 The paine is his (ô noble mind well staid)  
 The profit to his country sole remains:  
 And whereas some to rule their country sought,  
 By him his countries freedome shall be wrought.

*A greax aise  
indeed of D'Oris  
shas sought th  
rit of his e  
try mu his  
o vne.*

24

This loue by him vnto his country showne,  
 In honor true shall more his name aduance,  
 Then both the *Cæsars* victories well knowne,  
 In England, Spaine, in Italy and France:  
 For though their enemies were ouerthrowne,  
 By valour oft, and oftentimes by chance,  
 Yet this did blot their praise and make it lesse,  
 That both their countries freedome did oppresse.

25

Wherefore let them and others all beside,  
 annize their countries be ashamed,  
 And hanging downe their heads, their faces hide,  
 When they shall heare this noble *Andrew* named,  
 By whose rare temperate and happie guide,  
 His countries peace and freedome shall be framed:  
 And thus *Andronica* the Duke foretold,  
 What men in future ages come there shold.

26

The while with prosperous winds the vessels driued,  
 Came first within the view of Persian shore,  
 And then from thence their way they so contriued,  
 They past the gulse (so called long before)  
 And there to land so happily arriued,  
 Misdoubting of *Alcynas* might no more,  
 He thanks these guides y all the way defended him,  
 And humbly to their Ladie recommended him.

27

More woods then one, more fields then one he past,  
 More then one valley, more then one high hill:  
 He meeteth theeues by night, by dayes as fast,  
 That lie in wait poore trauellers to kill:  
 Of beasts, of serpents huge he was agast,  
 That with their terror those wild deserts fill,  
 But when he blew his horne they fled away,  
 No man nor beast durst in the hearing stay.

28

He trauels through the happie Arabie,  
 So called for the store of spices sweet,  
 There where the bird that burnes and doth not die,  
 To dwell of all the world hath thought most meet:  
 Thence went he to the sea, that once was drie,  
 Which *Iacobs* sons went through vpon their feet,  
 Proud *Pharao* following them vnto his coast,  
 Himselfe and all his charets drownd and lost.

*Phenix.*

*Red sea.*

29

Fast by the banks of Traians streame he rides,  
 There where as Nylus doth receiue the same,  
 An horde of passing swiftnesse he bestrides,  
 That was ingendred twixt the wind and flame,  
 Not such a beast in all the world besides,  
 And Rabycano is this horses name:  
 Now as along the riuers banke he past,  
 He saw a boate make toward him in hast.

*Rabicano Astol-  
fus horse of excel-  
lent swiftnes.*

30

A simple hermit did the vessell steare,  
 Whose beard with age was ouergrowne and gray,  
 And when he came so nie that he might heare,  
 These words to him he fatherly doth say,  
 My sonne if you do hold your safetie deare,  
 Except you meane to die this present day,  
 Proceed no farther in the way you ride,  
 But ferrie ouer to the other side.

31

For if you do that fatall way proceed,  
 You shall within a mile a giant meet,  
 Whole stature other men doth farre exceed,  
 For why his height is counted fourteene feet,  
 He makes a sport of eu'ry cruell deed,  
 The flesh of man vnto his tast is sweet,  
 He eateth some aliue, and some he slayeth,  
 He quarters some, and other some he slayeth.

*Caligorous.*

32

Amid this crueltie he hath great sport,  
 To vse the seruice of a certaine net,  
 Which in the common way in secret sort,  
 With dust and grauell couerd he doth set,  
 And then when strangers do that way resort,  
 First if he may, behind them he doth get:  
 And then with hideous outcries he them scares,  
 Vntill they fall into his net vnwares.

33

But hauing caught them once in such a cage,  
 Of birth or merit he hath no respect,  
 Of wealth nor sex, of country nor of age,  
 No priuiledge from him can them protect,  
 Their carkales his hunger must aswage,  
 Their sculs like monuments he doth erect,  
 In posts and windowes hanging them on pins,  
 His chambers all are hangd with their skins.

*Looke in the Al-  
lusion.*

34

Take then (my sonne) take then this other way,  
 Where with more ease and safetie you may go.  
 Thanks (gentle Frier) the English Duke doth say,  
 Yet can I not your counsell follow tho,  
 Though danger bids go safest way one may,  
 Yet what saith honor? honor saith not so,  
 Let none retire with shame, thus honor teach,  
 The worst that can befall one is but death.

*Sentence.*

35

But contrary, if I may him intrap,  
 As he to do to others doth deuise,  
 And take himselfe in his prepared trap,  
 The good is great that hereof may arise.  
 Well, quoth the hermit, God grant blessed hap,  
 And send his Angell *Michael* from the skies,  
 That may deliuer him into thy hand,  
 Or giue thee strength his forces to withstand.



36

On goes the Duke blest by the simple Frier,  
Much trusting in his sword, more in his sound:  
And being now approacht a little nier,  
The cruell giants gracelesse house he found,  
Enuiron'd all with marish ground and mier,  
His chambers all within were furnisht round  
With skins and skuls of many a wofull hed,  
Of such as euill chance had thither led.

37

As hunters that by forrest wild do dwell,  
Naile by on roost the heads and pawes of Beares,  
And of their dangers do delight to tell,  
And call to mind their hardly scaped feares:  
So looke who did in strength the rest excell,  
The giant kept some speciall limbs of theirs,  
The rest in ditches carelesly he throwes,  
To rot and be deuour'd by dogs or crowes.

38

*Calygorant* (so is this giants name)  
Stands looking at his gate with watchfull eie,  
Reioycing much when any stranger came,  
And namely now the Duke he doth espie,  
Not doubting but by him to do the same,  
He had to others done, and make him die;  
But first he seekes behind the Duke to get,  
And thinks hereby to driue him to the net.

39

When as the Duke the Giant fierce espide,  
He staid his horse, and would not forward go,  
For feare lest in the net he might be tide,  
Of which the hermit had forwarnd him tho:  
Then bloweth he his horne of vertue tride,  
That in the hearers terror breeds and wo,  
Which to posselt his senses altogether,  
As str.ight he fled, and saw not where nor whether.

40

It seemed with his heart he lost his eies,  
And still he fled, and cares not how nor where,  
Right to the place where that most strange net lies,  
Which he to take the Duke had placed there,  
The net his armes and all his members ties,  
Which when *Astolfo* saw (now out of feare)  
He lights and drawes his sword, intending then  
To venge the death of thousand guiltlesse men.

41

But finding him so sure and strongly bound,  
He thought it were a base vngentle part,  
To slay a prisner whom in bands he found,  
So as he could not stir, nor no way start:  
God *Vulcan* wrought this net in caues profound,  
Of flaming *Aetna*, with such skill and art,  
That though the wires did seem but smal and weak,  
Yet could no force the same consume nor breake.

42

I say this curious net then *Vulcan* wrought,  
When certaine iealous thoughts his heart inflamed,  
His spoule therewith in *Mars* his armes he caught,  
And openly then made them both ashamed,  
At which prospect though many gods then laught,  
Yet many wisht in like sort to be shamed:  
Slie *Mercury* did after steale this net,  
His louely *Cloris* therewithall to get.

*Atque aliquis  
de diis non cristi-  
bus opas sic fieri  
curpu.*

43

Faire *Cloris* who flies out before the morne,  
And sprinkleth aire with smell of fragrant nowr  
That in her louely lap about are borne,  
From whence do tall the pleasant Aprill showres:  
But *Mercury*, fith she his loue did scorne,  
I ay with his net in waite not many houres,  
Till at the last by *Nylus* banks he caught her,  
And there to daunce *la volta* then he taught her.

44

The net in *Anubis* temple he did leaue,  
Where many yeares in safetie it did bide,  
Vntill *Calygorant* not asking leaue,  
And caring not what should thereof betide,  
Of this great relique did the church bereaue,  
With all the plate and ornaments beside:  
And to this wicked vse the net employ'd,  
By which the passengers were sore annoy'd.

45

Now of this net *Astolfo* tooke a wire,  
And (like a theefe) behind him tide his hands,  
Who now was mecke as any could desire,  
And likē a lambe by him most gently stands:  
At least the waight thereof him selfe might tire,  
First hauis g bound his prisner sure in bands,  
He makes him carry that vpon his backe,  
And vnde him like a mule to beare a packe.

46

And thus he parteth thence triumphing so,  
And led the giant prisner in a string,  
And all about the country him doth show,  
(A sight that to them all great ioy did bring)  
To *Memphis* Pyramids he then doth go,  
Most famous for the tombe of many a King,  
More hie in height then fiftie times *Pauls* steeple,  
Then saw he *Cayr* so huge and full of peeple.

47

But not so peopled as they now report,  
That thousands in the streets by night do lie  
For want of roome, yet builded in such sort,  
That eu'ry house is made three stories hie,  
Where runnegates do dwell, that make a spore,  
Their faith and their saluation to denie:  
Of which the *Eordan* for his owne behoofe,  
Keepes fiftene thousand lodging in one rooffe.

48

Thence went *Astolfo* to the banks of Nyle,  
To *Damyat* a citie there about,  
And here he heard within a dozen myle  
*Oryllo* dwelt, a hardy theefe and stout,  
That robd poore men, and kild them other while,  
As trauellers of him stood sore in doubt,  
And (that which him with greater wonder filled)  
The common voice was he could not be killed.

49

Full many a thrust, full many a cruell blow,  
Of many men in fight he had endured,  
And vnto many men great care and wo,  
And death it selfe he often had procured:  
But his owne bodie was enchanted so,  
As eu'ry wound he had forthwith was cured,  
I thinke some Fayry was his dame, or rather  
I thinke some *Incubus* had bene his father.

*Peter Messia,  
pro:  
e great Py  
mus was  
furlongs hi  
therefore this is  
spot in jar wish-  
in compasse, for  
Pauls was little  
m men a fur-  
long, if it were so  
much.*

*Oryllo.*



50

The worthy knight this wicked creature fought,  
 Till at last he came vnto the place,  
 V here then *Oryllo* with two champions fought,  
 The combat hauing held no little space,  
 Yet at his hands they both had gained nought,  
 Though both of them gaue sundry blowes apace,  
 Their names were these that held this mungrell tack,  
*Griffin* the white and *Aquilant* the black.

*Oryllo and Aquilant.*

51

The Necromancer fought with vantage great,  
 He rode vpon a cruell hideous beast,  
 A Crocodile that flesh of men doth eat,  
 And birds and beasts, and doth them all digest,  
 Yet had the brethren throwne him from his feat,  
 And further had the Crocodile distrest:  
 But him to wound and kill in vaine they striued,  
 For still his wounds did heale, and he reuiued.

52

Sometime they cleft his head by force in twaine,  
 As butchers cleaue a bullocks with an axe,  
 But straight he ioyneth both the parts againe,  
 As if they had bene made of melting waxe.  
 Who so hath seene the Alcumists moone againe,  
 That work with *Mercurie* their cunning knacks,  
 Which quite disperst, reioyneth eu'ry member,  
 Would soone by this be made that to remember.

*Simile.*

53

Fierce *Aquilant* among so many bloes,  
 With his head from off his shoulders strake,  
 About he seekes and gropeth as he goes,  
 And in the dust to find his head doth rake,  
 And finding it, he takes it by the nose,  
 Or by the locks, nor more ado doth make,  
 But sets it on as if it were but glewed,  
 And fights as if his forces were renewed.

54

Stout *Griffin* at a blow cuts off his arme,  
 And takes it vp and flings it in the brooke,  
 But he like one that had receiu'd no harme,  
 Doth d'ue the same within the streame to looke,  
 Which found he ioynes (I know not what charm)  
 Vnto the place it late before forooke:  
 Two dames stood by in white and blacke attire,  
 The combat being fought at their desire.

55

These were the courteous dames that with great care  
 Had brought them vp eu'n frō their swathing bands,  
 For these two brothers did by fortune rare,  
 In their first childhood chance into their hands:  
 These two to *Oliuer Gyfmonaa* bare,  
 Though stright they were conuaid to forren lands,  
 Where these two Ladies kept them as their owne,  
 I need not tell at large a tale so knowne.

*According as Boiardus the poet writes, whom as I sen atteste, my bor foloweth.*

56

Now was the time that neare approcht the night,  
 That makes each thing with shadow shew obscure,  
 So that not want of force, but want of light,  
 Did cause the combat could no longer dure:  
 The Ladies clad in garments blacke and bright,  
 That (as I said) this conflict did procure,  
 On this condition did them all dismisse,  
 That to returne next day they do not misse.

57

But when that English Duke both saw and knew,  
 The valiant youths *Griffin* and *Aquilant*,  
 Not onely by their armes he saw in vew,  
 But by their blowes, of which they were not feant,  
 He doth acquaintance old with them renew,  
 And they no point of courtesie do want,  
 For straightway by the Ladies he was led,  
 To take with them a supper and a bed.

58

Then in a garden sweet they did prouide  
 Great store of daintie meats and costly wine,  
 Fast by a coole and pleasant fountaines side,  
 As best agreeth with the sommer time,  
 The while the giant with strong chains they tide  
 Vnto the bodie of an auncient Pine.  
 Lest he might hap to trouble and molest them,  
 While they determind to refresh and rest them.

59

The boord with rich and costly fare was filled,  
 And yet their smallest pleasure was their meat,  
 The Knights in languages and learning skilled,  
 Talke of *Oryllo* and the wonder great,  
 To see one wounded so, and yet not killed,  
 It seemd to them a dreame and strange conceat,  
 And eu'n the wisest and most learnd did wonder,  
 How he reioynd his members cut in sunder.

*Sentence.*  
 For in deepe at a wise mans boord the smallest pleasure the guests haue, as their cheare in comparison of the pleasing talke that happens either in mirth or gravity.

60

*Astolfo* onely in his booke had read,  
 (That booke that taught all charmes to ouerthrow)  
 How this *Oryllo* neuer could be dead,  
 While in his head one fatall haire did grow,  
 But hauing puld this haire from off his head,  
 He should be subiect to eu'ry blow,  
 Thus said the booke, but precept there was none,  
 Among so many haire to find that one.

61

*Astolfo* ioyfull of this good instruction,  
 Not doubting but by this to make him die,  
 First makes some circumstance of introduction,  
 And prayes the brothers giue him leaue to trie,  
 If he could bring *Oryllo* to destruction,  
 And they this friendly sute do not denie,  
 Not doubting he alone would striue in vaine,  
 With him that late resisted had them twaine.

62

Now had the Sunne remou'd the nights darke vaile,  
 When as *Oryllo* turned to the field,  
 And then the English Duke did him assaile,  
 Both fought on horseback, both with spear & shield.  
 Eu'n then *Oryllo* felt his heart to faile,  
 (A hap to him that hapned had but seeld)  
 Eu'n then some strange presage did him offend,  
 That shewd his dayes drew shortly to their end.

63

Their speares now broke their naked swords they drew,  
*Astolfo* layes on blowes on him a maine,  
 About the field *Oryllo*s men bers flew,  
 But he together gathers them againe,  
 And straight his fight and forces doth renew,  
 The English Duke dismembring him in vaine,  
 Vntill at length one blow to luckie sped,  
 That by his shoulcers he cut off his hed.



64

And hauing headed him so eu'n and iust,  
Straight with his head on horsebacke he doth mount  
And rides away, *Orillo* in the dust  
Doth grope to find the same as he was wont,  
But misling it and full of new mistrust,  
To ouertake him yet he makes account,  
He rides, and would haue cride ho tarrie tarrie,  
But in his hand the Duke his tongue doth carrie.

65

But though his head were lost, he finds his heeles,  
To spurre and pricke he neuer doth forbear,  
The headlesse body neuer stirs nor reeles,  
But sits as sure as it the head were there:  
The while the skull *Affolfo* puls and peeles,  
Among such store to find th'enchanted haire,  
For in the haire no difference was in sight,  
To know if he did take the wrong or right.

66

But sith to make sure worke he thought it best,  
He makes his sword serue for a barbers knife,  
To shauie the skull therewith he doth not rest,  
Vntill he finisht had the bloody strife:  
He cuts that haire by chance among the rest,  
That haire that held *Orillo* in his life,  
The face looks pale, deuoid of liuely heate,  
The body backward fells out of the seate.

67

This done, the Duke brought in his hand the head,  
Returning to the companie againe,  
And shewd them where he left the carcas dead,  
Which when they saw with certain signes and plaine  
A kind of enuious ioy in them it bred,  
For glad they were their enemy was slaine,  
But inwardly they were displeased and torie,  
That this same Duke had got from them the glorie.

68

The women also were not well content,  
That he had slaine *Orillo* in the fight,  
Because it hindred had their first intent,  
Which was to stay these youths all means they might,  
In hope thereby some mischiefs to preuent,  
Which they foresaw should vnto them alight:  
Straight all that country was with rumor filled,  
How th'English Duke *Orillo* fierce had killed.

69

For as in all those cities they do vse,  
The keeper of the next adioyning fort,  
Sent by a Doue a letter of the newes,  
From Damiat vnto the nearest port,  
By which deuice most rare they cannot chuse  
But heare and send with speed each true report:  
And thus in eu'ry country and in towne,  
They do extoll this English Dukes renoune.

70

The worthy Duke the brothers doth perswade,  
From thence their courses into France to bend,  
To do the dutie for which man was made,  
Gods honour and their countries to defend,  
Which now the Turks and Painims did inuade,  
And neare had brought the same to wofull end:  
Which counsell from so great a Prince proceeding,  
They follow straight with forwardnesse exceeding.

71

The women now with teares in watry eies,  
Bid them farewell, and so they parted thence:  
And for they heard the holy citie lies  
Not passing sixe or seu'n dayes iourney thence,  
To take it in their way they do deuise,  
To see the place, where for humane offence,  
True God, true man, descending from aboue,  
Did die for vs vnworthy of such loue.

72

And sith the way betweene was large and wide,  
And void of fruits for sustenance of man,  
They do good store of bread and wine prouide,  
With needfull things, as for the time they can,  
And on the giants shoulders them they ride,  
Who like a sumpter horse them after ran,  
And on this sort with most deuout intent,  
Like pilgrims to Ierusalem they went.

73

Sixe dayes they traueled in their weary way,  
Nor seeing man, nor beast, nor bird aliue,  
The seuenth, immediat after breake of day,  
In that most blessed cite they arriue:  
Then visit they the tombe where Iesus lay,  
When with his death he did vs dead reuiue,  
And brought hell, sinne and death into subiection,  
With suffering, dying, and his resurrection.

74

Now while the tombe with great heed they behold,  
Bare head and feet in shew of meek sub  
And with more inward ioy then can be told,  
Yet ioyned with a deepe and sad contrition,  
That strake their hearts in awe and made them cold  
With true remorse deuoid of superstition,  
And with themselues they still continued musing,  
Each one himselfe in such like words accusing.

75

Why then, where thou deare Lord didst for our sake,  
With water and with blood the ground distaine,  
Shall not mine eyes some small amends to make,  
Shed teares in memory of so great paine?  
Oh drowfie heart that dost not now awake,  
Oh frozen heart that meltest not in raine,  
Oh stony hear that dost not now relent,  
Lament thee now, or else for ay lamest.

*A deuout meditation.*

76

Thus with an humble and repentant sprite,  
They tarried at the tombe no little space,  
When so the priest appeared in their sight,  
Whose office was to keepe the holy place,  
Who seeing them so lowly and contrite,  
He doth impart to them this speciall grace,  
(Sith to amendment they were now resolu'd)  
Them of their finnes forepassed he absolu'd.

77

This done, they went about and viewd the towne,  
Held in those happy dayes by Christen hands,  
Who striving now to keepe each other downe,  
With causelesse warres do trouble sea and lands,  
Or leessing or neglecting that renoune,  
In which Gods honour and their safetie stands:  
But letting this great enemy increase,  
By their seeld making, neuer keeping peace.

*A true reproofe of Christian Princes.*

A gallant

*This I haue heard  
some affirme for  
a simile.*



73

A gallant knight whom *Sanfonet* they call,  
is citie gouern'd vnder *Charles* the great,  
Who then intended to repaire the wall,  
And make the towne a strong and stately seat:  
*Astolfo* gaue to him the Giant tall,  
For strength and stature fit for such a feat,  
To serue his present purpose for the nonce,  
Vnto the walls to carry heauy stones.

79

And *Sanfonet* doth eke on him bestow,  
A curious belt and hangers for a blade,  
And spurs of gold, in substance rich and show,  
That for that knight were thought to haue bin made  
That slue the Dragon with a deadly blow,  
Which did the Ladie chaſt and faire inuade:  
Thus gifts both giu'n and tane on either part,  
Each from the other friendly doth depart.

Saint George.

80

Now going from *Ierusalem*, behold  
They met a Greekiſh pilgrim by the way,  
That ſuch ill newes to good *Griffino* told,  
As made him out of temper all the day:  
It was his euill fortune, deare to hold,  
And giue his heart vnto her for a pray,  
That had a pleaſing hew, and faire ſmooth ſkin,  
But falſe, vnchaſt, and trecherous within.

81

Her name was *Origilla*, whom of late  
He leſt at *Conſtans* of an Age wicke;  
And hoping now to find her in good ſtate,  
He heares ſhe hath him ſeru'd a fluttish trick,  
As namely ſhe had got a newfound mate,  
Not caring if that he were dead or quicke:  
She thought that for her yong yeares twas no reaſon,  
To lie alone in that ſweet pleaſant ſeaſon.

82

This newes his mind doth gripe, his heart doth bite,  
He mournes by day, by night he takes no reſt,  
That breeds him paine that others breeds delight,  
And this torments him more then all the reſt,  
He ſhames, and ſhuns to haue it come to light,  
What was his griefe that did him ſo moleſt.  
And this to keepe it cloſe the rather made him,  
Beauſe from her his brother did diſſwade him.

83

But all in vaine, for he was wholly bent  
To follow her, although he knew her nought,  
Yet to himſelfe he keepeth his intent,  
That ſecretly his going may be wrought:  
He vowes to make the adulterer repent,  
Who now to *Antiochia* her had brought:  
But in another booke I will expreſſe,  
Of his departure what was the ſucceſſe.

In the beginning of this booke was an excellent morall (if you obſerued it) ſhewing how hurtfull it is for a captain to be trodder all of his men, and raſh or headlong in his attempts: the former of which faults (that worthy and valiant gentleman) ſir Iohn Smith hath very grauely and iuſtly reprov'd in ſome captains of our time, in that treatiſe that he wrote in defence of the uſe of long bowes: and indeed it cannot be denied but bloody conqueſts are no praife to the conquerour: In token whereof the *Lacedemonians* appointed, that he that won a bloody victory ſhould ſacrifice a cocke; but he that came by pollicie without bloudſhed, an ewe: ſo much they preferred wiſedome that is peculiar to man, before ſtrength that is common to beaſts. In *Charles* is to be noted the providence of a wiſe and valiant Prince: In *Aſtolfo*, that by the power of his horne rid, the country of theewes and malefactours, we may learne to apply the talents are given vs, to good uſes: In *Griffino*, that after all his deuotion at *Ierusalem*, comes againe to *Origilla*, we may note the frailtie of fleſh, and withall, that outward holineſſe without inward zeale availeth nothing.

The hiftorie (ſet downe here in maner of a prophecie) of the proſperous raigne of *Charles* the fiſt, is too long to ſtand vpon in this place, but *Iouius*, *Guyccardin*, *Vlloa*, *Surius*, and *Sleydan* himſelfe (though his enemy) do witneſſe his great conqueſts, his happie diſcovery of the Indies, his notable captains, and the great felicitie of his whole life: of which authors, becauſe two are already in Engliſh, I imagine there be few that are like to reade this, but haue read the one of them, and conſequently know as much to be true as I do here ſet downe. And for the Indian voyages, we need not ſo much admire the captains of forren nations, hauing two of our owne nation that haue both as forwardly aduentured, and as fortunatly performed them, namely, ſir Francis Drake, whom I touched before, and yong Maſter Candish.

Historic.

In that *Logeſtilla* giueth *Aſtolfo* at his departing a booke to inſtruct him, and a horne to breed terror to his enemies; by the booke is ſignified wiſedome, whereby all charmes and toyes are diſcouered: and by the horne is vnderſtood iuſtice, that indeed brings terror to all miſdoers, and driues them out of the country. Further, whereas *Logeſtilla* ſends *Andronica* and *Sophroſina* to ſafe conduct *Aſtolfo*, leaſt *Alcyna* ſhould attempt any new matter againſt him, it is to be vnderſtood allegorically, that fortitude and temperance are the two moſt notable guides that we can haue in this world to keepe vs from pleaſures ſnares, or violent aſſaults. Alſo whereas *Aſtolfo* looks firſt in his booke ere he take vpon him the enterpriſe to fight with *Orillus*, it is to be vnderſtood, that good aduice is to be taken before men vndertake dangerous exploits.

Allegorie.

The houſe of *Callygorant* alludeth vnto the den of *Cacus* in the vy. of the *Aeneads* in *Virgill*,

Alluſion.

—Semperq; recenti

Cæde tenebat humus, foribus affixa ſuperbis,

Ora virum triſti pendebant pallida tabo.

*Simon Fornarius* thinks that in the perſon of *Calligorant*, he meant a ſubtil ſophiſter that became an heretike, and corrupted many, but after recanting, did good ſeruice in the Church. The ſatall haire of *Orillus*, though it be meerly fabulous, yet hath it alluſion to ſome truth: for beſides that, diuers Poets haue written of ſome, whoſe life lay in their haire, as *Nyſus* killed by his daughter; and *Alceſt* that could not die til *Mercury* cut off one haire: and of *Dido* likewiſe is ſaid that *Iris* was ſent to cut her haire to rid her out of her paine: beſides theſe (I ſay) the Scripture teſtifies of the vertue of *Samſons* ſtrength to haue bin in his haire, which is as ſtrange for reaſon as any of the reſt.

Here end the notes of the xv. booke.

L







## THE ARGUMENT.

*Stout Griffin finds his subtle mistres straying,  
With vile Martano, but is pacifi'd:  
The Turks and Christians all their force displaying,  
Do fight, on both sides many thousands dyde:  
Both man and house by sword and fire decaying,  
Do make a wofull sight on either side:  
Without the towne the Christians plague the Turkes,  
Within fierce Rodomont much mischief workes.*



**G**reat paines in loue full  
many men haue found,  
Of which my selfe haue  
prou'd so great a part,  
As by my skill some good  
may hap redound,  
To such as are lesse skilfull  
in this art:

Wherefore what I affirme  
with iudgement sound,  
To breed iust cause of lesse or greater smart,  
Beleeue what I set downe for your behoofe,  
*Præbatur est*, I know tis true by prooffe.

**I** do affirme, and haue, and euer shall,  
That he that binds himselfe in worthy bands,  
Although his mistres shew him grace but small,  
Although he find no fauour at her hands,  
Sharp words, coy looks, smal thanks, hope none at al,  
Though more and more aloofe from him she .ands  
Yet so his heart and thoughts be highly paced,  
He must not mourne, no though he die disgraced.

**L**et him lament, let him mourne, pine, and die,  
Whom wanton wandring eies, whom flaring heare,  
Haue made a slaue, when vnder them doth lie,  
A heart corrupt, a tongue that false will sweare,  
Like wounded Deare in vaine he seekes to flie,  
And in his thigh the shaft about doth beare,  
And this about the rest torments him cheefe,  
He is asham'd and dares not shew his greefe.

**S**uch was the hap, such was the wofull state,  
Of Griffin now posselt with foolish loue,

He knew her mind and manners worthy hate,  
Yet could not he this fancie fond remoue:  
His reason faine his passion would abate,  
But appetite is placed her about:  
That be she near so false, ingrate or nought,  
Yet needs of him she must be lou'd and sought.

**A**way he steales from hence in secret sort,  
Nor to his brother once adew doth say,  
For feare least that his brother would dehort  
Him from her loue, as oft he did assay:  
And that his iourney may be cut more short,  
He coasts the countrie for the nearest way,  
He trauels all the day and halfe the night,  
Vntill Darnasco came within his sight.

**F**ast by this towne this trull he ouertooke,  
That louingly with her new loue did ride,  
And all old trends and louers all forooke,  
He was her Champion, he her onely guide:  
A man might boldly sweare it on a booke,  
He were a husband fit for such a bride,  
He false, vnconstant, trecherous, so was she:  
She had a modest looke, and so had he.

**H**e rode all armd vpon a stamping steed,  
With guilded barb that cost full many a crowne;  
She ware no lesse magnificent a weed,  
A rich embrodred purple veluet gowne:  
Thus to Darnasco ward they do proceed,  
Where late there was proclaimed in the towne,  
A solemne feast that should endure some dayes,  
For iusts, for tilt, for turneyes, and for playes.

L ii

*Of this looke is  
morall more  
as la*

*Simile.*

*Dignū patella  
operculum,  
Or as the English  
Pr uerbe saith.  
Like will to like  
quoth the dwell  
to the collier.*



8

Now when the queene good *Griffin* had espide,  
 (For who she knew her Iquire would be to weake)  
 Though fore appald, as scant she could it hide,  
 Least he his wrath on both at once should wreake,  
 Yet as the time permits she doth prouide,  
 Consulting with her guide before she speake:  
 And when they had agre'd how to deceiue him,  
 With open armes she runneth to receiue him.

9

And framing then her speech with great regard,  
 To answer fit vnto her gestures kind,  
 Deare sir (quoth she) is this the due reward,  
 My loyall loue to you deterues to find?  
 That from your sight I should a yeare be bard,  
 Your sight that soly can content my mind?  
 You left me greeued with a burning feauer,  
 But burning more in loue of you for euer.

10

Where I your comming lookt for long in vaine,  
 Each houre a day, each month did seeme a yeare,  
 And of your abience long I did complaine,  
 Enquiring oft, if I of you could heare:  
 Alas how full is carefull loue of paine?  
 So sad mine heart, so heauie was my cheare,  
 As being in dispaire which way to mend it,  
 I loth'd my life, and did desire to end it.

11

But loe how fortune when I looked least,  
 Hath now prouided me of double aid,  
 And sent my brother, this most welcome guest,  
 With whom I haue without dishonour staid,  
 And now your selfe whose presence makes me blest,  
 For had your comming longer bene delaid,  
 So was my heart and soule to you inclined,  
 That sure for greife I should haue dyde and pined.

12

Thus flattrring words where with her tongue abounds,  
 Holpe her in so good sort her tale to frame,  
 That now on him the greater fault redounds,  
 As glad he was to scuse himselfe fro blame,  
 And her strong reasons founded on weake grounds,  
 Do cleare both her, and him that with her came,  
 And makes him deemed a kinsman and a brother,  
 That did his best to make this maide a mother.

13

So that he did not onely not reprove  
 Her that so trech'rously had him betraid,  
 So that he did not wreake as did behoue,  
 Th'adulterer that false with her had plaid;  
 But thinkes it well if he the blame remoue,  
 Which to his charge so probablie she laid:  
 And as for him (loue makes him see so blindly)  
 He calls him kinsman, and salutes him kindly.

14

Thus *Griffin* of his loue no whit abates,  
 But keepes her companie as with his owne,  
 Vntill they came within *Damasco* gates,  
 Where none of them were scene before or knowne.  
 The towne was full of Lords and great estates,  
 The rumor of the feast so far was blowne,  
 Which that they might haue more securely haunted,  
 The king to all that came safe conduct graunted.

15

But here I cease to talke of *Origill*,  
 And of her mate with her as fitly met,  
 As knauish iacke could be for whorish gill,  
 Vnchast and false, as euer water wet:  
 To flatter and dissemble passing skill,  
 And all was fish that came into her net:  
 Now here I leaue good *Griffin* in her armes,  
 And turne me to the *Turkish* men of armes.

16

I left where *Agramant* assaulted hard,  
 A gate which he had hoped to haue found,  
 But weake and feeble, naked, vnprepard,  
 And easie to be beaten to the ground:  
 I told you how king *Charles* the place did gard,  
 Inuironed with selected souldiers round;  
 As namely *Guydons* strong and *Angile*  
 With *Oton* stout *Quolyo Berlingero*.

17

Thus either band in sight of either king,  
 Doth fight in hope of great reward and praise,  
 And thinks such honour backe that day to bring,  
 As should themselves and all their offspring raise  
 But such great store of darts the *Christns* sling,  
 As still th' *Turkes* are foiled many wayes,  
 They die, and by their deaths do others teach,  
 How hurtfull tis to roue beyond their reach.

18

But *Rodomont* whose men consumed with fire,  
 Do fill their masters mind with double r  
 Yet to auenge theirs deaths doth so desire,  
 As nought but blood his thirst of blood can swage:  
 He spares not in the passion of his ire,  
 Nor men nor women, order, sex nor age,  
 Away do runne the filly people crying,  
 And leaue their children, friends and wiues a dying.

19

They happie were whose feet did serue them best,  
 The turie of this cruell *Turke* to shunne,  
 For some were killed in the flight, the rest  
 Vnto the Churches or strong houses runne,  
 And locke the gates against so fierce a guest,  
 That in the streets had so great mischief done:  
 And of them all that had bene slaine in chafe,  
 Not one of them was wounded in the face.

20

But as the *Tyger* kills the fearfull *Doe*,  
 That but by flight cannot it selfe defend,  
 O 'as the *Wolues* do spoile the sheepe: eu'n so  
 This cruell *Turke* their guiltlesse blood doth spend:  
 They neither know to strike nor ward a blo,  
 To hurt their foe nor yet to help their friend:  
 Thus past the *Pagan* to *S. Michels* bridge,  
 And none there was his passage to abridge.

21

He kills alike the sinner and the good,  
 The reuerend father and the harmelesse child,  
 He spils alike the young and aged blood,  
 With widowes, wiues, and virgines vndefild,  
 And though that all did yeeld and none withstood,  
 Yet mercie from his mind was to exild,  
 He shewd to such as things can truly valew,  
 Great signes of crueltie but none of valew.

Now

The followers shew  
 her in the way  
 to the castle.



22

Nor is the cruell rage and fury cease,  
With seeing of so many people slaine,  
But rather still it growes and doth increase,  
Against those other that aliuie remaine:  
Nor graunts he to the Churches any peace,  
But eu'n as though the walls could suffer paine;  
He maketh furious warres against the walls,  
And flings against them store of fire balls.

23

Their houses all were built in Paris then,  
Of timber (and I iudge this present houre  
Of bricke and stone there are not sixe of ten)  
Which made the Pagan then to bend his powre,  
To burne the houses, hauing kild the men:  
And though that fire do of it selfe deuoure,  
Yet he doth helpe the fire, and ouerthrew them,  
And those that lurkt within he spoyld and slue them.

24

Had *Agramant* had like successe without,  
As had within this wicked *Rodamont*,  
The walls of Paris had not kept him out,  
On which so oft he did assay to mount:  
But now this while the Angell brought about,  
*Renaldo* stout the flowre of Clarimount,  
Both with the English and the Scots supplies,  
As secretly as Silence could deuise.

*Renaldo.*

25

And that they might them more vnwares assaile,  
They cast a bridge a league about the towne,  
And passe the riuer to their best auaille,  
And so in battle order comming downe,  
Not doubting if their footing do not faile,  
To get that day great glorie and renowne:  
And still among the rankes *Renaldo* rides,  
And for things needfull euermore prouides.

26

Two thousand horse in good Duke *Edmonds* guide,  
And thrise two thousand archers he doth send,  
To get to Paris on the tother side,  
To helpe within the citie to defend:  
(The cariages and other lets beside,  
To leaue behind a while he doth intend)  
These succors greatly helpe the towne within,  
And at Saint *Dennis* gate they let them in.

27

*Renaldo* takes the conduct of the rest.  
Appointing each his office and his place,  
As in his skill and iudgement seemeth best,  
Seu'ring each band from other with a space:  
And seeing eu'ry one was prone and preft,  
As was to be required in such case,  
He calleth all the Lords and Leaders chiefe,  
And vsd to them this pithy speech and brieft.

28

*Renaldos oration  
from 28. stat. to the  
34.*

My Lords (quoth he) I need not to repeate  
Your weightie businesse vnto you at large,  
I onely say, you haue iust cause and great,  
To giue God thanks, your duties to discharge,  
That here hath sent you, where with little sweat,  
But giuing on our foes one valiant charge,  
You may obtaine true fame and glorie more,  
Then all your auncestors obtained before.

29

God, onely God that giues and guides good chance,  
Hath offerd vnto you this good occasion,  
Your names and glories highly to aduance,  
Which is in noble minds a strong perswasion:  
Behold the Kings of England and of France,  
Endangerd greatly by the Turks inuasion,  
Shut vp in trenches and in wals with shame,  
You may set free to your immortall fame.

30

The very law of nature and humanitie,  
Wils noble hearts to helpe the weake distressed;  
But more the lawes and state of Christianitie,  
Without your helpe now like to be oppressed,  
And right Religion turnd to Turkish vanitie,  
Of which what harms wil grow, may soon be guessed  
Our temples faire with their foule idols filled,  
Our virgins (chast by vow) deslourd and killed.

31

No meane, no stay, no end will be of slaughter,  
Of rapes and rapines wicked and vniust;  
No man shall keepe his sister, wife or daughter,  
From out the reach of their vnruely lust:  
But now if you these sorrowes turne to laughter,  
And raise their honor troden in the dust,  
They must ow you the freedomes and the liues,  
Of them, their friends, their children and their wities.

32

In auncient times a laurell Ciuick crowne  
To him that sau'd one citizen they gaue,  
If then they had such honor and renowne,  
How many crownes shall you deferue to haue,  
If (not a townsman, but) a noble towne,  
And thousand innocents therein you saue?  
In you it lies them to preserue and cherish,  
That (but for you) in wo should pine and perill.

*Ciuick crowne.*

33

Which if they should (as God forbid they should)  
By these vile Saracens be ouerrunne,  
Then were the Romaine Empire bought and sold,  
The holy Church were spoyld and quite vndone:  
In you it is these huge harmes to withhold,  
By you alone must this exploit be done,  
Tread then this path of praise so large and ample,  
Ile leade the way, follow but mine example.

34

This speech by him pronounc'd with so good spright,  
With voice so audible, with comely grace,  
Incented them with such desire to fight,  
That tedious seemd to them each little space.  
And as we see in riding men delight  
To spurre a horse although he runne apace:  
So sturd *Renaldo* with this exhortation,  
Those of the English and the Scottish nation.

*Simile.*

35

And hauing thus confirm'd their forward hearts,  
And promist largely in his masters name,  
Great recompence to eu'ry mans desarts,  
Vnto the riuer walls he closely came,  
His armie he deuides in sundry parts,  
Least breach of order bring them out of frame,  
And with the Irish band he first indents,  
To spoile their lodgings, and to rob their tents.

L iii



36

The rest he thus in prudent sort deuises,  
The vaward *Zerbin* hath in gouernment,  
The Duke of Lancaster the battell guides,  
The Duke of Clarence with the rereward went,  
*Renaldo* with some chosen men besides,  
Giues first the charge by generall consent:  
Then on a sodaine they do raise a shout,  
And fild our side with courage, theirs with doubt.

37

*Renaldo* riding out afore the rest,  
(With mind to do as much as he had said)  
Puts spurs to horse and lets his speare in rest,  
His onely sight the Pagans greatly fraid,  
With fainting hearts, pale lookes and panting breſt,  
They shew most certaine signes of minds dismayd,  
Yet stout king *Puliano* shewes no token,  
Of heart astonished or courage broken.

38

But trusting to his strength, and void of feare,  
And ranging out in sight of all his band,  
He met him man to man, and speare to speare,  
He met him horse to horse, and hand to hand:  
But straight it plainly was discerned there,  
Sleight without force in little steed doth stand:  
This kind of fight was of a rougher sort,  
Then running of a courſe at tilt in sport.

39

Thus was king *Pulian* ouerthrowne and tane,  
To no small terror of the Pagan host,  
Next came the king (that giant) of Oran,  
That of his goodly stature much doth boast,  
But soone *Renaldo* brought him to his bane,  
His horse, his weapon, and his life he lost;  
The horse was glad to find himſelfe enlarged,  
And of his heavy burden to discharged.

40

Nor was *Renaldo* of his sword more spare,  
Then of his speare before himſelfe he ſhowd,  
His blade *Fusberta* pierced to the bare,  
When he his thrusts or deadly blowes beſtowd:  
No shields, no coates of so good temper are,  
Nor cloth in hundred tolds together ſowd,  
That this same fatall blade of his withſtood,  
But that at eu'ry blow it fetcht the blood.

41

Nor did *Zerbin* merit common praise,  
That of his value ſhewd that day good prooffe,  
He met the stoutest Turkes at all assayes,  
On horse, on foote, at hand, and farre aloofe,  
Attempting and performing ſundry wayes,  
That might be for their harme and his behoofe:  
And all his band in fight was fierce and hot,  
As is the nature of the valiant Scot.

42

And thus their fry heate and courage bold,  
Well ſhewd by blowes they to the Pagans gaue,  
Did make their ſtomacks faint, their courage cold,  
And glad in th'end by flight themſelues to ſaue:  
For *Sobrin* one in yeares and iudgement old,  
(Though no leſſe ſtout thē thoſe leſſe age that haue)  
Doth now a little with his band retire,  
To ſhun the fury of the Scottiſh fire.

43

The worthy Dukes of Albanie and Mar,  
Enſude in valiant ſort the good ſucceſſe,  
And with the ſame preuailed had ſo far,  
As they had brought the Turkes to great diſtreſſe,  
Till *Iſolir* the new king of Nauar,  
Came with his band their fury to repreſſe,  
And on that ſide the battell did reſtore,  
Almoſt now loſt, at leaſt declind before.

44

Then grew the fight on both ſides firme and ſtable,  
Both ſides defend, both ſides alike inuade,  
They caſt on both ſides darts innumerable,  
And make therewith a darke vnpleaſing ſhade:  
An endleſſe worke it were to write the rable,  
The Chriſtens kild with bow, with bill, with blade,  
Sometime the ſway goeth hither, ſometime thither,  
Like waters diu'n with doubtfull tides and wether.

45

When one is ſlaine, his roome another fills,  
When one is hurt, another takes his place,  
And he that now another ſmites and kills,  
\*Fals dead himſelfe within a little ſpace:  
Great heapes of bodies dead make little hills,  
The earth it ſelfe doth looke with bloody face,  
The greene wherewith it erſt was ouerſpred,  
Did turne to languin and vermillion red.

46

My pen would faile, and ſkill would be too  
To tell the famous acts that *Zerbin* wrought,  
How his new brother noble *Ariodant*,  
A freſh ſupply againſt the Pagans brought,  
And how ſtill one ſupplying to others want,  
Againſt the Turkes with naturall forces taught,  
Then namely when the Prince was almoſt ſlaine,  
By baſtards two of *Aragon* in Spaine.

47

*Chelindo* one, the other *Moſco* hight,  
Theſe two at once on *Zerbin* bent their force,  
In hope that if their hands could hit aright,  
To wound him ſore, or at the leaſt vnhorſe,  
They wound him not, yet forſt him to alight,  
For vnder him ſo ſore they hurt his horſe,  
To ſerue his Lord he was no longer able,  
But made the field his euerlaſting ſtable.

48

This foile and fall his courage more do whet,  
To roſe the ſeruiſe of his truſtie ſteed,  
But from the ſaddle quickly he doth get,  
His loſſe his wrath, his wrath reuenge doth breed:  
He meanes not long to tarry in their debt,  
That to his horſe did this vnworthy deed,  
And firſt he gaue to *Moſco* ſuch a thruſt,  
As made him tumble ſenſleſſe in the duſt.

49

But when *Chelindo* ſaw his brother ded,  
Reuenge and feare in him together ſtraue,  
His inward feare prouokt him to haue fled,  
Himſelfe from danger imminent to ſaue,  
But ſtraight reuenge another humor bred,  
Expelling feare, and makes him bold and braue,  
He ſpurs his horſe in hope to ouerrunne him,  
But *Zerbin* ſlightly ſteps aſide to ſhunne him.

*Leonida aca-  
taine, b g tol  
that the enemies  
ſhou came ſo thick  
as one could not  
ſee theſe  
them, anſwered  
merely, that he  
ſhall fight in the  
ſhade.*

*Hic quoque qui  
dederat in om-  
longius ouis-  
et exſpirat modo  
quas acceperat  
auras. Ouid 3.  
Metam.*

And



50

And in a slow helent him as he past,  
 On his shoulders from the reredemaine,  
 That horse and man vnto the ground were cast,  
 Whence neither of them rose alieue againe:  
 And now the Spanish band came in to fast,  
 As noble *Zerbin* had almost bin slaine,  
 But *Arrodante* then him selfe besturd,  
 And makes an open lane by dint of sword.

51

The while, the Duke of Clarence doth assaile,  
 Their rere that was by *Baricondo* led,  
 The English archers shoot as thick as haile,  
 Which to their horsemen great annoyance bred,  
 On eu'ry side the Christens do preuaile,  
 On eu'ry side the fearfull Pagans fled,  
 Great store were slaine, and many prisoners taken,  
 Their battell now declined fore and shaken.

52

And had bin lost had not *Ferraw* by chance  
 Come to their aid as yong *Olimpio* fell,  
 Slaine by a knight of Scotland or of France,  
 A cruell knight, whose name I cannot tell:  
*Ferraw* was sore aggriued at this mis'ance,  
 He knew this youth, and lou'd him passing well,  
 Because his skill in musick was to choice,  
 Both for sweet stroke, and for his pleasing voice.

53

Had not the humor of ambition vaine,  
 With crotchets new his foolish fancie fild,  
 He might haue better staid at home in Spaine,  
 Then come abroad to be in battell kild:  
 But thus we see they get but losse and paine,  
 That deale in that in which they be not skild,  
 I wish musitions meddle with their tongs,  
 And pray the souldiers to reuenge their wrongs.

54

*Ferraw* that saw ten thousand slaine before,  
 Without or fetching sigh or shedding teare,  
 With this his minions death was griued so fore,  
 As scarce he could eu'n then to weepe forbear,  
 But he that kild him shall abuy therefore,  
 By *Macon* and *Lansusa* he doth sweare,  
 And straight performd it to the knights great-paine,  
 For with his pollax out he dasht his braine.

55

Nor so content, he runs among the presse,  
 And in his rage so many Scots he slew,  
 That their late forwardnesse he did repress,  
 And causd that they in hast themselves withdrew:  
 Then to the tents was sent the king of Fesse,  
 To make resistance to the Irish crew,  
 That spoild their lodgings hauing robd the best,  
 And went about to set on fire the rest.

56

Then when the stout King *Agramant* espide,  
 The danger great he and his men were in,  
 And how these new supplies on eu'ry side,  
 Made his retire, and ground of them did win:  
 To saue his owne in time he doth prouide,  
 And lets alone the wals and them within,  
 Himselfe with Lords and other Princes store,  
 Came where *Ferraw* was entred late before.

57

And in such strength they do their forces linke,  
 And with such fury they restore the fight,  
 That now the Scots began to faile and shrink,  
 Saue that *Renaldo* came eu'n then in sight,  
 And cride, O worthy Scots, and do you thinke  
 To saue your selues by so vnworthy flight?  
 Will you to leese the honor late you wonne?  
 Care you no more to saue your masters sonne?

58

Do you regard no more your reputation,  
 By you in sundry bloody battels got,  
 To leaue the flowre and iewell of your nation,  
 Amid his foes as if you lou'd him not?  
 Ye shame your selues and all your generation,  
 If you distaine you with so foule a blot,  
 Turne, turne I say, and take some heart of grace,  
 And meet and smite these Panims in the face.

59

They that before were sore with feare possesst,  
 Were now so heartned, that with honest shame,  
 Each one doth seeme his safetie to detest,  
 Each one his mind with anger doth inflame,  
 And where they left their captaine halte distrest,  
 With this so forward guide as fast they came:  
 So *Zerbin* rescude was from Turkish forces,  
 And mounted straight one of the emptie horses.

60

*Renaldo* that did euer take delight  
 To set on those that were most strong and stout,  
 When once king *Agramant* was come in sight,  
 Him fro the rest forthwith he singles out:  
 But when betweene them was begun the fight,  
 They hundred were by those that stood about,  
 I meane the Turks, who their chief Prince defended,  
 Who else perhap his raigne eu'n then had ended.

61

Now while without the wals the battell so,  
 On either side with fury was renewd,  
 Fierce *Rodomont* within did worke such wo,  
 More rutull fight with eye was neuer vewd;  
 To wracke profane the holy temples go,  
 He setteth fire on all, and to conclude,  
 He did alone so spoile the goodly citie,  
 As might haue mou'd a stony heart to pitie.

62

And/while King *Charles* that was farre off from thence,  
 Did entertaine the new come English host,  
 The which *Renaldo* sent for their defence)  
 Behold there came a messenger in post,  
 That lookt like one bestraught of wit and sence,  
 His voice with hast and feare was welnigh lost,  
 And when his broken words were plainly hard,  
 Ah well away (he cries) we all are mard.

63

Some fiend of hell (for sure a fiend of hell  
 It is that doth our citie so destroy)  
 Is sent from Belzebub with vs to dwell,  
 To worke our vtter ruine and annoy:  
 This day we must bid all good dayes farewell,  
 This day must be the last day of our ioy,  
 Lo yonder how our sacred temples smoke,  
 Nor one in their defence dares strike a stroke.



64

11m.12.

Looke how a man would be amazed to heare  
A noise confus'd of backward ringing bells,  
And after find, when he approacheth neare,  
New set on fire his house wherein he dwells;  
In such amazement and in such a feare  
Was Charles to heare the tale this poore man tels,  
And as he thither nearer came and nearer,  
He sees the buildings clearer burne and clearer.

65

Of hardie Squires he culs a gallant crew,  
And meanes to driue away this wicked wight  
If man it be, or spright with humane hew,  
That doth vnto the towne this soule despight:  
Now came he where he plaine might see in vew,  
Men mured, houses burnd, a wofull fight.  
But now although perhap my storie please you,  
To pawle a little may refresh and ease you.

Moral.

*In the person of Griffino is described a yong man besotted with loue and affection of a vile strumpet, so as she easily perswades him, that he that indeed kept her so openly, as all the world spake of it, was her brother, or her cosingerman, or some such matter as easily blinded his eyes, being bleared afore with affection: and in this kind, though I meane to touch none by name, yet I doubt not but many will feele themselves touched of both sorts; such as Griffino, that place their loue in unworthy persons: and such as Martano, that vnder the name of kinred, are most vile and filthy adulterers, which how common it is now a dayes, this saying shewes, turned now almost to a prouerbe, The nearer of kin, the sooner in: and that verse of Ouid, translated, or pretily turned by a pleasant Gentleman to this purpose,*

*Tuta frequensque via est sub amici fallere nomen,*

*Tuta frequensque licet sit via crimen habet.*

*A safe and common way it is by kinred to deceaue,*

*But safe and common though it be, tis knau'ry by your leaue.*

*The great aphorisme or maxime set downe in the two last verses of the second staffe of this booke, was imitated by a Master Edward Gentleman of our country in his yonger dayes, though a man euer of great wit and worth: his verse was this,*

*Dier a Somerset-  
shire man.*

*He that hath plaist his heart on hie,*

*Must not lament although he die.*

*To which purpose, all that haue written of this common place of loue, and chiefly Petrark in his infinite sonets, in the midst of all his lamentation, still had this comfort, that his loue was placed on a worthy Ladie: and our English Petrark, Sir Philip Sidney, or (as Sir Walter Raulegh in his Epitaph worthily calleth him) the Scipio and the Petrark of our time, often comforting himselfe in the sonets of Stella, though despairing to attaine his desire, and (though that tyrant honour still refused) yet the nobilitie, the beautie, the worth, the graciousnesse, and those her other perfections, as made him both count her and call her inestimable rich; makes him in the midst of those his mones, reioyce euen in his owne greatest losses, as in his eighteenth sonet, which many I am sure haue read:*

*With what sharpe checks I in my selfe am shent,  
When into reasons recknings I do go,  
And by such counts, my selfe a bankrout know,  
Of all those goods which heau'n to me hath lent,  
Vnable quite to pay eu'n nature rent,  
Which vnto it by birthright I did ow,  
And which is worse, no good excuse can show,  
But that my wealth I haue most idly spent:  
My youth doth wast, my knowledge brings forth toyes,  
My wit doth striue those passions to defend,  
With my reward (spoyled with vaine annoyes)  
I find my course to loose it selfe doth bend:  
I see, yet do no g eater sorrow take,  
Then that I leele no more for Stellas sake.*

*And thus much of this matter of loue. In the conflict at Paris gate, in presence of both Princes, we may note how the Generals eye is a great encouragement to the souldier. In Renaldo oration, we may obserue that eloquence and learning is not onely a great ornament, but sometime a great aid to a Captaine. And for the speech it selfe, it is both pithy and methodicall. For being (as they terme it) of the deliberative kind, it layes downe (though briefly, yet plainly if you mark it) the facilitie, the commendation, the vtilitie, and the necessitie of that to which he perswades them.*

Historie.

*For historicall matter, there is litle in this booke, only where he touches: the weak buildings of Paris, being built so high and so sleight, it is euident they are so at this day, and doubtlesse it is a great blot in a magnificent citie to see browne paper houses, which were a matter easily redressed in one age: as Augustus Cæsar did at Rome, forbidding them to build but with stone, and making great provision for stufte and cariage for such as would build, at a reasonable price, as Suetonius setteth downe at large: but this is not much to the purpose.*

Allegorie.

*Whereas Silence is said to be sent by God, with an Angell to conduct the Christian succors to Paris: by the Angell is meant allegorically Gods assistance and grace, without which no victories can be obtained: and by Silence is vnderstood wise secretnesse, to conceale our intent from our enemies, which is a great furtherance in warre.*

Allusion.

*For the Allusion of Martano, I referre it to the next booke, where his cowardize is more largely touched.*

The end of the Annotations of the sixteenth Booke.





Re Nerandin

Mar

Grifon

Mar Stan

Grifon

PARIGI

Soldati

Rod

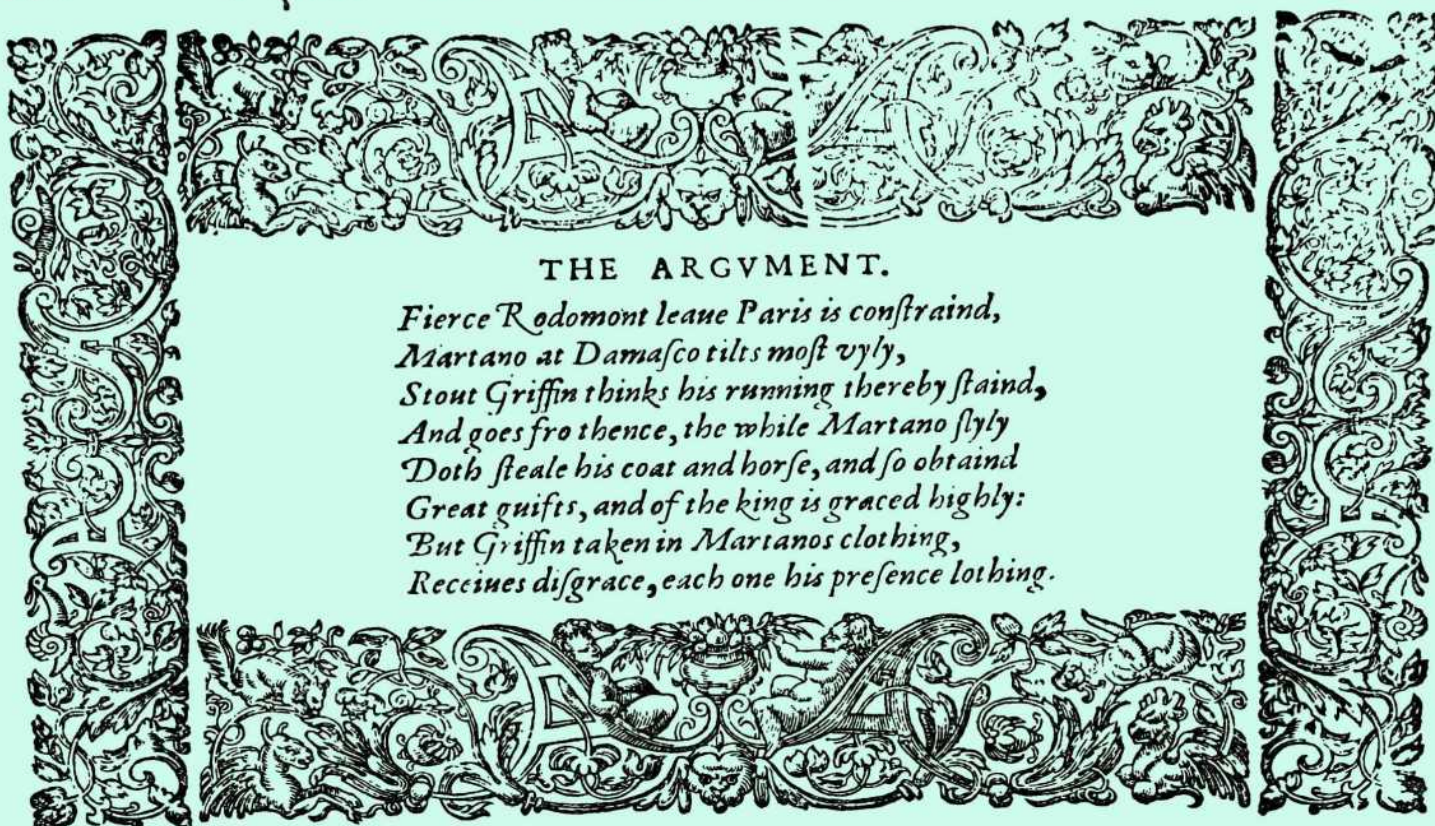
Rod

Paladini

Carlo

Plebe





## THE ARGUMENT.

*Fierce Rodomont leaue Paris is constraind,  
Martano at Damasco tilts most vyly,  
Stout Griffin thinks his running thereby staind,  
And goes fro thence, the while Martano slyly  
Doth steale his coat and horse, and so obtaynd  
Great guifts, and of the king is graced highly:  
But Griffin taken in Martanos clothing,  
Receiues disgrace, each one his presence lothing.*

*Of Sylla & Marius  
cruellie read  
Plutark in their liues  
Helioabalus fir  
named Varius,  
for his monstrous  
lecherie, and his  
varietie therein.*

*Antoninus Bas-  
sianus slaine for  
his beaustie  
and crueltie, for  
which his name  
grew so odious,  
that none was e-  
uer after him so  
called.*

*Of Effelin I  
spake before in  
the notes of the  
third booke.*

*\*He means her-  
by Lodwicke  
Seiorie, that cal-  
led in Charls the  
8. out of France  
into Italie.*



<sup>1</sup> He most iust God, when  
once mans sins do grow  
Beyond the bouids of par-  
don and of grace,  
Because that mē his iudge-  
ments iust may know,  
No lesse then loue, to rule  
on earth doth place,  
Vile Monsters such as ty-  
rannize vs so,

With wrong the right, with lust they lawes deface:  
For this same cause were Sylla sent and Marius,  
The Neron both, and filthie minded Varius.

<sup>2</sup> For this Domician held in Rome the raigne,  
And Antoninus of that name the last,  
And Massimin a base vnworthie swaine,  
To plague mankind in Princely throne was plait:  
For this in Thebs did cruell Creon raigne,  
With other tyrants more in ages past,  
For this of late hath Italie beene wonne,  
By men of Lumbardie, of Goth and Hunne.

<sup>3</sup> What should I of vniust Attyla speake?  
Of Effelin, and of an hundred more?  
Whom God doth send his anger iust to wreake,  
On vs that still neglect his sacred lore.  
The times forepast long since, the present eake,  
Of such examples yeelds vs wofull store,  
How we vnthankfull and vnfruitfull sheepe,  
Are giu'n to hungrie rau'ning Wolues to keepe.

<sup>4</sup> Such Wolues as would not onely by their wills,  
Seaze all our goods and substance as their pray,

But also send beyond the Alps high hills,  
For other Wolues more hunger staru'd then thay:  
The bones of men that Thralimeno fills;  
The fights of Treb and Cannas are but play,  
If with our bloodie slaughters they compare,  
Of Adda, Mela, Ronco, and of Tare.

<sup>5</sup> No doubt God in heau'nly throne that sits,  
And thence our deeds and thoughts doth plainly see  
Vs to be spoild and conquerd thus permits,  
By those that are perhaps as ill as we:  
But if to please him we would bend our wits,  
Then from these foes he soone would set vs fr e,  
And we should see their punishment er long,  
That vs oppresse by villanie and wrong.

<sup>6</sup> But now to turne from whence I did digresse,  
I told you how when Charles the news had hard,  
Of houses burnd, and mē in great distresse,  
By him that doth nor God nor man regard,  
Vnto their aid he doth him'selfe addresse,  
And chuse some speciall men to be his guard,  
And meeting such as fled, their course he stand,  
And thele or such like words to them he said.

<sup>7</sup> O simple fooles, what meane you hence to ranne?  
Turne backe for shame, turne backe and do not fly,  
You chuse the greater ill the lesse to shunne,  
To liue with shame and may with honor dy,  
What citie haue you left when this is wonne?  
What hope is left a fortune new to try?  
Shall one vile Pagan boit another day,  
That he alone hath driu'n you all away?

*Thrasimeno, Tre-  
bia and Cannas  
were the places  
where Hannibal  
slew so many of  
the Romans,  
which he compa-  
res to some bat-  
tles fought in  
France in the time  
when Guiscard  
wrote of.*

*Seuener*

This



8

This said, he came vnto the pallace gate,  
Where now the Pagan Prince triumphant stood,  
Most like a serpent fierce that hath of late,  
His old skin cast and left it in the wood,  
Reioycing now of his renewed state,  
Of his fresh strength, of young and lustie blood,  
He shewes his forked tongue and comes apace,  
And eu'rie beast that sees him giues him place.

9

Thus scornfull and thus proud the Pagan stands,  
With threats to spoile the Pallace and deface,  
And not a man that once his force withstands,  
Vntill king Charles appeared in the place;  
Who looking on his old victorious hands,  
Said thus; and is now alterd to the case,  
That these my hands that wonted were to win,  
To yeeld and to be faint should now begin?

10

Why should the strength, the valour and the might,  
That I was wont in you to feele now faile?  
Shall this same Panim dogge eu'n in my sight,  
My people slay, my dwelling house assaile?  
No, first on me a thousand deaths alight,  
No death can make a princely heart to quaille;  
And with that word with couched speare in rest,  
He runnes and smites the Pagan on the brest.

11

And straight the other of the chosen crew,  
On eu'rie side the Pagan do beset,  
But how he scapt, and what did then ensue,  
Another time ile tell, but not as yet:  
For first some matters past I must renew,  
And namely' Griffin I may not forget,  
And craftie Origilla with the tother,  
That was her bedfellow and not her brother.

12

These three vnto Damasco came together,  
The most fast and richest towne of all the East,  
What time great lords and knights repaired thither,  
Allured by the fame of such a feast.  
I told you from the holy citie hither,  
Was fife or sixe dayes iourney at the least:  
But all the townes about both small and great,  
Are not like this for state and fruitfull feat.

13

For first, beside the cleare and temprat aire,  
Not noid with sommers heat nor winters cold,  
There are great store of buildings large and faire,  
Of carued stone most stately to behold,  
The streetes all pau'd where is their most repaire,  
And all the ground is of so fruitfull mold,  
That all the yeare their spring doth seeme to last,  
And brings them store of fruites of daintie tast.

14

About the Citie lies a little hill,  
That shades the morning sunne in erly houres,  
Of waters sweet (which here we vse to still)  
They make such store with spice and iuyce offlowrs  
As for the quantitie might driue a mill,  
Their gardens haue faire walkes and shady bowrs:  
But (that which chiefe maintaineth all the sweets)  
Two christall streames do runne amid the streets.

15

Such wast he native beautie of the towne:  
But now because they looke for great resort,  
Of Princes and of Lords of great renowne,  
They decke their citie in another sort:  
Each Ladie putteth on her richest gowne,  
Each house with Arras hang'd in stately port:  
The noble youths do stand vpon comparison,  
Whose horle doth best, who weares the best caparif

16

Thus Griffin and his mates come to this place,  
And first they view these shows with great delighr,  
And after they had rode a little space,  
A curteous squire periwades them to alight,  
And praieth them to do his house that grace,  
To eate and take their lodgings there that night:  
They thanke him for his kind and friendly offer,  
And straight accept the courtie he doth profer.

17

They had set downe before them costly meat,  
Of fundrie wines there was no little store,  
Of precious fruits the plentie was so great,  
As they had seldome seene the like before:  
The while their host doth vnto them repeat,  
The cause of all this feasting, and wherefore  
The king appointed all these solemne sports,  
To draw together knights of fundrie sorts.

18

But Griffin (though he came not for this end,  
For praise and brauerie at tilt to runne,  
But came to find his fleeting female friend)  
Yet was his courage such he would not shunne,  
In these braue sports some little time to spend,  
Where of well doing honor might be wonne.  
He promist straight though little were his leasure,  
Before he go to see and shew some pleasure.

19

And first he asketh farther of the feast,  
If it were new ordaind, or else of old?  
His host replieth thus (my worthie guest)  
I shall in brieft to you this thing vnfold:  
Our Prince the greatest Prince in all the East,  
Hath newly pointed this great feast to hold:  
This is the first, but all of his retinew,  
Mind ech fourth month this custome to continew.

20

In token of great gladnes and great ioy,  
By all the citie is the feast begunne,  
In token of the danger and annoy,  
That Ngrandin (our king) did lately shunne,  
Lockt vp foure months where he could not enioy  
The vse of earth, of water, aire nor sunne:  
Yet at the four months end by hap he scaped  
The death, with yawning mouth on him that gaped.

21

(But plaine to shew you whence did come the seed,  
Of which this danger seemed first to grow)  
Loue did to Ngrandin the danger breed;  
The king of Cypres daughter pleas'd him so,  
Because her beautie did the rest exceed,  
To see her, needs (in persion) he would go:  
He saw, he likt, he woo'd, he won, he marri'd her,  
And homward then by ship he would haue carid her

*Norandine,  
Here beginneth  
the tale of Lucina  
at this 20. st.  
and endeth at  
the 50.*

*Casars word  
was as it were  
said.*

*Smile.*

*In the xviij.  
book. Staff. 5.*



*Virgil The ff. ff.  
e. Enead. Ar. ff. ff.  
manu cedunt que  
fagittas accepit  
fias que tela go-  
rebat Achates.*

But lo a wind and tempest rose so fore,  
As three dayes space they looked to be drownd,  
And made them land vpon an vknowne shore,  
Where straight we pitcht our tents vpon the ground,  
And (lor of trees and grasse there was good store)  
The King in hope some venton to haue found,  
Into the next adioyning wood doth goe,  
Two pages beare his quiuer and his boe.

His meaning was some stag or buck to kill,  
We wait his comming in the tent at ease,  
When suddenly such noise our eares doth fill,  
As winds in woods, and waues do make in seas,  
And ay more nie vs it approached, till  
We plaine might see vnto our sore disease,  
A monster huge that ran along the sand,  
Destroying all that in the way did stand.

This Orke (for so men do the monster call)  
Directed straight his course vpon our tent,  
His eyes were out, how ere it did befall,  
But yet he was so quicke and sharpe of sent,  
As all his blindnesse holpe not vs at all,  
He hunteth like a spawell by the vent,  
His sent is such as none can hope to shunne him,  
His pace is such as no man can outrunne him.

*Ouid Metam. 3.  
Sine illi tela pro-  
rabant: sine fuga  
sine ulla metus  
prohibebat u-  
trunque.*

Thus whether they prepar'd to fight or fly,  
Or whether feare both fight and flight did let,  
He takes them as his prisoners by and by,  
Of fortie, ten scarce to the ship could get,  
Among the other prisoners tane was I,  
Whilst I our Queene in safetie would haue set,  
But all in vaine to flie, it did not boote,  
He was so quicke of sent, and swift of foote.

As shepheards hang a wallet at their wast,  
So at his girdle hangs a mightie sacke,  
In which the better sort of vs he plast,  
The rest he bound together in a packe,  
And to his caue that was most huge and vast,  
He beares vs (hopelesse euer to come backe)  
A comely matron in this den he had,  
Maids faire and foule, some poore, some richly clad.

Beside this female family of his,  
He hath a caue wherein he keepes his flocke,  
That caue in length and largenesse passeth this,  
Made all by hand out of the stonie rocke:  
And (for mans flesh his chiefe daintie is)  
Into the caue he safely doth vs locke,  
The while he leades abroad his goates and sheepe,  
Which in the fields adioyning he doth keepe.

The King not knowing this, returned backe,  
The silence that he found some feare did breed:  
But when he found his wife and men were lacke,  
He then to sea did hast him with great speed:  
He sees plaine signes of hast, of spoyle, of wracke,  
Yet knowes he not the author of this deed,  
Vntill he had his ship by hap recouered,  
Then by his men the fact was plaine discouered.

When he had heard at last the wofull newe  
How greatly was his heart surprysd with gr  
What gods, what fortune did he not accuse?  
For all his losses but *Lucyna* chiefe?  
But dangers all and death he first will chuse,  
Ere he then leaue his loue without reliefe,  
He either will her libertie procure,  
Or else he will like chance with her endure.

He leaues his ship and goes by land apace,  
There where the monster had his loue conuaid,  
And often wailes her hard and wofull case,  
Desiring and despairing of her aid.  
Now came he in the kenning of the place,  
And stands twixt halfe amazd and halfe afraid:  
At last he enters (loue expelling feare)  
When by good hap the monster was not there.

His wife was there, who with compassion moued,  
Admonisht him to make but little stay,  
But hasten thence if to his life he loued,  
Lest that her husband find him in the way:  
Yet from his purpose this him not remoued,  
But to the sober matron he doth say,  
In vaine you seeke to driue me hence by terror,  
Desire hath hither brought me, and not error.

By my ill hap while I abroad was riding,  
The Orke bare away my dearest wife  
I hither come of her to heare some tiding,  
Or hauing lost my loue, to leete my life,  
I care not I, if she in life be biding,  
If she be dead, my death shall end this strife,  
Loue in this point so resolute hath made me,  
You should but leete your labour to disswade me.

The gentle matron in this sort replies,  
Know this, thy wife in safetie doth remain  
But hard it is to compasse or deuise,  
Which way to get her from his hand againe,  
His want of sight, his pasing sent supplies,  
To strue with him by force it were but vaine,  
He spoileth n eeh, but women do not die,  
Saue onely such as strue away to flie.

But those he finds his companie to shunne,  
With hatred great he doth for ay pursue,  
Some he doth hang all naked in the sunne,  
And day by day their torments doth renew;  
And some immediatly to death are done,  
Both yong and old, both foule or faire of hew,  
So that to seeke to let *Lucyna* free,  
May harme her much, and little profit thee.

Wherefore my sonne depart the while thou may,  
(The matron saith) *Lucyna* shall not die,  
For hither shortly he will her conuay,  
Where she shall fare no worse then these and I,  
Depart? (quoth he) nay here I mind to stay,  
And fall what shall, I will my fortune trie,  
And if my hap be such I cannot free her,  
At least I meane before I die to see her.

*Virg Aeneas  
Quem non incedit  
sa  
minima Deu.*



36

The matrons mind with much compassion moued,  
 To see his louing and most constant mind,  
 That from his purpose would not be remoued,  
 To bring him aid and comfort was inclin'd:  
 And then she told him how it him behoued,  
 If so to see his wife he had assign'd,  
 To vse some such deuice as she would tel him, (him,  
 That when the Orke should come he might not smel

37

She had that hanged in the houses rooffe,  
 The hairie skins of many a bearded goate,  
 And knowing best what was for his behoofe,  
 Of one of them she makes him make a coate,  
 And with goates suet for a further prooffe,  
 To noint his body from the foote to throate:  
 And in this sort his shape and fauour hiding,  
 He commeth to the place where we were biding.

38

Now night drew neare, his h... the Orke doth blow,  
 And all his heards came backe vnto his fold,  
 And *Norandino* among the goates doth go,  
 And enters in, loue maketh him so bold,  
 The Orke shuts the doore, and leaues vs so,  
 Shut vp as safe as in a towre or hold,  
 Then doth the king at large vnto his louer,  
 His comming and the meanes thereof discover.

39

*Lucina* doth not onely not reioyce,  
 To see her husband come thus strangely clad,  
 But with most lamentable mournfull voyce,  
 She blamd him that such perill venterd had,  
 And sweares that if she might haue had her choyce,  
 She would alone haue felt this fortune bad,  
 And that before it somewhat easd her paine,  
 To thinke that he in safetie did remaine.

40

Thus said *Lucina* faire with watred eies,  
 A... ing now more dolefull then before;  
 But *Norandino* in this sort replies,  
 Thinkst thou my deare I loued thee no more?  
 Yes sure, and will eu'n now a meane deuise  
 Both thee and these to freedome to restore,  
 And to deliuer from this seruile slavery,  
 By helpe of this same skin and grease vsfauery.

41

And straight he taught vs as himselfe had tride,  
 Each one to kill a goat and take the skin,  
 And outwardly to wear the hairy hide,  
 And to be nointed with the grease within.  
 Thus eu'ry one doth for himselfe prouide,  
 Before the sunne did yet to shine begin,  
 Then... e the Orke and mou'd away the stone,  
 And out the bearded goates came one and one.

42

The smelling Orke at the doore doth stand,  
 We past like goates and make no noise nor speech,  
 Yet oft he groped with his hideous hand,  
 But poore *Lucina* could not chuse but skreech;  
 Or that he hapt to touch her with his wand,  
 Or else too roughly pawd her by the breech,  
 So back he puts her straight, and locks her vp,  
 And sweares that she should drinke a sory cup.

43

Himselfe driues out his flocke (as wont he was)  
 And we like goates among the goates do keepe,  
 And when as they were feeding on the grasse,  
 The monstrous heardman laid him downe to sleepe.  
 Thus we escapt, but our good King alas,  
 (That mist his loue) doth nought but waile & weep  
 And saue that still he hopt of her reliefe,  
 He would no doubt haue dide of very grieve.

44

At night he turneth back with like desire,  
 As he before had come to set her free,  
 And he conceales himselfe with like attire,  
 From him that wants his instrument to see.  
 The Orke inflam'd with cruell rage and ire,  
 And finds himselfe deceiued thus to be,  
 This recompence he points her for her paines,  
 Vpon that hill to hang each day in chaines.

45

A cruell doome, but who could it resist?  
 Away went we, each for himselfe afraid,  
 But *Norandino* euer doth persist  
 In his first purpose of procuring aid,  
 Lamenting that so narrowly he mist  
 To bring her out, among the goates he staid,  
 And like a goat (forgetting his estate)  
 He go'th out early, and returneth late.

46

She sees him go and come, but all in vaine,  
 She maketh signes to him to haue him part,  
 He constantly resolueth to remaine,  
 The loue of her possesseth so his hart,  
 Despising danger and enduring paine,  
 He hopeth hopelesse still to ease her smart,  
 At foure months end (good fortune so prepar'd)  
*Gradasso* thither came and *Mandricard*.

47

And (for her father was their louing friend)  
 They gaue this bold attempt to set her free,  
 And to her father straight they do her send,  
 Who was full glad and ioyfull her to see,  
 And that her daungers had this happie end:  
 But *Norandino* was more glad then he;  
 Who with the goats no longer now did stay,  
 But while the Orke slept he stole away.

48

And now for ioy of this great perill past,  
 In which he stayd so wofull and forlorne,  
 And that the memorie therof may last,  
 To those that shalbe, and are yet vnborne,  
 (For neuer Prince before such wo did tast,  
 Nor stayd so long in miserie and scorne,  
 And it shalbe iust sixteene weeks tomorrow,  
 That he remained in this wo and sorow.)

49

Therefore I say the king prepares this sport,  
 With verie great magnificence and boist,  
 Inuiting hither men of eu'rie sort,  
 Such as in chivalrie excell the most,  
 That far and neare may carie the report,  
 Of these great triumphs vnto eu'rie cost.  
 This tale the courteous host did tell his guest  
 Of him that first ordaind the sumptuous feast.

M



50

In this and such like talke they spend the night,  
And then they sleepe vpon their beds of downe,  
But when that once it shined cleare and light,  
The trumpets sounded ouer all the towne,  
And *Griffin* straight puts on his armor bright,  
Aspiring after fame and high renowne;  
His leud companion likewise doth the same,  
To shew a hope as well as he of fame.

51

All armed thus they came vnto the field,  
And view the warlike troupes as they did passe,  
Where some had painted on their crest and shield,  
Or some deuice that there described was,  
What hope or doubt his loue to him did yeeld,  
They all were Christens then, but now alas,  
They all are Turks vnto the endlesse shame,  
Of thole that may and do not mend the same.

52

For where they should employ their sword and lance,  
Against the Infidels our publike foes,  
Gods word and true religion to aduance,  
They to poore Christens worke perpetuall woes:  
To you I write, ye kings of Spaine and France,  
Let these alone, and turne your force on thole:  
And vnto you also I write as much,  
Ye nations fierce, Zwizzers I meane and Dutch.

53

*Charls the great  
was the first that  
was called the  
most Christian  
King, for defen-  
ding the Church  
of Rome.  
Ferdinando was  
the first that was  
called Catholike,  
for driuing the  
Moore out of  
Granata.*

Lo, tone of Christen kings vsurps a name,  
Another Catholike will needs be called:  
Why do not both your deeds declare the same?  
Why are Christs people slaine by you and thralld?  
Get backe againe Ierusalem for shame,  
That now the Turke hath tane from you and walled  
Constantinople get that famous towne,  
That erst belonged to th'Imperiall crowne.

54

Dost not thou Spaine confront with Affrike shore,  
That more then Italy hath thee offended?  
Yet to her hurt thou leauest that before,  
Against the Infidels thou hadst intended:  
O Italy a slaue for euermore,  
In such sort mard as neuer can be mended,  
A slaue to slaues, and made of sinne a sinke,  
And sotted sleepe like men orecome with drinke.

55

Ye Swizzers fierce, if feare of famine driue you,  
To come to Lombardie to seeke some food,  
Are not the Turks as neare? why should it grieve you  
To spill your foes, and spare your brothers blood?  
They haue the gold and riches to relieue you,  
Enrich your selues with lawtull gotten good,  
So shall all Europe be to you beholding,  
For driuing them from these parts and withholding.

56

*This was Leo the  
sensib.*

Thou Lion stout that holdst of heau'n the kayes,  
(A waightie charge) see that from drowfie sleepe  
Thou wake our realme, and bring her ioytull dayes,  
And from these forren wolues it safely keepe,  
God doth thee to this height of honor raise,  
That thou mayst feed and well defend thy sheepe,  
That with a roring voice and mighty arme,  
Thou mayst withhold thy flock from eu'ry harme.

57

But whither roues my rudely rolling pen,  
That waxe so sawcie to reprove such peeres.  
I said before that in Darnalco then  
They Christend were (as in records appeares)  
So that the armor of their horse and men  
Was like to ours (though changd of later yeares)  
And Ladies fild their galleries and towrs,  
To see the iusts as they did here in ours.

58

Each striues in shew his fellow to exceed,  
And to be gallant in his mistris fight,  
To see each one manage his stately steed,  
Was to the standers by a great delight:  
Some praise vnto themselves, some shame do breed,  
By shewing horses doings wrong or right,  
The chiefeist prize that should be of this tilt,  
An armor was rich, set with stone and gil

59

By hap a merchant of *A menia* found  
This armour, and to *Nerandin* it sold,  
Who, had he knowne how good it was and sound,  
Would not haue left it sure for any gold,  
(The circumstance I cannot now expound,  
I meane ere long it shall to you be told)  
Now must I tell of *Griffin* that came in,  
Iust when the sport and tilting did begin.

60

Eight valiant knights the challenge did sustaine,  
Against all commers that would runne that day,  
These eight were of the Princes priuate traine,  
Of noble blood, and noble eu'ry way,  
They fight in sport, but some in sport were slaine,  
For why as hotly they did fight in pray,  
As deadly foes do fight in battell ray,  
Saue that the King may when he list them stay.

61

Now *Griffins* fellow was *Martano* named,  
Who (though he were a coward and a bea  
Like bold blind Bayard he was not asha. ned,  
To enter like a knight among the rest,  
His countenance likewise in shew he framed,  
As though he were as forward as the best,  
And thus he stood and viewd a bitter fight,  
Between a Baron and another Knight,

62

Lord of Seleucia the tone they call,  
And one of eight that did maintaine the iust,  
The Knight *Ombruno* hight of person tall,  
Who in his vizer tooke so great a thrust,  
That from his horte astomed he did fall,  
And with his liuely blood distaind the dust  
This fight amazd *Martano* in such sort,  
He was afraid to leese his life in sport.

63

Soone after this so fierce confliet was done,  
Another challenger straight steppeth out,  
With whom *Martano* was requird to runne,  
But he (whose heart was euer full of doubt)  
With fond excuses sought the same to shunne,  
And shewd him selfe a faint and dastard lout,  
Till *Griffin* egd him on, and blam'd his feare,  
As men do set a mastiue on a Beare.

Then



64

Then tooke he heart of grace, and on did ride,  
And makes a little florish with his speare,  
But in the middle way he stept aside,  
For feare the blow would be too big to beare:  
Yet one that would seeke this disgrace to hide,  
Might in this point impute it not to feare,  
But rather that his horse not good and redie,  
Did shun the tilt, and ranne not eu'n nor stedie.

65

*Demofthenes an  
excellent Orator*

But after with his sword he dealt so ill,  
*Demofthenes* him could not haue defended,  
He shewd both want of courage and of skill,  
So as the lookers on were all offended,  
And straight with hissing and with voices shrill,  
The conflict cowardly begun was ended:  
In his behalfe was *Griffin* fore ashamed,  
His heart thereto with double heate inflamed.

66

For now he sees how much him it stands,  
With double value to wipe out the blot,  
And shew himselfe the more stout of his hands,  
Sith his companion shewd himselfe a sot,  
His fame or shame must flie to forren lands,  
And if he now should faile one little jot,  
The same wold seem a foule and huge transgression,  
His mate had fild their minds with such impression.

67

The first he met Lord of Sidona hight,  
And towards him he runs with malsie speare,  
And gaue a blow that did so heauie light,  
As to the ground it did him backward beare:  
Then came of Laodice another knight,  
On him the staffe in peeces three did teare,  
Yet was the counterbuffe thereof so great,  
The knight had much ado to keepe his seate.

68

But when they came with naked swords to trie,  
He should the honor and the prise obtaine,  
So *Griffin* did with deadly strokes him plie,  
At last he left him stoni'd on the plaine.  
Straightway two valiant brothers standing by,  
That at *Griffin* tooke no small disaaine,  
The one *Corimbo*, tother *Tirsel* hight,  
These two forthwith do challenge him to fight.

69

Succesiuely them both he ouerthrew,  
And now men thought that he the prise wou'd win,  
But *Salintern* that saw them downe in vew,  
To enue good *Griffin* doth begin,  
This man the stoutest of all he courtly crew,  
Doth take a speare in hand, and enters in,  
And in the combat *Griffin* straight defies,  
And scornes to haue a stranger win the prize.

70

But *Griffin* chose one staffe among the rest,  
The biggest and the strongest of a score,  
And with the same he pierceth backe and brest,  
That downe he fell and neuer stirred more;  
The King that loued and esteemd him best,  
Laments his death, and maketh mone therefore,  
But yet the common sort were faine and glad,  
That knew his mind and manners were but bad.

*Many times the  
people hate those  
whom the prince  
makes so much  
of.*

71

Next after him two others he doth meet,  
*Ermofilo* the captaine of his guard,  
And *Carmond* Admirall of all his fleet;  
With these a while he had a conflict hard,  
The first vnhorst was left vpon his feet,  
The other with a blow was almost mard.  
Thus of eight challengers remaind but one,  
The rest were quite subdude by him alone.

72

This one was he of whom at first I spake,  
Lord of Seleucia a valiant man,  
This one to *Griffin* did resistance make,  
And long it was ere ought of him he wan,  
But one blow on his head so fierce he strake,  
As he likewise to stagger now began,  
Had not the King made them to haue bene parted,  
Sure *Griffin* had him kild ere he had parted.

73

Thus all those eight, that all the world defide,  
By one alone were vanquished and slaine,  
So as the King was forced to prouide,  
An order new for those that do remaine;  
(By parting runners some on either side)  
For yet was spent not past an houre or twaine,  
Left this his triumph should haue end too soone,  
He makes them spend therein the afternoone.

74

But *Griffin* full of wrath and discontent,  
Backe to his host with his companion came,  
The praise he wan did him not so content,  
As he was grieu'd at his companions shame:  
Wherefore to leaue the towne they do consent,  
While men were busie looking on the game,  
And to a little towne fast by he goes,  
And meanes himselfe a while for to repos

75

The trauell sore he had before endured,  
So great a wearinesse in him had bred,  
And such desire of sleepe withall procured,  
As straight he gat him to his naked bed.  
The while *Martano* to all fraud inured,  
And vsing aid of her mischieuous head,  
(As he did soundly sleepe) deuisd the while  
A stratageme most strange, him to beguile.

76

They do conclude to take *Griffin*'s steed,  
And cote, and cu'ry warlike implement,  
And that *Martano* in *Griffin*'s steed,  
Himselfe to *Norandino* shall present.  
This they deuisd, this they performd in deed,  
And boldly backe againe *Martano* went,  
In *Griffin*'s armor stoutly stepping in,  
As did the Asse that ware the Lions skin.

77

Herueth in among the thickest presse,  
An houre before the setting of the sunne,  
The King and all the rest straightway do guesse,  
That this was he that had such honor wonne:  
And straight great honour they to him addresse,  
And caule the like by others to be done,  
And his base name, not worthy to be named,  
About the towne with honor was proclaimed.

M ij

*In Esops fables*



78

Fall by the King his cheek by cheek,  
And in his praise they songs and verses make,  
In Hebrew tongue, in Latin and in Greeke.  
And now this while did *Griffin* hap to wake,  
And seeing that his armour was to seeke,  
He first begins some small mistrust to take,  
Yet hardly could it sinke into his reason,  
That she had giu'n consent to such a treason.

79

In feare and doubt no little time he howered;  
But when his host the truth had plaine declard,  
And that he saw the falshood plaine disouer'd,  
By which she had in follies bands him snard,  
The truth shewd plain, that loue before had couered,  
And to reuenge this wrong he straight prepar'd,  
But wanting other furniture (perforce)  
He tooke *Martano's* armor and his horse.

80

And backe vnto *Damasco* he doth ride,  
Arriuing there within an houre of night,  
And entring at the gate vpon the side,  
The pallace of the King stood plaine in sight,  
Where then the King a banquet did prouide,  
For many a Duke and Lord, and valiant Knight,  
And *Griffin* boldly sate among the rest,  
Forgetting that he ware the scorned crest.

81

And taken for the man whose coate he ware,  
His presence did the better sort offend,  
Of which when vile *Martano* was aware,  
That of the table sate at th' vpper end,  
And sees that to disgrace him they forbare,  
And thinke him his companion and his friend:  
His friendship and acquaintance he renounced,  
And this hard doom of him he straight pronounced.

82

Sir King (quoth he) it seems that for my sake,  
You graciously forbear to do him shame,  
That of his basenesse shamefull prooffe did make  
This day, and now againe confirms the same:  
But you the matter and the man mistake,  
I know not him, his nation, nor his name,  
By chance I met him onely on the way,  
I neuer saw him I, till yesterday.

83

Wherefore might I herein your grace aduise,  
You should a sample make him for the rest,  
That here presents vnto your princely eies,  
Himselfe vnworthy, and vnwelcome guest,  
Let him tormented be in cruell wise,  
(This is my doome) let him be hangd at least,  
And vnreuenged let him not be borne,  
That knighthood should receiue so great a scorne.

*A fit counsellor  
for a Prince.*

**Morall.**

In the beginning of this booke, he shewes how God doth plague people oftentimes, by sending tyrants and most wicked and cruell Princes to rule over them; which as it is indeed the greatest punishment a country can haue, so of the contrary side, may be in like sort concluded, that countries cannot haue a more ample blessing of God, nor a greater testimonie of his fauour, then to haue a mercifull Prince that loueth the people, and is carefull of their peace and profit: and as mine author complaineth of the misery of Italie, oppressed by tyrants, so contrariwise I might take occasion to magnifie the felicitie of our realme of England, for the gracious and mild gouernement of our Soueraigne, saue that so high and plentiful a matter, requires an entire treatise, and not so broken a discourse as I vse in these brieue notes, and therefore I reserve it wholly for another worke of mine owne, if God giue me abilitie to performe it: but now to the matter of this booke.

84

Thus much the vile and base *Martano* seth,  
And *Origilla* soothd it with as much,  
And wisht an halter stop the villains breth.  
Nay (quoth the King) the sinne is nothing such,  
As is in law or rea'on worthy death,  
His life or yet his libertie to tuch:  
This, for examples sake I thinke it meet,  
To do him some disgrace in open street.

85

And straight he rounds a Sergeant in his care,  
And secretly appoints him what to do,  
Who came forthwith vnto the table where  
*Griffin* sate, and made no more ado,  
But leadeth him, that no such thing did feare,  
A secret prison and a sure vnto,  
And for that night he clapt him vp in fetters,  
Where theeues do vse to lie and euill debtors.

86

Next day *Martano* that did greatly dread,  
Lest this his foule deuice would come to light,  
If *Griffin* should be heard his cause to pleade,  
Therefore as soone as *Phabus* shined bright,  
(Pretending businesse) away he sped,  
And leaues *Griffin* in this wofull plight:  
But ere he goes, the King to him imparts  
No small rewards for his, not his defaults.

87

But let him go his wayes, and do not doubt,  
That this vnknowne and vnreuengd shall be:  
Straight was *Griffin* from the iayle put out,  
And carted so as all men might him see,  
Tide hand and foot, and people all about,  
Of which the most were but of meaner degree,  
Also the armor whence this error came,  
Was hald about vnto his farder shame.

88

With many filthy words they him reuile,  
From filthy tongues, that hard it is to stop,  
And shewd him round about the towne twile,  
At eu'ry crosse, and house, and stall and shop:  
Then thinking him for euer to exile,  
They led him of that hill vnto the top,  
And there his bonds they loose with great disgrace,  
And then they will him packe him thence apace.

89

With scornfull sound of basen, pot and pan,  
They thought to driue him thence like Pees in  
But when he was vntide, then he began (twarmes,  
To make them know their error to their harmes,  
Then he did lay about, and play the man,  
Now hauing vse of both his warlike armes,  
But in what sort he them disinayd and lea'd,  
Within another booke shall be declared.

*Martano was  
with in the 18-  
booke, 31.*



In that Rodomont kills and massacres the people, without resistance, or without any man to meet head against him, we may marke how fitly and properly the multitude may be likened to sheepe, not onely in that they be shorne, and fleeced euery yeare for their wooll, and sometime pinched to the quicke by the greedie shearers, but also that when they should come to defend themselves, their houses, and children, from inuading of the enemye, they runne away like sheepe, from the noise of the barking of a little curre, vntill their shepheard come and defend them.

In the tale of Norandine, that for his faire Lucinas sake did hazard his life so manifestly, and after was contented to lap himselfe vp in a goates skin, and to noynt himselfe ouer with goates suet, we may note how hartie loue and affection, will make a man disdain nothing, be it neuer so base. In Martanos cowardise, and craftie vndermining of Griffino, we may marke how cowardly fellowes be commonly trecherous, and priuie vnderminers. And in that Norandine (a good natured and affable Prince) did condemne Griffino to prison, without once calling him to answer for himselfe, we may take an excellent good note (as my authour hath done vpon this matter in the next booke) how hurtfull a thing it is in a comon wealth when a magistrate (and specially a Prince) shal heare such a Martanist as Martano, or such a Gil as Origilla was, whisper them in their eares, & giue malicious and vnttrue (though probable) informations against well deserving men: And sure, though some hold opinion that these kinde of people (called informers) be to be cherished, as necessarie seruants of the state, though defamed otherwise, and euen confessing themselves, that it is no honest mans office; yet for my part, I haue heard wise men say, that such men are hurtfull to the state in pollicie, and make more malcontents, then they discover; and I am sure it is far from the rules of Christen charitie, and to be controld euen by heathenish ciuillitie. Tully speaking of the like men saith, *Anseribus cibaria publicè locantur & canes aluntur in Capitolio.* Likening them, to be as necessarie to keepe in the common wealth, as geese and doggs in the Capitoll: yet as Tully there noted, if the doggs barkt without cause, at such as came of deuotion to worship the Gods, then their legs ought to be broken: And euen so these doggs, these bloodhounds, nay bloodyhounds, that bite in their barking, if they shall at any time snap at such as come to honor and serue their Prince, it were pittie their leggs should be broken; for though they fal lame, yet they can be carried in coaches and horsslitters; marrie if their neckes were broken, the Realme should (I thinke) haue a fair riddance of them. But I wil end this note with a verse of that pleasant Poet Martiall, written aboue 1500 yeares since to Cæsar, who had then banished promooters out of Rome: the which verse (I confesse) concurs with my opinion.

*Turba grauis paci, placidæque inimica quieti,  
Quæ semper miseræ sollicitabat opes,  
Tradita Getulis, nec cœpit arena nocentes,  
Et delator habet quod dabat exilium,  
Exulat Ausonia profugus delator ab vrbe,  
Impensis vitam, Cæsaris annumeres.*

To this effect in English, after my plaine manner of versifying.

The vile Promooters, foes to peace and enemies to rest,  
That with false tales, do neuer cease, mens goods from them to wrest,  
Are banisht hence full many a mile, to barren place and wast,  
And he that others did exile, that selfe same cup doth tast;  
O happie Rome, that such hath lost, as mischeefe stil contriue,  
But Cæsar was at too much cost, to let them scape aliue.

thus much for the morall.

Historie.

Historie. I haue none to stand vpon in this booke saue such as either are alreadie touched in the margent, or else to be found in the table.

Allegorie there is none.

Alluf

But this illusion is noted by one Symon Fornarius at very great length, and the substance of all is this, that in describing notable triumph and feast of Norandino, he couertly describeth the notable tilting and turneying of certaine re Medice in Florence, and how one Gentleman of Florence plaid such a part as Martano, shunning the tilt, and did indeed vomit for feare, and was laught at for his labour. Also the number of the challengers agreed of Norandinos and this; so as it is euident that Fornarius saith right of the matter.

Here end the notes of the xvij. Canto.

M iij







## THE ARGUMENT.

*Now Griffin's knowne and felt: Algyre doth threaten  
The Tartar Prince: Charles fighteth and preuailes:  
Martano like a coward is well beaten,  
Marfias force Damasco warriers quails:  
From thence with tempest tost, and weather beaten,  
Both she and Griffin and Astolfo sailes:  
Medor and Cloridan with care and paine,  
Sseek for the carkas of their master slaine.*



Oft worthie Prince your  
vertues high and rare,  
With tongue and penne I  
praise, and euer shall,  
Although my words and  
verse inferiour are,  
In number and in worth to  
match them all:

But all about this one I do  
compare,  
And far refer, and pure diuineſt call,  
That giuing gracious care to thoſe are greeued,  
Yet eu'rig tale is not by you beleueed.

I heard your highneſſe haſt reſuſed,  
Although the ſame moſt earneſtly were ſought  
To heare the guiltleſſe aſſent man accuſed,  
(And when a great complaint to you was brought)  
You haue the matter and the man excuſed:  
Sufpending ſtill your iudgement and your thought,  
And keeping till the truth were truly tride,  
Euer one care for the contrarie ſide.

Indino had ſo great a grace,  
ſnot to credite tales ſo lightly told,  
He had not offerd Griffin this diſgrace,  
No though thereby he might haue gained gold:  
But ſo doth raſhneſſe vertue oft deface,  
As here was proued that was ſaid of old;  
The ſilly people beare the ſcourge and blame,  
Oft when their Princes do deſerue the ſame.

For Griffin (as in part I told before)  
When as his hands and feete were once vntide,

Did deale about of blowes and thruſts ſuch ſtore,  
As well was he could for him ſelfe provide,  
His wrath was ſuch as none he then forbore,  
The old, the young, the ſtrong, the feeble dide:  
And they that laught before to ſee him carted,  
Now for their labor whinde as much and ſmarted.

The people faint and mazed fled away,  
From him whom late they did deride and ſcorne,  
He followd them and kild them by the way,  
Daſtard: more meet to die, then to be borne.  
But in this chaſe a while I let him ſtay,  
Triumphing now that lately was forlorne:  
Of Rodomont now ſomewhat muſt be ſpoken,  
On whom at once I ſaid eight ſpeares were broken.

Eight ſpeares at once vpon the ſcaly ſkin,  
Did light, and diuers darts were throwne aloofe,  
For ſpears and darts he paſſeth not a pin,  
Such was his ſtrength, ſo ſure his armors prooffe:  
But when he ſaw that more and more came in,  
To part from thence he thinks his beſt behoofe,  
For why on eu'rie ſide they do aſſaile him,  
That needs at length his breath and ſtrength muſt  
(ſaile him).

Eu'n as the Lions whelps that ſee a Bull,  
Are at the firſt of his great ſtrength affraid,  
But when they ſee their fire to teare or pull,  
His throte and ſides, they runne their fire to aid,  
And flie vpon his face and horned ſcull,  
Till proſtrate on the ground they haue him laid:  
So now when Charles himſelfe was in the place,  
Each one tooke armes, each one took hart of grace

M iij

*He comes to  
Griffin the 25.  
ſt of this booke.*

*Simile.*

*Ane. colley  
grasſe in ſince*



8

*Simile.*

Who so hath seene a huge well baited Beare,  
With many dogs, men standing close about,  
When he by hap the stake or cord doth teare,  
And rusheth in among the thickest rout,  
How suddenly they runne away with feare,  
And make a lane to let the Beare go out:  
He might (I say) compare by such a sight,  
The manner of this Pagans fight and flight.

9

He rusheth out, and with his two hand blade,  
He flourisheth about in so fierce sort,  
That soone a way for him to passe was made,  
To hinder him his way it was no sport,  
And those that by the way did him inuade,  
Except they shifted better, were cut short:  
Thus in despite of *Charles* and all his realme,  
He came vnto the banks of *Sequans* streame.

10

And standing from the banke a little distance,  
That few or none behind could him enclose,  
An howers space and more he made resistance,  
Against king *Charles*, whose powre stil greater groes  
Till in the end in hope of no assistance,  
Displeas'd, but not disgrast away he goes:  
He takes the riuer fretting in his minde,  
That he had left a man aliue behinde.

11

And so he swell'd in anger and in pride,  
That he had thought to turne him backe againe,  
And to haue mounted on the other side,  
And all that should withstand him to haue slaine:  
But lo a messenger he then espide,  
That made him from that rash attempt refraine,  
But who did send him, and what word he bare,  
I meane to you another time declare.

*It follows in the  
15. of this booke*

12

But first what Discord did I meane to show,  
Who as you heard was by the Angell sent  
Among the Pagans, seeds of strife to sow,  
And as she was commanded thither went:  
Yet leauing Fraud behind the coales to blow,  
Least all the fire of strife should quite be spent,  
And to augment his strength, as much as may be,  
He carrid Pride with him out of the Abby.

13

*Go deputies.*

Pride leaues Hypocrisie to keepe his place,  
And thus these iarring friends together go,  
And when they traueled had a little space,  
They found by hap dame Ielousie also,  
That met a dwarfe that run a trudging pace,  
Eu'n as she wanderd idely to and fro:  
And learning vnto whom this page was sent,  
To go with him she quickly did consent.

14

You call to mind (for sure you cannot chuse,  
But call to mind so late a written storie)  
How *Mandricardo Doralice* did vse,  
And kept with ioy whom he did win with glorie:  
She secretly sent notice of this newes,  
(Though afterward her selfe perhap was sorie)  
To *Rodromont*, and sharply him incited,  
To enge her rape as I before recited.

15

The messenger arriued then by hap,  
When from the streame the Pagan did ascend,  
And told him all the tale of her mishap,  
And how another did possesse his frend:  
Cold ielousie straight enterd in his lap,  
And Pride with Discord do the matter mend,  
Alledging if he put vp this disgrace,  
Then let him neare looke Ladie in the face.

16

Like as a Tyger that her young hath lost,  
Supprisd by hunters hand and borne away,  
Doth follow on the foote through eu'rie cost,  
No dikes nor waters wide can make her stay:  
So *Rodromont* with loue (and anger most)  
Enflamed, could endure no more delay,  
And though he want his horse, that did not boote,  
To caule him stay, he rather goes on foote

*Simile.*

17

He meanes what euer his serman next he spide,  
To take his horse of frend or else of foe,  
At this is Discord pleas'd, and said to Pride,  
That she was glad their busnes cotned so:  
I will (quoth she) a horse for him prouide,  
An horse shall cost him deare enough I trow;  
But what of him and of that horse befel,  
Another time not now I meane to tell.

*It follows in  
the 23. booke.  
23. ff. 12.*

18

This while the most renowned Christen king,  
That had expuls'd the Pagan from the towne,  
His valiant men of armes about doth bring,  
And on the sodaine lets the draw bridge downe,  
And with a fresh assault their foes so sting,  
While fortune smild on him, on them did frowne,  
That they had runne away like men dismaid,  
Had not *Ferraw* couragiously them staid.

19

My mates in armes (quoth he) brethren and frends  
Prou'd valiant heretofore, now hold your  
More happie far is he his life that spene  
In honour, then that keeps it in disgrace;  
Loe me your generall that here intends,  
No way to staine the blood of Spanishe  
The patterne follow that I shew you furst,  
And then I care not, let them do their worst.

*Ferraw's note  
is so.*

20

Thus in that part *Ferraw* the fight renewd,  
And draws with him the chosen Spanishe band,  
That oft in Christen blood their hands imbrawd,  
And none almost but they, did now withstand:  
But destinie can neuer be eschewd,  
As may by their successe be rightly scand;  
Behold *Renaldo* comes, and as he came  
It seem'd he carrid lightning fierce or flam.

*Ouid. Met.  
Hic est adeit  
curiosus deos  
praeiudicium*

21

Nor long before *Almontes* valiant sonne,  
Hight *Dardanell*, had slaine a Christian knight,  
And proud of that his glorie lately woune,  
And of this good successe he had in fight,  
About the field he carelessly did runne,  
Vntill he hapt to see a wofull sight,  
He saw *Alfeo* yeelding vp the ghost,  
A youth whom he esteem'd and loued most.



22

*Lurcanio* was the man that did the deed,  
And *Dardanell* to venge it doth intend,  
*Lurcanio* followd on and tooke no heed,  
The other all on him his force doth bend,  
And with a waightie speare, him and his steed,  
Vnto the earth together he doth send,  
And pierst his thigh, and put him in such paine,  
As scant he able was to rise againe,

23

But *Ariodant* (that deare his brother loued)  
And sees him in such paine and danger lie,  
Was therewithall in wrath so greatly moued,  
He meaneth to auenge his hurt, or die:  
But though that he attempted oft and proued,  
Yet could he not to *Dardanell* come nie,  
For still of other men, the throng and number,  
Did him in this attempt molest and cumber.

24

No doubt the heau'ns had *Dardanell* ordained,  
To perish by a more victorious hand;  
*Renaldos* blade must with his blood be stained,  
And was, as after you shall vnderstand:  
By him this praise and glorie must be gained,  
The fame whereof must fill both sea and land:  
But let these westerne warres a while remaine,  
And of *Griffino* talke we now againe.

25

Who taught those of *Damasco* to their harmes,  
What wrong they did to cart him in such sort,  
They fill the towne with vprores and alarmes,  
Mens mouthes and eares were full of this report:  
The King brings forth five hundred men in armes,  
And sends five more to fortifie the fort:  
For why this tumult brought him in perswasion,  
That sure some host of men did make inuasion.

26

But when he saw no men, no host, no band,  
No signes of horse, the citie to inuade,  
Onely on a man (well knowne) that there did stand,  
And of his people such a slaughter made,  
Moued with remorse) he stretcheth out his hand  
To shew of peace, as is the trade,  
And onely his rashnesse he lamented,  
That at such a knight to harme he had consented.

27

And *Griffin* when to find he now begunne,  
The King was of so good inclination,  
And that the wrong to him before was done,  
Not of his owne, but others instigation:  
To make a friendly concord doth not shunne,  
Because hereby he lost no reputation:  
And the King tarid at the kings request,  
To dress his wounds and take a little rest.

28

This while his brother *Aquilant* the blacke,  
That with *Astolfo* still in Iewrie staid,  
And sees his brother now so long did lacke,  
Was in his mind all sad and ill apaid:  
They heard no newes of him, they found no tracke,  
Though wait about in eu'ry place was laid,  
Vntill the Greekish pilgrim they had met,  
By whom of him some inkling they did get.

29

He told them how a certaine wanton damie,  
Hight *Origilla*, with a ruffian knaue,  
That kept her openly without all shame,  
Yet going in apparell fine and braue,  
These two (the pilgrim said) together came,  
From *Antioch* (as forth in speech they gaue)  
And to *Damasco* then they meant to go,  
But what became of them he did not know.

30

And further vnto *Aquilant* he told,  
How he *Griffino* met this other day,  
And did to him the matter all vnfold,  
And how forthwith *Griffino* went his way,  
With chafe enough, and swearing that he would  
Kill this same vile adulterer if he may:  
No looner had his speech the pilgrim ended,  
In post to follow, *Aquilant* intended.

31

In post he followd to *Damasco* ward,  
And when he traueled had a day or twaine,  
(Behold that God that euer doth reward  
The good with blessings and the bad with paine)  
That gracelesse couple that before you heard,  
Betraid *Griffino*, with that diuellish traine,  
Into the hands of *Aquilant* did giue,  
While they in pleasure most securely liue.

32

I say that *Aquilant* by Gods permission,  
Doth meet the vile *Martano* on the way,  
His horse, his coate, and outward apparition,  
So like vnto *Griffino* eu'ry way,  
That *Aquilant* at first without suspition,  
Went to embrace him, and began to say,  
Brother well met, I ioy of your welfare,  
Your absence bred in me much feare and care.

33

But when he saw the tother not replide,  
But shrunke away like one that were afraid,  
Ah traitor villain, yeeld thy selfe, he cride,  
Thou hast my brother spoiled and betraid,  
Tell me (thou wretch) doth he in life abide?  
To whom in humble sort *Martano* said,  
(With fainting hart, with quaking voice & trembling  
Yet in the midst of all his feare dissembling)

34

Oh pardon sir, your brother is aliue,  
And like to liue, and hath no hurt, nor shall,  
The truth is this, I being loth to striue  
With him, because I found him stout and tall,  
Did with no ill intent this drift contriue,  
To saue my selfe and do him hurt but small,  
For this same womans sake that is my sister,  
With open force not daring to assaile her.

35

It grieved me to see how he by lust  
Did her abuse whom nature made me loue,  
And for I thought it was both meet and iust,  
Her from this wicked custome to remoue,  
And sith I did his valew great mistrust,  
I thought it best by pollicie to proue:  
I stole his horse and coate while he was sleeping,  
And so conuaid her quite out of his keeping.



36

Well might *Martano* beare away the bell,  
Or else a whetstone challenge for his dew,  
That on the sodaine such a tale could tell,  
And not a word of all his tale was trew,  
But yet in shew it all agreed well,  
Saue one which *Aquilant* most certaine knew  
Was false, and he in vaine did seeke to smother,  
He was her bedfellow, and not her brother.

37

With hand and tongue at once he doth replie,  
And in one instant he both strake and spake,  
I know (quoth he) vile villaine thou dost lie,  
And on the face so fiercely him he strake,  
He makes two teeth into his throate to flie;  
Then with great violence he doth him take,  
And him and her he binds in bitter bands,  
Like captiues carrid into forren lands.

38

And thus in hast vnto *Damasco* riding,  
He swears that he these bands would not vnbind,  
Till of his brother he do heare some tiding,  
Whom in *Damasco* after he did find;  
Who now with cunning Phisicke and good guiding,  
Was almost heald in body and in mind,  
And when he saw his vnexpected brother,  
They both saluted and embrac'd each other.

*Griffin.*

39

And after they had made in speech some sport,  
About full many a foolish accident,  
(For *Aquilant* had heard a large report  
Of *Griffins* carting, and his punishment)  
At last he asketh *Griffin* in what sort  
They should this couple worthily torment;  
To hang and draw and burne their priuie parts,  
Was not too much for their too foule desarts.

40

The King and all his Councell thought it good,  
Because their fault was such to open knowne,  
That they should publikely dispill their blood,  
And their desarts might publikely be showne:  
But yet that motion *Griffin* straight withstood,  
Pretending priuate causes of his owne,  
Onely he wisht *Martano* should be stript,  
And at a cart drawne through the street and whipt.

41

And as for her, although she had deserued  
A punishment as great as he, or more,  
Yet was the sentence of her doome referued  
Vntill *Lucina* came, and not before:  
So that by *Griffins* meane she was preserued,  
So great a sway loue in his fancie bore:  
Here *Aquilant* by *Griffin* was procured,  
To bide with him vntill his wounds were cured.

42

Now *Norandin* that all his powre still bends,  
To honor *Griffin* all the meanes he may,  
And with great courtiesie to make amends,  
For that disgrace he did him th'other day;  
To make another triumph he intends,  
Set forth with pompe and state, and rich array:  
And that the same may flie to forraine nations,  
He notifies it straight by proclamation's.

43

At foure weekes end the triumph should begin,  
The same whereof about so farre was blowne,  
Without the land of Iewrie and within,  
At last vnto *Astolfo* it was knowne,  
Who asking *Sanfonets* aduice herein,  
Whose wisdom he preferd before his owne,  
At last for companie they both agree,  
To go together these same iusts to see.

44

Now as they went vpon their way, behold  
They met a gallant and a stately dame,  
With whom this Duke acquainted was of old,  
*Marfisa* was this noble Ladies name:  
She traueled like a Knight, her heart was bold,  
Her bodie passing strong vnto the same,  
And when she knew both why and where they went,  
To go with them she quickly did consen.

*Marfisa.*

45

And thus these three their iourney so centriue,  
As iust against the day and solemne feast,  
Together at *Damasco* they arriue,  
Each one well mounted on a stately beast,  
The King that specially did care and striue,  
To honor *Griffin* more then all the rest,  
By all the meanes and wayes he could deuise,  
Augmented much the valew of the prise.

46

And where it was, as I before declar'd,  
A single armor rich and finely wrought,  
Now *Norandin* at this time prepar'd,  
To set it out with things not lightly bought,  
To this he adds a horse most richly barbd,  
By riders skill to great perfection brought,  
Wel shapt, wel markt, strong limbd, and passing swart,  
The beast alone, fit for a Princes gift.

47

All this he did, because great hope he saw,  
That *Griffin* once againe the prise wot  
But then was verifide the old said law:  
Much falls betwene the Challice and the chin:  
For when *Marfisa* (void of feare or aw  
Without had vjewd this armor and we  
And finds it had bene hers by marks well  
She seizeth straight vpon it as her owne.

*Prouerbe.*  
*Omnia Metant.*  
*Multa cadunt*  
*inter*  
*promat*

48

The King that ill so great disgrace could brooke,  
Did shew himselfe ther with much discontent,  
And with a princely frowne and angry looke,  
His silence threatned that she should repent,  
And in so great despite the thing he tooke,  
That straight some sergeants vnto her he sent,  
With souldiers, some on foote and some on horse,  
Deceiu'd much in her sex, more in her force.

49

For neuer did a child take more delight,  
With gawdie flowres in time of spring to play,  
Nor neuer did yong Ladie braue and bright,  
Like dauncing better on a solemne day,  
Then did *Marfisa* in the sound and sight  
Of glittering blades and speares delight to stay:  
And this did cause her take therein more pleasure,  
Because her strength was great beyond all measure.

*Smile.*

*Smiled*  
*The first of these.*  
*smiles is in Clau*  
*dianus a Poet.*  
*Nagis virgini-*  
*bus flores, no fru-*  
*gibus umbres, &c*

Those



50

Those few that were to apprehend her sent,  
And punish her for this vnlawfull deed,  
Were could their comming quickly to repent,  
And others by their harmes tooke better heed:  
The armed Knights most diuerly were bent,  
Some standing still to mark what this would breed,  
Some to the sergeants thought to bring reliefe,  
Of whom were *Griffin* and his brother chiefe.

51

The English Duke doth deeme it were a shame,  
To leaue *Marfisa* in this dangerous case,  
Sith chiefly for his companie she came,  
And *Sansonet* doth deeme it like disgrace,  
Wherefore they meane how ere the matter frame,  
Not leaue her vnassisted in the place,  
*Astolfo* had a charmed speare all gilt,  
Which he vled oft to runne at tilt.

52

The vertue of this charmed speare was such,  
Besides the gilding bright and faire of hew,  
That whom so ere the head thereof did tuch,  
Straight him from off his horse it ouerthrew,  
*Griffino* first although disdaining much.  
He quite vnhorst, nor who it was he knew:  
Then *Aquilant* that to reuenge it ment,  
Vnto the ground in manner like was sent.

53

Thus did these warriors three themselues behaue,  
But chiefe *Marfisa*, who would neuer rest,  
But would in spite of all, the armor haue,  
Nor once vouchsafte to aske it or request;  
She doth the King and all his nobles braue,  
And when the best of them had done his best,  
On eu'ry side she beat the people downe,  
And from them all made way out of the towne.

54

*Sansonet* and *Astolfo* did the like,  
King's men of armes pursue,  
The tooke the people crie stop, kill and strike,  
But none comes neare, but stand aloofe to vew:  
A ridge there was, this place they pike,  
And to the end it against all the crew,  
*Griffin* came, hauing his horse recovered,  
And by some markes the English Duke discovered.

55

And straight his brother *Aquilante* came,  
And of *Astolfo* both acquaintance take,  
And then in ciuill termes they somewhat blame  
Her litle count she of the King did make,  
*Astolfo* friendly told to them her name,  
And in defence of her some words he spake,  
The King then came maruell to what it tends,  
And care them talke together now like friends.

56

But when that *Norandinos* souldiers hard  
Her name, so dreaded ouer all the East,  
They surely thought that they should all be mard,  
And that the citie would be tane at least,  
Therefore they pray the King to haue regard.  
But now *Marfisa* (moued by request  
Of those two brothers) friendly doth consent,  
Her selfe before the Prince for to present.

57

And thus without much reuerence she spake,  
Sir King, I maruell what your highnesse ment,  
A prise and gift of such a thing to make,  
As is not yours without I giue content:  
The armes this armor hath plaine prooffe do make,  
Namely a crowne into three peeces rent:  
Once I put off this armor in a way,  
To chase a theefe that stole from me a pray.

58

Then said the King, faire dame the truth is so,  
Of one Armenian merchant I them bought,  
I make no question be they yours or no,  
Nor needs for prooffe more witnesse to be brought,  
For though they were not, I would them bestow  
On you, if so the same by you were sought:  
As for *Griffino* vnto whom I gaue them,  
He shall be pleas'd I hope, and not to haue them.

59

I will him recompence some other way,  
And giue him gifts of as great worth or more;  
Thanks to your highnesse *Griffin* straight doth say,  
Preferue me in your grace, I aske no more:  
But when *Marfisa* saw that eu'ry way  
They honor'd her, she chang'd her mind before,  
To shew magnificence she vld this drift,  
That he must take this armor as her gift.

60

And thus good friends all turned back againe,  
And then with double ioy the feast they hold,  
In which chiete praise did *Sansonet* obtaine,  
The other foure did then themselues withhold,  
Wishing the praise should vnto him remaine,  
And then with greater cheare then can be told,  
By *Norandino* they were nobly feasted,  
And there themselues they well repol'd and rested.

61

Seu'n dayes or eight the King them entertained,  
And those once past, of him their leaue they take,  
The which with gifts and honor great obtained,  
Vnto the towne of Tripoly they make,  
And in one companie these fiue remained,  
And mind not one the other to forsake,  
As long as one of them was left aliue,  
Vntill in France they safely should arriue.

62

And straight they get a vessell for their hire,  
A merchants ship new laden from the West,  
The master of the ship an auncient sire,  
Consented to their wils with small request,  
The wind as then seru'd fit for their desire,  
And blowes a gentle gale all from the East,  
So that with filled sailes in little while,  
They came as farre as Cypres, *Venus* Ile.

63

Here eu'ry place was full of odours sweet,  
Of gardens faire, of spice of pleasant tast,  
The people lustfull (for dame *Venus* meet)  
From tender yeares to doting age do last,  
With wanton damselfs walking in each street,  
Inuiting men to pleasure and repast,  
From hence againe they loosed, at what time  
*Don Phæbus* charret vnto th' East did clime.

*That sheefe was  
Brunello, as is at  
large set downe  
in Boyardos book*

*Cypres, an Ile co-  
secrated to Venus.*



64

The weather still was temperat and cleare,  
A pleasant gale their swelling sailes did fill;  
No signe of storme or tempest did appeare,  
To such as in the weather had best skill:  
But loe the weather oft doth change her cheare,  
Eu'n as a woman oft doth change her will,  
For sodainly they had such stormes of wether,  
As if that heau'n and earth would come together.

Simile.

65

The aire doth on the sodaine grow obscure,  
But lightned oft with lightnings dreadfull light,  
And saue their houre glasse kept them reckning sure  
Twas hard for to discern the day from night:  
The desprat marriners do all endure,  
As men inured to the waters spight,  
The heau'ns aboue, the waues beneath do rore,  
Yet are not they dismayd one whit therefore.

66

One with a whistle hang'd about his necke,  
Shoves by the sound which cord must be vndone,  
And straight the shipboy readie at a becke,  
Vnto the tops with nimble sleight doth ruane,  
The other marriners vpon the decke,  
Or at the steere the comming waues do shunne,  
And then by turnes they pumpe the water out,  
By paine and care preuenting eu'rie doubt.

67

He returns to  
them in the xiv.  
booke. 34. st. 1. ff.

Now while this noble crew with tempest toft,  
Went in the sea as winde and weather draue,  
And looke each minute to be drown'd and lost,  
The Christians with a fresh assault and braue,  
Set on the Pagans sorely to their cost:  
Who now began the worser side to haue,  
But chiefly then their courage gan to quail,  
When noble *Dardanellos* life did faile.

68

Renaldo.

*Renaldo* him had noted from the rest,  
Full proud of slaughter of so many foer  
And to himselfe he said tis surely best,  
To crop this weed before it higher growes,  
Therewith he sets his fatall speare in rest,  
And cries to *Dardanello* as he goes,  
Alas poore boy, much wo to thee they bred,  
That left to thee that sheild of white and red.

69

He trie if you defend those colours well,  
(He saith) which if with me you cannot do,  
Against *Orlando* fierce, I can you tell,  
For to defend them will be great adoe.  
Thus said *Renald*, and noble *Dardanell*,  
In valiant wise thus answerd thereunto,  
Know this (quoth he) that these my colours I  
Will brauely here defend, or brauely die.

70

With that he spurr'd his horse (as this he spake)  
And with great force *Renaldo* did assaile,  
But loe the staffe vpon his armor brake,  
So as his blow but little did auaille,  
But straight *Renaldos* speare a way did make,  
And pierce the double folds of plate and maile,  
And went so deepe into the tender skin,  
The life went out there where the staffe went in.

*Dardanello slain*  
*Virg. 1. En.*  
*Infelix puer as-*  
*que impar con-*  
*gressus Achilli.*

71

Looke how a purple flowre doth fade and die,  
That painefull plowman cutteth vp with sheare,  
Or as the Poppeys heads a side do lie,  
When it the bodie cannot longer beare;  
So did the noble *Dardanello* die,  
And with his death fild all his men with feare,  
As waters runne abroad that breake their bay,  
So fled his souldiers breaking their array.

Simile.  
Homer hath this  
of a Poppey.

72

They flie vnto their tents with full perswasion,  
That of the field the masterie was lost,  
Wherefore to fortifie against inuasion,  
They spare no time, no trauell, nor no cost;  
Now *Charles* by forhead meanest to take Occasion,  
And follows them full close with all his host,  
And comming to their tents so brauely venturd,  
That he with them themselues almost h terd.

Simile.

Sentence.  
*Fronte capillata*  
*est, 31. tergum*  
*Occasio calum.*

73

Had not his valiant attempt bene staid,  
By ouer hastie comming of the night,  
So that of force as then it was delaid,  
And either side was driu'n to leaue the fight,  
But with this difference, all the Turks dismayd,  
And newly gatherd from their fearfull flight,  
The Christians on the tother side pursewing,  
And day by day their hope and powre renewing.

74

The number of the Turks that day were slaine,  
Was more then fourscore thousand (as they say)  
Their bloud did fat the ground of all that plaine,  
And makes the ground more fertile to this day:  
Among the dead some men halfe dead remaine,  
Left there for theeues and robbers as a pray,  
Within the Pagan campe great mone they make,  
Some for their friends, some for their kinsfolks sake.

75

Two youths there were among so many more,  
Whose friendship fast and firme, whose f arts  
Deserued to be plaist the rest before,  
And to be praised for their good defts,  
Their names were *Cloridano* and *Medoro*  
Both borne farre hence, about the Este  
Their parents poore, and not of our belce  
Yet for true loue they may be praised chiefe.

*Cloridano.*  
*Medoro.*

76

The elder of the two hight *Cloridan*,  
An hunter wilde in all his life had beene,  
Of actiue limbs, and eke an hardie man,  
As in a thousand men might well be seene:  
*Medoro* was but yong, and now began  
To enter too, of youth the pleasant Greene,  
Faire skind, black eyd, and yellow cur care  
That hangd in louely locks by either eare.

*Sciti escri-*  
*h 1. se beatus*  
*of Achilleides in*  
*rich sort.*  
*Dicit adhuc vi-*  
*su nuncio notat*  
*signis in ore.*  
*Purpureus ful-*  
*uor, nitet coma*  
*gratus*

77

These two among the rest kept watch that night,  
And while the time in sundry speech they spent,  
*Medoro* oftentime most sauely fight,  
His masters death did cause him so lament,  
Oh (said *Medoro*) what a wofull spight  
What cruell scourge to me hath fortune sent?  
That *Dardanel Almontes* worthy sonne,  
So sodainly should vnto death be done?

Behold



78

Behold his noble corse is left a pray,  
To be deuoured by the Wolfe and croe,  
Too de too fine to be to borne away,  
But it I shall remedie that hap I troe,  
He finde the meane his corse thence to conuay,  
I am resolu'd my selfe will thither goe,  
That for the good he did me when he liued,  
At least his corse by me may be relieued.

79

When *Cloridano* heard this saying out,  
He stood amazd, and musing in his mind,  
In tender yeares to finde a heart so stout,  
Vnto so dangerous attempt inclinde,  
And straight disswades him, casting many a doubt,  
To make him change the thing he had assignde,  
But still *Medoro* doth resolute to trie,  
Till he *Dardanell*, or elle to die.

80

When *Cloridano* so resolute him found,  
Of his owne franke accord he vow doth make,  
To follow him in broken state and sound,  
And neuer him to leaue or to forsake;  
And straight they two do leaue this fenced ground,  
And pointing new supplies their roomes to take,  
They find the Christen campe lie all neglected,  
Like those that feare no harine, nor none suspected.

81

I say those Christens that the watch should keepe,  
Lay as they cared not for foe nor frend,  
Their sentes so possest with wine and sleepe,  
That none of them their office did attend:  
But *Cloridan* that saw them drownd so deepe,  
(Said thus,) *Medoro*, now I do intend,  
To get for our great losse, this small amends,  
To kill some foes, that killed all our frends.

82

thou and watch and harken eu'rie way,  
And the rest let me alone to trie,  
He goes where one *Alfeo* lay,  
That toke vpon him knowledge in the skie,  
By which he dreamt he should liue many a day,  
And his wiues beloued bosome die,  
As I was false his cunning him deceaued,  
For now this Pagan him of life bereaued.

83

And many more whom here I do not name,  
That sleepe on boords, or making straw their bed:  
At last where wretched *Grillo* lay he came,  
That on an emptie barrell coucht his hed,  
Himselfe had emptied late before the same;  
A dead sleepe the wine in him had bred,  
I like his sword within his bowels fixed,  
But came the blood and wine together mixed.

84

Neare *Grillo* slept a Dutchman and and a Greeke,  
That all the night had plide the dice and drinke,  
To both of them at once he did the seeke,  
That dreamt perhaps of seu'n, and of tysefinke:  
They had bene better watched all the weeke,  
Then at so bad a time as this to winke:  
Death certaine is to all the Prouerbe seath,  
Vncertaine is to all the houre of death.

A Drunkard.

Two gamblers.

Sentence.  
Sentence.

85

Looke how a Lion fierce with famine pinde,  
That comes vnto a flocke of silly sheepe,  
Where neither fence, nor people he doth finde,  
Doth spoile the flocke the while y shepheards sleepe;  
So *Cloridano* with as bloudie minde, (keepe,  
That found those husht that watch and ward should  
Could not his cruell rage and mallice bridle:  
Nor was this while *Medoros* weapon idle.

86

For he that did disdain to make to die,  
Those of the common and the baler sort,  
Came there where Duke *Labretto* then did lye,  
Embracing of his Ladie in such sort,  
As yuie doth the wall, they lay to nye,  
Now soundly sleeping after *Venus* sport,  
So close, the aire could not haue come betweene;  
*Medore* their heads at one blow cuts off cleene.

87

Oh happie state, o life, o death most sweete,  
For sure I thinke their soules embracing so,  
In heau'nly seat do oft together meete,  
And in good peace and loue did thither go.  
Then next a captaine of the Flemish fleete,  
And th'Erle of Flaunders sonnes with other mee,  
*Medoro* kild, and so far forward went,  
He came but little from the Emp'rors tent.

88

But loe they both with shedding blood now tyred,  
And fearing least at length some few might wake,  
Er long time past, both by accord retyred,  
And mind their first attempt in hand to take,  
(As both, but as *Medoro* chiefe desired)  
Most secretly vnto the field they make,  
They meane although they both were faint & wery,  
The noble *Dardanellos* corse to burie.

89

The heaps of men that in the field remaine,  
Some dead, and some betweene alieue and dead,  
Had made their labor to haue bene in vaine,  
Had not the moone shewd out her horned head,  
So bright, as cleare discouerd all the p'aine,  
That then was couerd with Vermillion red,  
Were it a chaunce or else his earnest prayre,  
That made the moone at that time shine so faire.

90

Now after search by *Phæbes* friendly light,  
The good *Medore* espide him on the ground,  
Who when he saw that grieuous wofull sight,  
He was for sorrow readie there to sound;  
And out he cries, alas o worthy wight,  
Not worthy, in this sort to haue bene found,  
Now my last ductie, do I meane to pay,  
And then to say, farewell to you for ay.

91

Thus spake *Medoro* shedding many a teare,  
And minding now no longer time to tarrie,  
The loued corte doth on his shoulders beare,  
And *Cloridano* holpe the same to carrie,  
And they that erst were stout and void of feare,  
Were waxen now so timorous and warie,  
Not for their owne, but this deare burdens sake,  
That eu'rie little noise did cause them quak.

N

Boccaccio hath  
swe like conceits  
so this.Phæbe the name  
of the moone.



92

This while the noble *Zerbin*, hauing chafte  
His fearfull foes while others were a sleepe,  
That had his heart on vertues lore so plaft,  
As did to noble deeds him waking keepe, (haft  
Came with his troope where thele two made great  
By hills, by dales, by stonie waies and steepe,  
The carkas of their Lord to beare away,  
When much it wanted not of breake of day.

93

The Scots that were of noble *Zerbins* band,  
And saw two men go loden downe the plaine,  
Make after them a gallop out of hand,  
In hope to light vpon some prey or gaine:  
When *Cloridano* spying ore the land,  
Did say 'twas best to let the corse remaine,  
Alledging that it was a foolish tricke,  
In sauing one dead man to loose two quicke.

94

And herewithall his hold he letteth slide,  
And thinkes *Medoro* would the same haue done,  
He meanes himselfe in the next wood to hide,  
And toward it in great haft he doth runne;  
But good *Medoro* that could not abide,  
To leaue the office he so late begunne,  
Although with double paine and duller pace,  
With all the burthen fled away in chafe.

95

And to the wood the nearest way he went,  
In hope to get it ere the horsemen came,  
But now his breath and strength were so far spent,  
As they had verie neare him ouertane,  
Yet in his deed he doth no whit relent,  
To leaue his Lord he counts it such a shame.  
But they that thinke this storie worth the reeding,  
Must take a little respite in proceeding.

## Morall.

In this eighteenth booke, we may note first how hurtfull a thing it is to a Prince or great Magistrate to iudge without hearing both sides: and contrarie how great a praise it is in them to do (as *Alexander* is noted to haue vsed) to keepe one eare for the aduerse partie, or (as we terme it) for the defendant. In the punishment of *Martano*, we may note how false accusers euer come to some filthie end, as their vile and filthie liues deserue. In *Norandine*, that finding he had done *Griffino* wrong, is willing to make amends for it, and to be friends with him, we may see a notable example of princely clemency, which I could wish all Christian Princes to follow, though in deed commonly they do quite contrarie; and rather where they do one wrong, make amends with a greater, according to that heathnish (nay diuellish) saying of *Machiaue* that whom you haue done a great iniurie to, him you must neuer pardon, but still persecute. (*Tempora tempora quod monstrum aluitis?*) Oh times what a monster haue yee bred? how far is this doctrine from his, that taught to forgiue not seuen times, but seauentie times seuen times?

Lastly in *Medoro*, we may note a notable example of gratitude towards his masters dead corse, in hazzarding his own life to burie it; which is indeed (though he were a heathen) a most Christian act, and one of the works of charitie commended in the Scripture, as namely in *Tobias*; who was greatly rewarded and blessed for it: And further we may note in all ages, buriall hath bene thought a most necessarie thing, and religious: but of *Medoros* gratitude I shall speake more in the next booke.

## Historie.

Concerning the description of the Ile of Cypres, set downe in 63. stasse, where it is praised for the pleasantnes of it, as all that write of it do testifie, and *Horace* proues it was called *Venus Ile*, in this verse to *Venus*:

— Regina Gridi P phique  
Sperne dilectam Cipron, &c—

## Allegoric.

We may obserue a good Allegoricall sence, in that *Rodomont* is first assailed by *Jealousie*, then how *Jealousie* breeds Discord, and how *Pride* increaseth it, still edging it forward: saying what a shame is it to put vp such an iurre what will the world say of it? and who could beare it? these be the whetstones to sharpen reuenge, and oke dle coales of strife. Also we note how mine Author pretily noted, that *Discord* and *Pride*, when they went fro hē Ab left *Fraud* and *Hypocrisie* for their sufficient deputies in their places, for where *Fraud* works, there neuer want ee o strife: and where *Hypocrisie* is, there wants no pride, though it be not plainly discovered.

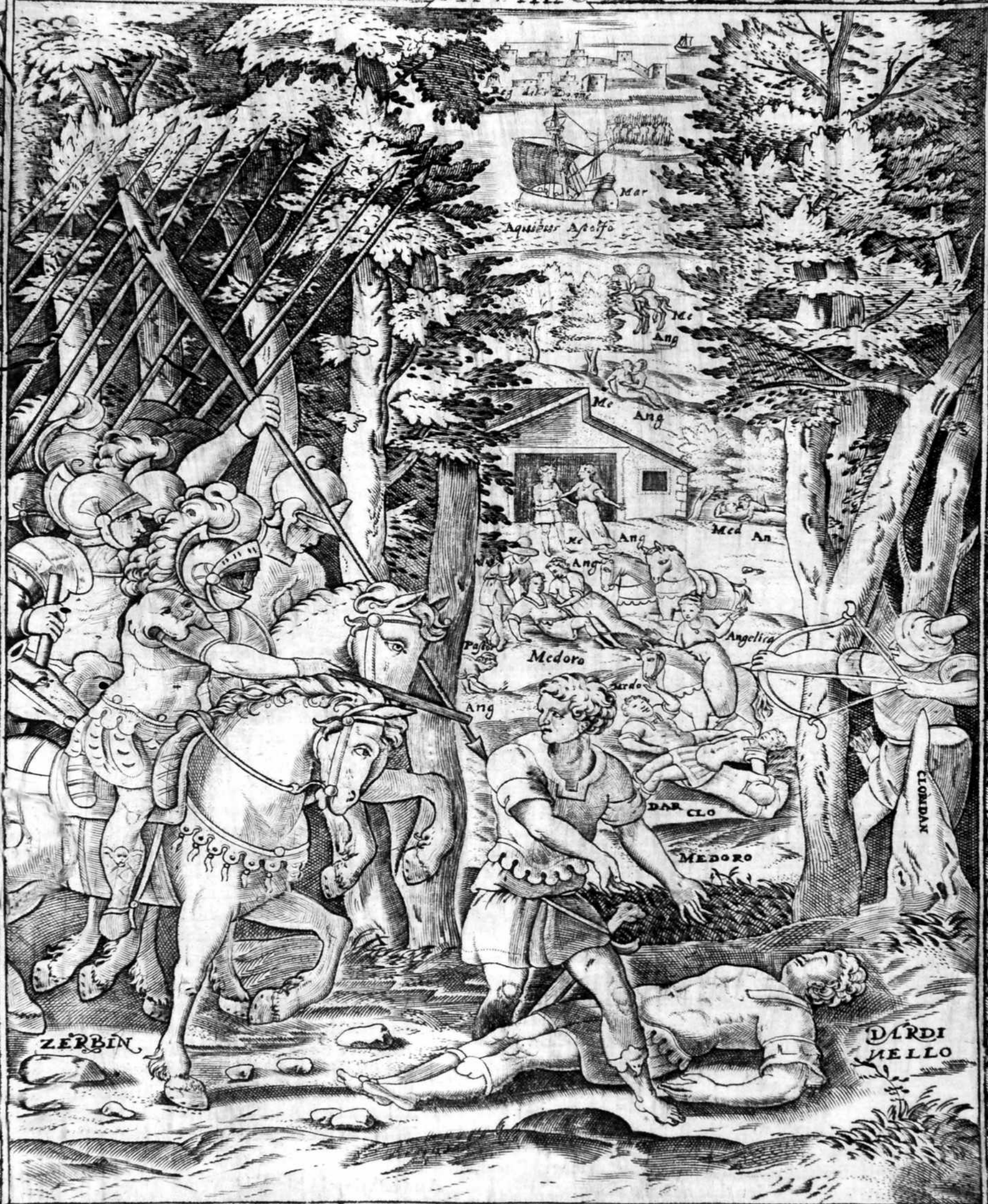
## Allusion.

In *Dardanellos* meeting with *Renaldo* and encountering him, and after being slaine by him, he altogether alludes to the conflict betweene *Troilus* and *Achilles*.

Infelix puer atque impar congressus Achilli.

The end of the annotations of the 18. booke.





Aquibus Apello

Mar

Me

Ang

Me

Ang

Me

Ang

Med

An

Medora

Angelica

DAR CLO

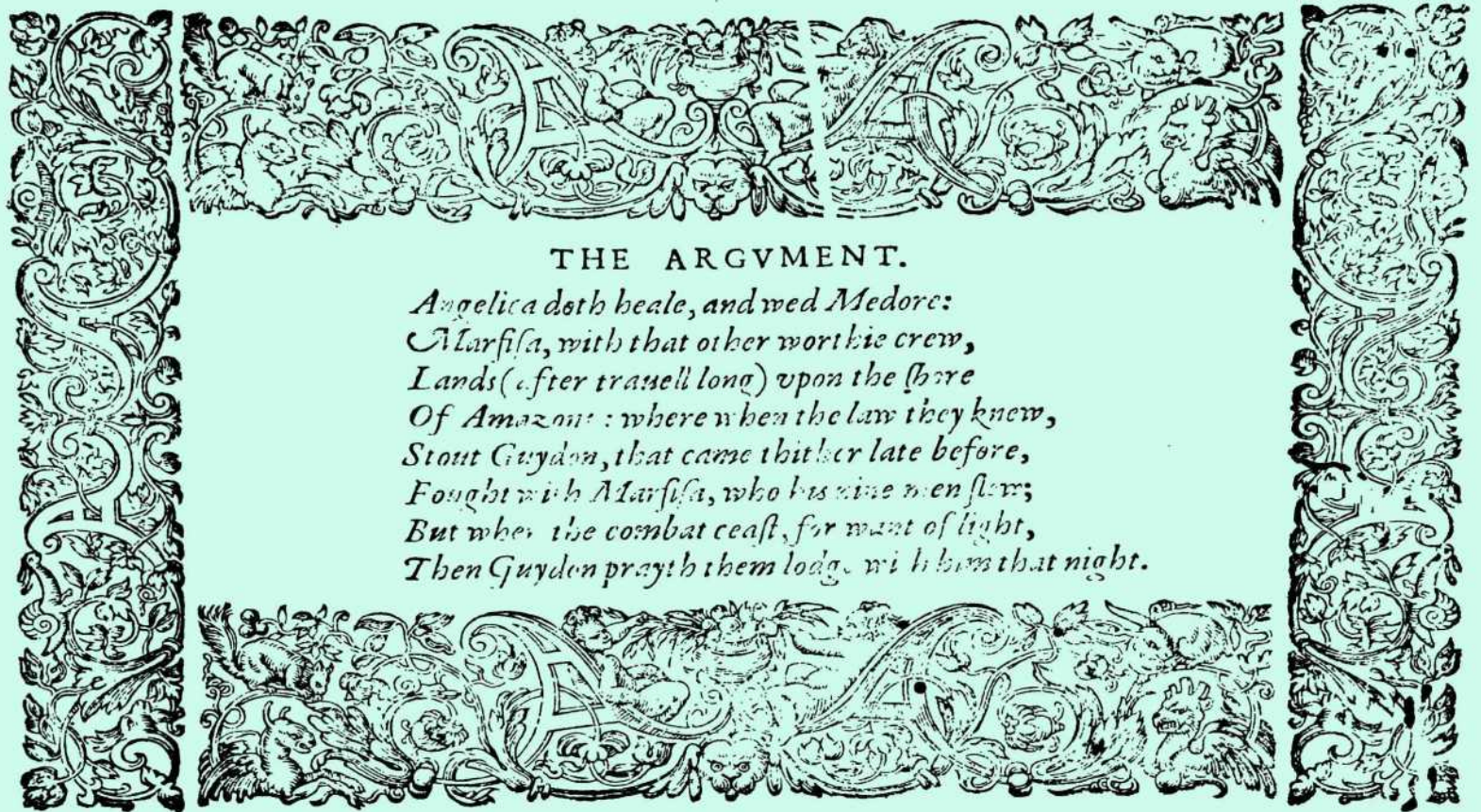
MEDORO

GIORDAN

ZERBIN

DARDI  
NELLO

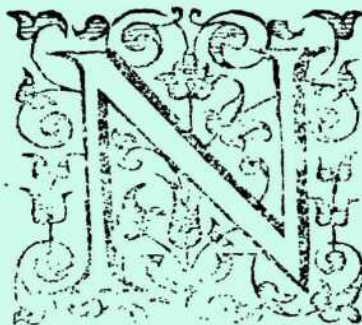




## THE ARGUMENT.

*Angelica doth heale, and wed Medore:  
 Marsifa, with that other worthie crew,  
 Lands (after travell long) upon the shore  
 Of Amazon: where when the law they knew,  
 Stout Guydon, that came thither late before,  
 Fought with Marsifa, who his nine men slew;  
 But when the combat ceast, for want of light,  
 Then Guydon prayth them lodge with him that night.*

*Divers haue  
 written to this  
 effect of the fic-  
 klones of frends:  
 but specially  
 Quid. Donec eris  
 felix multos nu-  
 merabis amicos:  
 Tempora si fue-  
 rint nubila solus  
 eris*



1  
 One can deeme right who  
 faithfull frends do rest,  
 While they beare sway &  
 rule in great degree,  
 For then both fast and fai-  
 ned frends are prest,  
 Whose faiths seeme both  
 of one effect to be:  
 But then reuolts the faint  
 and fained guett,

When wealth vnwinds, and Fortune seems to flee,  
 But he that loues indeed remaineth fast,  
 And loues and serues when life and all is past.

*Horace. Vulgus  
 infidum ut me-  
 retrix vestro per-  
 iura cedis.*

2  
 If all mens thoughts were written in their face,  
 Some one that now the rest doth ouercrow,  
 Some other eke y wants his souerains grace, (know:  
 When as their Prince their inward thoughts should  
 The meaner man should take the betters place,  
 The greater man might stoope and sit below.  
 But tell me now how poore Medoro sped,  
 That lou'd his master both aliuie and ded.

3  
 In vaine he sought to get him to the wood,  
 By blinde and narrow pathes to him vnknowne,  
 Their swift, and his slow pafe the same withstood,  
 Forst by the burden that he bare alone.  
 But now, when *Cloridano* vnderstood  
 Medoros case, he made for him great mone,  
 And curst himseke, and was full ill apaid,  
 That he had left his friend deuoid of aid.

4  
 Medoro ad about so straight beset,  
 To leaue his loued lode was then constrained,

But all in vaine he sought fro thence to get,  
 His masters carke that behind remained,  
 Was vnto him so fierce and strong a let;  
 It staid his wearie steps, and him retained.  
 Eu'n as a Beare that would defend her whelp,  
 About doth houer though she cannot helpe.

*Simila.*

5  
 So good Medore about the corse did houer,  
 The while that *Cloridano* cometh backe,  
 And (for the day was dawnd) he might  
 How greatly his Medore, his helpe did  
 Wherefore to do his best him to recouer.  
 He takes his bow and quiver from his bac  
 And at a Scot he tooke his aime so well  
 He strake him in the braine that downe he fell.

6  
 The fell and death so sodaine of the Scot,  
 Amated much the courage of the rest,  
 And much they marueld whence should come this  
 And fore this accident did them molest: shot,  
 But *Cloridano* for this forbare them not,  
 But shot another in about the brest,  
 The which inflam'd *Zerbino* mind so sore,  
 That for reuenge he would haue slaine Medore.

7  
 And fasting in his golden curled heare,  
 His warlike hand, thou shalt said he abuy,  
 Thou shalt the penance and the burthen beare  
 O' him, that here hath made my men to dye:  
 Yet for all this, *Zerbino* did forbear  
 To kill him, when he saw with gracious eye,  
 His sweet sad looke, and harkned to his speech,  
 That in this tort for pardon did beteech



8

These are the words  
which ever have  
made of sorrow,  
and the more  
could not be  
yet ever  
ought most de-  
voutly to  
be of  
ebs.

Sir knight (he said) for thy Meſſias ſake,  
thee do pray and earneſtly coniure,  
much compaſſion now on me to take,  
let me giue my Lord his ſepulture:  
I little care what ſpoile of me yee make,  
What paines or tortures I my ſelfe endure,  
I onely ſue, to long my life to ſaue,  
As I may lay my maſter in his graue.

9

Now while Medoro ſpake theſe words and ſuch,  
Whereby Zerbino was to mercie moued,  
And to his fauour was inclined much,  
As one that gratefulneſſe had euer loued,  
A vile bale ſwaine ſo rudely did him touch,  
As him not onely from his place remoued,  
With his ſtaffe oft rudely ouerthrew him,  
at eu'ry one do de he him dead that vew him.

10

This fact did ſo Zerbino's mind offend,  
That preſently the villaine he did chafe,  
And to haue killed him he did intend,  
And had, but that the other fled apace:  
But when that Cloridano ſaw his friend,  
With bleeding wound lie proſtrate in the place,  
He meanes himſelfe no longer now to hide,  
But eu'n to die by deare Medoro's ſide.

11

And as he purpoſ'd, ſo he did indeed,  
For fighting manfully he there was ſlaine,  
The Scots do onward on their way proceed,  
Medoro halfe aliue doth now remaine:  
And ſtill his breſt in wofull ſort doth bleed,  
The ſtaffe had cut therein ſo large a vaine,  
And ſure he had bled out his life and all,  
But for one rare good hap did him befall.

12

For a damſell came, though meanelly clad,  
Her ſheards weeds, yet freſh and faire of fauour,  
ſuch a one as in thoſe baſe clothes had,  
princely birth and high behauiour,  
ing him lie there in caſe ſo bad,  
inke it charitie to be his ſeruour:  
This was (if you forget) the Ladie faire,  
That of Cataya was vndoubted haire.

Angelica.

13

I ſhewd you by what hap ſhe gat the ring,  
And how the ſame had ſild her with ſuch pride,  
And her into ſo high conceit did bring,  
That all her ſuters now ſhe flat denide,  
She careth not for Earle, nor Duke, nor King,  
Orlando ſhe and Sacrapant deſide,  
at chiefly ſhe would bluſh and be aſhamed,  
If ſhe but hapt to heare Renaldo named.

14

So great her folly grew, ſo vaine her pride,  
As ſhe eſteemed all the world at nought,  
The which when once the blind boy had eſpide,  
(Not blind when any miſchiefe may be wrought)  
He will no longer this pretuption bide,  
And for a fit occaſion long he fought,  
And finding this, he thought himſelfe now ſped,  
And vp he drawes his arrow to the hed.

Scotism.

15

Now when this Indian Queene did there behold  
A louely youth lie dying in the place,  
His bodie feeble in a mortall cold,  
A deadly pale amid his liuely face,  
A kind of paſſion ſtraight on her tooke hold,  
That mou'd her mind to pitie this his caſe,  
And much the rather when he did declare  
The wofull cauſe that bred him all this care.

16

She hauing learnd of Surgerie the art,  
An art which ſtill the Indians greatly priſe,  
Which fathers to their children do impart,  
Whoſe knowledge in tradition chiefly lies,  
Which without bookes the children learne by hart,  
I ſay Angelica doth then deuife,  
By ſkill ſhe had in iuyce of herbes and flowres,  
For to renew Medoro's liuely powres.

This art as ſir P.  
Sidney notes in  
his Arcadia,  
was in great eſte-  
mation in ſome  
paſt.

17

And calling to her mind ſhe late had ſeene,  
An herbe whole vertue was to ſtanch the blood,  
As Dittamie, or ſome ſuch herbe I weene,  
That for ſuch purpoſe whoſome was and good,  
Straightway ſhe ſeekes this herbe vpon the greene,  
With all the haſt and diligence ſhe coud,  
And finding it, ſhe takes thereof a branch,  
Whole vertue was the courſe of blood to ſtanch.

Of Dittamy  
Virgil ſpeakes  
8. Enead.  
Dittamum ge-  
nerux (reſea  
carpis ab Ida.

18

Then comming backe againe, ſhe met by hap,  
A filly ſhepherd ſeeking of his cow,  
That brake out of his ground at ſome ſmall gap,  
And now was ſtraid he knew not where nor how,  
She prayes him take the herbes were in her lap,  
(A ſeruitor more fit to ſerue a ſow)  
And beare her companie vnto the place,  
Where poore Medoro lay in dang'rous caſe.

19

Then from their horſe ſhe and the ſhepherd light,  
And ſtraight between two tiles thoſe herbs ſhe bruted  
And tooke the iuyce betweene her fingers bright,  
And ſo into the wound the ſame infuted,  
Whoſe vertue great reuiu'd Medoro's ſpright,  
To find himſelfe ſo well and kindly vſed,  
That doubt it was which moſt his wound did ſalue,  
The precious ſurgeon or the precious ſalue.

20

And now he had recouerd ſo much force,  
As what with hers, and with the ſhepherds aid,  
He clamerd vp vpon the ſhepherds horſe,  
Howbeit in the place ſo long he ſtaid,  
Vntill he ſaw his loued maſters corſe;  
Into a graue with Cloridano laid;  
And then, and not before he did agree,  
To do as he by her ſhould pointed be.

21

From thence vnto the ſhepherds houſe ſhe went,  
And made her patient eke with her to go,  
And there to bide with him ſhe was content,  
Till he were cleerly rid of all his wo,  
But in this while ſhe felt her heart relent,  
With ſundry quames that wonted not be ſo,  
And when his comely perſonage ſhe ſaw,  
A ſecret heate ſhe felt her heart to gnaw.

N iij



22

For while she heald his wound, another dart  
Did wound her thoughts and high conceits so deep,  
As now therewith was rauisht her proud hart,  
Possessing it although she wake or sleepe:  
Her wound to heale, there was no herbe nor art,  
For more and more like flame the same doth creep,  
Yet her chiefe care is him to helpe and cure,  
That all this torment doth to her procure.

*Ouid. 1. Metam.  
Hec mihi quod  
nullus amor est  
medicabilis her-  
bis.*

23

Thus while Medoro better growes and better,  
She fees her selfe tormented more and more,  
And he that for his loue to her was debter,  
Is he alone that plagueth her so fore:  
Wherefore though modestie awhile did her let,  
Yet now perforce no further she forbore,  
But plainly to Medoro told her grieve,  
And at his hands as plainly askt reliefe.

24

O stout Orlando, valiant Sacrapant,  
O fierce Ferraw, o hunderds more beside,  
Where are those valiant acts of which you vaunt?  
Where is your pompe, your glory and your pride?  
One poore Medore, all your desires doth daunt,  
One poore Medore doth all your powre deride,  
And she whom all of you haue woo'd in vaine,  
To woo Medoro doth not now disdaine.

*Ouid in Fedras  
Epistle  
Est aliquid pri-  
mis pomaria car-  
pere ramis; &  
senui primam,  
deligere ungue  
rosam.*

25

She suffers poore Medoro take the flowre,  
Which many sought, but none had yet obtained,  
That fragrant rose that to that present houre  
Vngatherd was, behold Medoro gained,  
And ouer her to giue him perfit powre,  
With sacred rites a marriage was ordained,  
And with the veile of this so sacred order,  
She couers this her folly and disorder.

26

Now when the solemne marriage was done,  
Of which god Cupid askt the bames (I trow)  
She going forward as she hath begun,  
Continu'd there with him a month or mo,  
From rising to the setting of the Sunne,  
With him she doth sit, talk, lie, stand and go,  
Forgetting so all maidenly sobrietie,  
That she of him could neuer haue satietie.

27

If in the house she staid, then would she craue  
Medoro in the house with her to stay,  
If in the field she walke, then must she haue  
Medoro leade or guide her in the way:  
And by a riuer in the shady caue,  
They oft did vse to spend the heate of day:  
Like to that caue where (shunning stormy wether)  
The Troian Duke and Dido met together.

*Virg 4. En.*

*There is no plea-  
sure in pleasure  
it self, if one may  
not vnder it, (as  
Tully saith) If a  
man went up to  
heauen, & were  
bound to say no-  
thing of it at his  
return, he would  
be sorie for it.*

28

Amid these ioyes (as great as ioyes might be)  
Their manner was on eu'ry wall within,  
Without on eu'ry stone or shadie tree,  
To graue their names with bodkin, knife or pin,  
Angelica and Medore, you plaine might see,  
(So great a glorie had they both therein)  
Angelica and Medore in eu'ry pla-  
ce, With sandry knots and wreathes they enterlace.

29

Now when she thought in this well pleasing place,  
She had already made sufficient stay,  
And, for she longd to do Medore that grace,  
To giue to him her kingdome of Catay,  
From whence she had bene absent so long space,  
From this poore house she meanes to go away,  
Yet minds she ere she go, her host to please,  
With whom she found such pleasure and such ease.

30

Angelica had since she was a gerle,  
Worne on her arme (as for Orlandos sake)  
A bracelet rich, of precious stone and perle,  
Which as a token she of him did take,  
And though she had it of this worthy Erle,  
Yet did she thereof chiefeft reckning make  
Not that the giuer she did much esteeme,  
But for the gift was rich, so did seeme.

31

By her this bracelet many yeares was worne,  
Not onely in her time of peace and ioy,  
But eu'n when she remained most forlorne,  
And subiect to each danger and annoy,  
Eu'n then when nakt as euer she was borne,  
The Orko came in hope her to enioy:  
This bracelet (wanting store of coyne and pence)  
She giues her host as for a recompence.

32

Next day betime she getteth on her way,  
And makes Medoro sole her Lord and guide,  
He kept her companie both night and day,  
And none but he with her did go and ride;  
Their meaning is at Berselon to stay,  
A port in Spaine, vntill they may prouide  
A vessell that with helpe of oare and winde,  
May them transport from Spanish seas to Inde.

33

But ere they were arriued at this port,  
They met a mad man of his wit bestraug  
Besmeard with dirt and mire in filthy sort  
His outward sence expeld with inward t<sup>ough</sup>  
This mad man made them but ilfauour<sup>ort</sup>  
And had made<sup>le</sup>, had he them rightly ca  
But as it was he put them in great danger,  
And flies at them as dogs do at a stranger.

*this you shall  
find more in the  
29. book, 58. staff.*

34

But how she scaped and away did get  
With her new loue, hereafter I declare:  
For why Marfisa I may not forget,  
And those with her that in the tempest are,  
With Griffin, Aquilant and Sansonet,  
And th'English Duke that hath the horne<sup>are</sup>,  
Which shee I left in danger and discafe,  
Toft terribly in the tempestuous seas.

*Marfisa.  
Griffin.  
Aquilant.  
Astolfo.*

35

Now while the wind continu'd blowing hard,  
And of his rage did small or nothing bate,  
The master lets his compasse and his card,  
And calls to counsell first the masters mate,  
And then the marriners of best regard,  
Consulting of the weather and their state,  
And eu'ry one doth tell his guesse and thought,  
Neare to what coast the tempest had them brought.  
Some



36  
Some say Lymisso, Tripoly some say,  
Some say Satila, full of rocks and sands,  
As I weare that all of them were cast away,  
Except they keepe aloofe from off those lands;  
This causeth some to curse, and some to pray,  
And lift to heau'n their wofull hearts and hands,  
Their stuffe nor merchandize none care to saue,  
But hurle the same into the greedie waue.

37  
Well might they boast of iron heart and brest,  
That could at such a time be voyd of feare,  
The stout *Marfisa* at that time confest,  
She wisht with all her heart not to be there,  
So sore the swelling seas did them molest,  
As though it would the ship in peeces teare,  
As there any more the wind would cease,  
That the sea would hunt them any peace.

*This passage went to  
be the manner in  
great dangers.*

38  
One makes a vow to visite holy toome,  
Another to Galicia vowes to go,  
Vnto Saint *Iames*, some others vnto Roome,  
Or other hallowd places that they know.  
The marriners feare nought but want of roome,  
Sea roome they wish, then care they for no mo,  
At foure dayes end it cleard and waxed faire,  
Or were't the season, or their earnest praire.

39  
And as the weather grew more cleare and cleare,  
They did discover plaine a goodly coast,  
And to the port as they drew neare and neare,  
Borne in by tide, their sailes and tackle lost,  
Behold a goodly citie did appeare,  
With towres and stately buildings of great cost,  
Of which when once the master was aware,  
It bred in him no little feare and care.

40  
To canker straight he doth prouide,  
As he was to labour to go backe,  
The vessel wanted sailes to stem the tide,  
He had put all thing so to wracke,  
As he feared on the other side,  
If the towne would sure be on his iacke;  
In fine so full his mind was of confusion,  
He knew not whereupon to make conclusion.

41  
Now while he stood confus'd in this sort,  
The English Duke demaunds what cause of doubt  
Made him refuse so faire and safe a port,  
And striue against the streame to keepe still out?  
Sir (quoth the master) briefly to report  
The cause, know this, that hereabout,  
As in that citie dwells a nation,  
That vse a barbarous and cruell fashion.

*The countrey of  
the Amazons,  
and a mad law  
of theirs.*

42  
They call them Amazons that here do dwell,  
Here women guide, and rule, and gouerne all,  
The men from gouernment they do expell,  
Some they do kill, the rest keepe bond and thrall,  
He sole shall scape that runs at tilt so well,  
As first to make ten men of theirs to fall,  
And next in venery and flesh delight,  
Can satisfie ten women in one night.

43  
And if a man performe the first of these,  
And haue such hap to ouerthrow the men,  
And yet at night his force do faile to please;  
In act of generation damfels ten,  
He must be kild or drowned in the seas,  
Or kept a prisoner in some caue or den;  
But they that both performe, shall haue their liues,  
And those ten damfels euer for their wiues.

44  
When as the pilot out his tale had told,  
Of women that delight in spoile and murder,  
The English Duke could hard his laughter hold,  
To heare of so fantastical an order,  
And all the five affirmed straight they wold  
Land at this place, and go by sea no furdur,  
Each place to them was safe and out of feare,  
Where they might haue the vse of sword and speare.

45  
But all the shipmen carrid other minds,  
As men that better were to stormes inured,  
And wold haue thought their liues in waues & winds  
More then in conflicts and in fights assured:  
But whether reason leades, or causes binds,  
Or that the better part the same procured,  
The ship with broken mast and tackle torne,  
By force of tide into the hau'n was borne.

46  
No sooner was the vessell in the port,  
But straight a gally ready for such need,  
Stor'd with artillery of eu'ry sort,  
And one that could both row and saile with speed,  
Did boord them, and (to make the matter short)  
A woman clad in graue and auncient weed,  
As old as *Sibill*, or as *Hectors* mother,  
Spake in effect these words with many other.

*Sibilla and He-  
cuba very old  
women.*

47  
My friends (quoth she) or yeeld or looke to die,  
For hope is none to scape away by flight,  
But thus if any of you meane to trie,  
If he alone can vanquish ten in fight,  
And afterward with twise five maidens lie,  
And of them maids make women in one night,  
Then such a one shall rule among vs chiefe,  
And saue his friends from punishment and grieve.

*Cornelius Agrip-  
pa in the vanitie  
of sciēces, writes  
that Hercules  
made fifty maids  
women in one  
night.*

48  
But if that any shall the fact attempt,  
And faile but in the first or in the last,  
Then he shall die because of his contempt,  
And into prison ye shall all be cast.  
They made her answer all, they were content,  
Not one man there was therewithall agast,  
For in both kinds the knights had so bene proued,  
As with the danger they were nothing moued.

49  
The English Duke with these three youths of France,  
Straight for this enterprize themselues prepare,  
But chiefe the Duke that doubted not mischance,  
By vertue of his booke and horne most rare:  
*Marfisa* eke (though for the second daunce  
She was not fit) so manly mind she bare,  
As she would needs her force and fortune trie,  
And ware her sword all weapons should supplie.



50

And straight they all agreed some lots to draw,  
And to conclude on her the hazard fell,  
But she that quite was void of feare and aw,  
Did promise to performe her office well:  
This sword (quoth she) shall abrogate this law,  
And plague them all that in this citie dwell,  
And to vndo these doubts I will prouide,  
As *Alexander Gordius* knots vntide.

*Alexander cut  
the knots in pee-  
ces that he could  
not vntie, called  
Gordius knots.*

51

No forreiner hereafter shall bewaile  
The wicked law of this vngodly land:  
This said, she putteth on her coate of maile,  
In hope alone against ten men to stand.  
Then came the ten were pointed to assaile,  
But he that was the formost of the band,  
As far as by apparance might be guest,  
Was one that farre surpassed all the rest.

52

His horse was blacke as pitch, or polisht ieat,  
Saue in one foote, and in his brow a starre,  
A shining spot of white, not very great,  
A loftie raine, an eye that threatned warre;  
Such as the horse, such was his owne conceit,  
His sorrows did exceed his ioyes so farre,  
And deadly care so drownd his small delight,  
As did the blacke the little spot of white.

53

This knight (that euer vantage did eschew)  
Would not accompanie those other nine,  
But standeth still on horseback taking vew,  
Which way the victorie did most incline:  
*Marfisa* rode a horse of daintie hew,  
Giu'n vnto her of late by *Norandine*,  
His colour pide powderd with many a spot,  
Small head, fierce looke, cleane limbd, and lofty trot.

54

Now when that giu'n of battell was the signe,  
On her alone all nine at once did flie,  
And she alone sustained the force of nine:  
The tenth (I said) was quiet standing by,  
As one that did against that vse repine,  
When more then one should seeke to make one die,  
And with the first encounter thus she sped,  
She layd downe foure of them on ground for ded.

55

The fift she iustles, and by force vnhorses,  
And with a trunch the sixt she gaue a blo,  
That to the ground both man and horse inforces,  
With mazed head, and foltring feet to go.  
The standers by admire her passing forces,  
And chiefe their wiues that saw them killed so,  
For as a chainshot (weeps all in the way,  
So with those nine *Marfisa* then did play.

*Smile.*

56

She bathd her blade in blood vp to the hilt,  
And with the same their bodies all she mangled,  
All that aboue her blowes, their blood was spilt,  
They scaped best that here and thither rangled,  
Or those whose horses ouerthrowne at tilt,  
Lay with their masters on the earth intangled.  
Thas of nine enemies remained none,  
For all were kild, or maimd, or ouerthrowne.

57

The knight that was arrayd in blacke attire,  
And stood aside, and saw this hardie fight,  
To shew that he for feare did not retire,  
But to make knowne his curtse shining brig  
Straight steppeth out, and first he doth desire  
To speake with her whom he esteemd a knight,  
For he could not imagine nor suppose  
A woman could haue giu'n such manly bloes.

58

And thus he saith, me seemes the ods too great,  
That I of you should take to fight straightway,  
Sith both your horse and you are in a sweat,  
Mine offer is to respite you a day,  
Till you may be refreshd with rest and meate,  
That with mine honour fight with you  
For I should thinke my self disgraced for  
To vanquish one weari and spent before.

59

Weari'd and spent (quoth she) alas the while,  
Thinke you I am so weari'd and so spent?  
Your courteous offer causeth me to smile,  
To thinke how quickly you will it repent;  
You do deceiue your selfe, and much beguile,  
To thinke that I to pawse would be content,  
I doubt not you shall find but little cause,  
(When you haue tride) to offer me to pause.

60

Well, said the knight, if you will trie it st night,  
That you accept, I cannot well refuse:  
Forthwith two speares of mighty strength & waight  
Were brought, and he doth bid *Marfisa* chuse:  
Now was the Sunne foure howers past his haight,  
When as these two began their speares to vse,  
The trumpets found, they set their speares in rest,  
And each determining to do their best.

*A combat be-  
twene Marfisa  
and Gordius.*

61

The speares in spels and sundry peeces flew.  
As if they had bene little sticks or can-  
Yet of the blowes to both did hurt ei  
Their steeds were welnigh brought v  
Quite ouerthrowne in all the peoples ve  
As though their legs had quite fro them be  
So both their horses tumbled on the ground,  
Yet both then selues from hurt were safe and sound.

62

An hundred and an hundred knights and more,  
*Marfisa* had lubdude (it was well knowne)  
Yet such a chance she neuer had before,  
To haue her horse so strangely ouerthrowne:  
Also the knight that blacke apparell wore,  
Doth maruel whence this great mishap  
And not a little wondred at her force,  
That had so stoutly ouerthrowne his horse.

63

Forthwith on foote the combat they apply,  
In which the one the tother doth not spare,  
And either thinks to make the other die,  
And either of the tother doth beware.  
But all the while among the standers by,  
Appeared great attentiueneesse and care,  
For neuer could they guesse from the beginning,  
Which of the two was in best hope of winning.

Now



64

*The conceits that  
Marfisa had of  
Goudon.*

Now gan *Marfisa* to her selfe to say,  
It happie was that he before stood still,  
had he holpe the tother nine to day,  
doubt with me it could haue bene but ill,  
That now alone so hard doth hold me play,  
As scant I saue my selfe with all my skill,  
Thus to her selfe the stout *Marfisa* thought,  
And all the while couragiously she fought.

65

*The conceits that  
Goudon had of  
Marfisa.*

Contrarie, to himselfe the knight thus seeth,  
Twas well for me, that he before was spent,  
For had he bene but fresh in perfect breath,  
I doubt me that er this I had bene shent,  
Surely (thought he) I scant had escaped deth.  
If he to himselfe had giu'n consent.  
N<sup>o</sup> question I did that advantage take,  
at he refused that once I did make.

66

Thus did the combat long twixt them endure,  
And neither party boasted of their gaine,  
Vntill the nights darke shadow and obscure,  
Did couer citie, wood, and vale, and plaine,  
And that that rest to all thing doth procure,  
Did force them two to respite this their paine;  
And first the knight thus said, what can we do?  
Behold how night is come to part vs two.

67

You may say he one night prolong your life,  
And longer not, such is the curled law,  
Against my will (God knows) I hold this strife,  
And now I feare and haue no little aw,  
Lest eu'rie one that was to them a wife,  
Whom late you kild, will from your beds you draw  
For eu'rie one of those vnhappie men,  
Whom erst you slue was husband vnto ten.

68

So that for those same nine that you haue slaine,  
Nine times ten women seeke reuenge to take:  
Wherefore I wish that you and all your traines  
Within my rooſe this night abode do make,  
For to perhap from wrong they will abstaine,  
If not for right, at least for reuerence sake.  
He take your offer sir, *Marfisa* saith,  
So that hereof to me you giue your faith.

69

That as in fight you shew your vawlew great,  
As I haue proued in this present place,  
So I may find your words without deceit,  
Left falshood should your noble deeds deface:  
I will accept your lodging and your meat,  
And will periwade my fellows in like case;  
But rather then for feare you should it thinke,  
Lets fight it out by light of torch and linke.

70

And thus in fine they all of them agreed,  
That vnto him that night they would be guest:  
Straight to a sumptuous pallace they proceed,  
By torch light brought to chambers richly drest,  
But when that each put off their warlike weed,  
Then each of them with wonder was possit:  
She, that the knight did by his face appeare,  
To be a boy of age but eightene yeare.

71

And he, when by her haire her sex he knew,  
Wonderd to see a woman of such might,  
As namely that in fight nine tall men slew,  
And after had with him prolongd the fight;  
And either pleased the others view,  
Behold the one the other with delight,  
Then each desir'd the others name to learne,  
As in th' ensuing booke you shall discearne.

*In the first staffe of this Canto, is an excellent morall of the prooffe of frends, which my father many yeares since did Morall  
translate at word for word as I haue set it downe, applying it to his master, the worthie Lord Admirall Seymor:  
at because verse was my fathers, I count I may without vsurpation claime it by inheritance. He applied it to that  
aptly) diners wayes: both for his life, and for his death, but specially (which I count worthy the noting)  
who loued him so deare, that euen in remembrance of his honorable kindnesse, they loued one another  
and my father I reme, but a weeke before he died, which was in the yeare 1582. wrote with his owne  
the names of those were then liuing of the old Admiraltie (so he called them that had bene my Lords men) and there  
were then xxxiiij. of them liuing, of which many were knights and men of more reueneu then himselfe, and some were  
but meane men, as armorers, artificers, keepers, and farmers; and yet the memorie of his seruice, was such a band among  
them all of kindnesse, as the best of them disdained not the poorest, and the meaner had recourse to the greatest, for their  
countenance and ayd in their honest causes, and many of them are euen now liuing, and yet it wants little of fortie  
yeares since that noble man was put to death. His picture my father gaue after to the Queenes Maiestie that now is, with  
a prettie verse written on it, and it hangs now in the gallerie at Somerset house.*

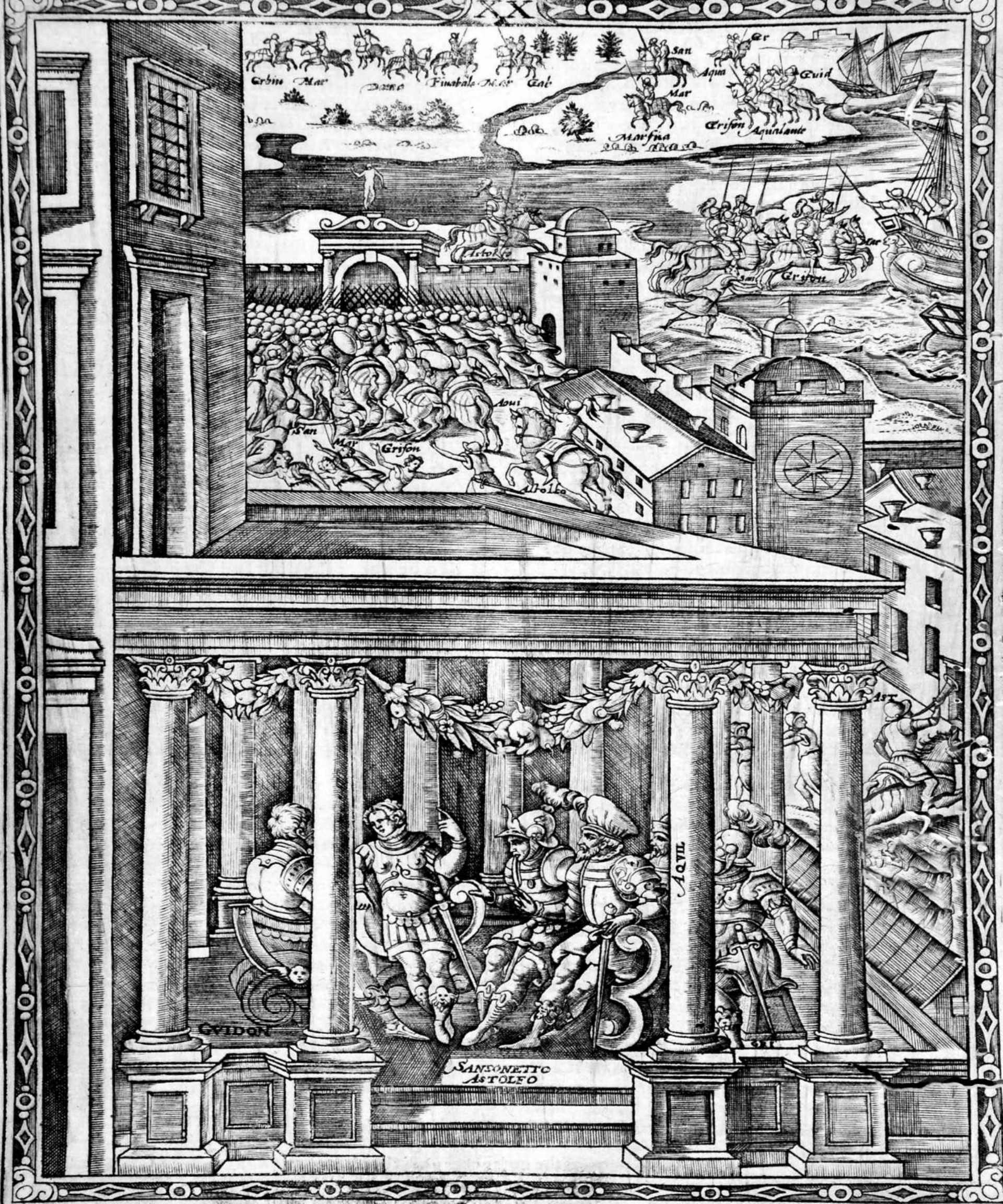
*That there were Amazons, I thinke no man doubteth that hath read of Alexanders conquests.*

*In An<sup>o</sup> iucas wedding of Medore I gather this Allegorie, Angelica is taken for honor, which braue men hunt after, Allegorie.  
by words, and battels, and many hardy feats, and misse it: but a good seruant with faith and gratefulnesse to his Lord  
gets it.*

*Cloridan and Medore allude to Eurialus and Nisus in Virgils Æneads.*

*Allusion.*







## THE ARGUMENT.

*With Guidon all his worthie guests agree,  
To breake from th' Amazons the morrow morne:  
Astolfo doubting lest it would not be,  
Doth drive them thence and scares them with his horne:  
Zerbino laughs Gabrina gay to see;  
Marfisa seemes to take it in great scorne,  
And gainst his will commits her to his guiding,  
By whom he hears of Isabella tiding.*



**R**ight wondrous deeds by diuers dames were donee,  
In times of old, as well by sword as pen,  
Whereby their glorie shined like the sunne,  
And famous was both far and neare as then,  
The fame *Harpalice* in battell wonne,  
Worth is eke well knowne to men,  
For *Isle*, and *Saphes* are discerned,  
Left, because they both were lerned.

what science is so hie,  
In haire thereto attayned?  
And to looke, may trie,  
Which here in not false nor fained,  
Though of late they seeme not to come nie,  
For their sexe in former times haue gained,  
No doubt the fault is either in backbiters,  
Or want of skill and iudgement in the writers.

For in this our present age,  
Such vertuous parts in their sweet sexe to grow,  
The young to sober, and the rest so sage,  
And all so chaste, as writers shall (I know)  
Haue worke enough to fill full many a page,  
With their great praise that from their worth will  
To win the fame their ancestors did leafe, flow,  
And passe *Marfisa* not in few degrees.

For now to turne my speech to her againe,  
May that when the knight did aske her name

She made him answer, and did not disdaine,  
To tell both what she was, and whence she came,  
Yet (as her fashion was) both brieft and plaine;  
She saith thus to the knight, I called am  
*Marfisa*: and she need to say no more,  
For all the world had heard the rest before.

The tother, when his turne to speake came in,  
First making long and farther circumstance,  
In such like manner doth his tale begin,  
(And sighing deepe) you all haue heard perchance,  
Both of my fathers house and of my kin,  
Of fame in Italie, in Spaine and France:  
For sure I am the house of Clarimount,  
In all the world is knowne and of account.

He that *Charello* and *Mambrino* slew,  
And did their kingdoms ruine and deface,  
Out of one stocke with me together grew,  
Although we were not all borne in one place,  
For why at Ister flood (to tell you trew)  
My father me begat, and in that case,  
My mother great with childe he left behind,  
And went to France by helpe of saile and wind.

Thus seuiteene yeares I ha'd like one exild,  
Vntill I able was to breake a lance,  
And for that place me seemd too base and vild,  
I meane to seeke my friends and kin in France:  
They name me *Guido* (saunge of a child,  
As yet I could not much my name aduance,  
For hither by a tempest I was borne,  
As you were now with ship and tackle torne.

*Here begins  
the tale of the  
Amazons.*

*Renaldo brother  
to Guido, but not  
by the same ven-  
er.*

*Guido's name,  
before he was  
called Guido.*



8

Here first *Argillon* with nine men I killed,  
 A leau'n months since, and that same day at night,  
 The office of an husband I fulfilled,  
 Vnto ten Amazons in flesh delight;  
 This done, to take my choise then was I willed,  
 Of any ten that pleased best my sight,  
 And these remaine my wiues, and must vntill  
 One come that me with other nine can kill.

9

Vnto the knights this seemd a maru'lous storie,  
 And much they wonderd at this gouernment,  
 They maruell that so great a territorie,  
 For want of men was not consum'd and spent:  
 They thought no lesse the women would be sorie,  
 For want of men, to liue so continent;  
 'Twas strange one man sufficed ten of theafe,  
 Sith one with vs can scant one woman please.

10

And straight they were inquisitiue to know,  
 When first this foolish order there began,  
 And vpon what occasion it did grow,  
 That women in that countrie ruled man?  
 Then *Guidon* answerd thus, I shall you show  
 The whole discourse as briefly as I can,  
 According as my selfe haue heard the same,  
 Since (by mishap) into this realme I came.

11

When as the Greekes had quite defaced Troy,  
 And after twise ten yeares returned home,  
 (For ten whole years in danger and annoy,  
 Of surging seas they vp and downe did royme)  
 They found their wiues that had but little toy,  
 So long a time, to liue and lye alone,  
 Each one a lustie louer to haue chosen,  
 Left with the cold they might be staru'd and frozen.

12

Their houses full of bastard brats they see:  
 In fine, they purpose after consultation,  
 To pardon all their wiues and let them free,  
 But for these boyes that bred some alteration,  
 To driue them out a doore they do agree,  
 And make them seeke a forraigne habitation;  
 It was contrarie much to their desires,  
 That others brats should warme the at their fires.

13

Thus some thrown out, some close their mothers keep  
 In corners, from their angrie husbands fight,  
 And when as elder years on them do creepe,  
 Each one betakes him to his most delight;  
 Some plow, some get them herds of goats & sheep  
 Some sciences, and some do learne to fight.  
 Thus eu'rie one betooke him to some trade,  
 As he assignes that all the world hath made.

14

Among the rest that Art of war ensue,  
*Phalanto* sonne of *Clytemnestra* Queene,  
 But eightene yeares of age, and fresh of hue,  
 And in the floure of youths well pleasing greene,  
 This one to him an hundred gallants drue,  
 And getting ships and things that needfull beene,  
 With writs of Mart (a thing that breeds much sorow)  
 He gets him to the sea, in mind to borow.

Looke in the Hi-  
 storie of this  
 booke.

15

Now while *Phalanto* with his curled fleet,  
 Abode at sea with that more curled traine;  
 It fortund at that time that they of Creet,  
 Had *Idumeo* driu'n out of his raigne,  
 Wherefore for better strength they thought i  
*Phalanto* and his men to entertaine.  
 They giue to him great hire, and great reward,  
 The citie of Ditea for to guard.

16

Ditea was a towne of great estate,  
 Rich and frequented with no small resort,  
 And yeelds in plentie large, betimes and late,  
 Of fundrie kinds of pleasures and of sport;  
 And as they all men vsd, so in like rate,  
 They vld their souldiers in so friendly sort,  
 As though they had agree  
 To make them all theirasters and their

17

But chiefe they found with women so great grace,  
 As they wan most of them vnto their lure;  
 But when the warres were ended in short space,  
 And that their pay no longer did endure,  
 They all prepar'd to leaue this pleasant place,  
 Which to the damfels did great griefe procure;  
 To leese their husbands, brother, or their father,  
 Then these new louers eu'rie one had rather.

18

And when they saw they could not make them stay,  
 By no deuice of theirs, nor no request,  
 They do agree with them to steale away,  
 And take such things as were of value best;  
 Thus came these damfels loden with their pray,  
 And thence to sea, and were now gone at last  
 An hundred leagues, with these new lawles louers,  
 Before Ditea this their flight discouers.

19

The wind so good then for their purpose blew,  
*Phalanto* quickly landed in this coast,  
 And here the amorous and wanton cr  
 Vnto their loues of this their lewdne  
 But now this saying was confirmed t  
 That pleasant things do often cloy the  
 And there can be a greater clog to no man,  
 Then to be wearie of a wanton woman.

1571. B.

20

Wherefore like men that were, and had bene euer,  
 Of gaine most greedie, sparing of expence:  
 They secretly consulting do endeuer,  
 To take the goods, and then to steale from thence.  
 Thus while the women still in loue perseuer,  
 They that regard not pleasure more then pence,  
 Lode with their wealth, of which there  
 Stale to the sea, & left them on the shore. (store

21

Sore were the damfels daunted and dismayd,  
 When once they saw their loues had the forsaken,  
 For what more spite can be, then he betraid  
 Of him to whom one hath her like betaken?  
 And sith they find that weeping doth not ayd,  
 They meane betime some order shalbe taken,  
 What they shall do, and how hereafter liue,  
 And eu'rie one doth straight her verdit giue.

Sentence.

One



22

One home to turne againe doth thinke it best,  
And to their kin and friends them to submit,  
And with repentance pardon to request,  
And vow the like fault neuer to commit;  
Nother that good motion doth detest,  
And sweares it shewd the mouer had no wit,  
And that with greater honestie or ease,  
They might go drowne them headlong in the seas.

23

Among the rest one *Orontea* hight,  
That lineally of *Mynos* was descended,  
And past the rest in beautie and good sprite,  
And had lesse grievously then they offended,  
For to *Phalanto* she her troth did plight,  
And to haue bene his honest spouse intended:  
This orde laireth thus her resolution,  
And makes her re . . . it in execution.

24

*The commodities  
of a good seate of  
a citie.*  
She wishes them to tary in this land,  
That had both fruitfull earth and pleasant aire,  
And fountaines sweet, and woods on eu'ry hand,  
And medowes greene, and pastures fresh and faire,  
Beside large hau'ns, where ships at ease might stand,  
To which the merchants often made repaire,  
By tempest driven, well laden with good trafficke,  
Of things that come from Egypt and from Affricke.

25

Wherefore this place she minds not to forsake,  
But that they may as chiefly they desire,  
A sharpe reuenge on men for euer take,  
They vow to put to sacke, to sword and fire,  
Such ships as to their hauens repaire do make,  
And kill the men, and this they all conspire:  
And still when any come, this trade they vse,  
Nor lett a man aliue to carry newes.

26

*here were too  
any eakers  
b . . . in their  
Parli . . .  
they made such a  
law they were  
brisen to chang  
fo' soe after..*  
But when this cruell law some yeares had lasted,  
Which they had meant to haue confirmed for ay,  
find that they so fast consumed and wasted,  
their barren kingdome would decay,  
Except to find some remedy they halted,  
And being long consulted on the way,  
They meane of this their law to bate some rigor,  
Yet leaue the substance still in strength and vigor.

27

And thus they do, they chuse among such men,  
As tempests driue to this their wicked nation,  
Some few as were so lustie, as with ten  
They could performe the act of generation,  
All in one night, the rest into a den  
They cast, and kill them in most cruell fashion,  
And build vnto reuenge a solemne alter,  
And ouer this they make them stretch a halter.

28

*The  
use build out  
all the af-  
fe ions of the  
mind, as feare,  
hope, and such  
like.*  
Such men as liue are to this order sworne,  
To kill all such as hither shall repaire,  
And all men children that to them are borne,  
They sell or change as in an open faire,  
So when some die with age and weaknesse worne,  
Then other women do the want repaire,  
Their powre and number thus doth still increase,  
Their wealth & pomp augmented, with long peace.

29

But after many yeares it thus befell,  
*Elbanio*, one of *Hercles* noble race,  
A comely tall strong man, and fauord well,  
And in his speech and manners passing grace,  
Arrived where these homicids do dwell,  
And ere he knew the fashion of the place,  
The cruell sergeants tooke him as they found him,  
And like a fellow hand and foote they bound him.

30

It fortuned as they carrid him to slaughter,  
Among the rest that did the same behold,  
Was *Alessandra*, *Orontea*s daughter,  
A fine yong girle, about twise eight yeare old,  
*Elbanio* humbly as he went besought her,  
To be a meane this foule death to withhold,  
That like a man he might be kild at least,  
And not be drawne to slaughter like a beast.

31

To beg my life (quoth he) it were a vanitie,  
(Which in your seruice I would gladly spend)  
Where humane hearts be voyd of all humanitie,  
But all the sute that I to make intend,  
(Which to denie were too too much immanitie)  
Is this, that thus my life I may not end,  
But with my sword in hand to fight with men,  
With seu'n at once, or eight, or nine or ten.

32

This he to her, thus she to him replies,  
Though to mankind we all professe hostilitie,  
Yet thinke not (this she spake with wat'rie eyes)  
That all our hearts are void of all gentilitie,  
What *Progne* or *Medea* could despise  
Your passing beautie, courage and nobilitie:  
And were my fellowes all so ill inclin'd,  
Yet I my selfe would beare a better mind.

*Progne and Me-  
dea two cruell  
bloody women.*

33

And though the rigor of our law be such,  
That no man can obtaine a pardon free,  
And eu'n this small you aske, to graunt is much,  
If our law strictly should obserued bee,  
Yet such remorse I feele my heart doth tuch,  
To graunt thy sute if others will agree  
Although I feare thou wilt in such a strife,  
Prolong thy paine, and not preserue thy life.

34

Oh (said *Elbanio*) blest were such a day,  
That in the field my manhood I might trie,  
Could but your credit carry such a sway,  
Not ten, but ten times ten I would desie.  
This said, she causd the execution stay,  
And to her mother goes she by and by,  
With thousand stings of *Cupid* in her brest,  
And vnto her expoundeth his request.

35

Straight *Orontea* doth her counsell call,  
And in such sort thereof to them she spake,  
In guarding of our hau'n and citie wall,  
Tis good that of the strongest men we take:  
Therefore to know who be most stout and tall,  
I thinke it very good some proote to make,  
For else we shall vnto our selues do wrong,  
To saue the weaker men, and kill the strong.

*Orontea's oration  
in Elbanio's be-  
half.*



36

And who can wish to make a better triall,  
Then for one man to fight with fīue and fīue,  
And if he vanquish them and make them die all,  
Twere certes meet he should be kept aliue:  
Thus *Orontea* laid, and they replie all,  
That in this point with her they cannot strīue,  
Saue old *Artemia* (carren witherd iade)  
Mislikt the motion, and this answer made.

*Artemias oratio  
against Elbanio.*

37

The cause that first we did some men admit,  
Was not to keepe our hau'ns or citie wall,  
For we our selues haue strength enough and wit,  
To keepe our towne (I trust) and euer shall.  
Were we as well for procreation fit,  
Without mans helpe, nor one should liue at all;  
Now for necessitie some few we spare,  
Such as most able for that seruice are.

38

This motion quite gainfaith our auncient law,  
To keepe one man as strong as halfe a score:  
How many women would he keepe in aw?  
Had we ten such we should beare rule no more.  
And further, tis an old and certaine saw,  
Both vsed and proued many yeares before,  
That they that giue a weapon to their stronger,  
Are like themselues to carry rule no longer.

*Sentence.*

39

But put the case this one by our consent,  
And his goodhap ten of the others kill,  
How shall an hundred widowes then lament,  
That long must lie alone against their will?  
If he an hundred women would content,  
Then him to saue I should not thinke it ill,  
Then were he to be lou'd, admir'd and wonderd,  
If he alone could satisfie an hunderd.

40

This cruell speech did all the rest displease,  
And loth they were *Elbanio* should be slaine,  
His comely shape their sharpnesse did appeale,  
And chiefly she that ouer all did raigne,  
Doth seeke herein her daughters mind to please,  
With many reasons answring her againe,  
And point by point did all her speech confute,  
And in the end obtained her daughters sute.

41

Thus to *Elbanio* pardon they impart,  
Prouided if he ouercome the men,  
And after brauely play the husbands part,  
Not with an hundred women, but with ten.  
*Elbanio* thanketh them with chearfull hart,  
Then was he freely loosed from the den:  
In fīue, when all things ready were ordained,  
In both exploits the conquest he obtained.

42

Then *Alleffandra*, in whole tender mind  
Loue had alreadie made so deepe impression,  
With other nine, were vnto him assignd.  
And princely mace was put in his possession.  
But first by solemne vow they do him bind,  
To hold this law for euer by succession,  
To sacrifice all men, saue such as trie,  
To kill ten men, and with ten women lie.

43

And though that many haue in ages past  
Attempted both, yet few haue had successe,  
To scape the first exploit, and trie the last,  
In which to faile, the danger were no lesse,  
But he that both performs, forthwith is plast  
In princely seate, and free from all distresse:  
And this their law (as by records appeares)  
Alreadie lasted hath two thousand yeares.

44

The last but I, that held this cursed place,  
*Argillon* hight, whom I in combat killed,  
And him and his thereby I did displace,  
And then their roomes with me and mine I filled,  
Where we haue tarrid now a twelue moneths space,  
Among these wights of goodnesse all vnskilled,  
And leade a life full of dildaine at  
As better had bene neuer borne.

45

For why these dallyings and wanton toyes,  
That wonted are to please our foolish youth,  
With costly fare, gay clothes, and *Venus* ioyes,  
Of which repentance is the frute ensweeth,  
Doth breed to me but anguish and annoyes,  
And pensīue cares, and euer during such;  
And chiefly when vnto my mind I call,  
My libertie is lost, and I a thrall.

*Non bene pra  
fultus let  
suro.*

46

To loose my lustie time in this vile place,  
Remou'd from kin and friends, and countrey farre,  
A wofull and remedilesse disgrace,  
Mou'd by some ill aspect of angry starre,  
Eu'n as a stallion kept for breed and race,  
Whom some mishap hath made vnfit for warre,  
By losse of fight and foudring of his feete,  
For seruice quite vnable and vnmeet.

*Simile.  
Thus simile was  
hath ca'st home*

47

The while this tale the sauage *Guidon* told,  
The English Duke that all this while stood by,  
And heard his speech, and did his face beho  
And noted all his grace with watchfull e e,  
And made by all these obseruations bolde  
He runneth to embrace him by and by,  
And said, deare cousin, I were much to blame,  
Except I lou'd the house from whence you came.

*The end of the  
Amazons tale*

48

Your mother could not tie a better lace  
About your necke, to make your linage knowne,  
Then this your value in this present place  
Against *Marfisa* in the battell showne:  
I am *Astolfo* one of *Ammons* race,  
Friend to your house, and kinsman of your owne,  
I much reioyce to find by this mitchance,  
So neare a kinsman so far off from France.

49

But he that otherwise would haue bene glad,  
To meet a friend, a Prince of kin so neare,  
Now on the other side he was full sad,  
And shewd the same in countenance and cheare,  
For eu'ry way the sequell must be bad,  
For if he win they die, the case is cleare,  
And if he do not win, he is but ded,  
Thus by ones good the tothers harme is bred.

On



50

On th'other side his yeares and tender age,  
 Did all of them so farre with pittie moue,  
 And did *Marfisa* heate so much affwage,  
 Her enmitie was welnigh turnd to loue:  
 At last she makes a motion wise and sage,  
 Which was, that all to scape by force should proue,  
 She sweares if he would take part with his cosen,  
 Not all the towne could vanquish that halfe dosen.

51

Most glad (said *Guidon*) I would take your part,  
 Though vaine it is against so great a number,  
 To enterprife by force hence to depart,  
 Their very multitude will vs so cumber:  
 For often (to the terror of mine hart)  
 Ten thousand armed women I do number  
 Here in this land with as many more,  
 They do defend the fort, the hau'n and shore.

52

Tush (quoth *Marfisa*) this I not regard,  
 Were they in number as the sands of seas,  
 To valiant hearts no enterprife is hard,  
 Take you but part, and ioyne with me and these.  
 Yes, answerd *Guidon*, be I made or mard,  
 Or bee't with paine, with danger or discafe,  
 I will take part with you, but if I may,  
 I would aduise you to a safer way.

53

If we this matter wisely take in hand,  
 This is the safest way that I do know,  
 They let no men to touch the salt sea sand,  
 Lest any should attempt from hence to go:  
 And sith tis lord their forces to withstand,  
 Ile trie a better way then that, I trow,  
 Among my ten I haue one speciall wife,  
 Vpon whose trust I venter dare my life.

54

She shall a barke prouide in secret sort,  
 And other needfull things for vs prepare,  
 When as to the tilt-yard they resort,  
 And of our fight in expectation are,  
 We suddenly will make vnto the port,  
 And ship our selues ere any be aware:  
 To lead the way my selfe I am content,  
 So you and yours to follow will consent.

55

*Marfisa* straight, and all the rest agreed,  
 That *Guidon* for that time should be their guide,  
 And that accordingly they would proceed,  
 As he for them had promist to prouide:  
 Though (said *Marfisa*) sauing this my weed,  
 My shape and sexe from all of them doth hide,  
 I know my selfe from harme could be excused,  
 And of them all both welcome and well vsed.

56

But now (said she) such part I mind to take,  
 As you shall tast (how good or bad it proue)  
 That night with his *Aleria* *Guidon* spake,  
 (So was her name that bare him chiefeft loue)  
 And points that she prouision good should make,  
 For things that needfull were for their remoue.  
 And she no time, nor paine, nor trauell spard,  
 But out of hand a galley straight prepard.

57

And that her fellowes might no fraud suspect,  
 To go to seeke a prize she doth pretend,  
 And with great diligence she doth direct,  
 All meanes to serue their passage to defend:  
 And they within no time nor meane neglect,  
 To bring their stout designement to an end  
 Thus eu'ry one their charge so well attended,  
 That ere the morning all was done and ended.

58

No sooner came the dawning of the day,  
 But that those Amazons like bees in twarmes,  
 That seeke new dwellings in the month of May,  
 So came they well appointed all in armes,  
 To see an end of that vnended fray,  
 Not looking for such new and strange alarmes,  
 For straight those fixe I nam'd and all their traine,  
 Came with intent to scape or else be slaine.

59

First *Guidon* breakes the way to all the rest,  
 Soone after him *Marfisa* did ensue,  
 Then *Sanfonet* and th'English Duke were prest,  
 And next two brothers came, then all the crew;  
 But yet with numbers they were so opprest,  
 Both with the shafts they shot, and darts they threw,  
 That notwithstanding all they had deuised,  
 They were in danger great to be surpris'd.

60

But when the English Duke the danger saw,  
 Vnto himselte these words or such he said,  
 I see our foes in troupes together draw,  
 I see our friends are weakned and dismaid,  
 Now will I strike our enemies in aw,  
 Now will I bring out friends vnlookt for aid,  
 With this he tooke his horne and blew a blast,  
 That made the hearers eu'ry one agast.

61

So great a terror in their minds was bred,  
 That straight as if with sprites they had bene scard,  
 This way and that, confusedly they fled,  
 And left the gates without defence or guard,  
 As tumults often are at stage-playes bred,  
 When false reports of sudden fires are heard,  
 Or when the ouerladen seates do cracke,  
 One tumbling downe vpon anothers backe.

62

One breakes a leg, another breakes an arme,  
 And some are choakt and stifled in the presse,  
 Some kill themselues for feare of further harme,  
 And whence the danger comes they cannot guesse,  
 But all of them in hast themselues vnarme,  
 And vnto fearefull flight themselues addresse:  
 Nor women onely with this feare are punished,  
 But euen the men themselues were all astonished.

63

Yea euen *Marfisa* courage, late so fierce,  
 (So great a vertue this enchantment had)  
 That strange and sudden feare the same did pearce,  
 And she by flight to saue her selfe was glad:  
 The knights likewise whom late I did rehearse,  
 And all the men, as if they had bene mad,  
 To seaward fled as doth a fearfull Doue,  
 When any noise doth scare her from aboue



64

Thus doth the blast annoy both friends and foes,  
Yet so as all the men to shipboord went:  
*Asolfo* still about the citie goes,  
For them to terrifie is his intent,  
And more and more in all the streets he bloes,  
And chiefly those where they do most frequent,  
The while his friends were now to shipboord gotten,  
And launched out, and him had quite forgotten.

65

The ship *Aleria* did before prouide,  
And *Guidon* taking ship with all the rest,  
Would not content neare to the shore to bide,  
But stale away with dreadfull feare posselt.  
Now came the Duke vnto the water side,  
And seeing all were gone, he thought it best  
Some other meane and way to take in hand,  
By which he might conuey him home by land.

66

*He proceedeth to  
tell of Asolfo, 22  
booke, 5 staffe.* But how he gate him home, and there did speed,  
When from those countries he was come to France,  
And how his horne did stand him in great steed,  
Defending him from danger and mischance,  
Hereafter I will shew, now I proceed  
To her whose deeds do still her name aduance,  
I meane *Marfisa* stout, that made great hast  
To shun the hearing of the fearfull blast.

67

But when they were remoued from the shore,  
By helpe of sailes and oares so great a space,  
As now the fearfull sound was heard no more,  
Each thought them guiltie of a great disgrace,  
And of their feare they were ashamed so fore,  
One shund to looke another in the face,  
The while their bark had so good wind and wether,  
As all arriu'd in *Tyrhen* seas together.

68

And to *Marfisia* thence by sea they went,  
Where *Bradament* bare all the rule and sway,  
Who late as gouernesse was thither sent,  
Though thence she had bene absent many a day:  
For had she present bene, by her assent,  
Vnenteraind they should not go away.  
Here when they were refresht with meate and rest,  
*Marfisa* tooke her leaue of all the rest.

69

*Simsle.* And said she thought it great disgrace and shame,  
So many in one company to see,  
For crows (quoth she) and pigeons do the same,  
And Deere, and sheepe, and beasts that fearfull be,  
But Falcons that do flie at stately game,  
With other birds and beasts in their degree,  
That feare not others force, and trust their owne,  
Shun companie, and loue to go alone.

70

But yet the rest that were of other mind,  
Together kept, and bad the Dame farewell,  
Vntill by hap a castle they did find,  
Wherein a Lord of great estate did dwell,  
That in appearance courteous seemd and kind,  
But not in acts, as after I shall tell,  
For he surpris'd them all that night asleepe,  
And made them sweare a cruell law to keepe.

*Of the he speaks  
farder in the 22.  
booke, 41 staffe.*

71

The while *Marfisa* on her way doth ride,  
Appareld like a knight of some renowne,  
And as she passed by the riuer side,  
She met a woman in a tawnie gowne,  
Ilfaour'd, crooked, old and hollow eyd,  
Her forehead furrow'd with continuall frowne,  
Her bodie tyr'd with trauell and ill fare,  
Her guiltie mind afflicted more with care.

72

This filthy hag, this cairn witherd iade,  
Was she whom in the caue *Orlando* found,  
When of the theecues such massacre he made,  
That kept faire *Isabella* vnder ground:  
This wretch that holpe them in that wicked trade,  
And feard the plague that might on her redound,  
Fled from all companie for feare  
Vntill she hapt to light vp this stranger.

*Gabrina.*

73

And for she saw her clad in strange array,  
Though gracelesse, yet she gathers heart of grace,  
And at the foord her comming she doth stay,  
And when *Marfisa* came vnto the place,  
Sir knight (for so she seemd) I shall you pray,  
(Said this old hag) to do me so much grace,  
That on your horse behind you I may ride,  
Till I be past the streame on th'other side.

74

*Marfisa* that was euer from her cradle,  
Of courteous kind, doth grant her her desire,  
And made her clamber vp behind her saddle,  
To passe the riuer and a filthy mire,  
That to her horse had almost bene a stabler:  
And when they were ascended somewhat higher,  
They met a faire yong Ladie with a Knight,  
Both richly clad, both comely to the sight.

75

But both their minds were false, their manners bad,  
And therefore marcht together very fit,  
For he was *Pinnabell*, that lately had  
Faire *Bradament* deceiu'd at *Merlins* pit:  
She was his loue, for whom he was so fit:  
When *Bradament* on him did hap to hit,  
Till after by this noble Damselfs meane  
That itrange enchantment was dissolued cleane.

*In the 22.  
booke.*

76

This Ladie that was *Pinnabell*s loue,  
And was both proud and scornfull of behauour,  
And sees this hag, did straight her laugh her moue,  
To scorne her writheld skin and euill fauour:  
For which *Marfisa* stout doth her reprove,  
And with a sharpe reply she straight doth braue her,  
Because (quoth she) I find thou dost didtine her  
Against thy knight and thee I will maintaine her.

77

I say this woman fairer is then thou,  
Now let thy knight come fight in th  
For I by force my saying will au  
And it that I preuaile, ere thou  
Thou shalt thy horte and  
To this old woman for  
Then *Pinnabell* to  
Because in mayho



78

But when they met (*Marfifus* passing force,  
Was such) she quickly vanquished the knight,  
And ouerthrew him quite beside his horſe.  
This done, ſhe makes the ſtately dame to light,  
And with the aged woman cloths to ſcorle,  
At which the tone tooke ſport, the tother ſpite,  
She tooke likewiſe the Ladies ambling nagge,  
And thereupon ſhe ſets the trotting hagge.

79

Who in this youthfull tyre and rich array,  
Doth looke in ſhew more vgly then before,  
Thus three dayes with *Marfiſa* ſhe did ſtay,  
Before they hapt to meet with any more;  
The fourth they met *Zerbino* on the way,  
The Scottiſh Prince that would haue ſau'd *Medore*,  
And great the Scot purſude,  
That in his preſence prou'd himſelfe ſo rude.

80

*Zerbino.*

Now though *Zerbino* were but ill apaid,  
Yet was he ſtraight with laughter great ſurpriſe,  
To ſee an aged woman ſo arraid,  
In youthfull cloths as though ſhe were diſguiſe:  
And to *Marfiſa* merily he ſaid,  
Sir knight it ſeemeth you are well aduiſd,  
O get to faire a peece to carrie by you,  
As you are ſure that no man will enuie you.

81

The woman ſeemd ſome hundred yeares of age,  
Her witherd ſkin ſuch ſtore of wrinkles had,  
And like an ape or monkie in a cage,  
So looked ſhe in this apparrell clad:  
But now ſhe looked worſe, when with new rage,  
Her eyes enflamed were, and ſhe halfe mad:  
For what more ſpite can be a woman told,  
Then if one ſay ſhe looketh foule and old?

82

*Marfiſa* ſeemeth wroth (to make ſome ſport)  
And thus ſhe ſaith, ſurceaſe your ſlandrous tounge,  
Y<sup>e</sup> vertue of her beautie commeth ſhort,  
Is (in ſpite of you) both faire and young:  
And if you dare contrarie my report,  
Or that hereby you feele your courage ſtounge,  
I will maintaine againſt you eu<sup>e</sup>ry word,  
On horſe, or foote, by ſpeare or elſe by ſword.

83

*Zerbino* at this challenge did but laſſe,  
And ſaid he would not feele their frendſhip ſo.  
Tis fit (quoth he) that ſwine ſhould feed on draſſe,  
I am not I, ſo mad and fond I trow,  
For her to draw a ſword or breake a ſtafle,  
But as you came you may together go:  
No doubt you are a fitly matched paire,  
If you as luſtie be as ſhe is faire.

84

Wherefore I liſt not paine and trauell take,  
To get a conqueſt better loſt then wonne:  
Then (anſwerd ſtout *Marfiſa*) I will make  
Another offer which you may not ſhunne,  
On this condition let vs for her ſake,  
A courſe at field one with the other runne:  
That if you win then I will keepe her ſtill,  
If I, then you ſhall ſerue her while ſhe will.

85

Content (quoth *Zerbino*) and with that they ran,  
With couched ſpears, and met amid the plaine;  
But *Zerbino* had the worſe, *Marfiſa* wan,  
As better horſt, and ſtronger of the twaine:  
Who ſeeing *Zerbino* downe, ſhe then began,  
To talke with him and ieſt with him againe,  
Behold (quoth ſhe) I here to you preſent,  
This louely damſell for your more content.

86

Now ſee you keepe your promiſe and your troth,  
To this faire dame to be a champion trew,  
And do not breake the bands of ſacred oth,  
And ſo (quoth ſhe) for now I bid adew.  
*Zerbino* was mou'd with ſhame and anger both,  
Shame for his foile, a thing moſt ſtrange and new:  
And wrath for her whom he thereby did gaine,  
Which he might deeme the greater loſſe oftwaime.

87

Then of his miſtreſſe new he doth enquire,  
What knight it was that did him ouerthrow,  
She willingly did graunt him his deſire,  
Suppoſing ſo his griefe might greater grow,  
It was a Ladie in a knights attire,  
*Marfiſa* hight (quoth ſhe) that layd you low,  
The which ſtrange news I thinke not much did lacke  
To make his armor bluſh vpon his backe.

88

Vpon his horſe in anger great he gets,  
And curſt himſelfe he had not fit more ſure,  
He bites his lips, and inwardly he frets,  
And ſhe in him more anger to procure,  
With byting words his diſcontentment whets;  
Yet he doth for his oth ſake all endure,  
Like tired horſe he quiet all abides,  
That hath the bit in mouth, and ſpurs in ſides.

89

At laſt into this bitter plaint he burſt,  
On thee o fortune well I may complaine,  
And call my ſelfe vnhappie and accurſt,  
That doſt at once two plagues for me ordaine,  
Two plagues that of all plagues I count the worſt,  
As firſt this foile, my former fame to ſtaine;  
And hauing loſt a Ladie of rare features,  
To haue this miſtreſſe, fowleſt of all creatures.

90

She, whoſe ſurpaſſing beautie well deſerued,  
All worldly bliſſe, whoſe match was neuer found,  
She from miſfortune could not be preſerued,  
But that by cruell ſtormes ſhe muſt be droun'd,  
And this, who if ſhe had bene rightly ſerued  
Ought longer this, haue fed worms vnder ground,  
Thou haſt theſe many yeares and ſtill doſt laue,  
That I by her at laſt this plague might haue.

91

By theſe and ſuch like words as *Zerbino* ſpake;  
That aged woman giues a ſured gueſſe;  
That this was he, to whom, and for whoſe ſake,  
Faie *Iſabell* (kept erſt in great diſtreſſe,  
There where *Orlando* did from theeues her take)  
Was wont ſo great affection to proteſſe,  
And to deſcrib<sup>e</sup> his parts and ſhape ſo trew,  
As eu<sup>e</sup>ry one might know him at a vew.

O ij

*Though it is not  
ſet downe how  
Gabrina knew  
Marfiſa to be a  
woman, yet it is  
to be gathered  
that in 3. dayes  
companie ſhee  
might know it.*

*Simile.  
Horace hath ſhew  
ſimilitude of an  
aſſe.  
Demitto aurica-  
las, ut inique  
mentis a ſellus.  
But this of a horſe  
is more worſhipe.*

*He had heard  
newes that Iſa-  
bella was droun'd  
by ſome flying  
report.*



92

And now that by his words she plainly found,  
That this was *Zerbin*, and that he beleueed  
Faire *Isabella* was in tempest dround,  
With which conceit she saw he sore was greued,  
She that did know her to be safe and sound,  
Yet meaning not his grieve should be releued,  
She telleth onely that that would diseale him,  
And doth conceale that which she thought would

93

(please him.)

You sir (quoth she) that me so greatly scorne,  
If you but knew what tydings I could tell,  
Of her whom you lament as dead and lorne,  
You would both speake me faire and vse me well:  
But first I will with horses wild be torne,  
And suffer all the paines of earth and hell,  
Before that I will condescend to show it,  
Or then by me you euer come to know it.

94

Simile,

Looke how a gentle grewnd, that doth assaile  
And flies vpon a stranger at the furst,  
Will on the sodaine faune and wag his taile,  
If so of bread one profer him a crust:  
So *Zerbin* that before on her did raile,  
And bitterly vnto her face her curst,  
Now he intecates her, and doth pray and flatter,  
To giue him farther notice of the matter.

95

At last with long intreatie she replies,  
And laith, faire *Isabella* is not ded,  
But so she liues, that sure she death enuies:  
And neuer hope to haue her maidenhed,

For I haue scene (quoth she) with these mine eyes,  
How twentie lawlesse men her captiue led,  
And eu'rie one might haue her at their pleasure,  
As hauing libertie, and lust, and leasure.

96

Ah wicked hagge, thou know'st it is a lie,  
And yet behold how thou canst paint it out,  
Thou know'st that none of them with her did lie,  
Thou know'st *Orlando* thence did fetch her out:  
And made the malefactors all to die,  
That of her danger now there was now doubt.  
But now alas this lying storie bred,  
A thousand ialousies in *Zerbines* hed.

97

He askt her where and when his loue she saw,  
He speakes her oftentimes both faire;  
But not a word more could he from her draw.  
Neither by threatning words, nor yet by prayre:  
He feelles a corzie cold his heart to gnaw,  
His little hope was turnd to great dispaire:  
And thus this old ilfauord spitefull Callet,  
Gaued good *Zerbino* such a choking faller.

98

What patience thus prouoked could haue borne,  
At such a womans hands so vile a spite?  
And saue he was vnto her seruice sworne,  
No doubt he would haue done her then her right.  
Thus she of mallice full, and he of scorne,  
Went on their way, vntill they met a knight:  
But what became hereof if you will know,  
The booke ensuing shall the sequell show.

*Callet* is a nick-  
name that they  
use to a woman,  
it signifies in  
Irish a witch.

Moral.

In the tale of *Phalanto* and his companie, women may note the notable inconstancie of young mens dishonest loves, how sweet and pleasant so euer they be at the first. In *Pynabello* and his wife that scorned *Gabrinas* olde age and deformitie, we may obserue the foule sinne and the iust punishment of pride and contempt of others. In the good *Zerbino*, that for his promise sake suffers himselfe to be so notoriously abused of a spitefull malicious old wretch, we may marke a notable example of a man true and faithfull of his word.

Historie.

In the beginning of this booke he reciteth the names of foure women famous, two for warre, two for learning, and indeed there haue bene many more, excellent in either kind: as *Thomeris* that killed *Cyrus*, *Zenobeia*, *Hipsicra* wife to *Mythridates*, *Debora* the Hebrew, whom the Scripture commendeth; *Valasca* queene of *Boemia*, *The* ne of *Slauonia*, *Amalasunta* queene of the *Gothes*: All these are famous for their wise gouernment. And for learning women haue greatly excelled; as *Eriana*, *Alpasia*, *Cleobulyna*, *Theana*, *Leontio*, *Manto*, *Hicostрата*, *Carmenta*, the *Sibils*, *Sulpicia*. But for a perfite patterne of excellency in both kinds, both in gouerning the common wealth most wisely, peaceably, prosperously, and skill in all kind of learning, and languages, Greeke, Latine, French, Italian and Spanish I may say it truly, and without flatterie, that our gracious soueraigne is to be preferred before any of them, yea before all of them, and therefore may iustly be called the iewell, or rather the wonder of all her sex.

Allegoric.  
Allusion.

All the Allegoricall matter of this booke is onely in *Astolfos* horne, of which I haue spoken before this. Thus tale of the Greeks coming home from *Troy*, and finding so many bastards, alludes to a like hap that fell vnto the *Spartans* when they made warre on the *Messenians*; from whence one in deed named *Falanto* or *Phalanto* with other bastards called *Parthenians* went to the Oracle to know what they should do, and were directed by the said Oracle to go to *Tarentum*: Their answer they receiued of the Oracle was this,

Statireum, & pingue solum, tibi trado Tarenti  
Incolere, & late sedem per Iapygas ædes.

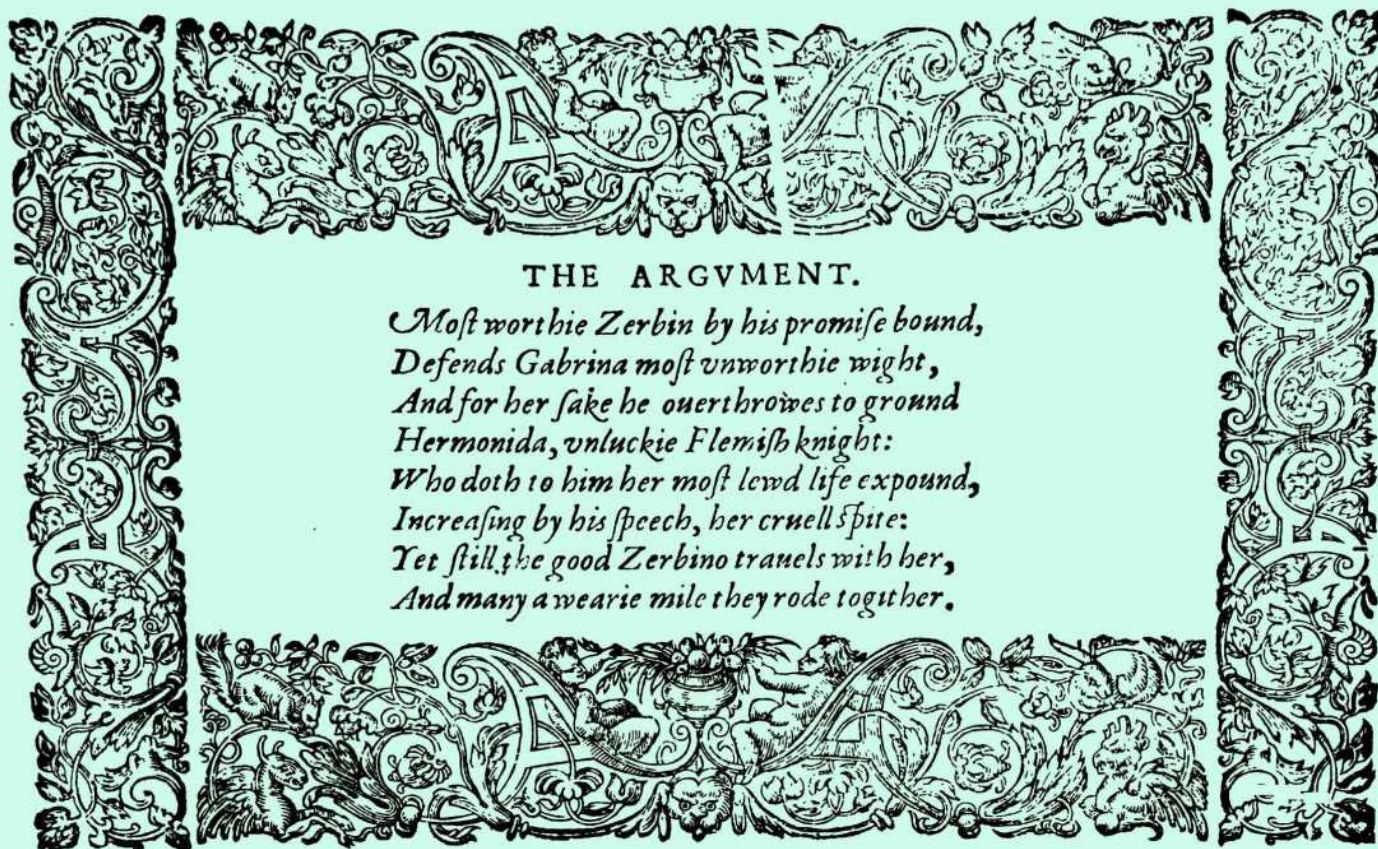
So as they taking heart vpon this, went from *Sparta*, and as some thinke built the citie of *Tarentum*.

The end of the notes vpon the xx. booke.









## THE ARGVMENT.

*Most worthie Zerbin by his promise bound,  
Defends Gabrina most unworthie wight,  
And for her sake he ouerthrowes to ground  
Hermonida, unluckie Flemish knight:  
Who doth to him her most lewd life expound,  
Increasing by his speech, her cruell spite:  
Yet still the good Zerbino trauels with her,  
And many a wearie mile they rode together.*

*Ennius.  
Alma fides opta  
pennis & insu-  
randura Iouis.*



**N** Or Iron nailes make fast a  
planke or boord  
More firme, nor cords a  
burden surer binde,  
Then faith once giu'n by  
promise or by word,  
Tyes most assuredly the  
vertuous minde,  
Old times to vs good store  
of samples foord,

How praise deuine was vnto faith affinde,  
And how in garments white she still was painted,  
That ech smal spot or staine might shew her tainted.

*Read the morall  
upon this in the  
end of this booke.*

Faith euer should be kept in secret fort,  
Although to one, or whether giuen to more,  
Although in deserts farre from all resort,  
Or else a iudge or multitude before:  
What though the witnesse wants to make report:  
Yet must we keepe our cou'nant euermore,  
As well by word and priuate protestation,  
As by record and publike obligation.

And so did Zerbin as before I told,  
His promise firme vnuiolate preferue,  
And though *Gabrina* was both foule and old,  
Though her misdeeds all rigor did deserue:  
Yet he his faith and promise firme doth hold,  
And left his former busines her to terue,  
Till as they traueled on the way by chance,  
They met a Flemish knight late come to France.

The knight of stature comly was and tall,  
And in his shield he bare an azure bend,

His name *Ermonida* they vse to call,  
It seemd he was not this old womans frend,  
For straight his sight her heart did to appall,  
Vnto her guide her life she doth commend:  
And praid him (as he promist) to vouchsafe,  
From this her enemye to keepe her safe.

This man (quoth she) my guiltlesse father killed,  
For malice onely that to me he bare:  
This man my onely brothers blood hath soiled,  
Because he wisht my safetie and welfare:  
Yet with reuenge his rage cannot be filled,  
But still he seeks to worke my farther care.  
Well (quoth *Zerbino*) be of better cheare,  
For none shall do thee harme whilst I am heare.

Now when the knight of Flaunders saw that face,  
That of all faces he did most detest:  
With me to combat in this present place,  
You must prepare (quoth he) and trie your best,  
Or yeeld to me this woman void of grace,  
That as she hath deseru'd she may be drest:  
If you resistance make you will be slaine,  
For so it fals to such as wrong maintaine.

*Zerbino* curteously doth thus replie,  
Bethinke your selfe with more consideration,  
To make a woman of your hand to die,  
What staine it is to knightly reputation;  
As for the combat if you needs will trie,  
Her to defend is my determination:  
For I am sworne to fight in her defence,  
And therefore cannot with mine oth dispence.

This



8

This, and to this effect much more in vaine  
He spake, him from his purpose to perlwade,  
At last they were so kindled with disdain,  
That one the other fiercely did inuade:  
*Arbino* was the stronger of the twaine,  
And strake the tother through the shoulder blade,  
So as he fell halfe dead and halfe aliue,  
Not able any more with him to strue.

9

But *Zerbino* doubting lest he had bene dead,  
With much compassion from his horse did light,  
And first he loold his helmet from his head,  
And seeketh to reuiue him if he might;  
Who looking firmly on *Zerbino*, sed,  
I cannot much lament that such a knight,  
Hath hurt in fight and ouerthrowne,  
In whom such valew and such worth is showne.

10

In this alone my hap I do lament,  
That it should be for such a womans sake,  
And much I maruell that you would consent,  
To your protection such a one to take,  
Which I am sure you would full fore repent,  
If I to you her deeds should open make,  
That you should so greatly damage me,  
For such a wicked caitiue as is she.

11

Here beginneth  
the tale of Ga-  
brina.

And saue my voice and strength will faile I doubt,  
Before my tale will come to perfect end,  
I will declare if you will heare it out,  
The wicked life of this vngracious fend;  
I had a brother valorous and stout,  
In Holland borne, who (for he did intend  
To win by seruice honour and renowne)  
*Heracio* seru'd that bare of Greece the crowne.

12

A noble Gentleman *Argeo* hight,  
Neare the confines of *Serua* did dwell,  
Whose my brother tooke so great delight,  
That in short space they were acquainted well,  
*Argeo* marride had this cursed wight,  
Of whom the present storie I do tell,  
And tooke in her (vnworthy) so great pleasure,  
As past the bands of reason and of meature.

13

But she more light then leaues in Autumne season,  
That eu'ry blast doth blow about and change,  
Against all wiuely care, all cause and reason,  
Because she doth delight her selfe in change,  
With wicked hart and head full fraught with treason,  
So farre she lets her raging loue to range,  
She sues to haue my brother to her loue,  
And doth to him the foule desire vnouer.

14

But neither doth a rocke more firmly stand  
Vpon the shore against the surging waue,  
Nor doth the Cedar more vpon the land  
Resist the tempest that doth rage and raue,  
Then doth my brother her desire withstand,  
Though she at sundrie times the same doth craue,  
And though she seeketh many a meane and triall,  
Yet still she turneth with a flat deniall.

dufr  
places. O  
Enons epi tle.  
Tu leuior folijs  
stun. si  
ondere succs,  
'obi entis  
ide. aeta vo-

6a  
A d in the third  
of the Metamor.  
No tius fides  
a vns frigore  
las.  
Ia ale hae-  
rentes alia rapit  
arbare ventus.  
\* Simile.  
|| Simile.

15

At last it fell (as oft it doth befall  
To valiant men that loue to fight and quarell)  
My brother was fore wounded in a brall,  
So that it seemd his life was in some parell:  
Wherefore he gets within the castle wall,  
Both that his frend might know & venge his quarell,  
And other needfull things may be procured,  
By which his hurt might be the sooner cured.

16

Now while my brother staid in this ill state,  
His friend *Argeo* tometime absent thence,  
This woman early visits him and late,  
And offers him good store of pounds and pence:  
But he that alwayes villany did hate,  
And would not do his friend so great offence,  
Thought (as in euill cases is the best)  
Of two great milchiefes to chuse out the lest.

17

He meanes to leaue *Argeus* friendship quite,  
And get him home againe from whence he came,  
Or hide himselfe where this most wicked wight  
Shall neuer see his face nor heare his name:  
This, though it grieu'd him, as it ought of right,  
He chuseth as a way lesse worthy blame,  
Then yeelding to her lust for to abuse her,  
Or to her louing husband to accuse her.

18

Wherefore (though of his wound both faint and weake)  
He doth resolute to part with constant mind,  
He gets him thence, and not a word doth speake,  
And leaues this filthy minded beast behind:  
But fortune ill his purpose good doth breake,  
And alterd quite the courie he had designd,  
Home came her husband finding her alone,  
Complaining grievously and making mone.

19

Her cheekes with teares all blubberd were and red,  
Her lookes did shew her mind was ill apaid,  
Her lockes all torne did hang about her hed,  
With which her louing husband fore afraid,  
Did aske her oft what chance such change had bred,  
Till at the length the wicked wretch thus said,  
With spiteful heart, with wicked voice & trembling,  
And faind a cause, the cause it selfe dissembling.

20

Alas (quoth she) what should I seeke to hide  
My wicked act and hainous deadly sinne,  
Which though from you, and all the world beside,  
I could conceale, yet doth the soule within,  
And conscience grudge, a burden such to bide,  
So as the inward torment I am in,  
Doth passe the plague or penance far away,  
That mortall man vpon my sinne can lay.

21

If so a sinne of right you may it name,  
That one is tort vnto against her will,  
But thus it is, your friend that hither came,  
(I thinking he had thought nor meant none ill)  
Inforced me to my perpetuall shame,  
Against all lawes, all honestie and skill:  
And doubting that I would the fact bewray,  
Forthwith he gate him hence and fled away.

*Iusenal in bñ  
13. satire, Panna  
autem uehemens  
ac multo senior  
illu.  
Noctis diuē sumum  
portare in pectore  
re sestem.  
Ouid. Parnitet  
facto torquor  
ipse meo.*



22

But though my bodie he haue so defild,  
Yet is my mind from sinne deuoid and cleare,  
Although from sight of men I am exild,  
Nor dare I once in publike place appeare:  
This said, with thousand names she him reuild,  
So that *Argeo* that the tale did heare,  
Beleued it, and straight withall intended  
To punish him that neuer had offended.

23

He taketh horse forthwith and followth post,  
All on reuenge his mind was wholly bent,  
And, for he perfitly did know the cost,  
And for my brother faire and softly went,  
He met him in an hower at the most,  
Ridding him stand or else he should be shent:  
My brother would disswade him if he might,  
But all in vaine, *Argeo* needs would fight.

24

The tone was strong and full of fresh disdaine,  
The tother weake and loth to hurt his frend,  
So that him selfe defending long in vaine,  
My brother was constrained to yeeld in th'end:  
And thus at last he prisoner doth remaine,  
And yeelds, him selfe vnable to defend:  
Which scene, *Argeo* doth surcease to strike,  
But speaketh vnto him these words or like.

25

God neuer let my heart so farre be moued,  
With rightfull wrath that I thy blood should spill,  
Since once I thee esteemed well and loued,  
Whom once I loued, I will neuer kill:  
And though thy act may iustly be reprov'd,  
The world shall see my goodnesse by thine ill,  
For be it loue, or be it in disdaine,  
I will be found the better of the twaine.

26

Another meane then death to vse I mind,  
In punishing this sinne and foule misdeed,  
This said (with willow bands he there did find)  
He makes a hurdle fit to serue such need,  
On which my brothers bodie he doth bind,  
That with old hurts and new did freshly bleed;  
And to his castle he doth him conuay,  
In mind to keepe him there a prisoner ay.

27

Yet though with him a prisoner he remaind,  
In other things he felt no lacke nor want,  
Saue that his libertie was him restrained:  
But lo, this wretch that late did him supplant,  
And to her husband so of him complaind,  
Thought she would trie if he would yet recant,  
And (for at her commaund she had the keyes)  
She goes to him, and thus to him she sayes.

28

Now sir (quoth she) I trust you feeble the frute,  
That this your foolish constancie hath wrought,  
Had you not better bene to graunt the sute,  
That I in friendly sort so often sought?  
You see tis vaine to argue or dispute,  
Say what you can, you are a traitor thought:  
And he to whom you shewd great fidelitie,  
Imputes to you treason and infidelitie.

29

I thinke both for your ease and reputation,  
You had bene better graunted my request,  
You see you haue a forie habitation,  
And in the same for euer looke to rest,  
Except you change your first determination,  
And mollifie your stonie hearted brest,  
Which if you yet will do, I do assure you,  
Both libertie and credite to procure you.

30

No, neuer hope, no said *Filandro*, neuer,  
(So my vnhappie brothers name they call)  
In vaine to change my mind you do endeuer,  
And though *Argeo* causlesse keepe me thrall,  
Yet I in faith and troth will still perseuer,  
Sufficeth me, that he that seeth all,  
Doth know mine innocencie see me,  
And when he list can both reward and free me.

31

I care not though the world of me thinke ill,  
I hope another world will make amends,  
Yet let *Argeo* slay me if he will,  
Or let him (as it seemeth he intends)  
Though wrongfully, in prison hold me still,  
Yet one day he will find he hurts his frends,  
And know by prooffe how he hath bene begun,  
When truth appears, and time brings forth her child. *See the*

32

Yet for all this, this woman void of shame,  
Did cease no whit *Filandro* still to tempt,  
And oftentimes in vaine to him she came,  
And euer turnes repulst and with contempt,  
And in this frantike fancie she doth frame  
A thousand sleights to further her attempt,  
And many things in mind she doth reuolue,  
Before on any one she doth resolue.

33

Six months entire she doth her selfe absent,  
Nor euer came *Filandro* to entice,  
Which made him hope that she was now  
To cease her sute, and follow his aduice;  
But lo, how fortune (that is euer bent  
To further wicked persons in their vice)  
Doth vnto her a fit occasion lend,  
To bring her wicked lust to wofull end.

34

There had bene hate and enmitie of old,  
Betweene her husband and another knight,  
*Morando* calld, who often would be bold,  
If so *Argeo* absent were a night,  
To come with force and to assault his hold,  
Or thereabout to do him some despight:  
But if he were at home, then all that whiles  
He came not neare him by a dozen miles.

35

Wherefore to be reueng'd on this his fo,  
That often did him wrong and great outrage,  
*Argeo* giues it out that he will go  
Vnto Ierusalem on pilgrimage:  
And from his house disguis'd he parted so,  
In secret sort, without or man or page,  
And eu'ry night comes in at the posterne,  
That none but she his comming might discerne.

Thus

*Howe's fast,  
Amus alienus  
est, nuncio, fere  
in, nuncio, fere  
fere, nuncio*

*Sentence.*



36  
Thus all the day he wanders all about,  
In woods, in groues, in pastures here and thither,  
To see if he could find *Morando* out,  
That in his absence vsed to come hither:  
And farre he keepes himselfe from any rout,  
Vntill that darknesse doth obscure the wether,  
Then would he get him home a secret way,  
Of which his wife did keepe a priuie kay.

37  
Thus all but she, *Argeo* absent thought,  
By which his wicked wife with wonted skill,  
Another meanes and new occasion sought,  
To bring to passe her foule vnbridled will:  
With weeping eyes (her eyes to weepe she tought)  
And all with teares her bolome she doth fill,  
Then came to my brother and complained,  
That (but he helpe) her honour would be stained.

38  
Nor mine alone, but mine *Argeus* too,  
Who were he here (quoth she) I would not care,  
You know what harme *Morando* wents to doo,  
When as mine husbands abience makes him dare,  
And now behold the caitiue me doth woo,  
And to intrap me sets full many a snare,  
offred seruants great reward and hire,  
So they would helpe to further his desire.

39  
And hearing that *Argeo* was away,  
And would continue so no little space,  
He came within the castle wall to day,  
(His absence gaue him so much heart of grace)  
Where, had my husband bene but in the way,  
He durst not onely not haue shewd his face,  
But sure he would not haue presum'd at all,  
To come within a kenning of the wall.

40  
And what by message he before had done,  
Now face to face by mouth he doth the same,  
So hardly know which way to shunne,  
That which to do, would breed my endlesse blame.  
Had not my sugred speech his fauour wonne,  
By faining I my will to his would frame,  
He would perforce haue had his feale intent,  
Which now he hopes to get by my assent.

41  
*Sentence.* I promist him (but promise made for feare  
Is voyd) and I performar te neuer ment,  
But so that act I made him to forbear,  
Which he to do by force was fully bent.  
Now if you be a friend, or etier were,  
Vnto *Argeo*, you may this preuent,  
Nor onely saue mine honour thus distressed,  
But his to whom such loue you haue professed.

42  
Which if you me denie, then I may say,  
Not honestie, of which your boist you make,  
But crueltie did cause you say me nay.  
And of my sute so small regard to take:  
And that you were not moued any way  
With friendships rule, or for *Argeus* sake:  
Although twixt vs it might haue secret beene,  
But now my shame must needs be knowne & scene.

43  
Tush (quoth *Filandro*) this is more then need,  
To vie such circumstance in such a case.  
As I began, so meane I to proceed,  
And though *Argeo* hold me in disgrace,  
Yet vnto him I not impute this deed,  
But ready will be still in time and place;  
To do him seruice any way I may,  
So you but shew to me the meane and way.

44  
Sir then (said she) the way were this, to kill  
Him that doth seeke my husbands shame and mine,  
Which you may easly do, if so you will  
A while vnto my words your eare incline:  
I haue put off his comming hither, till  
It be betwixt the hotres of ten and nine,  
What time I promist him so to prouide,  
To let him in, so as he were not spide.

45  
Now then my counsell is, that you do stay  
Here in my chamber, vntill I procure  
Him to disarme himselfe, so as you may  
Slay him with small ado, and make him sure.  
This is (quoth she) the onely ready way,  
And safest for your selfe, I you assure:  
To this deuice *Filandro* doth assent,  
Thinking hereby his friends hurt to preuent.

46  
Now more and more approcht the cursed night,  
When as his wife (if I a wife may call)  
This hellish hag and foule infernall sprite,  
Did place my brother armd behind a wall,  
And as she wisht, eu'n so it fell aright,  
For ill deuice amisse doth seldome fall;  
Her husband in the eu'ning somewhat late,  
Entered his castle at the posterne gate.

47  
*Filandro* at one blow cuts off his hed,  
Taking him for *Morando* in exchange,  
She stands fast by that him had thither led,  
Nor shewes in word or gesture any change:  
*Argeo* there remaineth slaine and ded,  
And kild by him (o chance most hard and strange)  
That while he friendly thought to do him good,  
Most cruell and vnfriendly shed his blood.

48  
Now when this feate had thus bene brought to passe,  
*Gabrina* (so is this good womans name)  
That doth in craft the fiends of hell surpasse,  
Vnto my brother for his weapon came,  
Which he deliuerd as his promise was,  
And that once done, then she without all shame;  
Prayes him to take in hand a lighted candle,  
And view him well whom he so ill did handle.

49  
There first he saw how he had kild his frend,  
A sight that made him at the heart repent,  
And she afresh the matter to amend,  
Doth threate, except he would to her assent,  
That she should bring his life to shamefull end,  
For to accuse him of this fact she ment,  
Wishing him though his life he did despise,  
To shunne a shamefull death if he be wise.



50

*Filandro* mazed, and full of feare did stand,  
When of his error he was first aware,  
He thought at first to kill her out of hand,  
By whom he was intrapt in such a snare,  
But she had got his weapons in her hand,  
And to defend her selfe did straight prepare:  
But sure he could haue found it in his hart,  
By peccemeale to haue torne her eu'ry part.

51

Like as a ship in midst of seas opprest,  
Betweene two winds that do together strue,  
Can haue no time of respite or of rest,  
But goes what way the stronger wind doth driue:  
So now *Filandro* doubting which was best,  
To die, or in such sort to bide aliue,  
Stood long in doubt, and neither way did bend,  
Yet chose the worter bargain in the end.

52

His reason open layes before his face,  
The danger great if once the fact were knowne,  
Beside the infamie and great disgrace,  
That would about the world of him be blowne:  
Beside to chuse he had but little space,  
So as his wit and sence was scant his owne:  
At last he doth conclude what euer come,  
To swallow this vnlaury choking plum.

53

Wherefore against his will, inforst by feare,  
He promileth to take her for his wife,  
And vnto her he solemnly doth sweare,  
To marry her if now she saue his life:  
And (for it was not safe to tarry there)  
When once the murder should be publisht here,  
He turnes vnto the place where he was borne,  
And leaues behind him infamie and scorne.

54

And still he carri'd in his pensue heart,  
His friends mishap, lamenting it in vaine,  
How for a iust reward of such defart,  
A *Progne* and *Medea* he did gaine;  
And saue his oth restrained him in part,  
No doubt he would the wicked hag haue slaine:  
But yet he hated her like toade or snake,  
And in her companie small ioy did take.

55

From that to this, to laugh or once to smile,  
He was not seene, his words and looks were sad,  
With often sighs, and in a little while,  
He grew much like *Orestes*, when he had  
First slaine his father by his mothers guile,  
Then her, and last of all fell raging mad,  
With spirits vext so was my brothers hed,  
Still vext till sicknes made him keepe his bed.

56

But when this cursed strumpet plainly saw,  
How small delight in her my brother tooke,  
She doth her feruent loue from him withdraw,  
And in short space that fancie she forooke:  
And lastly she resolues against all law,  
So soone as she can fit occasion looke,  
To bring *Filandro*s life to wofull end,  
And after her first husband him to send.

57

An old Phisition full offalle deceit,  
She findeth out most fit for such a feate,  
That better knew to giue a poysond bait,  
Then for to cure with herbs or wholsom meate:  
Him, that for gaine most greedily doth wait,  
By profers large she quickly doth intreate,  
To take vpon him this vngracious cure,  
With poysond cup to make her husband sure.

58

Now while my selfe was by, and others more,  
This old Phisition came to him ere long,  
And brought a cup, in which was poyson store,  
And said, it cordiall was, to make him strong:  
But lo, *Gabrina* that denisd before,  
Eu'n in the prize of wrong, to do some wrong,  
Before *Filandro* of the cup did tast  
Stept twixt the leach and him in no small hast.

59

And taking in her hand against his will,  
The cup in which the poysond drinke was plast,  
She said, good Doctor do not take it ill,  
That I require you first the drinke to tast,  
I will not haue my husband drinke, vntill  
You haue your selfe before him tane the tast:  
I will (said she) be certaine by the rood,  
That this you giue him, wholsome is and good.

60

Now in what pickle thinke you was the leach?  
The time was short to take a sound aduice,  
He might not vse perswasion now nor speach,  
He durst not tell how she did him intice,  
Nor could he guesse what was herein her reach,  
To make him tast first of the poysond pice,  
Wherefore to take a tast he thought it best,  
And then he giues my brother all the rest.

61

Euen as a hawke that hath a partridge trust  
In guping talents, firs and plumes the same,  
O't by a dog when she doth not mistrust  
Is kild her selfe and reward of her game:  
So this Phisition gracelesse and vnjust,  
While he to greedie game his mind doth frame,  
Was vld by her euen as he well deserued,  
And to I wish all such Phisitions serued.

62

The poore old man that felt his stomacke ake,  
Ran to take his leaue, and homeward hasted,  
He thinks some strong Antidoton to take,  
Against the poysond cup he lately tasted:  
She sweares his home returne he may not make,  
While rhoperation of the motion lasted,  
And that she will see plainly ere he go,  
If so it do her husband good or no.

63

By humble sute and offers he doth trie,  
That with her licence he may thence depart,  
But all in vaine, his sute she doth denie:  
Now had the liquor welnigh toucht his hart,  
Wherefore perceiuing plainly he must die,  
He doth the secret to vs all impart:  
Thus to himselfe he did the same at last,  
Which oft he did to others in time past.

*This of the Phisition is word for word taken out of the x. booke of Apuleius golden Asse, and yet is here by mine author very aptly inserted to beautifie his tale, and to shew forth the lechrie of a wild woman*

*Simile.*  
*Thus one Silius*  
*an Italian used*  
*in a latin poeme,*  
*Non grauiore*  
*mouent venci*  
*certamina mole,*  
*c.*

*Hirace.*  
*Canepeius &*  
*angue.*

*Orestes looke in*  
*the historie.*

*Simile*

*antidote*  
*drinke*  
*taken to preu-*  
*sicke.*



64

And straight in little space my brother I de,  
 And after him did this fornicall Phisition.  
 We that had heard and seene the matter tride,  
 Of which my selfe before had some suspition;  
 Both hand and foote we then this monster tyde,  
 And bring her vnto such as had commission,  
 Where her confession, and our accusation,  
 Made them pronounce her doome of condēnation.

65

Thus in the gaile in fetters she was laid,  
 Adjudged to be burned at a stake,  
 Thus said the knight and more he would haue said  
 How she elcapt, and how she prison brake,  
 But so he fainted, as they were affraid.  
 He would haue sounded as thole words he spake:  
 Wherefore his page him to his horie doth lift,  
 And then to make his wounds they make a shift.

66

Then Zerbin tooke his leaue and made a skuse,  
 That he had hurt the knight in her defence,  
 Affirming he had done, as is the vse,  
 To saue his charge from damage and offence:  
 And y thenceforth with him he would haue truce,  
 This said, he tooke his leaue and parted thence,  
 And promist him with words of great ciuilltie,  
 To further him vnto his best abillitie.

67

Sir (said the knight) for this I do you thanke,  
 And wish you of that woman to beware,  
 Lest that she leaue you some such slipper pranke,  
 As may procure your farther woe and care:

For hard shall any scape from danger franke,  
 That in her compaignie long season aze:  
*Gabrina* silent all the while stands by,  
 For hard it is to prone the truth a lye.

Sentence.

68

Thus hence they part, and for his promise sake,  
 At her commandment *Zerbin* doth attend,  
 And wisht in heart, the diuell might her take,  
 Though with his hand he must her still defend:  
 And thole last words the knight of Holland pake,  
 To giue him warning of the cursed tend,  
 Do fill his mind with so great griefe and spight,  
 That now he scant could well abide her sight.

69

And this same old and weather beaten trot,  
 Perceiuing how *Zerbin* was inclin'd,  
 Would not once yeeld or be behind a jot,  
 In spitefull wishing, nor in euill mind:  
 Her eye and tongue and looke conceale it not,  
 Nor yet her deeds as after he did finde,  
 Thus in this harmony and concord good,  
 It was their hap to trauell through the wood.

70

Now when the time approched neare the night,  
 They heard a noise of butting and of blowes,  
 Caused as they guessed by some brall or fight,  
 But where it was yet neither of them knowes,  
*Zerbin* longed much to see the fight,  
 And thither wards in no finall halt he goes,  
 And in no lesse, *Gabrina* maketh after,  
 As shalbe shewd you more at large hereafter.

*A more necessary morall (as I thinke) cannot be found for our age we now liue in, then that, with which this booke Morall  
 begins: namely, of the keeping of faith, and promise, which euen among Turkes and heathen Philosphers hath bene re-  
 ligiously kept; and yet among vs that call our selues Christians, and boast of an extraordinarie light of the Gospell, is  
 often most religiously broken: so that as Ouid saith of his time in ironickall manner.*

Aurea nunc verē sunt secula, plurimus auro  
 Venit honos, auro conciliatur amor:

*In English thus,*

This may indeed, be call'd the age of gold,  
 For honour, loue and all, for it is sold.

*So much I say, this is a notable time for credite, for now generally, euen with some of the better sort, mens words be as  
 good as their obligations: namely, neither of both worth the taking for a farthing. Secondly, in Filandro we may note a  
 speciall good nature and inclination, that would rather abandon a place which he liked very well, then either break the  
 lawes of friendship and hospitallitie; or accuse the wife to her husband. In his killing Argeo, and all the tragickal proce-  
 dings of the wicked *Gabrina*, we may note the monstrous effects of an vbridled affectiō in a mischieuous woman, that kil-  
 ed both her husbands, and lastly the Phisition, and stil continued working fresh mischiefs till her death, as after followeth.*

*Orestes, whom he spake of in the 55. staffe of this 21. booke was sonne of Agamemnon, who being slaine by the Historie.  
 trecherie of his wife Clytemnestra, Orestes in reuenge thereof killed his mother, and after that, was himselfe tormented  
 with furies, or rather with his conscience for so horrible an act, and so fell mad, and was healed againe; and after, that  
 notable accident of Pilades and him fell out.*

*Simon Fornarie affirmeth that in this tale of *Gabrina*, my author doth allude to a woman of like lewdnesse, liuing Allusion.  
 in his time, and by Argeo and Filandro to be ment two Gentlemen of Naples; but the truth is, the tale is, the first version  
 tim, taken out of Apuleius golden Asse. Specially for that part of the Phisition: Sed vxor, quæ iam pridem nomen  
 vxoris cum fide perdidit, medicum conuenit quendam nota perdidit qui iam multarum palmarum spectatus  
 prælijs, magna dextra: suæ trophæa numerabit, as I before noted on the 57. staffe.*

The end of the notes vpon the xxj booke.



Ruggiero.

ALTARIVA.



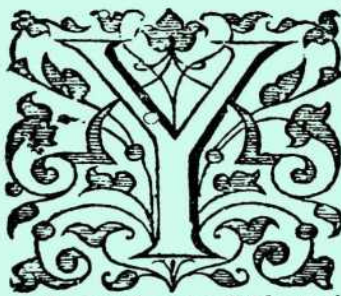
PALAZZO INCANTATO





## THE ARGUMENT.

*Astolfo doth dissolue the charmed place,  
And spite of Atlant, sets his prisoners free:  
Then Bradamant doth see Rogeros face:  
To helpe an unknowne knight they craued be;  
But by the way Rogero in short space,  
Subdewd foure knights, of worth and good degree,  
That were by Pinabell in prison hild,  
Whom Bradamant with iust reuengment kild.*



**Y**e courtly dames, that are  
both kind and true,  
Vnto your loues, if kinde  
and true be any,  
As sure I am in all your  
louely crue,  
Of so chaste minde, there  
are not ouer many:  
Be not displeas'd with this  
that doth entue,

For neither must I leaue it, neither can I,  
And beare with me for that I said before,  
When on *Gabrina* I did raile so sore.

*Was. l. Parete  
paucorum dis-  
fundere crimina  
in omnes.*

Mine earnest words, nor yet her great offence,  
Cannot obscure in honour and cleare fame,  
Those few, whose spotlesse liues want no defence,  
Whom hate nor enuie no way can defame:  
He that his master 'old for thirtie pence,  
To *John* nor *Peter* breeds no blot nor blame:  
Nor men of *Hipermestra*, worse haue thought,  
Although her sisters were vnchaste and nought.

*Hipermestra one  
of the Sisters.  
Looke in the Sto-  
rie of this booke.*

For one that in this verse I shall dispraise,  
As driu'n by course of this my present storie,  
Whole hunderds are whom I intend to praise,  
And magnifie their well deserued glorie,  
If this then be offensiu any wayes,  
To all or any, I can be but forie:  
Now of the Scottish Prince a word or two,  
That heard a noife, and went forthwith thereto.

Betweene two mountaines in a shadie dale,  
He doth descend that way the noife him led,

But when he came he saw vpon the vale,  
A Baron lately slaine and newly ded.  
But er I enter further in this tale,  
I first must tell you how *Astolfo* sped:  
Whom late I left in that most curled cittie,  
Where women murder men without all pittie.

*He comes to that  
matter in the 23.  
Booke. st. 29.*

I told you how his horne with mightie blast,  
Not onely all his foes had driuen away,  
But also made his friends so fore agast,  
As not the stowtest of them there durst stay:  
Wherefore (I said) he was constrained at last,  
Alone to get him homeward on his way,  
Forthwith on *Rabicano* he doth mount,  
An horse of which he makes no small account.

His horne that serues him still at all assayes,  
He carries with him and his learned booke,  
First by *Armenia* he goes his wayes,  
Then *Brusia* and the way of *Thrale* he tooke,  
So that within the space of twentie dayes,  
The streame *Danubio* he quite forsooke:  
Then from *Boemia* ward he doth decline,  
Vnto *Franconia* and the streame of *Rhine*.

Then through *Ardennas* wood to *Aquis graue*,  
And thence to *Flanders* where he slapping found,  
What time a Northeast winde did blow to braue,  
As let him soone in sight of English ground:  
So that no whit annoyd with winde nor waue,  
His natiue soile receiu'd him safe and found:  
He taketh horse, and er the Sunne was downe,  
At *London* he arriu'd the chiefeest towne.



8

Here at his first arriuall straight he heares,  
How that the Turkes faire *Paris* did beseege,  
And how his fire (a man well stroke in yeares)  
Was there, and sent for ayd to raise the leege:  
And how of late the Lords and chiefeſt peares,  
Were gone with new supplies to helpe their leege,  
But little ſtay he makes theſe words once hard,  
But taketh ſhip againe to Callice ward.

9

And for the winde ſeru'd then not very well,  
They were by force thereof borne quite aſide,  
So that the maſter ſcant himſelfe could tell,  
What courſe he held, they were borne downe ſo  
Yet at the laſt ſo luckie it befell, (wide,  
Within a kenning they ſome land had ſpide,  
And drawing neare they found the towne of Roan,  
Where preſently the Duke tooke land alone.

10

And croſſing through a wood when time drew neare,  
That neither day could well be cald nor night,  
He hapt to finde a chriſtall ſpring and cleare,  
And by the ſide thereof he did alight,  
With mind to quench his thirſt and reſt him heare,  
As in a place of pleaſure and delight,  
He ties his horſe vnto a tree, and thinketh  
To haue him tarrie ſafe there while he drinketh.

11

*Sentence.*  
*Muls a cadens*  
*inter calicem ſu-*  
*premaq; labra.*

Strange things may fall betweene the lip and cup,  
For ſcant *Aſtolfo* yet had wet his lip,  
But from a buſh a villaine ſtarted vp,  
Vntide the horſe, and on his backe doth ſkip:  
The Duke that ſcant had taſted yet a ſup;  
And finds himſelfe thus tane in ſuch a trip,  
Forgets to drinke, and followes in a rage,  
For wrath not water doth his thirſt aſſwage.

12

The little villaine that the horſe had got,  
(Like one that did in knauish pranks delight)  
Although he might haue run, yet did it not,  
Be cauſe *Aſtolfo* ſhould not leeſe his ſight:  
But with falſe gallop, or a gentle trot,  
He leads the Duke vnto that place aright,  
Where many knights and Lords of high degree,  
Without a priſon, more then priſners be.

*Atlants caſtell.*

13

*Aſtolfo*, though his armour doth him cumber,  
Yet fearing leaſt he might arriue too late,  
In following the villaine doth not ſlumber,  
Vntill he came within the pallace gate,  
Where (as I ſaid) of Lords no little number,  
Were wandring vp and downe in ſtrange eſtate:  
*Aſtolfo* of their preſence doth not force,  
But runneth vp and downe to finde his horſe.

14

The craftie villaine was in no place found,  
Though many a homely place for him was fought,  
Yet ſtill the Duke doth ſearch the pallace round,  
And for his beaſt he takes no little thought:  
At laſt he gueſt it was enchaunted ground,  
And as by *Logeſilla* he was taught,  
He tooke his booke and ſearcheth in the table,  
How to diſſolue the place he might be able.

15

And ſtraight in th'index for it he doth looke,  
Of pallaces fram'd by ſuch ſtrange illuſion,  
Among the reſt, of this (ſo ſaith the booke)  
That it ſhould neuer come vnto confuſion,  
Vntill a certaine ſtone away were tooke,  
In which a ſprite was kept by ſtrange incluſion,  
And it he did but liſt the threshold ſtone,  
The goodly houſe would vaniſh and be gone.

16

The Duke not doubting now of good ſucceſſe,  
Go'th to the threshold where the ſtone was laid,  
And which it was he preſently doth gueſſe,  
And then by force to moue it he aſſaid:  
But *Atlant*, that expected nothing leſſe,  
And ſees his bold attempt, was ſore affraid,  
And ſtraight an hunderd meanes he doth deuife,  
To hinder him from this bold enterpriſe.

17

He makes the Duke, by this his diuellish ſkill,  
To ſeeme of diuers ſhapes vnto the reſt,  
To one a darfe, of face and fauour ill,  
To one a gyant, to a third a beaſt,  
And all their hearts with hatred he doth fill,  
He thinkes by them the Duke ſhould be diſtreſt:  
By ſeeming vnto eu'rie one the ſame,  
For which each one into the pallace came.

18

Behold *Rogero* ſtout, and *Brandimart*,  
*Prasildo*, *Bradamant*, and others moe,  
Vpon *Aſtolfo* ſet with cruell hart,  
As to reuenge themſelues vpon their foe:  
But with his horne the Duke then plai'd his part,  
And brought their loſtie ſtomackes ſomewhat low:  
But had not th'horne procur'd him this exemption,  
No doubt the Duke had dyde without redemption.

*Rogero.*  
*Bradamant.*

19

For when they heard the ſtrange and fearfull blaſt,  
They forced were for feare away to runne,  
As fearefull Pigeons flie away agaiſt  
When men do ring a bell or ſhoot a gunne;  
The Sorcerer himſelfe was not the laſt,  
That ſought by flight the fearfull noiſe to ſhunne:  
Yea ſuch it was, that neither rat nor moule,  
Durſt tarrie in the circuit of the houſe.

*Simile.*

20

Among the horſes that did breake their bands,  
Was *Rahican* of whom beſore I told,  
Who by good hap came to *Aſtolfo*'s hands.  
Who was full glad when of him he had hold,  
Alſo *Rogeros* Griffith horſe there ſtands,  
Faſt tyed in a chaine of beaten gold,  
The Duke, a by his booke he had bene taught,  
Diſtroyed quite the houſe by magike wrought.

21

I do not doubt but you can call to minde,  
How good *Rogero* loſt this ſtately beaſt,  
What time *Angelica* his eyes did blinde,  
Denying moſt vnkindly his request:  
The horſe that ſored ſwifter then the winde,  
Went backe to *Atlant* whom he loued beſt,  
By whom he had bene of a young one bred,  
And diligently taught, and coſtly fed.

Glad



22

This English Duke was glad of such a pray,  
As one that was to trauell greatly bent,  
And in the world was not a better way  
For him to serue his purpose and intent;  
Wherefore he meaneth not to let him stray,  
But takes him as a thing from heau'n him sent,  
For long ere this he had of him such prooffe,  
As well he knew what was for his behoofe.

23

Now being full resolu'd to take in hand,  
To trauell round about the world so wide,  
And visite many a sea and many a land,  
As none had done, nor euer should beside,  
One onely care his purpose did withstand,  
Which caus'd him yet a little time to bide,  
He doth bethink him oft, yet doth not know  
On whom his Rabicano to bestow.

24

He would be loth that such a stately steed  
Should by a peasant be possesst or found,  
And though of him he stood then in need,  
Yet had he care to haue him safe and sound,  
In hands of such as would him keepe and feed;  
While thus he thought and lookt about him round,  
Next day a while before the Sunne was set,  
A champion all in armes vnwares he met.

Of this  
see more in the  
23. booke, 7. staff.

25

But first I meane to tell you what became  
Of good Rogero and his Bradamant,  
Who when againe vnto themselues they came,  
The pallace quite destroyd of old Atlant:  
Each knew and cald the other by their name,  
And of all courtesies they were not scant,  
Lamenting much that this enchanted pallace,  
Had hinderd them so long such ioy and sollace.

26

The noble maid to shew her selfe as kind,  
As might become a virgin wife and sage,  
Doth in plaine termes as plaine declare her mind,  
As thus, that she his loues heate will asswage,  
And vnto him her selfe in wedlocke bind,  
And spend with him all her ensuing age,  
If to be christned first he were content,  
And afterwards to aske her friends consent.

27

But he that would not onely not refuse  
To change his life for his beloueds sake,  
But also if the choise were his to chuse,  
To leese his life and all the world forsake,  
Did answer thus, my deare, what ere ensues  
I will performe what ere I vndertake,  
To be baptizd in water or in fire,  
I will consent if it be your desire.

28

This said, he goes from thence with full intent,  
To take vpon him christend state of life,  
Which done he most sincerely after ment,  
To aske her of her father for a wife;  
Vnto an Abbey straight their course they bent,  
As in those dayes were in those places rife,  
Where men deuout did liue with great fregalitie,  
And yet for strangers kept good hospitalitie.

Though Rogero  
is here willing to  
be baptizd, and  
after still defer-  
red it, must  
note he knew not  
in what danger  
his mast. r was in  
til afterwards in  
the xxv. booke.

29

But ere they came to that religious place,  
They met a damsell full of heauy cheare,  
That had with teares bedewed all her face,  
Yet in those teares great beautie did appeare,  
Rogero, that had euer speciall grace  
In courteous acts and speech when she came neare,  
Doth aske of her what dangers or what feares,  
Did moue her so to make her shed such teares.

30

She thus replies, the cause of this my griefe,  
Is not for feare or danger of mine owne,  
But for good will and for compassion chiefe,  
Of one yong knight, whose name is yet vknowne,  
Who if he haue not great and quicke reliefe,  
Is iudgd into the fier to be throwne,  
So great a fault they say he hath committed,  
That doubt it is it will not be remitted.

31

The fault was this, there was good will betweene  
Him and the daughter of the King of Spaine,  
And lest his loue should be descride and teene,  
He finely doth himselfe a woman faine,  
And went and spake as if he had so beene,  
And thus he plaid (to tell the matter plaine)  
The maid in shew, the man in deed so well,  
That in a while he made her belly swell.

32

But out alas, what can so secret be,  
But out it will when we do least suspect?  
For posts haue eares, and walls haue eyes to see,  
Dumbe beasts and birds haue tongues ill to detect,  
First one had found it out, then two or three:  
And looke how fire doth creepe that men neglect,  
So this report from mouth to mouth did spring,  
Till at the last it came vnto the King.

Sentence.

Sentence.

Simile.

33

The King straight sends a trustie seruant thether,  
Who making search when they two were in bed,  
Found out the troth, and tooke them both together,  
Found him a man, and found her belly sped,  
Away they carrid her I know not whether,  
Away vnto the prison he was led,  
And must be burnd this day or else to morow,  
The thought wherof doth moue my mind to sorow.

34

This made me purposely to come from thence,  
And not to see one of so comely shape,  
So sharply punisht for this small offence,  
As if it were for murder or for rape,  
Nor any hope could sinke into my sence,  
How possible it were for him to scape,  
And who could see or thinke without compassion,  
A fine yong youth tormented in such fashion?

35

Twas strange to thinke how nie this tale did touch  
The noble Bradamants most tender hart,  
It seemd she pittide this mans state as much,  
As if her brother had playd such a part:  
Some cause there was to make her fancie such,  
As afterward at large I shall impart:  
And straight she makes this motion, that they twaine  
Might saue this wofull youth from being flaine.

It was indeed  
her brother, as  
you shall see after  
in the 25. booke.



36

Rogero much commends her noble mind,  
And to the mourning damsell thus they said,  
We both are to this enterprize inclin'd,  
If fortune serue we will the yong man aid,  
But when they saw that still she mournd and whind,  
Tush (quoth Rogero) cease to be afraid,  
Tis more then time that we were going hence,  
Not teares but force must serue for his defence.

37

These comfortable words Rogero spake,  
With that his warlike looke and manly show,  
Did cause her heart of grace forthwith to take,  
Yet still she doubts which way were best to go,  
Not that she feard the right way to mistake,  
For all the wayes she perfittly did know,  
To turne the way she came she was afraid,  
Left in the way they haply might be staid.

38

There are (quoth she) two wayes vnto the place,  
Of which the one is easie, faire and plaine,  
The tother foule, and farre the greater space,  
Yet at this time the safer of the twaine,  
But yet I feare, except God send more grace,  
That ere we thither come, he may be slaine:  
Thus stood this damsell still, not little musing,  
Betweene the nearer way and safer chusing.

39

Rogero that was resolute and stout,  
Did aske what reason mou'd her to perswade  
Them two to take the farther way about;  
And straightway she to them this answer made,  
Forsooth (said she) the cause that moues my doubt  
Is this, I feare that some will you inuade,  
By meanes that Pinnabell (*Anselmus* sonne)  
Hath here of late a custome leud begunne.

40

As namely that who euer that way ride,  
Of what estate soeuer or degree,  
Must leese their horses first, and then beside  
Must of their clothes and raiment spoiled be.  
Foure valiant youths of strength, and courage tride,  
Are sworne to this, so that no he nor she  
Can passe that way without this euill payment,  
That he must weapons leese, and she her raiment.

41

The custome is, as yet but three dayes old,  
By Pinnabello and his wife deuised,  
Who meeting haply (as I heard it told)  
A knight, or one in knightly clothes disguised,  
With whom a woman vgly to behold,  
And by this couple scorned and despised,  
This Pinnabell the worse had of the quarrell,  
His wife was spoild of horse and of apparrell.

42

This spite enraged so the womans mind,  
That wishing to reuenge, not knowing how,  
Yet wrath and folly so her sence doth blind,  
That straight she makes a foolish tolemne vow,  
And he that was to euill deeds inclin'd  
No lesse then she, doth of the same allow:  
The vow was this, for anger of this foile,  
A thousand others in like sort to spoile.

43

That very night came to that house by chance  
Foure valiant knights as euer armor bare,  
To fight on horse or foot with sword or lance,  
But few may with the worst of them compare,  
These foure I say were first that led this dance,  
By night surpris'd ere they were aware,  
Both Griffin, Aquilant and Sansonet,  
And Guidon Savage, scant a man as yet.

44

These foure in shew gently entertained,  
And makes the friendly countenance and cheare,  
With courteous speech and friendly manner fained,  
As if he lou'd them well and held them deare:  
But while secure they in their beds remained,  
And when Sunne rising now approched neare,  
He did beset the lodging where they lay,  
And tooke their armor and their clothes away.

45

And further bound them in that present place,  
Both hand and foote as if they prisoners were,  
And ere he did those causelesse bonds vnlace,  
He makes them solemnly to vow and sweare,  
To keepe this order for a tweluemonths space,  
That whosoever hapned to come there,  
They foure endeuour should with all their forces  
To take away their raiment and their horses.

46

To this by solemne oth are sworne they foure,  
Constrained thereto by this their cruell host,  
And though herewith they were offended sore,  
Yet must they sweare for feare of farther cost,  
Alreadie not so few as twise a score,  
Their hortes and their furniture haue lost,  
And none as yet so able haue bene found,  
But one of these haue laid him on the ground.

47

But if some one do hap so strong to be,  
To make his partie good with one of those,  
Then straight the order is, the other three  
Must him assist, thus none unconquer'd goes,  
Wherefore if you will be reuild by me,  
Tis best to shun this way as I suppose,  
Sith each of these is such as I recited,  
How great thinke you will be their force vnited.

48

But presuppose that you their force withstand,  
As your great courage makes me thinke you might,  
Yet needs it hinder must the cause in hand,  
And make you tarry hereabout all night:  
Sith then this case so dangerously doth stand,  
I would perswade you now to shun this fight,  
Left while you in this enterprize remaine,  
The poore yong man may fortune to be slaine.

49

Tush quoth Rogero, haue no doubt at all,  
Let vs endeuer still to do our best,  
And then hap good or ill, fall what may fall,  
Let God and fortune gouerne all the rest:  
I hope this enterprize I finish shall  
So well, as I shall eke do your request,  
And there arriue to saue him in good time,  
That should be burned for to smail a crime.

*This was Marfisa and Gabriela, as you might reade before in the latter end of the 20. booke.*

*Pinnabell saw.*

*Sensence.*

*This*



50

This said, he gets him on the nearest way,  
Fast by the place where *Pinnabell* doth dwell,  
And at the bridge they forced were to stay,  
And straight a man (whose name I know not well)  
Came out in hast, and stand to them doth say,  
And then begins their order them to tell,  
Perswading them, if they will shunne the perell,  
To yeeld in peace their horses and apparell.

51

Peace (quoth *Rogero*) leaue thy foolish prating,  
A tale alreadie knowne thou dost repeate,  
Children with bugs, and dogs are heard with rating,  
With me it small auails to brag or threate,  
I leese but time with thee to stand debating,  
Shew me the men that mind to do this feate,  
My hast is such that long I may not stay,  
Wherefore I pray you bid them come away.

52

Lo here comes one of them, this old man sed,  
And as he spake the words, out came a knight,  
A tall strong man, all armed from foot to hed,  
His armor like a furnace shined bright,  
His colours that he ware were white and red,  
This was the first, and *Sanfunet* he hight,  
And, for he was a man of mightie strength,  
Two massie speares he brought of mightie length.

53

The one of these he to *Rogero* gaue,  
The other to himselfe he doth reserue,  
Then each, in hope the victorie to haue,  
Do spurre their stodie steeds that will not swerue,  
*Rogeros* shield from wounding doth him saue,  
The others did him not so well preferue,  
The speare both pierst his shield and prickt his arme,  
And ouerthrew him to his further harme.

54

You do not sure, nor cannot yet forget,  
What of *Rogeros* shield before I told,  
That made the fiends of hell with toyle to wet,  
And shined so bright as none could it behold,  
No maruell then though valiant *Sanfunet*,  
Although his hands were strong and hart were bold,  
Could not preuaile so strong a shield to pierce,  
Of so great force as late I did rehearse.

55

This while was *Pinnabell* approched nie  
To *Bradament*, and asked of her his name,  
That in their fight his force so great did trie,  
To ouerthrow a knight of so great fame.  
(Lo how the mighty God that sits on  
Can punish sinne when least men looke the same)  
Now *Pinnabel* fell in his enemies hands,  
When in his owne conceit most safe he stands.

56

It was his hap that selfe same horse to ride,  
Which eight months past from *Bradament* he stole,  
Then when he falsly let the pole to slide,  
At *Merlins* caue (if you did marke the tale)  
But now when she that traitor vile had spide,  
That thought by trechery to worke her bale,  
She stept forthwith betweene him and his castle,  
And sweares that she with him a pull would wrastle.

Sentence.

Of this ye might  
reade in the end  
of the booke.

57

Looke how a fox, with dogs and hunters chafte,  
That to come backe vnto her hole did weene,  
Is vtterly discourag'd and agast,  
When in her way she nets and dogs hath seene:  
So he that no such perill did forecast,  
And sees his fo stept him and home betweene,  
With word him threatning and with sword assailing,  
Doth take the wood his heart and courage failing.

58

Thus now on flight his onely hope relying,  
He spurd that horse that chiefe his trouble bred,  
No hope of helpe, and yet for helpe still crying;  
For doubt of death almost already ded,  
Sometime the fact excusing or denying,  
But she beleeuing not a word he sed,  
None in the castle were of this aware,  
About *Rogero* all so busied are.

59

This while forth of the gate came th'other three,  
That to this law so solemnly had sworne,  
Among the rest that came was also she  
That caused this law, full of disdain and scorne,  
And none of these but sooner would agre  
With horses wilde to be in peeces torne,  
Then to distaine their honor and good name,  
With any act that might be worthy shame.

60

Wherefore it grieu'd them to the very gall,  
That more then one at once should one assaile,  
Saue they were sworne to runne together all,  
If so the first of victorie did faile:  
And she vncessantly on them did call,  
What meane you sirs (quoth she) what do you aile?  
Do you forget the cause I brought you hither?  
Are you not sworne to take part all together?

61

Fie, answered *Guidon*, what a shame is this?  
Let rather me alone my fortune trie,  
And if of victory I hap to misse,  
At my returning backe then let me die.  
Not so quoth she, my meaning other is,  
And you I trust will not your word denie:  
I brought you higher for another cause,  
Not now to make new orders and new lawes.

62

Thus were they vrged by this scornfull dame,  
To that which all their hearts abhorred sore,  
And which they thought to them so great a shame,  
As neuer like had chanced them before;  
Alto *Rogeros* words increast the same,  
Vpbraiding them, and egging more and more,  
And asking why they made so long delay,  
To take his armor and his horse away.

63

And thus in maner forst and by constraint,  
They came all three *Rogero* to inuade,  
Which act they thought wold fore their honors taint,  
Though full account of victory they made,  
*Rogero* at their comming doth not faint,  
As one well vsd through dangers great to wade,  
And first the word by *Oliueros* sonnes,  
With all their force against *Rogero* runnes.



64

Rogero turnd his horse to take the field,  
 With that same staffe that lately ouerthrew  
 Stout *Sanfones*, and with that passing shield,  
 That *Atlant* made by helpe of hellish crew,  
 That shield, whose ayd he vsed very seeld,  
 Some vnexpected danger to eschew:  
 Twile when *Alcynas* kingdome he forsooke,  
 Once when the Indian *Queene* fro th'Ork he tooke.

65

Saue these three times he neuer vsd the aid  
 Of this his shield, but left it couerd still,  
 If he abroad, or if within he staid,  
 He neuer left it open by his will.  
 As for these three, he was no more afraid  
 Of all their strength, their number nor their skill,  
 Nor made no more account with them to fight,  
 Then if they had seemd children in his sight.

66

And first he met the yonger of the twaine,  
 That *Griffin* hight, who had to great a blo,  
 As in the saddle he could scant remaine,  
 But quite amazed reeled to and fro;  
 He strake *Rogero*, but it was in vaine,  
 For why, the stroke fell ouerthwartly so,  
 That quite beside *Rogeros* shield it slipt,  
 But yet the case it all to tare and ript.

67

Now when the renting of the silken case,  
 In which *Rogero* vsd the shield to hide,  
 Had cast out such a light in each mans face,  
 That none of them the force thereof could bide,  
 They fell downe all amazed in the place,  
 Admit they sit, or stand, or go, or ride,  
*Rogero* with the cause not yet acquainted,  
 Did maruell how his foes so soone had fainted.

68

But when he once was of the cause aware,  
 And how the couer of his shield was rent,  
 By meane whereof it open lay and bare,  
 And thence such light vnto the lookers sent:  
 He looks about where his companions are,  
 Because forthwith to get him thence he ment,  
 I meane his *Bradamant*, and that same maid,  
 That for that youth did erst demaund his aid.

69

But his belou'd as then he found not, where  
 He erst had left her when he went to iust,  
 And when he plainly saw she was not there,  
 And that that happend he could not mistrust,  
 He parted thence, and with him he doth beare  
 The maid that made to him the sute so iust,  
 Who lay that time amazed with the rest,  
 With sudden blasing of the light distrest.

70

He takes her kirtle, and with it doth hide  
 The light that did so dazle all their eyes,  
 That light on which to looke none could abide,  
 As if two Sunnes had shone at once in skies:  
 Forthwith himselfe all malcontent doth ride,  
 To haue this combat ended in such wise,  
 As might imputed be to Magike art,  
 And not his prowesse or his valiant hart.

71

Now while this thought such passions did him yeeld,  
 That though he had indeed most brauely donne,  
 Yet men would thinke the glorie of the field,  
 Not by his valiantnesse to haue bene wonne,  
 But by the force of that enchanted shield,  
 That cast a light more piercing then the Sunne,  
 I say as thus he thought, he passed by  
 A large deepe well, hat by the way did lie.

72

A well at which the easts in summers heate  
 Did vse their t stie drought to quench and coole,  
 And chew againe their vndigested meate,  
 And walke about the shallowes of the poole.  
 Here did *Rogero* oft these words repeate,  
 Thou shield, that late didst make me such a foole,  
 To cause me get a conquest with such shame,  
 Lie there (quoth he) with thee go all my blan

*Ouid.*  
*Atque iterum*  
*pasto pascitur*  
*ante cibo.*

73

With that he threw the shield into the well,  
 The well was deepe, the shield of mightie weight,  
 That to the bottome suddenly it fell,  
 The water ouer it a monstrous height:  
 But lo dame *Fame* the thing abroade doth tell,  
 How he because he would not win by sleight,  
 But by meere value, had his target drown'd,  
 Where it should neuer afterward be found.

74

Yet many (that had heard the strange report)  
 Of those that dwelled thence, some farre, some nere,  
 To seeke the target thither did resort,  
 And to haue found it out had great desire,  
 But it was cast away in such a sort,  
 As none vnto their purpose did aspire,  
 For why the maid that onely did behold it,  
 And knew which well it was, yet neuer told it.

75

But when the knights came to themselues againe,  
 And were awake, and one the other saw,  
 That late were vanquisht with so little paine,  
 As if to him they had bene men of straw,  
 They wondred much what troubled had their braine,  
 And all of them thence themselues withdraw,  
 And all that day, they argue and deuise.  
 How that same light should dazle to their eyes.

76

This while came notice of the wofull fall  
 Of *Pinnabell*, whom *Bradamant* had killed,  
 With which they greatly were displeased all,  
 Not knowing why or who his blood had spilled;  
 His wife and sire that heard what was befall,  
 His sonne, her spouse, the place with outcries filled,  
 And curst and chafed with too late repentance,  
 That none on *Pinnabell* had giu'n attendance.

77

Now when the damsell iustly had him slaine,  
 And tane away his horse, sometime her owne,  
 She would haue turnd the way she came againe,  
 But that the same was vnto her vnknowne;  
 To purpose small, she trauels with great paine,  
 To seeke it out, as after shall be showne:  
 For here to stay is my determination,  
 And pawle a little for my recreation.



## OF ORLANDO FVRIOSO.

In the person of Bradamant, that was so readily inclined to the ayd of a young man, though then unknowne to. may note, how to a noble disposition, a little perswasion suffiseth, to moue them to the succour of such as are distressed. In Pinabell and his wife, that thought to reuenge the scorne they receiued, with doing the like scorne to others, we may see, how base and dunghill dispositions follow not any course of valour or true reputation, but onely to wreake their malice on some bodie, not caring whom: as they are wont to tell of Will Sommer (though otherwise a harmelesse foole) that would euermore if one had angered him, strike him that was next him. Lastly in Bradamant that met Pinabell by hap, riding on the same horse that he had stolen from her long before (what time he left her for dead) and thereby now discovered him, and killed him, we may note a most notable example of diuine iustice, in the like cases, as many times it falleth out, and in this Poet you shal find many of them: as Polynestes death in the fift booke; Martanos punishment in the eigenth booke, Marganorres execution in the seuen and thirtieth booke: all which examples (whether true or fained) haue this chiefe scope and end, to make men know that there is a diuine power, that will iudge and punish the actions of men, be they neuer so secure or so secret, and onely the cleare conscience it is that assureth a man of his estate, both in this world and in the world to come: and he that feareth not that diuine power, it is vnpossible that he can liue free of most wicked acts. That wise and honorable counsellor Sir Walter Mildmay, as in all other things he shewed himselfe an vncorrupt man to his end, so his writings and sayings were euer spiced with this reuerent feare of God: for ex abundantia cordis os loquitur: and among other of his (worth the noting) of which he himselfe gaue me a little volume when I was a boy of Eaton colledge (the which since his death haue bene published in print) but one speciall verse he had to that effect in Latin, and was by me put into English at the request of that honorable Gentleman his sonne in law, Maste William Fitzwilliams.

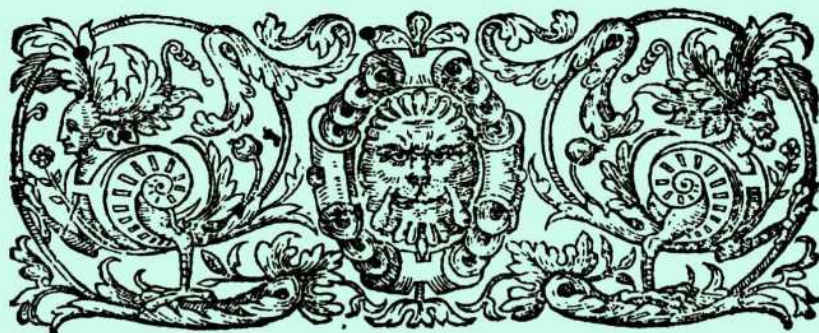
Vltio peccatum sequitur, delinquere noli,  
Nam scelus admissum poena seuera premit:  
Quod si fortè Deus, patièdo differat iram,  
Sera licet veniat, certa venire solet.  
Flie sinne, for sharpe reuenge doth follow sinne,  
And wicked deeds, do wrathfull doomes procure:  
If God stay long ear he to strike beginne,  
Though long he stay, at last he striketh sure.

A worthie saying of a most worthie man, and thus much for the morall.

Hipermestra was daughter to Egittus, this Egittus had fiftie daughters, who caused them all to be married to Da- Historie.  
naos fifty sonnes, and being commanded by their tyrannous father, killed them all in one night, only Hipermestra refused  
to obey so filthie a commandement, and saued her husband, whose name was Linus.

Astolfo that with helpe of his booke dissolues the enchanted pallace, and with his horne draue away those that assaul- Allegorie  
ted him and put him in great danger, signifieth allegorically (as I haue in part touched before) how wisdom with the  
helpe of eloquence, discovereth the craftiest, and tameth the wildest. Further in that Rogero casteth away the enchanted  
shield, and refuseth the vse thereof, the Allegorie thereof signifieth, that though a man for necessitie sake, sometimes be  
driven to take some helpe of no verie honorable sort, and sometimes to relieue himselfe with policies scarce commen-  
dable, yet one should when that vrgent necessitie is past, hurle such conceipt from him where it may neuer be found again,  
as Rogero flang his shield into that well; and so fame shall blow abroad our noble mind in so doing, as it did Rogeros  
for refusing an ayd of such force.

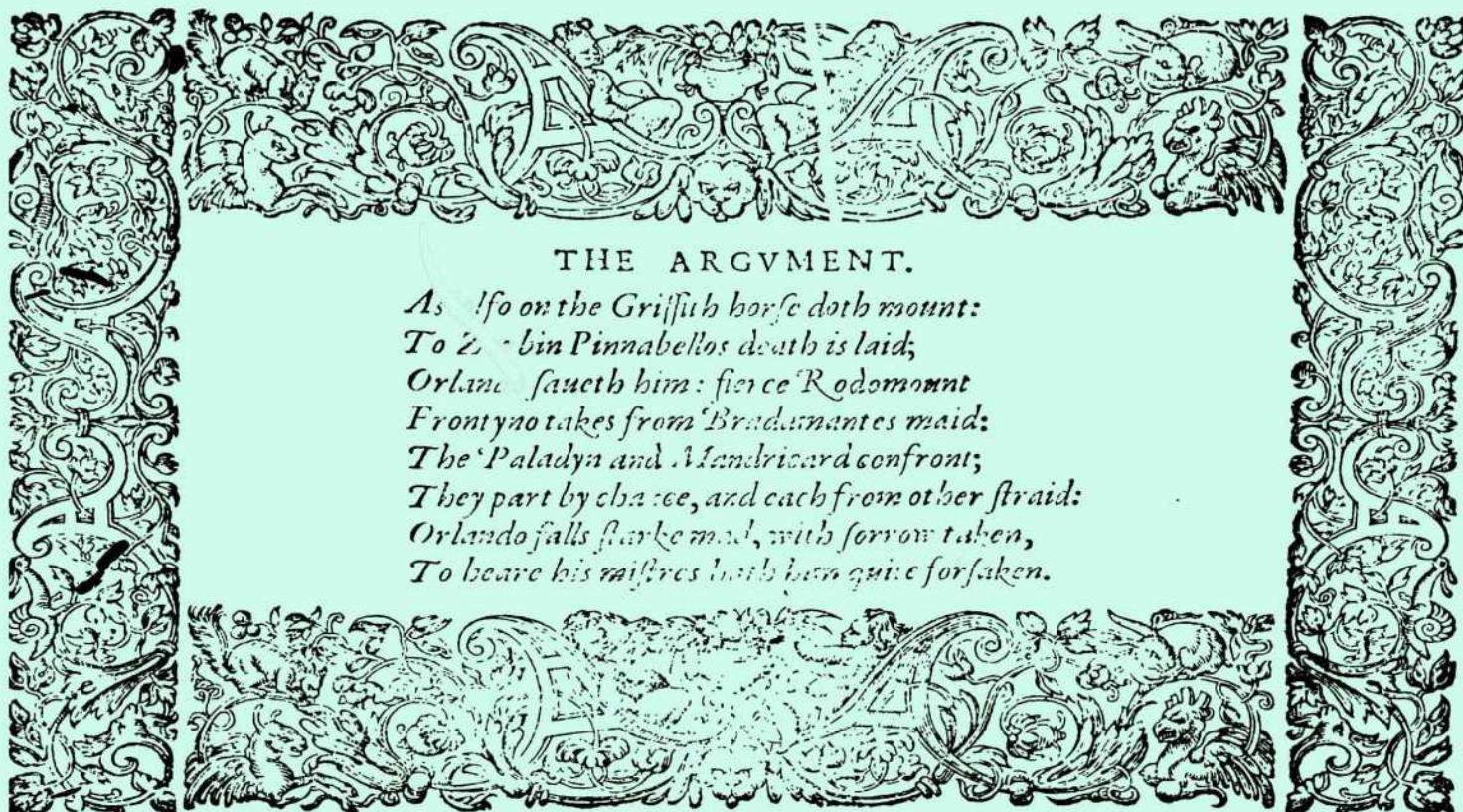
The end of the Annotations vpon xxij. booke.





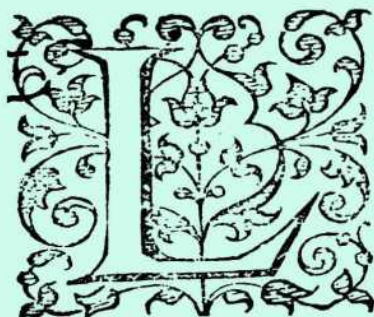






## THE ARGUMENT.

As Iſo on the Griſſih horſe doth mount:  
To Zerbino Pinnabellos death is laid;  
Orlando ſaueth him: ſierce Rodomont  
Frontynio takes from Bradamantes maid:  
The Paladyn and Mandricard confront;  
They part by chance, and each from other ſtraid:  
Orlando falls ſharke mad, with ſorrow taken,  
To beare his miſtreſſes loath her quite forſaken.



<sup>1</sup>  
Et eu'rie one do all the  
good they can,  
For ſeldome cometh harme  
of doing well,  
Though juſt reward it wā-  
teth now and than,  
Yet ſhame, and euill death  
it doth expell,  
But he that miſchieueth a-  
nother man,

Doth ſeldome carrie it to heau'n or hell:  
Men ſay it, and we ſee it come to paſſe,  
Good turns in ſand, ſhrewd turns are writ in braſſe.

*Sentence.*  
The Latine pro-  
uerbe is,  
Scribit in mar-  
more

*tence.*  
Looke in the mo-  
ral of the former  
here this  
point is touched  
more largely.

*Sentence.*

<sup>2</sup>  
Sceld mountaines meet, but man y often meet,  
(The Prouerbe ſaith) and who ſo ſets a trap,  
May catch himſelfe here you plainly ſe e't  
In him at this daime in woes to wrap,  
But hurts himſelfe; a pu'iſhment moſt meet;  
God ſtill defending her from all miſhap:  
God her preferu'd, and will all thoſe preferue,  
As ſhunne all vice, and him ſincerely ſerue.

<sup>3</sup>  
It little did auaille to Pinnabell,  
To be amid his kinsfolke and his friends;  
And neare the caſtle, where his fire did dwell,  
Where eu'rie one, him honours and attends,  
Loe here the end of him doth plainly tell,  
How wicked liues haue often wretched ends:  
But to proceed, I ſaid when he was ſlaine,  
The noble damſell fought her way againe.

*Sentence.*

<sup>4</sup>  
Which when ſhe ſaw ſhe could by no meanes know,  
But more and more vncertainly did roue

And ſees the ſunne was now declining low;  
She meanes that night to reſt her in the groue:  
And ſleepe ſometime, or elſe ſometime (I trow)  
To looke on Mars, on Saturne, or on Ioue,  
But chiefly, whether ſhe awakes or ſleepes;  
Kygros image in her heart ſhe keepes.

*Meaning the  
Planets.*

<sup>5</sup>  
Oft times ſhe fretting to her ſelfe would ſay,  
Loe; hate with me farre more preuailed hath,  
Then loue could do, that now haue loſt my way,  
And leſt my comfort to auenge my wrath;  
Nor had my wit ſo much forecaſt or ſtay,  
To take ſome marke of my foretrodden path:  
I did, quoth ſhe) as fooles are wont to do,  
Take one ſhrewd turne to do another two.

*Sentence.*

<sup>6</sup>  
Theſe words and many like to theſe ſhe ſpake,  
To paſſe the reſt of that her reſtleſſe night,  
Till ſtarres gan vaniſh and the dawning brake,  
And all the Eaſter parts were full of light,  
Then at aduenture ſhe her way doth take,  
Not knowing yet if it were wrong or right;  
And hauing traueled in that way ſome miles,  
By hap Aſioloſo came that way the whiles.

*Aſioloſo.*

<sup>7</sup>  
He rides the winged horſe, but in his hand,  
He leades the famous Rabican behinde;  
And eu'n as then, in great doubt he did ſtand,  
Where to beſtow a beaſt of ſo good kind:  
She knowing him, went to him out of hand,  
With words, with ſhowes, and with embracements  
And ioyd to find his kinsman of her owne, (kind,  
And vnto him her ſelfe ſhe maketh knowne



8

And much reioyst at this their meeting,  
Then one the other askt of their well fare,  
And after their long talke, and friendly greeting,  
In which each shewd of other louing care:  
Sith I (quoth he) intend hence to be fleeting,  
To see what fights in forren countries are,  
This horse of me, I shall request you take,  
Till I returne, and keepe him for my sake.

9

Also he said, this coslet and this speare,  
With you I leaue till I returne againe,  
(This speare the sonne of *Galefron* did beare,  
Whom as you heard before *Ferraw* had slaine,)  
With head whereof, if any touched were,  
Straight wayes to fall to ground they must beaine,  
All these he left behind to make him light,  
Before that he begins to take his flight.

10

Thus leaue once tane, away the Duke doth fore,  
First low, and after still more hye and hye,  
Till at the length she could him see no mores  
So doth the Pylot first, with watchfull eye,  
Guide out his vessell softlie by the shore,  
While he doth thinke the rocks and shallowes nye:  
But after when he dreads no more such doubts,  
He sayles apace, and claps on all his clouts.

11

Now when the Duke was from the damsell gone,  
What she might do she mused in her minde,  
And carefully she meditates thereon:  
How she may take the iourney first assignd,  
And not neglect her kinsmans charge; anon  
A wandring peasant twas her hap to finde,  
To him she doth betake the horses spare,  
Though of the wayes they both vnskilfull are.

12

Her meaning was to go to Vallumbrose,  
As first her loue and she concluded had,  
Whom there to finde she certaine doth suppose;  
Whom there to find, she would haue bene full glad,  
But loe a quite contrarie course she goes,  
And sees a sight that made her then full sad,  
I her fathers house Montalbanie she spide,  
In which as then her mother did abide.

13

If she shall forward go, approaching nire,  
She shall be stayed there, she stand in doubt,  
If she stand still, or backward do retire,  
She feares to meet acquaintance there about;  
If she be staid, she feesles such burning fire,  
Of longing loue as cannot be put out:  
She chaunft amid these thoughts, and many other,  
To meet *Alardo* there her younger brother.

14

This meeting in her minde bred much vexation,  
When as she found her brother her had spide,  
And made her alter her determination,  
Which that she might from him the better hide,  
She vld some common words of salutation,  
And to Montalban with him she doth ride,  
Where as her mother, full of care and feare,  
Had wisht, and wayted for her comming there.

15

But all those kind embracings and those kisses,  
She had of parent, kinsmen kinde, and frens,  
She deems of little vantage to those blisses,  
That she had lost, and thought them small amends:  
But sith to meet *Rogero* now she misses,  
To send a messenger she now intends,  
Some such to whom she may commit the charge,  
To tell her mind vnto her loue large.

16

And if neede were to pay him in her name,  
As he had promised, to be baptised,  
And to excuse, at whicher she not came,  
As they together had before deuised:  
Besides his horse *Frontino*, by the same,  
She sent a horte of goodnes, not despised,  
No horte in France or Spaine esteemed more,  
Bayardo tole except, and *Brighadere*.

17

*Rogero* (if you call it well to minde),  
What time the Grifflith horte he first did take,  
That soard away as swift as western winde,  
And forst him quickly *Europe* to forsake,  
That gallant beast *Frontino* left behind,  
Whom *Bradamant* then, for his masters sake,  
Tooke home, and with much care and costly feeding  
Made him by this time, faire and fat exceeding.

18

And straight her mayds and women seruants all,  
That skilfull were to sew, to weaue, and knit,  
She doth to worke in hast together call,  
And she her selfe among them all doth sit,  
To worke a net, of art and cost not small,  
For his caparison to make it fit:  
When this was done, and finisht, straight way after,  
She calls her nurse *Callitris* a daughter.

19

This mayd knew best her minde of all the rest,  
And oft had heard her praising to the skyes,  
*Rogeros* comly shape, and valiant brest,  
His sugred speech, sweet face, and louly eyes  
This mayd with secrets all shee trusted best,  
On this mayds creature, she much relies;  
*Hyppalca* name this trustie mayd,  
Her then she cald, and thus to her she said.

20

*Hyppalca* mine, you know of all things,  
Of women seruants, I esteeme you most,  
As one that hath bene secret, wise, and trew,  
(A praise of which we women feld can boast)  
My meaning is to make a choise of you,  
To haue you to *Rogero* ride in post:  
And vnto him mine absence to excuse,  
And shew, that I could neither will nor chuse.

21

Your selfe (quoth she) may ride a litle nagge,  
And in your hand lead by *Frontino* spare,  
And if perhap some foole wilbe to bragge,  
As that to take the horte from you he dare,  
To make him that he shall no farther wagge,  
But tell who owes the horte, and do not care:  
She thought *Rogero* was of so great fame,  
That eu'ie one would quake to heare his name.

Thus

*Argalus much  
admired speare  
called Lance-  
d'oro golden-  
lance.*

*It. returns to  
Argalus the 2.  
booke about the  
88 li. 15 ff.*  
*Smitie.*

*One horse of A-  
stolfus, the neher  
her owne that  
she tooke from  
Pinabell.*

*In the Spanish  
booke.*



22

Thus when *Hypalca* was instructed well,  
Of all that to her arrant did belong,  
And that no more remaind behind to tell,  
She tooke her horse, and there she stayd not long,  
In ten miles space (so luckie it befell)  
None offer made to do her any wrong,  
No traueiler, no knight, nor peasant staid her,  
Nor once with word or deed so much as frayd her.

23

About the time the Sunne to South did mount,  
She met (poore soule) a knight vnto her cost,  
That Turke most terrible call'd *Rodomont*,  
That followd armed on foote, a page in post;  
Who when he saw an horse of such account,  
He God blasphem'd and all the heau'nly host,  
That such a gallant seruiceable beast,  
In some mans hand, he had not found at least.

*Rodomont.*

24

He had before profest by solemne vow,  
When wanting horse, he traueled on his feet,  
That were't frō knight, or knaue that driues a plow,  
To take perforce the next horse he should meet:  
Yet though he likt the horse, to take this now,  
And rob a mayd thereof, he thought vnmeet,  
He sees her leade a horse, and he doth lacke,  
And oft he wisht his master on his backe.

25

Should he were (quoth she) he soone would make,  
You change your mind, and glad to get you hence,  
I should find how much you do mistake,  
Our strength and force to offer him offence.  
And who (quoth he) is this, of whom you crake?  
*Rogero* she replies: forsooth, and sence  
So great a champion is the horses owner,  
I may (said he) then take him with mine honor.

26

To take his horse (quoth he) I now intend,  
For of a horse you see I stand in need:  
And if I find it true as you pretend,  
That he so stout a champion is in deed,  
I *Rodomont* this action will defend,  
Now on my present iourney I proceed,  
And where I go my vertue to bright,  
He soone may find me if he to fight.

This said with cruel beats, and part with force,  
He gat his will, full fore against her will,  
And straight he mounteth vp vpon that horse,  
She cursing followd him, and banning still,  
But of those curses he doth little force;  
Then winners boast, when leasers speake their fill,  
Best pleas'd was he, when as she wisht him worst,  
As still the foxe fares best when he is curst.

*Sentence.**Sentence.*

28

But what she saith he little doth regard,  
Suppose she curst, or prayd, or rayld, or cride,  
He seekes out *Doralice* and *Mandricard*,  
And had the little dwarfe to be his guide,  
No little hast he maketh thitherward:  
But here a while mine author steps aside,  
And to that place of purpose makes digression,  
Where *Pinabell* was shru'n without confession.

He come, to *Rodomont*, 24. book.  
73. liasse.

29

The noble Dame no sooner left the place,  
Where late this caitiue by her hand was slaine,  
But *Zerbino* there arriu'd in little space,  
With old *Gabrina*, who perceiuing plaine,  
One murderd, straight he followed the trace,  
(Lest murder vnreuedged should remaine)  
He minds if fortune be so much his funderer:  
To be reuedged sharply on the murderer.

*Zerbino.*  
*Gabrina.*

30

*Gabrina* to the quarrie straight approacheth,  
Looke all about, searching the corse and prying,  
(As one that still on eu'rie gaine encrocheth)  
To win both by the liuing and the dying,  
In purses and in pokets all she pocheth,  
Of him that murderd on the ground was lying,  
As hauing this, conioynd to other euills,  
In couetise to passe the verie deuills.

*Quarrie is a*  
*word properly*  
*signifying the*  
*coule that the*  
*halke hath killd,*  
*and sometime by*  
*metaphor is used*  
*for a dead bodie.*

31

She would haue had his cote and armor faine,  
Saue that she knew not how them to haue hidden,  
But from great part of that desired gaine,  
By want of leysure she was then forbidden;  
Howbeit she did conuay away his chaine,  
And er *Zerbino* backe againe was ridden,  
She put it safely where it was not seene,  
Her vpper gowne and peti cote betweene.

32

And fore it grieved her to leaue the rest,  
But now *Zerbino* was returned backe,  
And for the time drew nigh of taking rest,  
And night came now to spread his mantell blacke,  
To seeke some lodging out they thought it best,  
Of which, in that wild countrie was great lacke.  
They leaue the valley, and they came that night,  
Vnto a castell *Altariua* hight.

*Altariua was*  
*Anselmus house*  
*father: o Pinabell.*

33

They thither went, and long they had not stayd,  
But in came people with great exclamation,  
With wofull news, that many hearts dismayd,  
And filld their mouths and eyes with lamentation,  
How *Pinabell* was murderd and betrayd,  
And lost his life, & worldly habitation. (torches  
And straight they brought the corse with light of  
And led the same through all the courts & porches.

34

Great were the plaints, the sorow and the grieve,  
By kindred made, by tenants and his frends;  
But by his father, old *Anselmus* chiefe,  
Who, though reuenge be but a small amends,  
And his sonnes life was now past all reliefe,  
By search to find the murder he intends.  
*Zerbino* hereof makes himselfe a stranger,  
As well to shunne suspition as danger.

35

Now when the funerals in stately sort,  
Ordained were with pompe and superstition  
To which great store of people did resort,  
And all that would, had franke and free permission,  
Straight with oyes, a crier doth report,  
Thereto assigned by that Earles commission,  
That who so could the murderer bewray,  
Should haue a thousand duckats for his pay.



36

This newes from mouth to mouth, from care to care,  
(As newes are wont to do) did flie so fast,  
That old *Gabrina*, being present there,  
Among the rest, heard of it at the last:  
Who either for the hatred she did beare,  
To good *Zerbino*, for some matters past,  
Or else for gaine of that so great reward,  
Straight to destroy *Zerbino* she prepar'd.

37

And that she might more surely him entrap,  
With th' Erle himselfe to speake she doth request,  
And probably, she tels how this mishap,  
Was by *Zerbino* wrought his new come guest:  
And straight she puld the chaine out of her lap,  
Which sole might serue to verifie the rest:  
That aged fire, that all the tale beleued,  
Was fore inrag'd herewith, not onely griued.

38

And lifting vp his hands vnto the skies,  
With age now feeble, feeble now with woe,  
With fainting voice he spake, and watric eies,  
(My sonne) thou shalt not vnreuenged go:  
And while in bed secure *Zerbino* lyes,  
Not thinking he had bene betrayed so,  
With armed men his lodging was beset,  
He naked tane, as is a byrd in net.

39

With as great crueltie as could be showne,  
His princely armes were piniond fast behind him,  
And to a dungeon deepe he straight was throwne,  
And that vile place, to bide in was assignd him,  
Vntill the sentence of his death were knowne:  
In fine *Anselmus* (so did passion blind him)  
(Her likely tale, his wrath so rashly leading)  
Condemned him, and neuer heard him pleading.

40

Thus was this worthy Prince without all cause,  
Condemnd to die (such is the wo full being,  
Where hefts of lawlesse lords, must stand for laws,  
Though from all lawes and reason disagreeing)  
Now neare and neare his execution draws,  
And gazing people, greedie still of seeing,  
In clusters march and follow all confus'd,  
On horse, on foot, as at such time is vs'd.

41

But loe how God that euer doth defend,  
Those innocents that put in him their trust,  
A helpe vnlooked for did thither send,  
And freed him from this doome of death vniust:  
*Orlando* did eu'n then the hill ascend,  
*Orlando* is the man that saue him must,  
And at that time there did with him remaine,  
The daughter of *Galego*, king of Spaine.

42

This was that *Isabell*, whom he of late,  
Recouerd from the outlawes in the caue;  
And hauing brought her out of that ill state,  
Yet still he promist care of her to haue,  
And whatsoeuer danger or debate,  
To him befell, yet her he still did saue:  
*Orlando* all that great assemblie saw,  
That did the knight to execution draw.

43

He thither went and askt of him the cause,  
Why he was drawne vnto a death so cruell  
Forsooth (*Zerbino* said) against all lawes,  
I am condemn'd if you the matter know well,  
*Anselmus* rage, that will admit no pause,  
Vnto this flame, doth kindle all the fewell:  
Beleeuing faliely that slue his sonne,  
Whereas by me (God knowes) it was not done.

Thus *Zerbino* said, and I'd it in such sort,  
As made *Orlando* him to releue,  
For verie apt he was, each ill report,  
Of any of *Mancanza* to beleue:  
Each house still thought to cut the the other short,  
Each house full sought the other how to greeue:  
Each house long time, had tane a pride and pleasure,  
To worke the tother danger and displeasure.

45

Vnloose the knight ye caitiues (straight he cride)  
Else looke for death to be your due reward:  
What man is this (quoth one) that gapes so wide?  
And speakes so foolishly without regard?  
Were he of Steele, of strength and temper tride,  
And we of straw, his sute might hap be hard.  
This said, he taketh vp a mighty launce,  
And runnes against the Palladine of Fraunce.

46

*Orlando* ran at him with couched speare,  
And though his armour were both good and  
As namely that *Zerbino* erst did weare,  
Yet was the stroke too grieuous to endure,  
For though the beauer did it stiffly beare,  
Yet did the blow a greater hurt procure:  
For on the cheeke, it gaue him such a checke,  
That though it pierced not, it brake his necke.

47

Nor at that course did all his furie cease,  
Six other of that speare the force then felt,  
Then with his sword among the thickest prease,  
Such store of thrusts, and deadly blowes he delt,  
That many in the place did straight de cease;  
And eu'n as snow against the Sunne doth melt,  
So melted they in his sight,  
That in an houre it them all to flight.

48

When they were fled, he set *Zerbino* free,  
Who would haue kist the ground, where on he trod,  
And done him reuerence humbly on his knee,  
But that the Earle such courtie him forbod:  
But yet he thank't him in the high'st degree,  
As one he honourd most, excepting God:  
Then did he put his armor on againe,  
Which late was worne by him that there was slaine.

49

Now while *Zerbino* there a little staid,  
Preparing with *Orlando* to go hence,  
Behold faire *Isabell*, that princely maid,  
That all the while had staid a little thence,  
And sees no farther cause to be affraid,  
Came neare, & brought great ioy and great offence  
By diuers passions bred of one desire,  
Some cold as ice, and some as hot as fire.

For

Sentence.

Simile.

Orlando.  
Isabell.



50

For where before *Zerbino* thought her drownd,  
Now certain he reioyced very much,  
To see ner in his presence safe and sound,  
And that her misadventure was not such:  
But weying in whose hand she had her found,  
A iealous feare forthwith his heart doth tuch,  
And inwardly a greater anish bred,  
Then late it had, to heare that she was ded.

51

To see her in the hands of such a night,  
It greatly did him anger and grieve,  
From whom to offer, her to take a might,  
It were no honestie nor haply ease,  
But for *Orlandos* sake he ought of right,  
All passions, both of loue and wrath appease;  
To whom in thankfulness it were but meete,  
To lay his hands vnder *Orlandos* feete.

52

Wherefore he makes no words, but on he goth  
In silent sort, till coming to a well  
To drinke they lighted, being thirstie both,  
And each his drought with water doth expell,  
But when the damsell saw and knew for troth,  
That was *Zerbino* whom she lou'd so well,  
(For when to drinke his beuer he vntide)  
Straight she her loue had through his beuer spide.

53

When she open armes she runs him to embrace,  
Yonglings about his necke a pleasant yoke,  
Speechlesse she remaind a pretie space,  
And with her cristall teares (before she spoke)  
Surprisd with ioy, she all bedewd his face,  
And long it was ere into speech she broke,  
By which the noble Earle did plainly see,  
That this could no man but *Zerbino* be.

54

Now when she had againe her vitall sprites,  
And that she able was her mind to show,  
First she *Orlandos* great desarts recites,  
That rescude her from place of shame and wo,  
Commending him about all other knights,  
That vndefiled had presented her so,  
And prayd her deare, when he made recitall  
Of his good deeds, to make him some requitall.

55

Great thanks were giuen, and profers great there were  
Recot and seruice on each side,  
But lo a hap that made them speech forbear,  
For why an armed knight they had espide:  
Twas *Mandricardo* that arriued there,  
Who as you heard, these many dayes did ride  
To seeke this Earle, till meeting by the way  
Faile *Doralice*, a while it made him stay.

56

*the 14. booke.* You heard how *Mandricard* sought out the tracke,  
(Mou'd thereunto by enuie and disdaine)  
Of this fierce knight, appareld all in blacke,  
By whom the king of *Tremysen* was flaine,  
And those *Noritians* all, so put to wracke,  
As few of them vnwounded did remaine,  
And now he found him as it came to passe,  
Yet knew he not that this *Orlando* was.

57

But marking well, the signes and tokens like,  
To thole he heard, of such as thence were fled,  
You are (quoth he) the selfe same man I seeke,  
By whom so many of my friends are ded:  
I haue (he said) traueled about a weeke  
To find you out, and now at last am sped,  
You are the man that I haue sought (I guesse)  
And sure your manly looke doth shew no lesse.

58

Sir (quoth *Orlando*) though I want your name,  
A noble knight you are it may be guesst,  
For sure a heart so thirsting after fame,  
Is seldome bred in base vnnoble brest:  
But if to see me onely now you came,  
I straight herein will graunt you your request:  
And that you may behold me to your fill,  
I will put off mine armour if you will.

59

But when you well haue viewd me all about,  
If yet you haue a farther mind to trie,  
Which of vs two can proue himselfe most stout,  
And first in field can make the tother flie:  
Attempt it when you list, and make no doubt,  
But hereunto right soone agree shall I:  
That (quoth the pagan) is my mind indeed,  
And thus to fight together they agreed.

60

But when *Orlando* viewd the Pagan king,  
And saw no pollax at his saddle bow,  
No sword by side, no bow, nor dart, nor sling,  
But eu'n a speare, he needs of him would know,  
When that were burst, vnto what other thing  
He then would trust, to giue or beare a blow:  
Tush (quoth the pagan prince) you need not feare,  
But I will match you onely with the speare.

61

I haue (quoth he) an oath most solemne sworne,  
Since first the noble *Hectors* armes I wan,  
That by my side should neuer sword be worne,  
Nor other iron weapon, till I can  
Get *Durindana* by *Orlando* borne,  
Though how he gate it, well I cannot scan,  
But since he gate it, great reports do flie,  
That noble deeds of armes he doth thereby.

62

No lesse (quoth he) I faine on him would wreake  
My fathers death, whom falsly he betraid,  
For well I wot my fire was not so weake,  
With any Christen to be ouerlaid:  
At this *Orlando* could not chuse but speake,  
It is a lie (quoth he) that thou hast said,  
I am *Orlando*, and I will not beare it,  
This sword is *Durindan*, win it and weare it.

63

And though this sword is iustly wholly mine,  
Yet for this time I frankly do agree,  
A while it shall be neither mine nor thine,  
And if in combat you can vanquish me,  
Then tak't, and thereat I shall not repine:  
This said, he hangd the sword vpon a tree,  
Indifferently betwene them both to stand,  
Vntill the strife by combat might be scand.

Q ij



64

Now one at th'other ran with couched speare,  
And on the head-peece each the other strake,  
The staues in sundry peeces rend and teare,  
But by the blowes the men small hurt do take:  
And now the trunchens onely left them were,  
And at foure blowes the trunchens likewise brake,  
Thus when they saw all other weapons mist,  
At last they were inforst to fight with fist.

65

Simile.

So haue I seene two clownes fall at debate,  
About some watercourse or marke of land,  
And either clap the tother on the pate,  
With crabtree staffe, or with as crabbed hand;  
Such of this conflict was the present state,  
And each of them doth to his tackle stand,  
And being tyr'd with giuing frutelesse stripes,  
At last they flatly fell to handie gripes.

66

Antheus. Look  
on the Horse.

The Pagan, part by sleight and part by force,  
Thought to haue done as *Hercles* in time past,  
To fierce *Antheus* did, and th' Earle inforce,  
To yeeld himselfe, or leaue his horse at last.  
*Orlando* that could surely fit his horse,  
With all his strength bestrides the saddle fast,  
Yet did the Pagan heaue him with such strength,  
That all his gyrtes broken were at length.

67

Downe came the Earle, yet kept his saddle still,  
Nor what had happend was he well aware,  
But as he fell, intending by his will,  
Vnto the Pagan king to worke some care,  
He meant (but his attempt succeeded ill)  
To ouerthrow the horse the Pagan bare,  
But missing hold, the horse vnhurt remaines,  
Yet off he puld his headstall and his raines.

68

The horse that had at libertie his head,  
Runs ouer ditch and valley, hedge and wood,  
As partly feare, and partly courage led,  
For nothing was that his mad course withstood:  
But *Mandricard* still beates him on his head,  
And eu'n as if he speech had vnderstood,  
He threatens him (except he stay) to beate him,  
And with faire speech sometime he doth intreat him.

69

But all was one, three mile outright he rode,  
Ere he could make the harebraine horse to stay,  
Or cause him once to make a small abode,  
But more and more he gallops still away:  
At last with hast the horse and eke the lode  
Fell downe into a ditch, and there they lay,  
Both horse and man all foyle and rayd with durt,  
Yet neither horse nor man had any hurt.

70

This while Dame *Doralice* that saw her guide  
Thus post away against his will amaine,  
She thought it were not safe behind to bide,  
And therefore followd him though with great paine,  
And seeing that he could no farther ride,  
Because his wilfull horse did want a raine,  
She prayes him take her horses raine and bit,  
For mine (quoth she) will go though wanting it.

71

Much did the Pagan praise her gentle of er,  
Yet did refuse it as a part too base,  
To let her want and take her bridle of her  
He thought it were to him a great disgrace.  
But lo good chance a neane did profer,  
*Gabrina* came vnwar vnto the place,  
She that betraid of late the Scottish Prince,  
And heard (of like) his deliuey since.

72

And therefore fearing ishment and blame,  
And clogd with grieuous conscience, fled the light,  
Vntill by hap vnwares she thither came,  
And on this crosse le fortune to light:  
They could not chuse but make great sport & game,  
To see so strange and vnagreeing fight,  
As such a witherd old ilfauord hag,  
To ride in purple on an ambling nag.

*Qui malâ faciunt  
oderunt lucem.**Simile in purpura,  
ra, the old p.  
uerbe.*

73

He that of right or wrong did little passe,  
Meanes with her store his lacke there to supply,  
Nor once demaunded who or what she was,  
But takes away her bridle by and by:  
She skreecheth out, and weepes, and cries alas,  
Eu'n ready fearing hurt, vn hurt to die:  
Hereafter I shall tell you what became on her,  
Now for a farewell I do wish a shame on her.

*He comes so Ga-  
brina, 24. booke  
31. laste.*

74

This while *Orlando* had his girles mended,  
And new prouided what before did lacke,  
And mounting on his horse, a while attended  
To see if to the Pagan would come backe;  
But seeing that he came not, he intended  
To follow him, and find him by the tracket:  
But first (as one that well good manners knew)  
He bad *Zerbino* and his spouse adew.

75

Faine would *Zerbino* with this Earle haue gone,  
And take such part of eu'ry hap as he,  
But that the noble Earle hereof would none,  
And laid there could not more dishonor be,  
Then for a knight to shun to fight alone;  
Wherefore he would not thereunto agree:  
Thus *Zerbino* doth from this Earle depart,  
Poore *Isbell* she weepes for tender hart.

76

But ere they went, this Earle *Zerbino* praid,  
If first he hapt on *Mandricard*  
To tell him how long time for him he staid,  
And meant to seeke him out againe to fight,  
Now that his comming was so long delaid,  
He meant to Paris ward to go that night,  
To *Charls* his camp, where if he wold enquire of him  
At any time he should be sure to heare of him.

77

Thus much he praid, and thence away he went,  
To seeke out *Mandricard*, but found him not,  
And (for the day now more then halfe was spent,  
The Sunne and season waxing somewhat hot)  
A shadie groue he found, and there he ment  
To take some ease, but found small ease God wot:  
He thinks his thirst and heate a while to swage,  
But found that let him in worse heate and rage.

For



78

For looking al about the groue, behold  
In sundry pla s faire ingrau'n he sees,  
Hern e who oue he more esteemes then gold;  
By her owne han bar es of diuers trees,  
This was the place w e before I told,  
*Medore* vld to pay his surge ns fees,  
Where she, to boft of that t at was her shame,  
Vld oft to write hers and *Medore's* name.

79

*Of the use of  
writing in verses,  
all good Poets  
haue testified.  
Propertius, Vos  
et in seipſis, ſi  
les arbor  
amores.  
Arca-  
mata*

And then with true loue knots d pretie poses,  
(To shew how she to him by e was knyt)  
Her inward thoughts by outward words discloses,  
In her much loue to shew her little it.  
*Orlando* knew the hand, and yet supposes  
It was not she that had such posies writ;  
nd to beguile himſelte, tush, tush (quoth he)  
There may be more *Angelicas* then she.

80

*Epi.* Ye ut I know too well that pretie hand,  
ft hath she ſent me letters of her writing:  
Then he bethinks how she might vnderſtand  
His name and loue by that ſame new inditing,  
And how it might be done long time he ſcand,  
With this fond thought ſo fondly him delightung.  
Thus with ſmall hope, much feare, all malcontent,  
In theſe and ſuch conceits the time he ſpent.

81

the more he ſeekes out of his thought  
iue this fancie, ſtill it doth increate,  
s a bird that is with birdlime caught,  
th beate her wings, and ſtrives, and doth not ceaſe  
ntill ſhe hath her ſelfe all ouerwrought,  
And quite intangled in the ſlimie greate:  
Thus on went he, till him the way did bring  
Vnto a ſh adie caue and pleaſant ſpring.

82

This was a place, wherein about the reſt,  
This louing paire, leaving their homely hoſt,  
Spent time in ſports that may not be expreſt,  
Here in the parching heate they tarrid moſt,  
And here *Medore* (that thought himſelfe moſt bleſt)  
Wrote certaine verſes as i way of boſt:  
Which in his language d eſſe founded prittie,  
And thus I turne them to a h dittie.

83

Ye pleaſant lants, greer verbs, and waters faire,  
, and gratefull ſhadow mixt,  
Where ſweet *Angelica*, laughter and heire  
Of *Galafonne*, on whom in vaine were fixt  
Full many hearts, with me did oft repaire  
Alone, and naked lay mine armes betwixt;  
I poore *Medore*, can yeeld but praife and thanks,  
For theſe great pleaſures found amid your banks.

84

And pray each Lord whom *Cupid* holds in pray,  
Each knight, each dame, and eu'ry one beſide,  
Or gentle or meane ſort that paſſe this way,  
As fancie or his fortune ſhall him guide,  
That to the plants, herbs, ſpring, and caue he ſay,  
Long may the Sun and Moon maintaine your pride,  
And ſ faire crew of Nymphs make ſuch purueyance,  
As hither come no heards to your annoyance.

85

It written was there in th' Arabian toong,  
Which toong *Orlando* perfect vnderſtood,  
As hauing learnt it when he was but yong,  
And oft the ſkill thereof had done him good,  
But at this time it him ſo deeply ſtoong,  
It had bin well that he it neuer cou'd,  
And yet we ſee, to know men ſtill are glad,  
And yet we ſee much knowledge makes men mad.

Sentence.

86

Twife, thrife, yea ſiue times he doth reade the rime,  
And though he ſaw and knew the meaning plaine,  
Yet, that his loue was guiltie of ſuch crime,  
He will not let it ſinke into his braine,  
Oft he perused it, and eu'ry time  
It doth increaſe his ſharp tormenting paine,  
And ay the more he on the matter mused,  
The more his wits and ſenſes were confuſed.

87

Eu'n then was he of wit welnigh beſtraught,  
So quite he was giu'n ouer vnto griete,  
(And ſure if we beleue as prooſe hath taught,  
This torture is of all the reſt the chiefe)  
His ſprite was dead, his courage quaild with thought,  
He doth deſpaire and looke for no reliefe;  
And ſorrow did his ſenſes ſo ſurprile,  
That words his toong, and teares forſooke his eyes.

Sentence.

88

The raging pang remained ſtill within,  
That would haue burſt out all at once too faſt:  
Eu'n ſo we ſee the water tarry in  
A bottle little mouthd, and big in waſt,  
That though you topſie turny turne the brim,  
The liquor bides behind with too much haſt,  
And with the ſtriving oft is in ſuch taking,  
As ſcant a man can get it out with ſhaking.

Simile.

89

At laſt he comes vnto himſelfe anew,  
And in his mind another way doth frame,  
That that which there was written was not trew;  
But writ of ſpite his Ladie to defame,  
Or to that end, that he the ſame might vew,  
And to his heart with iealouſie inflame:  
Well be't who liſt (quoth he) I ſee this clearly,  
He hath her hand reſembled paſſing nearly.

90

With this ſmall hope, with this poore little ſparke,  
He doth ſome deale reuiue his troubled ſprite,  
And for it was now late, and waxed darke,  
He ſeekes ſome place where he may lie that night,  
At laſt he heares a noiſe of dogs that barke,  
He ſmels ſome ſmoke, and lees ſome candle light,  
He takes his Inne, with will to ſleepe, not eate,  
As ſild with griefe, and with none other meate.

*Vigil with the  
like. Eu'n is  
deſcribed w. h  
more particulars  
Et iam ſumma  
procul villam  
caminia ſumat.*

91

But lo his hap was at that houſe to hoſt,  
Where faire *Angelica* had layne before,  
And where her name on eu'ry doore and poſt,  
With true loue knots was ioyned to *Medore*,  
That knot his name whom he deteſted moſt,  
Was in his eye and thought ſtill euermore:  
He dares not aſke nor once the matter tuch,  
For knowing mo e of that he knowes too much.

Q 11)



Looke of this in  
the Allusion.

92  
But vaine it was himselfe so to beguile,  
For why his host vnasked by and by,  
That saw his guest sit there so sad the while,  
And thinks to put him from his dumps thereby,  
Beginneth plaine without all fraud or guile,  
Without conicealing truth or adding lie,  
To tell that tale to him without regard,  
Which diuers had before with pleasure heard.

93  
As thus, how at *Angelicas* request  
He holpe vnto his house to bring *Medore*,  
Who then was sorely wounded in his brest,  
And she with surgery did heale his sore:  
But while with her owne hands the wound she drest,  
Blind *Cupid* wounded her as much or more,  
That when her skill and herbs had cur'd her patient,  
Her curelesse wound in loue made her vnpatient.

Sennence.

94  
So that, admit she were the greatest *Queene*  
Of fame, and liuing in those Easter parts,  
Yet so with fancie she was ouerseene,  
To marry with a page of meane defarts;  
Thus loue (quoth he) will haue his godhead seene,  
In famous *Queens*, and highest *Princes* harts:  
This said (to end the tale) he shewd the ieuell  
That she had giu'n him, which *Orlando* knew well.

A phrase of  
speech used in  
the *Latin*:  
*Injicere securim*.

95  
This tale, and chiefly this same last conclusion,  
Was eu'n a hatchet to cut of all hope,  
When loue had after many a vaine collusion,  
Now for his farewell lent him such a rope  
To hang himselfe, and drowne him in confusion,  
Yet faine he would denie his sorrow scope,  
And though a while to shew it he forbears,  
It breaketh out at last in sighs and teares.

96  
And as it were inforst he giues the raine  
To raging griefe vpon his bed alone,  
His eyes do shed a very showre of raine,  
With many a scalding sigh and bitter grone,  
He slept as much as if he had then laine  
Vpon a bed of thornes, and stufte with stone.  
And as he lay thereon and could not rest him,  
The bed it selfe gaue matter to molest him.

Vulture is that  
bird that we call  
*Rauen*: but there  
are diuers kinds  
of them.

97  
Ah wretch I am (thus to himselfe he said)  
Shall I once hope to take repose and rest me  
In that same house? yea eu'n in that same bed  
Where my vngratefull loue so leudly drest me?  
Nay, let me first an hundred times be ded,  
First wolues deuoure, and vultures shall digest me.  
Straight vp he starts, and on he puts his clothes,  
And leaues the house, so much the bed he lothes.

98  
He leaues his host, nor once doth take his leaue,  
He far'd so ill, he bids them not farewell,  
He leaues the towne, his seruants he doth leaue,  
He rides, but where he rides he cannot tell.  
And when alone himselfe he doth perceaue  
To weepe and waile, nay eu'n to howle and yell,  
He doth not cease to giue his griefe a vent,  
That inwardly so sore did him torment.

99

The day the night to him were both alike,  
Abroade vpon the cold bare earth he lies,  
No sleepe, no food he takes, nor none would seeke,  
All sustenance he to himselfe denies.  
Thus he began, and thus the weeke,  
And he himselfe doth maruell, whence his eyes  
Are fed so long with such a spring of water,  
And to himselfe thus reasons on the matter.

100

No, no, these be no teares that now I shed,  
These be no teare nor can teares run to rise,  
But fire of frenz drawth vp to my head,  
My vitall hum that should keepe my life;  
This streame will neuer cease till I be dead,  
Then welcome death, and end my fatall strife:  
No comfort in this life my wo can minish,  
But thou who canst both life and sorrow finish.

101

These are not sighs, for sighs some respite haue,  
My gripes, my pangs, no respite do permit,  
The blindfold boy made me a seeing slaue,  
When from her eyes my heart he first did hit.  
Now all inflam'd, I burne, I rage and raue,  
And in the midst of flame consume no whit:  
Loue sitting in my heart a master crewell,  
Blowes with his wings, feeds with his will the fewell.

102

I am not I, the man that erst I was,  
*Orlando*, he is buried and dead,  
His most vngratefull loue (ah foolish lasse)  
Hath kild *Orlando*, and cut off his head:  
I am his ghost that vp and downe must passe,  
In this tormenting hell for euer led  
To be a fearfull spectacle and a iust,  
To all such fooles as put in loue their trust.

103

Thus wandring still in wayes that haue no way,  
He hapt againe to light vpon the caue,  
Where (in remembrance of their pleasant play)  
*Medoro* did that epigram ingraue.  
To see the stones againe, his woes display,  
And her ill name, and his ill hap depraue,  
Did on the iudgement sence inrage,  
With hate, with with reuenge and rage.

Straightways he draweth forth his fatall blade  
And hewes the stones, to heauy  
Accursed was that fountaine, caue and shade,  
The arbor and the flowres and eu'ry tree:  
*Orlando* of all places hauocke made,  
Where he thole names together ioyn'd may see,  
Yea to the spring he did perpetuall hurt,  
By filling it with leaues, boughs, stones and durt.

105

And hauing done this foolish franticke feate,  
He layes him downe all weary on the ground,  
Distemperd in his bodie with much heate,  
In mind with paines that no tongue can expound,  
Three dayes he doth not sleepe, nor drinke, nor eate,  
But lay with open eyes as in aound,  
The fourth with rage, and not with reason wak'd,  
He rents his clothes, and runs about starke naked.

qui p...  
rem, &c. and af  
ter he saith, Non  
ego sed sensus  
vapulas umbra  
mea.

Ovid describing  
the death of *Clis-  
tia*:

— Sub iugum nocte  
dixit,  
Sed et humi in da-  
natus in om-  
nibus.  
T'ergo, not. 7. luce-  
at  
cibus  
Kore vero, la-  
chryma, & fuit  
scintilla p...

His



106

His helmet her he flings, his poulderns theare;  
 He calts awa his curats and his shield:  
 His sword he trows away, he cares not wheare,  
 He scatters all his armor in the field:  
 No ragge about his dorch beare,  
 As might fro cold or might. om shame him shield,  
 And laue he left behind this tall blade,  
 No doubt he had therwith great haucke made.

107

But his surpassing force did so exceed,  
 All common men, that neither word nor bill,  
 Nor any other weapon he did need,  
 Meere strength suffild him to do the will,

He rootes vp trees as one would root a weed:  
 And eu'n as birders laying nets with skill,  
 Pare slender thornes away with easie strokes,  
 So he did play with ashes, elmes and okes.

108

The heardmen and the shepheards that did heare,  
 The hideous noite and vnacquainted sound,  
 With feare and wonder great approached neare,  
 To see, and know, what was hereof the ground.  
 But now I must cut off this treatise heare,  
 Lest this my booke do grow beyond his bound;  
 And if you take some pleasure in this text,  
 I will go forward with it in the next.

Simile.

In Bradamants sorow for want of Rogero, we may note how it falleth out many times, that ouer great desire of re-  
 uenge, worketh to our selues as great displeasure, as we wished to our enemies. In Rodomont, that would not take the  
 Hippalca, till he knew that a braue chāpion was the owner thereof; we may note, that though wrong be in deed  
 a thing reprobable, to whom soeuer it is done, yet it is far more tollerable, or at least excusable, to be done to ones equal,  
 then to one or inferior persons. In Zerbinos happie deliuerance, from a shameful death, by Orlandos meanes, we may  
 observe that which can neuer be too much observed, namely how diuine prouidence neuer failes the innocent. In all the  
 proceedings of Zerbinio and Isabella, a patterne might be taken of gratitude, of constantnesse, and of noble and princely  
 inclination.

Morall.

Of Hercules and Antheus, though the originall it selfe seeme but fabulous, yet thus it is written, that they two wra-  
 ling, Hercules perceiued that Antheus strength increased by falling to the ground, and therefore to take him from his  
 force, he tooke him vp in his armes, and so held him from the ground till he had vtterly vanquished him. Plutarke in the  
 life of Sertorius saith this Antheus was threescore cubits high.

Historie.

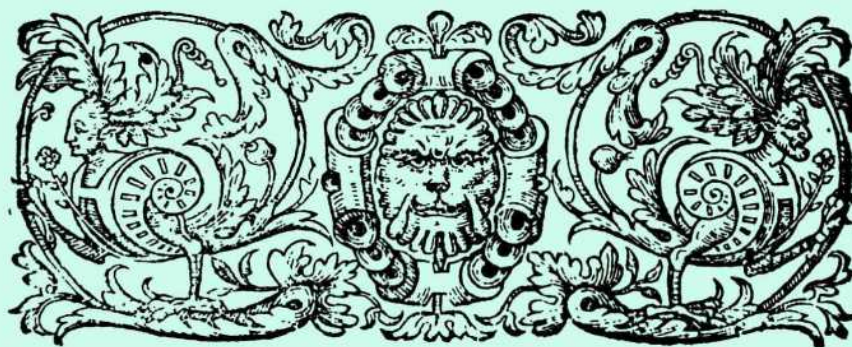
In Astolfo, that put off his armor, and gaue away his spare horse, and all his superfluous weapons, when he was to  
 ke the Griffith horse, and fly about the world, may be gathered a good allegoricall sence, or rather it may be called  
 icall; namely that he that will betake himselfe to so high a profession, as to teach and studie the high mysteries of  
 ligion, and liue in contemplation of heavenly things, should cast away the burdenous clog of all worldly in-  
 lices, and to vse the phrase of our Sauour himselfe, (leane father, wife and children) and whatsoeuer else may be  
 erance to our proceedings in that kind: but this discourse is fit for another place, and my selfe also handled it  
 more amply in a little dialogue of mariage that I made in mine young dayes, and therefore here I will cut it off for auoi-  
 ding tediousnesse. Concerning Orlandos madnesse there is a notable allegorie to be gathered thereof, of which (because I  
 now haue taken vpon me to go thorow with the whole worke,) I will deferre to speake till I come to restoring of his wit  
 againe: which I count more proper for this subiect.

Allegoric.

But in the manner of his falling mad, my author hath (in mine opinion) shewd himselfe his crafts master, setting it  
 out, verie pathetically, or (to speake English) passionately. Furder there is in it a notable Peripetia, which signifies the  
 agnition, or taking knowledge of a sudden mutation of fortune, either good or bad to a contrarie extreame: of which kind  
 there be many examples, but specially one, to which mine author seemes to allude. Namely that of Oedipus in Sopho-  
 cles; for when a messenger came to him, to tell him how by the death of Polybus he was elected king of Corinth, Oedi-  
 us refused to come thither, for feare of committing incest with his owne mother (of which the Oracle had foretold him)  
 the messenger thinking to clear him of that scruple; vnadvisedly told him whose sonne he was (which he knew not be-  
 fore) and thereby now knew certaintie, that, which before he mistrusted, namely that he had laine with his mother, wher-  
 upon in deed he fell starke mad, and was after recured as appeares in the storie.

Allusion.

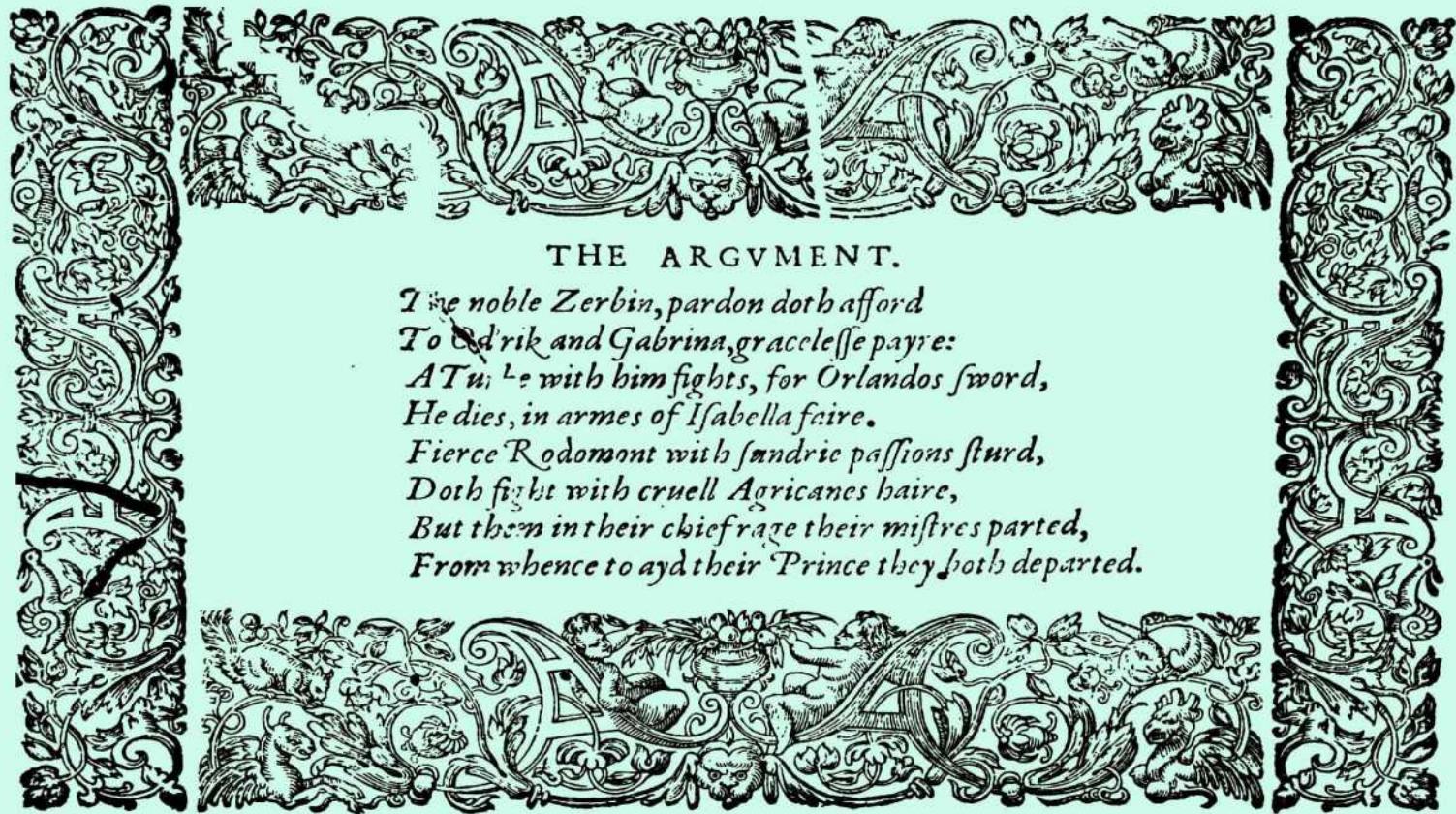
Here end the first xxiiij. bookes of Ariosto.











## THE ARGUMENT.

The noble Zerbin, pardon doth afford  
 To Adrik and Gabrina, gracelesse payre:  
 At which with him fights, for Orlandos sword,  
 He dies, in armes of Isabella faire.  
 Fierce Rodomont with sandrie passions sturd,  
 Doth fight with cruell Agricanes haire,  
 But then in their chiefrage their mistres parted,  
 From whence to ayd their Prince they both departed.

Sentence.

Sent: Virgil  
 faith of Dido.  
 Prius infelix  
 Dido totaq; va-  
 gasur  
 Urbis furens.  
 Sentence.

Sentence.

Simile.



<sup>1</sup>  
 Ho so shall set on Cupids  
 snares his foote,  
 Must seeke to draw backe,  
 least it be caught,  
 And madnes meer, in loue  
 to ouershoot,  
 The foole hath felt, the  
 wise hath euer taught,  
 And though in all alike, it  
 take not root,

Yet all shall finde that loue's a thing of naught,  
 For sure, it is an open signe of madnes,  
 To haue an others pleasure breed thy sadnes.

Now though effects proue alike,  
 Yet all are mad in sort, all astray,  
 As in a wildernes where men do seeke,  
 A more and more in seeking loose their way,  
 Wherefore e no man this my wish mislike,  
 In whom fond loue, shall carie long the sway,  
 I wish for due reward, such doting dolts,  
 Like wilfull prisoners, store of iron bolts.

<sup>3</sup>  
 Some man perhap will say, what soft my frend,  
 You spie our faults, in your owne errors blind;  
 And true it is, yet speake I to this end,  
 To bring vs both into a better mind.  
 As for my selfe I hope er long to mend,  
 And from these bands, in time my selfe vnwind:  
 Though it hath tane in me such root, I prooue it,  
 As hard tis on the sudden to remoue it.

<sup>4</sup>  
 I shewd you in the booke that went before,  
 By what mishap Orlando waxed mad,

And lost not onely care of vertues lore,  
 But reason, wit, and all the sence he had:  
 His armor he disperst, his cloths he tore,  
 The verie cloths, wherewith his corps was clad:  
 And though he wanderd, all vnarmd and naked,  
 Yet at his presence, all the cuntry quaked.

5

The countymen that heard the noise aloof,  
 Of trees, that with their fall, made no small cracke:  
 Came neare, and saw by plaine and open proof,  
 His monstrous strength, by their so monstrous wracke,  
 And straight they found it best for their behoof,  
 With all the hast they could, to get them backe,  
 For thote he caught he did this lesson teach,  
 To keep a loof from out a mad mans reach.

Sentence.

6

Away they fled, but he pursu'd so fast,  
 That some he caught, and some surpris'd with feare,  
 Stood still (as oft it happens) all agast,  
 Not knowing how to hide themselves nor wheare:  
 Some other ploughmen seeing what had past,  
 Thought it but little wit to tarie theare,  
 But clim'd (for feare) their houses and their churches  
 Not traueling strength, of elmes, of beech, & burches

7

Among the rest he takes one by his heele.  
 And with his head knocks out anothers braine,  
 Which caused both of them such paine to feelee,  
 As till dooms day they neuer shall complaine;  
 Another with his fist he made to reele,  
 Till paine it selfe made him past sence of paine,  
 And when the men fled all away affeard,  
 Then with like rage he set vpon their heard.

R ij



8

The voice of men, the bellowings of beast,  
About the cuntry ray'd so great a sound,  
As might haue well bene heard fūe leags at least,  
And all the people straight were rayled round;  
Each man prouiding (as he could) the best,  
And for the present time might then be found,  
With bows, with bills, with staues, & pikes, & prongs  
To be reueug'd, on these outrageous wrongs.

*Semile.*

Looke how the waues are driu'n by westerne blast,  
And one and one, do rise still more and more,  
Vntill their force so great be at the last,  
They sprinkle all the banks, and beat the shore,  
So now these cuntry folke came in so fast,  
By two, and three, a dozen and a score:  
Till at the last they grew so great a number,  
Their verie multitude themselues did cumber.

10

But when they saw their force could do no good,  
And that his skin so strange protection had,  
That though they smot thereon they drew no blood  
They thought, y they might worse be thought then  
To fight with one that all them so withstood, (mad,  
Wherefore they parted home dismaid and sad.  
The madman went vnto the nearest village,  
Although he cared not for spoile or pillage.

11

And finding no man there, nor small nor great,  
For all were fled away from thence for aw;  
As famine forst him, he sought out some meat,  
And were it fine or coarse, the first he saw,  
In greedie sort he doth deuoure and eat,  
Not caring if it rosted were or raw,  
And when thus homely he had tane repast,  
About the cuntry bedlemlike he past.

12

He scares both man and beast without regard,  
He takes i swift gotes and fallow Deare in chase,  
Sometimes a Lion fierce, a bore, a pard,  
He kils by strength and swittnes of his pafe.  
At last he came where as a knight did guard,  
The passage of a bridge, and by the place,  
Had built a towre of no small worke and charge,  
As shalbe shoud hereafter more at large.

*He returneth to  
Orlando in the  
29. booke the 41.  
chaffe.*

13

Now must I tell what hap Zerbino had,  
Who with faire *Ifabell* togither rode,  
A long that place where this good Earle fell mad.  
But by the way, these two made some abode,  
Where they beheld two men in armor clad,  
That driue a horse that bare a wofull lode,  
A knight a prisner to Zerbino knowne,  
That had beene once a seruant of his owne.

14

This prisner *Oderik* of Biskie hight,  
In whom the Prince had put so great a trust,  
He made chiefe choise of him, as of a knight,  
That of his promise would be firme and iust.  
But he (fond beast) esteeming small delight,  
And fruitlesse hope, of his vnbridled lust,  
Above his sacred oth and promitt fealtie,  
Would haue defloured her against all lealtie.

*Oderik taken pri  
soner & brought  
to Zerbino.*

15

Faire *Ifabell* by hap eu'n then was tellin,  
How in the boat she desperately was aued:  
And hauing scapt the stormie sea an e g,  
How trecherous she thimselfe behaued,  
That (had not outla thereabout bene dwelling)  
He would haue forst er, vnto that he craued,  
And eu'n as these, or fuch words she sed,  
She saw the man she sp of captiue led.

Those two that led the icked *O'drik* tide,  
Knew well their rd when as they came in vew,  
Both by the Lady, that was by his side,  
And by the rampant Lyon red of hew,  
Borne by the Prince, not for a shew of pride,  
But his as from his predecessors dew,  
They light, and with a courtise to the ground.  
And cap in hand, salute their Lord thus found.

17

Zerbino knew and cald them both by name,  
*Corebo* tone, *Almonio* tother hight,  
Which two with *Ifabell* from Bayon came,  
In conduct of that most vnworthy wight.  
And straight *Almonio* thus his speech doth frame,  
My Lord (said he) I shall to you recite,  
Some little part, of that vnpleasant story,  
That till this houre, had made my heart full sory.

18

Sith (thankt be God) this Lady here doth liue,  
Who felt these storms, and therein chiefly fr  
I know that she thereof could notice giue,  
And hath er this to you the same imparted;  
I onely shall declare what did me grieue,  
And what had hapned, since from her I parted,  
What time by this vile wretch is lewd intent,  
For horse and men to *Rochell* I was sent.

19

And as I went, so backe I turnd in hast,  
With men and horse as good as I could get,  
To seeke them out mine eies about I cast,  
But yet mine eyes on them I could not set,  
Their tracke I found, and following that full fast,  
It brought me to a woo' where as I met,  
My fellow *Coreb*, then and groning,  
This caitife cursing himselfe bemoning.

20

He told me how, he fighting in nce  
Of *Ifabella*, was so sorely wounded,  
That from that place he had not sturred fence,  
And how with bleeding much, he oft had ounded,  
At which report I tooke so great offence,  
That in my wits I was welnie confounded.  
And to reuenge, my heart so sharpe was whet,  
That *Corebs* danger quite I did forget.

21

But when in vaine this wretch I long had sought,  
To *Coreb* I returned backe againe,  
Who was so weake, and low by bleeding brought,  
That scant the life did in his limbs remaine.  
For which his wofull state, I tooke great thought,  
As one that deemed it fitter to ordaine,  
Some Priests and Friers, buriall to procure him,  
Then Surgeons or Physicians that might cure him.

Yet



22  
Yet him vnto the towne at last I caried,  
Wherby helpe our friendly host procured,  
It pleased God, *rebo* not miscaried,  
But of his griuoe as soundly cured;  
Which done, no longer in those parts we taried,  
But being there by sundry men assured,  
That *Odrick* in *Alfonso's* court was biding,  
We thither went to hear of him some tiding.

23  
And there I challengd *Odrick* face to face,  
And by the noble iustice of the King,  
And chiefly (as I deeme) by Gods great grace,  
That onely rules and gouernes eu'ry thing,  
I tooke him prisoner in the present place,  
From whence aliue I did him hither bring,  
Why that king that heard his great offence  
Did graunt vs libertie to bring him thence.

*Great praise in  
a Prince to pro-  
tect the innocent  
but not malefa-*

24  
I might haue slaine him, as he well deserued,  
But yet I chused rather of the twaine,  
Vnto your doome to haue his life reserued,  
That you might point him death with worthy paine,  
And much I ioice that lucke so well hath serued,  
That we so safe haue found your grace againe,  
And much more I reioyce, if much more may be,  
At health and welfare of this noble Ladie.

25  
Much *Almonio* said, and then did cease,  
Expecting what *Zerbino* would reply,  
So all the while stood still and held his peace,  
And viewd the prisoner with an heedfull eye,  
And much it did his griefe of mind increase,  
To think a friend could stray so farre awry.  
Then sighing deepe; what *Odrick* is this true,  
Wherewith (quoth he) *Almonio* chargeth you?

*Sentence.*

26  
The caitiue, humbly prostrate on the ground,  
Forgiue my Lord (said he) your seruants crime,  
What wight on earth can voyd of fault be found?  
What Saint is such as doth not sinne sometime?  
Twene good and bad this difference sole is found,  
That good men sin but eeld, and mend betime,  
The bad man (making upl one nor question)  
Yeelds wilfully to eu'ry suggestion.

*Sentence.*

*Sentence.*

27  
The trespasse had committed,  
And I the same ad wittingly betraid,  
I graunt such fault were not to be remitted,  
But if I had with force bene ouerlaid,  
Then sure I am my case would haue bene pittyd,  
At least no sinne should to my charge be laid,  
For when the enemy is once the stronger,  
Tis vaine to make resistance any longer.

*Simile.*

*Sentence.*

28  
Eu'n so my Lord, my faith I ought to guard,  
No other then a fortresse or a hold,  
Put in my charge with carefull watch and ward,  
As long as strength will serue me it to hold:  
And so I kept my faith with due regard,  
Nor was I any way to be controld,  
Vntill at last I was so strong assailed,  
That faith gaue place, and fancie then preuailed.

29  
Thus *Odrick* said, and what he said beside,  
I doubt it somewhat tedious were to tell,  
As namely, none so great assault could bide,  
That loue all other passions doth excell,  
But sure if it were euer plainly tride,  
That humble speech doth often wrath expell:  
Now *Odrick* found of lowly words the fruit,  
That holp him to obtaine so hard a suit.

30  
*Zerbino* stood a while in mind confused,  
To punish or to pardon his offence,  
Sometime his thoughts all clemencie refused,  
Sometime the loue and seruice done long since,  
A swagd his wrath, and tothers fault excused,  
And mou'd him with his folly to dispence:  
And still as rage did kindle fire of wrath,  
To quench it mercie store of water hath.

*Sentence.*

31  
Now while in this same doubt *Zerbino* staid,  
Behold by hap *Gabrina* there was brought,  
She that of late had this good Prince betraid,  
And had to him so great a danger wrought;  
Her horte that heard where other horses naid,  
Came to the noise, as nature had them taught,  
Against her will, she wanting force to sway him,  
And hauing lost the raines, wherewith to stay him.

32  
The beastly wretch cride helpe, and out alas,  
While thus her horse ran ouer fields and lands,  
But when the Scottish Prince saw who she was,  
And how she thither came he vnderstands,  
He gaue God thanks that so had brought to passe,  
To giue those two at once into his hands,  
Which two, for their misdeeds about the rest,  
He had great cause to malice and detest.

33  
And after he had made a little pause,  
Vnto his seruants turning thus he said,  
Sirs, *Odrick* shall not die, although by lawes  
His fact deserues no lesse vprightly waide,  
For sith he saith affection was the cause,  
Content I am, on loue the fault be laid,  
The sinne to which a man by loue is driuen,  
So much the rather ought to be forgiuen.

*Sentence.*

34  
The force of strong affection hath ere this  
Distemperd, yea and sometime ouerthrowne  
A wiser and a staidier head then his,  
As is to me by mine experience knowne,  
And that here in he did his dutie misse,  
I must confesse, the fault was part mine owne,  
That gaue to him such charge, and did not know  
How quickly flaming heate can kindle tow.

*Sentence.*

35  
Then to the caitiue *Odrick* thus he spake,  
Here I forgiue thee, and do thee enlarge,  
But yet the penance I will haue thee take,  
Is this, to take this woman in thy charge,  
And twear to me thou shalt her not forsake,  
For one whole yeare, but this thine oth discharge,  
And that thou shalt if any would offend her,  
Do thy deuoir, and vnto death defend her.

*Odricks punish-  
ment.*



36

This was the punishment on him he layd,  
And certainly this same had bene enow,  
If so the circumstance were duly wayd,  
And *Odericke* had right performd his vow.  
For why so many men she had betrayd,  
And done such sinnes euen from her youth till now,  
That wherefoere they had together traueled,  
In her defence he must at last be graueled.

37

Thus *Zerbino* let this wicked couple go,  
And thinks sufficiently to plague them both,  
But sweares if euer he did hap to know,  
That he therein should violate his troth,  
His flesh should serue as feeding for the crow,  
A fit reward for such as breake their oth.  
Thus went this honest couple thence together,  
Lurking in corners, wandering here and thether.

38

But what in th'end of these same two became,  
I know not, and mine author doth not write,  
I onely heard a speech, or flying fame,  
That when they once were quite from *Zerbino's* fight,  
*Odericke* (to shun the quarrels and the shame,  
That by her companie on him might light)  
Did hang her vp, and after in short space,  
*Almonio* made him runne the selfe same race.

Gabrinas death.

39

The Prince that faine some tidings would haue heard  
Of that Earle Palladine, who tother day,  
Fought hand to hand with loftie *Mandricard*,  
Vntill his rainlesse horse bare him away,  
Doth traueled on his way to Paris ward,  
Though faire and soft, and lingring by the way,  
And his two seruants he doth send before,  
And kept with him his Ladie and no more.

40

They rode not farre but that they found the caue,  
And that same pleasant arbor and the spring,  
At which *Medoro* vsd such sport to haue,  
With that faire daughter of the Indian king;  
Where she their names together did ingraue,  
All tide with true loue knots (a wondrous thing)  
They looke, and see the stones, the words and letters  
All cut and mangled in a thousand fitters.

41

And as they musd hereon, they might espie  
*Orlandos* armor and his famous blade,  
Hight *Durindana* on the ground to lie,  
That sword that first for *Hector* had bin made,  
They saw where *Brigliador* was feeding by  
Vpon the grasse amid the pleasant shade:  
This sight did make them both exceeding sad,  
Yet little did they deeme that th'Earle was mad.

Hector.

42

Had they but seene one little drop of blood,  
They would haue surely thought he had bin slaine,  
But while in this most carefull doubt they stood,  
Behold there came a country silly swaine,  
That with no little speed ran through the wood,  
And scapt the mad mans fury with great paine;  
He told them how a man bestraught of fences,  
Had done these outrages and great offences.

43

And further gaue them perfect information,  
And told each circumstance at the true  
*Zerbino* standeth still in admiration,  
And as the manner is, he blest,  
And with great grieve mind and lamentation,  
He takes the sword and armor, and the rest,  
And *Isabella* helpeth them to gather,  
And so they lay them on a heape together.

44

This while by hap came by faire *Fiordeliege*,  
Who (as I told before) with pensue hart,  
Went to seeke out her loued Lord and Liege,  
I meane *Orlandos* friend, King *Brandimart*,  
Who leauing Paris in the wolull siege,  
To seeke *Orlando* did from thence depart,  
Till *Atlant* to that cage him did intice,  
Which he had fram'd by magicall deuice.

Fiordeliege.

45

The which enchantment being now defeated,  
By good *Aylolfus* valie and his skill,  
And all the knights as I before repeated,  
At libertie to go which way they will,  
King *Brandimart*, though much in mind he freated,  
To thinke how long in vaine he had stood still,  
Backe vnto Paris ward his course he turned,  
Yet missing her, the way that he returned.

Aylolf  
this is the  
Booke

46

Thus (as I said) faire *Fiordeliege* by chance,  
Saw much of that which hapt, and heard the rest,  
How that same worthy Palladine of France,  
With inward gieve of mind and thought opprest,  
Or by some other great and strange mischance,  
Went like a man with some ill sprite possesst,  
And she likewise enquiring of the peasant,  
Heard all the circumstance, a tale vnpleasant.

47

*Zerbino* being farre from any towne,  
Hangs all *Orlandos* armor on a Pine,  
Like to a \* Penon, and lest any clowne  
Or peasant vile should take a thing so fine,  
He writes vpon the tree, Let none take downe  
This armour of *Orlando* alladine;  
As who should seeke to man attempt it,  
*Orlando* would ere cause him repen it.

At the buriall  
of Knights of the  
order, or great  
persons, they hang  
up their armor  
with a sword &  
a head peece.

48

And hauing brought this worthy  
And ready now to take his iourney hence,  
Fierce *Mandricard* hapt thither to descend,  
And when he saw the tree, he askt of whence  
Those weapons were, which knowne, he doth intend  
To take away good *Durindana* thence,  
He steps vnto the tree and takes the sword,  
Nor so content, he adds this spietull word.

Mandricard.

49

Ah sir (quoth he) this hap doth make me glad,  
My claime vnto this sword is not vnknowne,  
And though before I no possession had,  
Yet now I lawfully teize on mine owne:  
Alas poore foole, and doth he faine him mad  
And hath away his sword and armor throwne,  
Because he was not able to maintaine it,  
And was afeard that I by force would gaine it:



50

*Zerbino* crieth 't, what? peace for shame,  
Take not his sword, or thinke not I will beare it,  
If by me coate of *Hector* to you came,  
You stole it, and vnder to weare it:  
Tush (quoth the Pagan) I will beare that blame,  
As for your threatening, do not thinke I feare it:  
Thus tones sharpe answer, to others sharpe replying,  
Made them to fall to termes of flat defying.

51

The combat be-  
tweene *Mandri-  
c* & *Zerbino*.

And ther shewing signes of plaine hostilitie,  
Prepares the tother fiercely to invade,  
*Zerbino* with his skill and great agilitie,  
His partie good against the Pagan made,  
And voided all the blowes with much facilitie,  
Though hauing great disuantage in the blade,  
Against that armor massie so and strong,  
That in times past to *Hector* did belong.

52

Looke how a Grend that finds a sturdie Bore,  
Amid the field far straying from the heard,  
Doth runne about, behind him and before,  
Because of his sharpe tusks he is afraid.  
So *Zerbino* that had seene oft heretofore  
That blade, and of the force thereof had heard,  
With heedfull eye to shun the blowes he watched,  
Because he was in weapons ouermatched.

53

Thus warily this worthy Prince did fight,  
Although by heedfull skill he scaped oft  
The furious bloes of this Tartarian knight,  
Yet lo, at last one blow came from aloft,  
And *Durindan* so heauie did alight,  
As pierced through the hard vnto the soft,  
A finger deepe, and went in length a span,  
Downe from the place where first the wound began.

54

The Prince so earnest was, he felt no smart,  
Yet ran the blood out of the brest amaine,  
And of his curats all the former part  
With crimson streame of blood it did distaine:  
Saw he seene her hand that to mine hart  
Bene a cause of anguish and much paine,  
When she a purple seam where hath drawne,  
In siluer kirtle, or in sleeue lawne.

Simile.

but yet did greater show,  
Which sight faire *Isabella* much amated,  
The Prince that seemed not the same to know,  
With force increased rather then abated,  
Vpon the Pagans brow gave such a blow,  
As would no doubt haue made him cheekt & mated  
Saw that (as he to you before rehearst)  
His armor was not easie to be pearst.

56

The blow was such as caused him to reele,  
And on his stirrops staggering he stood,  
Had not his armor bene of passing Steele.  
The blow would sure haue entred to the blood,  
The grievous paine that he thereof did feele,  
Did put him in so fierce a raging mood,  
So that for all *Zerbino*s skill and sleight,  
He wounded him in places seu'n or eight.

57

Which when his louing *Isabella* saw,  
She went to *Doralice*, and her doth pray,  
The fury of her husband to withdraw,  
And ioine with her to part the bloody fray,  
Who both because she was in feare and aw,  
Left yet the Prince her spouse indanger may,  
And for of nature kind she was and meeke,  
Of that good motion she doth not mislike.

58

Thus those two Ladies this fierce battell parted,  
In which the prince receiued many a wound,  
Though being (as he was) most valiant harted,  
He neuer gaue the Pagan inch of ground:  
From thence each couple presented departed,  
Fierce *Mandricard* to pagan campe was bound,  
To Paris ward the Prince, but driu'n to stay,  
By reason of his bleeding by the way.

He turnes to  
*Mandricard* in  
this booke 76. staffe.

59

Dame *Fiordeliege* that stood this while aloofe,  
And saw how *Mandricard* preuailed had,  
And how the Prince had fought with euill prooffe,  
Departed thence all sorrowfull and sad,  
Reuiling *Mandricard* with iust reprooffe,  
That of this euill gotten sword was glad,  
And wished that her husband *Brandimart*,  
Had present bin to take *Zerbino*s part.

60

But as she traueled homeward to the campe,  
She saw the noble *Palladine* of France,  
Not like himselfe, but of another stampe,  
Besmeard and nakt as antiks wont to dance:  
Quite was extinguished the shining lampe,  
Of vertue bright that did his name aduance:  
This sight in *Fiordeliege* much sorrow bred,  
But tell me now how good *Zerbino* sped.

He returnes to  
*Fiordeliege* and  
*Orlando* both, in  
the 29 booke. 44.  
staffe.

61

Who on his way with painfull steps proceeding,  
With *Isabella* onely and no more,  
His former taken hurts still freshly bleeding,  
Which now with cold were stiffe and waxed sore,  
And yet this griefe in him the rest exceeding,  
To thinke that sword of which I spake before,  
Should mauler him, be by a Turke posselt,  
I say this grieu'd him more then all the rest.

62

Now gan the dreadfull pangs of death assaile him,  
So great a streame of blood his wound had draind,  
His eyes were dim, his speech began to faile him,  
Strong hart to yeeld to weake limbs was constrained:  
What can poore *Isabella* do but waile him?  
She blam'd the heau'ns and fates that had ordaind  
Her to escape such dangers and such harmes,  
And now to haue her deare die in her armes.

63

*Zerbino* though he scant could draw his breath,  
Yet hearing her lamenting in such fashion,  
Doth ope his closed lips, and thus he seath,  
Both shewing then, and mouing much compassion:  
So might I (my deare loue) eu'n after death,  
Be deare to thee as I do feele great passion,  
To think when as my death fro hence shal reauue me.  
Alone in wo and danger I shall leaue thee.

R. iij



64

Might I haue left thee in some safer place,  
I should esteeme my death a blessed hap,  
And that the heau'ns had giu'n me speciall grace,  
To end my life in thy beloued lap,  
Now greiues it me to thinke of thine hard case,  
In what a world of woes I thee shall wrap,  
When I must die, and leaue thee here alone,  
And none to helpe thy harme or heare thy mone.

65

To this the wofull *Isabell* replies,  
With watred eyes, and heart surpris'd with anguish,  
Her face to his, and ioyning her faire eyes  
To his that like a witherd rose did languish,  
No thought (said she) my deare in thee arise  
For me, for know I neither do, nor can wish  
Thee to suruiue, I will be thine for euer,  
Life could not, and death shall not vs disseuer.

66

*Horace hath the like to this.*  
*Ab te, me e si partem animae rapit.*  
*Maturior vis, quid moror altera?*

No sooner shall thy breath thy brest forsake,  
But I will follow thee I care not whither,  
Griefe or this sword of me an end shall make,  
And if some stranger after shall come hither,  
I hope of vs such pittie he will take,  
To lay our bodies in one graue together:  
This said, about his necke her armes she clasped,  
And drawes the fainting breath that oft he gasped.

67

The Prince inforcing his foreseebled voyce,  
Said thus, I thee coniure my sole delight,  
By that deare loue that made me first thy choyce,  
And thee from native soyle to take thy flight,  
If euer in my loue thou didst reioyce,  
If to commaund thee I haue any right,  
That thou still liue (as long as God shall graunt thee)  
And not despaire how euer fortune daunt thee,

68

Th'almightie God, from danger and from ill,  
Hath hitherto, and will (I trust) thee saue;  
Eu'n as he sent that noble Earle to kill  
Those caitiues that did keepe thee in their caue,  
And sau'd thee from the Biskins wicked will,  
First hauing thee, preferu'd from salt sea waue,  
Liue then my deare, and trust in him aboue,  
And while you liue be mindfull of my loue.

69

These latter words his lips had scanty past,  
When death vnto his heart was softly crept;  
And as the lampe go'th out when oyle doth wast,  
So quietly the noble *Zerbino* slept:  
What tongue can tell how fore she was agast,  
How she lamented, wailed, mourn'd and wept?  
To her owne eyes and faire haire doing force,  
When as she saw her deare a senselesse corse.

70

And griefe had set her in so great a rage,  
With *Zerbins* sword she thinks an end to make  
Of her owne life, her sorrow to assuage,  
Neglecting those last words *Zerbino* spake,  
But lo, a certaine faintlike personage,  
That sword from hand, that thought from hart doth  
A certaine godly hermit and deuout, (take,  
That was by hap abiding thereabout,

71

Who came and said, oh damsell leaue espaire,  
Mans nature weake, and wome ex is frile,  
Feare him that rules both hea and eart aire,  
Who saith the word, word cannot faile,  
That those that vnto him for helpe repaire,  
And put their trust i him, shall neuer quailer:  
Then shewd he her, proue his saying true,  
Examples out of Scriptures old and new.

72

Of faintlike women that in time of old,  
Their liues and prayre in chastitie had spent;  
And further to the damsell faire he told,  
And prou'd and shewd by reasons euident,  
That worldly things are vaine and haue no hold,  
Alone in God is ioy and true content:  
In fine, he makes to her this godly motion,  
Her future life to spend in true deuotion.

73

His godly speech by helpe of heau'nly grace,  
Poured in her heart by hie diuine infusion,  
Wrought such effect, and found to great a place,  
She ceast to seeke or worke her owne confusion,  
But leauing the profession of her race,  
Profest her selfe a Christen in conclusion;  
She gaue her selfe to prayre and pure diuinitie,  
And vowd to God her life and her virginie.

74

Yet did she not remoue out of her thought,  
The feruent loue *Zerbino* had her torne,  
But by the hermits helpe the corse she brought,  
And thinks it fin to leaue it so forlorne,  
And in some village thereabout she bought  
Sweet balmes to fill the flesh all cu and torne,  
Then in a Cypres coffin she doth close it,  
Not being yet resolu'd where to dispose it.

75

That aged fire, though being wise and staid,  
Yet would not trust in his owne stay so well,  
To carry such a faire and goodly maid  
To sojourne with him in his little cell,  
Twere perill great (thus to him selfe he said)  
That fire and straw should nie together dwe,  
Wherefore he in no Prouince her to carie,  
And there to place in a monastarie.

76

But as he thitherward with *Isabelle* went  
And by the way deuoutly did her teac,  
All things vnto religion pertinent,  
And of the same most learnedly did preach,  
Behold a Pagan fierce with foule intent,  
This purpose and their iourney doth impeach,  
As I shall shew more largely after ward:  
Now back I must returne to *Mandricard*.

77

Who hauing ended that same cruell fight,  
In which the worthist Prince aliue was slaine,  
Soone after by a shadie banke did light,  
And turnd his horse a grazing on the plaine,  
Dame *Doralice* in whom he tooke delight,  
Alone with him in that place did remaine,  
When looking sodainly by chance aside,  
An armed knight come toward them the spide.

*Looke in the hi-  
story of this book.*

*There is no men-  
tion made of her  
image, and  
therefore he sup-  
poseth *Zerbino*  
(being a very  
pious Christian  
her a virgin  
though espou-  
sed to her princely.*

*Sentence.*

*bell in the 28.  
booke. 90. staff.*

*Smile.*



78

She guest, but she knew not by the view,  
Who it might be, vntill she spide her page,  
That came with her, then certainly she knew,  
Twas *Rodomont*, that came with rage,  
Wherefore vnto her knight he nearer drew,  
And said (my Lord) mine honour I dare gage,  
That you is *Rodomont* mine ancient louer,  
Who thinks by fight from you me to recouer.

*Rodomont.**Simile.*

Look how the Falcon in the aire doth mount,  
When she espies a Bittor or a Herne,  
So when this Prince espied *Rodomont*,  
And by his hast his furie did discerne,  
Like one that made of conquest full account,  
He starteth vp with visage grim and sterne:  
Striking at armid, and horst he is, his toe to meete,  
In hand the raynes, in sterops are his feete.

80

When as the tone the tother came so neare,  
As each might harken what the tother led,  
Fierce *Rodomont* spake lowd as he might heare,  
With threatening gesture, both of hand and hed:  
And sayd, be sure Ile make thee buy it deare,  
That with a short vaine pleasure hast bene led,  
To do to one so foule and open wrong,  
That can and will it wreake on thee er long.

81

The Tartar Prince that for him little cared,  
Made an answer, in vaine you me do threat,  
Poore boyes with words, or women may be scared,  
Not I that fight as willingly as eat,  
Proue when you please I am not vnprepared,  
At any time for any warlike feat,  
On horse, on foote, in field, or in the list,  
I shall be readie, trie me when you list.

*Sentence.*

82

Thus words bred wrath, and wrath engendred blowes,  
And blowes encreast their sharpe auenging will,  
Eu'n as the wind that first but calmly blowes,  
But after more and more increasing still,  
As it trees and houses ouerthrowes,  
And seas and lands with tempest it doth fill:  
So cruell grew the fight the more betweene,  
Whose match might hardly in the world be seene.

83

Their hearts were stout, so were their bodies strong,  
Desire to win, in both a like was great,  
One doth maintain, tother would venge his wrong,  
And loue their furie equally doth whet,  
In equall paise the fight endared long,  
Of each of tother any gaine could get,  
But each of them so firmly kept his ground,  
As if each inch thereof had cost a pound.

84

Among an hundred blowes the Tartar smit,  
Of which small hurt to *Rodomont* did rise,  
Yet one at last so heauily did hit,  
Vpon his helmet, ouer both his eyes:  
His tentes all were so amazd with it,  
He thought he saw more starres then are in skies,  
And almost downe he was eu'n in her fight,  
For whom he first began this cruell fight.

*A phrase to  
first strike out of  
his eyes and to  
make him see  
starres in the  
moone.*

85

But as a strong and iustly temperd bow,  
Of Pymount steele, the more you do it bend,  
Vpon recoil doth giue the bigger blow,  
And doth with greater force the quarrell send,  
Eu'n so the Sarzan king that stoupt so low,  
As highly to reuenge it doth intend,  
And to acquite himselfe of this disgrace,  
He striketh at the Tartar Princes face,

86

So fierce he strake, in this so furious mood,  
An inch or little more about his sight,  
That saue those armes of *Hector* were so good,  
No doubt that blow had finisht all the fight,  
But so astond therewith the Tartar stood,  
He could not tell if it were noone or night:  
And while in this amazement he abode,  
The tother ceaseth not to lay on lode.

87

The Tartars horse that saw the glittering blade,  
That *Rodomont* about his head so tost,  
Did start aside, and with a turne he made,  
Rescued his master, sore to his owne cost,  
Downe with the blow falls this vnluckie iade,  
And with his starting he his life hath lost:  
To ward his head he wanted *Hectors* shield,  
And therefore dead he tumbleth on the field.

88

Now came his master to himselfe againe,  
Inflamd with greater anger then before,  
To see his horte so pitifully slaine,  
But *Rodomont* forbears him neare the more.  
But spurrs on him, and thinks with furie maine,  
To beare him downe, but he so strongly bore  
The push, and thrust withall *Frontino* backe,  
He made his master glad to leaue his backe.

89

Thus now with minds more aliend from all peace,  
In eager sort the combat is renewed,  
To strike, to thrust each other doth not cease,  
In hope with blood their swords to haue embrewed  
Fell rancor wrath and pride do still increas,  
And death of one or both must haue enlewed,  
Er either of them would from thence haue started,  
Had not a certaine messenger them parted.

90

One that had traueled all about the coast,  
To seeke them out, to aske their helpe and aid,  
To raise the siege, that by the Christen host,  
Vnto the campe of *Agramant* was laid:  
Yet though he came in peace, and eake in post,  
To speake to them at first he was affraid,  
And though his office were sufficient warrant,  
Yet to themselves he dares not do his arrant.

91

But seeing *Doralice*, to her he told,  
How *Agramant*, *Marfilio*, *Stordylan*,  
And others more, like men pent vp in hold,  
Were in great danger to be kild or tane,  
Wherefore he wisheth her for to vtold,  
Thus much to them, that iought each others bane:  
And to perfwade them to to good accord,  
As they might go to helpe their loueraigne Lord.

*Simile.*

*Another phrase  
to strike one so  
make him blink  
at night, as the  
Spaniard that  
had but one eye,  
having the to-  
ther striken out  
at tennis, said.  
Buenas Noches.*



92

She that a woman was of passing sprite,  
And knew that neither of them would offend her,  
Stept them between, and chargd them stay the fight,  
As they their honour and her loue did tender,  
And helpe their king, that is in wofull plight,  
And end this fray begun of cause so slender,  
At least defer so long to trie this quarrell,  
Till *Agramant* their king were out of perrell.

93

When she thus much to them declared had,  
Then doth the messenger declare the rest,  
And other strong perswasions he doth ad,  
And doth expound to them their kings request,  
Alledging that thcir absence made him sad,  
That but they helpe, the campe would be distrest,  
And that if they to rescue him neglected,  
A present ruine were to be expected.

94

With his report and with her strong perswasion,  
The hardie knights the combat do defer,  
Till *Agramant* be freed from this inuasion,  
And all the Christen forces moued ar,

Thus of this friendly truce she is occ<sup>i</sup> lion,  
That first was cauler of their dea<sup>y</sup> war;  
To her they binde themselves b<sup>y</sup> solemne  
That vntill then, they quiet both.

95

There Discord was and ride, and what they may,  
They do this league interrupt and breake,  
But at that time, Loue bare so great a sway,  
That to withstand him, they were both to weake:  
In vaine it was to argue and gainsay,  
When once dame *Doralice* the word did speake,  
By her perswasion, firmly they agreed,  
Like friends vpon their journey to proceed.

96

One onely want there was, that let them sore,  
Which was that *Mandricardos* horse was dead.  
But loe eu'n then, came thither *Brygliadore*,  
That since his masters madnes there had fed,  
Full glad the Prince of Tartar was therefore,  
Of such a horse, so quickly to be sped:  
But least my tale with tediousnes molest you,  
I wish you lay aside the booke and rest you.

Morall.

In the great offence of *Oderike*, and the notable clemencie of *Zerbino* in pardoning the same, we may note in the one the great frailtie of men in offending (specially in this kinde of fleshly concupiscence,) in the other a notable magnanimitie as well as mercie in forgiving him: For that (indeed) is true clemencie in a Prince, to forgive that offence that is committed against his priuat (as they call it) that is, against his owne person, rather than that, which is done against the law, for that is rather parcialitie and iniustice, then clemencie. Secondly we may obserue both in *Zerbino* and *Isabella* notable example of gratitude toward *Orlando*, first in gathering his dispersed armour, next in the <sup>fought</sup> with *Mandricardo* in defence of *Orlandos* sword, in which conflict he receiues his deaths wound, and though indeed, all that is told of this couple, tendeth to a tragicall end, yet is it withall set downe by my author in a sort, to moue so great compassion, that it seemes all that read it are as it were in loue with them, and lament their so vnfortunate end; which hath made me say sometimes (in sport) to some of mine honorable friends, that if I could without wronging mine author, I would surely haue saned their liues, or giuen them a more fortunate end: though (to say true) sith an end is of necessitie due to all mankind, what more honorable death can a Prince haue, then by a wound in fight, specially for a good quarrell? what more sweet death, then in her beloued armes whom he was bethrothed to, and intended to marrie? what more happie reward, then fame and loue in this world, and heauen in the next? Further though *Isabella* were after slain by *Rodomont* in his drunkennes, as is noted in the xxix. booke, yet that notable title that is there giuen her (the martir of chastitie) makes her so famous, and her vertue so admirable, as she could neuer haue wisht a better end if she had liued as long as *Hecuba*. Wherefore if it be true that *Ouid* said of *Cadmus*,

Scilicet vltima semper,  
Expectanda dies homini, dicique beatus  
Ante obitum nemo, supremæque funera debet.

In English thus,

Our onely dying day, and end doth show  
If that a man haue happie beene or no.

Then (I say) by the death of these two, though in shew vnfortunate yet in deed most glorious, they may be called happie. Lastly, for the end of this morall, we may take one speciall obseruation of great integritie in the religious man, that conuerted her to the faith, and yet afterward would not trust himselfe alone with her; for in the fleshly conflicts and temptations, the onely way to conquer, is to play the coward and runne away, and thus much for the morall.

Historic.

The examples of the vertuous women that are praised by the hermit (though not named) in the 72. staffe of this booke, are many, recited in the Scripture it selfe: as namely the blessed virgin *Marie*, *Anne*, and *Magdalen*, all which betooke themselves most deuoutly to the seruice of God, and therefore are worthy to be canonized for examples of chastitie and zeale of religion.

Allegoric.

In the sodaine parting of the fray betweene the two famous riuals, onely vpon the commandement of *Doralice*, with whom they were both exceedingly in loue, this allegorically is supposed to be meant that the strongest passions that are, as anger, and reuenge, or what else soeuer, are often ouermastered with loue.

Allusion.

The speech of *Isabella* to *Zerbino*, wishing to die at the same instant with him, alludes to the wish of good *Bawcis* and *Philemon*.

Quoniam concordēs egimus annos,  
Auferat hora duos eadē, nec coniugis vnquam,  
Busta meæ videam nec sum tumulandus ab illa.

Here end the notes of the xxiiij. booke.







## THE ARGUMENT.

*Rogero saueh (to his fame and glorie)  
His spouses brother, that had else bene ded:  
Who doth recount to him the wofull storie,  
That so great danger vnto him had bred:  
His cousin cheares them, though himselfe were sorie,  
Next morne, they arme them all from foote to hed,  
Good Malagige, and Vinian to releue,  
Whose thraldome did their kinsmen greatly greene.*

*Loue and ambi-  
sion, two strong  
passions.*

*Simile.*

**I** He strife is great y grows  
in youthfull minde,  
When honor falls at vari-  
ance with affection,  
Nor could it yet be known  
or well define,  
Which passion keeps the  
tother in subiection,  
For both allure, both do  
our iudgements blinde,  
And both corrupt the heart with strong infection:  
Yet lo sometimes these hurts procure our weale,  
Eu'n as one poyson doth another heale.

**2** For here you see these princes that of late,  
Straue fiercely tone the tother to subdew,  
Agreed to respite this their sharpe debate,  
And to repaire vnto the Turkish crew,  
To succour *Agramants* distressed state,  
To whom they ought in dutie to be trew,  
And yet herein loue claimeh halfe the praise,  
For she commanded them to go their wayes.

**3** And on they went without more disagreeing,  
Faire *Doralice* with these her seruants twaine,  
The tone in suite, one in possession being,  
And yet as then in concord they remaine:  
At last they came vnto a place, where seeing  
Foure knights themselues did solace on a plaine,  
(Of which two were vnarmd, two armour bare)  
With them a Ladie was of beautie rare.

*He commeth to  
whom againe in  
he 26. booke.*

**4** With these a while they staid, but who these weare,  
And what they did, and whither then they went,

A little while to tell I do forbe  
For to *Rogero* now my tale is ment,  
Who would no more the shield enchanted beare,  
But in the well did drowne it, with intent  
That men might know his valiant deeds of armes  
Were done by force of vertue, not of charmes.

**5** He scant had gone a mile or little more,  
From this same well, but that he met a post  
From *Agramant*, of which there went good store,  
The Captaines to recall vnto the host.  
He told him how the king (besieged sore,  
And like if succour come not to be lost)  
Commanded him as his true Lord and leage,  
To come with out delay to raise the seage.

**6** Much was *Rogero* with the message moued,  
And diuers passions straue within his minde,  
He faine would haue his Princes seage remoued,  
Yet loth he was to leaue his loue behinde;  
But be his doing praised or reproued,  
He was so to the present cause enclinde,  
First with his guide he goes to stay the slaughter,  
Of him that had deflowrd *Margarios* daughter.

**7** They came vnto the place an houre er night,  
Where this same execution should be done,  
A castle that belongd to *Charles* of right,  
But late the Spanish king the same had wonne,  
And kept it in the mids of France by might,  
By count'nance of the great *Truianos* tonne:  
*Rogero* commeth in, and none denyde him,  
Because they knew the damnell that did guide him.

There



8

There first he saw prepar'd a flaming fire,  
 In which they meant to burne the wofull youth,  
 Though so small a sinne did not require  
 punishment, no more it doth in truth:  
 When he markt his face and his attire,  
 And heard and saw the manner of his ruth,  
 Now sure I know (quoth he) I am not I,  
 Or this is *Bradamant* that here should die.

*This was Richardetto, Bradamant's brother, but exceeding like Bradamant in countenance.*

*O; thus looke in the Morall.*

9

'Tis certaine she, I see which way it went,  
 Belike while I at yonder castle staid,  
 She hither came afore me, with intent  
 To bring vnto the prisoner here some aid,  
 For which (poore soule) her self should now be shent,  
 Yet I am glad and very well apaid,  
 That I am hither come in so good season,  
 To saue her that should die against all reason.

10

And euen with that, most furiously he flies  
 With naked sword vpon the gazing rout,  
 Who euer standeth in his way, he dies,  
 With so great force he hurles his blade about:  
 Then straight the prisoners fetters he vnties,  
 Nor was there one so hardie or so stout,  
 That once durst make resistance or forbid it,  
 No not so much as aske him why he did it.

11

*Simile.*

As feowle that in the sunshine bright,  
 Sit prying of themselues vpon a banke,  
 When as a Faulcon doth among them light,  
 Flie without care of order or of ranke:  
 So when these caitiues saw this noble knight,  
 Forthwith they from his manly presence thranke,  
 So did their teartull hearts and courage faile them,  
 When as they felt *Rogero* once assaile them.

12

No maruell tho, for why *Rogeros* force  
 Was not as mens that now borne later are,  
 The strength of Lion, Beare, or bull or horse,  
 Were nothing, if with his they do compare,  
 And chiefe sith now he doth himselfe inforce,  
 To do as much as he or can or dare,  
 Hereby from danger thinking to recouer,  
 Her vnto whom he was professed loue.

13

Now when the youth from danger quite was freed,  
 And all that sought his death away were fled,  
 He thanks the author of this worthy deed,  
 And thanketh her that had him thither led  
 Then, when of helpe he stood in greatest need,  
 When otherwise he doubtlesse had bin dead,  
 And executed like a malefactor,  
 Agnizing him his Lord and benefactor.

*Here you may begin the tale of Esordispina.*

14

And furthermore he doth *Rogero* pray,  
 To let him vnderstand his name and nation;  
*Rogero* musing to himselfe doth say,  
 What meaneth this so strange congratulation:  
 In face, in shape, in gesture, in array,  
 This is my loue, I see no alteration,  
 Yet strange it is her voice should be so changed,  
 More strange that she from me is so estranged.

15

It doubtlesse is not she, for if it were,  
 Could she within three houres my name forget  
 Wherefore to tell his name he doth forbear,  
 Vntill he may more perfect notice get:  
 And thus he said, I haue I know not where,  
 Seene you ere this, and I bethinke me yet  
 Where it might be, for sure I know your face,  
 Though now I haue forgot the time and place.

16

Most noble sir (said tother) I agree,  
 You may haue seene me though I know not when,  
 I rather iudge it should my sister be,  
 That fights and carries armes as well as men:  
 My mother at one birth bare her and me,  
 And we be both so like, that now and then  
 Our seruants yea our father and our mother  
 Haue tane vs in exchange the one for tother.

17

Chiefly since in her head she had a wound,  
 For which she was constrained to cut her haire,  
 Twere long the circumstances to expound,  
 How she was hurt and heald, by whom and where;  
 Since that betweene vs difference none is found,  
 Saue sex and names that from our birth we beare,  
 She *Bradamant*, I *Richardet* am calld,  
 She sister, and I brother to *Renald*.

18

And further if you please, I shall you tell,  
 As we do onward on our iourney go,  
 A strange mishap that vnto me befell,  
 By being tane for her not long ago;  
 A hap that at the first I liked well,  
 But after wrought my danger great and wor-  
 Yes with good will, *Rogero* said, and than  
 Yong *Richardetto* thus his tale began.

19

It happend (as in part I toucht before)  
 My valiant sister passing through a wood,  
 Was hurt with certaine Sarazins so sore,  
 As had her cost almost her vitall blood,  
 Which wound to cure, her tresses short she wore,  
 For so as then her surgeon thought it good;  
 The wound once cur'd for which her head was sold  
 Abroade to go againe she waxed bold.

20

And hauing traueled till the heate of day,  
 All clad in armor, as her manner was,  
 At noone she tooke occasion to make stay,  
 Fast by a watrie streame as cleare as glasse,  
 And putting off her helmet, downe she lay,  
 Vpon a pleasant banke well clothd with grasse,  
 And sleepe at last her heauie eyes did close,  
 The place inuiting her to take repose.

21

Now while she did there fast asleepe remaine,  
 There happend to arriue vnto that place,  
 The daughter of *Marsilio* king of Spaine,  
 That there by chance was hunting in the chase,  
 And seeing signes of manhood very plaine,  
 With that her sweet and amiable face,  
 As harte, and sword, and target all of Steele,  
 A little amorous passion she doth feele.

S



22

And taking then my sister for a man,  
As by all circumstances well she might,  
She offers her all courtship that she can,  
And askt her if in hunting she delight;  
And then to chuse a standing they began,  
And finding one far off from others sight,  
She opened more plainly that affection,  
That had her heart already in subiection.

23

And saue her maiden modestie forbad,  
She would the same in words haue plainly told,  
Howb't it with sighs, with rufull looks and sad,  
And silent signes she doth her griefe vnfold:  
And when she thus long time discoursed had,  
Surprisd with hope, she could no longer hold,  
But steps vnto her, and giues her such a kisse,  
As that alone shewes what her meaning is.

24

My sister at the first doth thinke it strange,  
That such a sute should vnto her be made,  
And finding she had tane her in exchange,  
She thinks it best (before she further wade,  
Or let the tothers humor further range)  
Tell troth, for thus she doth her selfe perswade,  
Tis better to be knowne a Ladie gentle,  
Then to be deemd a base man and vngentle.

*Of this looke see  
she morall of the  
booke.*

25

For what could be more cullen-like or base?  
Or fitter for a man were made of straw,  
Then standing in a faire yong Ladies grace,  
To shew him selfe a cuckow or a daw,  
And leese occasion both of time and place?  
My sister therefore that this ill foresaw,  
And knew she wanted that, that her should aid,  
Told her by circumstance she was a maid.

26

And thus she told her how the worthy fame,  
*Hippolita* and stout *Camilla* wonne,  
In deeds of armes, mou'd her her mind to frame,  
To do the like while others fowd and sponne:  
And that she thought it to her sex no shame,  
To do as women of such worth had done;  
She told her this, in hope this would appease her,  
But this alas did so much more diseale her.

27

For why the fancie was so firmly fixt,  
That in her mind she had before conceiued,  
By meanes of speech had passed them betwixt,  
That fore it griev'd her to be thus deceiued,  
Before, her feare with some good hope was mixt,  
But now eu'n hope it selfe was her bereaued:  
And this is one extremest point of griefe,  
Still to despaire and hope for no reliefe.

*Senseless.*

28

He that had heard her wofull plaint and mone,  
Must needs haue greatly at the same bin griued,  
Ah wo is me (she said) that I alone  
Should liue in such despaire to be relieued:  
In passed times I thinke there hath bene none,  
In time to come it will not be beleueed,  
That loue should make by such a wrong infection,  
One woman beare another such affection.

29

O *Cupid*, if thou didst my state enuie,  
And that thou hadst a mind me to torment,  
To send such paines as others more do trie  
At least me think thou shouldst haue bin conten  
Shall in so many ages none but I,  
Yeeld of so vncouth loue such president?  
The female with the female doth not wish  
To couple, nor in beast, nor foule, nor fish.

*Looke in the Al-  
lusion of this booke*

30

I sole am found in earth, aire, sea, or fire,  
In whom so strange a wonder thou hast done,  
On me thou shewst the power of thine ire,  
And what a mightie conquest thou hast wonne.  
The wife of *Nynus* had a strange desire,  
To ioine in copulation with her sonne;  
Faure *Myrrha* by her fire was made a mother,  
And made *Adonis* both her sonne and brother.

*Looke in the His-  
tory of this booke.*

31

*Pasphyae*, except it be a tale,  
Was buld, inclosed in a wooden cow;  
Yet in all these the female sought the male,  
But nature doth my fancie disallow;  
No *Dedalus* could remedie my bale,  
Nor art can frame, nor sense imagine how,  
This knot dame nature hath so firmly knit,  
It cannot be dissolu'd by any wit.

32

This *Fiordispina* faire (so was her nam  
In piteous sort her wofull state doth waie  
My sister vnto her, her speech doth frame,  
As chiefly to her comfort might auaille:  
And wisht her this vnbridled will to tame,  
Sith nature could not suffer it preuaile,  
And that she would let that desire be daunted,  
Which possibly by no meanes could be graunted.

33

All this but all in vaine my sister said,  
To seeke that fancie from her mind to wrest;  
She that for comfort car'd not, but for aid,  
Doth more and more her selfe vexe and molest;  
Now night grew on as they together staid,  
What time all creatures seeke repose and rest,  
The Ladie prayes my sister for her sake,  
A lodging at her castle n to take.

34

To this request doth *Bradamant* assent,  
And so together to that place they came,  
Where I (but that you did my harme preuent)  
Should haue bene cast into the burning flame:  
She that all kindnesse to my sister ment,  
By many outward courtships shewd the same;  
And caused her to weare a womans hood,  
That men might know that she was one indeed.

*That place was  
Marfilius castle,  
where Richar-  
d should haue  
bene burn'd.*

35

For why the semblance false she saw before,  
Of manly shape to her was so pernicious,  
She would now see her in those weeds no more,  
The rather eke lest folke should be suspicious,  
(If she had bene as shewd the weed she wore)  
Lest that they two did liue together vicious:  
She further was by phisick rules assured,  
That contraries by contraries are cured.

And



36

But nought could salve that sore, nor swage her woes,  
 Night they lay together in one bed,  
 But contrary and unlike was their repose,  
 One quiet slept, the tothers troubled hed  
 Still waking, or if she her eyes but close,  
 That little sleepe strange dreames and fancies bred:  
 She thought the gods and heau'n would so assist her,  
 Into a better sex to change my sister.

Smile.

37

As men tormented with a burning feuer, (thirst,  
 Do dreame with drinke they swage their grieuous  
 But when they wake, they feeble their thirst perueuer,  
 And to be greater then it was at first; (feuer,  
 So she whole thoughts from loue, sleepe could not  
 Did dreame of that, for which she wake did thirst,  
 But waking felt and found it as before,  
 Her hope still like, and her desire still more.

38

How secretly did she to Macon pray?  
 What reuerend did she to her prayre annex?  
 By what magicke miracle he may,  
 Her bedfellow turne to a better sex?  
 How neere approacht the dawning of the day,  
 When she in vaine her selfe doth greiue and vex:  
 And so much more her passion grew the stronger,  
 Because my sister now would stay no longer.

39

When morning light saw she would be gone,  
 She caus'd a gallant gennet to be brought,  
 All richly barbd, and furniture thereon,  
 Which with her owne hand partly she had wrought,  
 This frankly she bestoweth her vpon,  
 My sister takes it kindly, as she ought,  
 And takes her leaue, and on her way doth get,  
 And home she came that night ere Sunne was set.

40

We that long time of her had heard no tiding,  
 I meane her mother, brothers, and her kin,  
 Do welcome her, and aske of her abiding,  
 Why she so long from vs had absent bin?  
 Straight from vs the troth of nothing hiding,  
 Doth tell vs how great danger she was in;  
 And opned from the ending to beginning,  
 The course of all her leeu'ng and her winning.

41

As namely first how hardly she had sped,  
 And in a conflict had receiu'd a wound,  
 For which she was constrained to pole her head,  
 Before her health she could recouer found;  
 She told how fortune afterwards her led,  
 Where that faire huntresse had her sleeping found;  
 She told vs now the Ladie did her woo,  
 And all the circumstance that longd thereto.

42

To heare this story I was passing glad,  
 For why at Saragoza I had scene  
 This *Piordispina*, and some knowledge had  
 Of her likewise when she in France had beene,  
 And like her well, yet was I not so mad,  
 In vaine to set my loue on such a Queene:  
 But now againe I gaue that fancie scope  
 When by this tale I had conceau'd some hope.

43

Loue was my counsellor that me aduised,  
 My meaning secret I to none impart,  
 This was the stratageme that we deuised,  
 This was the plot, the cunning, and the art,  
 To go in *Bradamantas* clothes disguised,  
 And for a while to play the womans part:  
 I knew my face my sisters so resembling,  
 Would be the better helpe for my dissembling.

44

The day ensuing ere it yet was light,  
 I tooke my way, my loue and fancie guiding,  
 I there arriu'd an houre before twas night,  
 Such hap I had, such hast I made in riding:  
 No sooner came I in the seruants sight,  
 But well was he of me could carry tiding:  
 They looke (as Princes oft to giue do vse)  
 Some recompence for bringing so good newes.

45

Straight out she came, and met me halfe the way,  
 And tooke me fast about the necke and kist me,  
 And told me how in this my little stay,  
 In anguish great and sorrow she had mist me,  
 Then she did cause me alter mine array,  
 In which with her owne hands she doth assist me;  
 A cawl of gold she set vpon my crowne,  
 And put on me a rich and stately gowne.

46

And for my part to helpe the matter, I  
 Did take great heed to all I did or said,  
 With sober cast I carrid still mine ey,  
 And bare my hands before me like a maid:  
 My voice did serue me worst, but yet thereby  
 Such heed I vsd, my sex was not bewraid:  
 And thus arrayd, my Princeesse led me with her,  
 Where many Knights and Ladies were together.

47

My looke and clothes did all them so beguile,  
 They all had thought I had a woman beene,  
 And honour such was done to me that while,  
 As if I were a Dutchesse or a Queene:  
 And (that which made me oftentime to smile)  
 Some youths there were of yeers & iudgment green  
 That cast vpon me many a wanton looke,  
 My sex and qualitie they so mistooke.

48

At last came meate, both store of flesh and fish,  
 What kinds of both, to tell I ouerslip,  
 I maidenly tast here and there a dish,  
 And in the wine I scant do wet my lip,  
 The time seemd long that staid my wanton wish,  
 And still I doubted taking in some trip;  
 When bed time came, she told me I must be  
 Her bedfellow, the which well pleased me.

49

Now when the maids and pages all were gone,  
 One onely lampe vpon the cubbard burning,  
 And all coasts cleare, thus I began anon:  
 Faire dame I thinke you muste of my returning,  
 And cause you haue in leaue to muse thereon,  
 For yester day when I bidde you mourning,  
 I thinke both you and I did thinke as then,  
 We should not meet againe till God knowes when.

A. B.



50

First let me tell you why from you I went,  
Then why I come, hereafter I shall show:  
Deare Ladie (thus it was) I did lament  
Your fruitlesse loue on me was placed so,  
And though I could haue ay bene well content,  
To waite on you, and neuer part you fro,  
Yet since my presence did but make you languish,  
I thought mine absence minish would your anguish.

51

But riding on my way, I somewhat straid,  
As fortune and aduenture did me guide,  
And lo I heard a voice that cride for aid,  
Within a thicket by the riuer side:  
A Satyr taken had a naked maid,  
And with a twisted cord her hands had tide,  
And in his visage seemed so to threaten her,  
As if he would haue kild her straight and eaten her.

52

I rusht to them with naked sword in hand,  
And death to him, and freedome I did giue her,  
She diuing vnder water out of hand,  
Vnrecompensd thou shalt not me deliuer,  
Quoth she, for I will haue you vnderstand,  
I am a Nymph that dwell here in this riuer;  
And for this courtisie I do much regard you,  
And am well able richly to reward you.

53

Aske of me what you list, and I will giue it,  
For I vpon the elements haue powre;  
I can with charms bring down the Moon, beleue it,  
I can swage stormes, and make faire weather lowre,  
What is so hard, but my skill can atchieue it?  
To drayne the sea, or build in aire a towre?  
Yea eu'n with simple words (and if I will)  
I can inforce and make the Sunne stand still.

54

When as the Nymph had made me this great offer,  
(Lo Ladie what great loue to you I bare)  
I neither askt with gold to fill my coffer,  
Nor victory, of which some greedie are,  
This fauour onely I demaunded of her,  
To make me able to assuage your care:  
Nor nam'd I any meanes for feare of erring,  
The onely way and meanes to her referring.

55

No sooner this request to her I told,  
But in the christall streame againe he diued,  
And sprinkled me with drops of water cold,  
Which to my skinne so sooner were arriued,  
But I was changd from that I was of old,  
And of my former state I was depriv'd;  
I felt, I saw, yet scant beleue I can,  
That of a woman I was made a man.

56

And sauing that eu'n now I am so nie you,  
As you may quickly proue my tale not fained,  
Else you might thinke I said it but to trie you;  
Now lo, since I for you this wish obtained,  
Aske what you please, I nothing shall denie you,  
Enioy that which my loue for you hath gained:  
When I had pleaded thus, and she had heard it,  
On sig of euidence she gaue her vardit.

*Ti is a frivolous  
tale, deuised by  
him to bleare her  
eyes, and therefore  
is is not requisite  
it should be pro-  
bable, though Cas-  
telusio an Ita-  
lian writer, found  
fault with this,  
because he saith,  
it should haue  
had more proba-  
bilitee.*

57

As one whose state is ouerwhelmd with debt,  
By lending or by spending out of measure,  
That looks ech houre when prouling shre  
Himselfe to ward, and of his goods make leau  
If some vnlookt for gaine he hap to get,  
By some mans death, or by some trouie treasu e,  
Is so surprisd with ioy, he scant doth know,  
If true it be, or if he dreamed so.

58

So she that now did see, and feele, and tuch,  
That which she long had longed for in vaine,  
It ouerfild her mind with ioy so much,  
It seemed in a trance she did remaine;  
Therein her incredulitie was such,  
As to resolute her I did take much paine:  
If the be dreames (quoth she) for these dreams sake  
I euer wish to dreame and neuer wake.

59

Not found of drum, of trumpe, or of phise,  
Nor warlike instrument of any sort,  
Did sound alarum to our friendly strife,  
But douelike billing follewd louely sport,  
This battell hazards nei er limbe nor life,  
Without a ladder I did scale the fort,  
And stoutly plant my st anderd on the wall,  
And vnder me I made my fo to fall.

60

If that same bed were full the night  
Of teares, of plaints, of anguish and annoyes,  
No doubt but now it had in as great store,  
Both smilings, sports, and solaces and ioyes:  
No luy doth embrace the pillar more,  
Then she did me, nor Apes can find more toyes,  
Then we yong fooles did find to make vs merie,  
Till ioy it selfe of ioy did make vs werie.

61

The thing twixt vs did secret long remaine,  
And certaine months this pleasure did endure,  
Till some had found, and told it to my paine,  
As you well know that did my life assure:  
Yet I confesse great grieve I still sustaine,  
Not knowing how her safetie to procure.  
This *Richardett* to *Rogero* told,  
And all the while their iourney on they hold.

62

By that time *Richardettos* tale was done,  
They gan vp to a little hill to mount,  
And when an houre and more was set the sunne,  
They came vnto the castle *Agrismount*,  
Kept then by *Aldiger* the bastard sonne  
Of *Bono*, of the house of *Clarimour*.  
A wise and sober man and of good quaiitie,  
And bountifull in keeping hospitalitie.

63

And after he had bid them welcome both,  
One as his kinsman, tother as his frend,  
I heare ill newes (quoth he) that I am loth  
To tell to you, least it should you offend:  
But thus it is, to let you know the troth,  
I heare that *Bertolage* doth sure intend  
To buy the prisoners that *Ferraw* hath tane,  
As namely *Malagige* and *Viniene*.

*Simile.*

*The end of the  
tale of Fior-  
dissinae*

*Bertolage of the  
house of Mag-  
za.  
Malagigi and  
Viniene.*

*Lanfusa*



64

*infus* taketh vpon her to tell them,  
 s I heare to morrow is the day,  
 your brothers I sent one to tell them,  
 they be absent hence so farre away,  
 A ere they come, from hence they may expel them,  
 am too weake to force, too poore to pay,  
 My loue is great, to wish all good vnto them,  
 But powre so small, as good I can none do them.

Sentence.

65

Young *Richardetto* much mislikt the newes,  
 So did *Rogero* for the tothers sake,  
 And when he saw they both were in a muse,  
 Nor knew what countell, or what course to take,  
 No feare (quoth he) let me this matter vse,  
 On me this enterprife Ile vndertake,  
 So I shall handle this affaire so handsome,  
 This sword alone shall pay your kinsmens ransome.

66

This spake *Rogero* his companions cheating,  
 But notwithstanding *Aldiger*, his host,  
 Gaue to those lostie omises such hearing,  
 As if there were grea boast and little roft:  
 Which vnto *Richard* plaine appearing,  
 Who knew his vallew, reater then his boft:  
 Good cosen if you kn v him well that sed it,  
 You would said he vnto his word giue credit.

Proverbs.

67

Then *Aldiger*, on better information,  
 Gaue care and credit to his noble guest,  
 And made him cheare to sute his reputation,  
 And plast him at the boord about the rest:  
 And supper done, he was in seemely fashion,  
 In chamber lodgd, of all the house the best,  
 The master of the house in nothing cant,  
 His worthy guest will suffer nothing want.

68

Now was the time when all men soundest sleepe,  
*Rogero* onely cannot sleepe a winke,  
 For cares and thoughts that him do waking keepe,  
 And in his troubled braine profoundly sinke,  
 The siege of *Agramant* doth pierce him deepe,  
 And what dishonor men of him may thinke,  
 And deeme his heart but faint, his faith but fickle,  
 To leaue his soueraigne in so wofull pickle.

69

Had he reuolted at some other time,  
 Men might haue thought that true religion mou'd  
 None could haue it imputed as a crime, (him,  
 Nor no man probably could haue reprou'd him:  
 ow, when his masters fortune did decline,  
 And when id him chiefest it behoou'd him,  
 Feare, men will thinke, his change procured chiefe,  
 Nor iust remorse, nor zeale of true beliefe.

70

This troubled him, and little lesse then this,  
 It troubled him, to thinke of his deare hart,  
 Whom now by euill fortune he doth misse,  
 Nor cannot once salute er he depart;  
 Wherefore to write to her his purpose is,  
 And so to her at large his minde impart,  
 Both that of him she may haue certaine newes,  
 As that he may his sodaine going scuse.

71

The chamberlaines both prudent and discrete,  
 Vpon *Rogero* quicke attendance gaue,  
 Prouiding him of needfull things and meet,  
 Inke, paper, light, and what he else would craue:  
 Then (as the manner is) he doth her greet,  
 Vpon the front, as letters vse to haue;  
 Thus after verie hartie commendations,  
 Or some such phrase of friendly salutations.

*Rogero's letter  
to Bradamant.*

72

Then tels he her how that the Turkish Prince,  
 Had for his ayd, by speciall message sent,  
 Who is besiegd, and hath bene long time since;  
 And how to rescue him is his intent:  
 Least men of cowardise might him conuinse,  
 That he away in time of danger went:  
 And now would leaue his lawfull Lord and liege,  
 Then when his enemies did him besiege.

73

He prayeth her to weigh, how foule a deed,  
 How full it were of infamie and shame,  
 To yeeld his Prince no aid in such a need,  
 That sent to him of purpose for the same:  
 He wisht her for her owne sake to take heed,  
 That no such staine might spot her spoules name,  
 That being she, so true and so sincere,  
 She should no blemish in her husband beare.

74

He further doth his zeale to her protest,  
 As erst he had in word so now in writing,  
 And sweares that when his Prince were vndistrest,  
 The siege quite raisd, by concord or by fighting,  
 That foolish people might not make a iest,  
 To his reproch, that common speech reciting,  
*Rogero* loues to take the surer side,  
 And turnes his sailes, as fortune turnes her tide.

Proverbs.

75

I shall (he writes) when that time doth expire,  
 Which in a month I hope wil be effected;  
 Finde some occasion from them to retire,  
 And of no breach of honour be suspected.  
 Then shall I full accomplish your desire,  
 And do, as I by you shalbe directed:  
 This onely for my honour I demand thee,  
 And after this thou euer shalt command mee.

76

These things, and like to these *Rogero* wrate,  
 As then by hap came in his troubled hed,  
 To certifie his loue of his estate,  
 And of the cause that his departure bred:  
 By that time he had done, it was full late,  
 And then againe he got him to his bed,  
 And closd his eies, when he had closd the letter,  
 And after tooke his ease a great deale better.

77

Next day they all arose at breake of day,  
 With minde to go to let their kinsmen free,  
 And though *Rogero* earnestly did pray,  
 That none might take that enterprife but he,  
 Yet both the other stiffly said him nay,  
 And thereunto by no meanes would agree,  
 Vnto the place assignd they ride together,  
 And by the time appointed they came her.

S ij



78

The place they came to was a goodly plaine,  
In which no tree nor bush was to be scene,  
Here Bertolage did point to take them twaine,  
As was agreed Lanfuse and him betweene,

But first they met, while here they did remaine,  
One that a Phenix bare in field all greene  
With armor faire embost, and guilt with g  
As in the booke that follows shalbe told.

## Morall.

In this xxv booke, in Rogeros valiant proceeding for the deliuerie of Richardetto (though as then not knowne to him what he was) may be noted a wonderfull courage and promptnes to honorable exploits: In the great likenes of face of Bradamant and Richardetto (though this be but a fiction) yet we may obserue the rare, and (as it were) cunning workmanship of nature, admirable, as well in making so many sundrie countenances, one vnlike another: as also sometimes in making some so exceeding like, which in deed though it seldomer fortunes, and sooner alters in brother and sister, yet in two brothers, it is seene many times, and therefore not improbable to be written, as it is here for the forenamed couple. I haue heard in England of the two Tremaines not many yeares past: I haue knowne my selfe two of the Wrothes in Eaton schoole, and lately in her Maiesties court two Tracies, two proper and valiant young Gentlemen; whom my selfe being familiarly acquainted with, yet I could verie hardly know one from the other. But to come to the tale of Richardetto and Fiordispina, (which name signifieth as much as the flowre of thorne, and not vnapt for her prickling condition) I must confesse my author sheweth in the tale, rather pleasant wit, then any sober grauitie, and the best I can say is this, that it is a bad matter not verie ill handled. But as I vnderooke in the beginning to make speciall note of all the good matters by which the honest reader might take profite, so I thinke it as convenient, when any light and lasciuious matter falls (as this is surely one) to temper it in such sort, or at least to salve it, so, as it may do least hurt. Namely, I would not haue that xxv. staffe by misapplying it, made worse: being perhaps bad enough at the best.

For what can be more cullen like and base,  
And fitter for a man were made of straw,  
Then standing in a gallant Ladies grace,  
To shew him selfe a cockow or a daw,  
Leefing occasion both of time and place? &c.

This taken, as many will take it, may seeme but lewd doctrine, but thus it ought and may be honestly taken, that he that in good honorable sort (as put the case in the way of marriage) may obtaine the loue of some worthy Ladie, and thus in her high fauour, and then will be so bashfull, either for want of wit or heart, to leese that oportunitie may be in good reason indued with those gentle titles; neuerthelesse to vnderstand it generally were vngoodly, considering the Scripture commendeth to vs the example of Ioseph, that refused his mistres kindnes. But to conclude the morall of this tale, we may note how full of doubts and feares these vnlawfull pleasures are, howsoeuer some men like better, to hunt by stealth in another mans walke, then to haue the fairest course that may be at game of their owne.

## Historic.

The examples that Fiordispina recites of other womens vnlawfull lusts, preferring them before her owne, for their possibilitie (hers being vnpossible) are confirmed by diuers authors, as of Nyus wife Semiramis, that lusted after a horse: Nynos wife after a bull, and other such tales, though I thinke vnttrue, or rather cullerd by such names: as in that of Paliphae, it is thought she loued one that was called Taurus (to say a bull) and thereupon the light headed Poets, that haue a priuiledge as free for the pen, as painters haue for the pencill, make a great wonder of it, whereas perhaps indeed it was but euen an ordinarie matter, that is dayly (or at least nightly) committed, by many in these times.

## Allusion.

This tale of Fiordispina alludes to that in the ninth of the Metamorphosis of Iphis, and the complaint she makes is much taken from thence, and is wonderfull finely written by Ouid, as you may reade there more at large.

Vixquetenens lachrimas; quis me inanet exitus inquit,  
Cognita quam nulli, quam prodigiosa nouæque,  
Cura tenet Veneris? si dii mihi parcere vellent,  
Perdere debuerant: si non & perdere vellent,  
Naturale malum saltem, & de more dedissent,  
Nec vaccam vaccæ, &c.

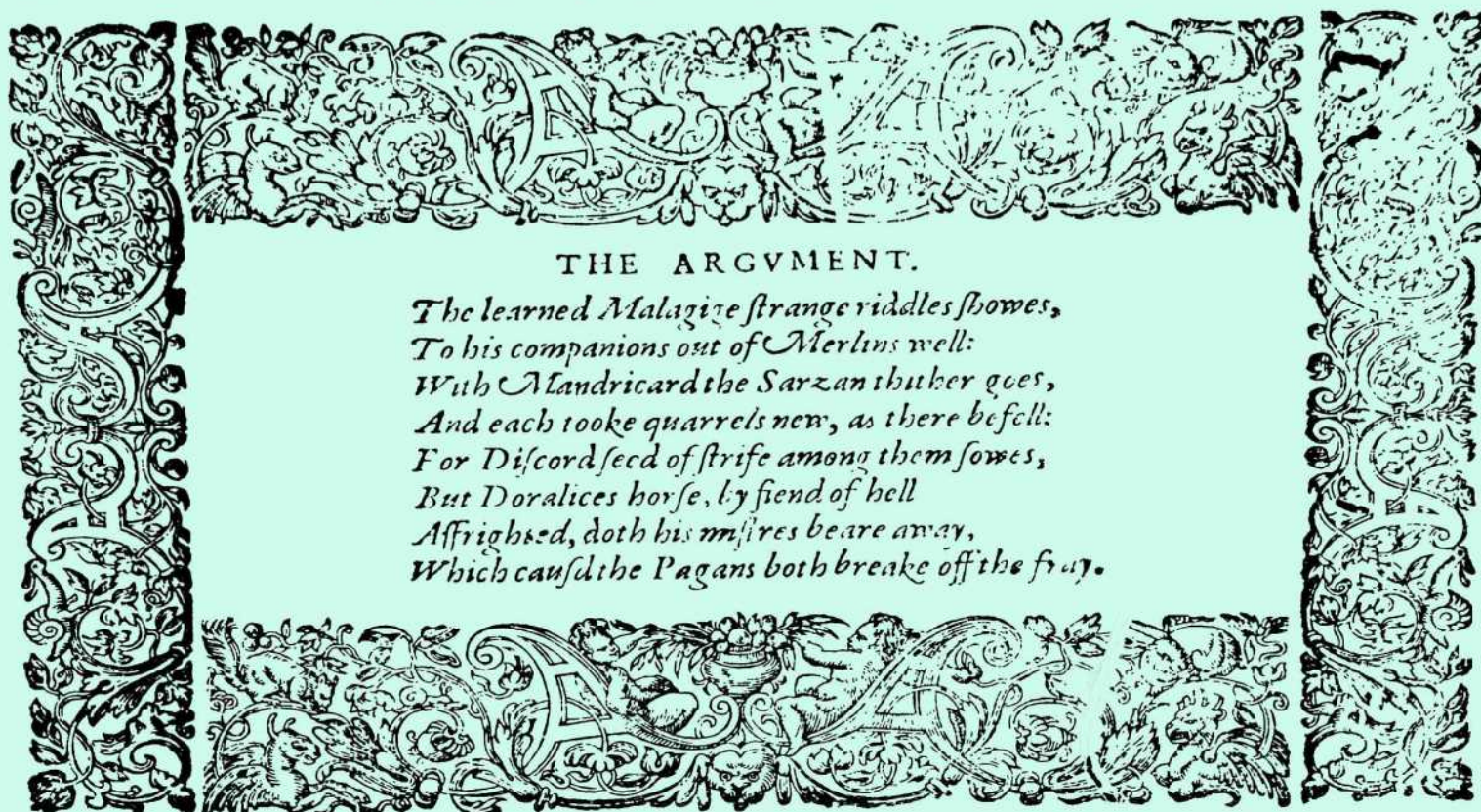
Here end the notes of the xxv. booke.





RUGGERO  
AND JERO  
RUGGERO





## THE ARGUMENT.

*The learned Malagize strange riddles shoves,  
To his companions out of Merlins well:  
With Mandricard the Sarzan thuker goes,  
And each tooke quarrels new, as there befell:  
For Discord seed of strife among them sows,  
But Doralices horse, by fiend of hell  
Affrighted, doth his mistres beare away,  
Which causd the Pagans both breake off the fray.*



<sup>1</sup>  
Eight worthy dames there  
were in times of old,  
That more esteemd of  
vertue then of wealth,  
But now our iron age is  
all for gold,  
For bad, and worse, in sick-  
nes and in health,  
But she that will that elder  
custome hold,

And leaue this new, deserues where ere she dwelth,  
Here in this life to haue a happie choice,  
And in the next for euer to reioice.

<sup>2</sup>  
Such was the noble *Bradamant* as mind,  
Who sought not after wealth and rich abilitie,  
Nor state, nor pompe, that many women blind,  
But after vertue pure, the true nobilitie:  
And well deserued he to find her kind,  
That shewd in him such proofs of high gentilitie,  
And tooke vpon him actions for her sake,  
Which time to come for miracles may take.

<sup>3</sup>  
*Rogero* (as before I did recite)  
With *Aldiger* and *Richardetto* came,  
To rescue those two prisoners (if they might)  
That should be sold with great reproch and shame.  
I told you how they met a gallant knight,  
Whose shield had painted that same bird of fame,  
That still renews it selfe, and neuer dies,  
And onely one, in all the world there flies.

<sup>4</sup>  
Now when this knight was of these three aware,  
That stood like men new plait in battell ray,

He comes to them, and seeing what they are,  
Will there (quoth he) some one of you assay,  
If so his value can with mine compare,  
With staffe, with sword, or any arty other way:  
If any will, come then, and let vs trie it,  
If none, then say so quickly, and denie it.

<sup>5</sup>  
Sir answerd *Aldiger*, I were content,  
To trie my selfe with you, about or two,  
But we three came not here for this intent:  
We come, a greater feate then this to do,  
And at this time, a little time mispent,  
May hinder vs, and little pleasure you,  
We three intend (if God do say Amen)  
Two take two prisoners from sixe hundred men.

<sup>6</sup>  
Sure (said that other) if you mind indeed,  
So great an enterprize to take in hand,  
No doubt it doth of valiant mind proceed,  
And pittiet were, your purpose to withstand:  
I rather shall assist you in this deed,  
If you vouchsafe to make me of your band,  
And by my seruice I will quickly shew,  
Good prooffe if I deserue such grace or no.

<sup>7</sup>  
Perhap that some would know, and if they may,  
What valiant knight this was that did intreat,  
To take *Rogeros* part in such a fray,  
Whereas the danger could not be but great.  
Now she, not he, hereafter I must say,  
*Marfisa* was, of whom I did repeat,  
How she both fought, and fought a little once,  
And with *Gubron*, charged the Scottish Prince.



8

Rogero stout, and they of Clarimount,  
 And of her offer well esteemed,  
 And with them, they making full account  
 That she had bene of that same sex she seemed.  
 Straight ready on their horses backs they mount,  
 They see aloofe a cornet (as they deemed)  
 Of horse, and mingled some on foote together,  
 And all of them directly tending thether.

9

Their march, their ensignes, penons, and their flags,  
 Did cause for Moores they knowne were & discried,  
 Amid this crew, vpon two little nags  
 The prisoners rode with hands behind them tide,  
 That must be changd for certaine golden bags,  
 That Bertolage had promist to provide;  
 Come (saith Marfisa) to the other three,  
 Now let the feast begin, and follow me.

10

Soft (quoth Rogero) there be wanting some  
 Of those that to the banquet must be bidden,  
 And to begin aforetime guests be come,  
 In reason and good manners is forbidden;  
 By this, the tother crew had overcome  
 The hill, that late before them were hidden,  
 These were the traitorous wretches of Magaunle,  
 And now was ready begin the daunce.

Senigucé.

11

Maganza me of one side, merchant like,  
 Brought laden moyles with gold and costly ware,  
 The Moors their prisoners brought with sword & pike  
 Enuironed round about with heed and care;  
 The Captaine meet with mind a match to strike,  
 The prisoners present at the bargaine are,  
 And now are bought and sold (for ought they know)  
 To Bertolage their old and mortall foe.

12

Good Aldiger and noble Ammons sonne,  
 Could hold no longer seeing Bertolage,  
 But both together at him they do runne,  
 With hearts all set on fierce reuenge and rage,  
 His force nor fate their fury could not shunne,  
 Their speares his armor and his brest did gage,  
 Downe falls the wretch, his wealth him cannot saue,  
 Such end I wish all wicked wretches haue.

13

Marfisa and Rogero at this signe,  
 Set out without expecting trumpets blast,  
 And with two staues of straight well seasond Pine,  
 Twentie men vnto the ground they cast;  
 Captaine of the Moores doth much repine,  
 They of Marfisa murmured as fast:  
 For each he deemed, as they might in reason,  
 That such had happend by the tothers treason.

14

Wherefore each side with wrath and fury kindled,  
 Vpbraiding tone the tother with vntruth,  
 With swords and bills, pell-mell together mingled,  
 Do fight, and then a bloody fray ensueth,  
 The Moorish Duke was by Rogero singled,  
 A man eu'n then in prime and strength of youth,  
 But youth, nor strength, nor armour could not saue  
 From such a blow as good Rogero gaue him. (him,

15

Marfisa doth as much on tother side,  
 And in such sort besturd her with her blade,  
 That looke which way soeuer she did ride,  
 An open lane for her the people made:  
 If any were so stout the brunt to bide,  
 Yet loone they found their forces ouerlaid; (enter,  
 Through coats of proof they prou'd her sword wold  
 She sent their soules below the middle center.

16

If you haue seene the hony making Bees  
 To leaue their hiues, and going out in swarms,  
 When as their kings and masters disagree,  
 And they make camps in thaire like men at armes,  
 Straight in among them all the Swallow flees,  
 And eates and beates them all vnto their harmes:  
 So thinke Rogero and Marfisa then,  
 Did deale among these bands of armed men.

Simile.  
 Virgil writes  
 that Bees do fight  
 for battels many  
 times.

17

Now Aldiger and Richardet no lesse,  
 Vpon Maganza merchants lay on lode,  
 Both free to set their kintmen from distresse,  
 And for they hated them like snake or tode,  
 They that the cause nor quarrell could not guesse,  
 And saw their Captaine dead, made short abode:  
 Their plate, their coine and treasure all they yeeld,  
 And were the first that faintly left the field.

Horace: Canis  
 peris & angue.

18

So fie from Lions silly herds of Goates,  
 That haue deuourd and spoild them at their list,  
 And torne their sides, their hanches and their throtes,  
 Yet none of them their fellows dare assist:  
 So fled these men, and cast away their coates,  
 And weapons all, and durst no more resist:  
 Nor maruell if these two had Lions harts,  
 That ready find such two to take their parts.

Simile.

19

Whose acts at large to tell I do reframe,  
 At which that age did not a little wonder,  
 And now to tell them, men would thinke I faine,  
 Yea though my words their actions far were vnder:  
 For at one blow oft horse and man was slaine,  
 From head to foote whole bodies clou'n in funder,  
 And either standing on their reputation,  
 Bred for their toes a costly emulation.

20

Still tone of them markt tothers valiant deed,  
 And each of tother fell in admiration,  
 She deemes him Mars, or one of Mars his seed,  
 And farre aboue all humane generation:  
 And saue he was deceiued in her weed,  
 He would haue giu'n her equall commendation,  
 And likned her, as well he liken might,  
 Vnto Bellona for her valiant fight.

21

Thus of two bands these foure the battell wonne,  
 And all their stuffe and carriages they got,  
 The prisoners loosed, their bands were all vndone,  
 Their foes all foild, such is their happie lot:  
 The man was well whose horse could twittest runne,  
 Small count they make of amble or of trot:  
 The tone side leaue their gold on asses laden,  
 The tother of their captiues are forbeaten.



*Flanders hath  
excelled for ar-  
ms.*

22  
The noble vanquishers do seize the pray,  
Which was both rich and sumptuous to behold,  
Of Flanders worke an hanging rich and gay,  
(To hang a stately roome) of silke and gold;  
They also found rich clothing and array,  
That should haue bene vnto *Lansusa* sold,  
And namely mong the rest a gallant gowne,  
Embroiderd round with cost of many a crowne.

23  
They further found good vittels and good store,  
Wine bottels coole and fresh, and good of tast,  
With which (not hauing eate that day before)  
They do agree to baite and breake their fast,  
And eu'ry one prepares himselfe therefore,  
And to that end their curats they vnlast:  
Now when *Marfisa* had put off her beauer,  
To be a woman eu'ry one perceaued her.

24  
Her golden haire trust vp with carelesse art,  
Her forehead faire, and full of stately grace,  
Her eye, her lip, and eu'ry other part  
So futing to her comely thape and face,  
As bred eu'n then in eich beholders hart,  
A reu'rend loue and wonder in the eares (them),  
And straight they askt her name: the which she told  
And with as great delight she doth behold them.

25  
But she her selfe farre more then all the rest,  
*Rogeros* shap and person doth regard,  
His vallew great, his vnappall'd brest,  
Before the others all she much regard,  
To him alone her speeches she addrest,  
Of him alone she would her speech were bredd:  
Thus she in him, and he delighted in her,  
The while the other had prepard their dinner.

26  
The place they din'd in was a pleasant caue,  
And one of foure that famous *Merlin* wrought,  
Where he in milke white marble did ingraue  
Strange stories, which things future strangely taught.  
The very images seemd life to haue:  
And sauing they were dumb, you wold haue thought  
Both by their lookes and by their liuely features,  
That they had mou'd, and had bene liuing creatures.

27  
*Of this looke in  
the Allegory.* From out a desert wood an vgly beast  
There seemd to come, whose shap was thus defined  
An asses eares, a wolfe in head and brest,  
A carkas all with pinching famine pined,  
A Lions grizly iaw, but all the rest  
To foxlike shap did seeme to be inclined:  
In England, France, in Italy and Spaine,  
Yea all the world this monster seemd to raigine.

28  
Where ere this cruell monster set his foote,  
He kild and spoild of eu'ry sort and state,  
No height of birth or state with him did boote,  
He conquerd kings and clownes, all in a rate,  
Yea this beasts powre had tane so deepe a roote,  
It enterd in Christs vicars sacred gate,  
And ed Cardinals and Bishops chiefe,  
And bred a scandall eu'n in our beliete.

29  
Vnto this beast men seemd to bow and bend,  
This beast brake through each wail and eu'r  
No citie could it felie there from defend,  
Strong castels made from it but weake defence,  
In fine, her powre did seeme so farre extend,  
That many were so fond and void of sence,  
To thinke and to beleuee this monster fell,  
Had powre of all things both in heau'n and hell.

30  
But when this beast had rang'd a while, behold  
One wearing on his head a lawrell crowne,  
With three that wore the flowre de luce of gold,  
Embroiderd richly on their purple gowne,  
And with these three a stately Lion bold,  
Did ioine his force to put the monster downe;  
The titles and the names that them concerned,  
Might in their garments plainly be discerned.

31  
One that with sword the beast thrust in the paunch,  
Was he whose praise no tin shall euer smother,  
*Francis* the first of that name king of France,  
Of Austria *Maximillen* is mother,  
Then *Charles* the fift that with a mightie launce  
Smites through the beast from one side to the tother:  
The fourth that in the brest with arrow wounds him  
Was *Henrie* th'eight, the third expounds him.

*Of King Henry  
the 8. look in the  
historie of  
booke.*

32  
Leo the tenth, the Lion fierce is called,  
Who chaft him, and fast caught him by the eare,  
And in the chafe the beast so tyrd and galled,  
As others tooke him while he held him there:  
By this the world seemd freed that wast was thrall'd,  
By this men seemd secure and void of feare,  
Seing that beast whose look late made them tremble  
Stroyd by the powre of this to braue assembl.

33  
This Gory so set forth (as I haue told)  
With costly workmanship great pleasure bred,  
In all their minds that did the same behold,  
And on this sight more then their meat they fed,  
And chiefe *Marfisa* wisht to heare it told,  
What men these were, if men already dead,  
Or else a prophecie of things ensuing,  
By madden skill, laid ope to each mans vewing.

34  
The a *Malagigi* was by them requested,  
As one in *Mathematikes* scene right well,  
And had the method thereof so digested  
As he all hidden mysteries could tell,  
To shew what monster thus the world molested  
And who be these that him from expell: (them),  
For though they saw their names they did not know  
But he they knew by his great skil could shew them.

35  
Know then (quoth he) that these whose names appeare  
In marble pure, did neuer liue as yet,  
But long time hence, after six hundred yeare,  
To their great praise in princely throne shall sit,  
*Merlin* the English prophet plaft them here  
In *Arthurs* time, and by his passing wit,  
Set here (as yet) their vnperformed deeds,  
And noted all their names vpon their weeds.

This



*Of a faith of the  
in rage.*

*Communemque  
præsum seu lumina  
solis & auræ.  
Cautus humum  
longo signatus  
lunæ messor.*

*of co-  
ou ness and  
berry.*

*Sentence.  
Looke in the  
Allegory.*

*Malca.*

36  
This beast you saw, had first her habitation  
amongst the wicked fiends of hell,  
there till that wicked generation,  
(It came the iron age) on earth did dwell,  
When none durst trust without an obligation,  
When fraud first came tween them that buy and sel,  
And when the mightie (to their great reproch)  
First on the poore mens liuings did incroch.

37  
Then first this monster cruell got abrode,  
And euer since her powre doth still increase,  
And wheresoere she maketh her abode,  
There is no friendship firme, nor godly peace;  
Conscience and iustice vnder foote are trod,  
Good gouernment and wholsome lawes do cease,  
That *Python Phæbus* kild with thousand darts,  
Was monster lesse then this by thousand parts.

38  
Thus *Malagigi* said, and then he told  
Who those should be that should the monster kill,  
That should come then when as the world were old,  
That should renew each good, and mend each ill,  
Whose names in sacred story to be inrold  
Deserue, and to be praised and honoured still,  
That should in time to come, as he did conster,  
With bountie kill that terrible monster.

39  
Those five I nam'd, and more by five times five,  
Mine author names, that holpe to slay the beast.  
*Rogero* and the rest, the time did driue,  
In such like talke during the present feast,  
And ere they rest, behold there did arriue  
Vnto this caue vnwares another guest,  
By name that maid from whom of late by force,  
Fierce *Rodomont* had tane *Rogeros* horle.

40  
She hauing heard by hap vpon the way,  
Her mistris brother was at *Merlins* caue,  
Where she had bin her selfe an other day,  
Not thinking now *Rogero* there to haue;  
Him when she saw, she not one word doth say  
To him, nor any show or inckling gaue,  
Like one that knew so well to do her arrant.  
As she durst go, sometime beside her warrant.

41  
But vnto *Richardet* she frames her tale,  
Yet so as tother might her speeches heare,  
How one com her a gallant courser stale,  
Which *adamant* her mistris held full deare,  
That she (quoth she) *Frontyno* she did call,  
And I had led thirty mile well neare,  
*Marfilia* to where she bad me stay,  
And promised me to meet me at a day.

42  
So fond as I, I feared no mans force,  
Nor doubted no mans will to do me wrong,  
When once I should but shew them how the horle  
Vnto *Renaldos* sister did belong:  
Yet one fierce Pagan voide of all remorse,  
Met me, and tooke him from me, and ere long  
Did meet a fo, with whom I fighting left him,  
That hath I hope by this of life bereft him.

43  
*Rogero* with this tale was so much moued,  
That scant hereof *Hyppalca* made an end,  
But *Richardet* to straight by him was moued,  
Yea and coniurd, as he would be his frend,  
That this attempt might sole by him be proued,  
And (but this damsell) none might him attend:  
That she may bring him to the Pagans fight,  
That tooke away her horle against all right.

44  
Stout *Richardet* (though thinking too much wrong,  
So oft to let another vndertake  
Those enterprises that to him belong)  
Yet sith so earnestly *Rogero* spake,  
He giues consent, and tother staid not long,  
But of the companie his leaue doth take,  
And leaues them all, in wonder great to see,  
That such his worth could in a yong man be.

45  
Now when *Hyppalca* was quite out of sight,  
She opned to *Rogero* all the troth,  
How she that counts him her beloued knight,  
And voweth to be his by tolemne oth,  
Sent her of purpose to him this last night,  
Which she before conceald (as being loth  
Her mistris brother should her counsell know,  
How she that horle vpon him did bestow.)

46  
She told him how that he that tooke the steed,  
Did adde these proud and scornfull words beside,  
Because it is *Rogeros* horle indeed,  
So much the rather on the horle I ride,  
And if he will be grieu'd at this my deed,  
Tell him I do not mind my selfe to hide,  
For I am *Rodomont* (he said) whose name  
Where ere I passe filleth the world with fame.

47  
One might haue seene it in *Rogeros* face,  
In how great dudgeon this great wrong he tooke,  
Both for the gift and giuer in like case,  
And grosse abuse, for which he did not looke:  
He thinks what infamy and foule disgrace  
It were to him, so great despite to brooke;  
Which if he would, then iustly eu'ry body,  
Might take him for a dastard and a nody.

48  
Wherefore with heart vpon reuenge full set,  
He followeth forthwith his female guide,  
She that did thinke the fray vnparted yet,  
That *Rodomont* and *Mandricardo* tride,  
By darke blind wayes, the nearest she could get,  
Vnto the place directly she did ride,  
But as you heard, they had deferd the quarell,  
And hasted thence to help their Liege from perell.

49  
And as I toucht before, their hap them brought  
Vnto the foresaid *Merlins* famous caue,  
There where before good *Malagigi* taught,  
What secret meaning all the pictures haue:  
Now had *Marfisa* (by the rest besought)  
Put on a womans garment passing braue,  
Which lately for *Lanfusa* had bin made,  
And so attyrd, refreshit her in the shade.

*Sentence.*

*Rodomont.  
Mandricard.  
Doralice.*



Sentence.

50

When that Tartarian Prince had spide this dame,  
Straight in his mind he plots this new found drift,  
I will (thought he) by conquest win the same,  
And giue her *Rodomontee* as my gift,  
(As though that loue were but a sport and game,  
That might be sold and changed for a shift)  
For why (he thought) what needs a man complaine,  
If leeing one, he do another gaine?

51

Wherefore the toethers damage to repaire,  
And that he might his owne in quiet haue,  
And for *Marfisa* seemly was and faire,  
As no man need a dame more comely craue:  
He doth forthwith vnto them make repaire,  
Denouncing straight the challenge stout and braue,  
That he with thole foure knights at tilt wold runne,  
Till they slue him, or he their Ladie wonne.

52

Straight stept out *Malagige* and *Vinian*,  
Both prest in her defence to breake a speare,  
Nor fearing to encounter man to man,  
With those two Pagans they saw present there;  
But when the fray betweene them now began,  
Fierce *Rodomont* stood still and doth forbear,  
As comming thither with another mind,  
And not to change his purpose first assignd.

53

Now of the brothers *Vinian* was the first,  
That with great might the Pagan did inuade,  
Vpon whose crest in vaine his speare he burst,  
His blow no hurt it did, no signe it made,  
His force was leaft, so was his fortune worst,  
For *Mandricard* (more perfect in his trade)  
With so great strength and skill his speare inforced,  
That he was ouerthrowne and quite vnhorfed.

54

To venge his brother, *Malagigi* thought,  
But of his thought he quickly was deceiued,  
His force thus ouermatcht preuailed nought,  
From off his saddle he was quickly heaued.  
Next *Aldiger* his comming dearly bought,  
For in his side a great wound he receaued,  
So downe vpon the grasse he fell halfe dead,  
His visage waxing pale, his armor red.

55

Then *Richardetto* came with mightie lance,  
And prou'd himselfe by his great force to be  
Worthy the name of *Palladine* of France,  
As oft his foes did feelee, his friends did see;  
But at this time one ouerthwart mischance  
Did hap, that downe among the rest lay he,  
His horse wherein he put so great a trust,  
Fell downe with him, and tumbled in the dust.

56

When as no other champion did appeare,  
But all were ouerthrowne in this late fight,  
Thinking this conquest now obtained cleare,  
Without more stay he from his horse doth light,  
And comming vnto her with smiling cheare,  
Faire dame (quoth he) you now are mine by right,  
You cannot it denie, or once excuse it,  
For by the lawes of battell so we vse it.

57

Indeed (*Marfisa* said) it were no wrong,  
And I were yours I grant by law of warre,  
If I were theirs, or did to them belong,  
That you haue foiled in this present iarre,  
But I shall make you know I hope ere long,  
You misse your marke, your aime did greatly erre,  
I am mine owne, mine owner is within me,  
He that will haue me, from my selfe must win me.

58

I handle can (quoth she) both sword and speare,  
And haue ere this made more then one man blec.  
Then cald she for her armor which was there,  
Which by a page was brought to her with speed,  
Off go'th her gowne, and for she still did weare  
A slender trusse beneath her womans weed,  
Her well shapt limbs therein were plainly scene,  
In shape like *Mars*, in face like *Ægypt's* Queene.

Cleopatra.

59

When at all peeces she was armed round,  
She vauert nimbly vp in't her seate,  
And twife or thrife she makes her horse to bound,  
To bate a little of his furious heate,  
And makes a turne or t's about the ground,  
Then turnes she to her to do her feate;  
Such was (*Iudge*) *Penthesilea's* fight,  
Against *Achilles* famous Greekish knight.

60

Thus each themselves vpon their horse aduances,  
And with their couched speares forthwith they run,  
Vp in a thousand splinters flies the lances,  
But vnto them no hurt at all is done:  
The Pagan greatly maruels how it chanches,  
That she should scape, and curies *Moone* and *Sun*;  
And she with her successe as ill content,  
Blasphemeth eke the heau'ns and firmament.

61

Then they assayd with swords most dreadfull dint,  
To wound the one the tother, and to kill,  
Their strokes were such as might haue pierst y flint,  
And to their force was ioyned passing skill  
They lay on lode amaine, and do not stint,  
The sound doth all the place with eccho fill,  
But neuer was it more for their behoofe,  
To haue their armour of so passing prooffe.

62

But while they now did most apply the fray,  
Fierce *Rodomont* doth step them both betwixt,  
And blames him much for making such delay,  
Of that which late by him was firmly fixt;  
And then with courteous speech he her doth pray,  
With lowly words and loftie, quaintly mixt,  
That she would helpe to aid *Trata* lonne,  
Whose tents were in much danger to c'wonne.

63

To this request *Marfisa* doth assent,  
As well to helpe king *Agramant* thereby,  
As for she came to France with that intent,  
The forces of the *Palladines* to try;  
This while *Rogero*, wroth and malcontent,  
After the stealer of his horse doth hie;  
And hauing found of him the perfect tracke,  
He sends againe his guide *Hippalca* backe.

And



64  
And for he thought that none could do it better,  
    essenger he makes her of his mind,  
As ds by her his lately written letter,  
P ptefting he will ftill continue kind,  
And that he doth himfelfe acknowledge debter,  
And would himfelfe to her for euer bind,  
    onely prayes her for a time excufe  
    abfence, which he would not, might he chufe.

65  
Wit s difpatch *Hippalca* went her way,  
And came to mount *Albano* that fame night.  
*Rogero* made but very little ftay,  
Vntill he had *Frontino* in his fight;  
Which feen and known, forthwith there was no way,  
But he will haue his horfe againe, or fight  
With him, that had with fo vnnoble force,  
The damfell robbed of the gallant horfe.

66  
And ftraight in fhew of arre he coucht his fpeare,  
And to his face the *P* an he defide,  
But *Rodomont* doth pa enfly forbear,  
Eu'n as a *Iob*, and all his ords abides;  
Not that of him he had ne sparke of feare,  
For his great value often ad bin tride,,  
But that the danger of Lord and King,  
Weyd more w en any other thing.

67  
Wherefore he gently tels him for what caufe  
He may not fight, and him exhorted to,  
What all diuine, and what all humane lawes,  
Vnto his Prince commands a man to do.  
I (faid *Rogero*) am content to pawfe,  
In this refpect, and make a truce with you,  
So that this horfe againe to me you render,  
Which fo to take, your reafon was but flender.

68  
Now while thefe two herein do fquare and braue,  
The Tartar king doth vnto them approach,  
And when he faw what armes *Rogero* gaue,  
He fet another brabble ftraight abroch:  
Mine are (quoth he) thefe armes that now you haue,  
How dare you on my titles thus incroch?  
The caufe why *Mandricardo* fpake thefe words,  
Was that *Rogero* gaue the King of burds.

69  
An Eagle argent in a field of blew,  
*Rogero* gaue, whilom the creft of Troy,  
As one at thence deriu'd his pedegrew,  
An by due defcent the fame enioy;  
    ereof *Mandricardo* nothing knew,  
Or nought 'd, and calld it but a toy,  
And too it as an iniury and fcorne,  
To fe c fame by any other worne.

70  
Fo imfelfe did giue, as for his cote,  
That bird that bare vp *Ganimed* on hie,  
Ere fince he wan (as I before did note)  
Don *Hectors* armes, and wan fuch praife thereby,  
The good fuccesse hereof makes him afote,  
So that he did *Rogero* ftraight defie,  
I hall (quoth he) fome better manners teach thee,  
Then in fuch lawcie fort to ouer reach thee.

71  
As wood well drie will quickly fall on fire,  
If fo a man a little do it blow;  
So was *Rogero* kindled now in ire,  
To heare the Pagan reprehend him fo;  
Thou thinkft (quoth he) to haue thy fond defire,  
By charging me now with a double fo,  
But know that I my partie good will make,  
From him mine horfe, from thee mine arms to take.

72  
Did not we two about this matter boord?  
And then to take thy life I did abftaine,  
Because that by your fide I faw no fword;  
But now fith you begin this brawle againe,  
This fhall be fight in deed, that was but word,  
And that your creft fhall turne you to much paine,  
Which vnto me defcent and propagation  
Hath left, but you do hold by vfurpation.

73  
Nay thou vfurpft, the tother ftraight doth fay;  
And with that word he *Durindana* drew,  
That fword that erft *Orlando* fang away;  
And then a cruell fray was like enlews:  
But ftraight the tother two did caufe them ftay,  
And chiefly *Rodomont* did feeme to rew,  
That *Mandricard* of lightneffe shewd fuch token,  
That twife by him his promife had bin broken.

74  
Firft when to get *Marfifa* he had thought,  
He had conflicted more then twife or thrife,  
And now with tother quarrelled for nought,  
About a bird or fome fuch fond deuife:  
Nay then (quoth he) if needs you wold haue fought,  
We two fhould trie the title of our prife,  
Which by confent fhould ftand ftill vndecided,  
Vntill our Princes fafetie were prouided.

75  
Wherefore for fhame do as you haue agreed,  
And let vs ceate and lay all quarrels by,  
And when our Prince from danger fhall be freed,  
Then firft betweene vs two the matter trie,  
And after if you liue, you may proceed  
To fight it out with him, and fo will I:  
Though well I wot, when I haue done with you,  
But little will remaine for him to do.

76  
Tuff (faith the Tartar Prince) for him nor thee,  
Nor all the world befide, I paffe one ftaw,  
For though you fight, or though you do agree,  
Of neither of you both I ftand in aw,  
As water in a fpring, fo ftrengh in me  
Shall ftill fupply much more then you can draw;  
I hope by that time I haue done my feate,  
From head to foot with blood Ile make you sweate.

77  
Thus one ill word another doth draw on,  
And wrathfull *Mandricard* them both defies:  
*Rodomont* would haue peace, but they would none,  
If this fpeake sharpe, then that more sharpe replies;  
If one ftife be compounded, yet anon  
Another ftife as bad or worfe doth rife;  
In vaine *Marfifa* labours to compound them,  
For more and more vntoward ftill the f and them.

his di-  
fede. ce.

The Eagle.

The Eagle was  
to reare up  
Ganimed to Lu-  
piter.



78

*Simile.**Meadow and a-  
rable ground.*

Eu'n as the painfull husbandman doth thinke,  
By care to keepe the riuer in his bounds,  
That swels with raine, readie to passe the brinke,  
And ouerflow his mowd or lowed grounds,  
He strengthens eu'ry place that seems to shrinke,  
Yet more and more the water still abounds,  
And while he stops one vent, another groweth,  
Till ouer all perforce at last it floweth.

79

So when the dame, of whom I last made mention,  
Saw how Rogero stout and Mandricard,  
With Rodomont continue in contention,  
And each would seeme for tother two too hard,  
She willing to compound this sharpe dissention,  
Perwades them, but they little it regard,  
For still as one at her request forbears,  
The other two are at it by the cares.

80

When as she saw their furie still increase,  
Let either vs (quoth she) our Prince assist,  
And in the meane time let all quarrels cease;  
Or if you in this fury still persist,  
Then I with Mandricard will haue no peace.  
Do herein (quoth Rogero) as you list,  
For I resolued am to haue my horse,  
Although it be by faire meanes or by force.

81

Then do (said Rodomont) your worst and best,  
For with that horse part I not agree,  
But here before you all I do protest,  
That if our King by this stay damag'd be,  
And that for want of ayd he be distrest,  
The cause thereof did not proceed of me;  
Rogero little weyes his protestation,  
But firmly holds his first determination.

82

And at the Sarzan furiously he flies,  
And with his shoulder gaue him such a thrust,  
He lost his stirrups, and so loofd his thies,  
That hard he scaped lying in the dust.  
What? hold Rogero, Mandricardo cries,  
Either not fight, or fight with me you must,  
And in great rage, as that same word he spake,  
Rogeros beauer with great might he strake.

83

The blow was such, as made him forward leane,  
And ere that he himfelfe againe could reare,  
Vpon him smote the sonne of Vlyen,  
With so great strength as no strength might it beare  
That had his armor bene of temper meane,  
No doubt they had an end made of him there:  
Rogeros hands flie ope with senselesse paine,  
The tone his sword, the tother leaues his raine.

84

His horse away beares him about the greene,  
And Balifard his blade is left behind:  
Marfisa that had to Rogero beene  
Fellow in armes that day, was grieu'd in mind,  
To see him vsd so hardly them betweene,  
And being strong of limbes, and stout by kind,  
She smiteth Mandricardo on the crowne  
So har wants not much to fell him downe.

*Rodomont was  
sonne of Vliens  
king of Algier.*

85

After Rogero Rodomont doth get him,  
And now Frontino had welnigh bin wonn  
But by the way stout Richardetto met him  
And with him ioynd his cousin Bouos sonne;  
Tone iustles him, and furdre off doth set him,  
The tother, namely Vinian, doth runne,  
Vnto Rogero that by this was waked,  
And lends his sword vnto his right hand naked.

86

Now backe he doth returne, enrag'd with scorn  
Minding to pay his damage home againe,  
Eu'n as a Lion, whom the Bull hath borne  
Vpon his head, is full of fierce disdain,  
Flies at him still, nor feares his cruell herne,  
His anger making him forget his paine,  
And on his beauer with such force he thundered,  
As though he wold his head in twain haue sundered.

87

And sure he had performed it very neare,  
It Balifarda had bene in his hand,  
Which he set fall, as you fore did heare.  
Now when as Discord how things did stand,  
She thinks no peace can offibly be here,  
And taking Pride her sister by the hand,  
Now sister let vs turne to our Friers,  
For here (quoth she) are ancient fiers.

88

And so away they went, and let them go:  
And let me tell you how Rogero sped,  
Who gaue to Rodomont so fierce a blow,  
That such a great amazement in him bred,  
That twise or thrise he reeled to and fro;  
Frontino with his senselesse master fled,  
Also his sword had falne out of his fist,  
But that a chaine did tie it to his wrist.

89

This while Marfisa held the tother tacke,  
And yet on either side the conquest swayd,  
Each had so good an armor on their backe,  
Of piercing it they need not be afraid,  
Yet by a chance Marfisa hapt to lacke,  
And likewise hapt to haue Rogeros ayd,  
For in a turne she made, her horse did trip,  
And in the durt vpon one side did slip.

90

And as againe he labourd vp to rise,  
The cruell Tartar iustled him so crosse,  
That on his side the horse constrained lye  
Foundring againe vpon the slimie mosse;  
Which when Rogero from aloofe espies,  
How neare she was to danger ground and losse,  
He steps to Mandricard, fiercely assaile him,  
While Rodomont stands mazed, his tentes falling him.

91

The Tartar doth as fiercely him resist,  
But yet Rogero strake so great a blow,  
Both to auenge himfelfe and her assist,  
Whom Mandricardo hapt to ouerthrow,  
That sure I thinke that blow had little mist,  
Quite to haue clou'n him to the saddle bow,  
Sauc that the Tartars armor was so hard,  
And that Rogero wanted Balifard.



92

By this the Sarzanking againe did wake  
And seeing none but *Richardetto* neare,  
s to minde how for *Rogeros* lake,  
That youth to him was troublesome while care.  
Straight with great rage he toward him doth make,  
Minding to make him buy that curtsie deare:  
And sure good *Richardetto* had repented it,  
But that his cosin with great art preuented it.

93

*Malagige*, whose skill was great,  
In all that doth to magicke art pertaine,  
With words that he without booke could repeat,  
Did coniure vp a spryte of hellish traine,  
And by this meanes he works a passing feat:  
For (though he namd no place) he doth ordaine,  
This sprite in *Doralices* horse to enter,  
And beare her thence away at all aduenter.

94

The sprite thus coniured quickly doth his part,  
Into the damfels gentle nag he crept,  
And so his quiet nature did peruart,  
That one the sudden artie foot he leapt,  
And ten foot high, yet with so easie start,  
That *Doralicee* still the dle kept,  
Yet cride she out, in doubt to haue miscarried,  
thence was carried.

95

Forthwith to helpe her *Rodomonte* go'th,  
Because she fled, and cride to him for aid,  
To stay behind the Tartar is as loth,  
For feare betweene them he may be betraid,  
He leaues *Rogero* and *Marfisa* both,  
Nor in the place so little time he staid,  
As to accord with them vpon some truce,  
Or make at least some mannerly excuse.

96

This while *Marfisa* was got vp againe,  
And now she means to venge her on her fo,  
But he was gone, at which in great disdaine,  
She frets and chafes, that he had seru'd her so,  
*Rogero* chafes as much, for all in vaine,  
He knew it would be, after them to go:  
They know their steeds (and this doth grieue them  
Cannot out run *Frontin* & *Brigliadore*. (more)

97

Wherefore supposing (as it was indeed)  
That they were gone vnto the Turkish host,  
To follow them forthwith these two agreed,  
Though not to follow as they went in post,  
Not doubting but when *Agramant* were freed,  
At leasure them to meet, and to their cost:  
They onward go, but yet *Rogero* ment,  
To bid his friends farewell afore he went.

98

Downe from his horse he gently doth descend,  
And *Richardetto* he aside doth take,  
And promist him for ay to be his frend,  
And to his noble sister for his take:  
To whom (said he) I pray you me commend,  
Yet in such prettie sort the same he spake,  
His inward loue was not thereby detected,  
Nor her great loue to him, one whit suspected.

99

Thus solemne leaue once tane on either side  
And profers of great loue and curtsie made,  
To him was hurt, and all the rest beside,  
As still among great nobles is the trade,  
*Rogero* with *Marfisa* on doth ride,  
But how they did the Christen campe inuade,  
And what great losse did *Charls* thereby receiue,  
In next ensuing booke you may perceiue.

In the xxvi. booke I obserue that *Aldiger* did discreetly refuse the challenge of *Marfisa*, which might perhaps haue hindered his better purpose in rescuing of his kinsmen. In *Hippalca* we may note the wisdom of a warie messenger, that knows as well to hold her peace as to speake. Lastly in *Rogero*, *Rodomont*, *Mandricard* and *Marfisa*, the confused effects of discord. Morall.

The Princes named by mine author to be killers & vanquishers of the miserable monster (as I called it) by which auarice is ment, are so famous in all writings of this age, that I need not speake of them, specially our king *Henrie* the eight, whose bountie and magnificence can neuer be forgotten while this realme shall be peopled, or any histories read. Historie.

This description of the monster of couetousnesse, is (in my fancy) very well handled by mine Author, far beyond the like in *Dant* who maketh her onely like a Wolfe, pined with famine; But *Ariosto* goeth farder, and more significantly, describing her first to be ugly, because of all vices it is the most hateful; eares of an asse, being for the most part ignorant, or at the least carelesse of other mens good opinions; a Wolfe in head and breast, namely rauenous and neuer satisfied; a Lions griaw, terrible and deuouring; a foxe in all the rest, wily and craftie, and timorous of those that are stronger then himselfe: all which applications are so proper and so plaine, as it is needlesse to stand vpon them. Allegoric.

euery fondly haue surmised and published the same in print, that this was alluded to the Bishop of Rome, but how absurd the imagination is, the praise of the Pope, then liuing, following in the 32. staffe doth plainly shew. But *Fornarius* supposeth it to be meant rather by some temporall Prince of Italie, that with his couetousnesse oppressed the people, and therefore might be, not vnfitly, termed such a monster. Allusion.

Here end the notes of the xxvj. booke.

T ii







## THE ARGUMENT.

*Rogero and those other Pagan kings,  
 Make Charles againe to Paris wals retire.  
 Among the Turks new seed of quarrell springs,  
 And kindles in their hearts a quenchlesse fire:  
 Which all their campe in great disorder brings.  
 Agramant to appease them doth desire;  
 Fierce Rodomont doth leaue the campe in wrath,  
 Because his mistres him forsaken hath.*

*mens wits  
 sudden the  
 ms.*



**A**Mong the many rare and  
 speciall gifts,  
 That in the femal sex are  
 found to fit,  
 This one is chiefe, that  
 they at sodayne shifts,  
 Giue best aduice, and show  
 most readie wit:  
 But man, except he thinks  
 and chews, and sifts,

How eu'ry part may answer tother fit,  
 By rash aduice doth often ouershoot him,  
 And doth attempt the things that do not boot him.

**2**  
 Good *Malagigi* thought he had done wisely,  
 In making *Doralice* to Paris fly,  
 But if he had the matter wayd precisely,  
 (Though *Richa. letto* was perseru'd thereby)  
 He would haue sure confest it done vnwisely.  
 His safetie with so great a losse to buy:  
 For this act (which he then not forethought)  
 offe vnspokeable to *Charles* was wrought.

**3**  
 Alas how might he haue better done,  
 If he had made the fiend the wench conuay,  
 Vnder the fall or rising of the Sunne?  
 So West, or East, or any other way,  
 Where *Rodomont* and *Agricane* lonne,  
 From Paris wals might haue gone far astray?  
 But he that euer wisheth Christs euill,  
 So at this time did proue himselfe a Deuill.

**4**  
 The fiend her silly horse most slyly enterd,  
 And, not before prescribed any place,

He quickly all the company distemperd;  
 Nor bare he her away a common pace,  
 But ouer brooks, and streams, and ditches venterd:  
 She crying still for ayd as in such case,  
 Nor leaues her beatt to sling, run, shone and stampe  
 Vntill the quite was past the Christen campe.

**5**  
 There did she come eu'n as she could desire,  
 Among the midst of *Agramantes* traine,  
 And there at last she found the king her fire,  
 That of *Granata* did possesse the raigne:  
 The while her louers both themselues do tire,  
 And in pursuing her do take great paine,  
 By tracing her with as great toile and care,  
 As huntsmen do with pleasure trace the Hare.

**6**  
 Now *Charles* tis time for thee to looke about,  
 Vnto thy wals and strengths in time betake thee.  
 Thou neuer canst escape this plunge, I doubt,  
 Except thou stir vp quickly, and awake thee,  
 Thy strength, the lamps of France are quenched out  
 I meane thy trends & champions chiefe forsake thee  
*Orlando* thee, his wits haue him relinquished,  
 And all his vertues drown'd and quite extinguished.

**7**  
 Likewise *Renaldo*, though not fully mad,  
 Yet little lesse then mad seekes there and beare,  
 For faire *Angelica*, and is full sad,  
 To see that he of her no news can heare,  
 For why a certaine old inchaunter had,  
 Told him a forged tale, that toucht him neare,  
 How she, to whom of loue he made profession,  
 Was in *Orlandos* keeping and possession.



8

This made him at the first so loth to go,  
To England, whither he was sent for ayd;  
This made him backe againe to hasten so,  
Then when the Turks his presence so dismayd,  
And thinking after that, some news to know,  
By priuie search the Nunries all he laid,  
And Castels all, in Paris and about,  
To see if he by search could finde her out.

9

But when he heard of her no news nor tiding,  
And that *Orlando* there likewise did want,  
He could in Paris make no longer biding,  
Doubting his riuall fought him to supplant,  
But vp and downe about the countrie riding  
Sometime to Braua, sometime to Anglant,  
Supposing still *Orlando* her had hidden,  
Lest of his pleasure he might be forbidden.

10

And thus the wicked fiend his time espyde,  
To giue the Christens such a fatall blo,  
When as these two, in whom they most affide,  
Were absent now their Prince and countrie fro;  
Furder for souldiers of the Turkish side,  
All that were valiant men, or counted so,  
Were all against this time entiled hither,  
Wholly vniting all their force together.

11

*Gradasso* stout, and *Sacrapantee* scarce,  
That in that charmed castell long had dwelt,  
Which th'English Duke, as I did late rehearse,  
Dissolued quite, and causd like snow to melt.  
These two likewise the Christen campe do pearce,  
The forces of these two the Christens felt.  
*Rogero* and *Marfisa* made lesse hast,  
And so it happend, they arriued last.

12

The first two couple neare the Christens tents,  
Did meet, and then after long consultation,  
Each vnto other shewing their intents,  
They all conclude with on determination,  
And all of them to this giue their consents,  
In spite of all the Christen generation,  
To succour *Agramant* their Lord and Liege,  
And mauger *Charls* his might, to raise the siege.

13

Straight in one crew they foure together knie,  
Breake through y<sup>e</sup> Christen watch by force amaine,  
Neither in hugger mugger did they it,  
But crying lowdly, *Africa* and *Spaine*,  
They lay on lode, and eu'rie one they hit,  
Dead or astonished doth there remaine:  
Alarum then all ore the campe was rung,  
Though few could tel the cause fro whence it sprung.

14

Some thought the *Gascoigns* or the *Switzers* bold,  
By mutiny had made some insurrection,  
And their surmise vnto the Emp'ror told,  
Who came with minde to giue them due correction  
But when he did the bodies dead behold,  
Incurable vntill the resurrection,  
He standeth still like one with wender mazed,  
And on their wofull wounds long time he gazed.

15

Eu'n as a man that with a bolt of thunder,  
Hath seene his dwelling house smit vnaware,  
Straight searcheth with no little feare nor  
Which way the bolt did passe that causd his  
So *Charles* that saw mens bodies cut in sunder,  
Inquires, of so great wounds who authours are,  
And when he knew how few they were that did  
Did wish himselfe there present to forbid it.

16

This while *Marfisa* on another side,  
With good *Rogero* do them fore impeach,  
And through the campe in spite of them they ride,  
Killing or wounding all within their reach:  
As in a migne that lies close vnespide,  
With trayns of gunpowder men make a breach:  
Or as a tempest goes along by coast,  
So suddenly these two brake through the host.

17

Many that scapt the tother foun by flight,  
In flying, fell vnwares vpon hefe twaine;  
And felt by prooffe that neither flight nor fight,  
Can saue a man ordained to be flaine.  
Eu'n as a Foxe, whom smoke and fire doth fright,  
So as he dare not in the round remaine,  
Bolts out, and through the thicke smoke & fire she flieth,  
Into the *Tariers* mouth where he dieth.

18

Thus last of all, by this most noble paire,  
The Christen armie once againe was furnished,  
And then to *Agramant* they all repaire,  
Who welcoms them, and at their value wondred.  
Now hope and courage, driue away dispaire,  
One Turke, of Christens straight beside an hundred,  
So great a boldnesse in their mind doth rise,  
By helpe and succour of these new supplies.

19

Straight way on both sides out their men were brought  
Their standers and their banners all displaid,  
And there that day a bloodie field was fought,  
And neither side made shew to be dismayd,  
For hopes alike in either armie wrought,  
Tones passed conquests, tothers present aid.  
But fortune on the Christens so did frowne,  
That they againe were driu'n vnto the towne.

20

The passing force of cruell *Rodomount*,  
The strength and value great of *Mandricard*,  
*Rogeros* vertue, that doth all surmount,  
*Gradassos* courage of no small regard,  
*Marfisas* heart, of priue pall account,  
The skill of *Sacrapant*, with best compar'd,  
These were the causers of good losse,  
And sent the Christens whom by weepin crosse.

21

Great store were drown'd in *Sequana* with hast,  
The bridge so narrow was for to receiue them,  
Wishing (as *Dedals* sonne had in time past)  
Some wings wherewith aloft in ayre to heaue them,  
Some thrusting, straued to get them in so fast,  
That strength & breath, & life at last did leaue them  
But that whereby king *Charles* was chiefly shaken  
Was this, that many *Palladyns* were taken.

Thus

Simile.

Simile.

*Horace*  
*Mors & fugace*  
*persequi*  
*fertur*  
*Seas sua cuique*  
*dies.*  
*Simile.*  
*Tariers are*  
*hounds so hunt*  
*the Foxe with.*

Prouerbe.



22

Thus fortune once againe did turne the wheele,  
The good king *Charles* had her, but could not hold  
A this foile this hurt he then did feele, (her,  
It tter made his friends, his foes the bolder:  
The Marquis of Vienna true as Steele,  
Was at that seruice wounded in his shoulder,  
nd many hurt, but none did play his part,  
well that day, as valiant *Brandmart*.

23

He tly bare it out, no little space,  
An hen he saw there was no other way,  
Then to the furie prudently gaue place,  
And spard himselfe, against another day:  
Now once againe is *Charles* in wofull case,  
Now once againe to Paris siege they lay.  
Young Orphans, and old widdows prayre and cries,  
Againe vnto Gods heau'nly throne arise.

24

The Angell *Michel*, w but ill appaid,  
Finding the cause of the good Christens teares,  
He thought his maker as but ill obaid,  
And that he may be bl d therefore he feares:  
He cals himselfe decei and betraid,  
By her should let the Pa ns by the cares,  
From which (it seemed ow she did so vary,  
As she had r r don e quite contrary.

25

Eu'n as the Seruitor whose loue and zeale,  
More then his memory may be commended,  
Forgetting in some waightie cause to deale,  
That by his Lord to him was recommended,  
Would with new care his former fault conceale,  
That er his master know, it may be mended:  
So this good Angel, went not vp to God,  
Till he had done as much as he was bod.

26

aa aine  
naa asom.  
To seeke dame Discord he doth leaue the skie,  
And to the Abby he returnes againe,  
Where her amid the monks he might espie,  
That change old officers, and new ordaine:  
She laughes to see their portises to flie,  
Readie to knocke out one anothers braine:  
The Angel takes her by her painted locks,  
And with great furie giues her many knocks.

27

He brake a crosses handle on her crowne,  
And grievously doth beat her, backe and side,  
The wr ch vpon her mary bones fals downe,  
At t gels feet, and mercie, mercie cride:  
P to the Pagans then, that siege yon towne,  
( ooth he a see that you among them bide,  
For if thi ce againe thou euer trouble,  
Assure selfe, thy payment shalbe double.

28

Discords back and arms were sore with beating  
et thence with all the hast she could she went;  
Sore terrifid with that great Angels threatening,  
ubting againe in like sort to be shent:  
Y in this hast, behind her not forgetting,  
B ows and coles, in steed of those were spent,  
which in many minds, and hearts inuincible,  
She quickly kindle might a fire inquenchible.

29

*Rogero*, *Mandricard*, and *Rodomount*,  
Gan now their former quarrels to renew,  
As making of the Christians small account,  
That vnto Paris walls themselues withdrew:  
Wherefore to *Agramant* they do recount  
Their quarrels, & the grounds of whence they grew,  
Each one by challenge his iust cause auerring,  
The combats order to the king referring.

Discord among  
the Paga princes

30

Also *Marfisa* doth the king intreat,  
That she may end her combat first begunne,  
With as great hast thereof, and as great heat,  
Against the Tartar, *Agricans* sonne:  
This she desires with hast and instance great,  
As one that thinks, great wrong to her was done,  
If in regard of any state or powre,  
She should attend one day, or yet one howre.

31

But *Rodomont* alledgeth that of right,  
He first should end the matter with his riual,  
Sith by accord they first deferd the fight,  
Till time might serue, after their here arriuall:  
No lesse *Rogero* for his horse takes spight,  
And sweares, that whether they agree or striue all,  
To take *Frontino*, no man should restraine him,  
Or elie to fight with him that doth detaine him.

32

Further, the matter farther to entangle,  
The argent Eagle in the azure field,  
Gaue to the Tartar matter more to iangle,  
And quarrell with *Rogero* for his shield:  
And so confusedly he then did wrangle,  
As though with all at once he would the field,  
And in his furie sure he had attempted it,  
But that the kings commandment flat preuented it.

33

Who first with graue and frendly admonition,  
To peace and good attonement did exhort them,  
But when beyond all meanes of composition,  
He saw that wrath and furie did transport them,  
To certaine Marshals, he doth giue commission,  
According to the law of armes to sort them:  
And of all wayes, this was not thought the worst,  
To trie by lots, which two should combat first.

34

Foure little scrowles were put into a pot,  
The first had *Rodomont* and *Mandricard*;  
*Rodomont* and *Rogero* next they wrot;  
The third *Rogero* was and *Mandricard*;  
The fourth paire that must trie the present lot,  
Was stout *Marfisa* ioynd to *Mandricard*:  
When lots were cast, these two first out were tane,  
Fierce *Rodomont* and sonne of *Agrican*.

35

*Mandricard* and *Rogero* next they finde,  
*Rodomont* and *Rogero* next was said:  
*Mandricard* and *Marfisa* staid behinde,  
With which the stately dame was ill apaid:  
Nor was *Rogero* well content in minde,  
Doubting that when they first their parts had plaid,  
The combat will be such betweene them two,  
He and *Marfisa* should haue nought to

T iij



36

Not farre from Paris, lay a leuell ground,  
That was in compasse scant a thousand paces,  
This plain with rayles, and bars was compast round,  
And tents therein were let with equall spaces,  
With scaffolds rayld vpon the outward bound,  
To giue to lookers on conuenient places:  
Now came the time these strifes should be decided,  
Among those knights, those tents were thus deuided.

37

In the pauillion bordring on the East,  
Stands *Rodomont* with visage sterne and grim,  
*Ferraw* and *Sacrapant* were readie prest,  
To put his scally serpents hide on him:  
In tother tent that was vpon the West,  
*Gradasso* and stout *Falsyron* do trim,  
With *Hectors* armes so stately and so faire,  
The valiant Prince, king *Agricane*s haire.

38

On one side in a high tribunall seat,  
Do sit the kings of Affrica and Spaine,  
With *Stordilan* and other Princes great,  
Both feard and followd of the Turkish traine:  
*Happie* was he that day, that could but get,  
A place to sit or stand although with paine,  
On rigde of house, or wall, or top of tree,  
In so great presse, the goodly shew to see.

39

On tother side sat Ladies of great name,  
In stately sort, to see and to be seene,  
That out of diuers realmes and countries came,  
To visite or attend the Spanish queene:  
There *Doralyce* was plait, that louely dame,  
Who wears a robe of crimson cut on greene,  
Yet was the crimson staine'd in such a fashion,  
It rather seemd inclining to carnation.

*Tully noting a  
man of light be-  
haviour, said he  
was a man of  
two colours.*

40

Among the rest *Marfisa* sat that day,  
In short light clothes most sumptuously arrayd,  
The fashion of such kind, as well it may  
Become a warrior, and yet a maid,  
*Hippolita* (I thinke) vsd such array,  
When in the field her banner she displaid,  
Thus each thing was prepared for the fight,  
And each man was prepared for the fight.

41

An Herald in his coate of armes steppes out,  
And of the law of armes expounds the guise,  
Professing to resolute each little doubt,  
That in such case accustoms to arise:  
The people gasing standeth all about,  
Attent with listning ears, and longing eyes,  
When from the tent of valiant *Mandricard*  
Behold a sodaine noyse and sturre was hard.

*Gradasso and  
Mandricard fall  
out, about the  
sword.*

42

The cause was this, the king of Sericane,  
Who (as before I did rehearse) was one,  
That holpe to arme the sonne *Agricane*,  
Taking his sword in hand to put it on,  
Saw written in the handle, *Durindane*,  
And looking more aduiledly thereon,  
He saw *Almontes* armes grau'n on the blade,  
The w<sup>h</sup> strange sight him greatly wonder made.

43

And glad he was when once he did espy it,  
(The chiefeest cause that first to France he came)  
Although before he neuer could come by  
Wherefore he questions straight vpon the  
If *Mandricard* wan it, or did buy it?  
Who in this sort his answer then did frame:  
I with *Orlando* for this sword did quarrell,  
And ear I had it, put my life in perrell.

44

Further vnto this answer he doth ad,  
A farther lie, his glorie to increase,  
How that *Orlando* for the feare he had,  
That for this sword he neuer should haue peace,  
Had throwne away the sword, and faind him mad,  
That thereby he might cause his quarrell cease:  
Doing herein, as is the Castor wonted,  
Bite of his stones, when he is nearly hunted.

*Iuuenal. x. S  
re.*

*quis Eunucho  
ipse facit, cape-  
ens euad  
no Testiculis.*

45

Well (quoeth *Gradasso*) what t<sup>h</sup> *Orlando* ment,  
I cannot now discusse, nor I know,  
But sure I am it is not min<sup>t</sup> intent,  
Now I haue found it her<sup>e</sup> let it go,  
The money, men, muni<sup>o</sup>n I haue spent,  
Deserue as good a thin<sup>g</sup> as this I trow:  
You did but finde it, yo<sup>u</sup> our selfe confesse it,  
And now I challenge it a<sup>d</sup> do<sup>e</sup> it.

46

If you denie my claime, here I will proue it,  
This field the court, this list my pleading bar,  
My plea is such, as no writ can remoue it,  
My iugde must be the sequell of the war.  
War said thother, who can better loue it  
Then I? these words to me as musicke are,  
If to the king of Sarza will agree,  
To stay his combat, till I fight with thee.

47

Be sure Ile answer thee, and all beside.  
That dare presume to offer me offence:  
With that *Rogero* stept betweene and cride,  
Ho sirs, with this I minde not to dispence,  
Or let the fight proceed, as lots haue tride,  
Or I my selfe will put you to your fence:  
Shall he denie the sword and shall I yeeld,  
That you shall weare mine Eagle on your shield?

48

Wherefore preferue that order first agreed on,  
From which in honour, you may no way start,  
Or if to breake it further you proceed on,  
I breake will all, if you do breake a part.  
Tush (quoeth the Tartar) threats we haue no<sup>d</sup> on,  
If *Mars* were in you both, and tooke your part,  
Yet both should finde it folly to atte<sup>n</sup>  
Me of my shield, or sword once to pre

49

And with that word forthwith he bent his fist,  
And on *Gradasso*s hand so fierce he strake,  
That sodainly, or ear *Gradasso* wist,  
He made him vnawares the sword forsake:  
Who much repind he thus his purpose mist,  
And that so vnprepard he could him take,  
And much more grieu'd it him, that this disgra<sup>ce</sup>  
Was offerd him in such an open place.

Where



50  
Wherefore to be aueng'd of so great wrong,  
He steppeth backe and out his sword he drawes,  
Ther doth no farther time prolong,  
Though in respect of order there was cause,  
Nay which was more, he thought himselfe so strong  
To fight with all at once, he askt no pause,  
But to them both at once he makes defiance,  
It is owne strength he had so great affiance.

51  
This new's mad, but let me with him trie it,  
*Gradasso* said, Ile make him wife againe:  
Nay softly (quoth *Rogero*) I deny it,  
For this faire combat doth to me pertaine:  
Stand backe saith one, saith tother nay not I yet,  
Backe you; yet both still in their place remaine:  
Thus do these three with mallice great and spite,  
Strangely begin a combat tripartite.

52  
And sure to much confusion it had growne,  
Had not some men, more stout perhap then wise,  
Themselues among the vndiscreetly throwne,  
With courage great, but yet with small aduise,  
To succour others danger with their owne:  
Yet could no force them part, nor no deuise,  
Till *Agramant* himselfe, their dreaded Lord,  
cried out to accord.

53  
The reuerence great that vnto him they beare,  
Made them forthwith their forces to restraints,  
Who straight the causes of these broiles did heare,  
And to compound them sought, but all in vaine,  
For so int *Gradasso* could be made forbear,  
The sword so long with tother to remaine,  
Vntill the fight were ended now in hand,  
Of which the sequell could not yet be scand.

54  
Scarfe had the king with words of great perswasion,  
This quarrell new begun, a while appeald,  
But that another strife, by new occasion;  
In *Rodomontes* tent them all diseald:  
An hurlyburly and a fierce inuasion,  
There grows betweene two Princes sore displeald,  
Betwene stout *Sacrapant* and *Rodomount*,  
As I to you will presently recount.

55  
King *Sacrapant*, as late before I told,  
Helping to arme the cruell Sarzan king,  
With those selfe armes that *Nimrod* ware of old,  
From him this Prince, his pedigree did bring,  
Whiles he (I say) did curiously behold  
His furniture and a'rie other thing,  
That to his horse, or vnto him belong,  
To see might be sure and firme, and strong.

56  
When that stately steed *Frontino* vewd,  
That proudly champing stood vpon his bit,  
And all his raines with snowlike some bedewd,  
Without regard, whose hands embroderd it,  
A thought vnpleasant in his mind renewd,  
And to his heart did seeme full neare to sit,  
He thinks this horse was verie like in sight,  
To one of his, that *Frontlat* whilom hight.

57  
And more and more with heedfull looke still eying,  
The markes and shape, and colour of the steed,  
After his long and verie curious prying,  
He saw and knew it was his horse indeed:  
Which horse from him (then at *Albracca* lying)  
*Brunello* stale, for want of better heed;  
And shewed him an vnusuall cunning knacke,  
To steale his horse while he late on his backe.

58  
*Brunello* stale that time more things beside,  
By name *Orlandos* sword hight *Balifard*,  
*Angellicas* faire ring, of vertue tride,  
Which she recouerd as before you heard:  
Likewise a sword eu'n from *Marfisas* side:  
This done, he gaue *Rogero* afterward,  
*Orlandos* sword, and this horse to the same,  
But to *Frontino* first he changd his name.

59  
Now then I say, when *Sacrapant* was sure,  
This horse was *Frontlat* that sometime was his,  
And that the markes he saw did him assure,  
That he therein tooke not his marke amis,  
To hold his peace he could not long endure,  
But said; good sir, know mine *Frontino* is,  
Stolne late from me, as I can make good prooffe;  
Although (I trow) mine owne word is inough.

60  
One at *Albracca* stale from me this steed,  
Yet for our late acquaintance I consent,  
Because I see that now you stand in need,  
That you shall vse him now I am content:  
Conditionally, that first it be agreed,  
You shall acknowledge him not yours, but lent,  
Else here I claime him as my goods and chattell,  
And will defend my right in open battell.

61  
The Sarzan king, that past (I thinke) in pride,  
All kings and knights that euer carrid sword,  
And past (I thinke) in strength and courage tride,  
All samples that old stories vs afford,  
Made answer thus; if any man beside,  
Durst vnto me haue spoken such a word,  
He should haue found, I tooke it in such scorne,  
He had bin better haue bin speechles borne.

62  
But for our late begonne acquaintance sake,  
I am content this at your hands to beare,  
So as you this, do as a warning take,  
The like attempt hereafter to forbear,  
And if you will but harke what end I make,  
With *Mandricardo*, then I do not feare,  
But you shall see such sample of my force,  
Shall make you glad, to pray me take your horse.

63  
Then villany is courtesie with thee,  
(Saith *Sacrapant* inflamd with high disdain)  
When you be offerd faire you cannot see,  
Wherefore my purpose is, I tell you plaine,  
My horse shall seruiue do to none but mee,  
And with these hands I will my right maintaine:  
And that is more, if these same hands should faile,  
I will defend my right with tooth and naile.

*Virgil. Statfo-*  
*mipes & trana*  
*ferox spumantia*  
*mandis.*

*A Latin proverb*  
*Densibus & un-*  
*guibus.*



64

Thus galling speech, betweene them multiplyi<sup>ng</sup>,  
Till each last word, the former worser made,  
At last they fell to acts of flat defying,  
And to the tother fiercely doth inuade:  
*Rodomont* on his strength and armes relying;  
Yet tother so defends him with his blade,  
And makes it so about his head to houer,  
That seemes alone his body all to couer.

65

Simple.

Eu'n as a charret wheele that runnes apace,  
Seemes to the eye all solyd, firme and sound,  
Although twixt eu'rie spoake there is a space,  
Concealed from our sights by running round:  
So *Sacrapant* seemd armed in that place,  
Though armour then about him none was found,  
So dextrously himselte he then besturd,  
As well it stood vpon him with his sword.

66

But quickly *Serpentino* and *Ferraw*,  
With naked sword in hand, stept them betwixt,  
With others more that present were and saw,  
As friends of either part together mixt,  
Yet them no force, nor prayre could once withdraw,  
Their loftie hearts were on reuenge so fixt,  
And wrath had quite so put them out of frame,  
Till *Agramant* to them in person came.

67

Vpon the sight of him, their soueraigne Lord,  
They both agreed their furie to withhold,  
Who straight perswaded them to good accord,  
And much good counsell to them both he told:  
But peace and good perswasions they abhorde,  
And either on his manhood made him bold;  
Their king doth but among them leese his winde,  
For more and more he forward them doth finde.

68

By no meanes *Sacrapant* will be intreated,  
Vnto the *Sarzan* king his horse to lend,  
Except that he (as I before repeated)  
To borrow it of him, would condescend:  
The tother at this verie motion freated,  
And sweares nor heauen, nor he should make him  
To seek to haue by prayer or request, (bend,  
A thing of which by force he was posselt.

69

King *Agramant* doth aske by what mischance,  
He lost his horse, or who it from him stole?  
The tother open'd all the circumstance,  
And blusht for shame, when as he told the tale;  
Namely, how late before he came to France,  
One tooke him napping, as it did befall,  
And vnderpropt his saddell with foure stakes,  
And so from vnder him his courser takes.

70

*Marfisa*, that was come to part this fray,  
Hearing of this stolne horse among the rest,  
Was grieu'd in minde, for why that verie day,  
Her sword was stolne as she most truly guest:  
And then king *Sacrapant* she knew straight way,  
Whom erst she knew not, and that gallant beast,  
For which of late those two began to fight,  
She knew and said belongd to him in right.

71

While these things passed thus, the standers by,  
That oft hercof had heard *Brunello* boast,  
Straight in such sort to him did cast their  
As turned greatly to *Brunello*'s cost:  
By which *Marfisa* plainly did discerie  
Him, by whose theft her sword she late had lost  
To be *Brunello*, whom she saw there sitting,  
Among great Lords, a place for him vsitting.

72

She heard, and much it griued her to heare  
How for these thefts and many mo beside,  
The king rewarded him, and held him deare,  
Whereas in law for them he should haue dide:  
These news so greatly chang'd *Marfisa*'s cheare,  
That hardly she her wrath could longer hide,  
Let *Agramant* accept it as he will,  
She minds *Brunello* presently to kill.

73

Straight way she armed is from head to heele,  
And makes her page her helmet close to claspe,  
To him she goes, and with her gloue of Steele,  
She giues him such a blow as made him galpe,  
And while the paine he of doth make him reele  
With her strong hand, weak corse she doth graspe  
As doth the Faulcon fite the Mallard gripe,  
To which a while betore

74

With furie great from thence away she flings,  
While he for helpe, and oft for mercie cride,  
But wil he, nill he, him away she brings,  
Like to a thiefe with hands together tide,  
Where *Agramant* among the neerer kings,  
Sate like a iudge their causes to decide,  
Then making some obeylance for good manner,  
She speaketh thus in short but stately manner.

75

Sir king, I minde to hang this thiefe your man,  
That by default should long ere this haue dide,  
For when he stole that horse from him, eu'n than  
He stole my sword that hang'd by my side:  
But if there any be, that dare or can  
Deny my words, or say that I haue lide;  
Here in your presences I do desire,  
To trie by combat whether is the lier.

76

But least some should, as some by fortune may,  
Affirme I chuse this time to make new strife,  
Alone at such a time, on such a day,  
When other quarrels in the campe are rife,  
I am content a day or two to stay,  
And to prolong this wretched citty's life,  
To see if any man will him defend,  
And after sure to hang him I intend.

77

I meane (quoth she) to bring him three mile he:  
And keepe him as a prisoner in yon towre,  
And with his life I promise to dispence,  
For two dayes space, and longer not an howr  
If any list to fight in his defence,  
There let him come and trie my force and power:  
Away she gallopt when she this had said,  
And on her saddle bow the wretch she laid.

The

A presie is it &  
possible to be true



78

The King was sore displeas'd at this attempt,  
And much it did his princely mind enrage,  
And minds himselfe to wreake so great contempt,  
Vntill *Sobrino*, one both graue and sage,  
Told him in wisdom he must be content,  
His choler in this matter to assuage;  
And said it were a base part for his highnesse,  
To fight for one sprung vp by theft and sinnesse.

*Sobrino* - *Case*  
*Counsellor.*

79

Yea though before hand he were sure to win,  
Yet would such victorie dishonor haue,  
Because a man vanquish't were therein:  
Wherefo (quoth he) if you his life might saue,  
With one words speech, to speake that word were sin:  
For sure she doth but law and iustice craue:  
And Princes neuer do themselues more wrong,  
Then when they hinder iustice, or prolong.

a most true  
Sentence.

80

You may (said he) to satisfie your mind,  
Send after her, in manner of request,  
And promise her, that in iust cause you find,  
He shall be hangd, and all strife may rest;  
But if to this you find he not inclin'd,  
Giue her her will, for so thinke tis best;  
So that she firmly in your friendship bide,  
Hang vp and theeues beside.

81

This good direction *Agramant* obeying,  
Went not himselfe, nor sent none to molest her,  
But yet according to *Sobrinos* saying,  
Sent a messenger that might request her:  
His selfe the while doth trauell in allaying,  
The tumults fierce that all his campe do pester:  
Pride laughs at this, and Discord so reioyces,  
As vp to heau'n flie their eternall voyces.

82

Five men most resolute haue set their rest,  
To be the first that will begin the fight,  
The strife so intricate, as would molest  
*Apollo* to descide or set it right,  
Yet *Agramant* still strives to do his best,  
And to compound the matter if he might:  
And thus to end the matter he beganne,  
Twixt *Rodomont* and *Agricans* sonne.

83

He makes to them this good and friendly motion,  
That sith for *Doralice* they onely straeue,  
They would agree to stand at her deuotion,  
And ther take her choise which she will haue,  
That once made, to raise no more commotion.  
This pleas'd them both, to this consent they gaue;  
A certaine hope and trust them both alluring,  
Each himselfe of her firme loue assuring.

84

The Sarzan king doth thinke, that needs she must  
Giue sentence on his side, and be his owne,  
Sith oft he had in turneys and in iust,  
Her fauours worne, and his affection showne:  
How can she loue (thinke he) or put her trust  
In one, who she scant three dayes space hath knowne?  
Or was alone his owne opinion such,  
But all the campe beside did thinke as much.

85

They all thinke *Mandricardo* ouerseene,  
And made no question but she would reiect him:  
But he that knew what past had them betweene,  
And found that she did inwardly affect him,  
Was sure, although his seruice were vnseene,  
And done by night, that she would not neglect him;  
Wherefore of her good will he nothing doubting,  
Did scorne their scorns, and flouted at their flouting.

86

Thus hauing put the matter in her choyce,  
And put the choice in her owne declaration,  
She with a sober looke and lowly voyce,  
Chose *Mandricard*, against all expectation:  
The Tartar prince hereat did much reioyce,  
But all the rest were filld with admiration,  
And *Rodomont* himselfe was so astound,  
As hardly he could lift his eyes from ground.

87

But when his wonted wrath had driu'n away  
That bashfull shame that dyde his face with red,  
Vniust he calls that doome, and curst that day,  
And clapping hand vpon his sword, he led,  
This better arbitrate our matters may,  
Then womens foolish doome by fancie led,  
Who oftentimes are so peruerse in chusing,  
They take the worst, the offerd best refusing.

Sentence.

88

Go then (quoth *Mandricard*) I little care,  
I hope that fight shall yeeld you like successe:  
And thus againe to fight they ready are,  
But *Agramant* doth loone that rage repress,  
And said, vpon this point againe to square,  
Quite were against all lawes of armes expresse:  
And *Rodomont* he sharply then controld,  
That in his fight was against law so bold.

89

The Sarzan king that saw himselfe that day,  
So noted by those Peeres with double scorne,  
Both from his Prince, whom he must needs obey,  
And her to whom so great loue he had borne,  
With fury great he flings from thence away,  
And counts himselfe disgrast and quite forlorne:  
Of all his traine two men he onely taketh,  
The king, the campe, the place he quite forsaketh.

90

And as a Bull his loued heard that leaues,  
By his strong riual forced to be gone;  
Among the trees all clad with thickest leaues,  
Doth hide himselfe, and seekes to be alone:  
So he, whom shame of comfort all bereaues,  
Flies sight of men, yet still he thinks thereon;  
And chiefe when he remembers what disgrace,  
His mistris did him in so open place.

Simile.  
Lucan hath the  
like of two Bulls  
in his 2 booke of  
Pharsalia.

91

*Rogero* gladly would haue him pursude,  
To get his horse, but yet he doth refraine,  
Lest men should thinke he had the fight eschude,  
That did twixt *Mandricard* and him remaine:  
But *Sacrapant* whom no cause doth include,  
Pursues the Sarzan king, the horse to gaine:  
And doubtlesse had outgone him that same day,  
But for mishap that chanced by the way



92

A damsell fell by hap into a riuer,  
And was in perill great to haue bin drown'd;  
He lighting from his horse backe to relieue her,  
Lept in, and brought her out all safe and sound:  
But doing this good act, her to deliuer,  
Scarce all that day his horse againe he found,  
His horse got loose, and he with all his cunning,  
Could scantly catch him in six howers running.

93

At last with much ado he doth him get,  
And after *Rodomont* he then doth make;  
But where, and how long after him he met,  
And how the Sarzan did him prisoner take,  
I may not now proceed to tell as yet:  
First tell we what vild words the Sarzan spake,  
That cald his Prince and mistris both vnkind,  
And for her fault doth raile of all her kind.

94

With scalding sighes, that inward pangs bewrayd,  
He breathes out flames in places where he goes,  
From rocks and caues his plaints doth eccho ayd,  
And takes compassion on his rufull woes;  
O womens wits, how weake you are (he sayd)  
How soone to change you do your selues dispose?  
Oblersuers of no faith, nor good direction,  
Most wretched all that trust in your protection.

*Rodomonts in-  
sective against  
women.*

95

Could neither seruice long, nor sured loue,  
By me aboue a thousand wayes declared,  
Thy fickle mind to fastnesse so farre moue,  
But wilfully to let thy selfe be snared?  
If reason could haue led thy mind to proue,  
Was *Mandricard* with me to be compared?  
Hereof can reason be alledgd by no man,  
But this alone, my mistris is a woman.

96

I thinke that nature, or some angry God,  
Brought forth this wicked sex on earth to dwell,  
For some great plague, or iust deserued rod  
To vs, that wanting them had liued well:  
As in the wormes, an Adder, Snake and Tode:  
Among the beasts, Beares, Wolues and Tygers felle;  
And makes the aire the Flie and Waspe to breed,  
And Tares to grow among the better seed.

97

Why did not Nature rather so prouide,  
Without your helpe that man of man might come,  
And one be grafted on anothers side,  
As are the Apples with the Peare and Plome?  
But Nature can no meane nor rule abide,  
But still she must exceed in all or some;  
Full easie tis the cause thereof to render,  
For Nature selfe is of the womans gender.

98

Yet be not therefore proud and full of scorne,  
O womankind, that men come of your seed:  
The fragrant Rose growth on the pricking thorne,  
The Lilly faire comes of a filthy weed;  
In lothsome soyle men sow the wholsome corne;  
The basest mould, the fairest flowre doth breed:  
Vngratefull, false and craftie yare and cruell,  
Borne of our burning hell to be the fuel.

*Similia.  
Sentence.  
Vergil. Interq;  
misentia culta.  
Infelix lolium  
& steriles domi-  
nansur auena.*

99

These words, and like to these the Pagan scarce,  
Doth spend amid his rage and frantike tumes;  
And like a mad man did the same rehear!  
Sometime in hie, oft times in baser tunes:  
Itremble to set downe in my poore verse,  
The blasphemie that he to speake presumes;  
And writing this I do, know this that I  
Full oft in heart do giue my pen the lie.

100

But passion did this Pagans sense so blind,  
And left within the same so sharpe a sting,  
That he not onely blam'd his loue vnki'd,  
But also rag'd against his soueraigne King,  
And cursed him, and wished in his mi-  
That fortune so great woes on him might bring,  
That he might loose his state and princely crowne,  
And see his country turnd quite vpsidowne.

101

And being to such miseries o e brought,  
And with aduersitie assail'd o sore,  
That the by him re come might be wrought,  
And that he might his former state restore,  
That *Agramant* might y such ptoofe be taught,  
Offaithfull friends indeed to set more store,  
And learne to know, th t such a friend as he,  
Deferu'd in right and no ref to be.

102

Thus blaming oft his Lord, more oft his loue,  
To his owne natue soyle his course he bent,  
But changing place, could not his sorrow moue,  
Nor trauels paine, his paine of mind relent;  
It seemd his horse *Frontino* well to proue,  
Before his bridle should be drawne, he ment,  
To *Sonna* he doth ride without a bait,  
And minds fro thence to passe to *Prouence* strait.

103

And there to cast away all care and carke,  
And all his anguish quickly to appease,  
For *Affrica* he will himselfe imbarke,  
And passe the large *Mediterranian* seas;  
But, for the weather now waxt dim and darke,  
First in his Inne he minds to take his eale,  
For all the countrie, eu'n as farre as *Spaine*,  
In *Agramantes* powre did then remaine.

104

Now he resolues to lodge about the coast,  
And long he is not of a place to seeke,  
For straight he was inuited by an host,  
To take his house, if so it might him lik  
It plea'd the Pagan well, to heare him boast,  
That he had *Catlike* wine, and French and Greeke,  
For though he were a Turke man st,  
Yet did he like French fashion drinking est.

105

The pleasant host, that was indeed of those,  
That can with double diligence attend,  
As hauing sau'd amid both friends and foes,  
His goods, and gaind by that which both do sp  
When by that princes view he did suppose  
Him some great man, he straight abroad did end,  
And thither doth his kin and friends request,  
To helpe to waite, and welcome such a guest.

But



106

But loe, his guest sits musing all apart,  
And of his Mistres runneth all his thought,  
Which (though he would forget) spite of his hart,  
He thinks on still, so strong the fancie wrought:  
The standers by are not so malypart,  
To talke to him, till he occasion sought:  
Which hauing found, vp from his chaire he started,  
And salutations to them all imparted.

107

Venice.

Then askt he many questions of them all,  
And as occasion seru'd, discourses varid:  
But ill we finde, and euer finde we shall,  
By thought of heart the speech of tongue is carid:  
For to treat of marriage he doth fall,  
And asketh of the men if they be marrid:  
And if they be, he prayth them to declare,  
Of their wiues truthes, what their opinions are.

108

Straight all of then: made answer they had wiues,  
And but mine host, all praisd the happie state;  
And said they were the comforts of their liues,  
That draw a happie yoke without debate:  
A playfellow, that farre off all grieve driues,  
A steward, early that prouides and late;  
Both faithfull, chaste, and sober, mild, and trustie,  
Nurse to weake age, and pleasure to the lustie.

109

Tuth (quoth mine host) vnder your good correction,  
(Most noble guest) these fellows say not right,  
But either with fond loue, or foule subiection,  
So blinded are, they take the blacke for white:  
I once my selfe, was toucht with this infection,  
But now I see, that then I wanted sight:  
And now I know, as being better taught,  
That theirs and mine be all vnchast and naught.

110

For as the Phoenix is a bird alone,  
And of that kind, the whole world hath no more;  
So (thinke I) of all wiues there is but one,  
That liueth chaste in loue and vertues lore:  
He blest may be, that lighteth her vpon,  
Small hope (thinke I) there is in so scant store,  
That many should haue one of such a kind,  
Of which in all the world but one I finde.

111

I once so blinded was, as now be the case,  
Till by good hap vnto my house there came;  
A Gentleman of Venice from the seas,  
Francis Valerio was he cald by name:  
He knew, and could declare them all with ease,  
All womens wiles, and stories to the same,  
He had of old, and of the later times,  
To shew both wiues, and single womens crimes.

112

He said, and bad me hold it as my creed,  
That all of them are false, if they be tride;  
If some seemd chaste, it did of this proceed,  
They had the wit to do, and not be spide,  
And knew, by deepe dissembling, and good heed,  
With sober looks their wanton lusts to hide:  
And this to proue he told me such a tale,  
As while I liue, I still remember shall.

113

And if it like you sir, to lend me eare,  
In my rude fashion, I shall it recite,  
Right glad (quoth Rodomont) by heau'ns I sweare,  
For thou hast hit my present humor right:  
Wherefore (said he) sit downe I pray thee theare,  
For in thy speech alreadie I delight:  
But heare I end this booke, for doubt I haue,  
That in his tale, mine host will play the knaue.

In this booke we may obserue, how important a thing it is in an army, to haue store of good leaders; as Liue noteth of Morall.  
the old Remaines: Fortiorem rem Romanam ducibus esse, quam militibus. That the strength of the Remaines, consisted more in Captaines, then in souldiers. In quarrels that grew in the campe vpon trisling causes; we may note a fault that many of English Seruitors (though otherwise braue men) haue many times bene noted of in their forren seruice, where they verie seldome agree together, but seeke to disgrace one another. In Agramant, we may note a princely maiestie, in compounding such controuersies. In Rodomonts bitter inuectiue against women, we may see how passionate extreames loue and hate be. In mine Host, we note how such base fellows are still readie to feed the humors of Princes, though it be in shamefull vices, or manifest errors.

Hippolita to whom Marfisa is compared, as also the whole cuntry of Amazons, and their lawes, I haue spoken of Historie.  
elsewhere: this is that Hippolita, that was brought by Theseus to Athens, and there had a sonne called Hippolitus.

In that he saith, that the spright entring into Doralices horse, conueyed her into the campe of the Pagans, to Allegorie.  
the great damage of the Christians, we may thereby note how that ghostly enemy doth indeed watch (as the scripture saith) like a roring Lion whom he may deuour, to do mankind all the hurt that may be; and therefore, we must not giue him an inch, least (as the prouerbe saith) he take an ell.

the solemnitie of their combats and preparation, Fornarius noteth, that he alludes to a policie, vsed by Isabella Allusion.  
wife to Ferdinando, king of Spaine. She, to make her men of armes more valiant and courageous, caused them to fight with the Moors in the verie sight of their Ladies and Mistresses, and partly thereby expulsed the Moores out of Granada. For Doralices reiecting of Rodomont, and chusing Mandricard; it alludes to a like thing, written by Plutarch in his lone discourses, where Calisto was taken and Strato refused: of which afterward ensued the death of al three.

Here end the notes of the xxvij. booke.

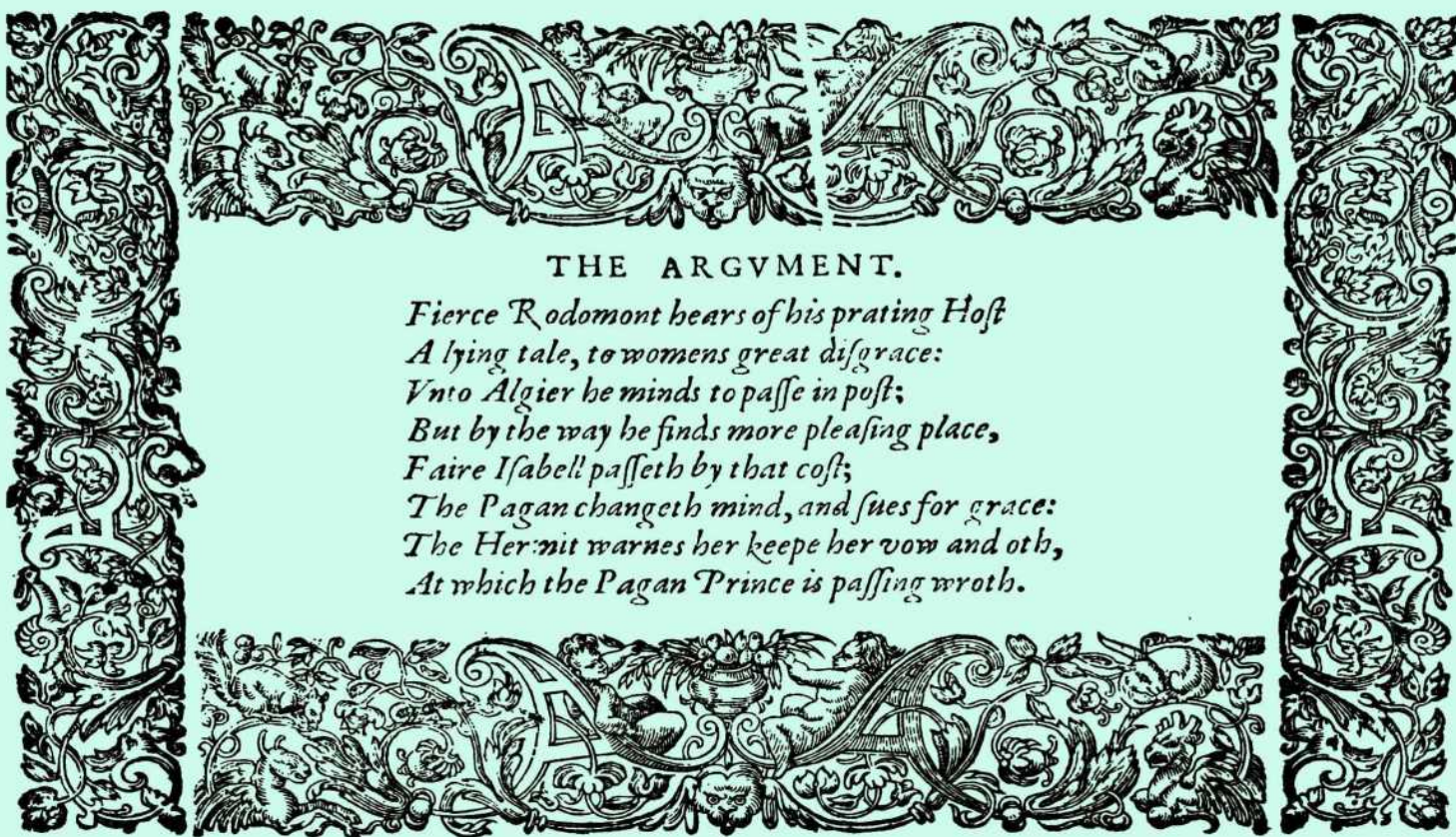
V

Simile.  
Iuuenal saith,  
Rara cuius in ser-  
uis nigrae, simil-  
lima.



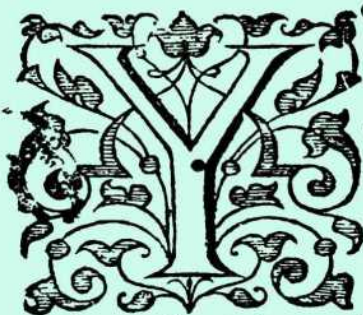






## THE ARGUMENT.

*Fierce Rodomont hears of his prating Host  
A lying tale, to womens great disgrace:  
Vnto Algier he minds to passe in post;  
But by the way he finds more pleasing place,  
Faile Isabell passeth by that cost;  
The Pagan changeth mind, and sues for grace:  
The Hermit warnes her keepe her vow and oth,  
At which the Pagan Prince is passing wroth.*



Sentence.

To your sweete sexe, no iust disgrace at all;  
Foolles will find fault without the cause discerning,  
And argue most, of that they haue no lerning.

Turne ou'r the leaf, and let this tale alone,  
If any thinke the sex by this disgraced,  
I write it for no spite, nor mallice none,  
But in my Authors booke I finde it placed;  
My loyall loue to Ladies all is knowne,  
In whom I see such worth to be imbraced,  
That theirs I am, and glad would be therefore,  
To shew thereof a thousand proofes and more.

Perute it not, or if you do it reed,  
Esteeme it as an idle bable;  
Regard it not, or if you take some heed,  
Believe it not, but as a foolish fable:  
But to the matter, thus it was indeed,  
When all the guests were cheared at the table;  
Neare Rodomont (so was the Pagan named)  
Downe fate mine Host, and thus his tale he framed.

*The tale of Astol  
fo king of Lorn-*

Also, whilom king of Lombardy.  
To whom his elder brother left his rayne

Was in his youth so fresh and faire to see,  
As few to such perfection could attaine:  
Appelles match, or Zeuxes he might be,  
That such a shape could paint without much paine,  
Great was his grace, and all the world so decmd it,  
But yet himselfe of all men most esteemd it.

*Two excellent  
painters.*

He did not of his scepter take such pride,  
Nor that degree that common men are vnder,  
Nor wealth, nor friends, nor meaner kings beside,  
That there about dwelt neare or far asunder:  
But of his beautie, which he would not hide,  
At whose rare worth, he thought y world did won-  
This was his ioy, and all that he intended, (des,  
To heare his comely face and shape commended.

Among his courtiers, one about the rest,  
Fausto by name; by birth a Romane knight:  
Who hearing oft so praisd, as they know best,  
His face, and hands, and all that praise he might  
The king did bid him tell at his request;  
Neare or far of, if he had seene that wight,  
That in all parts so perfectly was wrought:  
But he was answerd as he little thought.

My Liege (quoth Fausto) plainly to declare,  
Both what my selfe doth see, and others say,  
But few with your rare beautie can compare,  
And that same few were none, were one away  
Iocundo hight, a man of beautie rare,  
And brother mine, excepting whom, I may  
Prefer your grace before all other creatures,  
But he doth match or passe you for his features.

V ij



8

The king to heare such tidings strange it thought,  
As hauing still till that day kept the prize,  
And with a deepe desire straight wayes he fought,  
To know this man, and see him with his eies:  
In fine, with *Faussto* so far forth he wrought,  
To bring him to his court he must deuile:  
Although (quoth he) to bring my brother to it,  
I shall be sure of worke enough to do it.

9

The cause is this, my brother neuer went  
Foorth of the gates of Rome scant all his life,  
And such small goods as Fortune hath him lent,  
He hath enioyd in quiet, free from strife,  
Left by our fire, and them he hath not spent,  
Nor yet increast, his gaines are not so rise:  
And he will thinke it more to go to Pauy,  
Then some would thinke to th' Indies in a Nauy.

10

But I shall finde it hardest when I proue,  
To draw him from his louing wife away;  
To whom he is so linkt in chaines of loue,  
That all is vaine, if once his wife say nay:  
But yet your grace is so far all aboue,  
You shall command me, certes all I may.  
Thanks (quoth the king) and addeth such reward,  
As might haue moued any to regard.

11

Away he posts, arriuing in few dayes  
At Rome, and to his brothers house he went,  
And with such earnest words his brother prayes,  
That to returne with him he doth consent:  
Also his sisters loue he so allayes,  
That she doth hold her peace, as halfe content,  
Beside great thanks, laying before her eyes,  
Preferments large, that hereof might arise.

12

*Iocundo* now resolu'd to go his way,  
Gets men and horse against he should depart,  
Sets forth himselfe with new and rich aray,  
As still we see nature adorn'd by art.  
His wife at night in bed, at boord by day;  
With watrie eyes to shew a torrie hart,  
Complaines his absence will so sore her grieue,  
Till his returne she doubts she shall not liue.

13

Ay me, the thought (quoth she) makes me so fraid,  
That scant the breath abideth in my brest;  
Peace my sweete loue and life (*Iocundo* said)  
And weepes as fast, and comforts her his best:  
So may good fortune ay my iourney aid,  
As I returne in threecore dayes at least:  
Nor will I change the day I set thee downe,  
No though the king would grāt me halfe his crowne

14

All this might not assuage this womans paine,  
Two months were long, yea to to long she cries,  
Needs must I die before you come againe,  
Nor how to keepe my life can I deuise:  
The dolefull dayes and nights I shall sustaine,  
From meat my mouth, from sleepe will keepe mine  
Now was *Iocundo* readie to repent, (eyes:  
That to his brother he had giu'n consent.

15

About her necke a iewell rich she ware,  
A crosse all set with stone in gold well tride,  
This relicke late, a Boem Pilgrim bare,  
And gaue her father other things beside:  
Which costely things he kept with no small care,  
Till coming from Ierusalem he dyde:  
And her of all his goods his heire he makes,  
This precious crosse to her goodman she ta

16

And prayes him for her sake to weare that token  
And thinke on her: the man that was most kind  
Receiu'd it with more ioy then can be spoke,  
Although he needed not be put in mind,  
For why no time, nor no state found nor roken,  
Nor absence long, a meane should euer d,  
To quayle his loue, not only while his breath  
Maintains his life, but neither after death.

17

That verie night that went before the morrow,  
That they had pointed surely to depart;  
*Iocundos* wite was sicke, and sounds for sorrow,  
Amid his ar ie washc hart;  
All night they wake, and now they bid Godmorrow  
And giue their last farewell, and so they part;  
*Iocundo* on his way with all his traine,  
His louing wife doth go to bed againe.

18

Scant had *Iocundo* rode two mile fo  
But that his crosse, now came into his minde,  
Which on his pillow he had laid last night,  
And now for hast had left the same behind:  
He would deuise to scuse it if he might,  
But no excuse sufficient could he finde:  
But that his loue must needs be much suspected  
To finde the precious iewell so neglected.

19

When no excuse within his minde could frame,  
That all seemed friuolous and vaine;  
To send his man, he counted it a shame,  
To go himselfe it was but little paine:  
He staid, and when his brother did the same,  
Ride soft (quoth he) till I returne againe:  
For home againe I must, there is no nay,  
But I will ouertake you on the way.

20

Th' affaire is such as none can do but I,  
But doubt you not, I will returne as fast;  
Away he spurres as hard as he could hy,  
Alone without or man or page, for hast:  
Now had the sunnes new rising cleard the  
With brightest beames, ear he the streame had past,  
He hies him home, and findes his wife in bed,  
Full sound asleepe, such cares were n hed.

21

He draws the curtaine softly without sound,  
And saw that he would little haue suspected;  
His chaste and faithfull yokefellow he found  
Yokt with a knaue, all honestie neglected:  
Th' Adulterer, though sleeping verie sound,  
Yet by his face was easily detected:  
A beggers brat, bred by him from his cradell,  
And now was ryding on his masters sadell.



22

Now if he stood amazd and discontent,  
 Beleeue it yee, to trie that would be loth;  
 For he that tries it, doubtlesse will repent,  
 As poore *Iocundo* did, who was so wroth,  
 That out he drew his sword, with iust intent,  
 For their vngratefull act to kill them both:  
 But by the loue he bare her, did withstand,  
 Against his heart, to make him hold his hand.

23

O ribald loue, that such a slaue couldst make,  
 Of one that now was subiect to thy force;  
 He could not breake her sleepe for pitties sake,  
 That breake all bonds of faith without remorse;  
 But backe he goes before they did awake,  
 And from his house he gets him to his horse:  
 Loue so pricks him, and he so pricks his steed,  
 He overtakes his companie with speed.

24

His looke is sad, all changed is his cheare,  
 Full heauie was his heart they well perceiued,  
 They see no cause of grieve, yet they neare,  
 And they that guesse most truely are receiued;  
 They thought he went to Rome, but you do heare  
 How at Cornetto he his hurt receiued:  
 Each man elspeide that loue procur'd that passion,  
 But none descride the manner nor the fashion.

25

His brother deemes that all his grieve doth grow,  
 Because his louing wife is left alone;  
 But he a cleane contrary cause doth know,  
 For too much companie did cause his mone:  
 He bends his browes, his looks he casts alow,  
 With powting lips, and many a grievous grone:  
 His wife doth *Faustus* comfort seeke to bring him,  
 Why he knowes not where the shoe doth wring

(him).

26

He giues a salve afore the sore is found,  
 His plaisters are as poison to the smart;  
 He seeks to heale, and wider makes the wound,  
 He names his wife, but her name kills his hart:  
 Gone was his tast, his sleeps do grow vntound,  
 Nature decayth, and little helpeth art;  
 And that faire face that erst was of such fame,  
 Is now so chang'd, it seemeth not the same.

27

His eyes are sunke so deepe into his hed,  
 It made his nose seeme bigger then it should,  
 His flesh doth shrink, his bones do seeme to spred,  
 He was so chang'd, as more cannot be told;  
 At last an age makes him keepe his bed,  
 And bait at Innes more often then he would:  
 His faire complexion now is pale and withered,  
 Much liker the Rose that yesterday was gathered.

28

With this mishap was *Faustus* sore aggriued,  
 Not only for his brothers wofull state,  
 But fearing of his Prince to be reprov'd,  
 Vnto whose grace he vnderooke so late  
 He shew the goodliest man, as he beleeued,  
 Now growne vncouth, by force of inward bate:  
 Yet as they could, their way they so contriued,  
 That at the last in Paue they arriued.

29

He would not straightway shew him to the King,  
 Lest eu'ry one might deeme his iudgement small,  
 But sent by letters notice of the thing,  
 And what mishap his brother was befall;  
 How scant alieue he could him thither bring,  
 A secret grieve so greatly did him gall,  
 And with an age wuld him downe to tore,  
 He seemd not now the man he was before.

30

And yet behold this noble King is glad,  
 That he is come, and meanes to make him cheare,  
 As if he were the dearest friend he had,  
 So sore he had desir'd to see him heare;  
 Nor would the worthy naturd Prince be sad,  
 In praise of beautie to haue found a Peare;  
 He knew *Iocundos* beautie had excelled,  
 But that by this disease it was expelled.

31

He placeth him to his owne lodging nie,  
 He visits him each day and eu'ry houre,  
 Great plentie of provisione he doth buy,  
 To welcome him he bendeth all his powre:  
 But still *Iocundo* languishing doth lie,  
 His wiues misdeeds makes all his sweet seeme sowre,  
 No songs, no fights, which oft he heard or saw,  
 One dram of this his dolour could withdraw.

32

Fast by his lodging was, amongst the rest,  
 A faire large roome, which very few did vse,  
 Here would he walke, as one that did detest  
 All pleasing sights, and comforts all refuse:  
 Here the wide wound he bare within his brest,  
 With thousand thoughts vnpleasant he renews;  
 Yet here he found, which few would haue belieued,  
 A remedy for that which had him griued.

33

At the vpper end of this old hall,  
 There was a place of windowes voyd, and light,  
 Saue that the lime new moulten from the wall,  
 Let in a little beame that shined bright,  
 Here did he see, which some may thinke a tale,  
 A very strange and vnexpected sight,  
 He heard it not, but saw it in his vew,  
 Yet could he scant beleeue it should be trew.

34

For at the chinke was plainly to be seene,  
 A chamber hangd with faire and rich aray,  
 Where none might come, but such as trusty beene,  
 The Princeesse here in part doth spend the day,  
 And here he saw a Dwarfie embrace the Queene,  
 And striue a while, and after homely play:  
 His skill was such, that ere they went asunder,  
 The Dwarfie was got aloft, and she lay vnder.

35

*Iocundo* standeth still as one amazed,  
 Supposing sure that he had seene a vision,  
 But seeing plaine when he a while had gazed,  
 It was an act, and not an apparition:  
 Good God (said he) are this Queenes eyes so dazed,  
 To loue a dwarfie, more worthy of derision?  
 Whose husband is a Prince of worthy fame,  
 So braue a man, such loue now fie for shame.



36

He now began to hold his wife excused,  
His anger now a little was relented:  
And though that she her bodie had abused,  
And to her seruant had so soone consented;  
Not her for this, but he the sex accused,  
That neuer can with one man be contented:  
If all (quoth he) with one like staine are spotted,  
Yet on a monster, mine was not belotted.

*Jumenal saith  
of one Iberina.  
Vnus Iberina  
vir sufficit?  
oculis illud,  
Extorquibus ut  
hæc oculo con-  
sensa sit vno.*

37

The day ensuing he returned thither,  
And saw the dwarfe couragious still and iolly;  
Eke he another day repaired hither,  
And still he found the Queene committing folly:  
He oft returnes, he finds them oft together,  
They cease not worke, on dayes prophane nor holy:  
Yea which was strange, the goodly Queene cōplained  
That of the dwarfe she found she was disdained.

38

One day when in the corner he had stayd,  
He sees her come all sad and malcontent,  
Because the dwarte his comming still delayd,  
For whom of purpose twise before she sent,  
Once more she sends, this answer brings the mayd,  
Forsooth vnto his play he is so bent,  
That for mistrust at Chesse to leese a shilling,  
To come to you the apes face is not willing.

39

*Iocundo*, who before had still bene sad,  
Vpon this sight became of better cheare;  
The paines, the plaints, the cloudie stormes he had,  
Away were blowne, the coast began to cleare:  
Most ruddie faire he chearfull grew and glad,  
That angellike his beautie did appeare,  
So as the King and others thought it strange,  
In so short time to find so great a change.

40

Now as the King desired much to know,  
The meane whereby his hurt so loone was healed,  
No lesse *Iocundo* did desire to show,  
And would not haue the thing from him concealed,  
So as his choller might no greater grow,  
Then his had beene when as it were revealed:  
But first he made him sweare on his saluation,  
Vpon the parties to vse no castigation.

41

He made him sweare, for ought he heard or saw,  
Wherewith his mind might fortune be diseased,  
Yet from his choller so much to withdraw,  
As that in shew he may not seeme displeased,  
Nor punish it by might nor yet by law,  
Nor first nor last, but hold himselfe appeased,  
So as th'offenders might not haue suspected,  
That their misdeeds were to his grace detected.

42

The King so sure, by oth so solemne bound,  
As one that little thought his Queene so stained,  
*Iocundo* first his owne griefe doth expound,  
Why he so long so dolefull had remained,  
And in whose aimes his owne wife he had found,  
And how the griefe thereof so sore him pained,  
Had not that salve vnlookt for bene applied,  
Of that conceit no doubt he should haue died.

43

But lying in your highnesse house forlorne,  
I saw (quoth he) that minisht much my mone;  
For though it grieved me to weare a horne,  
It pleald me well, I ware it not alone:  
This said, he brought him where the wall wa torne,  
And shewd him that, that made his heart to ne,  
For why the dwarfe did mannage with such kill,  
Though she curuets, he keeps his stirrop sti

44

Much did the King this foule prospect mislike  
Beleeue my word I say, I need not sweare,  
Horne wood he was, he was about to stri  
All those he met, and his owne flesh to re;  
His promise to haue broken he was lik  
If of his oth he had not had some feare;  
But vnreunged all must now be borne,  
For on his *Agnus Dei* he had tworne.

45

Now to *Iocundo* gently he doth peake,  
Good brother mine, aduise me what to do,  
Sith I am b I may wreake  
The fast, with such reuenge as longs thereto;  
Forsooth let's trie if others be as weake,  
(*Iocundo* said) and make no more ado:  
This was the counsell he did giue the King,  
Into their order other men to bring.

*He calls him bro-  
ther, beca they  
were, both of one  
societie.*

46

We both are yong, and of such pleasing hew,  
Not to be matcht with such another paire;  
What she will be so obstinately true,  
But will be wonne with youth, and being faire?  
If youth and beautie both do misse their due,  
The want herein our purses shall repaire:  
Let vs not spare our beautie, youth and treast  
Till of a thousand we haue had our pleasure.

47

To see strange countries placed farre apart,  
Of other women eke to make some triall,  
Will ease the paine that whilom pierst our hart,  
And salve our sore, there can be no deniall:  
The King that longd to ease his new found smart,  
Consented straight, and to auoid espiall,  
Himselfe, the Knight, two pages, and no mo,  
Out of the Reame forthwith disguised go.

48

Away they past through Italy and France,  
And though the Flemish and the English land,  
And those whose beauties highest did aduance,  
Those still they found most ready to their hand:  
They giue, they take, f luckie is their cha  
They see their stocke at one stay still to stand:  
Some must be woode forsooth y ere so chaff,  
And some there were that woode the fast.

49

In countries some a month or two they tarried,  
In some a weeke, in others but a day;  
In all of them they find the women married,  
Like to their wiues, too gentle to say nay:  
At last, because they doubt to haue miscarried,  
They meane to leaue this sport and go their wa  
They found it full of danger and debate,  
To keepe their standings in anothers gate.

They



50

They do agree to take by common voyce, (both,  
Some one whose shape and face may please them  
In whom without suspect they might reioyce;  
For wherefore (quoth the King) should I be loth,  
To take your selfe a partner in my choyce?  
I must haue one, and I beleue for troth,  
Among all women kind there is not one,  
That can content her selfe with one alone.

51

But of those one, we two might take our pleasure,  
And reinforce our selues beyond our ease,  
But as they say, take meate and drinke, and leasure,  
And by doings, other not displease;  
Well might that woman thinke she had a treasure,  
That had vs two, her appetite to please;  
And though to one man faithfull none remaine,  
No doubt but faithfull they would be to twaine.

52

The Roman youth much praised the Princes mind,  
And to performe it, seemed very faine,  
Away they posses they l  
By towne and citie, ouer hill and plaine,  
Till at the pretie peece they find,  
The daughter of an Inkeeper in Spaine,  
A girle of person tall, and faire of fauour,  
Of comely presence, and of good behauour.

53

She was new entring in the flower and pride,  
Of those well pleasing youthfull yeares and tender,  
Her father many children had beside,  
And pouertie had made his portion slender,  
And for them all vnable to prouide,  
He him soone consent, away to send her;  
The price agreed, away the strangers carry her,  
Because the father money wants to marry her.

Note that power-  
the makes some  
naughts.

54

In concord great she did with them remaine,  
Who tooke their pleasure one and one by turne,  
As bellows do, where *Vulcans* wonted paine,  
By mutuall blast doth make the mettall burne:  
Their meaning is, now they had traueled Spaine,  
By *Siphax* realme to make their home returne;  
And hauing left *Valenza* out of sight,  
At faire *Zatiua* they did lodge at night.

Simile of a smith  
compared.

55

The masters go abrode to view the towne,  
And first the Churches for deuotions sake;  
And then the monuments of most renowne,  
As traue'lers a common custome take:  
The girle within the chamber sate her downe,  
The men are busied, some the beds do make,  
Some care to dress their wearid horse, and some  
Make ready meate against their masters come.

56

this same house the girle a Greeke had spide,  
That in her fathers house a boy had beene,  
And slept full often sweetly by her side,  
And much good sport had passed them betweene;  
Yet fearing lest their loue should be descride,  
In open talke they durst not to be seene,  
But it when by hap the pages downe were gone,  
The loue renewd, and thus they talke thereon.

57

The Greeke demaunds her whither she was going,  
And which of these two great estates her keeps?  
She told them all, she needs no further woeing,  
And how a night betweene them both she sleeps:  
Ah (quoth the Greeke) thou tellest my vndoing,  
My deare *Fiametta*, and with that he weeps; (sheds *Fiametta*-  
With these two Lords wilt thou from Spain be bani  
Are all my hopes thus into nothing vanished?

58

My sweet designements turned are to sower,  
My seruice long, finds little recompence;  
I made a stocke according to my power,  
By hoarding vp my wages, and the pence  
That guests did giue, that came in luckie hower;  
I meant ere long to haue departed hence,  
And to haue askt thy fires good will to marry thee,  
And that obtained, vnto a house to carry thee.

59

The wench of her hard fortune doth complaine,  
And saith that now she doubts he sues too late:  
The Greeke doth sigh and sob, and part doth faine,  
And shall I die (quoth he) in this estate?  
Let me enioy thy sweetnesse once againe,  
Before my dayes draw to their dolefull date;  
One small refreshing ere we quite depart,  
Will make me die with more contented hart.

60

The girle with pittie moued, thus replies,  
Thinke not (quoth she) but I desire the same;  
But hard it is, among so many eies,  
Without incurring punishment and shame.  
Ah (quoth the Greeke) some meanes thou wouldst  
If thou but felt a quarter of my flame, (deuise,  
To meet this night in some conuenient place,  
And be together but a little space.

61

Tush (answerd she) you sue now out of season,  
For eu'ry night I lie betwixt them two,  
And they will quickly feare and find the treason,  
Sith still with one of them I haue to do.  
Well (quoth the Greeke) I could refute that reason,  
If you would put your helping hand thereto,  
You must (saide he) some pretie scule deuile,  
And find occasion from them both to rise.

62

She first bethinks her selfe, and after bad  
He should returne when all were sound asleepe,  
And learned him, who was thereof right glad,  
To go and come, what order he should keepe.  
Now came the Greeke as he his lesson had,  
When all was hush, as soft as he could creepe,  
First to the doore, which opend when he pushed,  
Then to the chamber, which was softly rushed.

63

He takes a long and leisurable stride,  
And longest on the hinder foote he staid,  
So soft he treds, although his steps were wide,  
As though to tread on eggs he were afraid;  
And as he goes, he gropes on either side,  
To find the bed, with hands abroad displaid,  
And hauing found the bottome of the bed,  
He creepeth in, and forward goth his head.

Imitatio of Ouid  
in 1. de fastis.  
Surgit amans  
animamque te-  
nens, vestigia  
furtim.  
Suspense digressus  
fuit taciturnus  
gradus.



64

Betweene *Fiametta's* tender thighes he came,  
That lay vpright, as readie to receaue,  
At last they fell vnto their merry game,  
Embracing sweetly now to take their leaue;  
He rode in post, ne can he baite for shame,  
The beast was good, and would not him deceaue,  
He thinks her pace so easie and so sure,  
That all the night to ride he could endure.

65

*Iocundo* and the King do both perceaue  
The bed to rock, as oft it comes to passe,  
And both of them one error did deceaue,  
For either thought it his companion was:  
Now hath the Greeke taken his latter leaue,  
And as he came, he back againe doth passe,  
And *Phebus* beames did now to shine begin,  
*Fiametta* rose and let the pages in.

66

Now with *Iocundo* gan the King to iest,  
Brother (quoth he) I doubt we do you wrong,  
It were more time for you to take your rest,  
That haue this night a iourney rode so long.  
*Iocundo* answers him againe in iest,  
Oh sir you do mistake, you sing my song;  
Take you your ease, and much good do your grace,  
That all this night haue rid a hunting pace.

67

I, quoth the King? I would in faith I sweare,  
Haue lent my dog a course among the rest,  
But that I found your life so busie were,  
And rode so hard, you could not spare the beast.  
Well (said the Knight) it seemeth me to beare,  
Although you breake your promise and behest,  
Yet priuie quips and taunts there needed none,  
You might haue bid me let the wench alone.

68

One vrg'd so farre, the tother so replide,  
That vnto bitter words their tongues were moued,  
Scarce one forbare to say the tother lide;  
And plaine to trie whole truth should be reproc'd,  
They cald the girle, the matter to decide,  
Who was afraid, as well it her behoued;  
And she must tell, they standing face to face,  
Which of them two deserued this disgrace.

69

Tell (quoth the King) with grim and angry sight,  
Nor feare not him nor me, but tell vs true,  
Which of vs two it was, that all this night  
So gallantly performed all his due.  
Thus either deeming he did hold the right,  
They looked both, which should be found vntrue:  
*Fiametta* lowly layd her selfe on ground,  
Doubting to die because her fault was found.

70

She humbly pardon craues for her offence,  
And that they pittie would her wofull case,  
That she with pittie mou'd to recompence  
His loue, that lasted had no little space,  
And who it was, she told them, and of whence,  
Had this ill luck in this vnluckie place,  
I how she had hop'd that though they hapt to wake,  
Yet for his partner either would it take.

71

The King and his companion greatly mused,  
When they had heard the practise so detected,  
And their conceits not little were confused,  
To heare a hap so strange and vunexpected:  
And though no two were euer so abused,  
Yet had they so all wrathfull mind reiected,  
That downe they lay, and fell in such a lafter  
They could not see nor speake an houre aftr.

72

And when at last their stomacks and their eies  
Waterd and ake, they laughed had so much  
Such shifts (quoth they) these women wi-  
cuisse,  
Do what we can, their chastitie is such:  
If both our cares could not for one su-  
That lay betwixt vs both, and did vs tuch  
If all our haire were eyes, yet sure they said,  
We husbands of our wiues should be betraid.

73

We had a thousand women prou'd before,  
And none of them denied our request,  
Nor would tride ten thousand more,  
But this one triall passeth all the rett:  
Let vs not then condemne our wiues so sore,  
That are as chaste and honest as the best,  
Sith they be as all other women be,  
Let vs turne home, and well with them agree.

74

When on this point they both were thus resolu'd,  
They gaue the Greeke, *Fiametta* for his wife,  
And tide the knot that cannot be dissolued,  
With portion large, to keepe them all their life:  
Themselues went home, and had their sins absol-  
And take againe their wiues, and ead all strife  
And thus mine Host the pretie storie ended,  
With which he prayth them not to be offend.

75

The Pagan Prince, of whom I erst made mention,  
Was pleased with this storie passing well,  
And heard the same with heed and great attention,  
And praised it, and said it did excell,  
And sweares he thought no wit nor no inuention,  
No pen could write, no tongue attaine to tell,  
By force of eloquence, or helpe of art,  
Of womens treheries the hundredth part.

76

But at the table sat another guest,  
Of riper yeares, and iudgement more discreet,  
Who such vntruths to heare could not digest,  
And see their praises so trod vnder feet;  
Wherefore his speech he presently addre-  
Vnto his host, and said, we dayly meet  
With slaunders, and with lying fables told,  
And this is one, to say I dare be bold.

77

Nor thee, nor him that that told thee, trust I with  
No though in other things he gospel spake,  
I dare affirme it well, that euill will,  
Not any triall that himselfe could make,  
Mou'd him of all the kind to speake so ill,  
Belike for some one naughtie womans sake:  
But he that would enter in womens praise,  
On higher steps aloft his stile might raise.

*A Patron of  
women.*

*Her guilts con-  
science made her  
shinke the fault  
found.*



78

But tell me now, if any one of you  
That married are, haue not awrie yet slept:  
No scarce a man, that hath not been vntrew,  
And with some other woman hath not slept:  
Nay that is more, they woo, they seeke, they sew,  
They trie, they tempt those that be safest kept,  
Yet women seeke not after men I ween,  
(I meane not such as common harlots been.)

79

Surely the man on whom your tale you father,  
Canno himselfe, nor other men excuse,  
Who I to take an vnknowne peece had rather,  
Although there owne, were better far to chuse:  
But if then elues were wood, I surely gather,  
Such courtesies, they neuer would refuse,  
But rather straine themselves beyond their might,  
Such kindnes, with more kindnes to requite.

80

But be't some woman reaks chaste wedlocks laws,  
And leaues her husband, and becomes vnchaste,  
Commonly it is not without cause,  
She sees *him*, sin his *face* *it*;  
She feels that he, his loue from her withdraws,  
And ha *me* (perhap) lesse worthie plaist,  
Who *riks* with sword, the scabberd the may strike,  
And sure loue craueth loue, like asketh like.

81

Indeed in their behalfe, agree would I,  
That all wiues that adulterie do commit,  
Should by a law, condemned be to die,  
If so their husbands guiltles be of it.  
if that men unpunisht walke awry,  
A *btles* in sence and reason tis not fit,  
weaker sex should for this sin be vexed,  
you would be done to, saith the text.

82

Yet when a man is bent to speake his worst,  
That in despite he can of women say,  
He calls them but incontinent and curst,  
No greater fault, he to their charge can lay:  
To rob, to spoile, houses to breake and burst,  
Whole Cities, townes, and countries to betray,  
Vfurie, murder, all such sinnes appeare,  
Proper to men, women of them are cleare.

83

This said this graue wise man, and would haue told  
Some storie to the same, his speech to versifie,  
Of women that had liu'd till they were old,  
Chastlie and vertuouuslie, and with sinceritie,  
But that the cruell Turke, did him behold,  
With grim looke as did the poore man terrifie,  
And made him hold his peace with threats & terror,  
Yet hating inwardly the Pagans error.

84

These bra *es* ended, night on them did creep,  
To rest they went hauing their bodies fed:  
But *Rodomont* scant all the night could sleep,  
For cares, that ran still in his troubled hed,  
His vnkind mistres him doth waking keep,  
She troubles him, whether he lye on bed,  
Whether he go, or ride, or sit, or stand,  
Whether it be, by water or by land.

85

But though himselfe could take but little rest,  
Yet of his horte he takes no little care,  
Both that he should be diligently drest,  
And haue good prouander, to mend his fare:  
To go by water now he thought it best,  
Himselfe to ease, and his good horte to spare,  
That horse he gat, as he might iustlie vant,  
Spite of *Rogero*, and of *Sacrapant*.

86

He takes a barke, and downe the pleasant streame  
Of *Sonna* he doth passe, with winde and ore,  
Great hast he makes, to get to his owne Reame,  
But changing place doth helpe him neare the more;  
In sleepe, of her vnkindnes he doth dreame,  
A wake, he sighs and still renews the sore:  
To talke was best, and yet not much the better,  
Say what he list, yet cannot he forget her.

87

Anoyd by bote, againe he taking land,  
Vienna, *Lions*, and *Valenza* past,  
(All which then were in *Agramantes* hand,  
His late good hap, had to them all agast:  
To *Aquamort*, he turns on his right hand,  
And thence he will to *Algier* turne in hast,  
And in his way, his iourney to abridge,  
He past *Auignon*, at the sumptuous bridge.

88

Not far from *Mompelier* a towne he saw,  
Of *Bacchus*, and of *Ceres* well beloued,  
Though then so spoild by souldiers that for aw,  
The dwellers all, themselves fro thence remoued:  
Alto there was a Church for Christen law,  
But yet the Priests (in this to be reprob'd)  
To saue themselves, their Church had quite forsaken,  
So as the same by *Rodomont* was taken.

89

This seat this place, did so the Pagan please,  
That here he minds to make his firme abode;  
For of the one side, he might see the seas,  
On tother side, the ground with corne well lode:  
Here all prouisions he might finde with ease,  
Here he doth caute his men his stuffe vnload,  
And makes that Church (oh horrible abuse)  
Serue him, to his profane vngodly vse.

90

Now standing pensue, in this pleasing place,  
As still he vld, he saw a Ladie faire,  
(Though mourning, yet most full of pleasing grace) *Isabella*.  
Who with a fire, made thither her repaire:  
A goodly horse, they led a soft slow pace,  
And as they went, he taught her many a praire:  
That horse did beare a coffin on his backe,  
All ouerspred in mourning sort, with blacke.

91

Me thinke by this description you may guesse,  
Who this same fire, and who this daintell is,  
Yet for more plainesse sake, I will expresse  
Her name, lest any may the matter misse:  
Twas *Isabella*, who did late proteste,  
That state that leadeth strait to heauenlie blisse,  
He was the fire, that to that mind conuerted her,  
When as dispaire, had almost quite subuerted her.

*Horace xvi.  
Ode 2 bouke.  
Quid terris alio  
cadentes sole mis-  
eramus? patria  
quis exul. Se  
quoque fugit.  
Scandit erat as  
risiosa naues  
cura: nec turmas  
equitum relin-  
quit.*

*That is to say,  
stored with  
corne and wine.*

*Ch. Stanistie.*



92

Within the mourning coffin was enclosed,  
His corse, whom she to lou'd aliuie and dead,  
And though to griefe she seemed all disposed,  
Though all in blacke, she went from foot to head,  
Yet in that wofull shew there was disclosed,  
So worthie grace, as in the Pagan bred  
A fancie, mouing such an alteration,  
As made him change his first determination.

93

For where before he did dispraise and scorne  
All women, now againe he doth commend  
That sex, that doth indeed the world adorne:  
His second loue to place he doth intend  
On this, sith that his first hath him forlorne;  
Here now he hopeth all his wo to end,  
And with this passion to driue out the tother,  
As men do driue out one naile with another.

*Simile.  
Clarus clauum  
pellis.*

94

And straight in mildest manner that he can,  
Saluting her, he askt what cauld her paine?  
And she the wofull tale to tell began,  
How her true loue by *Mandricard* was slaine,  
For whose sake she would neuer marrie man,  
But serue God all her life that doth remaine.  
The Pagan laughs at that the damsell saith,  
As one that knows no God, and hath no faith.

95

And greatly he her good intent controld,  
Affirming her to merit as great blame,  
As doth the miser, that hoords vp his gold,  
And neither doth himselfe imploy the same,  
And yet from those that would, doth it withhold:  
So shut not vp your selfe (quoth he) for shame,  
Fierce Lions, Bears, and serpents that haue stings,  
Should be shut vp, not faire and harmlesse things.

96

The godly Frire, that tooke no little care,  
Lest this ill speech might turne her to smal' good,  
With new exhortings, bad her to be ware,  
That such intilements strongly be withstood.  
And for that end, forthwith he doth pre-are,  
A sumptuous messe of ghostly inward food.  
But this vile Pagan did no tooner tast it,  
But vp againe, his iquemish stomacke cast it.

97

And seeing that the speeches of is Frire,  
(Whō he could make by no means hold his peace)  
Seemd greatly to contrarie his desire;  
Wrath kin at last did  
That this poore priest gat but a sorie hire.  
But heare a while my storie now ease,  
Lest my mishap or punishment be such,  
As was this Priests, for talking ouermuch.

### Morall.

*In Iocundo and Astolfo both, may be noted the vanitie of beautie in men, and how weak a protection it is, against the blow that neuer smarteth, as some haue termed it. Furder, in Iocundos wife, that after all the great protestations of kindnesse, was taken in bed with his man, we may note the fraud as well as frailtie, of some of that sexe. In Fiametta, that lying between a king and a knight, tooke vp a Tapster into her bed, I cannot tell what to note, but that which Ouid saith.*

*Non caret effectu, quod voluere duo.*

*Nought can restraine, consent of twaine.*

*In the Queene of Lombardie, that bestowed her loue so basely, we may see that no state nor degree, priuiledge, shame and slander, except vertue and grace from aboue, do keepe them from such enormous offences. Further we see it is a verie desperat enterprise, to thinke by any restraint, to keepe an vnchast woman from putting in practice her lewd desires. Lastly the defence of women, by the graue wise man, too truly proueth, that though many women are bad, yet many men are worse, and therefore if euery one would mend (as the Prouerbe saith) alshal be mended. And as for Rodomonts new loue, it shews that no passio grows so strong by accident, to remoue & take away a natural disposition.*

### Allusion.

*Historie nor Allegorie, nor scant any thing that is good, can be picked out of this bad booke: but for Allusions they come in my mind so plentifully, as I can scant tell how to make an end when I am once entred into them: Onely I will touch one or two, (to fill vp this page withall) that allude to that point of Iocundos patience, in leauing the adulterer unpunished, and his wife reprov'd, taking her in so shamefull an act. As I haue heard of one of honest calling (But namelesse he, for blamelesse he must be) that finding one in bed with his wife, and seeing euidently, that she had plaid false at tables, and borne a man to many, drew out his dagger resolutely, and sware a great oth, that if he had not bin his verie frend, he would at least haue killed him: and when he had done he put vp his dagger againe, and went about some other businesse. Another, hearing one was newly gone out of his house, that had done that for him, which no bodie desires to do by a deputie, tooke his sword and his buckler and followed in a great rage, and hauing ouertaken him, laid adultery to his charge. the man so hotly pursude, and so hardly charged, confessed it was true: with which the tother (being fully satisfied, as it seemed with his honest confession) left him, swearing if he had demed it, he would not so haue put it vp.*

Here end the notes of the xxviij. booke.







## THE ARGUMENT.

*Faire Isabell, to loose her head is glad,  
To saue her chastitie from Pagans might:  
To pacifie her ghost, the Pagan sad,  
Doth make a bridge at which fals many a knight:  
Orlando commeth thither, being mad,  
And in the water both together light.  
From thence the madman onward still proceeds,  
And by the way doth strange and monstrous deeds.*



**H** thoughts of men, vncon-  
stant and vnstable,  
As subiect vnto chaunge,  
as Westerne wind,  
In al designments fond, and  
variable,  
But chiefly those, that loue  
breeds in the mind:  
Lo he that late deuid all  
he was able,

To slander and deface all women kinde,  
Yet now with them whom he so sore reuild,  
Eu'n on the sudden he is reconcild.

2

Indeed (most noble Dames) I am so wroth,  
With this vile Turke, for this his wicked sin,  
For speaking so great slander and vntroth,  
Of that sweet sex, whose grace I faine would win,  
That till such time, he shall confesse the troth,  
And what a dammed error he was in:  
I shall him make be so in conscience stoung,  
As he shall teare his flesh and bite his tounge.

3

But with what folly he was then possessed,  
The sequell of the matter plaine doth show;  
For he that yesterday himselfe professed,  
To all the kind, a sworne and open foe:  
Now to this stranger, one in state distressed;  
Whose birth, whose kin, whose name he doth not  
Wlth one small glance, & sobes cast of ey, (know,  
Was so enthralld, he woos her by and by.

4

And as new fancie doth his heart inflame,  
So to new speech it doth his tongue direct,

A new discourse, new reasons he doth frame,  
With great perswasions, but to small effect:  
For still the godly Frire refutes the same,  
Exhorting her such speeches to neglect,  
And fast to hold her purpose good and ho'  
Of seruing God, and leauing worldly folly

5

He saith the way of death is large and spacious,  
But that to life is straight and full of paine.  
But *Rodomont* that saw him so audacious,  
In spite of him this doctrine to maintaine,  
Steps to him, and with hand and tongue vngracious,  
First bids him get him to his cell againe,  
Then his long beard, growne on his aged chin,  
All at one pull, he pillet from the skin.

6

And so farre forth his wrath and furie grew,  
He wrings his necke, as pincers wring a naile,  
And twise or thrise about his head him threw,  
As husbandmen that thresh, do tesse a flaile:  
Reports most diuers afterwards enfew,  
But which be true, and which of truth do faile,  
Is hard to say: some say he was so battered,  
That all his limbs about a ro were scattered.

7

Some say that to the sea he hurled him,  
Though diuerse furlongs distant from the place,  
And that he dide, because he could not swim:  
Some others tell, some saie that did him that grace,  
To saue his life, and heale each broken lim,  
And to the shore did bring him in short space,  
The likelyhood hereof, who list may way,  
For now of him, I haue no more to say.

Sentence.

Simile.

Simile.



8

Thus cruell *Rodomont* that had remoued  
The babling Frire that did him so much spight,  
The fearfull damfels loue to win he proued,  
kind words and gestures that he might;  
her his deare heart, his sole beloued,  
His ioyfull comfort, and his sweet delight,  
His mistresse and his goddesse, and such names,  
Aslouing knights apply to louely dames.

9

Her reasons he doth curteously confute,  
(Loue soone had made him such a learned clarke)  
In phrales mannerly he moues his sute,  
And still his sute was leueld at one marke,  
And though he might by force haue pluckt the frute,  
Yet for that time he doth but kisse the barke:  
He thinkes it will more sweet and pleasing make it,  
I . e do giue him leaue before he take it.

10

Wherefore a while he is content to pause,  
e by time to win her loue and grace:  
She dee like mouse in cats' sarpe clawes,  
In strangers hands, and in as strange a place;  
She fe d not Gods nor humane lawes,  
Nor had no pittie of her wofull case,  
That onely for his lust would her perfwade,  
To breake the vow that she to God had made.

11

Her heart and eyes, oft times to heau'n she lifts,  
And prayes the blessed Virgin and her Sonne,  
To saue her from this Pagans filthy drifts,  
at vnto her no villanie be donne:  
A doth bethinke her of an hundred shifts,  
the she his beastly lust may safely shunne,  
like an open gulf on her did gape,  
So as it seemd vnpossible to scape.

12

She finds out many scuses and delayes,  
That to prolong, which faine she would preuent,  
Sometime in humble manner him she prayes,  
Th t to release her he would be content:  
But being still repulst at all assayes,  
At last she doth a way and meanes inuent,  
Not onely how to shun that present shame,  
But merit to her selfe eternall name.

13

Vnto the cruell Turke that now began  
From all good course of curtesie to swarue,  
She commeth in the meekest sort she can,  
And saith, if he her honor will preferue,  
(Which is the part of each true valiant man)  
She would of him that fauour well deserue,  
And giue him such a gift as in due measure,  
Should erre surpasse this momentarie pleasure.

14

But if you needs will me desloue, I wis  
(She said) when you haue done you will repent,  
To thinke how fondly you haue done amisse,  
And lost that might haue bred you true conten  
As for your carnall loue, you need not misse  
More faire then I, and fitter for your bent,  
But in ten thousand, one you shall not know,  
hat such a gift vpon you can bestow.

15

I know (quoth she) an herbe, and I haue seene  
A little since the place where as it grew,  
That boild vpon a fire of cypresse cleene,  
And mixt with elder berries and with rew;  
And after strained harmlesse hands betweene,  
Will yeeld a iuyce, that who in order dew,  
Annoint therewith, shall neuer damage feele,  
By flame of fire, nor yet by dint of Steele.

16

I say if one therewith annoint him thrise,  
These strange effects thereof will strait ensue,  
Prouided alwayes that in any wise  
He must each month the liquors strength renew:  
I haue the way to make it in a trice,  
And you shall see by prooffe that it is true;  
This thing I thinke should ioy you more to gaine,  
Then if you conquerd had all France or Spaine.

17

And now for my reward of you, I pray  
Let me obtaine this fauourable meed,  
To sweare that you henceforth will not assay  
My chastitie, by either word or deed:  
Full *Rodomont* thinks this a blessed day,  
And hopes he now shall neuer armor need,  
And sweares he will her honour safe defend,  
Though to performe it he doth not intend.

18

Yet till she might this worke bring to effect,  
He doth himselfe against his mind inforce,  
And that she might no violence expect,  
He doth not offer any signe of force;  
But that once done, his oth he will neglect,  
For of an oth he neuer had remorse;  
But specially he thought it least disgrace,  
His oth to violate in such a case.

19

He makes to her a solemne protestation,  
And with most damned oaths the same doth bind,  
That he will neuer do her molestation,  
If she procure a iuyce of such a kind:  
This sink to deepe in his imagination,  
Of *Cygnus* and *Achilles* runs his mind,  
For by this meanes he doth himselfe assure,  
Such priuiledge as they had to procure.

20

Poore *Isabella* glad of this delay,  
By which a while her chastitie she shields,  
Receiuing this his promise go'th straightway  
To seeke these herbs amid the open fields,  
In eu'ry bank and groue, and hedge and way,  
She gathers some, such as the country yeelds;  
And all the while the Pagan walketh by,  
And to the damsell casteth still an eye.

21

And least she should want cypresse wood to burne,  
He with his sword cuts downe whole cypresse trees,  
And in all other things to serue her turne,  
That each thing may prouided be he sees:  
Now with her herbs she made her home returne,  
The caldrons are on fire (no time to leese)  
She boyles and perboyles all those herbs and flowres,  
In which he thought there were such hidden powre

X

Looke in the  
Allusion.

They are foyd to  
haue beene so in-  
chanted that  
they could feele  
no paine of fire  
nor Steele.



22

At all these ceremonies he stands by,  
 And what she doth he many times doth looke,  
 The smoke and heate at last him made so dry,  
 That want of drinke he could no longer brooke,  
 Creeke wines there were, and those he doth apply,  
 Two firkins late from passengers he tooke,  
 He and his men by drinking both that night,  
 Their heads full heauie made, their hearts full light.

23

Though by their law they are forbidden wine,  
 Yet now that here they did the liquor taste,  
 They thought it was so sweet and so diuine,  
 That Nectar and that Manna farre it past:  
 At that restraint they greatly do repine,  
 That did debar them of so sweet repast,  
 And at their owne law and religion lasting,  
 They spend that night carousing and in quaffing.

24

Now had faire *Isbell* finisht that confection,  
 Which this grosse Pagan doth beleue to be,  
 Against both Steele and fire a safe protection:  
 Now sir (she said) you shall the triall see,  
 And that you may be sure that no infection  
 Is in these drugs, you first shall proue by me,  
 I shall you shew thereof so perfect triall,  
 As you shall see the prooffe past all deniall.

25

My selfe (quoth she) mind first to take the say,  
 That you may see I do not faine nor lie,  
 Then after on your selfe you proue it may,  
 When you haue made a witnes of your cie:  
 Now therefore bid your men to go away,  
 That none be present here but you and I,  
 And thus, as with her selfe she had appointed,  
 Her neck and breasts, and shoulders she annointed.

26

Which done, in chearefull sort she open layd  
 Her naked necke before the beastly Turke,  
 And bad him strike, for she was not afraid,  
 She had such skill and trust in this rare worke:  
 He vnaduid, and haply ouerlayd  
 With wine, that in his idle braine did worke,  
 Was with her speech so vndiscreetly led,  
 That at one blow he quite cut off her head.

27

The head where loue and all the graces dwelt,  
 By heedlesse hand is from the bodie seuered,  
 Alas whose heart at such hap could not melt?  
 Yea that is more, the head cut off endeuered  
 To shew what pleasure of her death she felt,  
 And how she still in her first loue perseuered:  
 Thrice from the floore the head was seene rebound,  
 Thrice it was heard *Zerbino's* name to sound.

28

His name to whom so great loue she did beare,  
 As she to follow him would leaue her life,  
 To whom tis hard to say if that she were  
 A truer widow or a kinder wife;  
 O soule that didst not death nor danger feare,  
 (A sample in these latter times not rare)  
 To saue thy chastitie and vowed truth,  
 Eu'n in thy tender yeares and greenest youth.

29

Go soule, go sweetest soule for euer blest,  
 So may my verse please those whom I desire,  
 As my poore Muse shall euer do her best,  
 As farre as pen can paint, and speech aspire,  
 That thy iust praises may be plaine exprest  
 To future times. Go soule to heauen er;  
 And if my verse can graunt to thee this chartir,  
 Thou shalt be cald of chastitie the Martir.

*Isabella the martir  
 of chastitie.*

30

At this her deed so strange and admirable,  
 He that about all heau'ns doth ay remaine,  
 Lookt downe, and said it was more commendable  
 Then hers for whom *Tarquinio* lost his raigne.  
 And straight an ordinance inuiolable,  
 Ay to be kept on earth he doth ordaine,  
 And thus he said, eu'n by my selfe I sweare,  
 Whose powre, heau'n, earth, sprites, men and els

(feare,

31

That for her sake that dide of this name last,  
 Who euer shall hereafter beare that name,  
 Shall be b and contin  
 Of faultlesse manners, and of spotlesse fame,  
 Let writers strue to make their gle  
 And oft in prose and verse record the sam  
 Let Hellicon Pindus, Parnassus hill,  
 Sound *Isabella*, *Isabella* still.

*A prophetic of  
 all that shal  
 beare the name  
 of Isabella.*

32

Thus said the Hy'st, and then there did ensue  
 A wondrous calme in waters and in aire,  
 The chaste soule vp into the third heau'n flew,  
 Where *Zerbin* was, to that she did repaire:  
 Now when the beastly Turke saw plaine in vew  
 How he had prou'd himselfe a womans layre  
 When once his drunken surfet was digested,  
 He blam'd himselfe and his owne deed detested.

33

In part to satisfie for this offence,  
 And to appease her ghost as twere in part,  
 Although he thought no pardon could dispence,  
 Nor punishment suffice for such desert:  
 He vowes a monument of great expence,  
 Of costly workmanship and cunning art,  
 To raise for her, nor minds he to go furder,  
 Then that selfe church where he had done y murder.

34

Of that selfe place he minds her tombe to make,  
 And for that cause he gets of workmen store,  
 For loue, for mony, and for terrors sake,  
 Six thousand men he set to worke and more;  
 From out the mountaines massie stones they take,  
 With which wel wrought, & hewd, & squared the fore  
 With hie and stately arch that church he couers,  
 And in the midst intombs the blessed lo'ers.

35

And ouer this was raised with curious sleight,  
 A Pyramid, a huge and stately towre,  
 Which towre an hundred cubit had in height,  
 By measure from the top vnto the flowre;  
 It seemd a worke of as great charge and weight,  
 As *Adrian* made, to boist his wealth and powre,  
 Of goodly stones, all raised in seemly ranks,  
 Vpon the edge of stately Tybris banks.

*Moles Adriens,  
 now called Castil  
 Saint Angio  
 Rome.*

Now



36

Now when this goodly worke was once begunne,  
He makes a bridge vpon the water by,  
Of great depth and force did euer runne,  
Former time a ferrie there did lye,  
Which as would a further circuit shunne,  
And his way more easie and more nye;  
The Pagan takes away the ancient ferrie,  
And leaues for passengers, nor bote, nor wherrie.

37

But makes a bridge where men to row are wont,  
And though the same were strong, & of great length,  
Yet might two horses hardly meet a front,  
Nor had the sides a raile or any strength,  
Who comes this way he meane shall bide a bront,  
Except he haue both corage good and strength,  
For with the armes of all that this way come,  
He means to bewtifie faire *Isbels* toome.

38

A thousand braue Atchieuements he doth vow,  
Wherewith he will adorne this stately worke,  
Who knoweth all these things or how,  
He cares not whether Christian or Turke.  
Now with the bridge full finished, and now  
The cormen on each side in corners lurke,  
To make him know when any one comes neare,  
For all that come, he means shall buy it deare.

39

And further his fantastike braine doth thinke,  
That sith by drinking wine he did that sin,  
In lieu thereof he now would water drinke,  
As soft as by mishap he should fall in:  
And when he should vnto the bottome sinke,  
The top would be an ell aboue his chin,  
Who should say, for eu'rie euill action  
At wine procures, were water satisfaction.

40

Full many there arriued in few days,  
Some men, as in the way from Spaine to France,  
Some others fondly thirsting after prayse,  
In hope by this exploit their names to aduance,  
But *Rodolmont* doth meet them both the ways,  
And such his vallew was so good his chance,  
That still as many men as there arriues,  
Lost all of them their arms, and lost their liues.

41

Among the many prisoners that he tooke,  
All those were Christians to *Algyre* he sent,  
And would his men safely to them to looke,  
Because ere long himselfe to come he ment;  
The rest, saue that their armors they forsooke,  
All harmelesse backe into their countries went:  
Now while such things were by the Pagan wrought,  
*Orlando* thither came of wits besttraught.

42

At that same instant that *Orlando* came,  
Was *Rodolmont* all armed saue his hed,  
The naked Earle with wits quite out of frame,  
Leaps ou'r the bar, and went (as folly led)  
To passe the bridge, the Pagan him doth blame,  
For his presumption, and withall he sed,  
Stay lawcy villen, proud, and vndiscreet,  
If such as thee, this passage is not meet.

43

For Lords and knights and squyres of good estate,  
This bridge was built, and not for thee thou beast:  
He that no sence had in his idle pate,  
Not heeding what was said still onward prest:  
I must (the Pagan thinks) this fools pride bate,  
It seems belike he thinks I am in iest,  
And thereupon he makes the madman towards,  
And minds to drowne him, sith he was so frowards.

44

He little lookt to find a match so hard,  
Now while they two together gan to striue,  
Behold a gallant dame of great regard,  
At that same bridge by fortune did arriue,  
Faire *Fiordeliege*, that late before had hard,  
How loue did of his wits this Earle depriue:  
She hither came to seeke out *Brandimart*,  
That now in Paris was with pensue hart.

45

And thus this Ladie (as before I told)  
Came at that season to this dangerous place,  
And knew this Earle, when she did him behold,  
And wonderd much to see him in such case:  
Now held *Orlando* with his foe hard hold,  
In vaine the Pagan striues him to displace,  
And grinning, to himselfe he said at length,  
Who could haue thought, a foole had had such

46

(strength)  
And fretting that he had his purpose mist,  
He doth by sleight the madmans force assay,  
Sometime he puts his hand below his twist,  
Sometime aboue, sometime another way:  
*Orlando* stands vn mou'd, do what he list;  
The Pagan seemd to do by him that day,  
As doth the Beare, that would dig vp the tree,  
From whence she fell, but sees it will not be.

47

*Orlando* full of force, though void of sence,  
About the middle tooke the Pagan fast,  
And heaues him vp from ground, & so from thence,  
Into the streame himselfe he backward cast:  
Vnto the bottome both do sinke, from whence  
Each one was glad to get him in great hast,  
*Orlando* nakt and light, twam like a fish,  
So that he toone gat out as he would wish.

48

And being out, away he straight doth runne,  
Nor tarries he to heare, or to expect,  
If men do blame or praise that he had donne,  
But follows on his former course direct:  
This while the Pagan dranke nye halfe a tunne  
Of water, ere he could himselfe erect,  
And hardly he escaped being drownd,  
So heaue arm'd, and in place so profound.

49

Now, while the Pagan swimmeth for his life,  
Faire *Fiordeliege* with sad and pensue hart,  
A liuely patterne of a vertuous wife,  
Doth search the sepulcher for *Brandimart*,  
She tooke her time while they fell first at strife,  
And vp and downe she lookt in eu'rie part,  
But here she finds nor arms nor yet his mantell,  
Nor meets with such as of him tydings can tell.

X ij

Atchieuements  
a word of He-  
valdrie by  
which is meant  
Ornaments of  
Armes.

Simile

Mantell is a ve-  
stment of solem-  
nitie worn by  
Princes.



*He returns so  
Fardelge in  
the 21. booke,  
st. 17. 36. and  
after againe  
st. 51.*

50  
But leaue we her awhile thus mourning sad,  
And seeking him each where saue where he was,  
And tell we now what hap *Orlando* had,  
And what strange feats his furie brought to passe,  
You might perchance beleue that I were mad,  
If none of his mad pranks I ouerpasse.  
Which were so strange, and in so great a number,  
As you to heare, and me to tell would cumber.

51  
I onely shall some few of those recite,  
As to my present purpose shall pertaine:  
The madman westward held his course forthright,  
Straight to the hils that seuer France fro Spaine,  
He seldome bayts, but trauels day and night,  
So much he was distemperd in his braine,  
And by the mountaines side as he did passe,  
He met two young men driuing of an asse.

52  
This asse they loden had with clefts of wood,  
Fast bound vpon his burden bearing backe;  
They seeing one runne nakt as he were wood,  
Amid their way, they cride, hoe sirra backe,  
But he makes answer neither bad nor good,  
For sence and vnderstanding he did lacke,  
But with his foote, the poore asse he so spurned,  
That both his lode and him he ouerturned.

53  
He toft him like a football vp on hy,  
Whence downe he fell and brake his necke with it;  
Then at the men he doth with furie fly,  
Of which the tone had better hap then wit,  
For downe the rocke the tone leapt by and by,  
Deep threescore yards, and by the way did hit,  
Vpon a banke of furze, growne in the place,  
And scapt with onely scratching of his face.

54  
The tother that of feare like passion feels,  
Did thinke to clammer vp vpon the rocke,  
But straight *Orlando* takes him by the heels,  
And puls him downe and beats him like a stocke,  
As fishers vse to beat their sliding Eels,  
And eu'n as fawlkners steare some time a cocke,  
To giue vnto their hawks their intrals warme,  
So he tears leg from leg, and arme from arme.

*Simile.  
Simile.*

*Stupendious, that  
is to say wonder-  
full.*

*Vaste, that is to  
say huge or  
great.*

*Two sonnes in  
Spaine neare  
the sea.*

55  
These same and other like, stupendious deeds,  
He put in practise while those hils he past,  
Eu'n such as speech and credit all exceeds,  
His fits so furious were, his strength so vast:  
So far vnto the westward he proceeds,  
That to the sea, he now was come at last,  
Eu'n to the sandie shoars of Tarracona,  
That leadeth right the way to Barcellona.

*Oes is the muddie  
that the tyde  
leaueth behind  
on the banks.*

56  
Vpon those sands (such was his mad conceat)  
He purposd with himselfe a house to build,  
And being noyed with the parching heat,  
He thinks with sand his skin therefro to shield:  
Straight with his hands he digs him out a seat,  
And though the oes his bodie all defild,  
Yet with that mould his members all he couered,  
That nothing but his head could be discovered.

57  
Now as he lay halfe burid in the sand,  
(For saue his head, the rest was all vnseen,)  
There thither came, as in their way by land,  
*Medoro* with *Angelica* his Queen,  
She not aware what in her way did stand,  
(Of her lorne louers boasting then I wee  
Came vnto him so neare and on such soden,  
That vpon him her horse had welny troden.

58  
But seeing straight vp start a naked man,  
The sight did her greatly amaze and fright,  
She knows him not, nor guesse at him she can,  
She thinketh sure, he is some hellish spright:  
Rough grisly heard, eyes staring, vilage wan,  
All parcht, and sunne burnd, and deformd in fight,  
In fine he lookt (to make a true description)  
In face like deat., in cull & like a Gyprian.

*Simile.*

59  
But she at this strange sight (as erst I said)  
Did gallop thence as fast as she could ride,  
And screeching lowd, she crie  
Vnto *Medoro* her beloued guide:  
The mad *Orlando* was not ill apaid  
When such a prettie damzell he had spide:  
Though he no knowledge nor remembrance had,  
How this was she, for whom he first fell mad.

60  
Yet, as delighted with her pleasing hew,  
And liking well to see so faire a face,  
With great desire he straight doth her pursue,  
Eu'n as a hound the fearfull Doe doth chase,  
*Medoro* mou'd herewith, his rapier drew,  
And after this mad fellow rides apace,  
And with his horse he thunketh downe to tre  
And with his blade he thinketh to behed him.

61  
But by effect, contrariwise he found,  
That he without his host his reckning made,  
The madman shrinketh not an inch of ground,  
And his bare skin was harder then the blade,  
Yet sodenly when as the madman found,  
That one behinde his backe did him inuade,  
He turnd and with his fist so smote the horse,  
As made him ly en ground a senselesse corse.

62  
And in a trise he backe againe doth goe,  
To catch *Angelica* who spurrs with speed,  
And thinketh still her palfreys pace too slow,  
For such a turne, and so it was indeed,  
For had it gone like arrow from a boe,  
It hardly could haue holpe her at this need;  
At last her onely hope was in the ring,  
For now to helpe her was none other thing.

63  
The ring that neuer faild her at her need,  
Did make her now to vanish out of sight,  
But whether that it were for want of heed,  
Or that the sodanenesse did her affright,  
Or that her beast did founder with the speed,  
Or that she did determine to alight,  
Of all these which it was I cannot tell,  
But topsie turvie from the beast she fell.

*Had*



64

lad she false shorter, or on tother side,  
 In likelihood the madman had her caught,  
 Ich if he had, she doubtles should haue dide,  
 great good fortune her deliuerie wrought:  
 ow another beast she must prouide,  
 For this another pafe will soone be taught,  
 Orlando still doth her pursue so fast,  
 That needs he must ou'rget her at the last.

65

As for *Angelica* I take no care,  
 I know that she a beast long will not lacke,  
 But rather steale one, as she did that *Mare*,  
 That now in madmans hands will suffer wracke.  
 To follow her *Orlando* doth not spare,  
 Till he her stayd and lept vpon her backe,  
 Then gallopt he as long as she was able,  
 And lets her rest in neither field nor stable.

66

Vntill at last in leaping ou'r a ditch,  
 poore *Mare* ut her shoulder out of ioynt,  
 He with aooke neither ach nor stitch,  
 Nor of the bruse he passeth not a poynt;  
 Nor for turpentine or pitch,  
 The poore beasts brused members to annoynt,  
 Though he might see with this fall he had mard her,  
 Yet faine he would, she should haue borne him far-  
 der.

67

*Quid. Quantum*  
*irresagitta*  
*potest.*  
 At last on his owne shoulder her he laid,  
 And bare her so about an arrow shoot,  
 But feeling then that she too heauie waid,  
 He leadeth her and lets her go on foot,

Morall.

In the death of *Isabella* is a notable example of chastitie, which I must confesse I haue indenuored to set forth to the  
 oft of my poore skill, of a speciall loue and reuerence I bare to the name, hauing had an *Isabell* to my mother, and  
 such an *Isabell*, as if nature did not make me to partiall a praiser, I would boldly affirme (both for the honorable place  
 she liued in, and for the vertuous sort she dyed in) to be worthie to whom the prophecie in the 31. staffe of this 29. booke  
 may be worthily applyed: As a better pen then mine, approved by this made Epitaph and intiled in this sort:

A true report of mistres *Isabell* Harington, sometime of her Maiesties priue chamber, written by a credible per-  
 son that was well acquainted with her conditions.

A body chaste, a vertuous mind, a temperat tongue, an humble hart,  
 Secret and wise, faithfull and kind, true without guile, milde without art,  
 A frend to peace, a foe to strife, a spotlesse maid, a matchlesse wife.

And thus much for the name of *Isabella*. In *Rodomont* we may see effects of inconstancie, sensnalitie and drunken-  
 nes, all which end (for the most part) in fruitles repentance.

Historie.

Whereas this fact of *Isabella* is preferred before that of *Lucretia*, who killed herselfe after she was defloured, I thinke  
 that no man can iustly make any comparison betweene them; for the storie, I will not stand long vpon to recite it being so  
 well knowne, but refer the studious reader, either to *Liue* who writes it in prose very faithfully, or to *Quid de Fastis*,  
 where it is also recorded verie Poetically and passionatly.

*Quid faciat, pugnet? vincetur formina pugnans;*  
*Clamet? at in dextra qui vetet ensis erat.*  
*Aufugiat? positus vrgentur pectora palmis,*  
*Tum primum externa pectora tacta manu.*

Allegoric.

Some perhaps will picke a prettie Allegorie in the confection that *Isabella* made, and in deed it is a prettie receit, if it  
 be well marked: It is in the 15. staffe: an herbe, which she named not, (suppose it to be trettifollie or prettiffolly) min-  
 gled with elder berries and rew, (which may signifie sage counsel and repentance) and strained between harmles hands,  
 which betokens innocencie, boyled on a fire of Cypres, which the ancient Romanes vsed at funerals, and therefore may  
 be taken either for death, or persecution, or martyrdome: this confection vsed in due order will be a good Antidoton or  
 medicine, against fire and sword: vnder which is signified, all the perils and aduersities of the world.

Allusion.

The death of *Isabella* alludeth, or in deed is meerly taken from the like example of one *Brasilla* of *Duraazo*, that in  
 the selfe same sort deceiued a souldier, and was killed her selfe: as *Fornarius* noteth at large.

She limping follows him, and still he said,  
 Come on, come on, but little did it boot,  
 At last to make her, her slow pace to alter,  
 About his right leg he doth her halter.

68

And tels her now with ease she follow may,  
 And so to harry her he doth begin,  
 The sharpe stones lying in the rugged way,  
 Fret of her haire, and after ward the skin,  
 The beast misused thus, liues scarce a day:  
*Orlando* hath her tyde vnto his shinne;  
 He sees not, nor he knows not she is ded,  
 But on he draws her as his furie led.

69

And sure he would haue seru'd her such a tuch,  
 I meane his mistres, if he could haue caught her,  
 Had not the vertue of that ring beene such,  
 As how to walke inuisible it taught her:  
 Ah cursed be that ring, and curst as much  
 Be he that so vnluckily it brought her;  
 Else sure *Orlando* had reuenged then,  
 Her often wrongs, to him and other men.

70

Yet why wish I this curse on her alone?  
 I would the like might hap to all the kinde,  
 For in a thousand good there is not one,  
 All be so proud, vnthankfull and vnkinde,  
 With flintie hearts, carelesse of others mone,  
 In their owne lusts carrid most headlong blinde;  
 But more herein to speake I am forbidden,  
 Some time for saying truth one may be chidden.

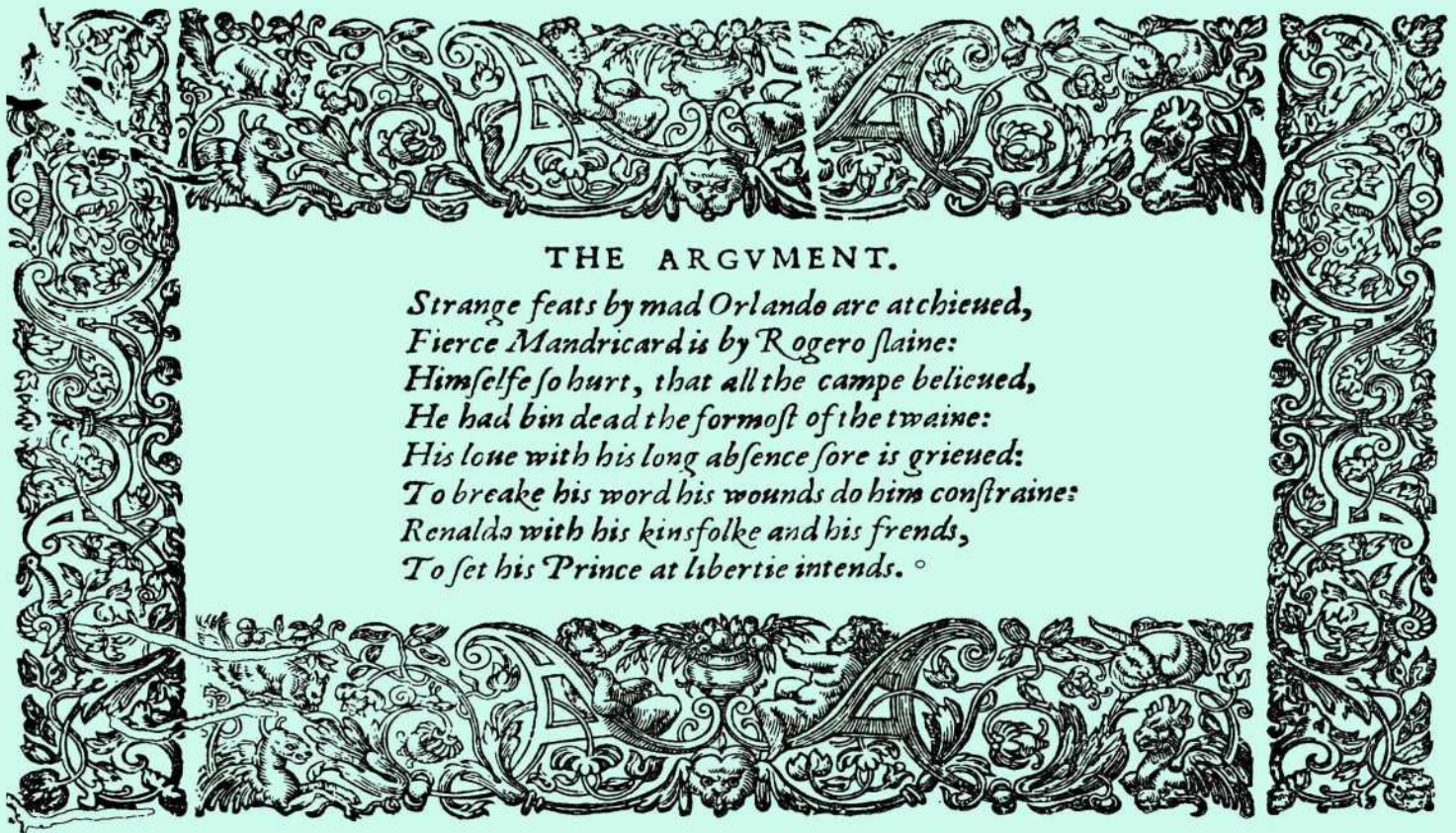
*Quid de arte am.*  
*Fallite fallentes*  
*ex magna parte*  
*profanum sunt*  
*genus.*

*Veritas odium*  
*parit. Terence.*









## THE ARGUMENT.

*Strange feats by mad Orlando are atchieued,  
Fierce Mandricard is by Rogero slaine:  
Himselfe so hurt, that all the campe beliened,  
He had bin dead the formost of the twaine:  
His loue with his long absence sore is griened:  
To breake his word his wounds do him constraine:  
Renaldo with his kinsfolke and his frends,  
To set his Prince at libertie intends.*



*This is a Palinode  
(as they call  
of that which  
said in the end  
of the last booke.  
Simple.*

*Hora.  
vox & sa re-  
uers*

*Sympathy is an  
affect, as much  
compassion,  
or feeling of an-  
others*

**W**hen men with wrath and  
fodaine pangs of ire,  
Permit themselues to be  
orewhelmd & drownd,  
And hot reuēge that burns  
like flaming fire,  
Moues hearts to hurt, or  
tongs or hāds to wound,  
Though after to amend it  
they desire,

Yet place of pardon seldome can be found:  
Alth(worthy Ladies) I do you beseech,  
To pardon that my former foolish speech.

**2**  
For I am growne like a diseased man,  
That when he finds by phisicke no reliefe,  
And now no more with patience suffer can,  
The burning torture of his lingring griefe  
Doth fall to raue and rage, and curse and ban,  
Blaspheming God, renouncing his believe:  
But when that fit is past, then would he faine,  
But ah he cannot call it backe againe.

**3**  
Yet Ladies of your clemencie I hope,  
I pittie shall, not onely pardon finde,  
Although I somewhat swarue from reasons scope,  
And rash words flow from vnaduised minde:  
She onely beare the blame that slayes my hope,  
And for true seruice shews her selfe vnkinde:  
That I did speake was partly of compassion,  
With sympathy mou'd of Orlando's passion.

**4**  
Who (as I partly did before declare)  
in monstrous sort, suruayd Marselios raigae,

And wrought great wo, great danger, and great care,  
To all the then inhabitants of Spaine:  
I told you how he drew the silly Mare,  
Tide to his leg, till she was dead with paine:  
And how he had so small sence in his head,  
He drew her after him when she was dead.

**5**  
But comming to a great deepe running water,  
He was constrained to let her there abide,  
And (for he swimmes as perfect as an Atter)  
He quickly passed to the tother side,  
Where then a herdman came his beafts to water,  
And on a curtall he himselfe did ride:  
And though he saw the madman and did view him,  
Yet being naked he would not eschew him.

**6**  
The madman prayeth him that he would spare  
His horse; that they two might together cope:  
I left (quoth he) on tother side my Mare,  
And fast about her necke I left a rope:  
I left her dead; but yet with heed and care,  
Of her recouerie there is good hope:  
The herdman laugheth at his sencelesse words,  
And vnto him no answer he affords.

**7**  
Hoe (saith Orlando) fellow, dost not heare?  
I must thy curtall haue, thou needst not lasse:  
And with that word approaching somewhat neare,  
The crabbed herdman with a crabtree staffe,  
Gaued him a bastinado on his eare,  
Which put the mad Erle into such a chafe,  
That with his fist he made the herdman reele,  
Till paine it selfe made him no paine to feele.



8

This done he leapech on the horses backe,  
And at aduventure on he takes his way,  
Where ere he comes he putteth all to wracke,  
His horse tastes neither prouender nor hay:  
But though this tyrd, a horse he may not lacke,  
The next he meets by force he takes away:  
To strue with him it was but little boote,  
He is relolued not to go a foote.

9

He passeth to the straites of Zibeltar,  
Or Zibelterra (call it which you will)  
And as he went, with force of open war,  
Townes he did burne, and all the dwellers kill:  
Ten yeares will hardly make that he would mar  
Within one houre, and thus he traueled still,  
Till on a day, riding vpon the sand,  
He saw a ship new looted from the land.

10

The aire was cleare and mild, and calme the wether,  
And certaine Gentlefolke had hyr'd the barke,  
With mind to take their solace there together,  
And to returne againe er it were darke:  
The madman cries, hoe firs let me comethither:  
His deeds, his words, they neither marke nor harke,  
Or if they did, you may be sure they thought,  
They would not comberd be with such a fraught.

11

He hallows after them, and whopes and hayles,  
To haue them stay, & with faire words doth wo the,  
Glad might they be they went with oars and sayls,  
For might he come, he surely would vndoe them,  
The foole that sees how small his speech preuayls,  
Beats on his horse, and meanes to ride vnto them:  
In vaine his horse would shun this hard aduenter,  
But he perforce makes him the sea to enter.

12

First he his feete doth wet, and then his knees,  
And next his belly, after that his backe,  
Now scant his nose one in the water sees,  
And still he layes him on; poore horse alacke,  
That either in these seas his life must leese,  
Or swim to Affricke or he can turne backe:  
At last with swimming tyrd, with water cloyd,  
His belly fild, till limbs of life were void.

13

The horse vnto the bottome quickly sunke,  
And had for company his burthen drownd,  
If fortune that helpe frantike men and drunke,  
Had not him safe conueyd to Affrike ground:  
*Orlando* at the danger neuer shrunke,  
But to the shore he swam both safe and sound:  
It happie was the seas were then so still,  
Else had the Erle bin drownd for all his skill.

14

Now being safe arriued at the shore,  
Neare Setta strait he ranged ou'r the coast,  
And did such deeds as he had done before,  
On tother side to many poore mens cost:  
At last he came where as he found great store,  
Of warlike weapons, and a mightie host:  
But how with them this madman disagreed,  
I may not in this booke to tell proceed.

15

And further how *Angelica* the faire,  
Did meet her loue againe, and what a Lord  
He grew, by matching with so great an haire,  
And liu'd with her in loue and sweet accord,  
(Although in birth an vnfit matched pare)  
I leaue for other Muses to record:  
For now I must adresse my selfe to tell,  
What haps in *Agramantes* campe befell.

16

I told you two bookes past, or thereabout,  
How *Mandricard* was *Doralices* choice:  
And how in face of all the Pagan rout,  
She gaue that doome, that made him much reioyce,  
For she was deemd for beautie (out of doubt)  
The best in Europe by the common voice:  
Now chiefe since faire *Angelica* was fled,  
And worthy *Isabella* lost her hed.

17

But yet this pleasure was not so entire,  
But that it sawced was with some annoy,  
For wrath and enuie set his hea  
And much abated of his present ioy:  
It spites him that *Rogero* dare aspire,  
To giue his coat, being a berdlesse boy:  
And further that the king of Sericane,  
Should openly lay claime to Durindane.

18

And first *Rogero* will by no meanes yeeld,  
By no intreatie, nor by no request,  
That *Mandricard* should carrie that same sheeld,  
Which had the Argent Eagle on the crest,  
Except he first could win it in the feeld:  
On tother side *Gradasso* doth not rett,  
But he will be the first to trie by fight,  
Which of them two had to the sword most right.

19

With *Agramant Marfilio* tooke great paine,  
In all or part these quarrels to appease,  
But when they saw their labour was in vaine,  
To gouerne or periwade with one of these:  
The chance (quoth *Agramant*) shal make that plain,  
For which you strue, and eu'n as fortune please,  
So let it be, and let some lots be cast,  
Which two or three, shall fight the first or last.

20

And yet this iust request denie me not,  
Before the matter any further goth,  
(Though now you be so violent and hot,  
That speech of peace and all accord you loth)  
To grant that who shall combat first by lot,  
May leeing leese, and winning win for both:  
This motion, most indifferent must seeme,  
Sith both their vallews equall we esteeme.

21

This motion neither of them do mislike,  
And straight *Gradassos* and *Rogeros* name,  
Vpon two scrols were writ so passing like  
You would haue iudged them both to be the same:  
A boy of fourteene yeare of age they pike,  
To draw the lot, and he that first out came,  
Must fight with *Mandricard*, and make it knowne,  
He fights for tothers title and his owne.

When

*Fortune's secret  
fauours, as the L.  
supplieuerbe  
saith.*

*He returns to  
Orlando in the  
39. booke 36. stas.*



22

When on this order all parts were agreed,  
 The lot to fight vpon *Rogero* fell,  
 Which hap great griefe did in *Gradasso* breed;  
 Though in shew he seemd to take it well:  
 For while it did all ioy exceed,  
 The ioy *Rogero* had, it so befell:  
 So well of his owne vallew he belieued,  
 He ioyd at that at which the tother grieved.

23

But yet *Gradasso* doth with great regard,  
 Both fauour and aduance *Rogeros* side,  
 And sheweth him how he must lie to ward  
 A comming blow, how he might slip aside:  
 How for a thrust he may be best prepard:  
 Which blowes be firme, and which be falsifide,  
 When best time is to follow thrust or blow:  
 How one may best take vantage of his foe.

24

The rest of that same day that did remaine,  
 In this same course of casting lots,  
 They each mans pleasing vaine,  
 In talke, or banquetting, or tossing pots:  
 The people glad and faine,  
 Cammer the scaffolds, gazing still like lots,  
 Some for desire do come by breake of day,  
 Some all night within the place do stay.

25

Thus (as I say) these simple fooles do long,  
 To see the combat these braue knights betwixt,  
 And blame the stay, and thinke the time too long,  
 That for the same the Herralds had prefixt:  
 But sober men that knew what did belong  
 To such exploits, whose wiser heads were fixt,  
 For publike good, this quarrell much lament,  
 And traueled all they can it to preuent.

26

And chiefe *Marfilio* and *Sobrino* sage,  
 Aduise king *Agramant* to stay the fight,  
 And these same champions furie to aswage,  
 And to take vp the quarrell if they might:  
 Forewarning him when he must battell wage,  
 With *Charles* of France, the losse of one such knight,  
 Will do him greater hurt and damage then,  
 Then would the losse of thousand other men.

27

But *Agramant* knew all was true they spake,  
 And faine he would their counsell wise obey,  
 But could not tell his grant how to reuoke:  
 Onely he doth in curteous sort them pray,  
 That he may strike with them so great a stroke,  
 Either to end or to defer the fray;  
 And yeeld the rather vnto his perswasion,  
 Because it rose vpon so light occasion.

28

Or if they did esteeme such toyes so far,  
 As though they matters were of true renoune;  
 That yet they would the fight so long defer,  
 Vntill the sonne of *Pipen* were put downe:  
 And till they conquerd had the Realme by war,  
 And tane from him his mantle and his crowne,  
 This motion had in likelihood taken place,  
 And each thought first consent would be disgrace.

This is almost the  
 way  
 quarels between  
 Princes and  
 states be so  
 seldom taken vn

29

Above them all and more then all the rest,  
 That in this sort their speech in vaine had spent:  
 Faire *Doralyce* doth *Mandricard* request,  
 That to the kings desire he would assent:  
 She doth exhort, intreat, perswade, protest,  
 She doth complaine, and languish, and lament:  
 To thinke that by his ouer haitie cholor,  
 She still must liue in anguish and in dolor.

30

How can I hope (said she) that ere I shall,  
 Liue any houre in solace and in ioy?  
 When still I see you readie be to brall,  
 With eu'rie man, for eu'rie trifling toy:  
 The Sarzans foile doth me no good at all,  
 My choyce of you hath bred me more annoy:  
 To end that quarrell, ah what did it boot,  
 Sith straight another quarrell is on foot?

*Doralyses speech*  
 to perswade  
*Mandricard*  
 to peace.

31

I simple foole, in minde was proud and glad,  
 That such a Prince, so braue a man as you,  
 For loue of me his whole state venterd had;  
 But now I finde by this that doth ensue,  
 That I had far more reason to be sad,  
 Sith each like cause, like danger doth renew;  
 And not my loue, but your owne natieue furie,  
 To bide such hard adventures did procure yee.

32

But if your loue be such as in your speech,  
 You do professe, and in your open show:  
 Then by that loue I humbly you beseech,  
 And by that fancie which too well I know,  
 Doth eu'n my heart and soule with loue bewitch;  
 Let not this quarrell any further grow:  
 I see not why it should you so molest,  
 To see your Eagle in anothers crest.

33

If needs you will attempt this hardie feat,  
 And venter life vpon a thing so vaine,  
 The hazard that you make must needs be great,  
 But none, or verie small can be the gaine:  
 But if that fortune change her fickle tear,  
 Thinke then, ô thinke, what woe shall I sustaine?  
 There neuer yet was Emperour or king,  
 Could boast that he had Fortune in a string.

Sentence.

34

But if that life be vnto you lesse deare,  
 Then is a painted bird vpon a sheeld;  
 Yet for my sake, whom it doth touch more neare,  
 Let me intreat you to this motion yeeld:  
 If you were slaine, what ioy could I haue heare?  
 Death sole from wo, both could & should me sheeld  
 Nor feare I death; my onely griefe would bee,  
 Before my death thy wofull end to see.

35

Thus earnestly faire *Doralyce* delt,  
 All that same night, as in his armes she lyes,  
 And as she spake, the teares distill and melt,  
 In watric streames, downe from her cristall eyes:  
 The Tartar that no little passion felt,  
 To comfort her faith all he can deuise:  
 And wipes her cheekes, and her sweet lip doth kisse,  
 And weeps for company, and answers this.



*Mandricards  
answer.*

36  
Ah do not griue thy selfe so sore (my deare)  
Ah do not griue thy selfe for such a toy,  
Plucke vp thy sprights, and be of better cheare,  
There is no cause of feare mine onely ioy:  
No though that all the kings and captains heare,  
Had sworne my death, and vowed mine annoy:  
Yet all the kings and captaines I would vanquish,  
Why then should you caufles in sorrow languish?

37  
What, did not I with trunchen of a speare,  
(You know your selfe whether I say the truth)  
Not hauing sword nor other weapon there,  
Win you from all your gard? and shall a youth,  
A beardless boy, caule you my safetie feare,  
And breed in you so vnaduised ruth?  
Well might you deeme I were a dastard lout,  
If of *Rogero* I should stand in doubt.

38  
*Gradasso*, though vnto his grieve and shame,  
Yet if one aske him can it not gaine say,  
That when he last vnto *Sorya* came,  
I met and tooke him prisoner by the way,  
Yet he is of another manner fame,  
Then is *Rogero*, you your selfe will say:  
I had him there a prisoner at my will,  
And if I listid might haue kept him still.

39  
And leaft I should of this good witnes want,  
Beside *Gradasso*, there be hunderds more,  
As namely *Ifolyr*, and *Sacrapant*,  
Whom I set free and had great thanks therefore:  
Also the famous *Griffin* and *Aquillant*,  
That there were taken, but few dayes before:  
With diuers more both Turkish and baptised,  
That by my force were taken and surprised.

40  
Their wonder in those countries still doth last,  
Of that great vallew I that time did show,  
And should I now a doubt or perrill cast?  
Am I in greater danger now you trow?  
Shall one young youth me hand to hand agast?  
Shall I now doubt his force, or feare his blow?  
Now hauing *Durindana* by my side,  
And *Hectors* armour on my backe beside?

41  
Why did not I, as pointed was by lot,  
With *Rodomont* first bloudie battell wage?  
That by his ill successe you might forewot,  
The speedie end of this young forrie page.  
Drie vp these teares (my deare) and bring me not,  
Before the combat such an ill presage:  
Nor thinke an Eagle on a target painted,  
Moues me hereto, but doubt of honor tainted.

42  
Thus much said he, but the such answer made him,  
With words expressing such a louing mone,  
As were not onely able to perfwade him,  
But might (I thinke) haue moulded a marble stone:  
The force was great wherewith she did inuade him,  
In fine so farre she conquers him alone,  
He grants thus farre to be at her deuotion,  
If peace be offerd, to accept the motion.

*They say in latin  
Mala ominatis  
parca verba.*

43  
And so I thinke indeed he would haue done,  
Had not *Rogero* early in the morne,  
Got vp before the rising of the Sunne,  
And entered in the lists, and blowne his horne,  
To shew that he the battell would not shun  
And that *Jones* bird by him was iustly  
Which either he will carrie on his shield,  
Or else will leaue his carkas in the field.

44  
But when the Tartar fierce did heare that sound,  
And that his men thereof had brought him word:  
He thinks great shame should vnto him redound,  
If any treatie he of peace afford:  
Arme arme he cries, & straight he armes him roun d,  
And by his side he hangs his trustie sword:  
And in his countenance he lookes so grim,  
Scarfe *Doralyce* her selfe dares speake to hi

*ne'cisi fet  
dase selas  
Aenead.9.*

45  
And armed at all pieces, vp in haft  
He gets, and that same courser he bestrides,  
That was that Christen chait,  
Who now doth runne his wit and sence besides:  
And thus he comes vnto the list  
The place that all such quarrels still decie,  
The king and all his court soone after came,  
And now ere long begins the bloudie game

*Orlandos.*

46  
Now on their heads their helmets are made fast,  
Now are the Lances put into their hand:  
Now was the token giu'n by trumpets blast,  
Which both the horse and horseman vnderstands:  
Now in a full carryre they gallop fast,  
And either strongly to his tackle stands:  
Now with such force the tone the tother stra  
As though that heau'n did fall, and earth did shake.

47  
The Argent Eagle comes on either side,  
With wings displaid on either captaines sheeld,  
The bird which *Joue* (men say) was seene to ride,  
(Though better wingd) ou'r the Thessalian feeld:  
As for their mightie strength and courage tride,  
Their massie speares sufficient witnesse yeeld:  
Nor sturd they more with those tepestuous knes,  
Then wind sturwres, or waues do stur the rocks.

*Looke in the  
Allusion.*

48  
The splinters of the spears flew to the skie,  
(As *Turpin* writeth that was present there)  
And were on fire by hauing bin so nie,  
Vnto the scorching of the fierie Spheare:  
The champions out their swords draw by and by,  
As those that neither sword nor fire did feare,  
And either thrusteth at the tother's face,  
And seekes by force the tother to displace.

49  
They neuer sought to hurt each others steed,  
Not that they made together such accord,  
But that they deemd it an vnworthie deed,  
Not worthie of a worthie knight or Lord:  
Of base reuenge they count that act proceed,  
And meet of noble minds to be abhord.  
So that in those dayes none were knowne to kill  
A horse, except it were against his will.

Vpon



50

Vpon heir vizers both do strike at once,  
 An though the same were firme and plated double,  
 As being made of prooffe and for the nonce,  
 Yet did the force of such fell strokes them trouble;  
 And still they lay on lode as thicke as stones  
 Of haile, that often turne the corne to stubble:  
 I thinke it needlesse further to alledge,  
 If they haue strength, or if their swords haue edge.

51

Yet long they fought together in that field,  
 Ere any signe of any blow was left,  
 Such wary heed each tooke himselve to shield;  
 But Durindan at last fell with such heft,  
 Full on the circle of *Rogeros* shield,  
 That halfe way through the argent bird it cleft,  
 And pierst the coate of mail that was within,  
 And found a passage to the very skin.

52

The cruell blow made many hearts full cold,  
 As wisht well to *Rogeros* part,  
 For more of life that stood by to behold,  
*Rogero* fauourd in their mind and hart,  
 That after might be bold,  
 If fortune follow would the greater part,  
 Fierce *Mandricard* were slaine, or else should yeeld,  
 At this blow offended halfe the field.

53

But surely some good Angell I beleeue,  
 The force of this so fearfull stroke abated,  
*Rogero* though the wound him somewhat grieue,  
 Yet was his mind therewith no whit amated,  
 Great vsury he mindeth him to giue,  
 And that the strife may quickly be debated,  
 He frankly strikes with his whole force and might,  
 Full on the helmet of the Tartar knight.

54

With so great force and furie came the blow,  
 As to the teeth no doubt had clou'n his head,  
 Sauing by what mishap I do not know,  
 But want of heed that too much hast had bred,  
 It lighted flatling on him, else I trow,  
 That stroke alone had him most surely sped,  
 But as it was it made his head so idle,  
 He opend both his hands and lo'd his bridle.

55

Good *Brigliadore* that felt the slacked raine,  
 (I thinke still mourning for his masters change)  
 Ran vp and downe at randon on the plaine,  
 His senselesse rider suffering him to range;  
 Who when he came vnto himselve againe,  
 And saw his horse to run a course so strange,  
 A spurred Viper had not so much wrath,  
 Nor wounded Lion, as the Tartar hath.

56

He claps the spurs to *Brigliadoros* side,  
 And on his stirrops he himselve aduances,  
 And to his fo with furie he doth ride,  
 And vp on hie his right arme he inhances,  
 To strike a blow; but when *Rogero* spide  
 His arme lie ope, as oft in fight it chances,  
 He chopt his swords point vnder tothers arme,  
 And puld it out with blood both wet and warme.

57

By which he did not onely maim his fo,  
 By letting blood vpon so large a vaine,  
 But bated much the furie of the blo,  
 Which notwithstanding fell with force so maine,  
 As made *Rogero* stagger to and fro,  
 And mazd his head, and dazd his eyes with paine,  
 And much it was that time for his behoofe,  
 To haue his helmet of so good a prooffe.

58

But hauing now againe recouerd force,  
 And as it were new wakned from his dreame,  
 Vpon the Tartar Prince he turnd his horse,  
 And on his thigh he strikes with strength extreame,  
 That through the Steele he did the sword enforce:  
 Out spins the blood in pure vermilion streame,  
 Nought could auaille enchanted *Hectors* armes,  
 Against this sword with stronger temperd charmes.

59

The Tartar feeling to his great disease,  
 His body wounded as he litle thought,  
 Did rage as terrible as do the seas,  
 With highest winds and strongest tempests wrought,  
 He curleth heau'ns, his smiting pangs to ease,  
 The shield that had the bird for which he fought,  
 Away he hurleth from him for the nonce,  
 And to his sword he sets both hands at once.

Simile.

60

Ah (quoth *Rogero*) too plaine triall this is,  
 That to that Eagle thou no title hast,  
 That first didst with thy sword cut mine in peeces,  
 And now thine owne away from thee dost cast:  
 Thus much said he, but whatsoeuer he sees,  
 He must the force of *Durindana* taste,  
 Which fell vpon his forehead with such might,  
 A mountaine might haue seemd to fall as light.

61

I say the blow vpon his forehead fell,  
 But yet his beauer sau'd it from his face,  
 It happend at that time for him full well,  
 That in the hollow there was so much space:  
 Yet harmlesse quite to scape him not befell,  
 For why the sword that euer cuts apace,  
 Did pierce his plated saddle, and beside  
 An inch did enter into *Rogeros* side.

62

Thus each with crimson had his armor dide,  
 And bloud did streame from both a double way,  
 Yet hitherto it could not be descride,  
 On whether side would chances ballance sway:  
 At last *Rogero* did that doubt decide,  
 With that same sword that euer home doth pay,  
 And where the tothers target wants, there iust  
*Rogero* payes him with a speeding thrust.

63

The blade, gainst which preuailes no Magick art,  
 His curats pierst, and ribs and flesh it tore,  
 And found a passage to the naked hart:  
 Now must the Tartar Prince for euermore  
 In sword and painted shield forsake his part,  
 Not onely so, but that which grieues him more,  
 He must forsake his much beloued life,  
 More loued honour, and most loued wife.



64

The wretch yet vnreunged did not die,  
But gaue hard recompence ere he departed,  
At good *Rogeros* head he doth let flie,  
And had (no doubt) the same in sunder parted,  
Saue that his arme was maymd, and so thereby  
Much of his force from thence had bin diuerted,  
Much of his force diuerted was from thence  
Before, when for his arme he wanted fence.

65

But as it was, yet to to hard it fell,  
And cauld the noble knight great paine to feele,  
His helmet it did cleaue, though plated well,  
And made for prooffe of tough well temperd Steele,  
And in the very skull it cloue a spell,  
Two fingers deepe, and made him backward reele,  
He backward fals, the paine was so exceeding,  
With grieuous wound his hed most freshly bleeding

66

*Rogero* was the first that tumbled downe,  
And *Mandricardo* fell a good while after,  
All thought *Rogero* dead, because his crowne  
Still bled, but chiefly *Stordilanos* daughter  
Ioyes, that her spouse had won this fights renowne,  
Now hopes she, she shal turne her teares to laughter,  
And as she thought, so was the common voyce,  
So that the Tartars friends did all reioyce.

67

But when there did appeare by certaine signes,  
The liue man liuing, and the dead man flaine,  
Then *Doralycee* wrings her hands and whines,  
And grieve came there, and comfort here againe:  
The chiefest part, whose fauour all inclines  
Vnto *Rogero*, are full glad and faine,  
And gratulate his good successe, and grace him,  
And runne to him, and in their armes embrace him.

68

Nor was this shew of loue, dissimulation,  
But true vnfaigned kindnesse, and good faith,  
But yet *Gradaffos* faint congratulation,  
Makes men surmise he thinks not as he saith:  
He secretly enuies such reputation,  
Though outwardly the flatterer he playth,  
And curseth (were it destinie or chance)  
That to this enterprise did him aduance.

69

But *Agramant* that euer did before,  
Do him great honor, and him well esteeme,  
Now he doth him admire, extoll, adore,  
So highly of his vlew he doth deeme:  
In him alone he puts affiance more,  
Then all his campe together it should seeme,  
Now that the seed of *Agricane* was spent,  
And *Rodomont* gone thence a malcontent.

70

What should I tell the praise that many a Ladie  
Gaue of this knight, of Affrike and of Spaine?  
Who knew that *Mandricardo* was no babie,  
And saw him now by this mans vlew flaine;  
Yea dolefull *Doralyce* her selfe (it may be)  
Saue that for modestie she must refraine,  
Would haue bene moued with a small request,  
To speake as well of him as did the rest.

71

I say it may be, but I cannot tell,  
For why before vnconstant she was proued;  
And sure *Rogeros* parts did so excell,  
As any, Ladie doubtlesse might haue moued.  
While tother liu'd, perhap she likt him well  
But now to seeke a new it her behoued,  
Such one as she her selfe might able warrant,  
To ride both day and nightly on her arrant.

72

Now brought the King *Rogero* with great care  
To his owne tent, that there he may be cured,  
The best Phisitions thither sent for are,  
To search his wounds, they straight his life assured:  
The shield and armes that *Mandricardo* bare  
The which this bloudie battell first procured,  
All saue the sword that was *Gradaffos* right,  
Were hanged vp by his beds head that night.

73

Howbeit that braue courser *Brigliadore*,  
*Rogero* needs would giue vnto the King,  
Who tooke it thankfully, and more  
By that same steed then any such like thing:  
But hereof now a while I  
First must you heare what news the maide did bring,  
(I meane *Hyppalca*) to her mistris deare,  
Whom loue had made to be of heauie chea

He speakes of  
Rogero aga  
in the endo  
of the booke.

74

She told her first what hap to her befell,  
How *Frontine* by a Turke was tane away;  
And after, how she found at *Merlins* well  
*Richardo* and *Rogero* that same day,  
To whom she did her hard aduenture tell,  
And how *Rogero* went with her straightway,  
To win the horse out of the Pagans fist,  
But at that season he his purpose mist.

75

Also she told to *Bradament* the cause,  
Why her deare loue himselfe did now absent,  
Who promist her, to take a little pause,  
And then her mind most thoroughly content:  
In fine *Hyppalca* from her bosome drawes  
That letter which was to her mistris sent,  
Who so much lesse did seeme to like the letter,  
Because she would haue likt his presence better.

76

For sith before she did himselfe expect,  
Now paper in his steed she haue and inke,  
It caused her to feare and to suspect,  
And made some doubts into her thoughts to sinke:  
Yet likt she well the meaning and effect,  
And kist the letter oft, and sure I thinke,  
Had burnd it with the heate of ner desire,  
Saue that the teares she shed did quench that fire.

77

She read the writing ou'r, fise times or six,  
The words, the phrase, the sence her pleasd so well,  
And then she made the maid, each time betwix,  
The message that *Rogero* sent to tell,  
And saue he did so short a time prefix  
To come to her, and ay with her to dwell,  
I thinke she neuer would haue ceased mourning,  
Till she had seene or heard of his returning.

Rogero



78

Rogero to Hippalca promist had,  
 If teene, or twentie dayes at most to stay,  
 And her, to tell her mistresse so he bad,  
 But swearing to come sooner if he may:  
 But nearethelesse good *Bradaman* is sad,  
 Still doubting chances to prolong that day.  
 All things (said she) to fortune are subiected,  
 And chiefe in warres that are by chance directed.

Sentence.

79

Ay (my *Rogero*) who could once haue thought,  
 Sith I more then my selfe esteemed thee,  
 That thou by any means couldst haue bin brought,  
 To beare thy verie foes more loue then me?  
 Whō thou shouldst hurt, by thee their help is sought  
 Whom thou shouldst saue, by thee they spoiled be;  
 Needs must I blame thy negligent regarding,  
 As well in punishing as in rewarding.

80

*Traiano* flue thy sire, I thinke thou knowest,  
 Sure the stones it know) yet to his sonne,  
 Thou tūke in honor thou such dutie owest,  
 That thou must see no hurt may him be donne:  
 this iusticie enge thou trowest,  
 Thinkst thou true fame can by such facts be wonne?  
 Lo vnto what thy shew of honor tends,  
 Letue thine enemies, and slay thy friends.

Of sh  
 see more in the  
 later end of the  
 3<sup>d</sup> booke.

81

Thus *Bradaman* spake to her absent loue,  
 With passion great, and euermore her maid,  
 With reason seeks that fancie to remoue,  
 Assuring her she need not be affraid:  
 And wishing her with patient mind to proue,  
 If so he would not do as he had said,  
 And that she would in all things hope the best,  
 And then to God and fortune leaue the rest.

Sentence.

82

With this good speech of hers, and strong perswasion,  
 She doth his coming till the day expect,  
 Which good *Rogero* brake, not by occasion  
 That he his word and promise did neglect;  
 But that which hapt against his expectation,  
 His wounds had bred so dangerous effect,  
 But chiefe the same he last tooke in his hed,  
 Which made him fortie dayes to keepe his bed.

83

Now *Bradaman* doth waite the twentie dayes,  
 And staid at *Montalbano* with her mother,  
 And making still enquirie many wayes,  
 If she might heare some news of one or other,  
 But none she heard, saue that which to his praise,  
 Was told her after by her younger brother,  
 Which though the ioyd to heare, as was most meet,  
 Yet mingled was some soure with that same sweet.

84

For why the vallew of *Marfisa* stout,  
 Which did assist them greatly, as he told,  
 To win their kinsmen from the moorish rout,  
 That vnto *Bertolage* should haue bin sold,  
 This bred in *Bradamantes* minde some doubt,  
 And strake into her heart a ieaulouse cold;  
 Because it was said they two together went  
 To *Agramant*, that in his campe was pent.

85

For though she could not chuse but greatly praise her,  
 That did her selfe so stout and valiant proue,  
 Yet one the tother side, her beautie frayes her,  
 Lest he perhap on her might set his loue:  
 But yet in fine, hope of his promise stayes her,  
 So that in twentie dayes he did not moue  
 From *Montalbano*, and in that same space,  
 There thither came the chiefe man of her race.

Renaldo.

86

I meane not chiefe of birth, but chiefe of name,  
 For two there were, in birth more old then he,  
*Renaldo* vnto *Montalbano* came,  
 His brothers, cosins, and his friends to see,  
 Whom he had heard by speech of flying fame,  
 Now safe ariued at that place to be,  
 And how *Rogero* and *Marfisa* wrought  
 Their libertie, when they were sold and bought.

87

Wherefore he came to see them face to face,  
 And vnderstand with them how each thing stood,  
 It seemd he was as welcome to the place,  
 As is the swallow to her tender brood,  
 That almost starued and in sorrie case,  
 Haue long expected sustenance and food,  
 And when they there had staid, a day or twaine,  
 Both they and he to *Paris* went againe.

Simila.

88

*Alardo* and *Guichiardo*, *Richardet*,  
 And *Malagigy* and good *Viuiane*,  
 Close after this braue Lord themselues do get,  
 And *Bradaman* with them they would haue tane,  
 But she alledg'd she could not come as yet;  
 (But hopes ere long they should be ouertane)  
 She prays them for that time content to hold them,  
 For why she was not well at ease she told them.

89

And true it was, she was not well at ease,  
 Not that she had a fit of any feauer,  
 Or any other corporall disease,  
 It was a fit of loue, that burneth euer;  
 Whole heat no herbe nor phisicke can appease;  
 This fit did her from that braue crew disieuer:  
 But in another booke I shall repeate,  
 What succour they did bring to *Charls* the great.

In this thirtieth booke, in *Orlandos* mad pranks (though they be fained things) we may note, what hard and impossi-  
 ble matters are attempted, and sometime atchieued by mad men, of which the reason is doubtfull; a naturall reason is  
 giuen (though many will doubt thereof) that the cause of their extraordinarie strength, is that nature (*Intendens om-  
 nem vim*) as they terme it, that is to say, bending her whole force at one instant, doth by that means double the strength  
 and abilitie to any hard and vnmeasurable matter: as we see men often at the pangs of death (though otherwise but  
 weak) yet so strong that three or foure men cannot hold them: or as men sometimes in a feare leape over a wall, or downe  
 from a window without harme, which at another time would breake their neckes. Another reason of mad mens vnrea-  
 sonable strength, is metaphysicall, or supernaturall, and that is when they are possessed with spirits, of which there are

γ



many examples. In Agramant that endeavors to end two quarrels with one combat, we may observe, that it becometh the wisdom of a Prince, either to take up quarrels and civill dissensions betwene their great subiects absolutely or at least to draw them to as speedie a triall, and with as little damage as may be.

Historie and  
Allusion.

Concerning the Eagle about which the two champions strave who should beare it for his armes or Cognizance (as we terme it) he seemes to allude to the civill warres that were betwene Cæsar and Pompey, whereas Lucan complaynet in his excellent Poem,

—Infestisque obuia signis

Signa, pares aquilas & pila minantia pilis,

For the Romaines Ensigne was the Eagle, and it is strange that is reported by credible writers, how in a battell fought neare Thessalia, betwene Brutus and Cassius of the one side, and Octavius and Anthony of the other side, two Eagles were visibly seene fighting in the ayre with their beaks and tallents, in most fierce manner: And finally, that of Anthonies side prevayled, and put the other to flight.

Here end the notes of the xxx. booke.









## THE ARGUMENT.

*Unwares doth Guidon with Renaldo fight,  
But afterward is by his brethren knowne,  
By whose great courage, and united might,  
The Turks are vanquished and ouerthrowne.  
Good Brandimart seeks out that wofull knight,  
Whose wits by lone distraught, are not his owne,  
Is tane, and of his life was in great perrell.  
Renaldo and Gradasso fall to quarrell.*

Against iealousie.

\* Marriage.



<sup>1</sup>  
That state of life more pleas-  
ing may we find,  
Then theirs, that true and  
heartie loue do beare?  
Whom that \* sweete yoke  
doth fast together bind,  
That man in Paradise first  
learned to weare:  
Were not some so tormen-  
ted in their mind,

With that same vile suspect, that filthie feare,  
That torture great, that foolish frenesie,  
That raging madnesse, called iealousie.

*Dulcia non me-  
rui qui non ga-  
stauit amara.*

Simile.

Sentence.

<sup>2</sup>  
For eu'rie other fowre that gets a place,  
To seat it selfe amid this pleasant sweet,  
Doth helpe in th'end to giue a greater grace,  
And makes loues ioy more gratfull when they meet,  
Who so abstaines from sustenance a space,  
Shall find both bread and water relish sweet:  
Men know not peace nor rightly how to deeme it,  
That haue not first by war bin taught to deeme it.

Sensu.

<sup>3</sup>  
Though eyes want sight, of that they would see faine,  
The thought yet sees, & hearts with patience take it,  
Long absence grieues, yet when they meet againe,  
That absence doth more sweet and pleasant make it:  
To serue and lue long time for little gaine,  
(So that all hope do not eu'n quite forsake it)  
One may endure, for when the paine is past,  
Reward, though long it stay, yet comes at last.

<sup>4</sup>  
The sharpe repulles, and the deepe disdaines,  
And all the torments that in loue are found,

At last with pleasure recompence the paines,  
And make far more contentment to abound:  
But if this hellish plague infect the braines,  
Though afterward it seeme both whole and sound,  
The qualitie thereof is so mischieuous,  
The verie thought is to a lower grieuous.

<sup>5</sup>  
This is that cruell wound, against whose smart,  
No liquors force preuailes, nor any plaster,  
No skill of starres, no depth of Magicke art,  
Deuised by that great clauke Zoroaster:  
A wound that so infects the soule and hart,  
As all our sence and reason it doth master;  
A wound whose ang, and torment is so durable  
As it may rightly called be incurable.

*Zoroaster the en-  
menter of magicke.*

<sup>6</sup>  
This is a plague that quickly doth infect  
All louers hearts, and doth possesse their thought,  
As well with causelesse, as with iust suspect.  
By this, a man to madnesse meere is brought:  
Oh plague, by whose most damnable effect,  
In deepe dispaire to die haue diuers thought;  
Oh Iealousie, that didst without delart,  
Possesse the noble Bradamantes hart,

<sup>7</sup>  
Not for the tale her mayd or brother told,  
Which made with in her mind a sharpe impressiō,  
But other news that made her heart full cold,  
How her loue of new loue did make professiō;  
As I more plaine here after shall intoll:  
For now I needs a while must make digression,  
To braue Renaldo, that to Paris ward  
Did march, with that same crew of great regard

The



8

The day ensuing ere it yet was night,  
*Guidon Savage.* They met an armed knight vpon the way,  
 A Ladie faire accompanid the knight,  
 His armour all was blacke, saue that there lay  
 A thwart the brest a wreath of Argent bright.  
 And straight the formost man in their array,  
 Which *Richardetto* was, as then did chaunce,  
 He challenged with him to breake a launce.

9

The gallant youth that neuer man refused,  
 Straight turnd his horse, a space for course to take,  
 As one that (for his time) had often vied,  
 Such feates as this to do and vndertake:  
*Renaldo* standeth still, and them perused,  
 To see which knight the fairest course would make,  
 Now *Richardet* thinks, if I hit him iust,  
 I shall this gallant tumble in the dust.

10

But otherwise it then to him befell,  
 And of his recknin he was quite deceaued,  
 The tother knew to hit, and sit so well,  
 That *Richard* was fr the saddle heaued:  
*Alardo* seeing rother fell,  
 Did thinke t'auenge the foile that he receaued,  
 But he likewise inferiour did remaine,  
 As me was bruisd, his shield was rent in twaine.

11

*Guicchiardo* next, the selfe same fortune tride,  
 And was constrained vnto the ground t'encline,  
 Although to him *Renaldo* lowdly cride,  
 Stay, hold your hands, for this course should be mine.  
*Visian* and *Milagige*, and more beside,  
 That at their kinlmens foyle did much repine,  
 Would then haue fought with this same stranger  
 Saue that *Renaldo* claymd it as his right. (knight,

12

And said, my friends, we must to Paris hast;  
 But to him: selfe he said, it were a iest,  
 For me to stay till all they downe were cast  
 By one and one, Ile fight and they shall rest;  
 This said, he spurres his horse and commeth fast,  
 And as he runs he sets his speare in rest;  
 The tother doth as much, and eijthers speare,  
 He stroke doth in a thousand eeces teare.

He would not  
 spent vpbraid

13

he horsemen with the stroke stur not an inch,  
 They both had learnd so perfectly to sit,  
 But on their horses it did shrowdly pinch,  
 Yet Bayard scarce his course doth intermit,  
 The tothers horse had such a parlous wrinch,  
 That mard him quite, and brake his backe with it,  
 His master that was greatly grieu'd to see't,  
 Forsakes his seate, and takes him to his feet.

14

And to *Renaldo*, that with naked hand  
 Came toward him in shew of truce, he sed,  
 Sir knight I giue you here to vnderstand,  
 I likt so well this horse that here is ded,  
 I thinke it would not with mine honor stand,  
 To leaue him vnreuengd, which hath me led  
 To challenge you, eu'n as you are true knight,  
 That you will answer me againe in fight.

15

*Renaldo* answerd, if your horse you lost,  
 The onely caule of this your quarrell be,  
 Then comfort you, for of mine onely cost,  
 Your want herein shall be supplide by me,  
 With such a horse, as I may boldly boast,  
 To be as good a one as ere was he:  
 Not so fir, said the tother, you mistake it,  
 I will expound my mind, and plainer make it.

16

Though I lykt well my seruiceable horse,  
 Yet sith he now is in this conflict slaine,  
 Thinke not that of his death I so much force,  
 As that alone moues me to fight againe;  
 But in plaine termes on foot to trie your force,  
 As well as erst on horsebacke I would faine.  
*Renaldo*, that of no mans force accounted,  
 Without delay straight from his horse dismounted.

17

And sith { quoth he) I see your noble mind,  
 Of this my company hath no suspition,  
 They shall go on, and I will stay behind,  
 And so will fight with you on eu'n condition.  
 This said, his band to part thence he assignd,  
 Who went their way vpon their Lords commission,  
 Which bred great admiration in the stranger,  
 To find a man so little fearing danger.

18

Now when his standerd quite was out of sight,  
 And all *Renaldos* companie was gone,  
 Then hand to hand they do apply the fight,  
 With force and furie great they lay it on;  
 Each maruels at the tothers passing might,  
 And yet of either side the gaine is none,  
 They felt the blowes so heauie and so hard,  
 That glad they were to lie well to their ward.

19

Thus these two knights, for honors onely sake,  
 Together combat in such eager sort,  
 That eu'ry little error they should make,  
 Endangerd life in this vnpleasant port:  
 An houre and halfe this trauell they did take,  
 Each labouring to cut the tother short,  
 And in his mind *Renaldo* maruels much,  
 Who this should be, whose skill and force was such.

20

And, saue that he could not with his reputation,  
 He would haue wisht the battell at an end,  
 And offerd of a truce communication,  
 And of his vnknowne foe haue made his friend:  
 Likewite the tother felt such inclination,  
 Now finding scarce he could him: selfe defend,  
 That he repented his rash hardie part,  
 And would haue had a truce with all his hart.

21

It waxed darke there fell an eu'ning mist,  
 So that at last they neither of them know,  
 When he did hit aright, or when he mist,  
 Nor how to giue, nor how to ward a blow:  
 When first *Renaldo* wisht him to desist,  
 Sith now the Sunne descended was so low,  
 And that the combat might be now reiourned,  
 Till *Phebus* were about the world returned.

Y iij



22

Offring (at which the stranger greatly musd,  
And his rare curtesie therein commended)  
To lodge him where he should both be well vsd,  
And like a man of honour well attended:  
The tother his great curt'sie not refusd,  
And so betweene them two the fray was ended:  
And straight *Renaldo* gaue him as his gift,  
His pages horse, that was both strong and swift,

23

Thus on they rode vnto *Renaldos* tent,  
And grew acquainted ere they thither came,  
By meanes in certaine speeches as they went,  
*Renaldo* happened to tell his name;  
By which the stranger knew incontinent,  
That this was that same Palladine of fame,  
And that himselfe was to *Renaldo* brother,  
By fathers side alone, and not by mother.

24

The sauage *Guidon*, this braue warriour hight,  
That traueled had full many a hunderd mile,  
With those two brothers, nam'd the black and white,  
And *Sanfonet*, vntill by craft and guile  
They were surpris'd, as you heard last night,  
And made against their wils to wait a while,  
For maintenance of lawes vniust and bad,  
That wicked *Pinnabell* deuised had.

25

Now when as noble *Guidon* certaine knew  
That this *Renaldo* was, whom he before  
Desired long to see, he much did rewe  
That he had done, and did lament it fore:  
*Simile.* A blind man would not be more glad to vew  
The light, he doubted he should nere see more,  
Then *Guidon* in his mind was well apaid,  
To see this knight, and thus to him he said.

26

What strange mishap, what sinister aduenter,  
Hath bred this fault in me, my noble Lord,  
That I with you into this strife should enter,  
With whom I ought to haue all kind accord?  
I am your fathers sonne, not by one venter,  
I euer haue your name and stock adord,  
*Guidon* I hight, *Constanza* was my mother,  
Borne beyond Euxin seas, and yet your brother.

27

Wherefore I pray, pardon my fond offence,  
That haue in steed of dutie offerd wrong,  
And tell me wherein I may recompence  
This ouersight, and I will do ere long:  
*Renaldo* that had heard of him long since,  
And to haue seene him did not little long,  
Embrast him, and not onely did forgieue him,  
But commendation great and praise did giue him.

28

He said his valew was a perfect signe,  
To shew himselfe in fight so fierce and stout,  
That he was truly come of that same line,  
Whose noble brute was blowne the world about:  
For if your manners did to peace incline,  
Then had there bene (said he) more cause of doubt,  
The fearfull Hart comes not of Lions seed,  
Nor doth a silly Doue a Faulcon breed.

*Sens. Nec im-  
bellem feroces  
progenerant a-  
quila columbam*

29

Thus fell they two acquainted on the way,  
And talkt together friendly as they went,  
But neither did their talke the iourney stay,  
Nor did their riding make their speech relent,  
Vntill they came where all their brothers lay,  
When as a great part of the night was spent,  
Who with great ioy and pleasure did behold them,  
And chiefe when who this was *Renaldo* told them.

30

For though he must to them (no doubt) haue euer  
Bene verie welcome as a brother deare,  
Yet could he be to them more welcome neuer,  
Then now, what time as you before did heare,  
They all did mind to do their best indeuer  
To rescue *Charles* that was of heauie cheare:  
Wherefore for this one cause about the res  
He was vnto them all a welcome guest.

31

Thus now the day ensuing on went *Guidon*,  
Ioyning himselfe vnto *Rena* crew,  
And as to Paris walls they forward ride on,  
They met two valiant youths that well him knew:  
Further with them conferri descride on  
A Ladie richly clad, and faire of hew:  
These warlike youths had *Gismond* to their mother, *Gris*  
White *Griffiin*, and blacke *Aquilant* his br *asiant.*  
*Froi deliege.*

32

Now *Guidon* knew them, and to them was knowne,  
As hauing bene together many dayes,  
By whom they were vnto *Renaldo* showne,  
And prais'd for gallant men at all assayes:  
As in your iudgement, likewise in mine owne,  
(*Renaldo* said) these youths do merit praise,  
For they haue oft bene prou'd two perfect warriors,  
As well in spite as sport, at tilt and barriers.

33

*Renaldo* did by their apparell know them,  
Tone euer wearing white, the tother blacke,  
And friendly countenance he now did show them,  
Chiefly because the King did succour lacke:  
Wherefore into his band he doth bestow them,  
That band that to y Turks must bring much wr e,  
And they do ioyn them to *Renaldos* banner,  
Forgetting all oliairres in louing manner.

34

Betweene the house of *Ammon* and these twins,  
About one *Truffaldin* a varre there fell,  
The matter at the first not worth two pins,  
Wherefore the circumstance I will not tell,  
But now *Renaldo* their affection wins,  
By vsing them so curteously and well,  
For curteous speech and vsage mild and kind,  
Wipes malice out of eu'ry noble mind.

*Sensence.*

35

Now after these another knight there came,  
Hight *Sanfonet* a man of great account, *Sanfonet.*  
Who welcom'd was, and tooke it for no shame,  
Of stout *Renaldos* band himselfe to count:  
While this thus past, behold the gallant dame,  
That knew this noble Lord of Clarimount,  
(For she was one that all the French Lords knew)  
Told him a tale that made him greatly rewe.

My



*Fiordelice to Renaldo.*  
 36  
 My Lord (saith she) I bring you sory tiding,  
 He whom the Church and Empire held so deare,  
 Runs all about, in no one place abiding,  
 Of fence and argument depriued cleare:  
 He naked goes, not natures secrets hiding,  
 Which me to tell, and you must grieue to heare,  
 Orlando, that same light and lampe of France,  
 Hath lost his wits, God knowes by what mischance.

37  
 His armes and sword that he away had throwne,  
 As things by him left and forsaken clearely,  
 I saw a curteous knight, to me vnknowne,  
 But one (it seemd) that lou'd Orlando dearely,  
 Them gather where they scatterd were and lowne,  
 And eu'n of charitie as seemed mearely,  
 A triu'ph wise on tree he hangd the same,  
 And vnderneath he grau'd *Orlando's* name.

*in his own Zerbino*  
 38  
 But straight the sword that hangd on the tree,  
 With force and scornfull speech away wastane,  
 (As I can witnesse well that did it see)  
 By *Mandricard* the sonne of *Agricane*:  
 I ainke you what this will to Europe be,  
 That once againe the Turks haue Durindane;  
 The gentle knight straue long with him to saue it,  
 The end was forst to let him haue it.

39  
 I saw Orlando late in monstrous guise,  
 To runne about vncouth and all vnclad,  
 With strangest clamours and most hideous cries:  
 In fine I do conclude that he is mad;  
 And saue I saw it to with these mine eyes,  
 I would not trust if any told it had.  
 She further told how she had seene him later,  
 With *Rodomont* to tumble in the water.

40  
 And last of all she told him she had heard,  
 How that about this sword there grew some strife,  
 Betweene *Gradasso* stout and *Mandricard*;  
 And how the Tartar hauing lost his life,  
 The sword was giuen *Gradasso* afterward,  
 ouer all the Pagan campe was rise:  
 And hauing ended this so sad narration,  
 Thereto she addeth this short exhortation.

41  
 That he and eu'ry one that were not foe  
 To stout Orlando, woul. take so much paine,  
 In Paris or elsewhere him to bestow,  
 Till he had purged his distemperd brame:  
 Mine husband *Brandimart* (saith she) I know,  
 To do him any good himselfe would straine:  
 Thus *Fiordelice* spake, the louing wife  
 Of *Brandimart*, that lou'd her as his life.

42  
 At this strange tale and wofull accident,  
 Such inward grieffe the good *Renaldo* felt,  
 That with the thought, his heart incontinent  
 Did seeme like snow against the Sunne to melt,  
 And with all speed he might, to go he ment,  
 And by all meanes he might so to haue delt,  
 To seeke Orlando, whom if he can find,  
 He hopes to bring him to a better mind.

43  
 But sith he now had thither brought his band,  
 Or wer't the will of God, or were it chance,  
 He first doth mind to end the cause in hand,  
 And rescue Paris and the king of France;  
 Wherefore he makes his men all quiet stand  
 Till night, what time himselfe will leade the dance,  
 And then betweene the fourth and second watch,  
 He meanes at once the matter to dispatch.

*They use in camp  
so cleuide the  
night into foure  
watches*

44  
 He makes his men lie close for all that day,  
 By way of Ambuscado in a wood,  
 And ease themselves and horses all they may,  
 And take the sustenance of rest and food,  
 The place within three leagues of Paris lay,  
 And when the Sunne was set, he thought it good,  
 What time the world doth vse his lesser lampe,  
 To Paris ward to moue his silent campe.

45  
 And as he purposed, he performd in deed,  
 For straight himselfe with that same gallant grew,  
 Set out by night, as first they had decreed,  
 In silent sort suspicion to eschew.  
 Now came the time that they must do the deed,  
 Now neare vnto the Turkish campe they drew,  
 When first the heedlesse Sentinels intrapping,  
 They kild them all, because they took them napping.

46  
 The watch once slaine, they are no longer dumme,  
 But after stout *Renaldo* soone they came,  
 They sound the trumpet, and strike vp the drumme,  
 And calling still vpon that noble name,  
 That often had the Pagans ouercome,  
 (I meane *Renaldos* houle of Montalbane)  
 Which crie he causd both his owne men to quicken,  
 And that the Turks might in more feare be stricken.

47  
 Himselfe well mounted on his famous horse,  
 Doth presse amidit the Pagan Princes tents,  
 And with his owne, and with his hortes force,  
 He treds them downe, and all in peeces rents,  
 Vnarm'd or arm'd he kils without remorse,  
 Who euer commeth in his way repents,  
 The drowisie men halfe arm'd make poore resistance  
 Against to braue a man with such assistance.

48  
 For why, beside those men I nam'd before,  
 Whose vertue and whole value oft were shewne,  
*Renaldo* had fixe hundred men and more,  
 All perfect traind, of strength and courage keene vnto,  
 Which about Clarimont he kept in store,  
 For his owne vse and causes of his owne,  
 Though at this need his Princes turne to furnish,  
 He soone agreed his owne townes to vnfurnish.

49  
 And though *Renaldo* had no great reuenue,  
 The which chiefe finews vnto warre affords,  
 Yet kept he still fix hundred in retinue,  
 What with good vltage and with gentle words,  
 That all of them did still with him continue,  
 At his commaund with launces, horse and swords;  
 Nor was there any that from him away went,  
 Though diuers others offerd greater payment.

*Sentence.*



50

Now thinke when this braue crue the Turks assailed,  
 At vnawares halfe wake or halfe asleepe, (led,  
 How that same name and that same noise them quai-  
 How here they fled and there, with hold and keepe:  
 But smally flight, and lesse their fight preuailed;  
 But euen as Goates from Lions, or as sheepe  
 Fro Woules make small defence, such in comparison  
 These Pagans made against *Renaldos* garison.

Gentle.

51

On tother side king *Charles* (that by espiall)  
 Had notice of *Renaldos* comming hither,  
 With all that crue so noble and so loyall,  
 That to his aid combined were together,  
 With diuers Lords came forth in person royall,  
 And all his men of armes likewise came thither:  
 Eke *Brandimart*, rich *Monodontes* heire,  
 Did with king *Charles* vnto the field repaire.

52

Whom when his spouse, that neare about did houer,  
 Had found out by his standard and his armes,  
 And plainly saw it was her dearest louier,  
 She rusheth in among the men of armes,  
 And vnto him her selfe she doth discouer,  
 Who straight embraced her in open armes;  
 And leauing then the battell drew apart,  
 That each to other might their minds impart.

53

And after sweet embracing oftentimes,  
 They did conferre together of their state:  
 Overtue of those vnuspicious times,  
 When Ladies early wander might and late,  
 And yet be faultlesse deemd, and free of crimes,  
 Where now each small suspect turnes loue to hate,  
 Yea eu'n for all their watching and safe keeping,  
 They doubt their wiues do wake while they are slee-

54

Among the conference this couple had,  
 The Ladie did vnto her spoule vnfold,  
 How his good friend *Orlando* was false mad,  
 How she her selfe his madnes did behold,  
 His running naked, carelesse and vnclad,  
 Not credible had any else it told,  
 But credible it was now she had sed it,  
 For in far greater things he gaue her credit.

55

She further did to *Brandimart* recount,  
 How she had seen the bridge the Pagan made,  
 (I meane the cruell Pagan *Rodomont*)  
 Vpon the streame so deepe as none could wade,  
 Where he the passengers of best account,  
 Did from each side with furie great inuade,  
 And with the spoiles of those he kild and tooke,  
 Did beautifie a tombe made by the brooke.

56

And last she told how with his strength extreame,  
*Orlando* heau'd the Turke armd from the ground,  
 And so with him fell backward in the streame,  
 With perill great there to haue both bene drownd,  
 From whence *Orlando* went about the Reame,  
 Where his mad parts wold make him soon be found.  
 This tale in *Brandimart* did breed such sorrow,  
 He staid not for the next ensuing morrow.

57

But taking for his guide faire *Fiordeliege*,  
 And being readie armd, as then he was,  
 He go'th to seeke that foresaid parlous bridg,  
 In mind (what euer hap) the same to passe,  
 Where many men their liues line did abridge,  
 As in such dangers soone it comes to passe:  
 No sooner came he to the vtmost ward,  
 But *Rodomont* had notice by his guard.

58

He greatly did to heare such newes reioyce,  
 And straight he cometh forth with warlike gesture,  
 And bids him with a loud and scornfull voyce,  
 Vnto the tombe to yeeld his armes and vesture,  
 Or threatens him if he refuse this choyce,  
 To make him drinke beyond all good disgesture:  
 But *Brandimart* his threats did nothing feare,  
 And makes no answer, but with couched speare.

59

Then straight to horses side he sets the spurs,  
 The horse he rode vpon *Baldo* hight,  
 The horse though good, yet nores, and starts & sturs,  
 Much scar'd with narrow bridge and waters sight:  
 Eke *Rodomont* his good \_\_\_\_\_ urs,  
 Who neuer starts, as vsed to this fight,  
 Although the bridge did shake all vnder feet,  
 When in the middie way these kinghts did

60

Their speares that were of firme well seasond wood,  
 With so great force vpon their armour strake,  
 That though their horses were both strong & good,  
 Yet both fell from the bridge into the lake,  
 Quite ouerwhelmd with water and with mood,  
 Yet neither horseman did his horse forsake;  
 Long taried they within the streame below,  
 To search if any Nymph dwelt there, I trow.

61

This had not bin the first time nor the fift, (downe,  
 That from this bridge the Turke had bene throwne  
 Wherefore his horse and he could better shift,  
 For neither horse nor he did doubt to drowne;  
 For where the streame was most profound and swift  
 He often had bene plung'd about his crowne,  
 Which made his horse and him the more audacious  
 Amid the strean, although profound and spacious.

62

He knew by prooffe (for he had tride it oft)  
 Where all the shelues, and where the channell lay,  
 Which parts were grauelly, and which were soft:  
 The tother ignorant, was borne away,  
 To it here and there, now low, and then aloft,  
 The while the Pagan greedie of his pray,  
 At all aduantages doth still assaile him,  
 Whose horses tooting more and more did faile him.

63

At last with plunging and with struing tired,  
 He backward fell into the weeds and mud,  
 Where he was like to haue bin drownd and mired,  
 Saue that his spouse that by the riuier stood,  
 In humble wise the Pagan Prince desired,  
 And in most earnest manner that she cou'd,  
 Eu'n for her sake, whose ghost he did adore,  
 To helpe her worthy knight vnto the shore.



64

Ah gentle sir, if euer you did tast,  
Of loue (she said) or of a louers passion,  
Saue that same knight, on whom my loue is plast,  
And let him not be drown'd in so vile fashion:  
Suffice it you, your tombe will be more gratt,  
With one such prisner of such reputation,  
Then hunderds other, that shall here arriue;  
Then take his spoiles, and saue himselfe aliue.

65

These words that might haue mou'd a stone I thinke,  
Mou'd him to rescue noble *Brandimart*,  
Who without thirst had tane such store of drinke,  
As from his limbs, his life did welny part:  
But ere he brought him to the riuers brink,  
He caus'd him with his sword and armes depart,  
And made him sweare now he was in his powre,  
To yeeld himselfe true prisner to his towre.

66

The dame of comfort all was quite bereaued,  
When as she saw how ill her spouse had sped,  
And yet lesse griefe of this chance she conceaued,  
Then if he had beene in the water dead:  
She calls her selfe the cause that he receaued  
This harme, that fondly had him thither led,  
Into a place of danger such and reopardie,  
As must hazard either life or libertie.

67

About the place in vaine she long did houer,  
Then parted she in mind to seeke some knight,  
Of *Charles* his campe, that might her losse recouer,  
And proue himself, though not more strong in fight  
At least more fortunate then was her loue:  
Long did she trauell all that day and night,  
And eake the day ensuing, ere she met one,  
Yet was it her good hap at last to get one.

68

was *Brandimant*, as appears  
in the 35. booke.  
32. stance.

A champion in a rich attyre she met,  
All wrought with witherd leaues of Cypresse tree,  
Hereafter I will tell you, but not yet,  
What wight this was, whether a he or she:  
Now turne I to the campe, least I forget  
The noble knights that set their soueraigne free;  
peane *Renaldo* and his new come brother,  
With cunning *Malagigi* and many other.

69

Impossible it was account to keepe,  
Of those were kild that night, and those that fled,  
Fierce *Agramant* was wakned from his sleepe,  
And with all speed that might be, vp he sped,  
He weighes the perill and the danger deepe.  
His souldiers runne away near making hed:  
*Marsilio*, with *Sobrino* and the rest,  
Wish him to flie, for feare he be distressed.

70

Advising him, sith fortune now gan frowne,  
Vnto this tempest wisely to giue place,  
And go to Arly, or some other towne,  
So strong to dure assault no little space:  
So might he saue his person and his crowne,  
As first was to be car'd for in such case;  
And then with wisdom warly proceeding,  
To waite till time might serue of better speeding.

71

Thus *Agramant*, to so great danger brought,  
Well knew not what to do, nor what to say,  
But did as by his countell he was taught,  
And in great hast conueyd himselfe away:  
The while much woe vnto his men was wrought,  
The Christens them dilcomfite, kill and slay:  
The darknesse cauld the number be vnknowne,  
That in this fight were kild and ouerthrowne.

72

With hast full many were in water drown'd,  
That saw there was no safetie in the land,  
More succour in their heeles then hands they found  
Against such fierce assaylants few durst stand;  
But greatest damage did to them redound,  
By those six hunderd of *Renaldos* band:  
Who did distribute strokes in so great plentie,  
As eu'rie one of them massacred twentie.

73

Some thinke that *Malagigi* plaid his part,  
In this conflict not wounding men nor slaying,  
But making of their foes by Magike art,  
To heare so huge a noyle of horses naying,  
Such sound of Drums, such shouts from eu'ry part,  
As all the world had vowed their decaying:  
By which they all were stricken in such feare,  
As not a man of them durst tarrie there.

74

Yet though the Turkish Prince fled thence so fast,  
The braue *Rogero*, he would not forget,  
But caus'd him from danger to be plast,  
And on an easie paced horse him set:  
Thus now the Turks were by the Christens chast,  
And glad they were a walled towne to get:  
But yet *Gradasso* and his valiant band,  
Did still vnto their tackle stoutly stand.

75

Nay, which was more, when as he vnderstood,  
How that *Renaldo* Palladme of France,  
Was he that shed such store of Turkish blood,  
He was so glad he ready was to dance;  
He thanks his Gods that were to him so good,  
To tend him this so much desired chance,  
By which he hopes and makes account most clearly,  
To win that horte *Renaldo* held so dearly.

76

For why, *Gradasso* king of Serycane,  
Long since to France came with an army Ryal,  
With onely hope to conquer *Durindan*,  
That famous blade of so good prooffe and triall:  
And eake *Renaldos* courser to haue tane,  
That *Bayard* hight: and now when by espiall,  
He knew *Renaldo* was on that beast mounted,  
The conquest lure, the horte his owne he counted.

77

So much the rather, for that once before,  
About this matter they had made a tray,  
Fast by the sea vpon the sandie shore:  
(To tell the circumstance I may not stay)  
But *Malagigi* thence his cosin bore,  
And did into a barge him late conuay:  
And thereupon *Renaldo* euer since,  
Wastane but for a coward by this Prince



78

Wherefore in hope so rich a spoile to reape,  
Two howres before the rising of the sonne,  
All armed on Alfana he doth leape,  
And with his lance to death are diuers done:  
On French the Moores, on Moores he French doth  
And all he meeteth he doth ouerrunne: (heape,  
So did ambition set his heart on fire,  
To meet *Renaldo*, such was his desire.

79

Soone after this each met with speare in rest,  
(But neither then at first the tother knew)  
Each brake his speare vpon the tothers crest,  
Vnto the heau'nly car the splinters flew:  
Then with their swords either was readie prest,  
(Their lances thrown away, their swords they drew)  
Each laying on the other so fell strokes,  
As if not knights had fought, but clownes feld okes.

80

*Gradasso* though he knew him not by sight,  
(For yet the morning beames were not displaid)  
Yet did he guesse both by the horses might,  
And those fierce strokes the tother on him laid;  
Wherefore with words that sauord scorne and spight,  
He straight begins *Renaldo* to vpbraide:  
And said he had his challenge disappointed,  
And not appeared at the day appointed.

81

Belike you thought I should haue met you neuer,  
But now (said he) you here are met right well,  
Assure your selfe I will pursue you euer,  
Were you tane vp to heau'n, or downe to hell;  
No height nor depth, should hinder mine endeuer,  
I meane to finde you out where eare you dwell,  
To shunne the fight with me it doth not boote,  
Vntill you leaue your horse and go on foote.

82

At this his speech, were diuers standing by,  
As *Guidon*, *Richardet*, and others more,  
Who would haue slaine *Gradasso* by and by,  
Had not *Renaldo* stepped them before,  
And said in wrath, what matters am not I,  
Well able wreake my priuate wrongs therefore:  
Then to the Pagan gently thus he spake,  
And wisht him marke the answer he did make,

83

Who euer saith, that I did fight eschew,  
Or shew defect of vallew any way,  
I say and do auouch he saith vntrue,  
And I will proue by combat what I say:  
I came vnto the place to meete with you,  
No scuses I did seeke, nor no delay,  
And frankly here to you I offer fight,  
But first I wish you were informed right.

84

Then tooke he him aside, and more at large,  
He told what hapned him and how by art,  
His cosin *Malagigi* into a barge  
Conuayed him, and forst him to depart:  
In fine himselfe, of blame quite to discharge,  
He brought him out to witnes eu'rie part,  
And then to proue that this was true indeed,  
He offerd in the combat to proceed.

85

*Gradasso* that both curteous was, and stout,  
Gaued care vnto the tale *Renaldo* told,  
And though it seemd he stood thereof in doubt,  
Yet him in all his speech he not contrould:  
But in conclusion, hauing heard it out,  
He doth his former purpose firmly hold:  
Which was by combat fierce to try and know,  
If so he could *Bayardo* win or no.

86

The Palladine that passed not a point  
Of no mans force, to meet him gaue his word:  
The place in which to meet they did appoint,  
Was neare a wood, and a pleasant foord,  
There only added was a point:  
Which was that *Durindan*, *Orlandos* sword,  
Should to *Renaldo* as of right accrew,  
If he the Pagan ouercame or flew.

87

Thus for the present time departed they,  
Vntill the time approcht of pointed fight,  
Although *Renaldo* frendly did him pray,  
To rest him in his tent that day and night:  
And offerd franke safe conduit for his stay,  
So curteous was this same couragious knight:  
*Gradasso* greatly praid the noble offer,  
But yet refused the courtisie he did profer.

88

The feare was great that secretly did lurke,  
In all the minds of all *Renaldos* kin,  
Who knew the strength and cunning of this Turke  
Was such, as doubt it was which side should win:  
Faine *Malagigi* by his art would worke,  
To end this fray, before it should begin:  
Saue that he feared *Renaldos* vtter enmity,  
In so base sort for working his indemnity.

89

But though his friends did feare more then was meet,  
Himselfe assurde himselfe of good successe:  
Now at the pointed time and place they meet,  
Both at one verie instant, as I guesse,  
And first they kindly do embrace and greet  
The tone the tother with all gentlenesse,  
But how sweet words did turne to bitter blowes,  
The next booke sauing one, the sequell shewes.

## Morall.

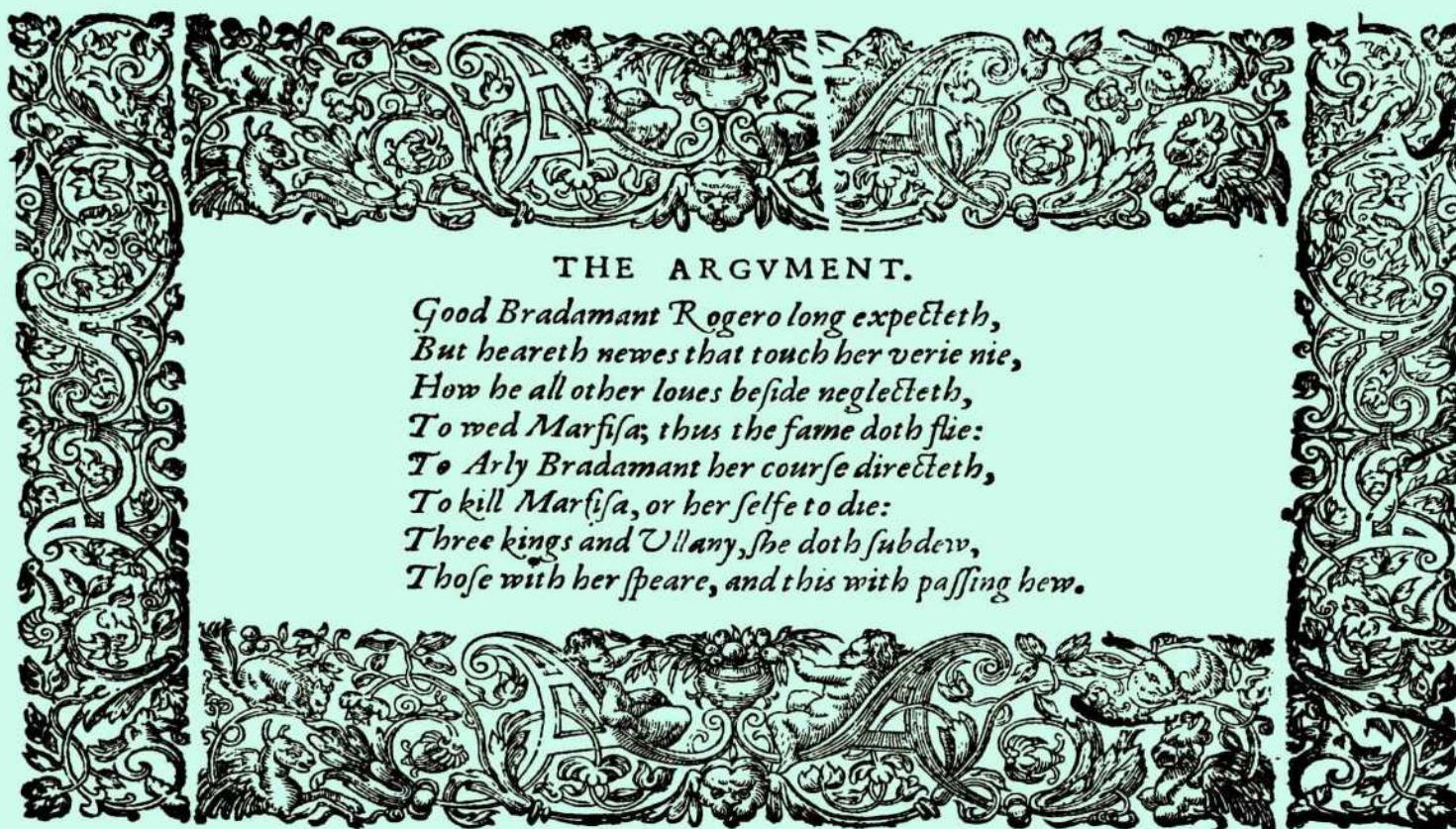
In this xxxi. Canto I finde little worth any speciall noting, but that which in the beginning of the booke is said against iealousie, which is one of the three incurable diseases noted in our old English Proverbe: From Heresie, Phrenesie, and Iealousie, good Lord deliuer me. The rest of the booke hath no new matter, but such as hath bin noted before: and therefore I will end this little space with this short note.

Here end the Notes of the xxxj.





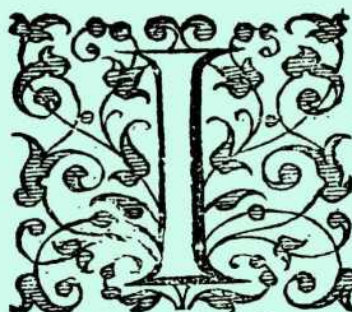




## THE ARGUMENT.

*Good Bradamant Rogero long expecteth,  
But heareth newes that touch her verie nie,  
How he all other lones beside neglecteth,  
To wed Marsifa; thus the fame doth flie:  
To Arly Bradamant her course directeth,  
To kill Marsifa, or her selfe to die:  
Three kings and Ullany, she doth subdew,  
Those with her speare, and this with passing hew.*

*The first fiftie  
staues of this 32.  
booke are of ano-  
ther translator as  
you shall see no-  
ted in some part  
of the notes upon  
this booke.*



Now remember how by  
promise bound,  
Before this time, I should  
haue made you know,  
Vpon what cause faire  
Bradamant did ground,  
The iealousie humors ouer  
charg'd her so:  
She neuer tooke before so  
fore a wound,

She neuer felt before such bitter wo,  
No not the tale which *Richardetto* told her,  
In such a fit, and so great pangs did hold her.

To tell you first, when I should haue begonne,  
*Renaldo* call'd my tale another way;  
No sooner with *Renaldo* had I done,  
But straight with *Guidon* I was forst to stay:  
From this to that, thus vnawares I ronne,  
That I forgot of *Bradamant* to say:  
But now I meane to speake of her before  
I speake of those two champions any more.

Yet needs I borrow must a word or twaine,  
How *Agramant* to Arly d'd retyre,  
And gatherd there the few that did remaine,  
Escaped from the furie of the fire:  
Where not tarre off, from Affrica nor Spaine,  
He plants as fit as he could we l desire,  
For lying on a flood so neare the seas,  
Both men and vitell were supplyde at ease.

To muster men *Marsilio* had commission,  
That may supply the place of them were lost,

Of ships of warre there was no small prouision,  
Soone had he gatherd vp a mightie host:  
There was no want of armour and munition,  
Ther was no spare of labour nor of cost,  
That with such taxes, Affrica was fessed,  
That all the Cities were full fore oppressed.

And further *Agramant*, that he might win  
Fierce *Rodomont*, to aid him with his power,  
Did offer him a match of his neare kin,  
King *Almonts* daughter with a Realme in dower;  
But he his profer weys not worth a pin,  
But keepest the bridge and doth the passage scow  
That with his spoiles the place was welny fille  
Of those he had dismounted, tane, and killed

But faire *Marsifa* tooke another way:  
For when she heard how long the siege had lasted,  
How *Agramant* his campe at Arly lay,  
How both his men were slaine, and store was wasted,  
She sought no cause of any more delay,  
But thither straight without inuiting hasted,  
Her purse and person offering in the fight,  
In iust defending of his crowne and right.

She brings *Brunello*, and the king she gaue him,  
Who had giu'n cause of very iust offence,  
Ten dayes and ten, she did of courtie saue him,  
To see who durst to stand in his defence;  
But when y no man made the meanes to haue him,  
Though she to kill him had so good pretence,  
She thought it base, her noble hands to file,  
Vpon an abiect dastard, and a vile.

She

*Looke hereof in  
the Moral.*



8

She wil deferre reuenge of all his wrong;  
And vnto Arly brought him to the king;  
Whose ioy to tell would aske a learned tongue,  
Both for the aid, and present she did bring:  
(For shew whereof, before it should be long,  
He offerd her to make *Brunello* wring:  
And at what time she pleased to appoint,  
To haue him sent to crack his chiefeſt ioynt.)

9

Vnto ſome deſart place he baniſht was,  
To ſerue for meat for carrion crowes and pyes,  
*Rogero* that had helpt him oft (alas)  
Now cannot heare his pitticous mones and cryes:  
He lyes ſore wounded, as it comes to paſſe,  
And litle knowes where poore *Brunello* lyes:  
And when he vnderſtands thereof at laſt,  
It is ſo late already is paſt.

10

This while what torments *Bradamant* indured,  
Thoſe twentie days, how did ſhe waile and mourne?  
Againſt which time ſhe thought her ſelfe aſſured,  
Her loue to her, and true faith ſhould turne:  
She makes no doubt but he might haue procured,  
Within that ſpace to make his home returne,  
(Yea though he were in priſon kept or baniſhed)  
It truth and care of promiſe were not vaniſhed.

11

In this long looking ſhe would often blame,  
The fierie courters of the heavenly light,  
She thought y<sup>e</sup> *Phæbus* wheelles were out of frame,  
Or that his charriot was not in good plight:  
Great *Iofuah* day ſeemd ſhorter then theſe ſame,  
And ſhorter ſeemd y<sup>e</sup> falſe *Ambitious* night: (bleſt  
Each day and night ſhe thought was more then dou-  
So fancie blind, her ſence and reaſon troubled.

12

She now enuyes the Dormouſe of his reſt,  
And wiſht how eaſy ſleepe might ouertake her,  
Vnderneath the might moſt deadly be poſſeſt,  
Till her *Rogero* ſhould returne to wake her:  
But waking cares ay lodged in her breaſt,  
That her deſired ſleepe did quite forſake her:  
ſleepe ſo long doth ſo much paſſe her power,  
ſhe cannot frame her eyes to wake one hower.

13

But turnes and toſſes in her reſtleſſe bed,  
(Alas no turning turnes her cares away)  
Oft at the window ſhe puts forth her hed,  
To ſee how neare it waxeth vnto day:  
When by the dawning, darkelome night is fled,  
She notwithstanding ſtands at that ſame ſtay:  
And during all the time the day doth laſt,  
She wiſhes for the night againe as faſt.

14

When ſiſteene dayes were of the twentie ſpent,  
She growes in hope that his approach is nigh,  
Then from a towre with eyes to Paris bent,  
She waytes and watches if ſhe can deſcry  
At leaſt ſome meſſenger that he hath ſent,  
May bring the news where her ſweet heart doth lye:  
And ſaſifie her mind by what hard chance,  
He is conſtrained to ſtay ſo long in France.

15

If farre aloofe the ſhine of armour bright,  
Or any thing reſembling it ſhe ſpies,  
She ſtraightway hopes it is her onely knight,  
And wipes her face and cleares her blubbred eyes:  
If any one vnarm'd do come in ſight,  
It may be one from him, ſhe doth ſuſmiſe:  
And though by prooffe ſhe finde each hope vntrue,  
She ceaſeth not for that, to hope anew.

16

Sometime all arm'd ſhe mounteth on her ſteed,  
And ſo rides forth in hope to meet her deare,  
But ſoone ſome fancie her conceit doth feed,  
That he is paſt ſome other way more neare:  
Then homeward haſteth ſhe with as much ſpeed,  
Yet ſhe at home no newes of him can heare:  
From day to day ſhe paſſeth on this faſhion,  
Hither and thither toſſed with her paſſion.

17

Now when her twentie dayes were full expired,  
And that beſide were paſſed ſome dayes more,  
Yet not *Rogero* come, whom ſhe deſired,  
Her heart with care and ſorrowes waxed ſore:  
With cryes & plaints, the woods and caues ſhe tyred,  
Her breaſts ſhe beat, her golden locks ſhe tore,  
Nor while theſe gripes of grieſe her heart embrace,  
Doth ſhe forbear her eyes or Angels face.

18

Why then (quoth ſhe) beſeemes it me it vaine,  
To ſeeke him ſtill, who thus from me doth ſlide?  
Shall I eſteeme of him that doth diſdaine  
My ſute, and ſcorne the torments I abide?  
Him, in whole heart a hate of me doth raine,  
Him, that accounts his vertues ſo well tride,  
As though ſome goddeſſe ſhould trō heart'n deſcēd  
Before that he his heart to loue would bend?

19

Though ſtout he is, he knows how well I loue him,  
And how I honor him with ſoule and hart,  
Yet can my hot affection nothing moue him,  
To let me of his loue poſſeſſe ſome part:  
And leſt he might perceiue it would behoue him,  
To eaſe my grieſe, if he did know my ſmart,  
To giue me hearing of my plaint he feares,  
As to the charme the Adder ſtoppes his cares.

20

Loue ſtop his courſe that doth ſo looſely range,  
And ſit ſo ſiſt before my ſorrie pace;  
Or with my former ſtate elſe let me change,  
When I thought not to tracke thy tedious trace:  
I hope in vaine; remorce to thee is ſtrange,  
Thou doſt triumph vpon my pitticous caſe:  
For hearts thy meat, thy drinke is louers teares,  
Then cries the Muſicke doth delight thine cares.

21

But whom blame I? it was my fond deſire,  
That firſt entuſt me to this killing call,  
And made me paſt my reach ſo far aſpire,  
That now I feele the greater is my fall:  
For when aloft my wings be toucht with fire,  
Then fare-well flight and I am left to fall:  
But ſtill they ſpring, and ſtill I vpward tend,  
And ſtill I ſee my fall, and finde no end.

the  
At the end of the  
book.

Take in the his-  
torie of this book  
I ſaith thus  
Alas! mena:  
Qua. rue-  
reſat ol'm re-  
ſtor, Luciferum  
re uſſerit He-  
ron eſſe.

Sentence againſt  
Loue.



22

Desire quoth I: my selfe I was too light,  
To giue desire an entrance in my brest,  
Who when he had my reason put to flight,  
And of my heart himselfe was full posselt,  
No roome for ioy is left, or hearts delight,  
Since I do harbour this vnruely guest,  
Who though he guide me to my certaine fall,  
The long expectance grieues me worst of all.

23

Then mine the fault be, if it be a fault,  
To loue a knight deserues to be beloued,  
With all good inward parts so richly fraught,  
Whose vertues be so knowne, and well approued;  
And more, whom would not his sweet face haue  
My self, I must confes, his beautie moued: (caught)  
What blind vnhappy wretch were she would shun,  
The pleasing prospect of the precious Sun?

24

Beside my destinie which drew me on,  
By others sugred speech I was entrained,  
As though I should by this great match anon,  
Another Paradice on earth haue gained:  
But now their words into the wind be gon,  
And I in Purgatorie am restrained:  
Well may I *Merlin* curse the false deceiuer,  
Yet my *Rogero* I shall loue for euer.

25

I hop't of *Merlins* and *Melissas* promises,  
Who did such stories of our race foretell:  
Is this the profit of beleeuing prophesies,  
And giuing credit to the sprites of hell?  
Alas they might haue found them better offices,  
Then me to flout that trusted them so well:  
But all for enuie haue they wrought me this,  
So to bereaue me of my former blis.

26

Thus sighs and lamentations are not fained,  
Small place was left for comfort in her brest:  
Yet spite of sorrows hope was entertained,  
And though with much a do, yet in it prest;  
To ease her mourning heart when she complained,  
And giuing her sometimes, some little rest,  
By sweet remembrance of the words he spake,  
When he was forst of her his leaue to take.

27

The minding of those words did so recure,  
Her wounded heart that she was well content,  
For one months space his absence to endure,  
Yea when his dayes of promise quite were spent:  
Yet still she lookt for him you may be sure,  
And many a time that way she came and went,  
Till by the way at last such news she hard,  
That all the hope she had before, was mard.

28

For she by chance did meet a Gascoigne knight,  
That in the warres of *Africa* was caught,  
One that was taken captiue in that fight,  
Then when fore *Paris* the great field was fought.  
What she requires to know, he could recite,  
But carelesse of the other news he brought,  
Of her *Rogero* chiefly she enquires,  
To heare of him is all that she desires.

29

Of whom the knight could let her vnderstand,  
(For in that Court he late his life had led)  
How *Mandricard* and he fought hand to hand,  
And how much blood on either part was shed:  
And though by wounds himselfe in perrill stand,  
That he subdewd his foe, and left him ded.  
Now if with this, his storie he had ended,  
*Rogeros* scuse had verie well bin mended.

30

But he proceeds to tell, how one was theare,  
A Ladie hight *Marfisa* in the feeld,  
Whose fame for martiall acts did shine most cleare,  
Whose beautie rare to few or none did yeeld.  
*Rogero* her, she held *Rogero* deare,  
They neuer were asunder or but feeld;  
And that they two, as eu'rie one there sai  
The tone the tother plighted haue their faith.

31

And if *Rogero* once were whole and sound,  
Their wedding should be ebrate with speed;  
That such a paire as yet was neuer found,  
And happie they should me of such a seed:  
How much it ioy'd the *Pa*ces round,  
To thinke vpon the race they two should breed  
Which likely were all others to excell  
In feats of arms that erst on earth did dwell.

32

The Gascoigne knight of all that he had sed  
Himselfe had reason to beleeue was sooth,  
So generall a fame thereof was spred,  
There were but few but had it in their mouth.  
Some little kindnesse she did vse, had sed  
Their foolish humors of this false vntrowth;  
Still fame will grow if once abroad it flie,  
Although the ground be troth or be a lye.

33

They came indeed together to this fight,  
And many times together they w ne,  
For he was warlike, stout and worthy knight,  
And she a gallant, faire, and daintie Queene,  
By which, suspition neuer iudging right,  
Did gather straight they had assured beene:  
And specially because when she departed,  
To visite him she was so soone reuerted.

34

Of iust suspect their reason was put slender,  
If they had weighed well their vertues rare,  
Though of his wounds she seemd to be so tender,  
And of his danger had so great a care,  
Against bad tongues no goodnes can defend her,  
For those most free from faults, they least wil spare,  
But prate of them whom they haue scantly knowne,  
And iudge their humors to be like their owne.

35

Now when the knight auowd the tale he told,  
(And yet in truth you know t'was but a tale)  
The damfels heart was toucht with shiuering cold,  
The little hope she had away it stole,  
Almost in sound her seate she scarce could hold:  
With mourning cheare, and face both wan and pale,  
She said no more: but mad with grieve and ire,  
Her horse she turnd, and homeward did retire.



36

And all in armour on her bed she lyes,  
 She wisht a thousand times she now were ded,  
 She bytes the sheets to dampe her sobs and cries,  
 The Gascoigns news still bearing in her hied:  
 Her heart is swolne, and blubberd be her eyes,  
 With trickling teares bedewed is her bed,  
 When griefe would be no longer holden in,  
 Needs out it must, and thus it doth begin.

37

Ah wretched me, whom might a maiden finde,  
 In whom she might be bold to put her trust?  
 Since you *Rogero* mine, become unkinde,  
 And tread your faith and promise in the dust;  
 You only you, mine eye so farre did blinde,  
 I still esteemd you faithfull, true and iust:  
 Ah neuer wench that loued so sincerely,  
 Was in requitall punished so seuerely.

38

Why (my *Rogero*) why do you forget?  
 (Sith you in beautie pause each other knight,  
 And do in feats of armes such honor get,  
 As none can match your thialrie in fight)  
 This golden vertue with the rest to set,  
 By which your glorious name wil shine more bright  
 If as in other graces you abound,  
 So in your promise constancie were found?

39

This is the vertue breeds most estimation,  
 By which all other vertues shew more cleare,  
 As things most faire do loose their commendation,  
 Which by the want of light can not appeare:  
 What glorie was it by false protestation,  
 Her to deceiue whole Saint and God you were?  
 Whom your fair speeches might haue made beleue  
 That water would be carride in a secue.

Proverbe.

40

From any hayous act wouldst thou refraine,  
 That murder who beares thee so good will?  
 How wouldst thou vse thy foe, that thus in paine,  
 Dost let thy frend to be tormented still?  
 Thou that with breach of faith thy heart dost staine,  
 No doubt thou dost not care for doing ill;  
 All this I know, that God is ever iust,  
 He will er long reuenge my wrongs I trust.

41

Or why, vnthankfulness is that great sin,  
 Which made the Diuell and his angels fall,  
 Lost him and them the ioyes that they were in,  
 And now in hell detaines them bound and thrall:  
 Then marke the guerdon thou art like to win;  
 For why like faults like punishment do call,  
 In being thus vnthankfull vnto me,  
 That alwayes was so faithfull vnto thee.

Sentence.

42

Besides of theft thy selfe thou canst not quit,  
 If theft it be to take that is not thine;  
 The keeping of my heart no that's not it,  
 That thou shouldst haue it I do not repine,  
 Thy selfe thou stalst, which I can not remit  
 Thy selfe thou knowst thou art, or shouldst be mine,  
 Thou knowst damnation doth to them belong,  
 That do keepe backe anothers right by wrong.

43

Though thou *Rogero* do forsake me so,  
 I can not will nor chuse but loue thee still;  
 And since there is no measure of my wo,  
 Death is the only way to end mine ill;  
 But thus to cut of life, and thou my fo  
 It makes me do it with a worser will;  
 Yet had I dyde when best I did thee pleale,  
 I should haue counted death, no death but ease.

44

When with these words she was resolu'd to dy,  
 She tooke her sword in hand for that intent,  
 And forst her selfe vpon the point to ly;  
 Her armour then her purpose did preuent,  
 A better spirit checkt her by and by:  
 And in her heart this secret reason went,  
 O noble Ladie borne to so great fame,  
 Wilt thou thus end thy dayes with so great shame?

45

Nay rather if thou beest resolu'd to dy,  
 Vnto the campe why dost thou not repaire,  
 Where bodies of braue knights in heaps do ly?  
 Lo there to honor the directest staire,  
 The losse of life with glorie thou mayst buy,  
 To die in thy *Rogeros* fight were faire,  
 And happily by him thou mayst be slaine,  
 So he that wrought thy wo, may rid thy paine.

46

Thou mayst be sure *Marfisa* there to see,  
 Who hath so falsly stolne away thy frend;  
 If first on her thou couldst reuenged be,  
 With more contented mind thy dayes would end.  
 Vnto this counsell she doth best agree,  
 And onward on this iourney straight doth tend,  
 She takes anew deuice that might implice,  
 A desperation, and a will to die

47

The collour of her baces was almost,  
 Like to the falling whitish leaues and drie,  
 Which when the moisture of the branch is lost,  
 Forsakenly about the tree doth lye,  
 With Cipresse trunks embroderd and embost,  
 (For Cipresse once but cut will alwayes die)  
 A fine conceipt, she thinks to represent,  
 In secret sort her inward discontent.

48

She tooke *Asolfos* horse and Goldéance,  
 As fittest both for this her present fear,  
 That speare could make the brauest knight to dance,  
 And caper with a touch beside his seate.  
 But where *Asolfo* had it, by what chance,  
 Or why he gaue it, need I not repeate,  
 She tooke it, notwithstanding her election,  
 Not knowing of that magicall confection.

49

Thus all alone without both Squire and page,  
 Thus furnished she set her selfe in way,  
 To Paris ward she traueled in a rage,  
 Whereas the campe of Sarzins lately lay,  
 And (as she thought) kept vp king *Charles* in cage.  
 Not vnderstanding how before that day,  
*Renaldo* aiding *Charles* with *Malagete*,  
 I had forced them from thence to raise their seege.



*Phania.*  
*Looke in the al-*  
*lusion, of this*  
*shield of gold.*

50  
 Now had she left mount Dordon at her backe,  
 When little way behind her she deteride,  
 A gallant Damsell following of her tracke,  
 A shield of gold vnto her saddle tide;  
 Of Squires and other seruants none did lacke,  
 And three braue knights were riding by her side,  
 But of the Squires that ouertooke her last,  
 She askt one what thoe were that by her past.

51  
 And straight the worthie Ladie it was told,  
 How from Pole Artike that same damsell came,  
 Sent from a Queene, with that faire shield of gold,  
 Vnto king Charles (that there was knowne by fame)  
 But so, as he must this condition hold,  
 That on a knight he must bestow the same,  
 Such one as he in his imagination,  
 For prowesse deemd most worthy reputation.

52  
 For she of Island Ile that holds the raigne,  
 And is (and knows it) that she is most faire,  
 Doth thinke she should her worth not little staine,  
 And her great fame and honour much impaire,  
 It any knight her Ile and her should gaine,  
 Except he stood so high on honors staire.  
 As that he were adiudg'd in feats of warre,  
 The prymer man, and passing others farre.

53  
 Wherefore the cause she sends to France is this,  
 She thinks if she shall finde one any where,  
 That in the Court of France he surely is:  
 And therefore she doth send to greet him there.  
 As for those three, because you shall not misse,  
 To know the truth, Ile tell you what they were:  
 They were 3 kings, of whom great fame there goth,  
 Of Norway one, one Swethland, one of Goth.

54  
 These three, though far they dwell from Island Ile,  
 Yet loue of that same Queene hath brought the hi-  
 This Ile is calld Perduto otherwhile, (ther,  
 Because the seamen leese it in foule weather:  
 These kings liu'd from their country in exile,  
 And to this Queene were suters all together:  
 And she that knew not well how to forbid them,  
 With this same pretie shift from thence she rid them.

55  
 She saith, she minds to wed for her behoofe,  
 That wight that most excels in warlike action,  
 And though (quoth she) you shew no little prooffe,  
 Of valew here (as twere in priuat faction)  
 Yet I must haue you tride more far aloofe,  
 Before my mind can haue full satisfaction:  
 Wherefore I meane my selfe and crowne to yeeld,  
 Alone to him that bringeth backe my sheeld.

56  
 This is the cause that these three kings did moue,  
 Each one to come from so remote a nation,  
 With purpose firme their vtmost force to proue,  
 To win the golden shield with reputation,  
 Or leete their liues, for that faire Ladies loue,  
 If that they failed of their expectation.  
 When he had told her thus, he her forooke,  
 And ioone his company he ouertooke.

57  
 The Damsell rode a softer pace behind,  
 And so as in a while she lost their sight,  
 And often she reuolued in her mind,  
 The tale the fellow told, with small delight.  
 She doubts this shield bestowd in such a kind,  
 Will be in France a cause of brall and fight,  
 That this wilbe a meanes she greatly feares,  
 To set her kin together all by th'cares.

58  
 This fancie mou'd her much, but more then this,  
 That former ieaulouse fancie did her moue,  
 That her *Rogeros* kindnesse alterd is,  
 That on *Marfisa* he had plaist his loue:  
 This so posselt her sence that she did misse  
 Her way, nor neuer thought as did behoue,  
 Till night was almost come, and Sunne nigh set,  
 Where she a lodging for her selfe may get.

59  
 Eu'n as an emptie vessell that was tide,  
 Vnto the wharfe, with sonke old rotten cable,  
 If that the knot do hap to breake or slide,  
 So that to hold it be no l'le,  
 Is borne away, as please the wind and tide:  
 So *Bradamant*, with mind and thoughts vnstable,  
 Was in such muse, as she the right way mist  
 And so was borne, where *Rabicano* list.

60  
 But when she saw the Sunne was almost set,  
 She tooke more heede, and asking of a clowne,  
 (A shepherd that by hap there by she met)  
 Where she might lodging get er Sunne went downe  
 The shepherd made her answer, that as yet  
 She was almost a league from any towne,  
 Or other place where she might eate or lodge,  
 Saue at a Castle cald sir *Tristrams* lodge.

61  
 But eu'rie one that list, is not assured,  
 Though he do thither come, to y therein,  
 To martiall feats they must be well inured,  
 With speare and shield they must their lodging wip:  
 Such custome in the place hath long indured,  
 And manie years ago it did begin,  
 Wherefore tis good that one be well aduised,  
 Ere such an act b him be enterprised.

62  
 In brieft thus is their order, if a knight  
 Do finde the lodgings void, they him receaue,  
 With promise, that if more ariue that night,  
 Either he shall to them this lodging leaue,  
 Or elle with each of them shall proue in fight,  
 Which of them can of lodging tother reau:  
 If none do come that night he shall in quier,  
 Haue both his horsemeat, lodging, and his diet.

63  
 If foure or fise do come together first,  
 The Castle keeper them must entertaine,  
 Who cometh single after, hath the worst,  
 For if he hope a lodging there to gaine:  
 He must (according to that law accurst)  
 Fight with all those, that did therein remaine:  
 Likewise if one come first, and more come later,  
 He must go fight with them yet neare the later.

The



64

The like case is, if any maid or dame  
Do come alone, or else accompanied,  
Both they that first, and they that latest came,  
Must by a lurie haue their beauties tried:  
Then shall the fairest of them hold the same,  
But to the rest that come shall be denied:  
Thus much the shepheard vnto her did say,  
And with his finger shewd to her the way.

65

About three miles was distant then the place,  
The damsell thither hasts with great desire;  
And though that Rabicano trot apace,  
Yet was the way so deepe and full of mire,  
The snow and drift still beating in their face,  
She later came then manners good require;  
But though it were as then both darke and late,  
She boldly bounced at the castle gate.

66

The porter told her that the lodgings all  
Were filld by knights that late before them tooke,  
Who now stood by the fire amid the hall,  
And did ere long to haue their supper looke:  
Well (answers she) shal haue they cause but small  
(If they be supperlesse) to thanke the cooke;  
I know (quoth she) the custome, and will keepe it,  
And meane to win their lodging ere I sleepe yet.

67

The Porter went and did her message bold,  
To those great states then standing by the fire,  
Who tooke small pleasure when they heard it told,  
For thence to part they had so small desire;  
Now chiefly when twas rainie, darke and cold;  
But so their oth and order did require,  
That they must do it, were it cold or warme,  
And therefore quickly they themselues did arme.

68

These were those three great kings, whom that same day  
Dame *Bradamant* had scene but few houres past,  
Thought they had sooner finished their way,  
For she rode so soft, and they so fast.  
Now when they were all armed, they make no stay,  
But all on horsebacke mount themselues at last:  
No doubt but few in strength these three did passe,  
Yet of those few, sure one this damsell was.

69

Who purposd (as it seemeth) nothing lesse,  
Then in so wet and in so cold a night,  
To lack a lodging and sleepe supperlesse:  
Now those within at windowes see the sight,  
The men themselues on horsebacke do addresse,  
To lookethereon, for why the Moone gaue light:  
And thus at last though first twere somewhat late,  
They did abase the bridge and ope the gate.

70

Eu'n as a secret and lasciuious louer,  
Reioyceth much, when after long delays,  
And many feares, in which his hope did houer,  
He heares at last the noise of pretie kayes:  
So *Bradamant* that hopes now to recouer  
A lodging, for the which so long she stayes,  
Did in her mind in such like sort reioyce,  
When as she heard the watchfull porters voyce.

71

Now when those Knights and some few of their traine,  
Were past the bridge, the dame her horse doth turne  
To take the field, and then with speed againe,  
With full careere she doth on them returne,  
And coucht that speare, yet neuer coucht in vaine,  
For whom it hits it still doth ouerturee;  
This speare her cosin, when he went from France,  
Gaue vnto her, the name was Goldelance.

72

The valiant king of Swethland was the first  
That met her, and the next the king of Goth,  
The staffe doth hit them full, and neuer burst,  
But from their saddles it did heaue them both;  
But yet the king of Norway sped the worst,  
It seemd to leaue his saddle he was loth,  
His girdles brake, and he fell vpside downe,  
In danger with the mire to choke and drowne.

73

Thus with three blows, three Kings she down did beare,  
And hoist their heels full hie, their heads full low,  
Then enterd she the castle voyd of feare,  
They stand without that night in raine and snow;  
Yet ere she could get in, one causd her sweare  
To keepe the custome, which they made her know;  
And then the master doth to her great honor,  
And entertainment great bestowed on her.

74

Now when the Ladie did disarme her head,  
Off with her helmet came her little caul,  
And all her haire her shoulders ouerspred,  
And both her sex and name was knowne withall,  
And wonder great and admiration bred  
In them that saw her make three Princes fall;  
For why she shewd to be in all their sight,  
As faire in face as she was fierce in fight.

75

Eu'n as a stage set forth with pompe and pride,  
Where rich men cost, and cunning art bestow,  
When curtaines be remou'd that all did hide,  
Doth make by light of torch a glittering show;  
Or as the Sunne that in a cloud did bide,  
When that is gone, doth clearer seeme to grow:  
So *Bradamant* when as her head was barest,  
Her colour and her beautie seemed rarest.

Simile.

Simile.

76

Now stood the guests all round about the fire,  
Expecting food, with talke their eares yet feeding,  
While eu'ry one doth wonder and admire,  
Her speech and grace, the others all exceeding;  
The while her host to tell she doth desire,  
From whence and who this custom was proceeding,  
That men were driu'n vnto their great disquiet  
To combat for their lodging and their diet.

77

Faire dame (said he) sometime there rul'd in France  
King *Feramont*, whose sonne a comely knight,  
*Clodian* by name, by good or euill chance,  
Vpon a louely Ladie did alight:  
But as we see it oftentimes doth chance,  
That iealousie in loue matres mans delight;  
Thus he of her in time so iealous grew,  
He durst not let her go out of his view.

Z iij



78

Simile.

Nor euer *Argus* kept the milkwhite cow  
More straight, then *Clodian* here did keepe his wife,  
Ten Knights eke to this place he doth allow,  
Thereby for to preuent all casuall strife;  
Thus hope and feare betweene, I know not how,  
As he prolongs his selfe tormenting life,  
The good sir *Tristram* thither did repaire,  
And in his companie a Ladie faire.

79

Simile.

Whom he had rescude but a little since  
From Giants hand, with whom he did her find,  
Sir *Tristram* sought for lodging with the Prince,  
For then the Sunne was very low declind:  
But as a horse with galled backe will wince,  
Eu'n so our *Clodian* with as galled mind  
For casting doubts and dreading eu'ry danger,  
Would by no meanes be won to lodge a stranger.

80

When as sir *Tristram* long had prayd in vaine,  
And still denide the thing he did demaund,  
That which I cannot with your will obtaine,  
In spite of you (saide he) I will commaund:  
I here will proue your villanie most plaine,  
With launce in rest, and with my sword in hand:  
And straight he challenged the combat then,  
To fight with *Clodian* and the other ten.

81

Thus onely they agreed vpon the case,  
If *Clodian* and his men were ouerthrowne,  
That all then presently should voyd the place,  
And that sir *Tristram* there should lie alone:  
Sir *Clodian* to auoid so great disgrace,  
The challenge tooke, for why excuse was none:  
In fine, both *Clodian* and his men well knockt,  
And from the castie that same night were lockt.

82

Triumphant *Tristram* to the Castle came,  
And for that night, as on his owne he seased,  
And there he saw the Princes, louely dame,  
And talkt with her, who him not litie pleased:  
This while sir *Clodian* was in part with shame,  
And more with thought and iealous feare diseased,  
Disdaining not in humble sort to woo him,  
By message mild to send his wife vnto him.

83

But he, though her he do not much esteeme,  
For why, by meanes of an enchanted potion,  
*Isotta* fairest vnto him did teeme,  
To whom he vowed had his whole deuotion:  
Yet for he did the iealous *Clodian* deeme  
Some plague to merit, he denide his motion;  
And swears it were no manners nor no reason,  
A Ladie to vn lodge at such a season.

84

But if (saith he) it do his mind offend,  
To lie all night alone and eke abroad,  
Tell him I will this other Ladie send  
To him, that shall with him make her abode:  
Now tell him that to keepe this I intend,  
The which to win, I haue such paine bestowd;  
Tis reason that the fairest should remaine  
With him that is the strongest of vs twaine.

85

*Clodian* in mind was wondrous malcontent,  
Vf'd so not like a Prince but like a patch,  
That puffing, blowing vp and downe he went  
All night, as one were set to keepe a watch:  
But whether he do chafe or else lament,  
He found the Knight for him too hard a match.  
Next day sir *Tristram* let him haue his wife,  
And so for that time finisht was the strife.

Simile.

86

For openly he on his honour swore,  
That he her honour had that night preserued,  
Although discourtesies he had before  
Had at his hands a great reuenge deserued;  
Yet in that *Clodian* had lodg'd out of dore,  
He was content that penance should haue serued;  
He nathelesse tooke it for no good excuse,  
To say that loue was cause of such abuse.

87

For loue should gentle make rude hearts and base,  
And not in gentle mind breed humors vile:  
Now when sir *Tristram* part from the place,  
Sir *Clodian* meant to stay there but a while,  
But to a knight that stood much in his grace,  
He graunts the keeping of this stately pile:  
Keeping one law for him and for his heires,  
With eu'ry one that to the place repaires.

Sentence.

88

That namely euer he that was most strong,  
Should there be lodg'd, and she that was most faire,  
And that the rest should take it for no wrong,  
To walke abroad into the open aire:  
This is the law which hath endured long,  
And no man may the strength thereof impaire:  
Now while the man this storie did repeate,  
The steward on the boord did let the meate.

89

The boord was couerd in a stately hall,  
Whose match was scarce in all the countrie,  
With goodly pictures drawne vp on the wall,  
All round about, but chiefly on the screene;  
These they did looke on, with delight not small,  
And would haue quite forgot their meate I weene,  
Sawe that their noble host did them aduise,  
To feed their bellies first, and then their eyes.

90

Now as they downe at the table sit,  
The master of the house began to lowre,  
And said they did an error great commit,  
To lodge two Ladies come in sundry howre;  
Needs one must be put out, where ere it hit,  
And go abroad into the cold and showre:  
The fairest (sith they came not both together)  
Must bide, the foulest must go trie the wether.

91

Two aged men and women more beside  
He cald, and bad them quickly take a vew,  
Which of the twaine should in the place abide,  
And namely which of twaine had fairest hew:  
This Iurie do the matter soone decide,  
And gaue their verdit, as it was most trew,  
That *Bradamant* past her in hew as farre,  
As she exceld the men in feates of warre.

Then



92

Then spake the knight vnto the Island dame,  
Whose mind was full of timorous suspicion,  
I pray you thinke it not a scorne or shame,  
For hence you must, there can be no remission,  
ore *Vllany* (so was the damfels name)  
Doth thinke she now is driu'n to hard condition,  
Yet in her conscience true she knew it was,  
That *Bradamant* in beautie her did passe.

Simile.

\* For when the  
vapors ascend as  
high as the middle  
region straight  
grow to  
a great con-  
ie in them,  
akes the  
wind, and them  
up, though they  
be full of water  
ile, as we see  
an times.

Sennence.

sennence.

93

Eu'n as we see the Sunne obscur'd sometime,  
By sudden rising of a mistie cloud,  
Engendred by the vapor breeding slime,  
And in the middle region then \* embowd:  
So when the damsell plainly saw that time,  
Her presence in the place was not allowd,  
She was so chang'd in count'nance and in cheare,  
That vnlike her selfe she did appeare.

94

But much astonysd with the sudden passion,  
She readie was to sound in all their sight;  
But *Bradamant* that could not for compassion  
Permit that she should go abroade that night,  
Did say, this triall was o' good fashion,  
And that the iudgement hardly could be right,  
When men obserue not this same chiefe regard,  
As not to iudge before both parts be hard.

95

I, that on me do take her to defend,  
Say thou that be I faire, or lesse or more,  
I came not as a woman, nor intend  
As woman now to be adiudg'd therefore;  
Who knowes my sex, except I condescend  
To shew the same? and one should euermore  
Shun to confirme things doubtfull, or deny it,  
When chiefly others may be harmed by it.

96

Yet who can say precisely what I am?  
For men do weare their haire as long,  
you that as a man I came,  
all my gestures to a man belong;  
Wherefore in giuing me a womans name,  
To both of vs perhaps you may do wrong;  
Your law points women (if their right be donne)  
women, not by warriors to be wonne.

97

at yet admit it were as you doo'sse,  
That I indeed were of the female gender,  
Though that it is so, I do not confesse;  
Should I to her my lodging then surrender,  
If that my beautie of the wo were lesse?  
No sure, in that the reason were but slender:  
The price that vnto vertue longs of dewtie,  
Should not be tane away for want of bewtie.

The first fiftie stauces of this booke I may call mine, as the Poet Martiall saith in a little Epigram of his, of a Gentle-  
womans perwig, fisteene hundred yeares since, I thinke the verse was thus, or such another,

Esse tuos iurat, quos erit Galla capillos,  
Dic sodas, numquid peierat illa mihi?

To this effect in English:

The goodly haire that *Galla* weares,  
Is hers, who would haue thought it?  
She sweares it is, and true she sweares,  
For I know where she bought it.

98

And if your law were such, that needs of force,  
Vnto the fairest lodging should be giuen,  
Yet at this feast I tary would perforce,  
And from my lodging I would not be driuen:  
Wherefore mine argument I thus enforce,  
That this same match betweene vs is not euen,  
For striuing here with me, the case is plaine,  
She much may leese, and little she may gaine.

99

And where the gaine and losse vnequall is,  
The match is euill made in common sence;  
Wherefore I thinke it were not much amisse,  
With this same law for this time to dispence;  
And if that any dare mislike of this,  
Or seeme to take the matter in offence,  
I will with sword be readie to maintaine,  
That mine aduice is good, and his is vaine.

100

Thus noble *Ammons* daughter mou'd with pittie  
In her behalfe, who to her great disgrace  
Should haue bin sent, where neither towne nor cittie  
Was neare almost in three leagues of the place,  
Fram'd her defence so stout and eke so wittie,  
That to her reason all the rest gaue place;  
But chiefe the perill great and hazard waying,  
That might haue grown to them by her gainfaying.

101

As when the Sunne in sommer hath most powre,  
And that the ground with heate thereof is riu'd,  
For want of raine the drie and parched flowre  
Doth fade, and is as twere of life depriued,  
But if in season come a fruitfull showre,  
It riseth vp, and is againe reuiued:  
So when the damsell this defence did heare,  
She waxed faire againe, of better cheare.

102

And thus at last they fell vnto their feast  
In quiet sort, for none did come that night,  
To challenge any of them, or molest,  
No traueller, nor any wandring knight;  
All merry were but *Bradamante* least,  
Fell iealousie bard her of all delight,  
Her stomacke so distempring, and her tast,  
She tooke no pleasure of that sweet repast.

103

When supper ended was, they all arise,  
Although perhaps they would haue longer sate,  
Saue for desire they had to feed their eyes;  
And now the night was spent and waxed late,  
The matter of the house in seemly wise,  
Doth call for torches to set out his state,  
And straight with torch light filled was the hall,  
But what they saw, hereafter shew I shall.



And so may I as truly sweare these are mine. for they were giuen me by my brother (Francis Harington) who made them for a prooue of his veine in this kind; and if his sloth had not bin as blame-worthy, as his skill is praise-worthy, he had eased me of much of the paine that I tooke with the rest: and me thinks when I reade his and mine owne together, the phrasse agrees so well, as it were two brothers. Though he (in his modestie) would needs giue his elder brother leaue to take all the paines, and praise (if there were any,) following herein the example of diuers, indeed studious and learned Gentle that haue either disdained to bestow so much paines on another mans worke, or at least would not leese so much from more graue or more profitable studies; or (which perhaps is the chiefeest reason) because they feele, that though it is but a sport to write now and then a little odde sonet, yet it is some labour to write a long and settled stile: as Tullie saith of writing in prose; *Stilus est optimus dicendi magister, sed laboris magni est, quem plerique fugimus.* Writing is the best schoolmaster for eloquence, but (saith he) it is a painfull thing, and that most of vs cannot away withall. And yet I find (hauing written in both kinds now and then, as my slender capacitie would serue me) that prose is like a faire greene way, wherein a man may trauel a great iorney and not be weary; but verse is a miry lane, in which a mans horse puls out one leg after another with much ado, and often driues his master to light to helpe him out: but I shall trauell anon so far in this greene way, that I shall be out of my right way, or at least beside my matter; and therefore I now come to the morall.

Morall.

In the Morall of this xxxij. booke, in the person of Agramant we may note, how a Generall must not vpon one foyle or one ill day (as they call it) despaire of his affaires, or abandon his enterprize, but betake him to some strong place of aduantage, till they may make head againe. In which kind, the old Romanes (conquerors of the world) aboue all other things shewed their vnconquered minds; and specially then, when Terentius Varro had receaued that great foile and ouerthrow by Hannibal, as Liuius noteth in the end of the xxij. booke. *Quo in tempore ipso, aded magno animo ciuitas fuit, vt Consuli ex tanta clade (cuius ipse magna causa fuisset) redeunti, & obuiam itum frequenter ab omnibus ordinibus sit, & gratiae actae, quod de republica non desperasset.* Cui si Carthaginensium ductor fuisset, nihil recusandum supplicij foret. What time (saith Liuius) the citie was of so great courage, that the Consull returning from so mightie an ouerthrow (of which himselfe had bin a great occasion) yet was publikly and solemnly met by all the companies, and had speciall thanks giuen him because he despaired not of the common state: who had he bin captain of the Carthaginians, no punishment had bin too much for him. Further, in Brunello that had sometimes bin Agramants secretary, and yet now was hanged for iustice sake, we may note, that wicked men, though they be sometime aduanced by their Princes to great honors and wealth, yet when their oppressions and thefts shall be plainly bouted out and manifestly proued, law will haue his course, and iustice must be done. And yet we see also in this booke, in Bradamants defence of Villany against the law of sir Tristrams lodge, that for the most part lawes are but like Spiders webs, taking the small Gnats, or perhaps sometime the fat flesh flies, but Hornets that haue sharpest stings and greater strength, breake through them.

Historie.

Of Iosuas day, which he toucheth in the xi. staffe, the holy Scripture speakes of, how he made the Sunne stand still. But for the false Amphitrios night, though it seeme meere fabulous as it is told, that Iupiter made the night three nights long, to take the more pleasure of Alcmene, yet me thinke it is worth the obseruation, how the very prophane and vaine writings of old times do concur with the sacred Scriptures; for whensoever the birth of Hercules was, which I dare not affirme to haue bin at that time, and yet by computation it wil not fall long after. For Hercules was a great while before the last Troian warres, and many old writers agree, that Priamus liued in Dauids time, and sent to him for succor: but howsoever that may be proued for the certaine time of his birth, certain it is, when the Sunne stood still in one part of the world, then in reason at their Antipodes and in the other Hemisphere it must needs be night all that while. And if the Sunne were almost downe when Iosua spake (as it may be coniectured) because he would not feare want of light to see his enemies vntill the Sunne were neare setting, then it might be night euen in the same Hemisphere within a few degrees. As for example, it is night one hunderd miles Eastward sooner then it is so farre Westward by a good mile: (as they that are Astronomers can easily resolue the simplest that is.) But to be short, it is verified by many writers, that there was one night obserued to be longer then her fellowes, which night either Hercules was borne vpon, or else was fained to be begotten vpon, and therefore they sernamed him *ἑπώνυχος* of that night that was as long as three night this I submit to the iudgement of learned Diuines.

Allegoric.

The colour and embroidery of Bradamants bases in the 47. staffe, betokening desperation is there shewed, I need not stand vpon: for as for those hidden misteries of colours, with their applications, due to constancie, tawneie forsake white to virginittie, and the rest, they are very well knowne to all our gallant Gentlemen, who often haue more cost in their clothes, and wit in their colours, then coyne in their coffers, or learning in their heads.

Allusion.

Of the Island Queene that sent the shield of gold to France, which Bradamant thought would but breed quarrels, Fornarius noteth, that mine Author did therein couertly allude to a matter betweene England and France, for Ariosto liued in Henry the eight his time, and maketh very honorable mention of him. But thus it was. After the death of Lewis of France, Marie the yonger sister of K. Henric the eight remaining his Dowager, our King sent for his sister to come into England: but Francis the first, loth she should go out of France, in respect of the great dower she should carry with her, which by the custome of that country was a third part of the reuenue of the Crowne; and yet fearing to haue warres with king Henric, made this offer, that if he would send some braue man at armes that could win her in the field, he should haue her: our King made no dainties to accept the offer, and making it knowne to his Court, Sir Charles Brandon tooke the matter on him, and in fine ouercomming foure French men, with the franke consent of both Kings married the Queene Dowager, and was here in England (as we all know) made Duke of Suffolk; of whose offspring there remaine yet some most worthy branches, but the like to him for armes and cauallary (as we terme it) is my noble good Lord, the Lord Strange, whose value and vertue need not this my barren and brieue testimonie.

The end of the annotations vpon the xxxij. booke.





IL SIG<sup>or</sup>  
DEL CASTELLO

BRA

MESS

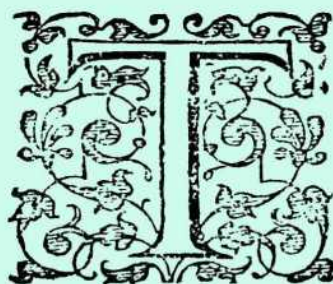
ISLANDA



## THE ARGUMENT.

*Faire Bradamant sees graun by passing art,  
The future wars of France vpon a screene.  
Bayardos flight the combat fierce doth part,  
Renaldo and the Serican beweeene.  
Astolfo hauing past the greater part  
Of all the world, and many countries scene,  
Vnto Senapots kingdome last arriuies,  
And from his boord the foule Harpias driues.*

*Of these famous  
drawers looke in  
the history of this  
booke.*



**T**Imagoras, Parrhasius, Poly-  
gnote,  
Timant, Protogenes, Apol-  
lodore,  
With Zewces, one for skill  
of speciall note;  
Apellecke, plast all the  
rest before:  
Whose skill in drawing,  
all the world doth note,  
And talke of still (to writers thanks therefore)  
Whose works and bodies, time and death did wast,  
Yet spite of time and death their fames doth last.

With others that in these our later dayes  
Haue liu'd, as Leonard and John Belline,  
And he that carues and drawes with equall praise,  
Michell more then a man, Angell diuine,  
And Flores, whom the Flemmings greatly praise,  
And Raphael and Titian passing fine,  
With diuers others that by due desert,  
Do merit in this praise to haue a part.

Yet all these cunning drawers with their skill,  
Could not attaine by picture to expresse,  
What strange euents should happen well or ill,  
In future times, no not so much as guesse:  
This art is proper vnto Magike still,  
Or to a Prophet, or a Prophetesse.  
By this rare art, the Brittish Merlin painted  
Strange things, with which our age hath bin acquaint-

He made by Magike art, that stately hall,  
And by the selfe same art he could to be

Strange histories ingraued on the wall,  
Which (as I said) the guests desired to see.  
Now when they were from supper risen all,  
The pages lighted torches two or three,  
Making the roome to shine as bright as day,  
When to his guests the owner thus did say,

I would (quoth he) my guests, that you should know,  
That these same stories that here painted are,  
Of future warres the sequels sad do shew,  
That shall to Italie bring wo and care:  
Whereas the French full many a bloodie blow  
Shall take, while others they to harme prepare,  
As Merlin here hath layd downe, being sent  
From English Arthur, chiefe for this intent.

King Feramont that was the first that past  
The streame of Rhine with armie great of France,  
And being in possession quiet plast  
Of all those parts, sturd with so luckie chance,  
Straight in ambitious thought began to end,  
His rule and scepter higher to aduance,  
Which that he might to passe the better bring,  
He made a league with Arthur the English king,

Informing him how that his meaning was,  
Of Italie the rule and crowne to get,  
And askt his ayd to bring the same to passe,  
Which neuer had atchieued bin as yet.  
Now Merlin that did all men far surpass  
In Magike art, his purpose sought to let,  
For Merlin had with Arthur so great credit,  
He thought all Gospell was, if once he led it

*This part is but  
a fiction for Fer-  
mont is many  
yeares afore Ar-  
thur.*



8

This *Merlin* then did first to *Arthur* show,  
And then by *Arthur* was of purpose sent,  
To *Fiermont* of France, to let him know  
cause why he misliked his intent.  
As namely, many mischiefs that would grow,  
To all that now, or that hereafter ment,  
The like attempt, advising him abstaine  
From certaine trouble, for vncertaine gaine.

9

Looke hereof in  
the history of this  
booke.

And that he might his courage more appall,  
And quite remoue him from this enterprife,  
He made by Magicke, this so stately hall,  
Adorned as you see in sumptuous wise,  
And drew these histories vpon the wall,  
That what he saw in mind, they might with eyes,  
And thereby know, that in Italian ground,  
The Flour de luce can neare take root profound.

10

And how as often as the French shall come,  
As frends to aid and fi e them from distresse,  
So oft they shall their foes all ouercome,  
And fight with honor great, and good successe:  
But be they sure to haue that place their toome,  
If so they come their freedome to oppresse;  
Thus much the owner of the house them told,  
And so went on, the storie to vnfold.

11

Sigisbert.

Lo first how *Sigisbert* in hope of gaine,  
And promises of Emperour *Mauricius*,  
Doth passe the mountaines with a mightie traine,  
With mind to Lombardie to be pernicious:  
But *Ewtar* driues him backe by force againe,  
When he of such attempt is least suspicious,  
So that his enterprife is quite reuerted,  
Himselfe doth flie, and leaue his men disperfed.

12

Next after the proud *Clodouens* went,  
And had with him one hundred thousand men,  
Whom he doth meet the Duke of Beneuent,  
With carle for eu'rie hundred souldiers, ten,  
Who doth intrap him in an ambushment,  
As the French might well be lik'ned then,  
While Lombard wines too greedily they tooke,  
To fish beguiled with a baited hooke.

in the his-  
tory.

13

Childibe  
consumed with  
the plague.

Straight *Childibertus* with a mightie host,  
Doth come with mind to wipe away this blot:  
But of his gainings he may make small host,  
For of his purpose he preuailed not:  
His enterprife by heau'nly sword is crost,  
The plague doth grow among his men so hot,  
What with the burning feauer, and the flixe,  
Of fixtie men, there scant returneth fixe.

14

Another picture lively doth expresse,  
How that king *Pepin* and king *Charles* his sonne,  
Fought both in Italie with good successe;  
Not with intent that Realme to ouerrunne,  
But to set free Pope *Steu'n* from sharpe distresse,  
And wrongs, that by *Astolfo* were him done,  
One taines *Astolfo* that was *Steu'n*s oppressor,  
Tother takes *Desiderius* his successor.

As Astolfo was  
a noble proud  
king of Lombardie

15

Behold another *Pepin* yet an youth,  
Not like his father, doth that Realme inuade,  
And thinking to procure their wofull ruth,  
Of ships and boats a mightie bridge he made:  
But marke what ill successe to him ensuth,  
Eare he through his great enterprife could wade,  
A tempest did his massie worke confound,  
His bridge was broken, and his souldiers drown'd.

This happend at  
the siege of Rial-  
to an Island near  
Venice, where he  
woul have made  
this bridge.

16

Lo *Lews* of Burgundie, descending theare  
Where, as it seemes he taken is and bound,  
And he that takes him, maketh him to sweare,  
That he shall neare beare arms gainst Latian ground  
Lo how he breakes his oth without all feare,  
Lo how againe his foes do him confound,  
And like a moldwarpe, make him loose his eyes:  
A iust reward for such as oths despise.

Lews of Burgun-  
die had his eyes  
put out for his  
peruaria.

17

See here how *Hugh* of Arly doth great feats,  
Driuing the *Beringars* from natie soile,  
Forcing them twise or thrise to change their seats,  
And cause the Hunnes and *Buiers* backe recoile:  
But greater force at last his acts defeats,  
First he compounds, and after all his toile,  
He dies, nor after long his heire doth tarie,  
But yeeldeth vp his crowne to *Beringarie*.

Hugo of Arly o-  
uerthrowne by  
the Beringars.

18

Lo heare another *Charles* that by perswasion,  
Of euill shepherd, lets on fire the fold,  
And kills two kings in this his fierce inuasion,  
*Manfred* and *Corradin*, which makes him bold:  
But his owne faults of his fall gaue occasion;  
His crueltie was such, so vncontroll'd,  
That he and his were all kild (as they tell)  
Eu'n at the ringing of an eu'ning bell.

Looke of this in  
the historie.

19

Now after these about one hundred yeares,  
For to the space betweene, did seeme to say,  
From France, one shall inuade those famous peeres,  
The Vicount *Galeasses*, and shall lay  
Siege vnto Alexandria as appeares,  
By those that here do stand in battell ray.  
Lo how the Duke preuenting eu'rie doubt,  
Prouideth strength within, deceit without.

This man that in-  
uader is the Gale-  
asses. was the  
Erle of Arma-  
nike.

20

And with this warie policie proceeding,  
He doth the Frenchmen at aduantage take,  
Not finding his ambushment, and not heeding,  
Together with the Lord of Arminake.  
Who dieth of his hurts with ouerbleeding:  
Lo how the streame of bloud there spilt doth make,  
A sanguin colour in the streame of Poë,  
By meanes *Tanarus* into it doth goe.

21

After all these, one comes that *Marca* hight,  
And three that do of Aniw house proceed.  
All these to those of Naples do much spite,  
Yet none of these can brag of their good speed:  
For though to French they ioyne some Latia might,  
Of greedie sort, that with their crownes they feed,  
Yet still for all their paine and their expence,  
*Aifonso* and *Ferdinando* driue them thence.

Looke of Marca  
in the historie.



*Charles the eight  
looke in the his-  
torie.*

22  
Lo Charles the eight descending like a thunder,  
Downe from the Alps with all the floure of France,  
And conqu'ring all (to all mens passing wonder)  
Not drawing once a sword, nor breaking lance,  
(Except that rocke that *Typhens* lyeth vnder  
While he to high himselfe, straue to aduance)  
This Ile and castle both, that *Ischia* hight,  
Defended was by *Vasto* gallant knight.

23  
Now as the master of the castle told,  
And pointed out each storie in his place,  
It came into his fancy to vnfold,  
The worthy praile of *Aluas* noble race;  
Which (as for certaintie they all did hold)  
Wife *Merlin* propheside, who had the grace,  
To shew before hand, both with tongue and pen,  
What accidents should hap, and where, and when.

*This is spoken in  
praile of the  
house of Alua.*

24  
And namely that this knight whom here you see,  
Defending so the castle and the rocke,  
As though he feared not those same fires that flee,  
As far as *Fare*, but them did scorne and mocke.  
From this same knight there shal descend (quoth he)  
Out of the root of this most worthie stocke,  
A knight shall win such fame and reputation,  
As all the world shall hold in admiration.

*Of these looke in  
the Table.*

25  
Though *Nereus* were faire, *Achilles* strong,  
Though *Ladas* swift, though *Nestor* was most wise,  
That knew so much, and liued had so long;  
Though bold *Vlysses* could both well deuise,  
And execute what doth to warre belong,  
Though *Cesars* bountie praisd be to the skies,  
Yet place to giue all these may thinke no scorne,  
To one that shall in *Ischia* Ile be borne.

*Jupiter nephew  
to Celus.*

26  
And if that ancient *Creta* may be prowd,  
Because that *Celus* nephew sprang therein:  
If *Thebs* of *Bacchus* birth doth want so lowd,  
And *Hercules*, if *Delus* of their twin:  
Then may that Ile no lesse be well allowd,  
To want it selfe, that hath so happie bin,  
To haue that *Marquesse* borne within that place,  
On whom the heau'ns shall powre so great a grace.

27  
Thus *Merlin* wld to tell and oft repeat,  
How he should be for such a time referued,  
When Roman Empires high and stately seat,  
At lowest eb should be, and welnigh starued;  
That his rare parts againe might make it great,  
And that by him it might be safe preferued,  
Which that you may see plainly to his glorie,  
Marke in this table the ensuing storie.

*Lodowike Sforse  
the notablest dis-  
sembler and Ma-  
chiauellian that  
euer was, though  
before Machia-  
uels time. Looke  
the Historie.*

28  
Lo here (said he) how *Lodwicke* doth repent,  
That he had thither brought king *Charles* the eight,  
Which at the first he did but with intent  
To weaken, not to presse with so hard weight  
His ancient foe; for now gainst *Charles* he went,  
Making new leagues according to his sleight,  
He thinks to take him prisoner by the way,  
But *Charles* by force through the doth make his way.

29  
But yet the souldiers that behinde him staid,  
Had not the like good fortune nor successe,  
For *Ferdinando* grew by Mantuan aid  
So strong, that soone he did the French distress  
To whose great griefe, this *Marquesse* was betrai  
By Gyphen vile, when he fear'd nothing lesse,  
Which doth in *Ferdinand* so great griete breed,  
As doth his ioy of victorie exceed.

*Looke in the His-  
torie of ibm.*

30  
Next after these, he shews them *Lews* the twelfth,  
That puls out *Lodwicke Sforse* with mightie hand,  
And gets by force, what he had got by stelh,  
And plants the Flour de luce in Millen land;  
Yet he no long time there in quiet dwelh,  
The great *Consaluo* with a Spanish band,  
His Captaines and Luutenants oft repulles,  
And in the end from Millen quite expulles.

*Of Lews the xij.  
looke the historie*

31  
Lo here (which I forgot before to show)  
How *Lodwicks* friends, and his own men betray him,  
One sells his castell neuer striking blow;  
The Swizzers eke that might away conuay him,  
And had his pay, and did him seruice ow,  
For filthie lucre sake they do bewray him;  
Whereby without once breaking of a lance,  
Two victories came to the king of France.

*Sforse fly: & i  
common soldiers  
apparrell like a  
Swizzer, was  
betrayed.*

32  
Lo how by fauour of this mightie king,  
The bastard *Cesar Borgia* grew full great,  
And doth the necks of many nobles wring  
Of *Italic*, that had most ancient feat.  
Lo how this king doth eke the *akornes* bring  
To *Bulloign*, lo how with another feat,  
He doth the *Genowais* in fight subdue,  
And maketh them their late reuolt to rue.

*Cesar Borgia  
Duke Valentine  
a notable wicked  
man.*

*By the akornes  
means the Pope  
who gave them  
for their armes.*

33  
Lo here not far from thence, how all th  
With dead mens bones is heal iadad,  
How all the cities vnto *Lews* do yeeld,  
How Venice to shut vp her gates is glad;  
And scarce her selfe fro this great storme can sheeld:  
Lo how the Pope (his part that herein had)  
Doth take away vnto his great rebuke,  
Modone and more, from good Ferraras Duke.

*bat.  
Geriadad, and  
the distressed  
state of Venice  
seen in the His-  
torie.*

34  
At which king *Lews* with rightfull choller moued)  
Giues *Bulloign* to the *Bentiuols* againe,  
And thence to *Breskie* all his force remoued,  
And succours to *Felsin* doth ordaine,  
What time the Churches souldiers felt and proued,  
The French mens force vnto their mickle paine:  
Lo after where both armies meet to fight,  
Neare *Chassie* shore, to trie their vtmost might.

35  
On this side France, on that the powre of Spaine  
Vnited is, and deadly blows enfew,  
The ditches all seemd filld with bodie's flaine,  
A hap to make a stonie heart to rew;  
Long time in doubt doth victorie remaine,  
Which way the sway would carry no man knew,  
Till by the vertue of *Alfonse* alone,  
The French preuaile, the Spanish (forst) are gone.

*Of this he shew  
before in s. e 14.  
booke.*



36  
Lo how the Pope his lip doth bite for griefe,  
Because the French men do Rauenna sacke;  
Lo how he sent to Swizzers for reliefe,  
How they come and driue the French men back;  
And thry that with their treason caused chiefe  
Of *Lodowike* the ouerthrow and wracke,  
To make some mends for that they erst had done,  
Vnto fathers place restore the sonne.

37  
*ne is the first.* But lo a prince of France then new created,  
Meets with the Swizzers to their mickle cost,  
And so their courage quaild, and force abated,  
As all the nation seemed welnigh lost;  
And of their title hat them animated,  
Those villens vile hereafter need not boast,  
Defenders of the Church, tamers of Kings,  
They cleaped were now clipped are their wings.

38  
Lo how the French king *Francis* in despite  
Of all the league, faire Millen doth surprife,  
*Bourbon* defending it from Genoas might;  
Lo while this King doth actife and deuise,  
Some great exploit, while by foule ouersight,  
His lawlesse men the towne did tyrannize;  
Their hauing too much pride, and want of pitie,  
Doth cause them sodainly to loose the citie.

39  
Lo yet another *Francis Sforse*, a man  
Like to his Grandfire both in acts and name,  
Who to driue out the Frenchmen well began,  
And Millen did recouer with great fame;  
Lo France againe endeuour all they can,  
To win with praise that they had lost with shame,  
But Mantuas worthy Duke on Tycian streame,  
Cut off his way, and kept him from that Realme.

40  
Yong *Fredricke*, yet but a bearded boy,  
Aunt on his chin a little downe,  
Lo how he saues *Paia* from annoy,  
Whose furiously the French besiege the towne;  
He makes their earnest plots turne to a toy,  
Lion of the sea he beateth downe:  
Lo here two Marqueses both of one blood,  
Both borne to do their country endlesse good.

41  
The first of these is that *Alfonso* wonne,  
That by the Negro erst you saw betraid,  
Behold what feates of armes by him are donne,  
How at their greatest need he them doth aid,  
How oft he hath on Frenchmen glorie wonne,  
That of his very name they seem afraid:  
The tother that so mild doth looke in sight,  
Is Lord of *Vasto*, and *Alfonso* hight.

42  
This is that worthy knight, of whom I told,  
Then when I did the Ile of *Ischia* show,  
Of whom I said that *Merlin* had foretold  
To *Feramont* what he by skill did know,  
That when this world were worne and waxen old,  
And Rome and Italy were brought most low,  
Then he should spring, who to his endlesse praise,  
Their foes should ouerthrow, and them should raise.

43  
Lo how he with his cousin of *Pescare*,  
And with *Colonnas* prosperous ayd no lesse,  
The French and Dutch that at *Bycocca* are,  
Do foyle and slay, and driue to great distresse;  
Lo how againe the French men do prepare,  
With new attempts to mend their bad successe,  
One campe the king in *Lombardie* doth make,  
And with another *Naples* he would take.

*Francis inuasion  
of Italie with  
two armies.*

44  
But she that vseth men as wind doth dust;  
First take it vp and blow it very high,  
And from that highest place straight when she lust,  
She throwes it downe whereas it first did lie:  
She makes this king deuoyd of all mistrust,  
Thinke he hath men an hundred thousand nie,  
At *Paue* siege beleeuing others musters,  
(But wo to kings whole seruants are no iuster.)

*Fortune.*

45  
while this noble Prince mistrusts no harme,  
His wicked Captaines greedy gaine to win,  
Could that the souldiers in the night alarme,  
Came to their colours slow and very thin;  
Within their tents they feeble their skirmish warme,  
The warie Spaniards soone had entred in  
With those two guides, with whom they durst assay,  
In hell or else in heau'n to breake a way.

*King Francis  
ouerthrowne at  
Paue, deceaued  
by his musterma-  
sters in the num-  
ber of his souldiers*

46  
Lo how the chiefe nobilitie of France  
Lie dead on ground, a cause of many teares,  
How many an hargubush, a sword and launce,  
This stout king hath alone about his eares:  
His horse slaine vnder him by hard mischance,  
And yet he nothing yeelds nor nothing feares,  
Though all the host assaulted him alone,  
And all the rescues and supplies were gone.

47  
The valiant King defends him on his feet,  
Bathing his blade long time in enmies blood,  
But vertue that with too much force doth meet,  
Must yeeld at last, it cannot be withstood;  
Lo him here prisoner, lo how in a fleet  
He passeth into Spaine the salt sea flood,  
Whence *Vasto* doth the chiefeest honour bring,  
Of the field wonne, and of the prisoner king.

*Francis taken  
prisoner.*

48  
Thus both that host the king had thither brought,  
And that he meant to *Naples* to haue sent,  
Were both disperfed quite, and came to nought,  
Much like a lampe when all the oile is spent.  
Lo how the King againe so well hath wrought,  
He leaues his sons for pledge, and homeward went,  
Lo how abroad he doth new quarrels pike,  
Lo how at home some do to him the like.

*Simile.*

*Meaning the  
king of England.*

49  
Lo here the wofull murders and the rapes,  
That Rome doth suffer in the cruell sacke,  
Where neither thing prophane nor holy escapes,  
But all alike do go to spoile and wracke:  
The league that should relieue, sits still and gapes,  
And where they should step forward, they shrinke  
Thus *Peters* successor by them forsaken, (backe:  
Is straight besieged, and at length is taken.

*The sack of Rome  
by Bourbon, who  
was the first man  
that was killed.*



50

The King sends *Lautrek*, new supplies to gather,  
Not that he should to Lombardie do ought,  
But that he might set free the holy father,  
That to so low an ebbe so soone was brought:  
But *Lautrek* should haue come a little rather,  
The Popes own coyn hath his own freedom bought,  
*Lautrek* attempts to conquer Naples towne,  
And soone turnes all that country vpside downe.

51

Lo how a faire Imperiall nauie bends  
His course to succor the distressed towne,  
But *Doria* backe with heaue and ho them sends,  
And some of them doth burn, and some doth drown:  
Lo, fickle fortune once againe intends  
To change her cheare, and on the French to frowne,  
With agews, not with swords they all are slaine,  
Scarce of an hundred one turnes home againe.

52

These and such stories had the stately hall,  
In marble rich ingraued on the skreene,  
As were too tedious to recite them all,  
Though then by them they were perused and seene;  
Their wonder great, their pleasure was not small,  
And oft they read the writings were betweene,  
That in faire Roman letters all of gold,  
The circumstance of eu'ry picture told.

53

Now when the Ladies faire and all the rest,  
Had seene and askt as much as they desired,  
Their host doth bring them to their roomes of rest,  
Where sleepe renews the strength of bodies tired,  
Onely Duke *Ammons* daughter could not rest,  
Though bed were soft, room warm, and wel attired,  
Yet still she tost from left side to the right,  
And could not sleepe one winke all that same night.

54

With much ado her eyes at last she closed,  
Not much afore the dawning of the day,  
And as she slept, she in her sleepe supposed  
*Rogero* present was, and thus did say,  
My deare, what ailes thee to be thus disposed,  
That false beleefe in thee doth beare such sway?  
First shall the riuers to the mountaines clime,  
Ere I will guiltie be of such a crime.

55

Beside she thought she heard him thus to say,  
Lo I am come to be baptizd, my loue,  
And that I seemd my comming to delay,  
Another wound, and not a wound of loue,  
Hath bene the cause of my constrained stay,  
Suspitions vaine, and causlesse feare remoue:  
With this the damsell wakt, and vp she started,  
But found her dreame, and louer both departed.

56

Then freshly she doth her complaints renew,  
And in her mind thus to her selfe she spake,  
Lo what I like, are dreames vaine and vntrue,  
And in a moment me do quite forsake;  
But ah, what me offends is to to true,  
I dreame of good, but none I find awake,  
How are mine eyes alas in so ill taking,  
That closd see good, and nought but euill waking?

57

Sweet dreame did promise me a quiet peace,  
But bitter waking turneth all to warre;  
Sweet dreame deluded me, and soone did cease,  
But bitter waking plagues, and doth not arre:  
If falshood ease, and truth my paines increse,  
I wish my selfe from truth I still might barre,  
If dreames breed ioy, and waking cause my pain  
Ay might I dreame, and neuer wake ag

58

Oh happie wights whom sleepe doth so possesse,  
As in six months you neuer open eyes,  
For sure such sleepe is like to death I guesse,  
But waking thus, is not like life (winke I)  
How strange are then the pangs that me oppresse,  
That sleeping seeme to liue, and waking die?  
But if such sleepe resemblance be of death,  
Come death and close mine eyes, and stop my breath.

59

Now were those Easter parts of heau'n made red,  
Where *Phabus* beames do first begin appeare,  
And all the thicke and rainie clouds were fled,  
And promised a morni faire and cleare;  
When *Bradament* forlooke her restless bed,  
And giuing for her lodging and good cheare,  
Right curteous thanks vnto her noble host,  
She leaues his house, and minds to part in post.

60

But first she found how that the damsell faire,  
The messenger that sapt with her last night,  
Was gone before, with purpose to repaire  
To those three knights that lately felt her might,  
When she did cause them caper in the aire,  
Driu'n without stirrups from their steeds to light,  
She found they had all night to their great paine,  
Abid the wind, the tempest and the raine.

61

And that which greatly did increase their grieve,  
Was that while those within had cheare  
They and their horse lackt lodging and reliefe:  
But that which did offend their stomachs m  
And was indeed of all their sorrows chiefe,  
Was least the maid (of whom I spake before)  
Would tell their mistresse of their hard mischance  
They had at their arriuall first in France.

62

And hauing full resol d and designd,  
To die or venge the foile receau'd last night,  
To th'end the messenger might change her mind,  
(The messenger that *Vllania* hight)  
Who thought their force and vlew farre behind  
The vaunts that they had made of their great might,  
Therefore as soone as *Bradament* they spied,  
Straight each of them to combat her defied.

63

Not thinking though she should a damsell be,  
For of a damsell gesture none she vsed;  
The Ladie gently spake vnto them three,  
And thought her haft the fight might haue excused,  
But they did vrge her still so farre, that she  
Without disgrace could not haue it refused;  
Wherefore she coucht the golden headed lance,  
And from their saddles made them all to daunce.

And

*This pestilent  
nocturnalie grew  
by poisoning a  
water weare to  
Naples, and then  
stopping the  
course of it, made  
it overflow all  
the marish  
ground, and so  
infected the aire  
that Lautrek  
and all his men  
died of it.*

*Bradaments  
dreame of Ro-  
gero.*



64

And for that time thus ended was that fray,  
For she sets spurs to horse, and rode so post,  
That ere they rose, she quite was gone away:  
That their seats had twise together lost,  
Were so ashamd they knew not what to say;  
For why, they wouted were to make their boast,  
No sight of France should able be to stand  
Against the worst of them, with spears in hand.

65

But *Vllania* ther them to taunt,  
That *Bradamant* a Ladie was, them told,  
Now sirs (said she) you that were wont to vaunt,  
From *Palladin* to win the shield of gold,  
Lo how a womans forces can you daunt,  
Now (I hope) your loftie courage cold:  
Sure for those knights you be too weake a mate  
When one poore damsell you can ouermate'

66

What need (said she) be further triall had,  
You haue already that for which you came,  
Except that any of you be so mad,  
To ioyne a future losse, to present shame;  
Or if perhaps ye would be faine and glad,  
To end your liues by men of worthy fame:  
Trow you that vanquisht are by womans hand,  
*Renaldo* or *Orlando* to withstand?

67

Now when as *Vllanie* declared had,  
How that a damsell them had ouerthrowne,  
With griefe and with disdaine they were so mad,  
That scarce their wits and senses were their own:  
Each one himselfe, of armour all vnclad, (throwne,  
Their horse turnd loose, their swords away were  
And vowd for penance of so great disgrace,  
To tuch no armour in a twelue-months space.

68

Forther they ne're will ride againe,  
No not when that same yeare should be expired,  
Although the way were mountany or plaine,  
And though the way were grauelly or myred,  
till they could by force of arms regaine  
Such horses, as for seruice are required,  
And furniture for three such champions meet;  
Till then they vowd to traue' on their feet.

69

Thus wilfully they walkt while others rode,  
But *Bradamant* went on, and that same night,  
She at a castle maketh her abode  
Neare to the way that leads to *Paris* right:  
Heare by her host, the Ladie faire was shoud,  
How *Agramant* was vanquisht in the fight:  
Good meat, good lodging, and good news she had,  
Yet eat she not, nor slept, nor was she glad.

70

But now of her so much I must not say,  
That I forget my storie out to tell,  
Of those two knights that met this other day,  
And tyde their horses at the running well:  
No lands nor townes were causes of their fray,  
Nor w<sup>in</sup> in rule nor office should excell,  
e that he that strongest was of twaine,  
Sh<sup>d</sup> *Bayard* win, and *Durindana* gaine.

71

There needs no signe of war, nor trumpets sound,  
To warner hem when to strike or when to pawse,  
No Heralds need to limit out the ground,  
Nor reade them lectures of their warlike laws.  
They met as they by promise firme were bound,  
And each his weapon at one instant draws,  
And then they layd about them strong and nimble,  
Blows bred their smart; and smart their wrath did

*Gradasso and Renaldo fight.*

72

Two blades more firme in triall, and more sure,  
Could not in all the world haue bin prepar'd,  
That hauing beene as these were, put in vre,  
Would not haue bene in peeces burst and mard:  
But both these blades were of such temper pure,  
So keene, so tough, and therewithall so hard,  
The might a thousand times at hard-edge met,  
either blade thereby a gap would get.

73

*Renaldo* quick, hither and thither goes,  
And often time was forst to change his place,  
And trauesse ground, for why the weight he knows  
Of *Durindana*, that would cut a pace:  
*Gradasso* euer gaue the stronger blows,  
But tother still to scape them had the grace;  
Or if they hit, they hit in some such part,  
Where though they made great sound, they causd

(no smart.

74

*Renaldo* with lesse strength but far more art,  
Strake once or twise the Pagan on the arme,  
And with a thrust had surely pierst his hart,  
Saue that his armour strenghtned was by charme,  
So that no maile out of his place would start:  
But while each fought to do the other harme,  
A sodaine noyse did part their earnest quarrell,  
They lookt and saw *Bayardo* in great parrell.

*Their parting.*

75

Ifay they lookt about and spide at length,  
*Bayardo* fighting with a monstrous fowle,  
Bigger then he, her beak three yards of length,  
In other shape and making like an owle,  
Her tallents huge and sharpe, and of great strength,  
The feathers of her wings all blacke and foule,  
Her eyes like fire, a long and hideous taile,  
Her wings so huge, they seemed like a saile.

76

Perhaps it was a fowle, but I thinke not,  
Nor euer heard I erst of such a bird,  
Onely so *Turpin* calls it well I wot,  
If any will credit to him affoord:  
Rather I deeme that *Malagigi* got  
Some sprite infernall, that himselfe had sturd,  
To come in shape as I did shew before,  
Because the champions fierce, might fight no more.

77

*Renaldo* eake himselfe beleeu'd the same,  
And with his cousin *Malagigi* fell out,  
And to his charge laid not a little blame,  
And gaue him euill language thereabout.  
The tother swar by him that heau'ns did frame,  
It was not he, to put him out of doubt,  
But were it fowle, or were it a foule deuill,  
Certaine to *Bayard* it did worke much euil'

Aa ij

*Gradasso and Vllanie  
come againe in  
the 37 booke she  
20. staffe.*

*comes  
Bradamant in  
the 35. booke 31.  
staffe.*



78

The horse that was puissant, brake his raine,  
When as the sharpnes of her claws he feels,  
And what with terrour mou'd and what with paine,  
He yerkeith at her fiercely with his heels:  
She soard aloft and downe she comes againe,  
And striks him so, that Bayard almost reels,  
And fith of other fence no meane he had,  
He runs away as if he had bin mad.

79

Vnto the nearest wood he right doth runne,  
And still the feathered beast him held in chafe,  
Till the thicke boughs help him her gripes to shun,  
So that she gaue him ouer in short space,  
And seeing that her sport with him was done,  
She sored vp on high and left this place,  
And to another coast her flight doth frame,  
Where as she thought to find some other game.

80

*Gradasso* and *Renaldo* when they saw,  
The horse was fled that caused all the fray,  
Do by consent themselues from thence withdraw,  
To find Bayardo out and if they may:  
But first each promist to obserue this law,  
That he that found him first of both, should stay  
At this same well, till tother should come thither,  
And then againe to fight it out together.

81

Thus when each had his word to th'other past,  
That they would meet there at their coming backe,  
They after go, but Bayard ran so fast,  
As soone they lost the sight of any tracke:  
*Gradasso* rode and therefore made more hast;  
The *Palladine* that his good horse did lacke,  
Remaind behind, all sad and griued more,  
And malcontent then ere he was before.

82

And when he traueled had about in vaine,  
In body wearie, discontent in minde,  
With losse of all his trauell and his paine,  
He turneth to the place they first assignde,  
In hope the tother would returne againe,  
And bring the horse, if so he could him finde:  
But when he saw his looking did not boot,  
He traueled backe vnto the campe on foot.

83

But yet *Gradasso's* paine succeeded well,  
For why, a while afore the lights decaying,  
He passed neare the place, as it befell,  
Where in a caue he found him by his naying,  
Still fearing that same monstrous impe of hell:  
He takes him thence, and then but little waying  
His promise made, he turnes another way,  
And to himselfe in secret thus doth say.

84

Let them that list hold things in strife and war,  
I meane to hold mine owne with peace and ease,  
Onely to get this horse, I came so far,  
And past so many lands, and many seas:  
My promise breach to me shalbe no bar,  
To keepe that I so quietly do seafe;  
If he desire to win his horse againe,  
To come to *India* let him take the paine.

Looks on the  
Morall.

85

As safe as France hath bin for me now twife,  
So safe for him shalbe my Serycane,  
I thither with him come if he be wise,  
Else of Bayardo now his leaue is tane:  
If he will haue him he shall know the prise,  
Now mine Bayardo is and Durindane:  
This sayd, he mounted on the steed so warl  
And by another way went backe to Arly.

86

Where finding ships new riggd, to sea-went bent,  
Though then at anker in the harbor lying,  
With those rich spoils, to passe the seas he ment,  
In all post hast into his country bying:  
Hereafter you shall heare which way he went,  
And of his last conflict and of his dying:  
Now him I leaue, *Renaldo* and all France,  
And tell you what did to *Astolfo* chance.

87

Who mounted on his stately winged steed,  
Well tamed late by *Logestillas* wit,  
Tooke perfect vew of France with passing speed,  
And saw how eu'rie towne of worth did sit,  
Which hauing well obseru'd, and markt with heed,  
From Rhine to Pyren mount, he thought it fit,  
In manner like, all ouer Spaine to ride,  
And many countreys of the world beside.

88

To Aragon he passed through Nauar,  
Each man that saw him wondring at the sight,  
Then Taracon he did discry not far  
Vpon his left hand, Biskie on his right,  
Where Castill, Lisbon, and Galicia are,  
And Cordoue neare, and Siuill see he might,  
Which diuers crownes now ioyned in on raigne,  
Are gouern'd by the mightie king of Spaine.

89

There saw he Gades where erst by *Hercules*  
Two pillars, markes for Marriners were plast,  
Then ouer Atlant sea, to Egypt land,  
And ouer Affrica forthwith he past,  
And saw where Balearick Iles do stand,  
Then traueled to Euiza with like hast,  
And to Arzilla-ward he thence departeth,  
Quite ore that sea, that it from Spaigna parteth.

90

Oran he saw, Ippon, Marocco, Fesse,  
Algier, Buzea, and those stately townes,  
Whose Princes with great pompe and pride possesse  
Of diuers Prouinces the stately crownes,  
He saw Byferta, and Tunigi no lesse,  
And flying ouer many dales and downes,  
He saw Capisse and Alzerbee ile,  
And all the Cities to the flood of Nyle.

91

Tripolie, Bernick, Tolornit, and all  
Betweene the sea and Atlas woodie sides,  
Then on the Cernaieys he right doth fall,  
And past Carena mounts, and more besides;  
Then cressing ou'r the barren fields and pall,  
Where sands with wind do eb and flow like tides,  
The tombe of *Battus* he doth leaue behin  
And *Ammons* temple now worne out of min.



92  
Then came he by another Tremisen,  
That followes eke of Mahomet the law,  
Vnto another Ethyopia then  
Came, the which before he neuer saw,  
That differs both in language and in men:  
From thence he toward Nubia then did draw,  
Nada and Coallee iust betweene,  
Of which these Christend, and thole Turkish beene.

Here begins the  
tale of Senapo  
the Haroua.

Saint Matthe  
converted this  
country to the  
faith, & because  
in the Gospell he  
saith (he shall  
baptize you with  
the holy ghost &  
with fire) there-  
fore they use to  
burne the signe  
rosse into  
some part of their  
body.

93  
The bord'rs still are armd in heate and cold,  
Senapo yet Ethyop is the chiefe,  
And hath great store of iewels and of gold,  
And much he tries not from our beliete;  
For he those principles most firme doth hold,  
That can defend from euerlasting grieve:  
Here is it (if mine author be no lier)  
Where they do vie to be baptizd with fire.

94  
The Duke here lighted after trauell long,  
And to Senapos stately Court was led;  
The castle was more sumptuous then strong,  
And admiration more then terror bred;  
The locks, barres, chaines, and all that did belong  
Vnto the bridge and gates from foote to head,  
Which we make here of iron to endure,  
Was there faire wrought in massie gold most pure.

95  
And though they haue great store of mettals fine,  
Yet were the chambers and the lodgings here  
Borne vp with cristall collumns, that did shine  
All ou'r the stately court most bright and cleare;  
A stately border cauld vnto the eie  
Red, white, Greene, blew, and yellow to appeare,  
Enriched with diuisions for the nones,  
Of Rubie, Smarag, Zaphyr, Topas stones.

96  
Most pearls and gems of passing price,  
Were spild on the pavements here and there,  
Hence balme doth come, hence other precious spice,  
Which from Ierusalem men wont to beare;  
Hence commeth muske, for odours sweet and nice,  
And amber pure, that some in bracelets weare;  
And finally all things grow there in plentie,  
That in this country are esteemd most deintie.

97  
Most true it is, else some haue written lies,  
The Sowdan to this King doth tribute pay,  
For that in this Kings powre alone it lies,  
Great Cayre and fertile Egypt to decay,  
Because that by those meanes he may deuise,  
He may turne Myle from them another way:  
This Prince Senapo there is cald of many,  
We call him Prester Iohn or Preter Iany.

Cyrr, some think  
is that that was  
B:bylon.

Senapo or Giau,  
that is to say in  
their language  
meane, because  
commatruis  
62 kings.

98  
Of all the Kings that euer there did raigne,  
This King exceld in riches and in treasure,  
But losse of sight made all his comforts vaine,  
And bard him eu'ry tast of worldly pleasure,  
And this did much increase his care and paine,  
And grieved him indeed beyond all measure,  
That his wealth and treasure not preuented,  
at with famine he was ay tormented.

99  
For when this Prince, as hunger meere him drew,  
Did but prepare himselfe to drinke or eate,  
Straight of Harpias came a cursed crew,  
With mightie wings, huge pawes, and bellies great,  
And all the dishes quite they ouerthrew,  
And greedily deuoured all the meate;  
And that they left they did so file and flauer,  
As few could brooke the sight, but none the sauer.

Virgil: Polluit  
ore diues.

Looke in the  
Allegory.

100  
The cause was this, why his great plague was such,  
Because in youth (when men most carelesse are)  
Finding himselfe to be extold to much,  
And palling other Kings in wealth to far,  
So foule a pride his loftie heart did tuch,  
Against his maker, he would needs moue war,  
To which intent a mightie powre he led,  
Vnto that mount whence Nylus hath his head.

101  
He had bene told, and did it firme beleue,  
That on that mount, whose top did touch the skie,  
Was that same place where Adam dwelt and Eue,  
Before their fall did cause them thence to flie:  
He hoping some rare conquest to atchieue,  
A mightie host prepared by and by,  
With mind (to hie his heart with pride did swell)  
To make them tribute pay that there did dwell.

102  
But high Iehoua, their foule pride represt,  
And downe he sent his Angell that same night,  
Who slue an hundred thousand for the least,  
And him condemn'd for ay to loose his sight;  
Then sent he monsters vile him to molest,  
Thole vgly monsters, that Harpias hight,  
Which so deuoure and so spoyle all his meate,  
Scarce they permit him once to drinke or eate.

103  
And that which draue him into meere despaire,  
Was that one told by way of prophecie,  
How those foule creatures euer should repaire  
Vnto that place, till time they might espie  
A gallant knight all armed in the aire,  
Vpon a winged beast aloft to flie:  
And for that this vnpossible he deemed,  
Past hope of helpe, himselfe he then esteemed.

104  
Now when the people saw from eu'ry wall,  
And from each towre the strangely flying knight,  
He happie thought himselfe, that first of all  
Could tell the king of this vnused sight;  
Who straight the prophecie to mind did call,  
And with the sudden ioy, forgetting quite  
His trustie staffe, went groping with his hand,  
To welcome him that now came downe to land.

105  
Astolfo being lighted, nearer drew,  
And as he was the great court entring in,  
Behold the King stood ready in his vew,  
And kneeling downe, to speake did thus begin,  
O heau'nly Angell, O Messias new,  
Though I deferre not pardon for my sin,  
Yet thinke to vs is proper to offend,  
To you, to pardon those that wil amend.



106

My guilt so heauie on my conscience lies,  
I dare not sue thou shouldst my fight restore,  
Though wel I wot that thou couldst heale mine eies  
That art of those that ay stand God before,  
Let then this plague my want of sight suffice,  
And let me not be steru'd thus euermore,  
At least from me these filthy monsters driue,  
And let me eate with quiet while I liue.

107

*Ouid of Aeneas  
comming to Se-  
billa.  
Templa tibi sta-  
tuam, tribuā tibi  
clausus honores:  
huc this is spoken  
more Christian  
like.*

And I do vow a temple vnto thee,  
Of marble faire to build here in this place,  
Whose gates and couer all of gold shall be,  
Adorn'd with costly iewels in like case,  
Nam'd by thy name, and grau'd that men may see  
Thy miracle, which no time shall deface:  
Thus saith the prostrate King that nothing sees,  
And gropes to haue embrast *Astolfo's* knees.

108

*Astolfo Sibillas an-  
swer is not vn-  
like this.  
Nec dea sū corat,  
nec sacris thuris  
honore.  
Humanum dig-  
nare caput ne  
mesius erres.*

The Duke to him thus friendly doth reply,  
Nor Angell I, nor new Messias am,  
Nor come from heau'n, but mortall man am I,  
And thrall to sinne, vnworthy so high name;  
But for your sake, my best skill I will trie,  
To kil or driue those fowle from whence they came,  
Which if I do, giue God, not me the praise,  
That for your helpe did hither guide my wayes.

109

For him your Churches and your altars make,  
That must of dutie, Church and altars haue:  
This said, he vp from ground the King doth take,  
And went with him and other Barons graue:  
Straightways of meate prouision new they make,  
For so the hungry King in hast doth craue,  
In hope that now the monsters would be quiet,  
And not to interrupt him at his diet.

110

Forthwith a sumptuous dinner was prepar'd,  
In stately sort great store and of the best,  
*Senapo* hopes *Astolfo* can him guard  
From those foule fowles that did him so molest;  
But lo a sodain noise forthwith was heard,  
The sent of those same viands that were drest,  
Had brought them thither ere the men were able  
To set downe all the dishes on the table.

111

*The description  
of the Harpias.*

Of them came leu'n together in a knot,  
With womans faces, wan with deadly cold,  
So hungerstaru'd, as death it selfe might not  
Be at first sight more hideous to behold, (wot,  
Their wings were great, but foule blacke wings God  
Their talents sharpe to gripe, but strong to hold,  
A large foule paunch, a filthy taile and long,  
From whence there came an odour mightie strong.

112

As sodaine heard, so sodaine were they seene,  
For on the table all at once they fell,  
And spoild the meat, and from their wombs vnclen  
Cast lothsome filth to see, irksome to smell:

The Duke with blade of mettall sharpe and keene,  
Strikes at the monsters, thinking them to quell;  
But all in vaine, his bootlesse blade turn'd backe,  
As he had smitten on a wollen sacke.

113

Some rau'nously deuour'd the sweet repast,  
And did so eager fill their greedie gorge,  
That by and by they were compeld as fast  
The same in beastly manner to disgorg.  
The wofull King thinks now all succou'p'af,  
Till good *Astolfo* sware by sweet Sai *George*,  
Sith force was vaine, he would ano' er way,  
To driue these monsters from th' king assay.

114

The horne, which euer he about him beares,  
He meanes against these monsters to emproy,  
e caus'd the King and his to op their eares  
th molted waxe, that no noise them may noy,  
Elle might his blast haue bred in them such feares,  
To driue them thence, and all the land destroy;  
Then caus'd he them prepare another feast,  
An vp he gets him on his winged beast.

115

The steward that did know his mind by signes,  
Straightwayes another dinner doth addresse,  
With store of daintie meates and costly wines,  
But in a trise more soone then one could guesse,  
The filthy flocke, as famine them inclines  
Came downe and feald vpon the costly messe,  
But straight *Astolfo* blew them such a blast,  
As on the sodaine made them all agast.

116

The noise into their open eares so entered,  
That had no meanes to stop them nor defence,  
As so their stomacks and their tastis distemper'd,  
They fled, as feare expeld all other sence;  
The English Duke to follow them adue d,  
And winding still his horne, he ch the  
To that hils foote, whence Nylus rst doth fall,  
If so that Nyle haue any head at all.

117

About the bottome of this mightie mount,  
There is a caue descending like a well,  
By which (as dwellers by do oft recount)  
A speedie passage one may haue to hell;  
To this the moniters i'ed, and made account  
Within this caue safe from the noise to dwell,  
Which seene, *Astolfo* from his beast alighted,  
And ceast the blowing that them so affrighted.

118

And for he did with heed the caues mouth marke,  
He nearer doth approach vnto the same,  
And with a listning eare he then doth harke,  
If any sound from thence vnto him came;  
The entrance lookt all like a dungeon darke,  
With smoke that seemd to come from smothered  
But more of this hereafter I will treat, (flame:  
For now this booke begins to be too great.

*Astolfo sweares  
after the manner  
of the English  
nobilitie By  
George.*

Morall.

In this xxxiiij. booke there are many things worth the obseruation, both for historicall matter, as also in Allegoricall  
sence, and therefore I would not stand long in the Morall: Only this note I will take of *Gradasso* for breach of his promise,  
in not bringing the horse backe to the fountaine, as was couenanted betweene them: that many braue and vi

such



such as he is here described to be, how euer they stand vpon termes of honor and value, yet if they may obtaine their purpose without blowes, they will many times dispend both with honour and honestie: which yet I iudge rather an example to shun, then a president to be followed. And in Senapo, that through riches and abundance grew so insolent, that he would needs thinke to conquer Paradise; we may see the course of yong carelesse men, that being left rich by their parents, or else aduanced (vnrorthily in their owne consciences) to some extraordinary fortunes, straight in conceits begin to despise the diuine providence (as Senapo assaulted Paradise) and dispute with their prophane tongues, not against this or that religion, but against all religion, hauing no argument so probable indeed and so forcible, as that which the Poet Martiall reciteth of one Silius:

Nullos esse Deos, inane cœlum  
Affirmat Silius, probatque quod se  
Factum, dum negat hæc, videt beatum.

Thus in English:

That heau'n is void, and that no gods there are,  
Silius affirms, and all his prooffe is this,  
That while such blasphemies pronounce he dare,  
He liueth here in ease and earthly blisse.

But this matter I shall touch more at large in the Allegorie.

For the histories touched in this book they are many and diuers, but the especial drift that mine author hath in this book, is to note how those kings of France that haue come to make a conquest thereof, or of any part thereof, haue had euer ill successe, and bin either taken or foyled: and of the other side, those that haue come to rescue them, and take their parts, haue many times brought backe honour and victory. Now first mine author for the finer bringing in of the matter fathers it vpon Merlin our English prophet (as they terme him) of whom I haue spoken before in the notes of the third booke, alledging that he by Magicke framed that sumptuous hall, and therein painted vpon the skreen thereof all these stories of the time to come.

First he recites all the excellent drawers of the time past, taking by that occasion to praise the excellent workmanship of some of his owne time: their names he reciteth huddling together; but here I will particularly touch them for their sakes that haue not read of them, and are desirous to know of whence they are.

Timagoras was a Calcydonian, and was the first that is specially noted to haue compared his cunning with another Timagoras of the same science, and to haue had the glorie from him.

Parrhasius an Ephesian, noted specially for his excellent shadowing and giuing good proportion to the countenance, and in the outermost lines of the face, which is a great point of that art.

Polygnotus I find no extraordinary thing to speake of, onely I read that he vsed first to draw women in white garments, and had a speciall grace in making the opening of the mouth.

Timant, they praise his wit as much as his worke, for making in a great table the picture of Iphigenia, standing at the altar to be sacrificed; and hauing drawne all the standers by very sad, and with wofull countenances, and specially her vnkle; when he came to her father, he made him with a scarfe afore his face, signifying thereby that his grieue was greater then could be seene in his countenance.

Protagoras was borne in Sycænum a country subiect to the Rhodians, he was noted for somewhat too much curiositie and tediousnesse (a fault our countrymen be much noted of, that they know not when their worke is well:) howbeit his worke was held in such price, that Demetrius lying at the siege of Rhodes, and hauing oportunitie offered him to haue fierd the towne on that side where a table of his drawing did hang, he raised his siege rather then he would burne a table.

Appollodore was so excellent (as Plinie writeth of him thus) that he opened the doore of cunning in that art, by which Zewces afterwards entred into it in the citie of Heraclia. The story of the strife betweene Zewces and Parrhasius is well knowne I thinke to all, but yet I will briefly set it downe: Zewces to shew his workmanship, brought a table, wherein he had painted grapes so naturally, that the birds came and pecke at them, thinking them to be grapes indeede: the other had drawne onely a curtaine, such as they vse to haue before pictures to keepe them from the dust; which curtaine looked so like a true curtaine, that Zewces being proud of the iudgement of the birds, bad him now to remoue his curtain to shew his picture; but being quickly aware of his error, with a kind of noble bashfulnesse, granted the prise to his aduersarie, confessing it was more to deceiue a workman then a bird.

Appelles borne at Coas, was held in such reputation for his drawing, that Alexander the great gaue commandement that none should make his picture but onely Appelles. He began the image of Venus, and died ere it was done, leauing the imperfite worke so full of the perfection of his art, that no man durst euer take vpon him to end it: so as euen to this day if any begin a work in any kind with any felicitie, and after leaue it vnfinisht, they straight liken him to Appelles. Now hauing spoken so much of all these famous men of old times, it were an enuious part to say nothing of those of this age, that haue bin famous, and are named by mine author also: wherefore I would touch one or two of them.

Leonard Vinci was a Florentine, a goodly man of person, and so excellent in the Idea or the conceined forme of his worke, that though he could finish but few workes, yet those he did had great admiration.

Also there was Andrew Mantua (whom I forgot to put in by ouersight in his due place, but I will make him amends here) who being but of meane parentage and very poore, yet his aptnesse to this kind being made knowne to the Marquis of Mantua, and encouraged by his liberalitie (the speciall nurse of all good arts) grew most excellent in it: and beside other rare workes that is seene and shewne of his in Rome and in Mantua, he is said to be the first that deuised cutting in brasse, which how curious a thing it is, the pictures in this booke may partly testifie.



**Gian Belline.** Gian Belline was a Venetian, and was the more famous because Mahomet (king of the Turkes) was so farre in loue with a table of his drawing, that he sent for him, but the Venetians would not spare him: many they sent a brother of his, a very good workman. Now (albeit the Turkes are by their lawes forbidden images) yet was this Prince so in loue with that picture I spake of, that when the other drawer came to him, he made him draw both his owne picture and the Turkes, and so after sent him backe againe, both highly commended and rewarded.

**Michael Agnolo.** Michael Agnolo (we pronounce it Michel Angelo) was the rare man of this age for drawing and caruing both, attaining to the excellency of the art very yong, and doing many notable works: but three be most famous, one was caruing of an Image of Pitie in Rome, another was a Giant in Florence, the third was a picture of certain naked men that went to wash themselves in Arno, and hearing of a sudden alarme in the camp, they made hast to put on their cloathes in which picture were contained all the gestures, lookes and motions that men could imagine would happen in such accident: his father surnamed him Angelo in his cradle, as a presage of some great excellencie aboue ordinary that he should grow to. Raphael and Sebastian were but his schollers, though both very perfect: all which I haue the more willingly noted, and at more length then I was wont in the former booke in like matters so lightly touched, both because my selfe (I must confesse) take great pleasure in such workes (as pleasing ornaments of a house, and good remembrances to our friends) as also to shew in what great reckning that science hath bin with Emperors and great Princes, and with Prelats and religious persons: howsoever some austere or rather viciuall persons, will seeme either to condemne it or contemne it. And though indeed this Realme hath not bred any Michel Angelos, nor me such rare perfection as may deserue his title:

Michel (in nam) ngell diuine.

**M. Hilliard.** Yet I may say thus much without partialitie, for the tryall of my try, as mine author hath done for the honour of his, that we haue with vs at this day one that for limning (which I take to be the very perfection of that art) is comparable with any of any other countrey. And for the praise that I told you of Parrhasius for taking the true lines of the face, I thinke our countryman (I meane M. Hilliard) is inferiour to none that liues at this day: as among other things of his doing, my selfe haue seene him in white and black in foure lines only set downe the feature of the Queenes Maiesties countenance, that it was euen thereby to be knowne; and he is so perfect therein (as I haue heard others tell) that he can set it downe by the Idea he hath, without any patterne; which (for all Apelles priuiledge) was more (I beleeeue) then he could haue done for Alexander. But I am entred so far into pictures, that I know not how to get out againe: and though there be so much other story in this xxxij. booke as wil aske some time, yet I thought better to set downe this of these notable men here altogether, for those that haue a mind to reade it, then to haue turned them ouer to the Table, where they must looke one in one place, and another in another, according as the names would fall out in order of Alphabet. But now to the French storie.

**12. staffe.** Clodoueus was the first king of France, after that Clodoueus that first receaued the Christian Religion. This Prince, what time Grimoaldo Duke of Beneuent had ciuill warres in Lombardy with Perderite and Gondiberto two brothers, taking this oportunitie, made warre on Grimoaldo: but Grimoaldo doubting his strength to meet them in the field, with a notable stratagem vanquished them: he fained as if he fled and forsook his tents, leauing them full of vittall and strong wines, which the French men so eagerly deuoured, and dranke so deuoutly of the wine, that it made them sleepe more soundly that night then was for their safetie: for the Duke of Beneuent set on them in the dead of the night, and so more by force of his wine then of his weapons vanquished them.

**18. staffe.** In the time of Pope Urban the fourth, mentioned couertly in the 18. staffe, one Charles Duke of Anjou called into Italy by the said Pope, and pronounced King of Sicily. But in a short time hauing done many great feats, the Sicilians conspired against him by the meanes of one Iohn of Procida, and murdered them all with great crueltie at the sound of an euensong bell: so as it is to this day a by-word vsed in Italy if any notable crueltie be done, that is withall so dauntly executed, they call it the Sicilians euensong: for they did at one euensong kill not onely all the Frenchmen, but all the women they thought to be with child by them.

**21. staffe.** The Earle of Marca, mentioned in the 21. staffe, married Queene Ioan of Naples (the matter for the strangenes of the president, I thought worth the noting) this Ioan being sister to Charles the third, and heire generall to the Crowne of Naples, was contented, for auoiding the foule infamie that she had by her ouer great familiaritie, and the too much inward acquaintance of one Pandolfo a meane man, to marry with one Iames Earle of Marca, and of the blood royall of France: but first she indented with him, that he should onely haue the bare title of King, but she would haue the gouernment wholly in her hands: he being once in possession, brake his couenant, and would needs gouerne all: but she by the help of Francis Sforse, in the end depriued him of the whole, and sent him backe into his countrey againe, where the poore Gentleman was glad to make himselfe an Hermit.

**28. staffe.** Lodwike Sforse spoken of in the 28. staffe, for emulation of the king of Naples, first brought Charles the eighth into Italy, and made him so strong, that in the end he was not able to get him out againe. This Lodwike his manner was still to be plotting of new deuices, to set other Princes at variance: now taking part with one side openly, and feeding the other with money secretly; neuer fast friend to any, neuer so proud as when with his smooth tongue and faire promises he had beguiled some plaine and open man, not so fine headed as himselfe. Now though we might perhaps note some men of our time held for notable wise men, and leaning much to this kind of course, yet I see small incouragement, either by his beginning, or proceeding, or ending, why any should thinke him worth the following: he began an vsurper, he liued a dissembler, he died a begger, and (which is worse) a prisoner. Further it is noted in Guichiardine that he spent (as I remember) eight hundred thousand Duckets in that kind I spake of, setting Princes together by the eares: and he gat this for his labour, that no Prince loued him, as appeared when being ten yeares a prisoner in France, no man euer made sute in a manner for his libertie. Wherefore Tully saith to Anthonie in one of his Phillippiks, Te miror Antiochum, quorum acta imiteris eorum exitus non perhorrelcere. I maruell (saith he) friend Anthonie, that you are not ashamed of their ends,



ends, whose euill acts you do follow. So surely I would wish none of my friends neither in print nor publike affaires, to follow those halting courses, but hold it for a maxim, that he that is not a true friend, shall not haue a true friend.

The Marquis of Pescara touched in the xxix. staffe, at the assault of Castellnouo in Naples, being impatient of all stay, bargained with an Ethiopian slave to burne the French nauie, and to let him in at the Church called Santa Croce, but he hauing greater rewards giuen him of the Frenchmen, betrayed him; and shot him with a forked arrow, and so killed him. 29. staffe.

In the xxxij. staffe wher he speakes of Geriadad, where Liuiano the Venetian Captaine was taken, I will refer the reader to Guicciardine for the whole discourse of the matter, beginning at the league of Cambray. But the substance of the matter chiefly is this: Maximillian the Emperour, Lewes king of France, and all the kings of Europe in effect, together with Giulio, made a league at Cambray, combining themselues against the Venetians, and in deed preuailed so farre that they left them almost nothing in terra firma as they call it, deuiding all their townes, some to the king of Spain, some to the Pope, some to Lewes himselfe, diuers to the Emperour; and two or three to the Duke of Ferrara. But the end (as commonly in songs of so many parts they cannot long keepe perfect harmony, but that some sing out of tune) so fell out, that in parting the spoiles, they of the league could not well agree among themselues, and so gaue breath to the Venetians, who thereby recovered much of their state againe. 33. staffe.

In the xxxvij. staffe he speakes of the ouerthrow of the Swizzers, that had beene before wonderfull proud of their glorious title giuen them by the Pope, who sent them the Pontificall banner, with this title vnto it, Defenders of the libertie of the Church, against the pride of Princes. But after that Francis came into Italie and besieged Millan, the Swizzers that were in the towne refusing to submit, which he offered them, coming after to battell were overcome, and seuen thousand of them slaine. 37. staffe.

In the xliij. staffe and so forward for three or foure more, he mentions the battell of Pavia, where the king of France was taken, a thing so generally known as I need not stand long on it: onely mine author touches one chiefe oversight of this kings, which was, that his muster masters decieued him in the number of his men: but howsoeuer it was, sure it is this Prince was a most worthy man, and wanted no quality of an excellent king, valiant and bountifull and such a fauourer of learned men, that the Italians termed him, Padre e madre, the father and mother of learning and liberall sciences. 44. staffe.

In the xlix. staffe he toucheth the sacke of Rome, which the Duke of Burbon was ringleader of, though himselfe was at the verie first assault slaine, with a harguebush shot in the head; but the other Captaines sacked the towne, and in fine draue the Pope to his ransome. And thus much for the storie of this booke: now I come to the Allegorie. 49. staffe.

Diuers excellent good Allegories may be taken out of this prettie fiction of Prester Iannic, called Senapos. One is, as I partly touched in the morall, when men through wealth and honor grow proud, and despisers of God and religion, whose state is damnable and incurable, except a flying knight come downe from heauen, I meane some Angell of God, or speciall grace of God, to remove these monsters and monstrous opinions out of their minds. The punishment of blindness laid vpon him for that his presumptuous assaulting Paradise, shewes that no men are in deed more blind, then those that thinke they see so much more then other men, specially when they enter into that wilfull blindness, of not seeing the way to their owne saluation. Italie had bin noted long to haue had many irreligious men in it, and no maruel, for our old English prouerbe is, the nearer the Church, the furdur from God: yet surely those despisers of religion, are themselues despised of many: in so much as it is growne for a byword among them; when they speake of such a man, they will say, Oh, he is rown and wise man, he begins now not to beleue in Christ, therby Ironically noting his passing folly. I would stand

er in applying all the particulars of this Allegorie, but that I doubt I am somewhat too tedious in these notes already. In the Harpias that snatch away the meate from the mouth of this king, he alludes (as himselfe expoundeth plainly in the beginning of the next booke) to the Swizzers and other strangers that spoile Italie. But a like storie, which thus may be alluded vnto, is told of Calai and Zet, sonnes of Orithya daughter to Erictheus king of Athens, who are sayd to haue deliuered Phineus king of Thrace from the Harpias in such a like sort. Allusion.

Here end the annotations vpon the xxxiiij. booke.



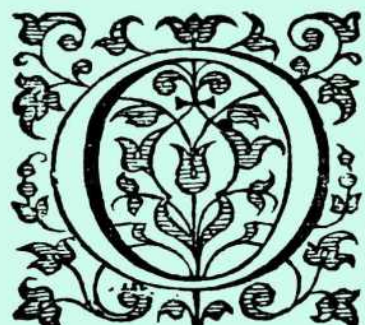






## THE ARGUMENT.

*Astolfo heares of Lydias plague in hell,  
Vntill the smoke annoyd and fould him so,  
That he was faine to wash him at a well;  
Which done, to Paradise he straight doth go,  
Where he doth meet Saint Iohn, who doth him tell  
Strange things, and as strange things to him doth show:  
And there Orlandus wit he doth receaue,  
And sees the fata l breede the sisters weaue.*



**O** H foule Harpias, greedie,  
hunger starued,  
Whom wrath diuine, for  
iust reuenge hath sent  
To blinded Italy, that hath  
deferued  
For sins both old and late,  
so to be shent.  
The sustenance that shold  
for food haue serued,

For widowes poore and orphans innocent,  
There filthy moniters do consume and wast it  
Oft at one meale, before the owners tast it.

**2**  
He doubtlesse guiltie is of grievous sin,  
That first let open that long closed caue,  
From which all filth and greedines came in  
To Italie, and it infected hau;  
Then ended good, then did bad dayes begin,  
And discord foule so farre off all peace draue,  
That now in warres, in pouertie and paine,  
It long hath taride, and shall long remaine.

**3**  
Vntill she can her slouthfull sonnes awake,  
From drowisie sleepe, that now themselues forget,  
And lay to them, for shame example take,  
Let others valiant deeds your courage whet:  
Why should not you the like acts vndertake,  
As in time past did Calai and Zet?  
That erst like aid to Phineas did bring,  
As did Astolfo th'Ethiopian king.

**4**  
Who hauin driu'n away these monsters fell,  
met and Senapos boord, as erst I told,

And chased them so farre, vntill they fell  
Into the caue most fearfull to behold;  
That fearfull caue that was the mouth of hell,  
To hearken at the same he waxed bold,  
And heard most wofull mourning, plaints and cries,  
Such as from hell were likely to arise.

**5**  
*Astolfo* minds into the place to enter,  
And visit those that haue forgone this light,  
And pierce the earth eu'nto the middle center,  
To see if ought may there be worth the sight;  
For why he thought what need I feare to venter,  
That haue this horne, with which I can affright  
Foule Sathan, Cerberus with trebble chaps,  
And safely keepe my telfe from all mishaps?

**6**  
He ties his flying beast fast by the raines,  
With mind to hell it selfe to bid defiance,  
His horne fast ride about his necke remaines,  
In which much more then sword he puts affiance:  
But at his very entrance he complaines  
Of that same smoke that bred him much annoyance,  
That sauourd strong of brimstone and ot pitch,  
Yet still *Astolfo* goeth thorough stich.

**7**  
But still the farder that he forward goes,  
He feesles the smoke more noisome and more thick,  
That in himselfe he gan now to suppose,  
If farder he should wade he should be sicke;  
When lo a shadow seemed to disclose  
It selfe to him, of somewhat that was quicke,  
And to his thinking hither wau'd and thether,  
Much like a carcasle hanged long in wether.

*Here begins the  
sale of Lydia.*



8

The English Duke that had desire to know,  
 Ifso he saw a bodie or a vision,  
 Strake with his sword thereat so fierce a blow,  
 As would indeed thereof haue made diuision,  
 If it had bin as it did seeme in show:  
 But when he saw his sword made no incision,  
 He guessed that it was (by that blows giuing)  
 A passed spirit, not a bodie liuing.

9

Then heard he how thus wofully it said,  
 Oh you that to these lower parts descend,  
 Bring vs no hurt, though you can bring no aid,  
 And be not so to those whom none can frend.  
 The Duke amazd, both hands and footsteps staid,  
 And said vnto the ghost, so God thee send  
 Some speedie ease of this thy painfull smart,  
 As thou wilt deine to tell me who thou

10

And if to worke your good lay in my lot,  
 Aboue or here I should be glad to do it.  
 Ah (said the ghost) my plague with such a knot  
 Is tide, as mortall strength cannot vndo it,  
 Yet your request denie you will I knot,  
 Because you haue so great a mind vnto it,  
 I will declare to you my stock and name,  
 And eke the cause why to this place I came.

11

My name is *Lydia*, borne of princely birth,  
 And bred in pompe and solaces delightfull,  
 Though now in place excluded from all mirth,  
 I lie condemn'd by Gods high doome and rightfull,  
 Because while I did liue aboue on earth,  
 Vnto my loue I shewd my selfe so spightfull;  
 And many more be here for like offences,  
 As he that all doth rule, their plague dispences.

12

*Anaxarise, for  
 loue of who Iphig  
 hanged himselfe  
 in the Ile of Cy-  
 prus.*

Here lies that faire, but cruell *Anaxaritee*,  
 Whose corps a stone diuine reuenge did make,  
 Her ghost in smoke that no light ay shall clarifie,  
 Doth most seuer, but most iust penance take,  
 Because she could without all sence of charitie,  
 Behold her louer hanging for her sake:  
 Here *Daphnee* lies, that now repents her shunning  
 Of *Phœbus*, whom she scapt with ouerunning.

*Daphne in the  
 first booke of Ouids  
 Metamorphosis.*

13

Too tedious it would be for me to tell  
 The seu'rall names of eu'ry femall spirit,  
 That for reward of their hard harts, in hell  
 Appointed are such portions to inherit.  
 Yet farre more are the men that there do dwell,  
 For like offence, who for their euill merit (them),  
 Are plac'd much more low, though somewhat nie  
 Where fume doth smother them, and flame doth fry (them).

*The few forsooke  
 Ariadne.  
 Jason forsooke  
 Hippolyte, and  
 after Medea,  
 \* Eneas forsooke  
 Dido.*

*Ammon son to  
 Dauid, deflowered  
 Tamar, and af-  
 ter despised her,  
 & put her away,  
 for which he was  
 slain by Absolon*

And reason good, for sith our sex is weaker  
 The greater sinne it is vs to deceaue,  
 As || *Theseus* and *Iason* well can speake,  
 And he that \* *Latin* did of rule bereaue,  
 With him, on whom faire *Abfolon* did wreake  
 The wrong that rauisht *Thamir* did receaue,  
 With diuers that of tone and tother gender,  
 Refusd or left their loues for causes slender.

14

15

But that I may particularly tuch  
 The cause that brought me to this endless pay,  
 My beautie while I liu'd, and pride was  
 As none or few did to the like  
 And both of them in me exceld so much,  
 Twas hard to say which greater was of tw  
 But this I know full well my proud mind grew  
 Out of conceit of my well pleasing hew.

16

It happend that a valiant knight of *Thrac*  
 In state and liuing of the better sort  
 And hearing praise of my praise- rthy face,  
 Confirmed oft by more then one report,  
 He purposd, and performd it in short space,  
 Vnto my fathers kingdome to resort,  
 That he might sue to me, and onely serue me,  
 In hope by his great value to d serue me.

17

In ga ant sort when he to *Lydia* came,  
 And saw with eye what he had heard with care,  
 He calleth scant report, and niggard fame,  
 That did to him so barren tidings beare:  
 And rauisht with my looke he straight doth framé  
 Himselfe to wait in court, and tarrie there,  
 And shewd such worth, and vsed such behauour,  
 As iustly might deserue my fathers fauour.

18

Exceeding was his seruice and defart,  
 If to a gratefull prince it had bin done,  
 So perfectly he had of warre the art,  
 That for my fire, by his conduct he wonne  
 All *Caria*, and of *Cilicia* part,  
 And after these exploits, he then begun,  
 For recompence of these his merits rise,  
 To pray my father I might be his wife.

19

My father him repulst with answer sowre,  
 Because to match me higher was his will,  
 Not to a priuat knight, whose chiefest dowre  
 Was vertue, of whose worth he could not skill  
 His greedy thoughts did nought but gaine deuoure  
 And couetise the branch and roote of ill,  
 Made him no more regard his vertuous sute,  
 Then doth an Assle the sound of sweetest Lute.

20

*Alceste* (so was nam'd he worthy Knight)  
 Tooke this so foule rep lse in great disdain,  
 Proceeding thence, from whence he ought of right  
 Expect great recompence for his great pain;  
 Wherefore he parted thence in great despight,  
 And vowd reuenge, nor was his vow in vaine.  
 Vnto th' *Armenian* king he thence doth go,  
 My fathers emulous and auncient so.

21

Him readie to accept each light occasion,  
 He soone perswades, without all intermission,  
 To make vpon my father fierce inuasion,  
 And make him chiefe Lieutenant by commission;  
 And hauing wonne him thereto by perswasion,  
 They thus agreed of spoiles to make partition,  
 As namely all the townes he wonne ld be  
 The kings, and for himselfe he askt but

*Look in the Mo-  
 rall of the ingra-  
 titude of Princes*

*Simila.*

This



22  
Th . legue thus made, what woes my fire he wrought,  
know not how in speeches to expresse,  
oyall armies quickly came to nought,  
r dead in halfe a yeare and lesse;

*A proverbe used  
in English.*

ther and his fire to such distresse,  
The o them to a rt with such small treasure,  
As in so Scarbrow war ng they had leasure.

3  
When he while he v esieged had,  
To such spaire he en my father draue,  
To yeel vp he would haue bin ful glad,  
To behis w yea eu'n to be his slaue;  
Nor would m ire haue thought the bargaine bad,  
If halfe the Re... e with me for dowre he gaue,  
So sore he feard, ere long to leese it all,  
And dye in wofull bands a captiue thrall.

24  
Wherefore in season to prevent the worst,  
Me that had beene the cause of all this ill,  
He minds to offer to *Alceste* furst,  
To win thereby his fauour and good will:  
I went (for why none other doe I trust)  
With mind herein my fires mind to fulfill,  
And offer mine owne selfe at his deuotion,  
With halfe the Realme, if he accept the motion.

25  
*Alceste* hearing I came him to looke,  
Aga st me forth he comes al pale and trembling,  
Not like a conquerour was then his looke,  
But rather a captiued man resembling;  
Which when I found, my first plot I forsooke,  
For well I saw that this was not dissembling,  
With lowring looke, I held my peace awhile,  
Then fit for his estate I fram'd my stile.

26  
I waxed bold the more I see him faint,  
And first I curst this vnluckie loue,  
And of his crueltie I made complaint,  
Which harmd my friends, and chiefe that he would  
Against my will to haue me by constraint, (proue  
I further did most sharply him reprove,  
he so parted with the first deniall,  
And neuer sought to make new friendly triall.

27  
I told him that his manners were to fierce,  
That though my father his list suit denyed,  
Because perhaps his nature is peruerse,  
And would not at the first attempt be plyed,  
He should nor though, all his good deeds reuerse,  
But rather ought with constancie haue tryed,  
By patient suffring, and by painfull seruing,  
To come vnto reward of well deseruing.

28  
And if my father would not haue beene wonne,  
I would (I said) his fauour haue procured,  
And would haue prayd him, to make him his sonne  
If I had found his loue to me had dured;  
Or else in secret I would that haue donne,  
By which of me he should haue beene assured;  
But sith h eds would trie another meane,  
I told hi plaine, my loue was alterd cleane.

29  
And though I now came in this humble sort,  
To yeeld my body, as the price of peace,  
Because my father, whom he held so short,  
Intreated me to sue for his release;  
Yet did I vow to mar his hoped sport,  
And if to offer force he would not cease,  
I sware that rather I my selfe would kill,  
Then grant such ioyes constraind against my will.

30  
These words and such as these to him I spake,  
Finding my powre was ouer him so great,  
Wherewith I did him as repentant make,  
As ere was Saint, in Hermits desert seat:  
He fell downe at my feet, and prayd me take  
His naked dagger, and did me intreat,  
To stab him with the same into his hart,  
To take iust vengeance of his lewd desert.

31  
when I saw him at this passe, I thought  
To follow this great conquest to his end,  
And straight a little hope to him I brought,  
Of fauour, if his errour he would mend,  
And if my fathers freedome might be wrought,  
And state restord, and he continue frend,  
And not attempt hereafter to constraine me,  
But with his seruiceable loue to gaine me.

32  
He promised hereof he would not misse,  
And backe vnto my fire, me safe did send,  
Nor once presumed he my mouth to kisse,  
Thinke you, how he vnto my yoke did bend;  
I thinke that lotte playd well his part in this,  
And needed not for him, more arrowes spend;  
Hence straight vnto th' Armenian king he went,  
Whose all the winnings should be, by consent.

33  
And in the mildest manner that he could,  
He prayeth him to grant his good assent,  
That my poore fire might Lydia quiet hold;  
And he would with Armenia be content.  
The king *Alceste* sharply then controld,  
And in plaine termes, he told he neuer ment,  
To cease that bloodie warre at any hand,  
While that my father had a foot of land;

34  
What if (said he) *Alcestes* wau'ring braine,  
Is turnd with womans words: his damage be it:  
Shall I therefore loose all a whole yeares gaine  
At his request? I neuer will agree it:  
Againe *Alceste* prayes him, and againe  
But all in vaine, he sees it will not be yet;  
And last he waxed grie, and did sweare,  
That he should do t, or for loue or feare.

35  
Thus wrath engendred many a bitter word,  
And bit er words, did breed more bloody blowes,  
*Alceste* hat f rie drew his sword,  
And straigh t egard on each side him inclose,  
But he among them, to himselfe besturd,  
He slew the king, and by the helpe of those  
Of Thrace, and of Cilicia in his pay,  
Th' Armenians all, he put to flight that day.



36  
And then his happie victorie pursuing,  
First he my fathers frends did all enlarge,  
And next the Realme within one month ensuing,  
He gat againe, without my fathers charge;  
And for the better shunning and eschuing,  
Of all vnkindnesse, with amends most large,  
For recompence of all harmes he had donne,  
He gaue him all the spoiles that he had wohn.

37  
Yea fully to content him to his asking,  
In all the countries that did neare confine,  
He raide such summes of coyne, by cursed tasking,  
As made them griue, and greatly to repine.  
The while my hate, in lous faire vizer masking,  
In outward show, I seemd to him incline;  
Yet secretly I studied to annoy him,  
And many wayes deuised to destroy him.

38  
In steed of triumph by a priuicetraine,  
At his returne to kill him we intended,  
But from such fact, feare forst vs to refraine,  
Because we found he was so strongly frended;  
I seemed of his comming glad and faine,  
And promist when our troubles all were ended,  
That I his faithfull yokefellow would be,  
In wo or weale, to take such part as he.

39  
Wherefore I prayd him first that for my sake,  
He would subdue some of our priuat foes,  
And he each hard exploit doth vndertake,  
And now alone, and then with few he goes,  
And safe returns, yet oft I did him make,  
To fight with cruell Giants, and with those  
That past his strength, oft with som monstrous beast,  
Or Dragon fell, that did our Realme molest.

40  
Don Hercules neuer by his cruell Aunt,  
Nor by the hard Euristheus, was so wrought,  
In Lerna, Thraße, in Nemea Eremaunt,  
Numid, Etolia, Tebrus where he fought,  
Nor Spaine, nor no where else, as I might vaunt,  
With mild perswasion, but with murthering thought,  
I made my louer still to put in vre,  
In hope hereby his ruine to procure.

*Hercules labors  
appointed, by his  
Aunt Vestro. and  
Euristheus his half  
brother.*

*Servile*

41  
But as the Palme the more the top is prest,  
The thicker do the vnder branches grow,  
Eu'n so the more his vertue was opprest,  
By hard attempts, the brighter it did show;  
Which when I found, forthwith I thought it best,  
Another way to worke his overthrow,  
A way by which in deed I wrought the feat,  
Which yet I shame and sorrow to repeat.

42  
Against all such as bare him best affection,  
I secretly did still his minde incense,  
And euer one and one, by my direction  
I made him wrong, till all were driuen from thence:  
So was his heart and soule in my subiection,  
So had my bewtie blinded all his sence,  
Had I but winkt, or vp my finger hild,  
He had not car'd whom he had hurt or kild.

43  
Now when I thus had foyld my fathers foes,  
And by Alceste, had Alceste wonne,  
And made him for my sake, forsake all the re,  
That for his sake no high attempt would  
I then began my selfe plaine  
And let him know what threed he had in  
With bitter spitefull worde I all to raue him,  
And told him plaine, that my heart I hated him

44  
And that I wisht his life and yes were ended,  
And would haue kild him, it could for a me,  
Saue then I should of all men be conuicted,  
Because his high deserts were of such fame;  
Yet him and them I viterly contemned,  
And loathd to see his face, or heare his name.  
And sware I would wish him thenceforth no better,  
Nor heare his message, nor receiue his letter.

45  
At my cruell vsage and vngate,  
He tooke such griefe that in a while he died;  
Now for this sinne, he that all sinne doth hate,  
Condemns me here in this smoke to be tyed,  
Where I in vaine repent my telfe too late,  
That I his suite so causleslie denyed,  
For which, in smoke eternall I must dwell,  
Sith no redemption can be had from hell.

*The end,  
saie.*

46  
Here Lidia this her wofull tale doth end,  
And faded thence; now when her speech did cease,  
The Duke a farther passage did intend,  
But this tormenting smoke did so increase,  
That backward he was forst his steps to bend,  
For vitall sprites alreadie did decreas,  
Wherefore the smoke to shunne, and life to saue,  
He clammerd to the top of that same caue.

47  
And least those woman faced monsters fell,  
Might after come from out that lothsome ledge,  
He digd vp stones, and great trees downe did fell,  
(His sword suffising both for axe and sledge)  
He hewd and brake, and labourd it so well,  
That gainst the caue, he made a thicke strong hed  
So stopt with stones, and many a ragged raile.,  
As kept th' Harpias in, a great while after.

48  
But now the Duke, both with his present toyle,  
That did with dirt and dust, him all to dash,  
And with the smoke that earst did him so foyle,  
As blacke as soot, was driuen to seeke some plash,  
Where he himselfe might of his cloths dispoyle,  
And both his rayment, and his armour wash,  
For why the smoke, without and cake within,  
Did taint his cloths, his armour, and his skin.

*Looke in the  
skie.*

49  
Soone after he a christall streame espying,  
From foote to head he washt himselfe therein,  
Then vp he gets him on his courser flying,  
And of the ayre he more and more doth win,  
Affecting heau'n, all earthly thoughts defying:  
As fishes cut the liquid streame with fin,  
So cutteth he the ayre and doth not steen,  
Till he was come vnto that mountaines

*Smile.*

This



50

T s hill nigh toucht the circle of the Moone,  
p was all a fruitfull pleasant feeld,  
t at night, as ours is here at noone,  
that euer man beheld;

*The description  
of Paradise.*

e would I dwe (God gaue me my boone)  
T ereof mo fragrant flowres did yeeld,  
Like Rubies, Gold, P rles, Saphyrs, Topas stones,  
Crisolits, Diamonds, I nts for the nones.

1

The trees t there di row were euer greene,  
The frui at th reon grew were neuer fading,  
The sundry lourd birds did sit betweene,  
And sing mo weet, the fruitfull boughs them sha-  
The riuers cle as crytall to be seene, (ding:  
The fragrant smell, the sense and soule inuading,  
With yre so temperate and so delightfome,  
As all the place hrfide was cleare and lightfome.

52

Amid the plaine a pallace passing faire  
There stood, aboue onceit of mortall men,  
Built of great height into the clearest aire,  
And was in circuit twentie mile and ten,  
To this faire place the Duke did straight repaire,  
And vewing all that goodly country then,  
He thought this world, compared with that pallace,  
A dunghill vile, or prison voyd of follace.

53

But wh as nearer to the place he came,  
He was amazed at the wondrous sight,  
The wall was all one precious stone, the same,  
And then the carbuncle more sanguine bright;  
O workman rare, o most stupendious frame,  
What *Dedalus* of this had ouersight?  
Peace ye that wont to praise the wonders sea'n  
Those earthly kings made, this the King of heau'n.

54

Now while the Duke his eyes with wonder fed,  
Behold a faire old man in th' entrie stood,  
Whose gowne was white, but yet his iacket red,  
The tone as snow, the tother lokt as blood,  
His beard was long and white, so was his head,  
untnance was so graue, his grace so good,  
A man thereby might at first sight suspect,  
He was a Saint, and one of Gods elect.

55

He comming to the Duke with chearfull face,  
Who now alighted was for reu'rence sake,  
Bold Baron (saide the Sajnt) by speciall grace,  
That sufferd wast this voyage strange to make,  
And to arriue at this most blessed place,  
Not knowing why thou didst this iourney take,  
Yet know that not without the will celestially,  
Thou comdest here to Paradise terrestiall.

56

The cause you come a iourney of such length,  
Is here of me to learne what must be done,  
That *Charles* and holy Church may now at length  
Be freed, that erst were welnigh ouerrunne,  
Wherefore impute it not to thine owne strength,  
Nor to thy courage, nor thy wit, my sonne,  
For neith could thy horne nor winged steed,  
Witho Gods helpe stand thee in any steed.

57

But at more leisure hereof we will reason,  
And more at large I mind with you to speake,  
Now with some meate refresh you, as is reason,  
Lest fasting long may make your stomack weake;  
Our fruits (saide he) be neuer out of season:  
The Duke reioyced much, and marueld eke,  
Then chiefe when by his speeches and his cote,  
He knew twas he that the fourth Gospell wrote.

58

That holy *John* whom Christ did hold so deare,  
That others thought he death should neuer see,  
Though in the Gospell it appeares not cleare,  
But thus he saide, What if it pleased me,  
O *Peter*, that thy fellow tarry here,  
Vntill my comming, what is that to thee?  
So though our Sauour not directly spake it,  
Yet sur it was, so eu'ry one did take it.

59

He here assumed was in happie houre,  
Whereas before *Enoch* the Patriark was,  
And where the Prophet bides of mightie powre,  
That in the fire coach did thither passe:  
These three in that so happie sacred bowre,  
In high felicitie their dayes did pass,  
Where in such sort to stand they are allowd,  
Till Christ returne vpon the burning clowd.

60

These saints him welcome to that sacred seate,  
And to a stately lodging him they brought;  
And for his horse likewise ordained meate,  
And then the Duke himselfe by them was taught;  
The daintie fruites of Paradise to eate,  
So delicate in tast, as sure he thought  
Our first two parents were to be excused,  
That for such fruit obedience they refused.

61

Now when the Duke had nature satisfide,  
With meate and drinke, and with his due repose,  
(For there were lodings faire, and all beside  
That needfull for mans vse man can suppose)  
He gets vp early in the morning tide,  
What time with vsalow, the Sunne arose,  
But ere that he from out his lodging moued,  
Came that disciple whom our Sauour loued.

62

And by the hand the Duke abroad he led,  
And saide some things to him, I may not name,  
But in the end (I thinke) my sonne he fed,  
Although that you from France so lately came,  
You little know how those in France haue sped,  
There your *Orland* uite is out of frame,  
For God his sinne oft sharply now rewardeth,  
Who most doth punish whom he most regardeth.

63

Know that the champion your *Orlando*, whom  
God so at strength and to great courage gaue,  
And so rare ce, that from his mothers wome,  
By force of eele his skin no hurt might haue,  
To th' end that he might fight for his owne home,  
And those that ha'd the Christian faith to saue;  
As *Sampson* erst enabled was to stand,  
Against Philistins for the Hebrew land.

B b ij

*He saith, your  
Orlando, because  
he was his cousin;  
Sensece.*



64

This your *Orlando* hath bin so vngrate,  
For so great grace receau'd, vnto his maker,  
That when his country was in weakeſt ſtate,  
And needed ſuccor moſt, he did forſake her  
For loue (O wofull loue that breeds Gods hate)  
To woo a Pagan wench, with mind to take her,  
And to ſuch ſinne this loue did him intife,  
He would haue kild his kinsman once or twiſe.

65

For this ſame cauſe doth mightie God permit  
Him mad to runne, with belly bare and breſt,  
And ſo to daze his reaſon and his wit,  
He knowes not others, and himſelfe knowes leaſt:  
So in times paſt our Lord did deeme it fit,  
To turne the king of Babel to a beaſt,  
In which eſtate he ſeu'n whole yeares did paſſe,  
And like an oxe did feed on hay and graſſe.

66

But for the Palladins offence is not  
So great as was the King of Babels crime,  
The mightie Lord of mercie doth allot  
Vnto his puniſhment a ſhorter time,  
Twelue weeks in all he muſt remaine a ſot,  
And for this cauſe you ſufferd were to clime  
To this high place, that here you may be taught  
How to his wits *Orlando* may be brought.

67

Here you ſhall learne to worke the feate I warrant,  
But yet before you can be fully ſped,  
Of this your great, but not forethought on arrant,  
You muſt with me a more ſtrange way be led,  
Vp to the Planet, that of all ſtarrs errant  
Is neareſt vs, when ſhe comes ouer head,  
Then will I bring you where the medicine lies,  
That you muſt haue to make *Orlando* wiſe.

*The Moone the  
loweſt Planes.*

68

Thus all that day they ſpent in diuers talke,  
With ſolace great, as neuer wanteth there,  
But when the Sunne began this earth to balke,  
And paſſe into the tother hemiſpheare,  
Then they prepar'd to fetch a further walke,  
And ſtraight the fire charret that did beare  
*Elias*, when he vp to heau'n was carri'd,  
Was ready in a trice, and for them tarrid.

69

Four horſes fierce, as red as flaming fire,  
Th' Apoſtle doth into the charret ſet,  
Which when he framed had to his deſire,  
*Aſtolfo* in the carre by him he ſet,  
Then vp they went, and ſtill aſcending hire,  
Above the fire region they did get,  
Whoſe nature ſo th' Apoſtle then did turne,  
That though they went through fire, they did not

70

I ſay although the fire were wondrous hot,  
Yet in their paſſage they no heate did ſeele,  
So that it burn'd them, nor offends not;  
Thence to the Moon he guides the running wheele,  
The Moone was like a glaſſe all voyd of ſpot,  
Or like a peece of purely burniſht ſteele,  
And lookt, although to vs it ſeemd ſo ſmall,  
Welniſh as big as earth and ſea and all.

(burne.)

71

Here had *Aſtolfo* cauſe of double wonder,  
One, that that region ſeemeth there ſo wid  
That vnto vs that are ſo farre aſunder,  
Seems but a little circle, and be  
That to behold the ground nat him lay vnd  
A man had need to haue ſharply ei  
And bend his browes, and mark eu'n all they might,  
It ſeemd ſo ſmall, now chafly wanting light.

72

Twere infinite to tell what wondrous things  
He ſaw, that paſſed ours not few degre,  
What towns, what hills, what riuers, what ſprings,  
What dales, what pallaces, what gently trees;  
But to be ſhort, at laſt his guide him brings,  
Vnto a goodly valley, where he ſees  
A mightie maſſe of things ſtrangely confuſed,  
Things that on earth were loſt, & were abuſed.

*This ſtore  
greeting with an  
English pron  
we  
wits are beyond  
the Moone, ſay  
they by a lay  
up things in  
circle of the  
Moone.*

73

A ſtore-houſe ſtrange, that what on earth is loſt,  
By fault, by time, by fortune, there is found,  
And like a merchandize is there ingroſt,  
In ſtranger ſort then I can well expound;  
Nor ſpeake I ſole of wealth, or things of coſt,  
In which blind fortunes powre doth moſt abound,  
But eu'n of things quite out of fortunes powre,  
Which wilfully we waſt each day and houre.

*Looke in the  
Allegorie.*

74

The precious time that fooles miſſpend in play,  
The vaine attempts that neuer take effect,  
The vowes that ſinners make, and neuer pay,  
The counſels wiſe that careleſſe men neglect,  
The fond deſires that leade vs oft aſtray,  
The praifes that with pride the heart infect,  
And all we looſe with folly and miſſpending,  
May there be found vnto this place aſcending.

75

Now as *Aſtolfo* by thoſe regions paſt,  
He asked many queſtions of his guide,  
And as he on one ſide his eye did caſt,  
A wondrous hill of bladders he eſpide;  
And he was told they had bin in time paſt,  
The pompous crownes and ſcepters full of pride  
Of monarks of *Aſſiria*, and of *Greece*,  
Of which now ſcantly there is left a peece.

*Pride of Princes  
and vanitie of*

76

He ſaw great ſtore of baited hookes with gold,  
And thoſe were gifts that fooliſh men prefard,  
To giue to Princes couetous and old,  
With ſondeſt hope of future vaine reward;  
Then were there ropes ail in ſweet garlands ſold,  
And thoſe were all falſe flatteries he hard,  
Then heard he crickets ſongs like to the verſes,  
The ſeruant in his maſters praife reherſes.

*Gifts giuen to  
Princes in hope  
of reward.*

*Cunning flatter-  
ers.*

*Base fl.*

77

There did he ſee fond loues, that men purſew,  
To looke like golden giues with ſtones all ſet,  
Then things like Eagles talents he did vew,  
Thoſe offices that fauorites do get;  
Then ſaw he bellows large that much wind blew,  
Large promiſes that Lords make, and forget,  
Vnto their *Ganimeds* in flowre of you  
But after nought but beggery enſew.

*Fond loues.*

*Fauorites &  
wards.*

*Great men's pro-  
miſes.*

He



Treasons and  
puracies.

78  
I saw great Cities seated in faire places,  
That ouerthrowne quite toptie turue stood,  
And leard, the cause of their defaces  
ation, that doth neuer turne to good:  
And of th'ues the curst brood,  
glasse, a n peeces broken,  
Of seruice lost in cou a wofull token.

Roore coursiers.

19  
Of ming oth he v a mightie masse,  
That ilt on ground did lye,  
He askt teacher, and he heard it was,  
The frutle almes at men giue when they dye:  
Then by a fa gr e mountaine he did passe,  
That once snelt f t, but now it stinks perdye,  
This was that gift (be't said without offence)  
hat Constantin gaue Siluester long since.

Lines an: cha-  
ritative ... ds don  
too late.

By that gift  
understood the  
Tise of Rome,  
which Constant-  
ine gaue I'ope  
Siluester, which  
be saith now  
stingeth because  
of their sinnes.  
T beaustie of  
sons

80  
Of birdlymd rodds, he saw no little store,  
And these (O Ladyes fayre) your bewties be,  
I do omit ten thousand things and more  
Like vnto these, that th are the Duke did see:  
For all that here is lost, there euen more  
Is kept, and thither in a trise doth flee,  
Howbeit more nor lesse there was no folly,  
For still that here with vs remaineth wholly.

81  
I saw some of his owne lost time and deeds,  
But yet he knew them not to be his owne,  
They seemd to him disguild in so strange weeds,  
Till his instructer made them better knowne:  
But last, the thing which no man thinks he needs,  
Yet each m a needeth most, to him was showne,  
By name mans wit, which here we leete so fast,  
As that one substance, all the other past.

82  
It seemd to be a body moyft and soft,  
And apt to mount by eu'ry exhalation,  
And when it hither mounted was aloft,  
It there was kept in pots of such a fashion,  
A we call Iarrs, where oyle is kept in oft:  
The Duke beheld with no small admiration,  
The Iarrs of wit, amongst which one had writ,  
Vpon the side thereof, Orlandos wit.

Mans wit kept  
in Iarrs, like oyl.

83  
This vessell bigger was then all the rest,  
And eu'ry vessell had engr 'n with art,  
His name, that erst the it therein posselt:  
There of his owne th uke did finde a part,  
And much he muid and much him selfe he blest,  
To see some names of men of great desert,  
That thinke they haue great store of wit, and boist it,  
And here it playne appeared they quite had lost it.

84  
Some loose their wit with loue, some with ambition,  
Some running to the sea, great wealth to get,  
Some following Lords, and men of high condition,  
And some in fayre jewells rich and coltly set:  
One bath desire to proue a rare Magicion,  
And some with Poetrie their wit forget,  
Anoth nks to be an Alcumist,  
Till all pent, and he his number mist.

85

Astolfo takes his owne before he goes;  
For so th' Euangelist did him permit;  
He set the vessels mouth but to his nose,  
And to his place, he snuft vp all his wit:  
Long after wise he liu'd as Turpin shows,  
Vntill one fault he after did commit,  
By name the loue of one fayre Northerne lassie,  
Sent vp his wit vnto the place it was.

86

The vessell where Orlandos wit was closed,  
Astolfo tooke, and thence with him did beare,  
It was far heauier then he had supposed,  
So great a quantitie of wit was theare;  
But yet ere backe their iourney they disposed,  
The holy Prophet brought Astolfo, wheare  
A pallace (feldome seene by mortall man)  
Was plapt, by which a thicke darke riuer ran.

87

Each roome therein was full of diuers fleefis,  
Of woll, of lint, of filke, or else of cotten,  
An aged woman spun the diuers peecis,  
Whose looke and hew, did shew her old and rotten:  
Not much vnlike vnto that labour, this is,  
By which in Sommer, new made filke is gotten,  
Where fro the filke worme his fine garment taking  
They reaued him of the clothes, of his owne making.

88

For first in one large roome a woman span  
Threds infinite, of diuers stufte and hew;  
Another doth with all the speed she can,  
With other stufte, the distaues still renew:  
The third in feature like, and pale and wan,  
Doth seuer faire from foule, and old from new:  
Now who be these? the Duke demands his guide.  
These be the fatall sisters, he replide;

89

The Parcees that the thred of life do spin,  
To mortall men, hence death and nature know  
When life must end, and when it must begin:  
Now, she that doth deuide them, and bestow  
The course from finer, and the thicke from thin,  
To that end works, that those that finest grow,  
For ornaments in Paradiſe may dwell,  
The course are curst to be contum'd in hell.

90

The Duke did further in the place behold,  
That when the threds were spent that had bin spun,  
Their names in brasse, in siluer, or in gold,  
Were wrote, and so into great heaps were donn;  
From which a man that seemed wondrous old,  
With whole loads o ose names away did run,  
And turn'd again s fast, the way he went,  
Nor neuer wearie as, nor euer spent.

91

This aged man did hold his pase so swift,  
As tho gh to runne, he one'y had bin borne,  
Or had him as a speciall gift;  
And in the tappet of his cloke were borne,  
The names of men, with which he made such shift:  
But now a while I craue to be forborne,  
For in the booke enſewing shalbe showed,  
How this old ſire his cariage ill bestowed.

B b iij

This is written  
in the fourth  
booke of the fine  
Cantos, added to  
Ariosto, which  
many thinke  
were none of his  
doing, and are  
verse imperfect.

Smile.



Morall.

In this xxxiii. booke, is to be noted in the tale of Lydia, the punishment of ingratitude, and what an odious sin same is, in the sight of God and the world: also here are to be observed many kinds of ingratitude: as first of her despay of Alceides long service, and approved good will, and secondly of the fathers ingrate recompence, for his great defence by services in the wars, in which kind, it is not onely slanderous, but dangerous for a Prince to show a niggard and much more a contemptuous disposition. For though indeed no subject (rightly considering his duty) may be moved by any ingratitude or injury of his soveraign, to forget his allegiance, yet seeing the nature of the same, especially of brave and resolute minded men, is subject to the passion of revenge, and can hardly be restrained, shall find themselves (as they thinke) disdained, or their services not well regarded: therefore and fittest for the Maiestie of a Prince, is to be liberall in rewarding, or at least thankfull nices, and to consider that love and bounty, are stronger bands of allegiance, then force and

Historic.

Concerning the Historie of this booke, I have quoted some briefly by the side, and some as so properly I meane to add a word or two what I have read, concerning that which is here deliuered by the author, about the Assumption of S. Iohn. First, how far the Scripture toucheth the same in the Gospell, euery one knoweth how vpon the speech of our Saviour (if I will be tarry till I come, what is that to thee) it was mysed among the Disciples, that the Disciples should neuer see death. After this, as other of good credit haue deliuered, S. Iohn liued till he was an hundred yeare old, and then made himselfe a tombe, and entred thereinto alive in presence of many, and on one sodaine, a light shone all about the place, and tooke the tombe for the time, quite from their sights: but the light being gone, the coffin was found empty, and the body of that Saint was no more seene vpon the earth. Whereupon it was certainly thought, that he was taken vp into heauen or Paradise, -- Enoch and Elias were. Though this of S. Iohn be not recorded in the Scripture (nor no more is the assumption of the blessed virgin Mary) -- frequently, no man is bound to beleue it, as an article of our Creed: Yet for mine owne opinion, I thinke it may be verie true, and I would in such cases beleue a great deale more then I need, rather then any thing lesse then I ought; for the tone (if it be a sinne) is surely pardonable, but the other doubtles is verie damnable. But I will briefly note the Allegorie that is meant hereby.

Allegorie.

First, whereas Astolfo washeth himselfe in a christall well of cleare water, before he can fly vp to Paradise, it signifieth, that after a man shall by remorse, and deuout consideration, weigh and behold the filthinesse of his sinne, he must then wash himselfe with the cleare spring water of prayer and repentance; and then and not before, he may mount to Paradise: which may here be vnderstood the comfortable peace of conscience, the onely true Paradise of this world. And whereas Astolfo cometh to S. Iohn (whose name signifieth grace) to receiue by his helpe Orlando's lost wits, so it is set downe that that was the secret cause why he was guided thither, though vnawares to himselfe: thereby it is to be vnderstood, that no hope nor means is left for any man that hath lost his wit, with following the vanities and pleasures of this world (as diuers carelesse christians do, in forgetting and omitting their duties to God, which is the verie highest point of follie,) I say there is no meane for them to recouer their wit againe, but onely by the helpe of this S. Iohn, that is this, grace of God, which can miraculously restore it againe.

In the description of S. Iohns apparell (His gowne was white, but yet his Iacket red, The tone was snow, the tother lookt as blood. &c) by the red is signified charitie, which burneth with Zeale and feruentnesse of loue; by the white is meant virginitie and purenesse of life.

All those things that he fautes to haue beene showed Astolfo in the circle of the Moone, are but similitudes, and likeness of such follies, as he that will marke them well, shall easily discerne.

The old man that ran away so fast with the Printed names of men, and flung them in the darke streame, figureth time, as in the next booke mine author verie artificially explaneth it: affirming in the person of S. Iohn, as if it were (as our prouerbe saith) as true as the Gospell, that the onely defence against the malice of time, is the pen of the learned: and that fame outlasteth, and outflyeth all things: as the well learned Gentleman, and my very good friend M<sup>r</sup> Iohn Constable wrote in his Sonnet to the now king of Scotland.

Where others hooded with blind loue do fly  
A low on ground, with buzzard Cupids wings,  
A heau'nly loue from loue of loue thee brings,  
And makes thy Muse to mount about the sky.

Young Muses be not wont to fly so hy,  
Age taught by time, such sober dittie sings,  
But thy youth flies from loue of youthfull things,  
And to the wings of time doth ouerfly.

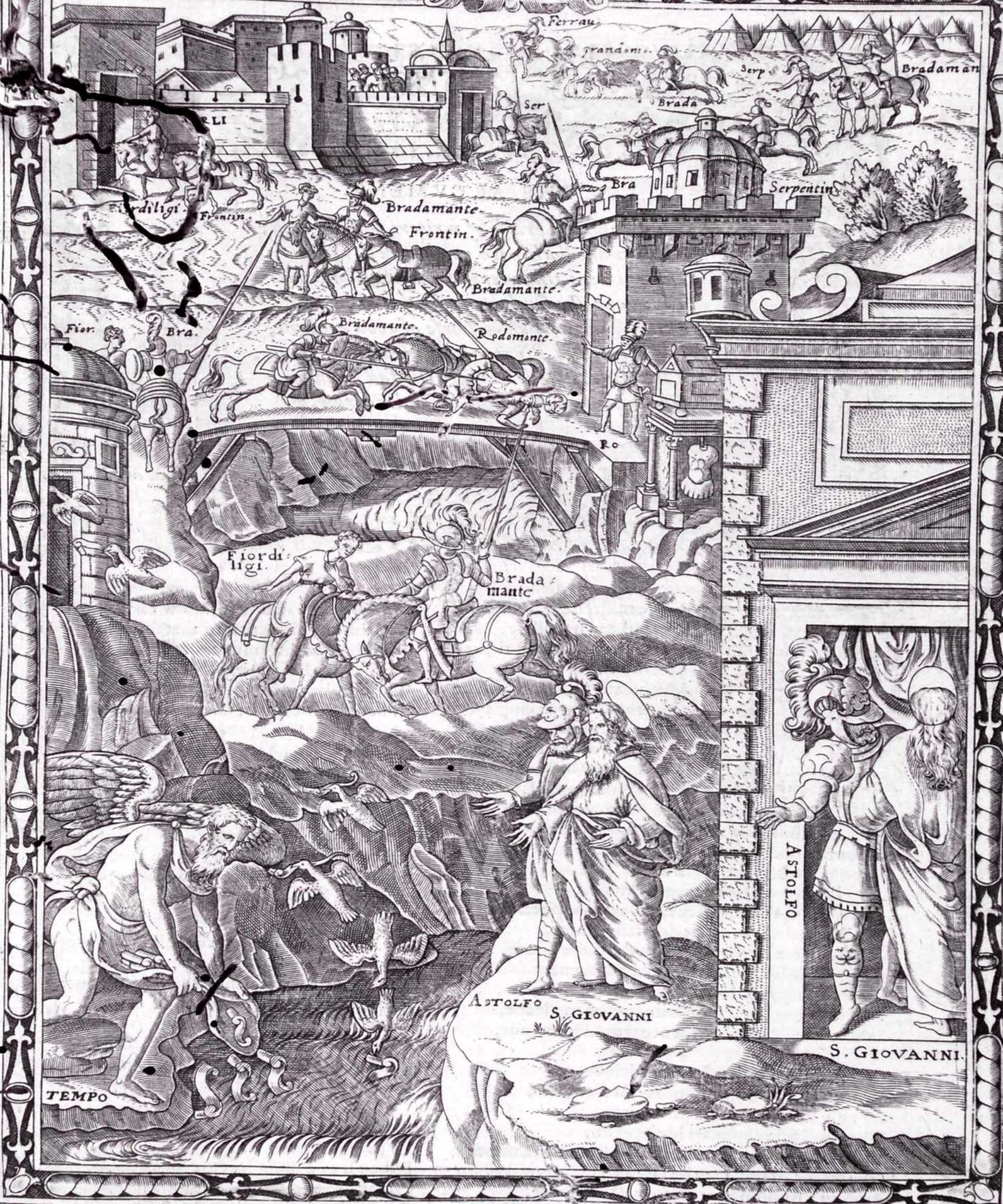
Tis thou disdainst all wordly wings as slow,  
Because thy Muse with Angels wings doth leaue  
Times wings behind, and Cupids wings below,  
But take thou heed, least Fames wings thee deceauce,  
With all thy speed from Fame thou canst not flee.  
But more thou sees, the more it followest thee.

Allusion.

For the punishment of Lidyas ingratitude, by hanging in the eternall smoke, makes me call to minde a story of the Emperour Seuerus as I remember, who hearing that a favorite of his accustomed to promise many men great furtherance in their suits, by his fauour with the Prince, and hauing taken their reward, his promise vanished into the aire like a vapour, and left the poore suiters nothing but his vaine breathed words: the iust Emperour caused him to be smothered to death with smoke, saying, Fumo percat, qni fumum vendidit. Let some him choake, that selleth sin.

Here end the annotations vpon the xxxiii. booke.





TEMPO

ASTOLFO S. GIOVANNI

ASTOLFO

S. GIOVANNI.



## THE ARGUMENT.

*Saint Iohn the praise of writers doth recount:  
 Bradamant doth with good successe recover  
 The prisoners, that were tane by Rodomount:  
 This done, she sends a challenge to her lover,  
 And sends withall an horse of good account,  
 Which makes Rogero long in doubt to houer,  
 The while, before his face the fall he saw,  
 Of Serpentine, Granuorio, a erraw.*



**F**aire mistresse who for me  
 to heau'n shall fly,  
 To bring again fro thence  
 my wandring wit,  
 Which I still loose, since  
 from that piercing ey,  
 The dart came forth that  
 first my heart did hit?  
 Nor of my losse, at al com  
 plaine would I.

Might I but keepe that which remaineth yet,  
 But if it still decrease, within short space,  
 I doubt I shall be in *Orlandos* case.

Yet well I wot where to recouer mine,  
 Though not in *Paradice* nor *Cynthias* spheare,  
 Yet doubtlesse in a place no lesse diuine,  
 In that sweet face of yours, in that faire heare,  
 That rubie lip, in thole two star-like eyne,  
 There is my wit, I know it wanders there;  
 And with my lips, if you would giue me leaue,  
 I there would search, I thence would it receaue,

But to returne vnto that English<sup>r</sup> prince,  
 Whom (if you do remember<sup>n</sup>) with *S. Iohn*,  
 By vgly streame I left a little since,  
 The fatall sister spinners looking on,  
 Who sometime do prolong, and sometime mince  
 Our threed of life, I say he saw and  
 Among a million more, one passing cece,  
 More fine then that that *Iason* brought to Greece.

*The golden fleece*

So shone the thred that from that fleece out came,  
 No gold, nor Orient perle could looke so bright,

*Astolfo* much desir'd to know his name,  
 And time of birth, that to that thred had right,  
 Straightways this answer vnto him doth frame,  
 He that the darke *Apocalips* did write,  
 The number of his birth shall noted be,  
 When twentie shal betane from M and D.

And as the fleece which here so faire doth show,  
 In finest substance passeth all the rest;  
 So shall the person that the same doth ow,  
 Make that same age in which he liueth, blest;  
 For all the gifts that nature can bestow,  
 Or with which studie can a man inuest,  
 Shall powred be on him with large propor  
 Assigned from aboue, to be his portion.

There stands (said he) neare to the bankes of *Poe*,  
 A village now of small or none account,  
 Whose moorish seat th<sup>r</sup> streame doth ouerflow,  
 But in that time that I to ou recount,  
 Vnto a Citie of such state shall grow,  
 As all the neighbour townes it shall surmount;  
 Nor sole in walls, and buildings faire and stately,  
 But in good arts of old found out, or lately.

*Ferrara*

Nor thinke you this preferment to proceed,  
 By peradventure, or as it twere by chance,  
 But eu'n as a thing by God himselte decreed,  
 For one mans sake, his natie soile t'aduance;  
 As still we see those that good fruits will breed,  
 Do graffe the stocke, and prune & pike the branch,  
 Or as the goldsmith pollisheth the ell,  
 In which he minds a gemme of price to lettell.

*Simile*

*Simile*

Neuer



8

For ere shall soule that shall to earth descend,  
 With mortall garment be more comely clad,  
 God a soule from hence downe send,  
 Gifts, nor more rare vertues had  
 His, which vnles he doth intend,  
 That this country and his friends make glad,  
*Hippolito* of erst his name shall be,  
 To whom the heau'ns full fauours do decree.

For all those vertues ore that wonted are,  
 To set forth diuersely deuised,  
 Shall ioyned in this same man most rare,  
 Vnto such place by heauens appointment guided;  
 Maintained shall vnder be by his great care,  
 All quarrels cease, and royals shall be decided,  
 Whose certues all, if I to tell prolong,  
 Should exceed his wit too long.

10

Thus much the follower of *Iesus* spake,  
 The while *Astolfo* those same webs doth ve  
 From whence our liues end and beginning  
 One spun, one cut, the third doth stuff renew.  
 Then came they to the foule and loe some lake,  
 Darke, deepe and mirie, of a deadly hew,  
 Where was the aged man, that neuer stinted  
 To carry bundels of the names imprinted.

11

This was he man, whom (as I told before)  
 Both use and nature so swift pact had made,  
 He neuer rested, but ranne euermore,  
 And with his running he did vse this trade;  
 A heape of names within his cloke he bore,  
 And in the riuer did them all vnlade;  
 Or (plaine to speake) away he cast them all  
 Into this streame, which Lethce we do call.

12

This prodigall old wretch no sooner came  
 Vnto this cursed riuers barren banke,  
 But desprately, without all feare of blame,  
 Or caring to deserue reward or thanke,  
 He rld therein full many a precious name,  
 Where millions soone into the bottome ranke,  
 And scant in eu'ry thousand one was found,  
 That was not in the gulfe quite lost and drownd.

13

Yet all about great store of birds there flew,  
 As vultures, carren crows and chattering pies,  
 And many more of sundry kinds and hew,  
 That made leud harme with their lowd cries:  
 These, when the carelesse wretch the tresor threw  
 Into that streame, did all they could deuise,  
 What with their beaks some, and some with beake  
 Aue some names, but find themselues too weake.

14

For euer as they sought themselues to raise,  
 To beare away those names of great renowne,  
 The weight of them so heauie downward wayes,  
 They in the stream were driu'n to cast them downe,  
 Onely two swans sustained so great a praise,  
 In spite of him that sought them all to drowne,  
 These two do still take vp whose names they list,  
 And beare them safe away, and neuer mist.

15

Sometime all vnder that foule lake they diued,  
 And tooke vp some that were with water couered,  
 And those that seemd condemned, they retriued,  
 And often, as about the banke they howered,  
 They caught them ere they to the streame arriued:  
 Then went they with the names they had recouered,  
 Vp to a hill that stood the water nigh,  
 On which a stately Church was built on high.

16

This place is sacred to immortal fame,  
 And euermore a Nymph stands at the gate,  
 And took the names, wherewith the two swans came,  
 (Whether they early come, or whether late)  
 Then all about the Church she hangd the same,  
 Before the sacred image, in such rate,  
 As they might then well be assur'd for euer,  
 Spite of that wretch in safetie to perseuer.

17

*Astolfo* had a great desire to know  
 The mysteries most high, and hidden sence  
 Of that old man, that still ran to and fro,  
 And precious things so leudly did dispence,  
 And of the birds, and of the nymph also,  
 That from the swans tooke names, and bare them  
 And therefore asked what they signified, (thence,  
 To whom the man of God thus wise replied:

*The expofitions  
 of the former  
 Allegories.*

18

Know first (said he) there cannot wag a straw  
 Below on earth, but that the signe is here;  
 And each small act doth correspondence draw,  
 Although in other shew it doth appeare:  
 That aged man, that running erst you saw,  
 And neuer baits, nor resteth all the yeare,  
 To worke the like effects aboue is bound,  
 As time doth worke below vpon the ground.

19

When here the fatall threed of life is spun,  
 Then doth below the life of man decline,  
 There fame, and here their names in mettall done,  
 Would make them both immortal and diuine,  
 Saue here this aged sire that so doth runne,  
 And there below, time doth thereat repine,  
 He here flings all the names into a puddle,  
 Time there doth all in darke obliuion huddle.

20

And eu'n as here Ravens, Vultures, Pies and Crows,  
 And such like birds, endeuour all they may,  
 To saue those names that worthiest they suppose,  
 But wanting strength, the names stil downward sway:  
 So there promoters, ruffins, bawds, and those  
 That can the parasites and iesters play,  
 That by great Lords are oft more made of, then  
 The true and plain, and vertuous minded men.

21

And these (forsooth) good fellows call you must,  
 Because they learne like Asse and Porke to be,  
 But when their words be layd full low in dust,  
 Their line of life cut off by sisters three,  
 Yea oft by the wine surfetting and lust,  
 Then these same goodly squires of base degree,  
 In their vile mouths, their names beare vp and downe  
 A while, and after in obliuion drowne.

*The Asse will  
 beare any thing,  
 the Porke feeds  
 himselfe fast.*



22

But as the swans that here still flying are,  
With written names vnto the sacred port,  
So there Historians learnd, and Poets rare,  
Preferue them in cleare fame and good report;  
O happie Princes, whose foresight and care  
Can win the loue of writers in such sort,  
As *Cæsar* did, so as you need not dread,  
The lake of *Lethe* after ye be dead.

23

But surely God their reason so doth blind,  
And takes from them all sence of wit and skill,  
That when their rooms on earth they haue resign'd,  
Death both their bodies and their fames might kill;  
Where at the least some fame would stay behind,  
(Admit in part their manners were but ill)  
Had they but wit to get some grace with *Cirra*,  
Their fame should sweeter smel then nard or mirrha.

*Cirra a sorow on  
the side of Par-  
massus makes for  
the Muses.*

24

Perhaps *Æneas* was not so deuout,  
Nor *Hector* nor *Achilles* were so braue,  
But thousands haue as honest been and stout,  
And worthy by desert more praise to haue;  
But those faire lands and castles out of doubt,  
That their successors vnto writers gaue,  
Made them so famous ouer forren lands,  
Canonizd by the Poets sacred hands.

25

*Augustus Cæsar* was not such a saint,  
As *Virgil* maketh him by his description,  
His loue of learning teuf th that complaint,  
That men might iustly make of his proscription;  
Nor had the shame that *Neros* name doth taint,  
Confirmd now by a thousand yeares prescription,  
Bene as it is, if he had had the wit,  
To haue bene franke to such as Poems writ.

26

Blind *Homer* writes how *Agamemnon* fought,  
And wan at last great *Troy* that long resisted;  
And how *Penelope*, though greatly lought  
By many suiters, yet in faith persisted:  
Yet sure (for ought you know) he might haue taught  
The contrary to this if he had listd,  
That *Troy* preuaild, that *Greeks* were conquerd  
And that *Penelope* was but a queane. (cleane,

27

On tother side, we see Queene *Didos* name,  
That worthy was indeed to be commended,  
Is subiect now to slaunder and to shame,  
Because that she by *Virgil* is not frended.  
But on this point I now more tedious am,  
Then I was ware, or then I had intended,  
For I loue writers well, and wuld not wrong them,  
And I my selfe do count my selfe among them.

28

I wrate a volume of my masters praise,  
For which to me he hath not bin vngrate,  
But to this height of honour me doth raise,  
Where (as you see) I liue in happie state;  
I pitie those that in these later dayes  
Do write, when bountie hath shut vp her gate,  
Where day and night in vaine good writers knocke,  
And for their labours oft haue but a mocke.

29

So as indeed this reason is the chiefe,  
That wits decay, because they want their hire,  
For where no succour is, nor no reliefe,  
The very beasts will from such  
Thus said the saint, and cre with g:  
Of such offence) his ey did flame li  
But turning to the Duk with sober later,  
He pacified himselfe a while after.

See *ance*,

*This is neke  
such an  
as woman  
a saint.*

30

But here I leaue *Astolfo* safe and sound  
With holy *John*, for forthw must I,  
As far as from the Moone ound,  
My wings would faile if I foat to hie:  
Now come I vnto her that adt wound,  
That euer smarting woun of iealousie,  
I told she had, when last of her I spoke,  
Vnhorst three kings with goldelaunces stro

*It return  
solto in the  
booke.  
flay*

*(an' xx.  
ffe 69.*

31

And w she lay all at a castle sad,  
Although in vaine she sought her grieve to smother,  
How at that place she perfect knowledge had,  
That *Agamemnon* was soy d by her brother,  
And that to e to *Arlic* he was glad,  
With good *Rogero* and with many other;  
This made her vnto *Prouence* then to hast,  
Because she heard that *Charles* purlude him fast.

32

Now vnto *Prouence* onward as she went,  
A comely damsell in her way she vewd,  
Who though she lookt like one that did lament,  
Yet could not grieve her comely grace exclude;  
This dame had traueled long, with this intent,  
To find some knight that from the Pagan rude,  
(Fierce *Redomont*, that pritrer held her louer)  
By force of armes againe might him recouer.

*Fiordeliege.*

33

Now when the comfortlesse dame *Bradamant*  
Had met a dame as comfortlesse as she,  
Such simpathe she felt of grieve, that scant  
She kept in teares, so sad a sight to see,  
She askt her what misfortune or what want,  
Of her sad plight, vnworthy cause might be:  
Faile *Fiordeliege* that for a knight did hold her,  
The circumstance of all the matter told her.

34

And in most rusfull sort she did recount,  
Both of the tombe at bridge the wofull storie,  
And how the cruell Pagan *Redomont*  
Had taken him, for whom she was so sorie,  
Not that he could in value him surmount,  
That for his value had obtained much glorie,  
But that the Pagan not to stren th did trust,  
But to a bridge and vantages vnust.

35

Wherefore most noble minded knight (said she)  
If such you be, as by your speech I guesse,  
Helpe my deare spoule from bondage vile to free,  
And plague the Pagan that doth him oppresse;  
Or if you cannot so, yet counsell me,  
Where I may find some ayd for my distresse,  
Some knight so stout of heart, and str of hand,  
As may this cruell Sarazen withstand.

So



36

So shew you do a braue and noble deed,  
That wandring knights, do think they ought of due,  
Nought you sayd a worthy man indeed.  
Loue most faithfull and most true:

it is no need

to tell mine owne griefes to renewe,  
Sith we know, they plainly are appearing,  
To all that haue their sense of sight and hearing.

37

The worthie Dame that stood still for praise,  
Agrees to take exploit in hand,  
As one that ready at all assayes,  
On horse, on foot, by water or by land:  
For either thus, she her glorie raise,  
She shall the Pagan force withstand,  
die she shall, which longer lesse doth moue her,  
cause. she thinks *Rogero* doth not loue her.

38

And thus she sayd, most louely louing Dame,  
Gladly I shall my vtmost forces proue,  
To succour one that merits so great fame,  
Yet of his praises chiefly me doth moue  
Because you giue him such a noble  
That he is true and faithfull in his loue:  
Which sith you speake by triall, I must weene so,  
Else I durst sweare no man aliue had beene so.

39

The last words ending with a scalding sigh,  
A sigh that came indeed from grievous thought,  
Then on they went, till they approached nigh  
The parlous bridge, that *Rodomont* had wrought:  
And straight the watch descride them from on high,  
And blew a horne, by which the Pagan thought,  
That traouellers were come the bridge to passe,  
Came out all armed, as his manner was.

40

But when that he one all in armour saw,  
He greets them lowd with this lewd salutation:  
Ho stay, and ere you passe obserue this law,  
Vnto this tombe, humbly to make oblation,  
Of armes, and armes, with feare and reuerent awe:  
Else with this speare expect sharpe castigation.  
She, that before had heard of *Isbels* deth,  
And of this tombe, thus stoutly to him seth.

41

Ah damned wretch, why should the innocent,  
Indure the penance of thy grievous guilt  
Thy selfe shouldst die, or suffer punishment,  
That killedst her, if please her ghost thou wilt:  
Her soule (vpon my soul) would be content,  
If by my hand thy guiltie blood were spilt,  
More then with all the armors, men, and horses,  
That thou dost win by thy vnlawfull forces.

42

And so much more it will accepted be  
To her, if thou by my right hand mayst die,  
Because I am a woman as was she,  
And only come on thee my force to trie:  
But let vs first vpon these points agree,  
That if you hap to vanquish me, then I  
Shall suffer at your hands, so and no more,  
Then other prisoners haue done before.

43

But if I vanquish you (as sure I trust)  
Then I will haue the spoile of all the rest,  
And make your horse, and arms, a gift more iust,  
Vpon the tombe of her for euer blest:  
And then withall, to me you promise must,  
That all your prisoners straight shall be releast.  
When thus the Dame her mind had signified,  
Thus the fierce Turke mildly to her replied.

44

Faire Dame, you seeme to me to speake but reason,  
And thereto I my franke assent affoord:  
But true it is, that I for feare of treason,  
My prisoners all, haue sent from hence aboard,  
So as I cannot free them at this season,  
But firmly here to you I passe my word,  
If you foile me, of which there is small iacobertie,  
I will send word to set them all at libertie.

45

But if I conquer you, as sure I shall,  
(For so it is most likely, and most meet)  
I will not hang your armour on the wall,  
Nor send you hence a prisoner in my fleet,  
I will remit to you my conquest all,  
For that faire faces sake, and looke so sweet;  
Suffice it that this curtesie may moue thee,  
Where now thou seemst to hate me, thence to loue me.

46

Be not (faire Dame) in your owne strength beguyl'd,  
I offer not such grace to eu'ry stranger,  
For I am strong; at this the damsell smyl'd,  
But such a smile, as shewd not mirth, but anger;  
And whether courage had all feare exyld,  
Or that dispaire made her to doubt no danger;  
She spur'd her horse, nor other answer made him,  
But with her speare in rest she doth inuade him.

47

This so did moue the cruell *Rodomont*,  
Vpon his horse he doth himselfe aduance,  
Not making doubt, but that he would dismount,  
Out of her seat, the noble Dame of France;  
But he was quite deceiu'd of his account,  
No sooner was he toucht with *Goldelance*,  
But eu'n as if of strength he had bin reaued,  
Quite from the saddle backward he was heaued.

48

But yet the Dame her selfe in danger was,  
To fall into the streame so swift and fleet,  
By meanes the bridge so narrow was to passe,  
That hardly two at once thereon could meet;  
But *Rabican*, whose swiftnesse did surpasse  
All foure foot beasts, did firmly keepe his feet:  
Although so straight and narrow was the bridge,  
He was constraind to runne vpon the ridge.

49

Now when the Pagan lay thus ouerthrowne,  
She turn'd to him, and sporting, thus she spake,  
Now sir (I bid thee) I hope it may be knowne,  
Of vs two which the worser cause did take.  
But he, like one whose wits were not his owne,  
He either could or would no answer make;  
But still he stood, looking on ground and musing,  
Neither his foyle denying, nor excusing.



50

And hauing walkt some halfe a dozen paces,  
He suddenly cast all his armour off,  
And hurles it gainst the stones, and it defaces,  
That scant he left vnbroke one peece thereof:  
Determining after such foule disgaces,  
To hide himselfe, and go a great way of:  
But er he went, he graunted tull commission,  
To free his prisners without intermission.

51

*He comes not to  
him till the later  
end of the last  
Book where Ro-  
gero killeth him.*

So thence he went, and what of him became,  
Or what he did, no notice cleare I haue,  
But onely this, that eu'n for verie shame,  
He long liu'd close, within a secret caue;  
The while his armes by that victorious Dame,  
Were hangd vp at the tombe, for triumph braue,  
The tother armes and furnitures among,  
That erst to Pagan Princes did belong.

52

*Bradamant son  
to Blonodant.*

But for all those that were from Christens wonne,  
She laid them vp, and did in safetie set,  
Among the which was *Monodantes* sonne,  
And *Oliuero* and stout *Sansonet*,  
Who late before with ill successe did runne,  
So that the Pagan did their armour get,  
And them themselues as prisners did conuay,  
Vnto *Algerie*, farre from thence away.

53

Among the rest that had their armour lost,  
Was *Sacrapant*, the fierce *Circassen* Prince,  
Who fought for *Frontlet*, to his paine and cost,  
And with the Pagan fought but little since;  
But being foyld, he quite forlooke that coast,  
Where men, of such disgrace might him conuince,  
And with great shame (but what could shame him  
He came on horsback, & went thence on foot. (boot

54

*He speaks no  
more of Sacra-  
pant.*

Wherefore asham'd in such sort to returne,  
He minds to follow that his former quest  
Of her, whose loue long since his heart did burne,  
Although her loue he neuer yet posselt:  
For still her froward mind did euer spurne,  
Against his earnest, and most iust request.  
Of her returne he late had heard the news,  
(I know not how) but now he her pursews.

55

And let him her pursue, for I proceed,  
Of noble *Bradamantes* acts to tell,  
Who hauing done this braue and worthie deed,  
To free the passage where so many fell,  
She wrate it, so as eu'rie one might reed,  
How all the circumstance thereof befell;  
Which hauing done, then demands to know,  
Which way Dame *Fiordelise* did mind to go.

56

Who straight her purpose, vnto her vnfolding,  
Told her, to passe the sea by ship she'm nt,  
At *Arly*, least the *Turke* his word not holding,  
Might keepe her spouse too long in prison pent:  
Then shall you (saith the Dame) be more beholding  
To me, for sure (saith she) tis mine intent,  
Vnto that towne to guard you in your passage,  
So you will do for me, but one embassage.

57

And that withall, you me this grace affoord,  
To giue *Rogero* this same horse from me,  
And say an vnknowne champion sends hit w  
To challenge him that all the world n  
He hath bin false of pro word  
Of which, our combat the triall be:  
And tell him plainly th is no den  
But that by challenge I will make this triall.

58

This say, and say no more; a if he ske  
My name, then tell him pi ou may not tell;  
The while mine armes shall for a maske,  
This I desire, do this and rare  
This is (saith *Fiordelise*) easi taske  
From you, that haue of m ese u'd so well,  
As binds me both to this that you demand me,  
And to what euer else you would command me

59

id, she takes the bridle in her hand,  
And with her leads *Frontino* on the way,  
V they both came to the salt sea land,  
That ne vnto the tow e of *Arly* lay;  
But *Fiordelise* goes to the towne by land,  
And *Bradamant* doth in the suburbs stay,  
To th'end she may conuenient respite giue her,  
To him the horse, and message to deliuer.

60

Who when the bridge and gate she quite had  
She prayeth one of those that kept the wara,  
To bring her to *Rogero* in great hast,  
And through the towne of curtise her to guard  
This done, she to *Rogero* came at last,  
And did her message with most dire regard,  
And gaue *Frontino*, and then went her way,  
Nor would she once to heare his answer stay.

61

*Rogero* standeth still all in a muse,  
The messenger and message so beguile him,  
He wonders who it is, that both doth vse  
Such curtise, and yet withall reuile him,  
He thinks the partie doth him much abuse.  
With fowlest blot of breach of word to file him:  
And of all others, least of all he thought,  
That *Bradamant* of him the combat fought.

62

To thinke it *Rodomont* he was inclin'd,  
But yet it could not ke into his reach,  
Why of a sudden he ould be so kind,  
And wherei n he coul ame his promise breach;  
And saue with him, he annot call to mind,  
With whom he had of frendship any breach:  
The while the *Ladie* with a stately scorne,  
In token of defiance, blew her horne.

63

Straightwayes the news to *Agramaut* doth fly,  
That one without did challenge some within,  
And *Serpentine*, that then by chance was by,  
Askt leaue to fight, with sure hope to win,  
And twears the knight should yeeld or else should dy  
And then the people flockt both thicke and thin,  
And stood upon the walls, with young and old,  
Betweene these two the combat to behold.

Out



64

*Serpentino* came in braue array,  
 And brauely with his speare in rest he ran,  
 First encounter downe he lay,  
 And away without the man,  
 But noble *Bradamant* her horse doth stay,  
 And backe restore: the finely as she can,  
 She prayes him to king *Agramant* to speake,  
 To send a stronger knight, sith he was weake.

65

The mightie knight of Fricke and of Spaine,  
 That from her the courteous act did vew,  
 From praising of her name could not refraine,  
 Though none of them, thereof the author knew;  
 Now *Serpentino* brought returnd againe,  
 And to his Prince he told his message trew,  
 How that same champion did desire to fight,  
 With some more stout and more renowned knight.

66

And then *Grandonio* fierce of Volaterne,  
 The proudest knight that Spaine long time had bred  
 Obtained next place, and with a vilage sterne,  
 And threatening voice thus to the knight he said:  
 Your curtsie small reward for you shall earne;  
 For either here in fight you must be ded,  
 Or at the least, I will you prisoner bring,  
 Vnto *Marfilio*, of great Spaine the king.

67

Well (answerd she) keepe these your threats in store,  
 Your villany my curtsie shall not let,  
 But that ile frendly monish you before,  
 That backe againe vnto your king you get,  
 Ere that you fall, may make your body fore;  
 And say that I desired to haue met,  
 A man indeed of courage, and of worth,  
 And not your selfe, nor him that last came forth.

68

This her replie so mild, and yet so bitter;  
 The Pagan with more furie did enflame;  
 With speare then speech, he thought an answer fitter  
 toward her in full carreer he came,  
 Intending sure, some deadly blow to hit her;  
 But she that was accustomed to this game,  
 Bare well his blow, and with her Goldé lance,  
 She taught him how the *Somerlaute* to dance.

69

But yet his horse, that loose about did runne,  
 She brought him backe, and thus to him she sayd,  
 Lo sir, you had bin better to haue donne  
 My message, when I curteously you prayd;  
 Yet here I will release my prisoner wonne,  
 So you will tell your king that I haue stayd,  
 In combat with a man in fight well scene,  
 And not with nouices, of skill so greene.

70

The lookers on that sure thought nothing lesse,  
 Then that a virgin so could guide a speare,  
 With murmurings their wonder great expresse;  
 Still ayming with surmises who it were;  
 Some *Brandimart*, and some *Renaldo* guesse,  
 Or others whom the Turks had cause to feare,  
 But most they would *Orlando* haue suspected,  
 Saue they had heard his fencies were distracted.

71

Next stout *Ferraw* desir'd to haue the place,  
 Not that he hop't the conquest to haue wonne,  
 But that these knights may haue the lesse disgrace,  
 If I (quoth he) shall do as they haue donne:  
 A strong swift horse he takes, and sure of pace,  
 Well made to beare the shocke, and free to runne,  
 The choicest of an hundred that he kept,  
 And thus all arm'd vpon the beast he leapt.

72

Against the femall champion forth he goes,  
 And first they interchangeably salute,  
 Please it you (said the Ladie) to disclose  
 Your name to me? that shall be all my sute:  
 He (that what longs to ciuill manners knowes,)  
 To satisfie her therein was not mute,  
 And I refuse you not, then said the rother,  
 Although I rather would haue had another.

73

Whom? (quoth *Ferraw*) *Rogero* (she replyed)  
 And scarce she fully could bring forth his name,  
 But that a blush with rosie colour dyed  
 Her louely cheekes, with secret honest shame:  
 (Further she addeth) him whose vallew tryed,  
 And so much pray'd, was cause I hither came;  
 None else I seeke, nor for none else care I,  
 Onely his manhood I desire to try.

74

She spake the word in plaine and simple sence,  
 Which some perhaps will subtilie wrest awry,  
 Well (said *Ferraw*) yet now ere I go hence,  
 Let me with you haue leaue on ecourse to try;  
 To see if I can make no more defence,  
 Then those whom last you made one arth to ly,  
 If I fall as did they, then I will send,  
 That gentle knight, that may our errour mend.

75

Her beauer open was while they confard,  
 At which, when her the Spaniard well had vewed,  
 And markt her bewtie worthy of regard,  
 He was alreadie more then halfe subdued:  
 He thought an Angell of the heau'nly guard,  
 Could not with greater bewtie be endowed;  
 Against her speare, what fence can he deuise,  
 That is alreadie conquerd with her eyes?

76

Now tooke they field, and ran with all their force,  
 And now *Ferraw* is from his saddle borne,  
 The damsell doth of curtsie stay his horse,  
 The Spaniard lyeth like a man forlorne;  
 But backe he must vnto the king perforce,  
 Nor true to do his message doth he scorne;  
 He tels *Rogero* plaine before them all,  
 How this same knight onely for him doth call.

77

*Rogero* who it is yet little knowing,  
 In hast to make him readie doth begin,  
 A settled hope of conquest plainly showing,  
 Willing to fight, with mind assur'd to win:  
 As for their toyles, and their fowle ouerthrowing,  
 That went before, he weighd them not a pin;  
 But how they met, how kindly him she serued,  
 Vnto the booke ensuing is refered.

Cc

*Somerlaute is a  
 leape that the to-  
 blers use to call  
 themselves for-  
 ward their heels  
 ouer their head.*



## Morall.

In the beginning of this booke, after the excessive praises of Hippolito, he returnes to the former matter of the of time, the Allegorie whereof I will continue in this place: onely for the Morall, I will touch two speciall faults, mine authour reproveth in men of the better sort, one is the great account they make of Parasites, Promoters and Iesters, and such like; for their basenes and filthines, likened to the asse and porke: and other is their venerie and which he noteth by these words, anzi venere e bacco: I English it, by their owne surffeting because contains both kinds of excesse in meat and drinke. And surely I must grant, that our Realme of England hath noted for riot in meats, many yeares since, and not without cause (though not alone) for Plato found the like fault with Italie in his time. But for this other vice of drinking, which, with the name of a health, overthrowes all health and sobrietie, it is now growne as vsuall and more odious then the tother, and I doubt it will not so easily be driuen out, as it is sodainly crept in. I haue heard a prettie tale not impertinent to this matter, of a Gentleman that had sonne at the Vniuersitie, who being belike of so good a conscience (as most of vs are in that kind) to take but a little for and growing (as it seemed) more in yeares, then either in learning, or good manners: his tutor to discharge his father word, how he misdoubted the young mans well doing, because he found him giuen to dycing and gaming, father was sorry, but yet answered, that he hoped when his sonne grew to haue more wit, he would leaue that or at least not lose by The next news he heard of his amendment, was that now he began to follow women: this touch the father somewhat nearer, yet he replied againe, that he made no question but he would leaue that ere long for his owne ease, and therefore let him he would not dispaire of him. The last newes he heard, was that he began to mend his former two faults; but that fell to bibbing and drinking. Out vpon the villan (said the father) I will surely disinherite him: for that fault the elder he waxeth, the more he wilbe subiect to it. Wherefore I conclude this Morall with this exhortation: that if wit cannot make men leaue play, nor their owne ease make them eschew venerie; at least let the vglynes, openesse, and beastlines of this sin make them leaue it; which hath no defence, nor no praise: I say praise, because the Scripture saith, The wicked man is praised in his wickednes. But I neuer heard praise ascribed to a drinke, but the well be-coming of drinke, which might be a good praise for a brewers horse, or perhaps a brewers man, but sure it is small boyst for a Gentleman.

Augustus Cæsar was not such a Saint, &c.

## Historie.

Of Augustus Cæsars faults both Suetonius, and Plutarke haue written at large, and I am loth to renew the memorie of them, except I did also recite his many vertues, which made large recompence for his few vices: sufficeth it to affirme that which mine author saith, that his bountie and loue to learned men covered his faults: and of his bountie, among other things witnesseth the faire Pallace he gaue Virgil, with a goodly Mannor, or rather indeed territorie, in a field called Ager Cremonensis, neare Mantua.

Whereas it is said, in the person of S. Iohn.

## Staffe. 26.

But yet (for ought you know) he might haue taught  
The contrarie to this, if he had listd,  
That Troy preuayld, that Greeks were conquerd cleane.  
And that Penelope was but a queane.

True it is that one Dion an Historiographer, writeth to that effect, and inforceth verie far to proue, that the Greeks had the worse end of the staffe, and onely that Homer fauoring the Greeks, wrote the contrary. Further some haue carped at Penelopes chastitie (for what may not a malicious wit carpe at?) and they say Homer himselfe insinuateth somewhat of her lightnesse; where he saith in his Odisseas, that she objected vnto her suiters that none of them could shoot so strong a shoot as her husband: but howseuer it is, for my part, seeing it hath bene receiued so long for a truth, that Penelope was a chaste and vertuous wife, I will not take vpon me (by S. Iohn) to write the contrarie, though mine authour make S. Iohn to cast a doubt of it.

## Allegoric.

Of the Allegorie I haue not much to say, because mine authour himselfe expounds it so plainly; onely I pray you mark how rightly and with what decorum, he likens Promoters, and Parasites, to vultures, carrion crows, and chattering pyes, as likewise in the beginning of the 34. booke, he likeneth them to Harpias.

The lustenance that should for food haue serued,  
For widowes poore, and orphanes innocent,  
These filthie monsters do consume and wast it,  
Oft at one meale, before the owners tast it.

As if one would say, the gifts and rewards that belong to old seruitors, and well deseruing souldiers, are catched at the vulture by these rauinous birds, and neuer come to the ground, or if they do, they make so false a bound, that a man shall make a fault in offering at them, and many times hazard both game and set for them.

## Allusion.

Bradamant a woman ouercoming Rodomont a most terrible Turke, alludes to the notable History of Iudith, that cut off Holofernes head: which story, the Lord Du Bertas, and rare French Poet, contriued into an excellent verse in French, and the same is translated into a verie good and sweet English verse, by one M. Thomas Hudson, which worke I the rather mention, because in the 6. booke of the vice of surffeting, which I reproveth afore in the Morall, it is notably described and with all sharply rebuked as followeth:

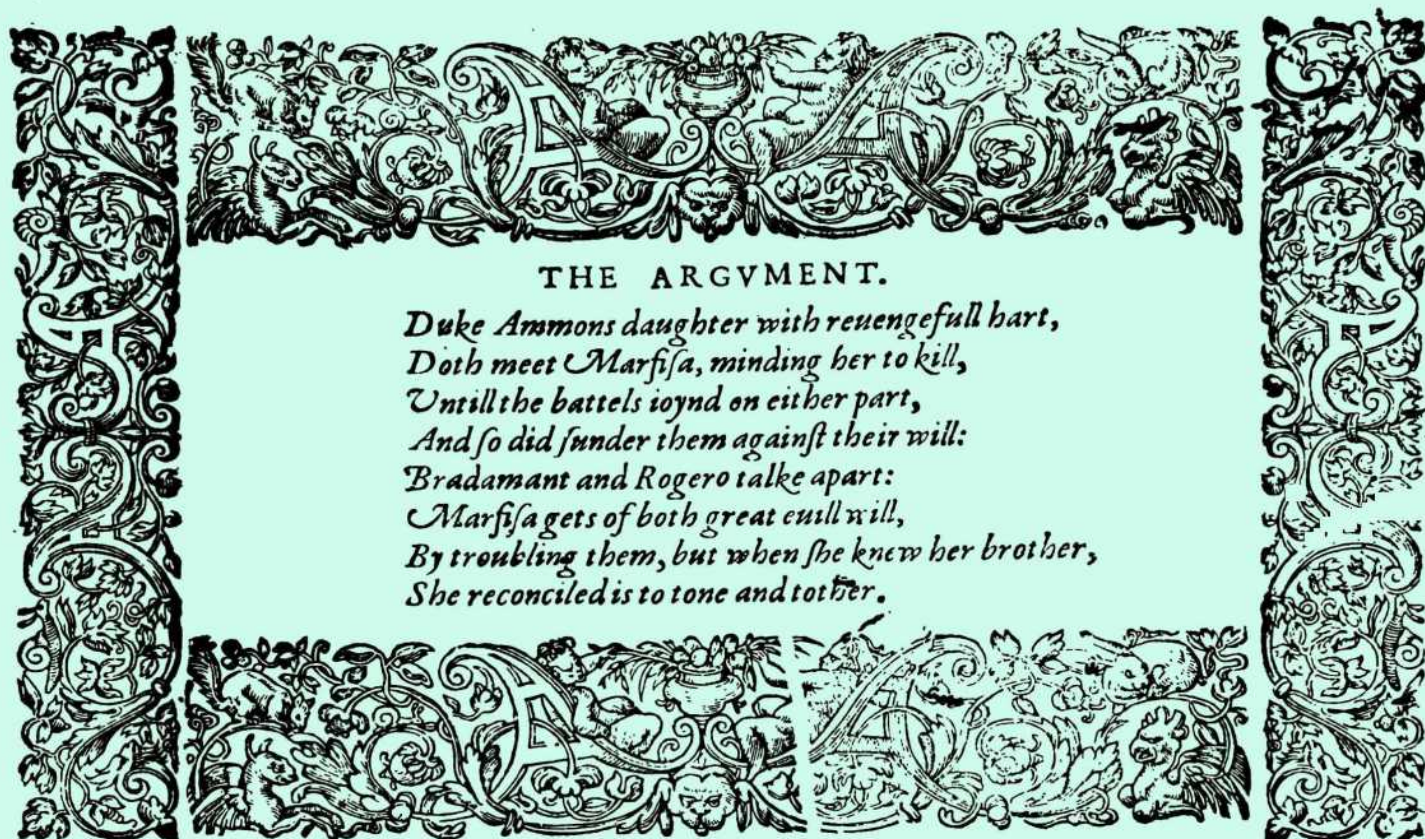
O prague, O poyson to the warriour state,  
Thou makst the noble hearts effeminate,  
While Rome was rulde by Curioes and Fabrices,  
Who fed on rootes, and sought not for delices,  
And when the onely Cresson was the food,  
Most delicate to Persia, then they stood, &c.

Here end the annotations vpon the xxxv. booke.









## THE ARGUMENT.

*Duke Ammons daughter with reuengefull hart,  
Doth meet Marfisa, minding her to kill,  
Untill the battels ioyned on either part,  
And so did sunder them against their will:  
Bradamant and Rogero talke apart:  
Marfisa gets of both great euill will,  
By troubling them, but when she knew her brother,  
She reconciled is to tone and totter.*

Against cruelty



<sup>1</sup> Is meete a gentle heart  
should euer show,  
By curtesie the fruites of  
true gentilitie,  
Which will by practise to  
an habite grow,  
And make men do y same  
with great facilitie:  
Likewise y dunghil blood  
a man shall know,

By churlish parts and acts of inciuitie,  
Whose nature apt to take each lewd infection,  
Custome confirmes, and makes ill in perfection.

Sense.

<sup>2</sup> Of courteous acts, old stories he that reeds,  
In auncient times shall find there hath bene store,  
But in our dayes of bloody cruell deeds,  
Is greater plentie then hath bene before;  
For charitie brings forth but barren seeds,  
And hatred still is sowed in so great store,  
That when the fruits of both come to be reaped,  
The tone is scarce, the tother uer heaped.

<sup>3</sup> What fierce Barbarian Tartar, Moure or Turke,  
Could vse more crueltie then now of late,  
In Latian land Venetian force did worke?  
Not by consent of the wise men of state,  
But by the filthy nature that did lurkē  
In wicked hirelings, and a hidden hate;  
I speake not of the damage and defaces,  
They did by fire in all our pleasa & places.

<sup>4</sup> Though that reuenge was foule and to to cruell,  
And chiefe against Hippolito, who late,

When Caesar sieged Padoa, as they knew well,  
And brought it to low ebbe and wofull state,  
He both withdrew the matter all and fewell,  
And quencht the fires kindled by deally hate,  
Preferuing many a Church and many a village,  
By his rare clemencie from fire and pillage.

5

Not those I meane, nor many actions more,  
That cannot be excused or defended,  
But such an act as stones might weep therefore,  
As oft as it is talkt of or remembred:  
Then when my Lord his household sent before,  
There where his foes were secretly assembled,  
And left their vessels on the saltish sand,  
While in ambushment close they lay on land.

6

As Hector and Aeneas did by fire  
Assault the Greekish flee, with hardie fight,  
So saw I two, whose hearts to fame aspire,  
(One Alexander, tother Hector hight)  
Assault their foes, and driue them to retire,  
Vnto their trenches, nay within them quite,  
But one of them returned thence full hard,  
The tother of returning cleane was bard.

7

For Feruffine scapt, Cantelmo stayd,  
O Duke of Sore, what sore griefe didst thou find,  
To see thy noble sonne so foule betrayd,  
Among a thousand blades left there behind?  
His naked necke on side of gally layd,  
And chopped off: now surely in my mind,  
When that same bloudie stroke his necke smit off,  
You felt like stroke eu'n with the sight thereof.

Slauonian

*The first part of  
this booke so the  
sense is, as  
it were an Epi-  
taph on Cantel-  
mus.*

*Paulus To  
est  
his name, and  
further saith, that  
Cantelmus horse  
carried him into  
danger against  
his will, but yet  
he reproves their  
crueltie that put  
him to death, say-  
ing it was done,  
Insignis Dalmata  
sanguis scutis*

*Looke in the Hi-  
story of this booke  
concerning this  
crueltie he com-  
plaines of.*



8

Slaunonian vile, where didst thou learne to know  
Such lawes of warre? within what Scythian land,  
Vie men to kill a prisoner taken so,  
That yeelds, and hath no weapon in his hand?  
Or was it such a grieuous sinne you trow,  
The foes of his deare country to withstand?  
Why hast thou Sunne, so long on this age shinde,  
That breeds of *Atrew* and *Thiefes* kinde?

Barbarian vile, that kild sweet a youth,  
To satisfie thy rancor and thy rage,  
So rare a youth, as confesse the truth,  
His match could none be found in this our age;  
Whose beautie might haue bred sufficient ruth,  
Fierce *Poliphemus* at last to asswage,  
But not fierce thee, more cruell and more fell,  
Any monster that in deserts dwell.

10

The valiant men did studie in time past,  
With clemencie their honors to increase  
And hate no longer then the fight did last,  
With victorie reuenge did euer cease.  
So *Bradamant*, of whom I told you last,  
The prisoners she had tane, did still release,  
And staid their horses when themselves were downe,  
And sent them backe againe into the towne.

11

And said them but her challenge to deliuer,  
Vnto *Rogero*, and to call him out,  
Who meant with speare in rest her answer giue her,  
Vnto her challenge that she sent so stout.  
Now when the other knights were all together,  
In presence of the kings, they cast a doubt,  
Who this should be, and then they aske *Ferraw*,  
That talkt with her, and her bare visage saw.

12

Sure (said *Ferraw*) it is not tene nor tother,  
Of those on whom before your thoughts were set;  
I tooke it first it was *Renaldos* brother,  
Who is in yeares a very youth as yet:  
But now I rather iudge it is another,  
For so much force is not in *Richardet*,  
I thinke it is his sister by her visage,  
Who I haue heard is like him much in visage.

13

She hath ere this of value had great fame,  
*Renaldo* and the *Pallas* in among,  
I must confesse I found it to my shame,  
Her, then her brothers to be farre more strong:  
*Rogero*, when he heard them her to name,  
Was guiltie straight that he had done her wrong,  
And blusht in countenance with bashfull grace,  
And oft his heart shot blood into his face.

14

Yea feare inuaded him, not feare of danger,  
For force he feared not of any wight,  
Of Turke nor Christen, countryman or stranger;  
The very cause of this his dolefull plight  
Was loue, for loue feares nothing more then anger,  
He doubts least she concei'd not of him right:  
Thus wauing thoughts his mind do both waies cary,  
If so he better were to go or tary.

15

The while *Marfisa* that was present there,  
And euer had a forward will to iust,  
Could now no longer from the same forbear,  
Though seeing some before her lie on dust.  
For all their fals did breed in her no feare,  
So much in her great value she did trust,  
Wherefore least good *Rogero* might preuent her,  
First she rides forth, and in the lists doth enter.

16

And mounted on her horse came swiftly running,  
Vnto the place where *Bradamant* did stay,  
With panting heart to wait *Rogeros* comming,  
With mind to take him prisoner if she may,  
She thinks how she might guide her staffe with cunning,  
As with her stroke do him least hurt she may: (ning,  
Thus commeth out *Marfisa*, nothing fearing,  
Vpon her loftie crest the Phenix bearing.

17

Or that thereby to boost her strength she ment,  
Of her rare strength, of which she tooke some pride,  
Or else thereby to note her chaste intent  
She had, a warlike virgine still to bide;  
But *Bradamant*, who first to meet her went,  
And not to be *Rogero* now espide,  
Did aske her name, and by her name she knew  
That this was she that made her loue vntrew.

*The device of the  
Phenix may be  
applied either to  
pride or chastity.*

18

Or to say better, whom she did surmise,  
To be the sole withholder of her deare,  
Her whom she hates, gainst whom her blood doth  
And minding now to make her buy it deare, (rise,  
With furie great and rage at her she flies,  
And that she may make all suspitions cleare,  
With couched speare she fiercely runneth on her,  
And meanes to kill her, or to die vpon her.

19

*Marfisa* was constrained with the stroke,  
To kille the ground as those before her had,  
Which to such rage her courage did prouoke,  
That with disdain she seemd as one halfe mad;  
Nor knowing how so great a foile to cloke,  
She drawes her sword with an intention bad,  
But *Bradamant* cry' th out with loftie hart,  
What dost thou traitor? thou my prisoner art.

20

And though I vsed curse to the rest,  
To vse it vnto thee I am not tide,  
Whose mind (as I haue heard) is eu'n a nest,  
Whercin is bred all villanie and pride:  
I looke how great waters rage and do not rest,  
When as the winds do strue against the tide,  
So rag'd *Marfisa* rather more then lesse,  
And for more hate could not a word expresse.

*Stimle.*

21

But hurles about her blade with all her force,  
Not caring what she strikes, nor where, nor how,  
Vpon the horseman or vpon the horse,  
Her rage in her no reason did allow:  
And *Bradamant* as void of all remorse,  
With mind to breake that, that refused to bow,  
Ranne at her with the speare that would not misse,  
And made her once againe the ground to kille.

Cc iiij



22

But once againe vpon her feet she getteth,  
And with her sword reuengement she intends,  
Each fall she hath, her furie sharper whetteth,  
Yet still she fals, and can haue none amends,  
Nor goldelance his wonted force forgetteth,  
For all it touches, to the ground it sends;  
Had not the speare bene (as it was) inchaunted,  
It could not so *Marfisa* force haue daunted.

23

Some of our men were hither come the while,  
I meane some of the Christen host, that lay  
Encamped neare the towne within a mile,  
So as the wals of Arlie see they may,  
And thinking (for her sex did them beguile)  
Some knight of theirs maintaine so great a fray,  
They thither came with will and with delight,  
To see so fierce and well maintaine a fight.

24

Whom when as *Agramant* from far espide,  
And thinks they came to bring their knight assistance  
He thought it best in wisdome to prouide,  
If they should offer force to make resistance;  
Wherefore he pointed some that of their side,  
May stand from that same place a little distance,  
Of this last crew *Rogero* was the first,  
With whom the damsell so to fight did thirst.

25

And seeing now how fierce the combat groweth,  
Betwixt these two, to whom he wisht none ill,  
Although in sundry kinds he fauord both,  
For one was loue, the tother bare good will;  
To suffer them to fight he was full loth,  
Although for honors sake he must be still,  
Else sure he could haue found it in his hart,  
To step betweene them, and the fray to part.

26

But they that with him from the citie came,  
And saw the Christen champion was so strong,  
Stept in betwixt her and the tother dame,  
And so withdrew *Marfisa* them among,  
Which act the other Christens did inflame,  
So that with mind to venge so foule a wrong,  
They stept in to: thus both sides cride alarme,  
And soone the skirmish waxed fresh and warme.

27

Such as before were armed, out do runne,  
They that vnarmed were, their armor take,  
And some runne out on foot, on horseback some,  
Each to his stander doth himselfe betake;  
The diuers sound of trumpet and of drum,  
That doth the horsemen, th' he footmen wake,  
But *Bradamant* is malcontent and wrath,  
To thinke *Marfisa* thus escaped ath.

28

Then lookt she wishly all about the place,  
To find out him that caused all her care,  
At last she knew him, though not by his face,  
Yet by the argent Eagle that he bare,  
And viewing well his person and good grace,  
His goodly stature and his feature rare,  
She rag'd to thinke another shoud possesse it,  
And in these secret words she doth expresse it.

29

Shall any other then that sweet lip kisse?  
And I in loue thereof stil mourne and pine?  
Shall any other then possesse my blisse:  
Shalt thou anothers be, if none of mine?  
No certes, rather then to suffer this,  
Thou by my hand shalt die, or I by thine,  
If in this life we shall be icyned neuer,  
Death onely be the mean to ioyn vs euer.

30

Although that thou shouldst fortune to kill,  
Thy death by right should pay my spirit,  
For lawes appoint, who guilefull do spill,  
Shall for reward the doom of death inherit;  
Yet still I shall sustaine the greater ill,  
For I should guiltlesse die, t thou by merit,  
I killing thee, kill one that hates me meere!  
Thou killing me, kilst one that 'oues thee deere.

31

Why shouldst not thou (my hand) be strong and bold,  
That by stroke his hard heart may be riuen?  
Who intoe sharpe wounds and manifold,  
In time of oues sweet peace and truce hath giuen,  
And doth eu'now with stonie heart behold  
The wofull state to which poore I am driuen,  
Heart now be stout to take thy iust reuenge,  
Let this one death thy thousand deaths auenge.

32

With that at him she runs; but first aloud,  
Defend thy selfe (*Rogero* false) she said,  
And think not thou shalt scape with spoiles so proud,  
Of heart subdued of a silly maid.  
*Rogero*, who to her himselfe had vowd,  
And to offend her greatly was afraid,  
Held vp his gantlet vnto her in token,  
That he with her desired to haue spoken.

33

He would her wrath with kind words haue appeased,  
And shewd her how the cause he brake his day,  
Was that with grievous wounds he lay diseased,  
Which forced him against his will to stay;  
But at this time she was so sore displeased,  
She would not hearken what he had to say,  
But with her speare in rest, on him she runneth,  
Who such vnkind encounter greatly shunneth.

34

But when he saw she was so rash and headie,  
And that her choler no so great did grow,  
That she was in her full eere alreadie,  
He puts his speare in rest, a aft for show,  
And forward sets, but when she was eu'n readie,  
Him to haue giu'n a sharpe disgracefull blow,  
(Or that it were that she eu'n the recanted,  
Or that her heart to harme him courage wante)

35

She bare her lance aloft quite ore his crest,  
And so of purpose that same course she mist,  
Yet so, as by the manner might be guest,  
She could haue hit him surer, had she list,  
And wrath and rage still boiling in her brest,  
To bend her force gainst him she did desist,  
But in that mood no little harme she workes,  
Vnto the other souldiers of the Turkes.

*Bradamant  
complains  
T'rope  
ie like  
Possunt  
alieris  
spesta  
Nec mea  
que modo di  
mea est.*

*She calls him  
perfidio Rogero,  
as Dido to A-  
neas.  
Diffimulare e-  
ssam spesasti  
per fide tantum  
posse nefas.*



36

In little time, she with her gilded lance  
Had caus'd three hundred men on ground to lie,  
So that the conquest to the part of France,  
Was thought to haue bene gained sole thereby:  
*Rogero* seeks her out, and last by chance,  
He speaks to her, and saith, my deare I die,  
But I may talke with you, what haue I done  
Alas, that you my conseruence should shunne?

37

As when the Soit wind with luke-warme blast,  
Doth breathe on hills where winter long had dwelt,  
Resolues the rocks ice that hung so fast,  
And all the new made mounts of snow doth melt:  
So with this gentle pyre, though spoke in haste,  
The damsell such an inward motion felt,  
That sodainly her hardned heart did soften,  
As vnto women kind it chanceth often.

38

Yet answer made she none, but held her  
She onely turned *Rabican* aside,  
And hastning to get out of that same preise,  
She beckned him that after her he  
Thus went she thence, with mind inclin'd to peace,  
Vnto a valley, where on either side,  
A groue of *Cypres* so eu'n set was scene,  
As if they all of one selte stampe had beene.

39

Amid this groue a goodly sepulture  
Was built, which these faire *Cypres* trees did shade,  
Of *Porphyrie* and marble white and pure,  
And faire engraun, to shew why it was made;  
But of the tombe she tooke no care nor cure,  
But there expected in the open glade,  
Vntill *Rogero* hauing made good hast,  
Approcht the wood and damsel at the last.

40

Put of *Marfisa* now I must you tell,  
Who hauing got by this her horse againe,  
Her lostie heart with rancor great did swell,  
To be reueng'd of this foule sufferd staine,  
And seeing where she went, as it befell,  
And how *Rogero* followd her amaine,  
She little thinketh that it is for loue,  
But rather that they may the combat proue.

41

Wherefore to follow them she thinks it best,  
So as she came almost as neere as they,  
But what a tedious and velcome guest  
She seemd to both, one none coniecture may:  
Much sure it did the *Dordon* dame molest,  
Who sole to her *Rogeros* faults did lay,  
She deemd that to come thither nothing mou'd her,  
But that *Rogero* in ill sort had lou'd her.

42

And false, *Rogero* she againe doth name,  
And was it not enough false man, said she,  
That of thy falshood I should here by fame,  
But that I with these eyes the same should see?  
But sith I find thou dost thy actions frame,  
To driue me with vnkindnesses from thee,  
I am content to die, but ere I die yet,  
She that did cause it, dearly shall abuy it.

43

Thus as a *Viper* angrie and malicious,  
With mind indeed to do her best to kill  
Her, that was come in manner so suspitious,  
(Though she came more for wrath, the for goodwill)  
With gilded launce she giues a blow pernicious,  
That quite vnhorled her for all her skill;  
Backward *Marfisa* fell, and in the durt,  
Her beauer stucke, but had no further hurt.

44

Duke *Ammons* daughter that resolues to die,  
Or kill her so, so much her selfe forgetteth,  
That thinking to dispatch her by and by,  
Before her head out of the mire she getteth,  
The golden launce she will no farther trie, (teth,  
But throwes it downe, as wrath her courage whet-  
And to performe the feate, her sword she drawes,  
Therewith of feare to cut away the cause.

45

But ere she came so neare, *Marfisa* met her,  
Like one with rage, with spite and scorne halfe mad,  
To thinke that now againe she sped no better,  
And that a while before she sped so bad;  
So that *Rogero* could by no meanes let her  
From fighting, which to stop great will he had,  
But both of them with choler were so blinded,  
They fought like bedlem folk, and desprat minded.

46

They came vnto the halfe sword at the first,  
And with their rage forgetting rules of skill,  
Their ouermuch desire to do their worst,  
Was onely cause that they could do none ill;  
Their hearts were readie for despite to burst,  
And either purposing to die or kill,  
Did leaue her sword aside, in mind supposing,  
With stab to kill each other at the closing.

47

*Rogero* sunders them, and both intreateth,  
To pacifie themselues, but all in vaine,  
Then of their daggers he them both defeateth,  
And by perswasions mou'd them both againe;  
Sometime he speaketh faire, sometime he threateth,  
Except they wil at his request abstaine;  
But these viragoes wil not thoe desist,  
Though weapons want, they fight with feet and fist.

48

He steps betweene againe, and back he drawes,  
Now one, and then the tother by the sleeues,  
And makes them both against their wils to pause,  
At which *Marfisa* not a little greeues;  
Her selfe too greatly wronged in the cause,  
And him to be too partiall she beleues;  
Wherefore his friendship she doth quite disclaime,  
And open warres with him she doth proclaime.

49

And taking vp her sword, in termes most vile,  
She saith he playes the churlish villens part,  
And that he greatly doth himselfe beguile,  
To thinke her fight against her wil to part,  
She sweares she wil, within a little while,  
Of his owne folly make him feeble the smart;  
And that she wil henceforth so short him curbe,  
He shall not dare her combat to disturbe.

Cc iij

Simile.



50

Rogero still bare all her words as words,  
And sought by speech her to haue pacified;  
But seeing that it needs must come to swords,  
And that with blowes, not speeches she replied,  
No longer time to walking he affords,  
But to his weapon he himselfe applied,  
And being moued now with rightfull anger,  
To saue himselfe, he oft put her in danger.

51

But nere did spectacle breed more delight,  
In stately Rome or Athens so well learned,  
Then Bradamant did take to see this fight,  
In which she now apparently discerned,  
That of their loue she had not iudged right;  
Now iealousie, and all that it concerned,  
Suspition, feare, mistrust, and wrath, and franzie,  
Are of the sodaine quite put from her fancie.

52

And taking vp her sword, she stands not farre,  
With mind not yet awhile the fray to part,  
She thinkes in him she sees the God of warre,  
Such grace Rogero vld. such skill, such art:  
And tother seemd in that vnpleasant iarre,  
Some hellish furie, (so she playd her part)  
Yet true it is that he awhile forbare her,  
Nor did his worst, but did of purpose spare her.

53

He knew the secret vertue of his blade,  
Which he had tride in many battels well,  
That euermore a way and entrance made,  
Whose charme all charmed armes did far excell;  
Wherefore he doth not fiercely her inuade.  
With bloody blowes, nor fearfull thrusts and full,  
But flatling still he cauld his blowes to light,  
Till once he was of patience put out quite.

54

For once Marfisa, with intention shrowd,  
Strake with such furie at Rogeros beauer,  
That with that blow she very plainly showd,  
That to haue kild him she did her endeuer,  
Rogero with his argent Eagle trowd,  
From danger of the stroke himselfe to seuer,  
But though the shield brake not, gramercy charme,  
Yet vnderneath the shield it stound his arme.

55

It happie was Don Hectors shield was there,  
Else had she put him vnto further paine,  
Scarce could he now the massie target beare,  
Scarce now the siluer bird he could sustaine:  
Now he intends no longer to forbear,  
But hurleth out a foyne with force so maine,  
In rage with that late blow fierce and bitter,  
Wo vnto poore Marfisa, had it hit her.

56

I know not what good Angell did her keepe,  
The thrust mist her, and in a tree it strake,  
And enterd in the same a shaftman deepe,  
And on the sodaine all the hill did quake:  
A secret horror on them all did creepe,  
They see the hill, the trees and tombe to shake,  
Till from that sepulcher a voice proceeding,  
Spake vnto them, all humane voice exceeding:

*These two cities  
he names chiefly  
because by means  
of the store of  
learned men,  
they had many  
notable deuices  
presented on their  
stages and Thea-  
ters.*

*The like is in Vir-  
gil of Polidorus.  
Gemitus lachry-  
mabilis imo au-  
ditur tumulo &  
vox redita fer-  
tar ad aures.*

57

The voice to them with no small terror cride,  
File not your hands nor hearts with so great sin,  
It is a kind of cruell parracide,  
To seeke to kill, and be so neare of kin:  
Wherefore I charge you lay all hate aside,  
And marke my speech, and all containd therein,  
I say you both were gott'n of one feed,  
One wombe you bare, o'c brest y' u both did feed.

58

My deare Rogero, my Marfisa  
Let not the sister seeke to kill the brother,  
But learne of me some thit that touch you neare,  
Which former times in ignorance did smother;  
Your sire, Rogero hight, who nat same yeare,  
He gat you of dame Gallacell your mother,  
Was by your vncles of his life depriued,  
Who also your destruction thus contriued.

59

They put your mother in a steerlesse bote,  
Who was es then of you twaine great with child,  
And in th' Ocean wide they let her flote,  
There to aru'd or drown'd in waters wild:  
But lo how fortune holpe the lucklesse lot,  
And ere you yet were borne, vpon you smild,  
For why against all hope or expectation,  
Your mother made a happie nauigation.

60

And being safe arriu'd at Syrtee shore,  
There at one burden she brought forth both you,  
And then (as if she ought this world no more)  
Her blessed soule to Paradise vp flew;  
But there by hap (to God be thanks therefore)  
Was I at hand, and when the cause I knew,  
I did as much, ere I the place did leaue,  
As such a barren soile would giue me leaue.

61

Your mother then in dust of earth I lapt,  
(Our auncient mother) whereto all must go,  
And in my cloke your little selues I wapt,  
To seeke some meanes to nourish you, when  
A Lionesse that late had whelpt there hapt,  
To come in fight while I went to and fro,  
Her did I make to leaue her proper whelpes,  
And giue you sucke, then wanting other helpes.

62

Ten months and ten in Forrests wilde and moorish,  
The Lions tets you were to sucke,  
I after learnd with wild flesh you to nourish,  
Such as I could, of Beas or Stag and Bucke;  
But when you now began in strength to flourish,  
One day while I was lacke, by euill lucke,  
A band of fierce Arabians comming thither,  
Wold haue conuaid you both from thence.

63

But thou Rogero when thou sawst them comming,  
Didst saue thy selfe from that mishap by flight,  
But thou Marfisa, not so swiftly running,  
Wert tane, and quickly carri'd out of sight,  
To fetch thee backe againe I wanted cunning,  
For which I foride many day and night,  
But as the losse of tone did make me sad,  
So of the tother greater care I had.

Sentence.



64

Ah my Rogero, thou thy selfe canst tell,  
If thine *Atlant* lou'd thee while he liued,  
I saw the starres some euill haps foretell,  
That thou shouldst haue which me not litle grieved:  
Yet I endeuord still, as thou knowst well,  
That by my meanes thou mightst haue bin relieved,  
But finding thee still contrary inclined,  
For very griefe at last I dide and pined.

65

But here I built this be afore I died,  
Where I for *Charon* you two should make this pray;  
And being dead, to *Charon* lowd I cried,  
To suffer in this wood ny ghost to stray,  
Vntill this sight, to me foresignified,  
Should happen, which was done this present day,  
Now shall my soule from hence depart in peace,  
Now *Bradamant* thy ielousie may cease.

*Charon is he who  
keeps faine  
man*

66

Thus said the voice, and left them all  
With wonder great, and strangenesse of the case,  
And when a while each had on other gazed,  
They met in kindest manner, and embraced;  
Nor *Bradamant* her selfe, who erst was crazed  
With ielousie, now tooke it in disgrace,  
To see her spouse, when he most kindly kist her,  
Now well assured that she was his sister.

67

Thus they agreed at last, and either twin,  
Do call to mind some acts of childish yeares,  
What they had sayd and done, where they had bin,  
Which eu'n with tender heart did moue their teares;  
At last the word by brother doth begin  
To tell *Marfisa* what great loue he beares  
To *Bradamant*, whom he to wed intends,  
And so at length he made them faithfull friends.

68

Then all parts pacified so well at length,  
*Marfisa* doth intreate her noble brother,  
To tell to her the storie more at length,  
Of that so strange exiling of her mother,  
And if their fire were flaine by fraud or strength,  
And who it was that wrought the tone or tother,  
For sure (said she) I thinke I neuer heard it,  
Or childishnesse did make me not regard it.

69

*Rogero* tels her, how of Troian race,  
From *Hector* they be line descended,  
By meanes *Astianax* (of pecciall grace,  
That scapt *Vlysses* and the mares intended,  
Did leaue a child of like yeares in his place)  
And from that coutry to the sea descended,  
And came to Sicill after trauell long,  
And tooke *Melina*, and grew very strong.

*Astianax, some  
write was killed  
by Vlysses; of this  
tooke the story  
and the Alcyon*

70

His offspring still increasing in renowne,  
Calabria rul'd in part, and thence to Phare,  
And came at last to dwell in Mars his towne,  
And many a noble Emperour and rare,  
In stately Rome haue worne th' Imperiall crowne,  
Of such as from this stocke descended are,  
From *Constance* and from *Constantine* accounting,  
To *Pepin* and his sonne, them all surmounting.

*Rome called the  
city of Mars.*

71

*Rogero* first, and *Imbaron* of these,  
*Rouus*, *Rambaldus*, and *Rogero* againe,  
Of whom (as *Atlant* told) I au'd from the seas,  
Our mother by the shore brought forth vs twaine,  
Their acts in auncient stories they that please  
To looke, may find them there recorded plaine;  
Then tels he how there came king *Agolant*,  
With *Almont*, and the fire of *Agramant*.

72

How that Kings daughter, a most noble maid,  
In feates of armes to valorous did proue,  
That diuers *Palladines* she ouerlaid,  
And then with that *Rogero* fell in loue,  
And of her fathers anger not afraid,  
Did match in Christen state, as did behoue,  
How after this one *Beltram* sought by treason,  
Incestuous loue of her without all reason.

73

And for that cause his brothers and his fire,  
And his owne native soile he did betray,  
And open *Risa* at his foes desire;  
Which being tane, and seized on as a pray,  
Fierce *Agolant* and his inflamd with ire,  
Tooke *Gallacell* our mother where she lay,  
Six months with child, and put her in a bote,  
And in the Ocean wide they let her flote.

*In this narration  
my Author fol-  
lows not any true  
story, but a work  
invented almost,  
which notwithstanding  
some credite,  
though not  
much.*

*Risa is a citie of  
good importance  
in the country of  
Rhegium, neare  
mount Appen-  
ninus.*

74

*Marfisa* all this while with glad some cheare,  
Vnto her new knowne brothers tale attended,  
And in her mind reioyced much to heare,  
That of so noble house she was descended,  
From which *Mongrana* came, as doth appeare,  
And that of *Clarimount* so much commended,  
Which houses both, long in great fame had flouri-  
For diuers noble persons they had nourished. shee,

75

But when of *Agramant* she heard him say,  
How both his grandfire, vncke, and some other,  
Consented had their father to betray,  
And in so cruell sort to vse their mother,  
She could not suffer any longer stay,  
But breaking off his tale, said noble brother,  
(With your good fauor) you haue too much wrong  
To leaue your father vntreueng'd so long.

76

If not in *Almont* nor *Traianos* blood,  
You can auenge this ill sith they be gone,  
Yet ought you to auenge it on their brood;  
Liue you, and let you *Agramant* alone?  
This blot, except it quietly be withstood,  
Will shame you euer, if it once be knowne,  
That he that did this wrong not onely liueth,  
But that to you he entertainment giueth.

77

But for my part (said she) by Christ I vow,  
(Whom as my father did, to serue I will)  
That I will not leaue armes, till I know how  
To venge my fathers and my mothers ill;  
And much I shall lament, and do eu'n now,  
If in that pagan campe you tarry still,  
Or euer should be scene therein hereafter,  
Except it were to worke their harme and slaughter.



78

Oh how did *Bradamant* at this reioyce,  
 Aduising him to follow that direction,  
 And to giue eare vnto his sisters voice,  
 To leaue so vile a place, and base subiection,  
 And cleaue to *Charles* as to the better choice,  
 Who gladly would receiue him in protection,  
 Of which (she said) one sure signe she did gather,  
 She heard him often so extoll his father.

79

*Rogero* answers thus with great regard,  
 (My deare) to haue done this at first I ought,  
 But then indeed the troth I had not hard,  
 Whereby I might my dutie haue bin taught:  
 Now sith that *Agramant* hath me prefard,  
 If his destruction should by me be sought,  
 That am his seruant and a daily waitor,  
 The world might iustly deeme I were a traitor.

80

But this my meaning was, and so it is,  
 To find some meanes I may (with honor) part,  
 Which when I haue, then sure I will not misse,  
 To come and to requite your great desert;  
 And that (quoth he) I had performd ere this,  
 Saue that a cause (of which I felt the smart)  
 Enforst my stay, the wounds the Tartar gaue me,  
 So as my friends had much to do to saue me.

81

As she knowes well that holpe me at my need,  
 And eu'ry day did sit by my beds side:  
 Thus much he said, but they that tooke good hee  
 To all he said, in earnest sort replide,  
 Howbeit at the last it was agreed,  
 That he so long with *Agramant* should bide,  
 Till he some honorable-cause might find,  
 To leaue his master and to chang<sup>u</sup> his mind.

82

Well (quoth *Marfisa*) if he need will go,  
 Then let him go, but I will you ass<sup>e</sup>,  
 That shortly I will vse the matter so,  
 He shall not long with *Agramant* endure:  
 This said she vnto *Bradamant*, but tho  
 She told not how she would the same procure:  
 Thus for that time *Rogero* brake this parlie,  
 And turnd his horse to turne againe to Arlie.

83

When lo a sodaine crie to heare,  
 Proceeding from the next adioyning vale,  
 The voice did seeme, when they approached neare,  
 To be some damfels that for helpe did call:  
 But who it was, hereafter you shall heare,  
 For now of force I must cut off my tale,  
 And pray you my abruptnesse to excuse,  
 For in the next you shall heare further newes.

## Morall.

*In the beginning of this Canto, he speakes against crueltie, the most vnnoble thing that can be vsed in peace or warre: for though warre of it selfe is and must needs be bloody in the heate thereof, yet hath it euer bene detested and contrary to all warlike discipline, to kill those that haue no weapon in hand. Wherefore noble Princes will euer make faire warres, as Pirthus said in Ennius:*

Quorum virtuti belli fortuna pepercit:  
 Horundem me libertati parcere certum est.  
 Whose life the fortune of the warres doth saue,  
 Frankly I graunt that they their freedome haue.

*Crueltie euer proceeds from a vile mind, and often from a cowardly heart, that haue nothing in their minds nor mouthes but Mortui non mordent, which beside it is vnchristen, is also false: for the Scripture saith, The blood of Abel cried for vengeance; and it is a better approoued prouerbe in England, blood will haue blood.*

*In Bradamant we further note the bad effects of ielousie. In Rogero, that after his long forbearance, at last thought to be reneged on Marfisa, we may see that La patientia fit furor: Patience prouoked turnes to furie.*

## Historie.

*Cantelmus whose death he so much bewailed, was taken in an ambushment by the Venetian armie, hauing very courageously sallied out (though Iouius writes it was against his wil) with another companion of his, who scaped very hardly. Cantelmus had his head chopt off on the side of a galley in sight of his father, against which crueltie Ariosto iustly inueyeth. Astianax sonne of Hector (as the most credible authors write) was throwne downe from a high towre by Vlysses, who in his bloudie pollicie thought good that none of the race of Priamus should be left aline: but my author here, by Poeticall licence (for I know no historicall ground of it) saith that he was saued, and a boy put in his steed; and that thence (forsooth) are descended many houses of great account. But this is not credible, and the president thereof is perillous, as I will shew in the Allusion.*

## Allegoric.

*By Atlants parting the fray betweene the brother and sister, we may in Allegoricall sence vnderstand, that when diuers that are neare of kin fall in variance, there is nothing so auailable for reconciling of them, as the memory of some of their worthy auncestors, which in well disposed minds will stirre a great reuerence, and be a strong motive vnto them to giue ouer their vnnaturall contentions.*

## Allusion.

*Concerning the sawing of Astianax, it puts me in mind of one or two perillous examples recorded in our Chronicles, of the like deuice of one Perkin Warbecke, who fained himselfe to be Richard the younger sonne of Edward the fourth, that was murdered in the Tower. But what a trouble grew by that puppet for a time, may there be seen, which the Chronicles set out very largely.*

Here end the annotations vpon the xxxvj booke.







## THE ARGUMENT.

*Rogero with his sister and his spouse,  
Find Ullanie halfe stript and strangely used.  
Straight each of them, but chiefe Marfisa vomes  
To be aueng'd on him that her misused:  
She heares the law that women none allowes;  
She finds the man that hath the sexe refused:  
She plagues the tyrant, for his proud behauiour,  
And makes another law in womer* *and so.*

*The praise of  
women.*



**I** *worthie Ladies would  
but take such paine,  
In studies that immortal  
glorie raise,  
As they do often take in  
matters vaine,  
Deferuing none at all, or  
little praise,  
Which notwithstanding  
that they might obtain,*

*They haue employed many nights and dayes;  
To haue thereby some trifling want supplied,  
That niggard nature had to them denied.*

2

*And further, if they could with their owne pen,  
Set forth the worthie praise of their owne kind,  
And not to be beholding vnto men,  
Whom hate and enuie often so doth blind,  
To make vs heare the good but now and then,  
But eu'rie place full of their ill we find;  
Then sure I iudge, their praises would be such,  
As hardly men should haue attained to much.*

3

*For many writers do not onely arrue,  
Too highly to extoll our sexes fame.  
But that they thinke they must withall contriue,  
To publish womens blemish and their blame;  
As fearing haply, lest they might arrue,  
By their most due desert, to greater name;  
And so they might thereby obscure our praise,  
As doth a cloud the Sunnes bright shining rayes.*

4

*But yet, for all such sparing pens do write,  
Or lauish tongues can speake in their disgrace,*

*Enforcing eu'rie ill report for spite,  
That may their credits slander and deface,  
We still shall find their glorie shining bright,  
We still shall see, it keepes a worthie place,  
Though wanting of that height the greater part,  
To which it should attaine to by desert,*

5

*Harpalicé and Thomeris beside,  
With those that Turnus did and Hector ayd,  
Besides that dame that in an Oxes hide.  
The first foundation offaire Carthage layd,  
Zenobia eke, and she that quayld the pride  
Of Assur, and both Inde and Pertia trayd:  
I say there haue bin many more then these,  
That haue bin famous both by land and seas.*

*Iooke in the  
Hystorie.*

6

*Nor only Rome and Greece haue bred such store,  
Of faithfull matrons, chaste, and stout, and wise,  
But all the world beside some lesse, some more,  
From whence it sets, where the Sun doth rise:  
Though now their names oblcured are so fore.  
That few or none are laid before our eyes:  
And all because that they in those dayes wrate.  
Were enuious, and false, and full of hate.*

7

*Yet cease not Ladies, ye that vertue loue,  
To follow that your course, and so good way,  
And let not feare your minds from it remoue,  
That your great fame hereafter may decay;  
For true it is, as we do daylie proue,  
No good nor ill can still stand at a stay;  
Though writers in time past were not your friends,  
The present time shall make you large amends.*

*Sentence.*



8

The worthie writers of this present time,  
 Haue let your worthie praises so to vew,  
 Some in graue prose, and some in learned rime,  
 As none shall need this want hereafter rew:  
 And though they were infected with this crime,  
 Yet in this age, so learn'd are some of you,  
 So well acquainted with the noble mutes,  
 You could yo selues remedie such abuses.

9

And if I should rec the names of those,  
 That by the writers of our times are praisd,  
 Or that themselues haue wrote in verse or prose,  
 And haue their owne and others glorie raild,  
 As I might please some few, so I suppose,  
 I might be blam'd of others, and dispraisd,  
 Or in omitting some, to do them wrong,  
 Or reckning all, too tedious wax and long.

10

Shall I then all omit that were not w  
 that to please them all I do desire.  
 Then will I chuse some one, that doth excell  
 The rest so farre, as none may dare enuie her;  
 Whose name doth in such height of honor dwell,  
 As hard it is, for any to come nye her,  
 Whose learned pen such priuilege can giue,  
 As it can make eu'n those are dead to liue.

11

For eu'n as *Phœbus* shines on eu'rie star,  
 Yet on his sister casts his fairest light,  
 So eloquence and grace ay shining are,  
 Much more on her, then any other wight,  
 And maketh her to passe the rest as farre,  
 As *Phœbé* doth the other stars in night,  
 Her light so splendent is, and so diuine,  
 As makes another *Sunne* on earth to shine.

12

*She is the  
allusion.*

*Vittoria* is her name, a most fit name,  
 For one in triumphs borne, in triumphs bred,  
 That passeth *Artimesia* in the fame  
 Of doing honor to her husband ded;  
 For though she did erect a wondrous frame,  
 For her *Mausoleo*, with a *Pyramid*,  
 Yet which is more? to lay the dead in graue,  
 Or else from death, with learned pen to saue?

13

If *Laodamie*, and if *Brutus* wife,  
*Argia*, *Arria*, and *Enachie* chaste,  
 Be to be prayesd, as they are so rife,  
 Because when as their hands dayes were past,  
 They willingly forlooke this mortal life:  
 Then in what height must she of right be plaste?  
 That such a gift vnto her spouse doth giue,  
 That being dead, she still doth make him liue.

14

*Alexander on  
ed Achilles, be-  
cause he had such  
a praiser of  
himself*

And if the great *Macedon* enuie bare,  
 Vnto *Achilles*, for *Meonian* Lyre,  
 Much more to noble *Francis* of *Pescare*,  
 He would haue borne, whole praise is founded hyre;  
 By such a wife, so vertuous, chaste, and rare  
 As eu'n thy soule it selfe could not desire,  
 A louder trumpe thy prayes out to found,  
 Sith hardly can a match to this be found.

15

But to conclude both these and others prayse,  
 That I may follow on my present storie,  
 I say that both in these and former dayes,  
 Faire dames haue merited great fame and glorie;  
 Which though by writers enuie much decayes,  
 Yet need you not therefore now to be forie,  
 Because amongst vs all it is intended,  
 That this foule fault hereafter shalbe mended.

16

Now of *Marfisa* and of *Bradamant*,  
 I meane to tell, that still were so victorious,  
 As both my voice too faint, and skill too scant  
 Would be, to counr their famous deeds & glorious;  
 Yet shall good will so farre supply my want,  
 As I will reckon those were most notorious,  
 And were my might agreeing to my mind,  
 I would deserue as well of all their kind.

17

If you remember, I declared erst,  
 How good *Rogero* purpold to returne,  
 And how he heard the sound I then reherst,  
 Of some that seemed wofully to mourne;  
 Which wayling to his mind with pittie pierst,  
 As he a while his iourney did adiourne,  
 Both that to know the parties he desired,  
 And ment to succour them, if cause required.

18

With him those dames the noble cosins went,  
 And when they nearer came vnto the place,  
 They saw three damfels wofully lament,  
 Appareld strangely and in sorie case,  
 Their clothing all, had bene clipt of and rent,  
 Vp to their nauels, to their foule disgrace,  
 They sitting on the ground and durst not rise,  
 To hide their secret parts from strangers eyes.

*He makes them  
cosins though ve-  
ry far of, which  
we count indeed  
the noblest kin-  
red, though not  
the kindest.*

19

As *Vulcan* sonne (by *Pallas* pointment nurst)  
 Whom (without mother) got of earth he had,  
 (For whom *Aglaur* was plagu'd, because she durst,  
 Looke on him when the Goddesse had forbad)  
 Sat in a coach (by him deuised furt)  
 To hide his leggs, that were deformd and bad:  
 So sat the wofull maids their secrets hiding,  
 Scarfe from the ground, to lift their looks abiding.

*Erichonius son  
of Vulcan, deuise-  
d a coach to  
hide his deformed  
red legges which  
were like serpents.  
Aglaur iooke  
the Table.*

20

The foule prospect, did with great wrath inflame,  
 The worthie dames when they did plaine it vew,  
 And in the maids behalfs, they blusht for shame,  
 As do in *Pestus* gardens roses new:  
 But *Bradamant*, when s more neare she came,  
 Was grieved more, for one of them she knew,  
 Whose name was *Illanie*, that since a while,  
 Was vnto France sent from the Island Ile.

*Pestus g  
are as a Cajus,  
called in Luca-  
nia, and beare  
roses twise in the  
yeare.*

21

She also knew both tother in effect,  
 For she had me them traouling on that cost,  
 But yet her speech she chiefly did direct,  
 To *Illany*, whom she regarded most;  
 And askt her what vile wight did so neglect  
 All law, and had ah humane nature lost,  
 As that without remorse he could abide,  
 To leaue that bare, that nature seeks to hide

D d



22

Poore *Vllany*, that both by speech and fight,  
The worthie damsell *Bradament* did know,  
To be a Ladie, whom she saw last night,  
To giue three Princes such an ouerthrow;  
When first a while she lobbod had and fight,  
The manner and the matter plaine doth show,  
How people neare that place, did ill intreat them,  
And clippe their cloths, and also whip and beat them

23

Fast by (said she) the Castle you may see,  
Where they do keepe, that vs so ill did vse,  
As for the shield of gold and Princes three,  
That came to win it, she could tell no newes:  
We onely ment to trudge on foote (said she)  
To make complaint of those did vs abuse,  
Vnto the noble Christen Emp'rour *Charles*,  
Who punish will I trust such lawlesse carles.

24

Braue *Bradament* and stout *Marfisa* longs,  
To go immediatly vnto this place,  
And be aueng'd on such enormous wrongs,  
Done as they deeme, to all the sexe disgrace:  
*Rogero* eke, that knows well what belongs,  
Vnto the law of knight-hood, in such case,  
(To succour all that are by wrong oppressd,  
But chieflie women) goes without request.

25

*Looke in the Allegorie of the application of this.* With one consent, they all put off their bases,  
Which seru'd the maidens verie fit to hide,  
The secret parts, of those same priuie places,  
That modestie to show cannot abide.  
Then *Bradament* straightway behind her places,  
Faile *Vllany*, and makes her so to ride,  
*Marfisa* and *Rogero* take the paine,  
Behind themselves, to place the other twaine.

26

*Here begins the tale of Marganor that made the law against women.* The dame of Dordon led them all the way,  
The tother two do follow with great hast,  
But *Vllany* shewd where the Cattle lay,  
To which they many a hill and valley past.  
But now so much was spent of that same day,  
That they were quite benighted at the last,  
At night to take a village they were glad,  
Where they good meat, good drinke, good lodging

27

But when to looke about them they began,  
They none could see but women in the place,  
The women drest, brought all, and not a man,  
In all the village that did show his face:  
Among themselves, they the matter scan,  
And much they mused at so strange a case,  
Among so many, fayre, foule, young, and old,  
As there they saw, not one man to behold.

28

*Ia sons men were called Argonauts, because they went in a ship called Argo.* I thinke that *Iason* neuer marueld more,  
Nor those his *Argonauts*, that with him came,  
Then when they first arriu'd at *Lemnos* shore,  
Where they found none but women void of shame,  
That had their fires, and brethren slaine before,  
And did a common wealth of women frame:  
Then did *Rogero* with the Ladies wonder,  
To see no men, but women such a number.

29

Wherefore (when first they had in seemly sort,  
Prouided raiment for the damselfs three,  
If not so sumptuous, certes not so short,  
But to conceale that which men should not see)  
Then they desir'd some dweller there, report  
To them, what might the cause and reason be,  
Why in this towne there were allowd no men,  
And in this sort the woman answerd thus,

30

This order at the which you seeme to wonder,  
Was by a tyrant pointed for our paine,  
A tyrant, whose subiection we are vnder,  
Who by his proclamation doth ordaine,  
From mothers sonnes, frō husbands wiues to sunder;  
And in such hard exile we must remaine,  
And suffer not by merit, but by force,  
From our deare spoules, such a long diuorce.

31

Thise haue with winter bene decaued,  
Since we haue bene into this place confind,  
Of husbands, fathers, and of sonnes bereaued,  
So sore the tyrant hateth all our kinde;  
And if that any chance to be perceaued,  
(As some perhaps there be, that are so kinde)  
To come but once to looke vpon his wife,  
The man and woman both, shall loote their life.

32

The lawlesse wretch, that makes this cruell law,  
Dwels two leagues hence, and is of such behauiour,  
As from his purpose no man can him draw,  
How much so euer he be in his fauour;  
He doth all women from his land withdraw,  
As if he were infected with their fauour,  
He is so fierce, so sturdie, and so strong,  
That none dare once protect, whom he will wrong.

33

And which is strange, he vseth strangers worst,  
If any happen to his house arriue,  
(It seems he hath of womens blood some thirst)  
For though he let them part from thence aliue,  
Yet first with whipping, and with vlage curst,  
He doth their torment, and reproch contriue:  
Wherefore if you your safeties do regard,  
I wish you not to trauell thither-ward,

34

At this *Marfisa* and the Dordon dame,  
Were much incensd, and did desire to know,  
How he was cald, and whence his furie came,  
That made him first to take a madnes grow:  
The woman maketh answer thus, his name  
Is *Marganor*, and if you please he show  
The whole discourse: to this they all agreed,  
And she then on her tale, did thus proceed.

35

This *Marganor*, that makes full many weepe,  
Was bloodie from his birth by disposition,  
But yet a while he did dissemble deepe,  
That of the same there was but some suspicion;  
His sonnes did make him in the cloister keepe,  
Because they were of contrarie condition,  
Both boutheous, frank, & curteous, of good qualitie,  
Of strangers louers and of hospitalitie.



36  
Faire dames and knights that hapt to passe this way,  
Were still by them so frendly entertained,  
That by such kind of curteous vlage, thay  
The loue and praise of eu'rie one had gained;  
Their honors also farther to display,  
The sacred right of knight hood they obtained;  
Both stout, both strong, comly and of good stature,  
Not wanting ornaments of art or nature.

37  
*Cylandro* and *Tanacro* nam'd they are,  
And long ey liu'd with no dishonor stained,  
And longer had, if they had bene so ware,  
As not in *Cupids* snares to haue bene trained;  
This foolish passion soyld all their welfare,  
The passion men call loue, this them constrained,  
To change the worthie course they had begonne,  
And do that by the which they were vndonne.

38  
It hapend that there thither came  
Belonging to this Emperour of Grece,  
Who brought with him a Ladie faire and bright,  
Of good behauour, and a louely peece.  
With whom *Cylandro* fell in loue that night,  
And fully bent of her to haue a fleece,  
He thought her beautie so posselt his hart,  
That he should surely dye, if she depart.

39  
And, for he deemd it labour lost to pray,  
To open force he doth himselfe dispose,  
And secretly all armd, vnto the way  
Where tother needs must passe, alore he goes,  
And seeing him he would no longer stay,  
But trusting to his manhood, comes to bloes,  
Not seeking vantage, but with lance to lance,  
He minds to trie of fight the doubtfull chance.

40  
Not thinking though but with his suer running,  
To beat him downe, and beare away his wife,  
But this same knight, that in this art was cunning,  
Did pierce his shield, and rest him of his life:  
The newes hereof vnto his father coming,  
Fild all the court with plaints and sorows rife;  
At last, when long the time had bene deferred,  
By his great ancestors they him interred,

41  
Nor did this foule mishap and ill successe,  
Make *Marganor* to misgish ought his port,  
*Tanacro* still did courtesie professe,  
To strangers all, and wld them in good sort:  
But loe, it chanc't within a yeare and lesse,  
A noble Baron thither did resort,  
A comely man of personage to see,  
With him a Ladie faire as faire might be.

42  
And to her beautie her behauour fitted,  
Her looks are modest, manners sober are,  
Her words are ware, and shew her sharply witted;  
Likewise her Lord, himselfe most comely bare,  
As fit to whom the charge should be committed,  
Of one in shape and qualities so rare.  
He hight *Olindro*, Lord of Longailla,  
The louely Lady named was *Drusilla*.

43  
No lesse *Tenacro* doted on this Dame,  
Then had his brother done on that before,  
But that foule end to which his brother came,  
Made him more warie, though not honest more;  
By former good report that bred him fame,  
And all his passed praise, he sets no store:  
Be fame, be vertue troden in the dust,  
So he may but fulfill his present lust.

44  
Thus caring onely to auoyd the danger,  
In which he saw before his brother dyde,  
He secretly that night way-laid the stranger,  
There as he knew next day he needs must ride;  
Not meaning his owne person to endanger;  
In fine, the Baron that to saue his bride,  
Did stoutly giue and take full many a wound,  
At last they left foule murderd on the ground.

45  
*Drusilla* seeing her deare *Olindro* ded,  
In deadly sound vnto the ground she sanke,  
But thence in curteous sort the men her led,  
Who to haue kild her, she would giue more thanks;  
But grieve in her such will to die had bred,  
That wilfully she leapt downe from a banke,  
To kill her selfe, but poore soule could not dy,  
But all her head and face was bruid thereby.

46  
*Tanacro* gets some surgeons and Phisicians,  
To looke vnto her health, and hurts to cure,  
He causeth her to heare most rare musicions,  
To cheare her heart, and solace to procure:  
He maketh great brags of her so chaste conditions,  
With mind by marriage to make her sure;  
He thinks a woman of so vertuous life,  
Must not be termed a lemmian, but a wife.

47  
To marrie her he inwardly intends,  
This outwardly in shew he doth make knowne,  
And euermore he highly her commends;  
And though her griete was by his doings growne,  
He saith he will for this make large amends,  
And that he will her loue, and be her owne:  
But still the more that on that point he grateth,  
The more in heart she him detests and hateth.

48  
But yet her hate did not so blind her wit,  
But that to keepe it close she tooke good heed;  
She knew full well she must dissemble it,  
If she will be reuengd of him indeed:  
Wherefore vntill the time may serue her fit,  
She seemes vnto his meaning halfe agreed,  
And did in shew the same so smoothly carrie,  
That lastly she consented him to marrie.

49  
Sweet peace and loue were written in her eyes,  
Reuenge and hate were in her heart engraued,  
To kill him, in her thought she doth deuise,  
When with most kindnesse she her selfe behaues:  
He needs must die, needs die in any wise,  
But eu'n thus long to liue of God she craued:  
How can I better end my life (she teth)  
Then in reuenging my deare husbands dethe  
D d ij



50

Thus seeming to forget all former wrong,  
 She chearfully expects the wedding day,  
 As though that she did for this marriage long,  
 And so she did, although another way,  
 She shortens all that might the time prolong,  
 And paints her selfe, and tricks her trim and gay:  
 She onely crau'd thus much for Christ his passion,  
 She might be marry'd of her country fashion.

51

Not that her speech herein indeed was trew,  
 That such the custome was as she pretended,  
 But she doth mind to forge a custome new,  
 With trust assuredly to be reuenged  
 On him, that her beloued husband slew;  
 Reuenge, reuenge was all that she intended:  
 She pray' th, she might obserue her countrie guise,  
 Which in this sort, she doth to them deuise.

52

The widdow that to marrie new intends,  
 According as our countrie law allows,  
 Must first appeale the ghost whom she offends,  
 I meane (saith she) that of her former spouse,  
 And make vnto his spirit some amends,  
 By Dirges, trentals, masses, pray'rs, and vows,  
 In that same Church, whereas his bones be resting,  
 Then may she marrie new, without molesting.

53

But when of her new spouse she takes the ring,  
 The Priest in sight of all that stand about,  
 Of hallowd wine a bottle then must bring,  
 And in the Chalice he must powre it out;  
 Then ouer it he must both say and sing,  
 Effectual prayrs, and Psalmes, and hymnes deuout,  
 Then must the woman take it of the Vicker,  
 And drinke vnto her spouse the blessed licker.

54

*Tanacro* liketh well of this her motion,  
 Respecting little how much it imported,  
 To let her marrie with so strange deuotion,  
 He onely wisht to haue the season shorted;  
 And not mistrusting that same hallowd potion,  
 To cut of all delays he her exhorted,  
 Each makes like hast, though sundry in construction,  
 He to her wedding, she to his destruction.

55

Among her women seruants that were theare,  
*Drusilla* had one old ilfauord trot,  
 She calleth her, and bad her in her eare,  
 That some strong sodaine poyson may be got,  
 You know (said she) to get how and wheare,  
 Conuay it safe into some pretie pot,  
 For I (quoth she) haue found the way and skill,  
 The wicked sonne of *Marganor* to kill.

56

And doubt not, I know how to saue vs both,  
 As I will let thee know at better leasure,  
 The woman doth the feat though seeming loth,  
 Saue onely that it was her mistres pleasure:  
 Then for a cup of Candie wine goth,  
 And mingles this and that in so due measure,  
 As made it with but little alteration,  
 Not sowre in tast, yet sure in operation.

57

Now came *Drusilla* on the wedding day,  
 With gorgeous gowns and costly iewels deckt,  
 There where *Olindros* corps intombd lay,  
 Raide high on collumns as she did direct:  
 The Priest began the solemne Masse to say,  
 Towhich came great resort, without suspect,  
 And *Marganor* himselfe now most contenting,  
 Came with his son and frends the place frequenting

58

When all the solemne rites to end were brought,  
 Then in a cup of masse gold and fine,  
 The Priest powrd out, as she before had taught,  
 The curst poyson, with the blessed wine;  
 She soberly drinks a conuenient draught,  
 Inough to do the feat she did designe,  
 Then to *Tanacro* with a louely cheare,  
 She gaue it, who supt v p the chalice cleare.

59

And rendring chalice to the Frire,  
 He thought i open arms he to embrace.  
 But then she to daynly began retire,  
 Then her sweet looks, and words so full of grace,  
 Were gone, her eyes did seeme to flame like fire  
 Then wrath and spite were written in her face,  
 She cries with grisly looke, and voice vnpleasant,  
 Auaunt, and touch not me thou traitor peasant.

60

Thoughtst thou of me solace to haue and sport,  
 And bring me cause of torment, teares, and woe,  
 No, now I trow that I haue cut thee short,  
 That drinke was poyson, if you do not know:  
 But ah this death is of too gentle sort,  
 And I too noble hangman am I trow,  
 A hangman ought with halter stop thy breath,  
 This was for thee, too honorable death.

61

My onely sorrow is that ere I dyde,  
 My sacrifice was not in full perfection,  
 And that thy wicked fire and more beside,  
 Did not with thee, tast of that strong confection:  
 But pardon me (my deare dead spouse) she cride,  
 If I haue sayld for fault of good direction,  
 If I perhaps haue not done all I should do,  
 Yet sure I haue performed all I could do.

62

And looke what I do want in all or part,  
 In working him torture condigne, and shame,  
 I hope the world to come, with greater smart,  
 Will pay it him, and I shall the same,  
 Thus much she said, and then with chearfull hart,  
 Still calling on her former spouse name,  
 Take here in worth (said she) this sacrifice,  
 That thy poore wife did for thy sake deuise.

63

And of our Lord for me a place obtaine,  
 In Paradise, with thy most blessed spirit,  
 And if he say that none must there remaine,  
 But they that by good works the same inherit;  
 Tell him I haue a cruell tyrant slaine,  
 Of tyrants death I bring with me the merit;  
 To kill a tyrant, what can be more glorious,  
 Or in the sight of God more meritorious?

*Drusilla's speech  
 as her death.*



64

*uid in the death  
secret.  
mens ne  
ocum  
neque respicit.*

Thus much she said, and fell dead therewithall,  
And being dead, she kept a chearfull looke,  
And sure to her the comfort was not small,  
That for her spouse so sharpe reuenge she tooke.  
I know not if *Tanagro* in his fall,  
Did follow her, or else her ouertooke,  
He ouertooke her sure, as may be thought,  
That dranke the bottome, and the greater draught.

65

Fell *Marganor* that heard his sonnes last grone,  
And seeing him lie dead past all reliefe,  
Made at the first so great and grievous mone,  
As though he would haue dide of very grieffe:  
Two sons he had of late, now hath he none,  
Two women had hereof bin causes chiefe,  
One now'd the first to hazard lie, the tother  
With her own hands gaue poison to his brother.

66

Loe, pitie, grieffe, disdaine, and hate and wrath,  
Dire of death and of reuenge to ther,  
The dolefull parent so enraged hath,  
Like to the roring seas in fowlest wether:  
Faine to *Druzilla* he would do some leath,  
But she was dead before, yet goes he thither,  
As blinded hate did him still forward pricke,  
He seeks to harme the corse that was not quicke.

67

*smile.*

Eu'n as a snake whom speare to ground doth naile,  
Doth bite the steele and wood that sente hath none,  
Or as a dog that doth a man assaile,  
If one do sling at him a sticke or stone,  
Doth runne and bite the same without auaille,  
Till he that hurled it is past and gone:  
So *Marganor* more fierce then dog or snake,  
Seeks on the senselesse corse reuenge to take.

68

And when that harrying it, and all to tearing,  
Could not in any part his wrath assuage,  
Eu'n in the Church on vs, no such thing fearing,  
He drawes his sword, and in his senselesse rage,  
Doth hew and mangle women, none forbearing,  
For dignitie, for beautie, nor for age;  
While we cride out, and at his furie wondred,  
He thirtie kild, and hurt and maund an hundred.

69

So sorely of his people he is dreaded,  
That no man dare against his acts oppose him,  
Vnto his will he is so firmly wedded,  
That for the time starke mad ye would suppose him;  
Who would reforme him, hangd shall be & headed,  
For guerdon of his paine, when once he knows him:  
His seruants do as doth the prouerbe say,  
When furie runs, lets furie haue her sway.

70

But when at last himselfe was almost tired  
With killing vs, though voyd of all remorse,  
Then by his friends request he was desired,  
And as it were constrained by honest force;  
And to his castle he himselfe retired,  
Appointing there this law of our diuorce,  
And clemencie forsooth he doth it call,  
In that he did forbear to kill vs all.

71

Thus whether they obeyd or else repined,  
Men are from wines, babes fro their dames deuided,  
And hither all the women be confined;  
This towne of purpose is for vs prouided,  
Where if that any man to loue inclined,  
And by a good and kind affection guided,  
Come but to see his wife, and thereby show it,  
Wo be to him if *Marganor* may know it.

72

And worse then this, he hath ordaind an order,  
Such one I thinke was neuer heard before,  
All women that are tane within his border,  
Must first be whipt with rods till they be sore,  
And then he doth their vestiments disorder,  
By clipping them behind and eke before;  
And so away he sendeth them halfe stripped,  
When first they haue bin beaten well and whipped.

*Marganors law  
against women.*

73

And if that any hope to haue assistance,  
Or bring some knights them to defend and saue,  
Forthwith he killeth them and their assistants,  
As sacrifices on his childrens graue:  
So as no hope there is to make resistance,  
For euermore he if he list can haue  
At his commaund, of men a mightie powre,  
By name one thousand eu'n within an houre.

74

And further all men in his realme he takes,  
By either faire perswasions or by feare,  
Vpon the Sacrament to sweare he makes,  
That ay they shall to women hatred beare.  
Now for your owne and these faire Ladies sakes,  
Iudge you if you haue reason to forbear,  
Vnto his castle nearer to approach,  
Except you will be sham'd with foule reproch.

75

This tale so much did moue the warriors three,  
With pitie first, and then with high disdaine,  
That saue it was so darke they could not see,  
They would haue gone eu'n then him to haue slaine:  
Now for that night they rest, but they decree,  
So soone as *Phebus* should returne againe,  
To arme themselues, and boldly to aduenter,  
Vpon the tyrants hold by force to enter.

76

Now as they were about their horse to take,  
They saw before them at the mountaines root,  
Some twentie men, that no great hast did make,  
But some on horseback were, and some on foote,  
All armd, these three them soone did ouertake,  
Before they full had rode an arrow shoot,  
And then they saw how they did beare by force,  
An aged beldam on a sumpter horse.

77

This was forsooth *Druzilla* chamber mayd,  
That to her mistris that same poison gaue,  
And being then mistrustfull and afraid,  
What strange effect it fortune might to haue,  
Vpon the wedding day from Church she staid,  
And so by secret flight her selfe did saue,  
And kept her selfe three yeares from law and trial,  
Till *Marganor* had found her by espiall.

D d iij

*Dum furor in  
cussa e, curren-  
te cede furor.*



Sennence.

78

What cannot gaine and hope of mony worke?  
 First by his coyne he learned where she lay,  
 Then with his coyne he set these men a worke,  
 Who in this sort did fetch her thence away,  
 And of a Lord (in whose land she did lurke,  
 With promise that she safely there should stay)  
 With coyne of that same Baron her he bought;  
 Ah noble men, can nobles make you nought?

Simile.

79

Looke how the great and stately streame of Poe,  
 The nearer he vnto the sea descends,  
 When Lambra, Tycin, Adda, with some mo,  
 Fall into him, and their due tribute lends,  
 The broader and the deeper still doth grow:  
 Eu'n to the more that *Marganor* offends,  
 The greater will in these three champions breeds,  
 To be auenged on so vile mildeeds.

80

Yet first to free this woman they intend,  
 Who else (at least) should haue bin hangd in chaines,  
 Straight on those lowts all three their forces bend,  
 They couch their speares, and slack their horses rains:  
 An host of men could scarce such force defend;  
 Much lesse a sort of dastard hireling swaines:  
 Wherefore they cast away their warlike tooles,  
 Their cariage left, and went away like fooles.

Simile.

81

Eu'n as a greedie wolfe that runneth loden  
 With his desired pray vnto his den,  
 That finds vnwares the way to him forbidden,  
 By hunting dogs, or by the hunting men,  
 Hurles downe his pray, and by the paths vntroden  
 Doth flie for life; so did these cullions then,  
 Not onely that their prisoner enlarge,  
 But leaue their horses and their other charge.

82

Some, others force, some, their owne feare vnhorfes,  
 By meanes whereof they did at ease prouide,  
 For those three damfels good conuenient horfes,  
 That yesterday behind them three did ride:  
 Also *Rogero* that old trot inforces,  
 (Though she in vaine refused and denide)  
 To go with them, lamenting fore and wailing,  
 But all her lamentation nought auailing.

83

Now were they come vnto the towne at length,  
 About the which there was no ditch nor wall,  
 Yet were the houses built in bredth and length  
 Both orderly and very strong withall;  
 A castle in the midit of mightie strength,  
 Stood on a rocke that ouerlookt them all;  
 To this they march with great desire and longing,  
 Because it was to *Marganor* belonging.

84

Within this towne no sooner set they feet,  
 But that the guard that kept the watch, began  
 Behind them step, and chained fast the street:  
 Some others, with the greatest hast they can,  
 Cald *Marganor*, that straight came them to meet,  
 With guard of many a tall and sturdie man,  
 Who with a speech but short, yet full of pride,  
 The leud law of his Citie signifie.

85

*Marfisa* who before hand had agreed,  
 Vpon the matter with the other two,  
 Sets spurs to horse, and galloping in steed  
 Of making answer, makes no more ado,  
 But being of her person strong indeed,  
 Employing neither launce nor sword thereto,  
 With bended fist she giues him such a boxe,  
 As stonid him, and would haue feld an oxe.

*Marganor vanquished.*

86

Nor doth *Rogero*, nor the dame of France,  
 Grant to the others any time of ease,  
 But chiefe the damsell that with goldelasse,  
 Doth throw to ground as many as she please;  
 No man there was that durst himselfe aduance,  
 To stand vnto the shocke with one of these;  
*Rogero* seuen, she threw downe seuen times f'auen,  
 Eu'n as if thunder had falne downe from heauen.

87

The hurtl she pople to their houses fled,  
 The hattle iers followd them as fast,  
 None stayd behind but those were maimd or dead,  
 And *Marganor* alone was left at last,  
 And by *Marfisa* now is captiue led,  
 Who (with his armes behind him piniond fast)  
 Gaue him *Drusillas* maid to be tormented,  
 And wold haue burnd the town, had they consented.

88

But all consent the law to abrogate,  
 The people easily were wonne thereto,  
 And to accept one of another rate,  
 Which there was ratifide with small ado,  
 His law and him they did detest and hate,  
 Yet as him list they were content to do,  
 As still we see the foolish common vse,  
 Obey him best that doth them most abuse.

Sennence.

89

And why, they dare not one another trust,  
 Nor tell to one another their complaints,  
 They let him kill and banish whom he lust;  
 Ones goods he takes, anothers house he taints,  
 The silent soule yet cries for vengeance iust  
 Vnto the mighty God and to his Saints,  
 Who though they seeme in punishing but slow,  
 Yet pay they home at last, with heauē and how.

90

So now these silly soules inflamd with ire, (knowne,  
 With speech and deeds do make their stomacks  
 And (as the prouerbe saith, each man beares fire,  
 To burne the tree the wind hath ouerthrowne.  
 Ye Princes that to tyrannize desire,  
 Marke this mans end, and make his case your owne,  
 Beleue it well, that God doth euer send  
 Vnto a wicked life a wretched end.

91

Out came the yong and old, the great and small,  
 In words and workes to do him great disgrace:  
 He that so terrible was erst to all,  
 Is now despilde of all (a wondrous case)  
 Yea thote three warriors had ado not small,  
 To keepe him now from killing in the place;  
 Not that they tar'd to haue his life preserued,  
 But vnto greater paines they him reserued.

They



92

They gaue him bound vnto that woman aged,  
That erst vpon *Drusilla* did attend,  
And to those three, whose minds were yet intrag'd,  
Whom whipt and stript he lately thence did send;  
These with sharp goads and kniues his body gaged,  
And to torment him, all their wits did bend, (him,  
Now some cast stones, and some with needels pricke  
Some scratch some bite, with feet some spurn & kick  
(him.

93

Eu'n as a brooke new swolne with rage of raine,  
Or with a sadaine thaw of melting snow,  
Orit bears down rocks and trees with force so maine,  
As heards do h drowne and houses ouerthrow,  
A drouth doth come, and then that brooke againe  
Abates his pride, and is at last so low,  
A woman, yea a child with small adoe,  
May passe the fan ,and neuer wet their shoe.

94

So *Morganor* that erst in pompe and pri  
M e hearts of men to quake when he was named,  
To lowest ebb now turned sees his tyde,  
His combe now cut, his turie now is tamed;  
Now kennel-rakers scorne him, and deride,  
To looke men in the face he is ashamed,  
Small children, yea the babes, be not afraid,  
To pill away his haire from head and beard.

95

The while *Rogero* with those champions twaine,  
The castle summond that did gladly yeeld,  
Here *Vllanie* recouered againe,  
Which lately she had lost, her golden shield:  
Here met they those three kings, which to their pain  
Dame *Bralamant* had twise ou'rthrowne in field,  
At the same castle, where before I told  
She wan their lodging, and made them lie cold.

96

Since which, on foote vnarm'd they vowd to go,  
Which want, faire *Vllanie* from death did saue,  
For all that went with arm'd men garded so,  
Were sacrificed on *Tanacros* graue;  
Yet better of the twaine it was to show,  
The parts that modestie conceald would haue,  
For why both this and eu'ry other shame,  
Is halie excus'd, if force procure the same.

97

*Marfisa* straight a Parliament did call  
Of all the towne, and made them take an oth,  
Of high and low, rich, poore, and great and small,  
Although they were content, or else were loth,  
That to their wiues they should be subiect all;  
That in their houses and the Citie both,  
The women should haue rule, such powre, such gra-  
As men are wont to haue in other places. (ces,

98

She further made this notable decree,  
That lodging, meate and drinke should be forbode  
To trauellers, of whatsoere degree,  
Admit they go on foote, or that they rode,  
(Within that towne) except they first agree  
To sweare by some great Saint, or else by God,  
That they should euermore be womens friends,  
And foe vnto their foes to their liues ends.

99

And whatsoeuer stranger there arriues,  
Must further sweare, before they go their way,  
If, or they haue, or meane to marry wiues,  
That euermore they shall their wils obey:  
This must they keepe on perill of their liues,  
For why she vowes to come ere twelue-months day,  
And if she find her law broke in that Citie,  
To sacke and burne the same without all pitie.

100

This done, the warriors three did hasten hence,  
But yet their going they so long deferred,  
Vntill *Drusillas* corse was tane from thence,  
Where (as it seemd) it was but homely berred,  
And order tane, with cost and good expence,  
Her spouse and she might nobly be interred,  
With Epitaphs, by which was signified,  
In how great honour they both liu'd and died.

101

*Marfisa* made her law in marble faire,  
Vpon a pillar to be written downe,  
And then *Rogero* with the warlike paire  
Of damfels, tooke their leaues of all the towne:  
But *Vllanie* her garments doth repaire,  
And stayes to make some new and costly gowne,  
She thinks to come to Court were great dishoner,  
Except she had some sumptuous clothing on her.

102

Therefore she staid behind, and in her powre  
Was *Morganor*, by those same warriors giuen,  
Who had new torments taught him eu'ry howre,  
And was at last by his sharpe iudges driuen,  
To leape downe headlong from a mightie towre,  
Where all his bones and flesh were broke and riuen:  
Of him nor these I haue no more to say,  
But of those three that went the tother way.

103

The rest of that same day together riding,  
And halie the next in companie they spent,  
Vntill they found a way in twaine diuiding,  
One to the campe, tother to Arhe went;  
Here olt they take their leaues, yet still abiding,  
For eu' parting makes friends ill content:  
In fine the knight the way to Arhe tooke,  
They to the campe, and thus I end this booke.

*Ouid de tristibus.  
Sæpe vale dicto  
rursus sum multa  
loquutus.*

In this xxxvij. booke, the praises of women are set downe to the encouragement of all vertuous minded yong Ladies, Morall. and likewise the miserable end of *Morganor* and his two sonnes, for their vubridkd lust and crueltie, to the terrifying of all great men that disperse themselves to lawlesse and tyrannous behauiour. Lastly in the law made for women, we may see that that sex is capable of rule and gouernement, and not to be excluded from the highest degree thereof (as a noble learned, and learned noble man hath most amply and excellently proued in a discourse of his, which I happened by fortune to light vpon, though as yet I thinke imparted to few.)

Concerning the history of this booke, first it should seeme that the whole booke it selfe was inserted into the rest of the worke by mine author, to take occasion thereby to speake in praise of women, and specially of the *Ladie Vittoria*, wife

*Lord Harrie  
Howard.  
Historic.*



to the famous Francis of Pescara: but concerning the famous women by him briefly touched, I will here set downe as briefly as I can their storie.

Arpalice or Harpalice a woman of Thrace, whose father being taken prisoner by the Geties, a nation of Scythia, with great courage and expedition recovered him from their hands, of whom Virgil speaks in his *Æneads*:

Vel qualis equos Threïssa fatigat

Harpalice volucremq; fuga præuertitur Hæbæum.

Tomeris Queene of the Massagetians. Cyrus became a suter to her to marry her, but she thinking (as it was most likely) he wooed not her, but her kingdome, refused him: hereupon Cyrus made warre on her. Tomeris sent her son against him, who was taken by Cyrus with an ambushment, and slaine. But she faining as though she fled for feare, drew Cyrus to the straits of the hills, where (they write) she slue his whole army, being two hundred thousand men, and left not a man aliue to carry newes; and after in reuenge of her son, she put Cyrus head into a great boule of bloud, vsing that wel knowne speech: *Satia te sanguine qui sanguinem sitisti*, Fill thy selfe with bloud that didst thirst for bloud. In the 5 staffe.

With those that did Turnus and Hector ayd.

Those two were Camilla and Penthesilea, of both which Virgil writes in the *Æneads*:

Penthesilea furens, medijsq; in millibus ardet

Bellatrix, ardetque viris concurrere virgo.

She that in compasse of buls hide, &c.

That was Dido: The storie is well knowne of Pigmaliions crueltie in murdering Sycheus for hope of his money, but Dido warned in a dreame by the gift of Sycheus, tooke away all the gold, and fled with diuers confederates to Lybia in ffrike, and there bargained to buy as much ground as she could compasse with a bul, which bargain being made, she hid the hide into an infinit company of smal thongs, and so built the famous city of Carthage within the compasse, as Virgil saith:

Mercatique locum tacti de nomine Birsen,

Taurino quantum poterant circundare tergo.

Zenobia Queene of the Palmirens, widow, or as we call it, dowager of Odenatus: she rebelled against the Roman Empire, and fought many battels very prosperously; but afterward by Aurelianus she was besieged in the citie of Palmira, and in her flight from thence she was taken and brought to Rome in Triumph.

She that Inde and Aslure frayd: this was Symiramis wife of Nynus, who was a notable warriour, had not her unbridled lust of the flesh stained the honour of her other vertues, which as it became her owne destruction, so it hath left a notable example to all other Princes of her sex, to take heed and eschew the like infamie, and specially (though they be aboue all positive lawes) yet not to pollute the lawes of nature.

**Allegoric,**

In that it is said Marfisa and Bradamant put off their bases, therewith to hide the priuities of the damfels, it may thereby be vnderstood, that the vertues of some excellent women are so great, as not onely serue themselues to make them famous and most honorable, but also extend themselues so farre, as to serue to hide and couer the deformities of others not so well appavelled with the garments of honor, and so (as it were with works of supererogation) beautifie those that had defects of their owne.

**Allusion.**

Concerning the great praise mine author ascribeth to Madam Vittoria:

Whose learned pen such priuiledge can giue,

As it can cause those that are dead to liue.

And for that cause preferreth her before Porcia wife of Brutus, and diuers others that died voluntarie soone after their husbands, it was because she wrote some verses in manner of an Epitaph vpon her husband after his decease: In which kind, that honorable Ladie (widow of the late Lord Iohn Russell) deserueth no lesse commendation, hauing done much for two husbands. And whereas my author maketh so great boast onely of one learned woman in Italie, I may compare) besides one aboue all comparison, that I haue noted in the twentieth booke) three or foure in England out of one family, and namely the sisters of that learned Ladie, as witnesse that verse written by the meanest of the foure to the Ladie Burlic, which I doubt if Cambridge or Oxford can mend.

The four daughters of Sir Anthonie Cooke.  
Ladie Burlic.  
Ladie Russell.  
Ladie Bacon.  
Mistress Killy-grew.

Si mihi quem cupio cures Mildreda remitti,  
Tu bona, tu melior, tu mihi sola soror:  
Sin malè cessando retines, & trans mare mittis,  
Tu mala, tu peior, tu mihi nulla soror.  
Is si Cornubiam, tibi pax sit & omnia læta,  
Sit mare Ciliciæ nuncio bella. Vale.

In the 14 staffe.

And if the great Macedon enuie bare,

Vnto Achilles for Meonian lyre, &c.

This place M. Alexander Neuell imitated, in his verses vpon Sir Philip Sidneys funerals, with farre sharper conceit then mine author here vseth it. For whereas the now King of Scotland had written among others, that pretie Epitaph of the foresaid Knight:

Vidit vt extinctum nuper Citherea Philippum,  
Fleuit, & hunc Martem credidit esse suum,  
Abripuit digitis gemmas, colloque monile,  
Marti iterum nunquam seu placitura totum.  
Mortuus humana qui lusit imagine diuam,  
Quid faceret iam si videret ille rogo

She wrote to Ladie Burlic send a kinsman of hers into Cornwall, where she dwelt, and to stop his going beyond sea.



To this effect in English,

When *Venus* saw the noble *Sidney* dying,  
She thought, it her beloued *Mars* had beene:  
And with the thought thereof she fell a crying,  
And cast away her rings and carknet cleene.

He that in death a goddesse mockt and grieued,  
What had he done (trow you) if he had liued?

*The verse hath a fine conceipt, and perhaps better then it shewes for. Now (as I say) M. Neuell praising Sir Philip Sidney in the like manner, vseth the like application, as mine author doth in this place, preferring his fortunatenesse in this kinde, before his, whom Alexander enuieth: for he saith (as I remember)*

*Plectra canant alios, cecinerunt sceptrum Philippum,  
Ista coronatis sunt carmina digna cothurnis.*

*Harps, other praise; a scepter his doth sing,  
Of crowned Poet, and of Laureat king.*

*Concerning the tale of Orusilla, it is taken out of Plutarke, and thought a true Story: it is both in the Courtier of Castiglion and in Apuleius; but somewhat amplified by mine author.*

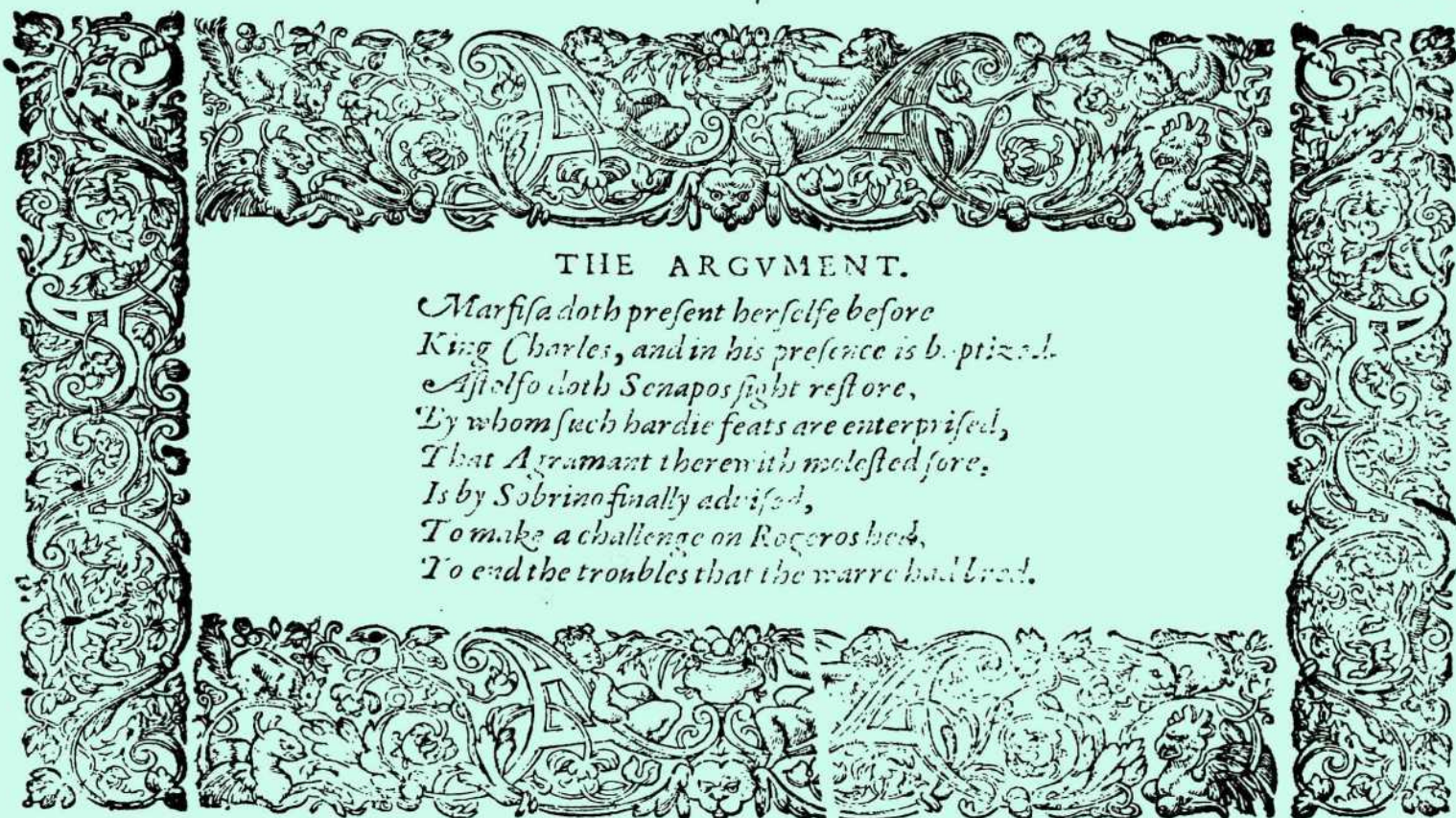
The end of the annotations vpon the 37. booke.









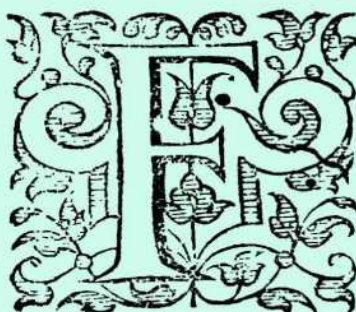


## THE ARGUMENT.

*Marfisa doth present herſelfe before  
King Charles, and in his preſence is baptiz'd.  
Aſiello doth Senapos fight reſtore,  
By whom ſuch hardie feats are enterpriſed,  
That Agramant therewith moleſted fore,  
Is by Sobrino finally adviſed,  
To make a challenge on Rogeros hee,  
To end the troubles that the warre had bred.*

I

*In maintenance  
of honor.*



Aire Ladies, you with gra-  
cious care that heare,  
My preſent ſtorie, now me  
ſeemes I ſee,  
If this vnwoted changing  
of your cheare,  
That with Rogero you of-  
fended be,  
For thus againe departing  
from his deare,

And that you take the ſame as ill as ſhe,  
As thou h you thought, and durſt affirme it boldly,  
That fire of loue in him did burne but coldly.

2

And ſure had he bin moued hereunto,  
By any other cauſe, then that I told,  
No though thereby he had attained to  
Rich *Craſſus* wealth, or richer *Crefus* gold,  
Yet would I thinke (as now it ſeemes ye do)  
Loues darts in him had tane but ſhallow hold:  
For ſo ſweet ioy, as this waſt to be thought,  
With gold nor ſiluer neuer could be bought.

3

But when ones honour ſhall thereon depend,  
Then ſhould it merit not excuſe but praiſe,  
And chiefe when one ſo truly may pretend,  
He cannot ſaue his honor otherwayes:  
And that ſame woman that herteſte ſhould bend,  
To ſtop the ſame by prayre, or by delayes,  
Should giue iuſt cauſe to currie one to gueſſe,  
Her loue were little, or her wit were leſſe.

4

For if a woman ſhould of him ſhe loues,  
Eſteeme the life and ſafetie as her owne,

(I ſpeake of ſuch, whoſe choice no change remoues,  
And whoſe affecti-ns are not raſhly growne)  
Then ſure much more in reaſon it behoues,  
That of his honour ſhould more care be ſhowne;  
By how much more, it ſhould in due account,  
Both pleasures all, and life it ſelfe ſurmound.

5

In following of his Lord ſo faithfully,  
Rogero did but eu'n as he was bound,  
And if he ſhould haue left him then, thinke I  
He ſhould haue done it but on ſlender ground!  
What though *Almonte* made his father die?  
On *Agramant* that fault could not redound.  
Who had for all his anceſtors offences,  
Gi'a'n to Rogero many recompences.

6

He did but well in going to his Lord,  
And ſhe as well (it cannot be denied)  
In that ſhe thereto granted her accord,  
Which ſhe might hap haue ſtopt, had ſhe replied,  
That from the ſame her liking had abhord:  
What now ſhe wants, henceforth may be ſupplied,  
But if that honor haue one minuts ſtaine,  
An hundred yeares ſcant can it cleaſe againe.

*Sentence.*

7

Now while Rogero vnto Arly went,  
As dutie bound him to *Traianos* haire,  
Vnto the Chriſten campe incontinent,  
Rogeros ſpoule and ſiſter (noble paire)  
As louing friends and co'ns now they went,  
And vnto Charles his tent they did repaire;  
Who minds by ſiege, or battels doubtfull chance,  
To drive theſe tedious troubles out of France



8

When in the campe it was made knowne and bruted,  
That *Bradamant* was come, her noblest brothers  
Came forth to her, and kindly her saluted,  
With *Guidon*, though they came of sundry mothers;  
And she, as for her sexe and calling futed,  
Did resalute both them, and diuers others,  
By kissing some, and speaking to the best,  
And making frendly gestures to the rest.

9

But when *Marfisas* name was heard and knowne,  
Whole noble acts eu'n from Catay to Spaine,  
And ouer all the world beside were blowne,  
To looke on her all were so glad and faine,  
With presse and thrust not few were ouerthrowne;  
And scarce a man could in the tents remaine,  
But heauing, shouing, hither-ward and thither,  
To see so braue a paire as these together.

10

Now when to *Charles* his presence come they be,  
Vpon her knee *Marfisa* did decline,  
And (as *Turpino* writes) no man did see,  
Her knee to touch the ground before that time,  
To none of anie calling, or degree,  
Not vnto Christen Prince or Sarazine:  
She onely doth esteeme king *Pepins* sonne,  
As worthe whom such honor should be donne.

11

But *Charles* arose, and met her halfe the way,  
And in kinde stately sort did her embrace,  
And set her by his side that present day,  
Abooue the Princes all, and gaue her place.  
Then voided was the roome that none might stay,  
But Lords and knights well worthie so great grace,  
Excluding all the lawcie baser sort,  
And then *Marfisa* spake in such like sort.

12

*Marfisas oration.* Most mightie *Cesar*, high renownd and glorious,  
That from our Indies, to Tyrrhian shiore,  
From Scythia, frozen still with breath of *Boreas*,  
To *Æthiopia* scorching euermore,  
Makst thy white crosse, so famous and victorious,  
By value much, but by thy iustice more;  
Thy praise (O Prince) and thy renowned name,  
Were cause from countries farre I hither came.

13

And to say troth, flat enuie mou'd me chiefe,  
Because thy powre to reach so farre I saw,  
I must confesse I tooke dildaine and grieffe,  
That any Prince that fauord not our law,  
And was to vs of contrarie beliefe,  
Should grow so great, to keepe vs all in awe;  
Wherefore I came with mind to haue destroid thee,  
Or by all meanes I could, to haue annoyd thee.

14

For this I came, for this I stayd in France,  
To seeke your ruine and your ouerthrow,  
When lo a chance (if such a thing can chance)  
Made me a frend and subiect of a fo,  
I will not stay to tell each circumstance,  
But this in substance, it did make me know,  
That I, your bloodie enemy *Marfisa*,  
Was daughter to *Rogero* late of *Ryla*.

She means the  
voice out of the  
tomb, in the la-  
ter end of the 26  
booke.

15

He by my wicked vnckles was betraid,  
And left my wofull mother big with child,  
Who neare to Syrté downe her bellie laid,  
As strangely sau'd, as wrongfully exild;  
She brought a twin, a man child and a maid,  
We fosterd were, seuen yeares in Forrest wild,  
By one that had in Magicke art great skill,  
But I was stolne from him against his will.

16

For some Arabians sold me for a slaue,  
Vnto a Persian king, whom (growne yeares)  
Because he my virginity would haue,  
I killed him and all his Lords and Peeres  
And then such hap, God and good fortune gaue,  
I gat his crowne and armes, as yet appeare  
And ere I fully was twise ten yeare old,  
Seuen crownes I gat beside, which yet I hold.

17

And being enuious of your endlesse fame,  
(As erst I toid) I came with firme intent,  
By all the meanes I could, quail the same,  
And haply might haue done the hurt I ment;  
But now a better minde, that minde doth tame,  
Now of my malice I do much repent,  
Since by good hap, I lately vnderstood,  
That I was neare allide to you in blood.

18

And sith I know my father was your man,  
I meane no lesse then he did, you to serue,  
As for the hate and enuie I began,  
To beare you I now the same referue,  
For *Agramant*, and all the harme I an,  
To all his kin, that doe the same deserue,  
Because I now do know, am assured,  
His ancestors my parents death procured.

19

This said *Marfisa*, and withall did adde,  
That she would be baptized out of hand,  
And when that *Agramant* she vanquishd had,  
Returne (if *Charles* to please) to her owne land,  
And Christen them, and farther would be glad,  
Against all those that would Christs law withstand,  
Ay to beare armes, with vow that all her gaine,  
To *Charles* and holy Church should ay remaine.

20

The noble *Charles* of tongue as eloquent,  
As wise in head, as valorous in heart,  
Did much extoll the Ladie excellent,  
And all her kin and fire by iust desert:  
And of her former speech incontinent,  
Most gracioufly he answered eu'ne part,  
Concluding that he would for euer after,  
Accept her as his cousin, and his daughter.

21

And her againe he did embrace of new:  
And kilt her forehead as his child indeed:  
It long would be to tell how braue a crew,  
From *Clarimont*, and *Mongrane* did proceed,  
To welcome her, or when *Renaldo* knew  
*Marfisa* name, what ioy in him did breed,  
He calls to mind what force in her he found,  
Then when *Albracca* he besieged round.

*Alent.*

It was the man-  
ner in the old  
time, for men to  
kisse their chil-  
dren or of  
kin, in the re-  
head, not on the  
mouth.

Long



22

it long would be to tell of *Guidons* ioy,  
With *Griffin*, *Aquilant* and *Sanfouet*,  
That leapt with her their land, that do destroy,  
Those men that in their Realme they hap to get:  
No lesse did *Milagige* and *Finian* ioy,  
Remembring how the ioynd with *Richardet*,  
To rescue them, as long before I told,  
When vnto *Bevolage* they had bene sold.

23

Now was prepar'd against the ensuing day,  
A place, as was by *Charles* himselfe deuised,  
Set stately forth, and hang'd with rich aray,  
Where this most worthy dame should be baptised,  
Then Bishops were employ'd by whom she may,  
Be taught the Christen faith and Catechised,  
And all that day a learned Clarke and Preacher,  
The principles of Christen faith did teach her.

24

Then *Marpin* Archbishop of chiefe account,  
In his robes pontificall doth baptise her,  
*Charles* with great reuerence standeth by the fount,  
And what to answer, he did still aduise her.  
But now tis time that to the Moone I mount,  
For that receipt, must make *Orlando* wiser,  
From whence the Duke, descending by strange byas,  
Came with *S. Iohn* in charret of *Elyas*.

He turnes to  
marry againe  
the 29. booke. 10.  
affe.

25

And by his guide he backe againe was led,  
And keeps still in his hand that pot or Iarre,  
That should againe make wise the mased hed,  
Of that same Palladin well teene in warre.  
Likewise the Saint vnto *Astolfo* led,  
As soone as they lighted from the carre,  
That with an herbe, which there grew great store)  
He should againe *Seimphor* restore.

26

For which, and for his former great defart,  
He should haue men assault *Biferta* land,  
He teacheth him those people vnexpert,  
He should so traine, to make them to his hand:  
He further learned him the way and art,  
How he might safely passe the vnstable sand:  
And plainly thus *S. Iohn*, from point to point,  
What the English Duke should do, did him appoint.

Of the vnstable  
sand, Locke in the  
foure.

27

Then did *Astolfo* take his winged steed,  
And of the Saint devoutly tooke his leaue,  
And soaring downe, he makes no little speed,  
To do that which in charge he did receaue;  
So farre by *Nylus* bankes he doth proceed,  
Vntill that *Nubia* he did plaine perceaue;  
And following the course of that same streame,  
Came to *Senapo*, head of that same Reame.

28

That was the pleasure, triumph, and the ioy,  
*Senapo* tooke when he thereof had woord,  
Remembring well the trouble and annoy,  
The foule *Harpies* brought him at his boord:  
But when he made him eke his fight enioy,  
And did so rare a grace to him afford,  
That by his meanes his eye sight was restord him,  
He worshipt him and like a God adord him.

29

Nor onely did he gine him souldiers then,  
Wherewith he might *Biferta* towne inuade,  
But for each one he askt he gaue him ten,  
That soone two hundred thousand men he made:  
Scarfe had the fields roome for so many men,  
But footmen all: to is that cuntryes trade,  
For hortes in that Region are but dentie,  
But Elephants and Camells they haue plentie.

30

Now that same day that went before the day,  
In which the men of *Nubia* made account,  
To march on forward, some part of their way,  
*Astolfo* on his Griffith horse doth mount;  
And Southward he doth passe, and doth not stay,  
Vntill he came neare to a mightie mount:  
At foote whereof a vast caue he doth finde,  
Which was the lodging of the Sotherne winde.

Looke in the  
Nubia.

31

The mightie caue had but a narrow mouth,  
At which the Duke (as Christs Apostle taught)  
Did watch so long, vntill the wind of South,  
Came home to eate his spirits ouerwrought,  
To enter in, *Astolfo* him allowth,  
But when anone, to haue come out he thought,  
Within a leather sacke the Duke had plait  
At that caues mouth, he caught and tyde him fast.

32

The Palladin, full proud of such a pray,  
Returnes to *Nubia* ward, before twas night,  
And to the Negros then he showd the way,  
Appointing them how they should trauell right;  
He victuals doth and carriages conuay,  
All safe vnto that hill, that *Atlas* hight;  
Quite ore those fields where many haue bene found,  
With wind for want of water, more then drown'd.

Because the wind  
was wont to raise  
the sand some-  
times in such sort  
as it ouerwhelm'd  
the men that  
went in it.

33

And being come vnto the mountaines side,  
There, where he might discover all the plaine,  
He doth his bands and companies diuide,  
And chuseth those that are most apt to traine,  
And those he parts and putteth them aside,  
And orders for the rest he doth ordaine,  
Then he in sight of all the hill ascendeth,  
And lookt like one that some great feat intendeth.

34

And kneeling downe (as one that did beleue,  
His prayre should granted be, as well as hard)  
He prayd his master their great want releue:  
Then casting stones that were before prepar'd,  
(What cannot firme beleefe in Christ atcheue?)  
The very stones (a thing to credit hard)  
Did grow, and lue, and moue by hidden cause,  
And had both bellies, legges, and necks, and iawes.

Ouid. Metam.  
Saxa quae hos  
credat: nifi sit  
pro sepe uisus

35

And naying lowd, fill'd all the place with sound,  
Of horle, some bay, some roane, some duple gray,  
And of all them were readie horses found,  
The spurre, the wand, the leg and voyce to obay;  
To stop, to start, to passe carier, to bound,  
To gallop straight, or round, or any way:  
Thus were the men well hors'd, with little paines,  
For eu'rie horse had saddle, bit and raines.

E c



36

Thus by this vertuous Duke, within one houre,  
Were fourscore thousand footmen, horsemen made,  
With which so great and v unexpected powre,  
Full fiercely he all Affrike did inuade,  
And burnt and spoild full many a towne and towre,  
All giuing way to his victorious blade,  
Vntill three Princes, *Agramants* vicegerents,  
Made head against the Duke, with their adherents.

37

The king of *Aldyzer*, and he of *Ferfe*,  
With stout *Bransardo*, all three mightie kings,  
That find their enemies to grow so fierce,  
Do send their Lord by sea, word of these things.  
A little fricket straight the waues doth pierce,  
And of these euill newes quick notice brings  
To *Agramant* that lay that time in Arlie,  
Besieged by an armie strong and warlie.

*He turnes to As-  
tolfo in the next  
book, 18. staffe.*

38

Who hearing of his countries wofull case,  
And by his absence what did them betide,  
He cald his Lords and Princes to the place,  
Consulting how for this harme to prouide;  
And looking once or twice with stately grace,  
Now on the one, then on the tother side,  
But on *Marsilio* and *Sobrino* chiefe,  
In such like words he told to them his grieffe.

39

*Agramants O-  
ration.* Although I wot it worst becommes of all,  
A Generall to say, I had not thought,  
Yet so say I, for when a harme doth fall,  
Beyond the reach of humane fence or thought,  
Then sure the blame is either none or small,  
And in this compasse may my fault be brought:  
My fault it was, Affricke to leaue vnarmed,  
If of the Nubians now they could be harmed.

40

But who could thinke (but God that vnderstands  
The things to come as well as those are past)  
So great an host could passe so many lands,  
That were from vs so great a distance past?  
Twixt whom and vs lies those vnstable sands,  
That dangerously are mou'd with Southerne blast,  
Yet are they come, and haue so farre preuailed,  
Byferta selfe is now by them assailed.

41

Now on this point your counsels here I craue,  
If so I shall all fruitlesse hence retire,  
Or trie before I go, if I can haue  
The crowne of France, to which I do aspire,  
Or how I may at home my country saue,  
And this destroy, which is my most desire;  
If any know the meane, then speake he to it,  
To th'end that we may know the best, and do it.

42

Thus much the sonne of great *Traiano* spake,  
And on *Marsilio* fixt his eyes, that he  
As chiefe in place, thereby might notice take,  
That first by him he would aduised be:  
Who when he had stood vp for reuerence sake,  
And bowd his bodie, and withall his knee,  
Downe sate him in his honorable seate,  
And spake such words as I shall here repeate.

43

What euer fame doth bring, of good or ill,  
To make it greater it doth euer vlie,  
Wherefore (my soueraigne Lord) I neuer will  
Be bold or basht with hearing flying newes,  
But moue such doubt and such assurance still,  
As though I would not all reports refuse,  
Yet would I thinke the truth of other sort,  
Then as so many mouthes shall make report.

*Marsilio craves  
to perswade him  
to continue the  
warre in France.*

44

And I beleue each tale so much the lesse,  
By how much more from likelihood it doth erre:  
Now in this present cause let any guesse,  
If like it be, a king that dwels so farre,  
Could come with such an host, as they expresse,  
To Affrica, so often vsd to warre,  
And passe those parous sands, where to his cost,  
*Cambyses* erst did leese his mightie host.

*Looke in si-  
ficorie.*

45

But they be Nubians, let it be allowd,  
By miracle come in a shoure of raine,  
Or closely carrid thither in some clowd,  
Sith by the way none saw so large a traine:  
Hath Affrike euer to such people bowd?  
Must they haue aide to driue them home againe?  
I sure may think you kept a forie garison,  
If them and yours betweene there be comparison.

46

I rather thinke th'Arabians are come downe,  
From those their hills, and done some spoile or wast,  
And tane some men, & burnt some baggage towne,  
But small resistance finding as they past,  
And that *Bransardo* for his owne renowne,  
Whom as your deputie you ther ad plast,  
For one sets downe on eche in his letter,  
To th'end that his eache may seeme the better.

47

But if you will but send some ship or twaine,  
That but your standard may therein appeare,  
No doubt but they will hie them home againe,  
By that time these but weigh their ankers here,  
If they Arabians, that can bide no paine,  
Or if they Nubians be, the case is cleare,  
Who onely taken haue this heart of grace,  
To know your person absent from the place.

48

This therefore is the summe of my perswasion,  
Make sure the conquest here ere you go hence,  
*Charles* can no more endure your sharpe euasion,  
Now that his nephew is distraught of sence:  
Now by the forehead let vs take Occasion,  
Least after all our trauell and expence,  
He hide away his haire, and turne his bald,  
And we vnprouident be thought and cald.

*Sence.*

49

With these so warie words, and such as these,  
The subtle Spaniard labourd to perswade,  
The king of Affrike not to passe the seas,  
Till of the warres in France an end were made:  
But sage *Sobrino*, that espide with ease,  
How deepe he seemd in thallow streames to wade,  
Respecting priuat more then publike cause,  
Did answer thus after a litle pause.

*That is, how  
strongly he im-  
reasons.*

My



*So rinos oration  
to persade him  
to leaue France  
and looke to his  
owne country.*

50

My Liege, when first to peace I counfeld you,  
I would I had not bin so true a Prophet,  
Or if my sayings needs must proue so true,  
I would you had beleeu'd them for your profit;  
Not *Rodomont*, with that rash youthfull crue  
Of *Alcyrd*, *Marbalust*, that then did scoffe it,  
Whom now I wish here present, face to face,  
But chiefly *Rodomont* I wish in place.

51

He that then vndertooke to make all France,  
But like the dust that flies before the wind,  
He that did vow, in heau'n or hell, your lance  
To follow, nay to leaue it farre behind,  
Now when he should the matter most aduance,  
Vnprofitably lurkes in corners blind,  
And I that then (because I told you true)  
Was call'd a coward, still abide with you.

52

And still I will abide, what ere ensith,  
During this life, which though made weak with age,  
I will not feare, against the strongest youth  
That liues in France, in your defence to gage;  
Nor yet can any charge me with vntruth,  
Not from the proudest Prince to poorest page,  
And well I wot, I haue done more then some,  
That promist much ere they were hither come.

53

Thus much I say, thereby more plaine to proue,  
That what I then did say, or now impart,  
Came from true seruice, and of loyall loue,  
And not of faint, much lesse of hollow hart:  
Now I aduise you hence with speed remoue,  
And that you homeward in all hast depart,  
For well you wot, that some it is none,  
In winning other mens, to lose ones owne.

54

Yet know not I why we should call it winning,  
If of our losses iust account we yeeld,  
A hirtie two kings we were at the beginning,  
A third part now scarce carries in the field;  
And we our selues here vp in corners pinning,  
Scant safe within these rampiers can vs shield,  
We so decay, except in time we cease,  
At last we shall be driu'n to sue for peace.

55

*Orlando* is not there, tis true, what tho?  
Had he bin there, we had all did ere this,  
His want doth but prolong our ouerthrow,  
By other men, our state in danger is:  
They haue *Renaldo* there, that plaine doth show  
His force and courage not much lesse then his,  
There are his cousins, all the *Palladins*,  
Eternall terror to our *Sarazins*.

56

*Quid  
opus enim late-  
dauimus hostem.*

They further haue a man in strength and hart,  
(I needs must praise my foe against my will)  
A second *Mars*, I meane king *Brandimart*,  
Whole great puissance ioyn'd to actiue skill,  
My selfe in single fight haue found in part,  
And further prooffe haue seene by others ill:  
Besides, *Orlando* wanted long ago,  
Since which we more haue lost then won you know.

57

Now if we sped no better in time past,  
We shall speed worse hereafter I do dread,  
We see *Gradasso* ouer sea is past,  
And that the valiant *Mandricard* is dead;  
*Marfisa* hath forsaken vs at last,  
And *Rodomont*, of whom it may be sed,  
Were but his faith with force to be compar'd,  
The rest might in a manner haue bin spared.

58

Now when as so great helpees and succors faile vs,  
So many thousands of our souldiers slaine,  
And all supplies that should at all auail vs,  
Alreadie come from *Affrike* and from *Spaine*;  
They haue of late got foure new knights to quail vs,  
Compar'd with any of the *Christen* traine,  
Foure knights, that if you search from hence to *Inde*,  
Foure knights to match these foure you shal not find

59

I know not if you euer heard before,  
Of *Oliueres* sons, and *Sansouet*,  
With *Guidon* sauage, whom I value more  
Then all their other succors that they get,  
From *Almanie* the higher or the lower,  
Although such aids at nought we cannot set,  
And we do plainly see before our eyes,  
That eu'ry day they may haue fresh supplies.

60

We may assure our selues if any more  
We take the field, our side goes to the pot,  
For if when we were two for one before,  
Yet we must needs confesse we gained not,  
Now they so much increased haue their store,  
With forraigne powre, both *English*, *Dutch* and *Scot*,  
What can we hope but after all our toyle,  
To haue bad recompence of shame and foyle.

61

Yet all is well, if you will part betime,  
And hie you home before it, proue too late;  
But if you tarry any longer time,  
You here will leele your men, at home your state:  
Now if to leaue *Marfisa* seeme a crime,  
For feare the world condemne you for vngrate,  
To saue him harmlesse you for peace must sue  
Which they will so accept, if so will you.

62

But if you thinke such motion may not stand,  
With honour of your state and high degree,  
And hope by fight to make a surer hand,  
Which yet how it succeeded hath you see;  
Yet seeke at least to haue the vpper hand  
By this deuice, and herein follow me:  
Put all the quarrels triall, if you can,  
To one, and let *Rogero* be the man.

63

I know, and you do know, and so we all  
Do know, that our *Rogero* hath such might,  
No *Christen* can so sturdie be or tall,  
As hand to hand to conquer him in fight:  
But if you meane to make warre generall,  
Though he in strength far palle each other knight,  
Yet in the fight he but for one can stand,  
And what is one against a mightie band?

E c ij



64

I thinke it best, if so you thinke it good,  
To offer this to *Charles*. that if he will,  
It with his worthie courage so it stood,  
For saving thole, whom you on both sides kill,  
And shunning of the shedding guiltlesse blood,  
Which both of you, on each side dayly spill,  
Each side to chuse one champion at whose parrell,  
To make a tull conclusion of the quarrell.

65

Prouided first, that which so ere of these  
Shall dye, his Prince shall pay the tother tribute:  
I know this motion will not *Charles* displease,  
For all his Lords, will there-vnto contribute;  
And this would worke our saterie, and our ease,  
For to *Rogero*, so much I attribute,  
That such his vallew is, this cause to iust.  
Were *Mars Antagonist*, yet yeeld he must.

66

These words *Sobrino* spake with such effect,  
As *Agramant* thereto gaue his content,  
And then Interpreters he did direct,  
Who straight to *Charles* with such a challenge went:  
*Charles* meanes not such occasion to neglect,  
He thinks the combat wonne incontinent,  
He had such store of champions, nere the latter,  
Vnto *Renaldo* he commits the matter.

67

Glad were both armies of this new accord,  
Henceforth to liue in quiet they intend.  
And either part doth praise his soueraigne Lord,  
That of these broyles would make to speedie end.  
Each one in mind these foolish bralls abhorde,  
That made them thus in warres their dayes to spend,  
Each man could say, and no man then denyd it,  
That warre is sweet to those that haue not tryd it.

68

*Renaldo*, he in mind doth much reioyse,  
To thinke his Prince had done him such a grace,  
To make of him aboue to many choyle,  
For triall of so great importing case:  
And though *Rogero* were by common voyce,  
The chiefe man deemd of all the Turkish race,  
And hand to hand had killed *Mandricard*,  
*Renaldo* this, but little did regard.

69

But good *Rogero* he was nothing glad,  
Though of so many gallant men and stout,  
Hisking to his great praile, him choten had,  
Aboue all other knights, and pickt him out;  
His heart was heauie, and his looke was sad,  
Not that in mind he ought did dread or doubt,  
*Renaldos* forces, or *Orlandos* either,  
No scarce and if they had beene both together.

70

But this procur'd his griefe, because he knew,  
*Renaldo* brother was vnto his deare,  
Who did her plaints with letters oft renew,  
And charged him so deepe, as toucht him neare:  
Now if he should to old wrong, adde this new,  
To kill *Renaldo*, then the case is cleare,  
She should haue so great reason to reprove him,  
If he doubts she neuer will hereafter loue him.

71

Now if *Rogero* do in silent sort,  
Lament this combat tane against his will,  
No doubt his spoule which heard this sad report,  
Was worle appaid then he, at least as ill;  
She beats her brest, and breakes her tresses short,  
And many teares with sorrow she did spill,  
And calls *Rogero* oftentimes vngrate,  
And curseth euermore her cruell fate.

72

It needs must turne vnto her griefe and paine,  
Who ere is ouercome, who euer win,  
She dare not thinke *Rogero* can be flaine,  
Her heart such anguish doth conceiue therein;  
And if it pleased Christ so to ordaine,  
For chastising his wretched peoples sin,  
That man should dye that of her house was chiefe,  
Besides his death, that brought a further griefe.

73

A griefe that was indeed beyond all measure,  
To thinke she neuer might henceforth for flaine,  
Go to her spoule, without the flat displeasure,  
Of all her kin and house of whence she came:  
And when she weigh'd the case at better leasure,  
Each thing to her seemd worle and worle to frame,  
For why she knew, her tongue that knot had tyde,  
That while she liu'd, might neuer loose, nor slide.

74

But that deare frend of hers, that neuer faild,  
To helpe at chiefest needs, the noble maid,  
I meane the sage *Melissa*, so preuaild,  
That *Bradamantes* griefe was part alaid,  
For when she knew the cause, and what she aild,  
Against the time, she promised aid;  
And vndertooke, that th' loudy quarrell,  
To her nor hers, ther' should arise no parrell.

75

This while the gallant knights against the fight,  
Themselues, and eke their weapons do prouide.  
The choise whereof did appertaine in right,  
Vnto the champion of the Christen side,  
Who, as a man that tooke but small delight,  
(Since he had lost his famous horse) to ride,  
Did chuse to fight on foot, and in this sort,  
All arm'd, with axes long, and daggers short.

76

Or were it chance, or were it in regard,  
That *Malagize* aduised him thereto,  
Because he knew the force of Balyard,  
Of powre all charms of armour to vndoe,  
(Of whose sharpe edge you haue ere this time hard)  
But this they did appoint betwene then two,  
About the place likewise they do agree,  
A plaine neare Arlie walls, the same to be.

77

Now when *Aurora* left the lothed bed,  
Of *Tytan* (vnto whom she hath no list)  
To th' end that no disorder may be bred,  
On either side the marshalls part the list,  
At end whereof, were rich pauillions spread,  
Where nothing that belongs to state was mist,  
And distant from each tent a little space,  
On either side, they did an altar place.

Looke in the  
Table

Not

*Antagonist*  
derived fr-om  
Greeke word  
signifying the ad-  
uersarie that  
figgss hand to  
hand.

*Sentence.*  
*Dulce bellum*  
*inexpertis.*



78

Not long time after this, in battell ray,  
The Turkish armie with their king came out,  
Glistring in gold, and stately rich aray,  
In show, with all Barbarian pompe set out,  
A swift Arabian horse, of colour bay  
He rode, and by his side *Rogero* stout,  
Rode cheeke by cheeke, and to his greater fame,  
On him to wait, *Marsilio* thought no shame.

79

His helmet (for the which the Tartar dyde,  
Slaine by *Rogero* as I did rehearse)  
(Which since a thousand yeares, and more beside,  
Was celebrated in more stately verte)  
*Marsilio* carrid, by *Rogeros* side,  
Well mounted on a Spanish genet fearce,  
His armes, and all that did thereto belong,  
Some other states, deuided them among.

Meaning Ho-  
mers or Virgils  
Horse.

80

On t'other side came worthie *Charlemayne*,  
From out his tents, strongly intrencht, anone,  
And all his bands of men he did ordayne,  
So as if to battell he should then haue gone:  
About him was of Peers a noble trayne,  
*Renaldo* in the mids, with armour on,  
That onely helmet erst from *Mambryns* tane,  
Was by *Rogero* borne, the noble Dane.

81

Two axes, both alike in each respect,  
*Salemon* and Duke *Namus* beare before,  
The Chieftaines on each side their men direct,  
To keepe within their limits euermore;  
And in the midst, was left a large prospect,  
Betweene each company, and roome good store,  
For present death it was, in any venter,  
Saeue those two champions the list to enter.

82

When challenges  
are made, the  
Duello appoints  
that the partie  
challenged must  
come, and bring  
the weapons, and  
the challenger  
must take choise  
of those he  
brought.

When second choise of weapon (as was fit)  
Was giu'n *Rogero* to auoid suspect,  
To Priests before the rest came forth, to wit,  
Of each side one, and one of either sect,  
Each had a booke, ours had Christs holy writ,  
Theirs Alcoran, with errours foule infect,  
With ours came forth the Christen Prince deuout,  
With that of theirs, the king of Turks came out.

83

Now first king *Charles* neare to his altar stands,  
And this great protestation there did make,  
And list to heauen both heart, and eyes and hands,  
O God, O Christ, that suffredst for our sake,  
O blessed Ladie, that in swathing bands,  
Heldst him that mortall flesh of thee did take,  
And didst nine months in close that high diuinitie,  
In sacred wombe, still keeping true virginity.

84

Bewitnesse, that here I make it knowne,  
And promise faithfully for me and mine,  
To *Agramant*, and who so ere shall owne  
The crowne of Attrike in ensuing time,  
That if my champion shall be ouerthrowne,  
To pay to them, each yeare of gold most fine,  
Ten horselode, and forthwith the warres to cease,  
And euermore hereafter to haue peace.

85

And if I sayle, then let the fearfull wrath  
Of both, on me at once this folly wreake,  
And worke vnto my sect all wo and scath,  
That all intuing ages plaine may speake,  
Loe what a plague, and iust reward he hath,  
That durst his oth to you, and promise breake:  
This said, his hand he laid vpon the booke,  
And vp on heauen he fixt his stedfast looke.

86

When this was done, then all departed thence,  
There where the Turks had with much superstition  
Adorn'd their altar with no small expence;  
And their king *Agramant*, with like condition,  
Vowd neuer after this, to do offence  
To *Charles*, but passe the seas with expedition,  
And ay keepe peace, and equail tribute pay,  
If that *Rogero* vanquish't were that day.

87

And in like sort he did protest alowd,  
And cald on Mahomet, his Idol great,  
And by that booke, that his Priests held, he vowd  
To keepe most duly all he did repeat:  
This done, to part from thence were all allowd,  
And either Prince retired to his seat;  
Then in like sort they sweare the champions both,  
And thus much in effect containd their oth.

88

*Rogero* promiseth, that if the fight,  
By *Agramant* shall be disturb'd or parted,  
That neuer after he will be his knight,  
But serue king *Charles*, and be to him true harted.  
*Renaldo* in like sort his faith doth plight,  
That if to him, *Charles* any aid imparted,  
Before that one of them were ouercome,  
That then himselfe to *Agramant* would come.

89

Now when these ceremonies all were ended,  
Then eu'ry man departed to his side,  
And then the warriours onely now attended,  
The trumpets sound, that battell signified;  
Which when both heard, then each of the intended,  
To show the utmost of his vallew tride:  
Now sounds the Steele with blows, not few nor soft,  
Now they themselues, strike low and now aloft.

90

Sometime they would beguile the tone the tother,  
With mind vnto their strength, to ad their art,  
They profer at one place, and strike another,  
Inuading still the least defended part:  
But good *Rogero*, that against the brother,  
Of her did fight, that did possesse his hart,  
Did oft bestow his blows, with such regard,  
Most thought *Renaldo* was for him too hard.

91

He seemed readier to ward then strike,  
For he himself well knew not what he ment,  
To kill *Renaldo*, that he did not like,  
To dy himselfe that was not his intent:  
But now I hope that none will it mislike,  
Sith in this booke so much time hath bene spent,  
And least my tediousnesse may some molett,  
In this ensuing booke to heare the rest.

Fe ij



Morall.

In the beginning of this booke is set downe how great a regard a man ought to haue of true honor indeed, namely to do nothing wherein it may be iustly touched: not as our young gallants in these dayes, that stand vpon their puntos in trifling matters, hauing neither honor in their hearts, nor truth in their mouths. No doubt but to a noble nature and disposition, honor is the tendereſt thing that may be: And therefore it may well of them be ſaid:

Ma al honor chi mancha in vn momento,  
Non puo in cento anni ſatisfar, ne in cento.

But if that honor haue one minutes ſtaine,  
An hundred yeares ſcant can it clenſe againe.

But as in Religion, the true vſage thereof is moſt neceſſary to the good of the ſoule, but heresies and ſuperſtition be moſt damnable; ſo in this deſire of worldly reputation, the good and conſiderat regard thereof, is the moſt worthy and Gentlemanly thing that can be: but the vaine and friuolous maintenance thereof is as ridiculous and to be ſcorned. For example, imagine ſome man ſo chaſt, (as Cæſar was called) omnium mulierum vir, or to uſe our homely Engliſh phraſe (as the towne Bull of the Pariſh) ſo true of his word, as he that Heywood writes of that kept all the commandements, and namely that concerning falſe witneſſe,

With witneſſe falſe thou hurteſt none, for why, Each word thou ſpakeſt, each man doth know a ly.

So temperat in eating and drinking that he ſurfets but once a weeke, vidz. from Saterday to Saterday; and endewed with other magnificall qualities, as ſwearing and gaming, and now and then (of the gentlenes of his nature) not ſcorn- ing a Pandars occupation. Can you maruell (I ſay) if ſuch a man ſtand ſomewhat nycely vpon his honor, if he be touched therein? but the true honorable perſon indeed, will neither giue iuſt cauſe of offence, nor beare any wrong, & diſgrace; and whoſoeuer failes either in the firſt of theſe, for want of ſtayd gouernment, or faints in the laſt of theſe, for want of true courage, let him know his honor goeth lame on one legge, onely the firſt of theſe two mayms may be cured, but the tother is called a priue maim, and is vtterly incurable.

Concerning the Orations of Agramant, Marſilio, and Sobrino, a man might make a long, & not vnneceſſary diſ- of the matter, but that I haue taken vpon me to note, and not to diſcoure: Firſt therefore in Agramant we may obſerue how young couragious Princes (ſuch as he is deſcribed to haue bin) are egged on by their grand minions (to whom peace is a penance) to warre vpon other mens countreyes, and many times leaue their owne vnguarded: In which kind, fooles ſometimes giue wiſer counſell then they. As in the time of that good king of France Francis the firſt, they report that when he invaded Italy, he conſulted with his counſell, where he were beſt to enter Lombardy: ſome aduiſing one way, ſome another, a foole ſtanding by, and hearing their conſultation, came in amongſt them and ſware that they were all fooles: for (ſaith he) here is euerie man that aduiſeth the king how to enter into Italy, but none of you takes care how he ſhall get out againe: this though accounted (as it was) but a fooles bolt for the time, yet proved too true afterwarde: for in that iourney the king was taken, and was ſent priſoner to a Caſtle in Spaine called Madrillo.

In Marſilio and Sobrino, we may ſee the qualities of a good counſeller to a Prince, and a bad, one hauing only a regard to his owne priuat, the tother plaine and faithfull, and carefull for his Princes beſt ſafetie. In that Sobrino the good and faithfull counſeller, aduiſeth to make an end of the war one way or other, either by taking or paying tribute, one may ob- ſerue that indeed it is no policie for Princes, but the vtter ruine & beggering of their Realmes, to prolong their wars, & to trifle away money & time in ſuch ſerious cauſes, & be as vncertain in the end as in the beginning. The ſaying of a no- ble & wiſe counſellor (another Sobrino) in England, is worthy to be remembered, thāt with a pretty tale he told, vtterly condemned ſuch lingring proceedings. The tale was this, a poore widow (ſaid he) in the country, doubting her prouiſion of wood would not laſt all the winter, & yet deſiring to roſt a ioint of meat & a hen one day to welcome her friends, laid on two ſticks on the fire, but when that would not ſcarſe heat it, ſhe fetched two more, & ſo ſtil burning them out by two and two (wheras one ſagot laid on at the firſt would haue roſted it) ſhe ſpent foure or five ſagots more then ſhe needed; & yet when all was done, her meat was ſcorched of one ſide, and raw of the tother ſide: her friends ill content with their fare, and ſhe enforced ere winter went about, to borrow wood of her poore neighbours, becauſe ſo many of her owne ſagots were ſpent.

Historic.

Creſus was the king of Lydia, who thought himſelfe happie for his riches: but Solon was of another opinion, and therefore thought a ſcole by him, till in the end Creſus being bound at a ſtake, to be burned by his victorious enemy, he cryed out on the name of Solon, and through that thicke and darke ſmoke, he could ſee that wiſedome, which before his eyes dazzled with fooliſh worldly felicitie could not ſee.

Craſſus called alſo the rich Craſſus, a Citiſen of Rome, his ſaying was, that no man was rich that could not with his bare reuenue maintaine a Royall army: which if it be a true ſaying, I doubt whether any Prince Chriſtened at this day be rich. Craſſus in reproch of his couetouſneſſe, had molten gold poured into his mouth by the Parthians, who tooke him priſoner and ſlew him. Cambiſes ſonne of Cyrus king of Perſia hauing conquered Egipt, invaded the Ammonians with a great armie, but for want of victuals was forced to giue ouer his enterpriſe. Further he ſent an armie before him of fif- tie thouſand men, with commandement to deſtroy the Temple of Iupiter Amon, and they eniring the deſerts of that country were neuer ſcene againe, ſo as it was thought that while they ſate at dinner in the field, a furious Sotherne wind rayſed ſuch ſtore of duſt and ſand, abouerwhelmed them and quite cowerd them.

Allegoric.

In the miracles done by Aſtolfo, is ſent Allegorically, that a man guided by vertue, and aſſiſted by grace, makes all kinde of creatures to ſerue his turne.

Alluſion.

His turning of ſtones to horſes, alluſes to the like thing in Ouids Metamorphoſis, where Prometheus and Epime- theus made men of ſtones.

Inque breui ſpacio ſuperorum numine ſaxa,  
Iacta viri manibus faciem traxere virorum,  
Et de ſœmineo reparata eſt ſœmina iactu.

In his taking the Southerne winde in a bagge, it alludes to a like thing in Homers Odiſſeas of Vliffeſs, that had the winde bound in a bagge, and ſome ſay the Sorcerers neare the North ſea, uſe to ſell the winde to ſayvers in glaſſes, and it is ſo common among them, that they will laugh as much at thoſe that beleue it not, as we would be to heare one tell it.

The end of the annotations pon the 38. booke.







## THE ARGUMENT.

*King Agramant breakes oth, and is constrained,  
Vnto his native soile by sea to flye,  
Where then Astolfo many townes had gained,  
And at Biserta siege as then did lye:  
Orlando thither commeth, madly brained,  
But th' English Duke did cure him by and by:  
Braue Dudon, with his new made of leanes,  
Meets Agramant, and botly him receaues.*



<sup>1</sup>  
 Hat tongue can tell, or  
 learned pen expresse?  
 The woes, to which *Rogero*  
 now did runne?  
 In mind, and body, driu'n  
 to such distresse,  
 That of two deaths, the  
 tone he cannot shun:  
 If he be slaine, and if he  
 kill no lesse,

Both wayes he fees he shall be quite vndonne:  
 By shame in death, and if he win and liue,  
 By that offence he shall his true loue giue.

<sup>2</sup>  
 The tother knight whom no such thoughts encombred  
 Lets frankly fly his blows without regard,  
 In to great store as was not to be numbred,  
 No time, no place, nor no aduantage spard:  
*Rogero* seemd to him, as if he slumbred,  
 Small list he had to strike, but all to ward,  
 And if he did, in such a place he strake,  
 His blow great sound, but little signe did make.

<sup>3</sup>  
 The Pagan Lords now doubt it will go wrong,  
 They see the combat so vnequall row,  
*Renaldo* seemd too lustie and too long,  
*Rogero* seemd too lasie and too slow.  
 But *Agramant* that sate the rest among,  
 Doth fret, and fume, and chafe, and weat, and blow,  
 Doth blame *Sobrino* chiefly, whose perswasion,  
 Was of this combat chiefe and sole occasion.

<sup>4</sup>  
 This while *Melissa* sage, whose skill was great  
 In Magicke art, repaired to the place,

And with some secret words she did repeat,  
 She changd her voice, her stature, and her face,  
 In mind hereby to worke a wondrous feat;  
 She seemd all armed, in a Dragons case,  
 In sword, in shield, in shew, in eu'rie thing,  
 She seemed *Rodomont* the Sarzan king.

<sup>5</sup>  
 To wofull *Agramant* she straight doth ride,  
 (In likensse of an horse, she rode a sprite)  
 And coming to his presence, lowd she cride,  
 (O ly Liege) this was too fowle an ouersight,  
 To match a beardless boy so meanly tride,  
 With such a famous and renowned knight,  
 And chiefe in matter that imports so much,  
 As doth the whole estate of Affricke tuch.

<sup>6</sup>  
 Wherefore that you in time this losse may saue,  
 Permit the combat to proceed no more,  
 Let *Rodomont* the blame and blemish haue,  
 Of breaking that, which you so rashly swore;  
 Now each man shew how well his sword can shauie,  
 Now I am here, each man is worth a score.  
 These words in *Agramant* had so much force,  
 That without more aduice, he straight tooke l' rse.

<sup>7</sup>  
 And thinking sure fierce *Rodomont* was theare,  
 Forthwith the Christens host he doth inuade,  
 Of oth nor promise he hath now no feare,  
 This one mans presence him so bold had made:  
 Each man doth in a moment couch his speare,  
 Or charge his pike, or draw his glittering blade:  
*Melissa* hauing set them thus togith'r,  
 With this illusion vauilht (God knows whither)

The



The two stout champions when they plainly saw,  
 In combat, that all quarrell should decide,  
 Disord'rd against all promise, and all law,  
 They ceate all force, and lay all wrath aside,  
 And by consent, themselves they do withdraw,  
 Vntill it might more plainly be decide,  
 In whether Prince of faith were found such want:  
 In aged Charles, or youthfull Agramant.

9

And each of them of new doth vow and sweare,  
 That vnto him that first did cou'nant breake,  
 They will for euer endlesse hatred beare,  
 And ioyne together such offence to wreake:  
 The while the hosts of neither side forbear  
 To make quick trial who be strong or weake,  
 For light at the first conflict they shew,  
 Their hearts if they be resolute or no.

10

Simile.

*Roundes may be  
 so called, or hun-  
 ters, because he  
 was a notable  
 huntsman.*

Euen as a greend which hunters hold in flip,  
 Doth strue to breake the string, or slide the collar,  
 (That sees the fearfull Deare, before him skip,  
 Pursued belike with some Acteons scholler)  
 And when he sees he can by no meanes slip,  
 Doth howle, and whine, and bites the string for choler  
 In such like case within the tents did stay,  
 Marsisa with dame Bradamant that day.

11

All that same day vnto that present howre,  
 They had beheld with great despite and paine,  
 Such tempting baits yet had they not the powre,  
 To set their foote in that forbidden plaine:  
 But now they go the field on each side scowre,  
 Though erst for duties sake they did abtaine,  
 Now finding such a true and iust excuse,  
 That Agramant had lewdly broke the truse.

12

She the first quite through the brest,  
 And made the speare come forth a yard behind;  
 Then with her sword she flies among the rest,  
 There chiefe where most resistance she doth finde:  
 And Bradamant puts Goldelance in rest,  
 With like effects, but of another kind,  
 For all she toucht therewith she ouerthrew,  
 And yet not one among them all she flew.

13

Thus these two warriours euer as they went,  
 Subdewd their enemies, and kept them vnder,  
 Who euer met them surely should be shent,  
 And each of them at others force did wonder:  
 But being both to sharpe reuengement bent,  
 At last they part themselves, and went asunder,  
 Each by her selfe, such high exploits performing,  
 As gaue the Turks long after cause of mourning.

14

Simile.

*In wie,  
 phrase so say  
 sh go faster.*

As when the Southerne winds do melt the snow,  
 Congeald on tops of mountaines many dayes,  
 It often happens that two streames do flow,  
 And taking in their course, two sundrie wayes,  
 At last so violent and furious grow,  
 That bearing downe, and breaking vntoall bayes,  
 They waite the fields, and seeme on vye to runne,  
 By which of them most damage may be donne.

15

Euen so these twaine, incens'd with rage and wrath,  
 And each in seu'ral acts their forces trying,  
 Do worke the Turks, no little woe and scath,  
 And leaue them ouerthrowne, or maymd, or dying:  
 Scarle Agramant the powre by this time hath,  
 (Say what he list) to keepe his men from flying,  
 Himselfe not shrinking though, nor once retiring,  
 But euermore for Rodomont enquiring.

16

By onely his aduise and exhortation,  
 (For so the vnaduided Prince doth thinke)  
 He broken had his tolemne protestation,  
 He maruels now, to find him so to shrink:  
 Likewise Sobrino with great lamentation,  
 (Religion in his mind so deepe did sinke)  
 Retird to Arly, euermore protesting)  
 His faultlesse mind, that periurie detesting.

17

Marsilio eke vnto his countrie fled,  
 The shamefull promise breach, of Agramant  
 Strake in his mind such superstitious dread,  
 He leaueth him to beare the brunt, who scant  
 Against the Christen souldiers could make head:  
 That no supplies of torren powres did want,  
 With Palladines among them fierce and bold,  
 Mixt like rich gemmes in faire embroderd gold.

18

But now a while I linquish this conflict,  
 And passe beyond the seas without a barke,  
 For to this tale I am not tyde so strict,  
 But that I will repeat (if you will harke)  
 Asolfos acts, who forward dayly prickt,  
 With new made horsemen, as (if you did marke)  
 I told you erst, and did all Affrike waite,  
 Vntill three kings resisted him at last.

19

The king of Algazer, and stout Bransard,  
 Did leuy powres, such as in hast they could,  
 And put them all in armes without regard,  
 That some to young were found and some to old;  
 Yea from the musters, women scant were spar'd,  
 For Agramant (as hath before bene told)  
 With hope of vaine reuenge, without aduise,  
 Of able men, vnpeopled Affrike twile.

20

Thus few were there, and of those few weretheare,  
 (So quite his countrie weale he did neglect)  
 The greater part vnskilfull, armes to beare,  
 As was more plainly proued in effect,  
 For at first brunt they fled from thence for feare,  
 In hope Biserta walls should them protect:  
 Braue Bucifer was taken in the fight,  
 Bransardo scapt, and sau'd himselfe by flight.

21

For Bucifer alone, he tooke more griete,  
 Then all the rest he did him so esteeme,  
 Because Biserta asked great reliefe,  
 For which this Bucifer most fit did seeme,  
 Who was in all those parts of credit chiefe;  
 Wherefore Bransardo faine would him redeeme,  
 He many wayes doth cast, but none conclude on,  
 Till at the last he did remember Dudon.

Simile.

*He turnes to A-  
 gramant in this  
 booke the 64. st.*



22

This *Dudon* was by blood and birth a Dane,  
But yet esteemd the Palladins among,  
He lately at the Bridge was prisoner tane,  
Where *Rodomont* the sturdie Turke and strong,  
Brought many worthy men vnto their bane:  
To Affrike *Dudon* then he sent ere long,  
Now *Bransford* thinkes (nor was his thought amisse)  
Stout *Bucifer* by change to get for this.

23

He perfect notice had, by true espiall,  
The Nubians leader was an English Lord,  
Who loue a Dane (there can be no deniall)  
And once were Danes, as writers do record:  
Wherefore he sends a messenger for triall  
Vnto *Astolfo*, who doth soone accord,  
To free his kinsman, whom he lou'd so dearly,  
And ioyned was in blood to him so nearly.

24

hus *Dudon* by the English Duke was freed,  
Who afterward his seruice did employ,  
Now (as *Saint Iohn* had wild him to proceed)  
He sought to worke the Turks some more annoy;  
And that he might set Prouence free with speed,  
Which *Agramant* and his did then enioy,  
He maketh of his men a new election,  
Whom he may send to free them from subiection.

25

And hauing chosen forth some men of these,  
As best from his huge armie might be mist,  
Whose number was so great, as he at ease  
With halfe of them three Affricks might resist:  
He cauld them to be trained for the seas,  
And praying God his purpose to assist,  
That night was shewd *Astolfo* in a vision,  
How he of ships might make a large prouision.

26

Next day the weather being faire and calme,  
*Astolfo* walketh to the salt sea shore,  
And holding in his hands in either palme,  
Great store of leaues that he had tane before,  
Of Bayes, of Cedar trees, of Oke, of Palme,  
Into the sea he flang them in great store;  
O metamorphosis beyond all credit,  
O admirable powre diuine that bled it!

27

No sooner had the water wet the leaues,  
But presently they chang'd their former hue,  
The veins that were in them, each man perceaues  
To grow to ribs and posts in order due,  
And still at each end sharpe each leafe receaues,  
Eu'n of a sailing ship proportion true:  
And of the ships as many sorts there weare,  
As there were trees that those leaues did beare.

28

A miracle it was to see them growne  
To ships and barks, with gallies, hulks and crayes,  
Each vessell hauing tackling of their owne,  
With sailes and oares to helpe at all assayes.  
The Duke prouided, when it once was knowne,  
Both marriners and masters in few dayes,  
For with his present pay he soone allured  
From Sard and Corsie men to seas inured.

Those two Islands  
haue store of  
good sailers.

29

Those that tooke shipping then, were counted more  
Then six and twentie thousand strong of hand.  
Great Admirall was *Dudon*, who before  
Had leard the seruice both of sea and land:  
Now while they lay at anker nigh the shore,  
To wait when wind would for their purpose stan,  
It fortun'd a man of warre came by them,  
Full lode with prisoners, and cast anker nie them.

30

These were those prisoners whom fierce *Rodomont*  
(As oft I haue declar'd) did dayly gei;  
When at the bridge he did them to dismount,  
And sometime backward in the riuer set:  
Here were (among some more of good account)  
Braue *Brandimart* and worthy *Sausonet*,  
With *Oliuer* - and some I now not tut<sup>1</sup>  
Both French Italian, Gascoigne knig<sup>s</sup> and Dutch.

31

The master of the barke had first assignd,  
His prisoners at Algier to vnload,  
But being driu'n by ouerblowing wind,  
Farre past the place, he thought to make abode  
Neare great Bileita, where he thinks to find  
None but his countrimen within the rode;  
To which he thinks himselfe as welcome guest,  
As *Progne* is vnto her chirping nest.

Simile.

32

But after, when th'Imperiall bird he saw,  
Conioyned to the Pard and flowre of France,  
He was abasht, and looked pale for aw,  
Much like to him that waking new, doth chance  
On poisonsd serpent tred, and faine would draw  
Himselfe from thence, for feare of more mischance;  
He quakes, and from the serpent doth retire,  
Whose poiton swels, and eyes do flame like fire.

Simile.  
Margul. Improvi.  
stima assis veluti  
qui sensibus an-  
guem,  
Pressis humi  
nitens, &c.

33

But now the wretched Pilot could not flie,  
And lesse could keepe the prisoners he had caug<sup>t</sup>,  
For both himselfe, and all they by and by,  
Vnto the place against his will were brought,  
Whereas the Duke and *Dudon* then did lie,  
Who welcomd well the Christens as they ought,  
And he that brought them thither, for his paines,  
Was made a gally slaue, and bound in chaines.

34

Thus were the knights most friendly entertained,  
And greatly welcomd by *Otons* sonne,  
Who horte and furniture for them ordained,  
And cauld to them great honor to be donne:  
Eke *Dudon* with these knights some days r<sup>est</sup>  
And thinks the time so spent, not lost but wonne:  
His iourney purposely three dayes deferring  
To spend the same with these braue knights confer-  
(ring.)

35

By their relation he doth vnderstand,  
In what estate King *Charles* and th'empire stood,  
What are the hau'ns, where he may safely land,  
And where they thought y<sup>e</sup> same would be withstood.  
Thus while discreetly on each point they scand,  
And each man told what he thought ill or good  
There suddenly rose in the campe alarme,  
The cause vnkown, but ech man cride, arme, arme.

The



36

The Duke *Astolfo* with his noble crew,  
That at that time conferring were together,  
Eight armed themselves, and out their swords they  
An went enquiring hither still and thither, (drew  
to learne of whence this sudden tumult grew,  
But yet no cause they could suspect or gether,  
At last they saw a madman stare and stampe,  
That nakt alone did trouble all the campe.

37

Those that had seene him first belike did flout him,  
But when some few vnto their cost had found,  
That with a bat he so did play about him,  
His blowes made many fall in deadly sound:  
They now began so much to dread and doubt him,  
That they had giu'n to him no little ground,  
And none of them to meet him had the harts,  
They on shot at him, or cast for

38

The noble Duke, and those with him did see,  
The wondrous force and most stupendious wracke,  
The madman wrought, and marueld much that he  
Alone could driue so many souledeirs backe:  
*Fiordeliege.* When lo, a Ladie of no meane degree,  
Rode towards them attyred all in blacke,  
And vnto *Brandimart* she came in hast,  
And claspt her arms about his necke full fast.

39

know you know, without my further showing,  
This was the spouse of noble *Brandimart*,  
Who euer since his wofull ouerthrowing,  
By *Rodomont*, did with a pensue hart,  
Seeke his release, till at the last she knowing,  
(As I before did more at large impart)  
How he beyond the seas was prisoner sent,  
Her selfe at Arly to take shipping ment.

40

but while that louing purpose she pursueth,  
And with her, an Easterne knight,  
Who brought vp *Brandimart* in tender youth,  
And kept him at a Castell (Siluan hight)  
He hearing at her mouth at large the truth,  
And how in Affrike they find him might,  
They soone agreed, no long time ouerslipping,  
To seeke him out and so forthwith tooke shipping.

41

So sooner they on Affrike shore did land,  
(*Bardino* sage, and faithfull *Fiordeliege*)  
But first the people let them vnderstand,  
*Astolfo* great Biserta did besiege,  
With many a Captaine braue, and gallant band;  
Likewise a brute of *Brandimart* their liege  
Was spread, that he was there arriued newly,  
But none was able to confirme it truly.

42

will so long they traueled on the coast,  
At last she found and saw him with her eyes,  
Among those Lords, amid the Nubian host,  
With which such ioy did in her thoughts arise,  
As vitall sprites did faile in her almost,  
Nor any word to speake could she deuise,  
But hangd about his necke a burden sweet  
And he as louingly his spouse did greet.

de fastis  
Legame vniuersale  
dip.  
mms

43

Full glad was he to see her, and as glad  
To see his ancient tutor and his friend,  
And further talke with them he would haue had,  
But he was forst to make a speedie end,  
By meanes the man that naked ran and mad,  
Did keepe such rule as did them all offend.  
Faile *Fiordeliege* that lookt with eye more curious,  
Cride, ah my deare, this is *Orlando* furious.

44

*Astolfo* eke when as he did behold him,  
And saw how madly he about did range,  
And no man durst him meet, nor none could hold  
He wonderd greatly at the sight so strange, (him,  
And by the marks that erst *Saint Iohn* had told him,  
He knew it was the man; but such a change  
There was in all his shape, from top to toe,  
He rather seemd a beast, more then a man in show.

45

*Astolfo* straight did call vnto the rest,  
And said my Lords, this man that you had vewd,  
*Orlando* is: at this themselves they blest,  
And eu'rie one his wofull pickle rewd:  
Well (said the Duke) to helpe our friend is best,  
And not to wayle; and therefore to conclude,  
Come ioyne your force to mine, and let vs take him  
And I do hope ere long he tober make him.

46

To this they soone assent, and *Brandimart*,  
With *Sanfonet* and *Oliuero* iolly,  
And *Dudon* clod him round, on eu'rie part,  
But he as full of strength, as foole of folly,  
At *Dudon* strake, and saue the blow in part  
Was broke by *Oliuer*, and fell not wholly  
On *Dudon*, sure I thinke that staffe accurst,  
His shield, his headpeece, head and all had burst.

47

His shield it brake, and thunderd on his scull,  
That noble *Dudon* therewithall fell backe,  
But *Sanfonet* strake with his sword so full,  
That of the staffe three yards he made him lacke:  
Now *Brandimart* thinks backward him to pull,  
And leape behind, a pick pack, on his backe,  
And holds his armes: the Duke doth then deuise,  
To hold his leg, and *Oliuer* his thyes.

48

*Orlando* shakes himselfe, and with a spring,  
Ten paces off, the English Duke he cast,  
But *Brandimart* from him he could not fling,  
That was behind him, and did hold him fast,  
But yet with *Oliuer* he was to bring,  
For with his fist he smot him as he past,  
That downe he fell, and hardly scaped killing,  
From mouth, nose eyes, the blood apace distilling.

49

Of headpeece stragg he neuer had more need,  
For sure he coul not haue escaped death,  
Except it had a good one bene indeed.  
This while *Astolfo* now had taken breath,  
And *Dudon* both wh late for want of heed,  
Were by *Orlando* tumbled on the heath,  
With *Sanfonet*, that par'd his staffe so well,  
All thre at once vpon *Orlando* fell.



50

Good *Dudon* that endeours him to cast,  
With *Brandimart*, about his shoulders hangs;  
*Astolfo* and the rest his arms hold fast,  
He seeks to loose himselfe with sudden pangs:  
Who so hath seene a Bull with mastiues chaft,  
That in his eares haue fixt their cruell fangs,  
How he doth runne, and rore, and with him beares  
The eager doggs, that still hold fast his cares.

Simile.

51

Let him imagine that *Orlando* now,  
In such sort drew the warriours on the plaine;  
But *Oliuer*, that had the broken brow,  
Againe on foote recoverd vp againe,  
Did cast within his mind a reason how,  
To do with ease, that they did seeke with paine:  
He doth bethinke a way, that will not misse  
To do the feat: and his deuice was this.

52

*Halser is a long  
rope with which  
they tow their  
ships to land.*

Full many a halser, and full manie a cord  
With sliding knots all knit he doth prouide,  
And to the leggs and armes of this mad Lord,  
He made them on the sudden to be tyde;  
And then their ends on each side by accord,  
They all of them amongst themselues deuide.  
Thus were those Princes faine to do vnto him,  
As Smiths do to an oxe, when they do shoe him.

Simile.

53

Then fell they on him when he lay on ground,  
And then they bind him sure, both hand and foote:  
*Orlando* when he felt himselfe thus bound,  
Doth striue in vaine, for striuing will not boote.  
*Astolfo* that doth meane to make him sound,  
And saw his skin looke blacke as any foote,  
Requested them vnto the shore to beare him,  
Which soone was done, for now they need not feare

(him.

54

Then seau'n times was he washed in the place,  
And seau'n times dipped ouer eares and hed,  
To get the scurfe from of his skin and face,  
Which with his naked going had bene bred:  
Then with some herbs, the Duke gat in this space,  
He made them stop his mouth, for why he fed,  
For certaine secret reasons that he knowes,  
He must not fetch his breath but at his nose.

55

Then kneeling downe as if he askt some boone  
Of God, or some great Saint, that pot he brought,  
Which he had carride fr m beyond the Moone,  
The Iarre, in which *Orlando*s wit was caught,  
And clodd it to his nostrills, and estioone,  
He drawing breath, this miracle was wrought,  
The Iarre was void, and empti'd eu'rie whit,  
And he restord vnto his pertec it.

56

Simile.

As one that in some dreame or fearfu yfision,  
Hath dreamt of monstrous beast, and vgly fends  
Is troubled when he wakes with superstition,  
And careth what such vgly sight intends,  
And lying wake, thinks of th t apparition,  
And long time after in that fancie spends:  
So now *Orlando* lay, not little musing,  
At this his present state, and vncouth vsing.

57

He holds his peace, but lifting vp his eyes,  
He sees his ancient frends king *Brandimart*,  
And *Oliuer*, and him that made him wife,  
All whom he knew, and loued from his hart:  
He thinks, but cannot with himselfe deuise,  
How he should come to play so mad a part,  
He wonders he is nak't, and that he feesles,  
Such store of cords about his hands and heeles.

58

At last he said, as erst *Sileno* said,  
To those that tooke him napping in t caue,  
*Soluite me*: with countenance so stayd,  
And with a cheare to sober and so graue,  
That they vnlooted him, as he them prayde,  
And sufferd him his libertie to haue,  
And clothed him, and comforted his sa fle,  
Tha ued of his former fle.

*Looke in the  
florie.*

59

Thus being to his former wits restord,  
He was likewise deliuerd cleane from loue;  
The Ladie whom he erst so much adord,  
And did esteeme all earthly ioyes aboue,  
Now he despisde, yea rather quite abhord:  
Now onely he applies his wits to proue,  
That fame and former glorie to recouer,  
Which he had lost, the while he was a louer.

60

This while *Bardino* told to *Brandimart*,  
How that his father *Monodant* was dead,  
And how his brother *Gylyant* on the part  
Of all that those East Iles inhabited,  
Him sent of purpose these news to impart,  
And pray him (as he ought) to be their head:  
Sith all the world had not a Realme more wealthy,  
Nor any Prince could with a seate more healthy.

61

Wherefore (saith he) deare sir, it is most meet  
That you should now repaire to your o ne,  
For home though homely twere, yet is it sweet,  
And natie toile is best: you would not come  
About the world, did you once tast and see't,  
Thus much he said, but *Brandimart* in whome,  
True loue & great renown were bands more strong  
Then priuat profit, answerd this er long.

*Sentence.*

62

My brothers message, and your frendly paine  
I kindly take, but lo: my word is past,  
With *Charles* and with *Orlando* to remaine,  
And them to serue whil these garboyles do last:  
Now in my steed, I will my brother raigne  
Let him be my vice-roy, and I will hast,  
When once these warres are at a finall end,  
To come, and there my life with them to spend.

63

Thus these did part, and next ensuing day,  
Went *Dudon* with his fleet to Prouence ward,  
*Orlando* with the Brittish Prince doth stay;  
And when the state of those same warres he hard,  
Vnto *Biserta* straight a siege they lay,  
But euermore *Orlando* had regard,  
That (as *Astolfo* followd his aduise)  
To giue him th'honor of each enterprise.

But



*Heralls of the  
rape of Biserta  
in the next booke  
the 8. staffe.*

But when they did the great Biserta win,  
Then they assailed it, and on which side,  
Now at the assault, the men within  
Did yeeld, durst no longer triall byde,  
cannot further now proceed herein,  
But must deferre it to another tyde:  
Now I do purpose vnto you to show,  
How *Agramant* receiued an ouerthrow.

65

Who was welnye abandond of his men,  
Eu'n in the verie furie of the fight,  
For why *Marsilio* and *Sobrinio* then  
Were gone, in minde to saue themselves by flight;  
In walled townes they feared themselves to pen,  
But went to sea with all the hast the  
And many of the Turkishi  
The same follow giu'n them by the etwayne.

66

Yet *Agramant* did beare it out a space,  
But when he saw there was no other shift,  
Then from his enemies he turnd his face,  
To get into the towne was all his drift:  
Him *Bradumant* purlew'd a wondrous pace,  
Still spurring Rabican, that ran full swift,  
She wisht vpon his corps to venge the wrong,  
In keeping of her deare from her so long.

67

On tother side *Marsisa* rode as fast,  
To venge though late, her fathers wofull end,  
She makes her horse to feele she is in hast,  
But each of them doth misse that they intend:  
He got within the gates and made them fast,  
And then to sea he doth himselfe commend,  
He sees he was not able to withstand,  
The forces of his enemies by land.

68

*Marsisa.*

As two coragious Pards, that held in chafe  
An Hart, or bearded Goat vpon a plaine,  
That scaped then by swiftnesse of his pace,  
With no small wrath, and chafe turne backe againe,  
As though they thought they had a great disgrace,  
In that they follow'd had the prey in vaine,  
So did the damtels chafe, and sigh, and fret,  
That they to *Agramant* no neare could get.

69

But though he scapt their hands, yet sure the rest  
Escaped not, full dearely then abuying,  
Some wounded in the side, in backe, and brest,  
Some slaine out right, some worse the dead a dying,  
How sorily (poore seloules) had they bene drett,  
Whose safetie was not wrought, no not by flying,  
For *Agramant*, himselfe more sure to saue,  
To shut the Citie gates commandment gaue.

70

He made the bridges eake to be cut downe,  
On Rodon streame, that was both large and deepe,  
Ah wofull subiects vnto tyrants crowne,  
Who that they may their persons safely heepe,  
Regard not if their people swim or drowne,  
But deeme of them like beasts, or silly sheepe,  
That to themselves they pamper may and cherish,  
They care not if their men in millions perish.

*Sentence.*

71

Twass infinite the number that was slaine,  
In this same last conflict. nor fewer drownd,  
While they attempted desperately in vaine,  
To passe the streame, so brode and so profound  
Of which great slaughter yet the signes remaine,  
For dayly neare to Arlie walls are found,  
Huge heaps of dead mens bones, and of their sculls,  
Whose flesh was then deuour'd, by crows and gulls.

72

Now *Agramant* made speedie preparation,  
And cauld his ships forth in the deepe to lanch,  
Prowding all that longs to navigation,  
In mind for ay to bid farewell to France:  
Two dayes the winde stopt his determination,  
The third it seru'd, and then he did aduance  
His sayles, and eu'rie one did ship his ore,  
And so away they parted from the shore.

73

*Marsilio* doubting least his Realme of Spaine,  
Should now be driu'n to pay this costly shot,  
And fearing to be forced to sustaine,  
That storme alone, which fell in France so hot;  
Doth land at Valence, where he did ordaine  
All furniture, that might for warre be got,  
Repairing all his townes against that warre,  
That after him, and all his frends did maie.

74

But *Agramant*, his ships to Affrike bent,  
Ill armd, halfe void of men, but full of griefe,  
For most of them were sad and malcontent,  
Three parts of foure, were lost past all reliefe:  
And though for feare perhaps, of being shent,  
None dare in publike speake to his reprieft,  
Yet secretly, their burning hate to coole,  
Some cald him proud, some cruell, some a foole.

75

But (as I say) they speake this in their sleeues,  
For feare of blame, except some two or three,  
That each to other open dare their greues,  
Yet wretched *Agramant*, he doth not see,  
How he is scorn'd; but he still beleeueth,  
That he is lou'd, and why, because that he,  
Saw neuer looks but fawningly disguised,  
Heard neuer words, but fainely deuiled.

*Looke in the  
Morall.*

76

Now he was fully purposed in his landing,  
To leaue Biserta and seeke harbour nyer,  
Because he late had perfect vnderstanding,  
The Nubians spoyld those parts with sword and fier  
Wherefore for doubt of dangerous withstanding,  
He meant to shun that port, and land farre hyer,  
And thence wit all vnto his parts addrest,  
To bring relief vnto the towne afflicted.

77

But loe his cruell fate, doth ouerthrow  
His counsell sage, and quite his hope deceaues,  
For while scant winde did make him sayle but slow,  
Stout *Dudon* with that nauie made of leaues,  
Met him full butt, that no such thing did know,  
And with a fierce assault him there receaues,  
Enforcing him to vnexpected fight,  
In that darke, cloudie, and tempestuous night.

F f



78

For *Agramant* no spyall had till now,  
Of these same ships, and would haue deemd a fable,  
If one had told him of a little bow,  
To make a hundred ships, a man was able:  
Wherefore he sayled on he car'd not how,  
And doubts no foe but waue, and wind vnstable,  
And not expecting such strange sodaine stops,  
He neuer set his watchmen in his tops.

79

On tother side, our men that had espyde,  
Their enemies, at sea an houre ere night,  
Came with great speed, although all vnderfride,  
For eu'rie ship kept close their fire and light:  
At last when as they saw their time, they tryde  
Their vtmost force, and with full sayles they light  
On their foes shipping, that at first did shrinke,  
And many did vnto the bottome sink e.

80

Now *Dudons* men began to play their parts,  
Some vsing fire, some heauie stones, some Steele,  
Vpon the Turks fell such a storme of darts,  
As they before, the like did neuer feele:  
On our side God, with courage fill'd their harts,  
On their side, each mans hart was in his heele,  
They stood amazzd with feare, and quite astonished,  
The time now come their old sins should be puni-

81

Thus *Agramant* is closd on eu'rie side,  
With many a pike, and sword, and hooke, and axe,  
The stones that fell from high, made breaches wide,  
And much sea enterd at the new made cracks,

*Description of a  
bloody sea fight.*

**Morall.**

In *Rogeros* irresolute fighting, may be noted how necessary it is for a man before he go to fight, to put on a good and firme resolution, and chiefly of the goodnes of his cause. In *Agramants* breach of the oath and promise, we may see how odious a thing it is before God and man to be *Fœdistragi*, Truce-breakers; which maketh them indeed, to be forsaken of their friends, prosecuted with great malice of their enemies; lothed, detested, and scorned of their owne subiects, as in the end breeds their vtter confusion. In that *Agramants* souldiers do mutine against him and reuile him self notwithstanding thinks himselfe to be well beloued of them, and well thought of, we may see in what a lamentable case those Princes are, that (as is said of them)

Neuer see lookes, but fawningly disguised,  
Neuer heare words, but fayningly deuiled.

**Historie.**

Of the Historie of this booke, first for *Sileno* that was *Virgils* Schoolemaster, it is written of him, he was one day laid to sleep, after he had bene made drunke with wine, and his schollers merily bound him, wherupon he waking said that verse,  
*Soluite me pueri, satis est potuisse videri.*

Concerning this great battell at *Arlie*, certaine it is (as diuers Historiographers haue noted it) that there remaine to this houre, great heapes of bones, betokening some great slaughter of men in that place: but when it should be done, I cannot precisely affirme.

**Allegoric.**

In that *Melissa* by the helpe of the deuill, taking vpon her a false image of *Rodomont*, moued *Agramant* to breake truce, the Allegorie thereof is, that they be diuels or diuellish persons, that will moue Princes to breake their promise.

Of *Orlandos* restoring to his wit, which indeed is the chiefe Allegorie of all the booke, and where-upon the booke taketh this name, *Orlando Furioso*, this in briebe is the meaning thereof.

*Orlando* a man of noble birth, Erl of Anglant, nephew to *Charles the great*, falls so farre in loue with *Angelica*, by which (as I haue often noted) is mea pleasure, or honor; that he leaseth his wits and becomes mad: by which may be meant any folly that young men fall into with loue, with prodigalitie, with ambition or vaine studies; (which are at large recited in the 34. booke.) At last with the receipt he had of *S. Iohn*, makes him wise againe, that is, by the grace of God and by the Gospell, which teacheth vs how to despise all these worldly things, and either quite leaue them or turne them to our good and benefite.

**Allusion.**

The sea fight which in the later end of this booke described, is like that which *Lucan* sets forth in the ciuil wars between *Cæsar* and *Pompey*: or rather indeed, to that he speaks of in the next booke of *Cardinal Hippolito* against the *Venetians*.

Here end the annotations vpon the 39. booke.

But most the fire, which they could least abate.  
That takes in pitched boords, and wreathed flax,  
To kindle verie quicke, but slow to quench,  
Annoyd them sore with heat, & smoke, & stench.

82

Some ouer boord do fall in water cold,  
And there are drown'd: some take the to their swim-  
But on another bark while they take hold, (ming,  
They now full fraught, and fearing ouertrimming,  
With cruell sword (a foule sight to behold)  
Cut of their bands, w which they now were climbing,  
The bleeding stumps all mangled there remained,  
And with fresh blood, the water salt was stained.

83

Some few to saue their liues that had desir'd  
Or at th to leese them with paine.  
Do to escape the fier,  
Till with new feare of drowning, they againe,  
Vnto the flaming shipwracks do retier,  
And there, with much a do are glad and faine,  
To catch some burning boord: and being loth,  
To dye of either death, they dye of both.

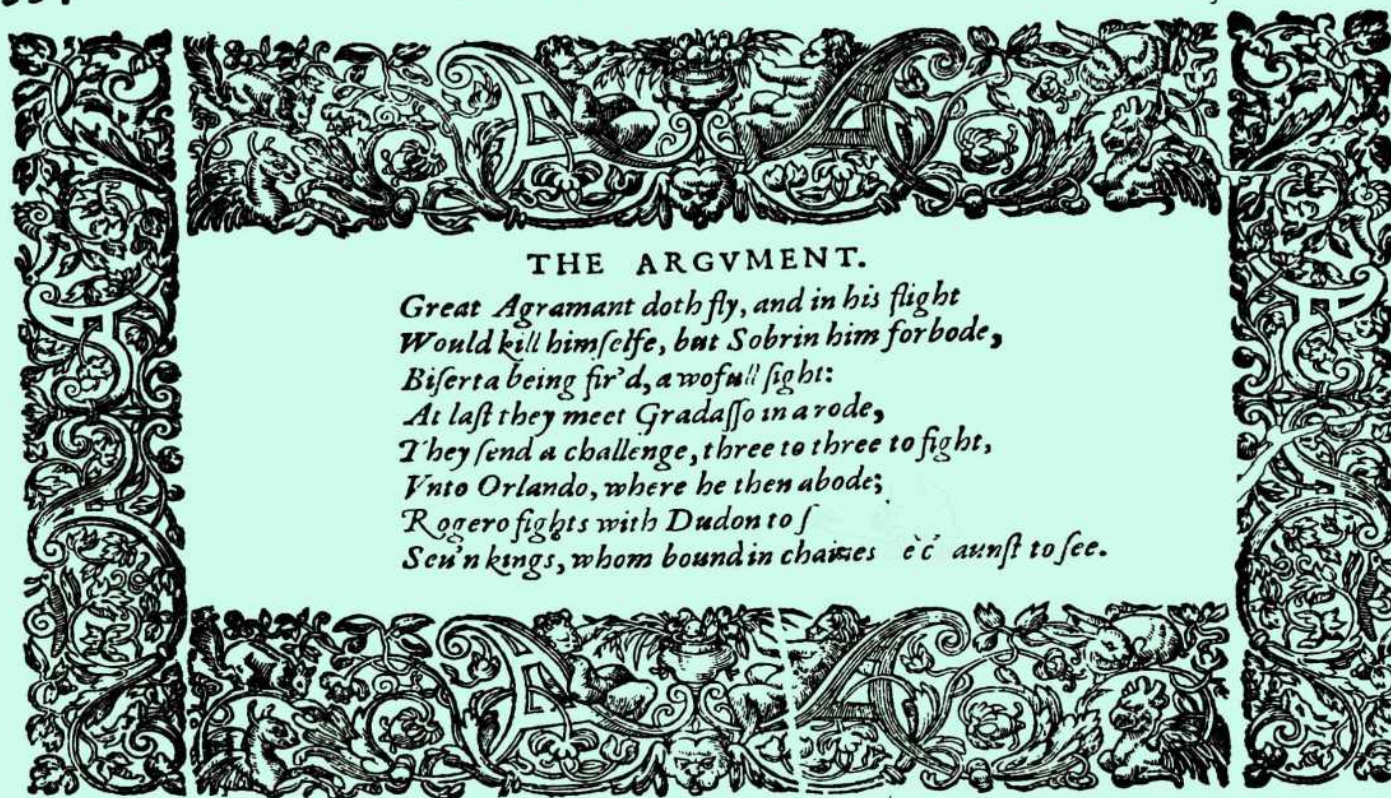
84

Some one for feare of sword, or axe, or pike,  
Doth all in vaine, vnto the sea betake him,  
For why some stone, or arrow, or such like,  
Ere he be farre from thence, doth ouertake him:  
But least the reader haply may mislike,  
My too long tale, this motion I would make him,  
That to another season he deferre,  
To heare the sequell of this bloody warre.





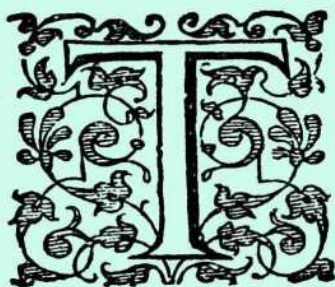




## THE ARGUMENT.

*Great Agramant doth fly, and in his flight  
Would kill himselfe, but Sobrin him forbode,  
Biserta being fir'd, a wofull fight:  
At last they meet Gradasso in a rode,  
They send a challenge, three to three to fight,  
Vnto Orlando, where he then abode;  
Rogero fights with Dudon to f  
Sen'n kings, whom bound in chaines e'e aunst to see.*

*Looke in the Hi-  
story of the simi-  
litudes.*



<sup>1</sup> Were long ( my Lord) to  
tell of all that fought,  
In that sea fight, and certes  
all the while,  
That I should tell it you, I  
should be thought,  
To beare pots (as they say)  
to Samos Ile,  
Where earthen vessels in  
great store are wrought:

Or Owles to Athens, Crocodils to Nyle:  
For more then can of this by me be told,  
Your selfe haue caused many to behold.

<sup>2</sup> Your faithfull people had a long prospect,  
When all a day vpon the streame of Poe,  
Your men, as your great vallew did direct,  
The shipping of your foes assaulted so,  
That with their blood the streame they did infect,  
And brought vpon them all, a world of woe;  
Then both your selfe, and others plaine did see,  
How sundry deaths, in fights of sea there be.

*Ariosto was sent  
post to Rome to  
pacifie Pope In-  
lio the second,  
which he touch-  
eth in one of  
his Satyres.*

*The Lyons teeth  
and pawes mean-  
ing the Veneci-  
ans, called the  
Lyons of the sea.*

<sup>3</sup> It was not then indeed, my hap to see't,  
(Sent then to Rome six dayes before in post,  
To craue then, at the holy fathers  
Reliefe and aid against so great an he  
And in that time your grace with them did meet,  
In such a sort, so sorely to their cost,  
And so you par'd the Lyons teeth and pawes,  
That since that time to feare w had no cause.

<sup>4</sup> But Alfonso, and Moore that saw the same,  
Affranio, Anniball, and Zerbinet,

*Albert, and Baygn, and three that beare my name, Three of the  
name of Ariosto.*  
Declar'd to me the conquest you did get:  
Alto their banners, monuments of fame,  
Which offerd in the Churches you did set,  
With fiftene Galliestane a thousand botes,  
Of that rich conquest, giue vs open notes.

<sup>5</sup> He that had seene the fire and wondrous wreake,  
That at that time was wrought vpon yo  
When for your few, their many were too weak  
He might describe the deaths and diuers woes,  
Of Agramant's host, of which I speake,  
And of their great and grievous ouerthrowes,  
Then when amidst the surging waues and salt,  
Stout Dudon in the night did them assault.

<sup>6</sup> When first the fight began, the night was darke,  
But when the flame vpon the pitch tooke hold,  
The fire gaue light, and did so clearly sparke,  
That Agramant might plainly now behold  
His enemies, and their great number marke  
Incredible, if any had it told:  
Wherefore in season to preuent the worst,  
He changd the course he had intended furst.

<sup>7</sup> And chusing out a vessell swift of sayle,  
And placing there his things of greatest price,  
With Brigliadore (sith all hope now doth fayle)  
To steale from thence he closlie doth deuise:  
And whil that Dudon doth his men assaile,  
In all the hast he can, away he flies,  
His men the sword, the sea, the fire destroyes,  
And he is fled that caused their annoyes.

And



8

And in that Barke, with him *Sobrinio* fled,  
Who much complained and was not little greeued,  
That that which he before so truly sed,  
Yet then by *gramant* was not belceued:  
t tell how good *Astolfo* sped,  
A exploits *Orlando* had atcheued,  
Who counfeld so to raze *Biserta* towne,  
That it might neuer noy th'Imperiall crowne.

*He turnes to  
gramant in the  
staffe of this  
booke  
Astolfo.*

9

And so it was in publicke fort proclaymd,  
That the third day th'affault they should expect,  
*Astolfo* had some ships before ordaynd,  
(For *Dudon* had not all) for this effect,  
And these same ships with *Sanfonet* remaynd,  
that could be sea and land direct,  
Who rode at a er neare *Biserta*  
But di in the hau'n a my mor

*The assaults of  
Biserta.*

10

The Brittish Duke, and valiant *Pilladine*,  
That like good Christi ens vsed euermore,  
To pray to God for grace and aide deuine,  
Proclaymed in the campe, three dayes before,  
That to assault the towne they did assigne,  
By fast and publicke prayre, Christ to adore,  
And craue his aid against that wicked towne,  
That they might raze it quite and beat it downe.

*True deuotion.*

11

And hauing ended that their solemne fast,  
And made their vowes, accustomed in such case,  
Then frendly they together take repast,  
And each his frend, and parent doth embrace,  
And spake if those words should be their last,  
The kindly teares, oft trickling downe their face,  
And eu'rie one resolu'd by and by,  
Either to win the towne, or in the place to dy.

12

Also the wretched Priests within the towne,  
With ned show of foolish superstition,  
Pray vnto *Macon*, that he do not frowne  
On them: and vow to him on that condition,  
Great Holocausts, with cost of many a crowne,  
Of him they seeke to haue their sinnes remission,  
And as if he the fates could mend or alter,  
They offer sacrifices on his alter.

*Superstition.*

13

Then when they were by their great Cady blest,  
They went (but faintly) to their Citie wall,  
Yet did the fayre *Aurora* take her rest,  
And scarce the Eastern coast yet looked pale,  
When *Sanfonet*, *Astolfo*, and the rest,  
That had the needfull things prouided all,  
The noble enterprize did take in hand,  
And did assault the towne by sea and land.

*The name of  
Macon's Priest.*

14

*Biserta* hath this manner situation,  
Two parts thereof with water are enclosed,  
Two parts with goodly wall of ancient fashion,  
But not so strong, as one would haue supposed:  
And though to make new strength and reparation,  
The king *Bransardo* all the towne disposed,  
His time and warning were so short and small,  
He could do little good, or none at all.

*Biserta's situa-  
tion.*

15

*Astolfo* did appoint the Nubian king  
Such wife to noy the keepers of the wall,  
With darts, and Turkish bowes, and many a sling,  
That from the battlements he draue them all,  
That now he might both horse and footmen bring,  
Vpon the ditch in perill none or small;  
And each according to his powre and skill,  
Brought matter wherewithall the ditch to fill.

16

Some fagots brought, & some brought store of helme  
Some heauy stones, & some light planks and boords  
And lest the stream their worke might ouerwhelme,  
They turned it away by other foords;  
Great store of wood there grew in that same Realme  
The which to them great store of stuffe affords,  
And now that Prouerbe see performd you might,  
That many hands make heauie works but light.

*Helme is the base  
of the straw  
with which the  
thatch houses.*

*Prouerbe.*

17

The Nubians fierce impatient of all stay,  
And by desire of gaine all headlong led,  
The perill great and danger do not way,  
But each man clapps his target on his hed:  
And then their battrie to the walls they lay,  
With rammes, and engines strongly furnished,  
With which to shake the walls they do begin,  
Nor were they all vnfurnished within.

18

Darts, stones, and planks, yea eu'n their houses tyle,  
They flang down on the, whē they drew more neare  
By which they brake and pierced otherwhile,  
Their engines huge, so as it might appeare,  
Dame Fortune seemd at first on Turks to smile,  
But after soone againe she changd her cheare,  
No sooner night was gone, and Sun once vp,  
But that they tasted of another cup.

19

Then on each side they had so hot a charge,  
As hardly they were able to sustaine:  
*Sanfonet* of the shipping had the charge,  
And he by sea assaults them to their paine;  
And, for their powre was great, and place was large,  
Each Captaine tooke with him a feuerall traine,  
Thereby the more to trouble all their foes,  
And of their vertue, to make larger shoes.

20

And for that speciall cause, they do deuide,  
Their mightie host into toure seu'rall parts,  
To th'end that by that meanes it might be spide,  
Which men had stout, and which had fainting harts,  
Great towres on mightie wheelles did seeme to ride,  
Drawne with great force like ordinary carts,  
And Elephants did carrie towres so tall,  
As did in height surpasse the Citie wall.

21

A scaling lad *Brandimart* doth beare,  
And cly es himselte and causeth others clyme:  
For what man hauing such a guide, could feare;  
Each man to stay doth thinke it haynous crime:  
The ladders strength was weighd by no man there,  
Each rounge a man, and some beares two sometime:  
Now *Brandimart* to conquest wholly bent,  
Gets to the top, and winnes a battlement.



22

With hand and foote he clammerd in such sort,  
He wan a batlement and did it keepe;  
Then with his sword he made them all such sport,  
As could the lookers on, not laugh, but weepe:  
The ladder now chargd with too great resort,  
Standing aslope, and not vpright and steepe,  
Brake in the midst, so that saue *Brandimart*,  
All of them fell, vnto their paine and smart.

23

Looke in the  
Allusion.

Their Captaine though, with this no whit dismayd,  
Keepes still his place though he the hap did marke,  
Although he saw his men him could not ayd,  
Though he alone were all their shooting marke;  
His men below cryde out to him, and prayd  
Him to retire, but he no whit could harke,  
But boldly from the wall into the towne,  
Which was thrise ten foote deepe, he leaped downe.

24

As if the pau'ment had bene straw, not stone,  
So lept he downe, so nimble and so light,  
And being there, layd so about alone,  
He made them all giue place vnto his might:  
Of those that fought he killed many a one,  
The rest thought best to saue themselues by flight,  
But they that saw him leape downe from without,  
Within their minds were full of dread and doubt.

25

Straightwayes about the campe a rumor spred,  
From mouth to mouth, & man to man doth come,  
And fame doth fly, and flying gathers hed,  
Of that hard feat, that *Brandimart* had done;  
And comes at last whereas *Orlando* led  
His band, and after to king *Otons* sonne,  
And then to *Oliuero*, neuer ceasing,  
But in her going still her tale increasing.

26

All these, but chiefe *Orlando* all among,  
That *Brandimart* in minde did dearely loue,  
And hearing it from thence they tarried long,  
It would be hard his danger to remoue;  
Vnto the walls set scaling ladders strong,  
Resolued now their vtmost force to proue;  
And vp they mount, with looks so grim and bold,  
As scant their enemies durst them behold.

27

Simile.

As when the seas are wrought with sturdie wind,  
The ventrous vessell tolt with many a waue,  
Is sometime smote before, sometime behind,  
And each surge striues a passage free to haue;  
The fearfull Pilot with astonisht mind,  
Knowes not which way himselfe he should behaue,  
Till at the last one surge the whole possesseth,  
And so both Pilot, ship, and all oppresseth.

28

So when those three, of whom before I kee,  
Had got the wall, they did the souldiers each,  
To follow them, and so large path did make,  
As thousands of them now the wall did reach:  
This while the monstrous rammes the walls did  
In other places, and made such a breach, (shake  
That now in many parts without resistance,  
They might to *Brandimart* bring good assistance.

29

Looke how that streame surnam'd of *Stams* the king, *Simile.*  
With damage great about his banks doth grow, *Poe called the*  
When some strong wind, or tyde of highest spring, *king of rivers:*  
Makes him beyond accustomed bounds to flow,  
And thereby hurt vnto the fields doth bring,  
And drowneth flockes, and houses ouer  
Then trees do harbour fish, as new come guests,  
Where flying birds were wont to build their nests.

30

So now *Biserta* walls were farre too weake,  
To saue the Citie from both sword and fire;  
The valiant Captaines first the Ice do breake,  
To follow whom, the souldiers do aspire;  
And what with will their ancient wrongs to wre  
And what with hope of booties, and desire,  
They ruine the Citie, that had bee  
Of *Africa* the triumphant Queene

31

Now multitudes lay slaine in eu'ry street,  
And with the blood that of their wounds did runne,  
The channels flowd vermillion vnder feet;  
But when the fire to take had once begunne,  
No doubt it was a wofull sight to see,  
What spoile vpon the towne by fire was done:  
Such cries, such plaints were ouer all the Citie,  
As might haue moued any hearts to pitie.

32

Their helpes Gods now vnder foot were troden,  
Their sacred iewels taken all for pray,  
The conquerers come forth of houses, loden,  
With gold, with plate, with faire and rich aray;  
And though the souldiers flatly were forbidden  
Foule beastly lust, this was to them no stay,  
Young children and old matrones could not scape.  
Deflouring forced, nor vngodly rape.

33

Stout *Oliuero* with a sound blow slew,  
King *Bucifer*, and brought him to his end,  
*Bransardo* kild himselfe, when as he knew,  
The Citie could not now it selfe defend;  
*Astolfo* did in single fight subdew  
*Fuluo*, and tooke him prisoner in the end:  
These three were thote, whom (as before you hard)  
King *Agramant* those countreyes left to guard.

34

But *Agramant*, who as before I told,  
Stole from his men, and so away did sayle,  
When as he did these flames from farre behold,  
Much did the state of that same towne bewaile;  
But when a messenger did plaine vnfold,  
How farre his foes in Affricke did preuaile,  
He would haue flame himselfe, of woes to rid him,  
Saue that the sage *Sobrinio* did forbid him.

*Agramant.*

35

As fir said he (in frendly sort him chiding) (thought,  
Driue from your worthe minde such wretched  
What could be to your foes more welcome tiding,  
Then that your selfe, your owne destruction sought;  
They doubt, while you in safetie are abiding,  
But hard to keepe, that they haue easie caught;  
Not one of them but dreads, and greatly feares,  
That Affricke while you liue, cannot be theirs.

*Sobrinio's Oracion*  
to *Agramant*, to  
perswade him  
not to kill him-  
selfe.

Your



36  
Your death would all your friends of hope deprive,  
Onely helpe that in our case is left)  
they haue gotten, while you remaine aliue,  
They can but want it robberie and theft:  
Who shall against them stricke?  
But Alas we lost, and we of hope are left:  
herefore though for your selfe you life abhorde,  
Liue for our sake (at least) my soueraigne Lord.

37  
The Souldan sure will helpe your cause t' aduance,  
To him you may for men and money send,  
Be sure he will be loth the king of France  
Should nest in Affricke, being not his friend:  
*randino* knew of your mischance,  
He would both men, and horse, and monie send,  
The state of Meda, Persia, and Ar  
With Aragon helpe you with

38  
These words then spake the graue wise man and old,  
To moue his Prince a better minde to carrie,  
And bad him cheare himselfe, and still he told,  
What hopes there were (tho sure he thought contrary)  
He saw and knew their comfort was but cold,  
That long they vse to pray, and sue, and tarie,  
Who hauing lost their crownes, to sue are faine  
To other kings, to helpe them home againe.

Sentence.

Looke of this in  
the morall and  
historic.

39  
Both Hanniball and Iugurth samples be,  
To Princes all, that trust in forren ayd,  
With Lodwicke Sforce whom this last age did see,  
Vnto a stronger Lodwicke foule betrayd:  
Wherefore vnto that sentence I agree,  
That Duke Alfonso of Ferrara said,  
A greater signe of folly is not showne,  
Then trusting others force, distrust ones owne.

Sentence.

40  
in that conflict and bitter warre,  
In which he found Christs Vicar not his friend,  
And that the Venice state with him did iarre,  
And he that promised him to defend,  
From Italie was driu'n and absent farre,  
Yet neuer would Alfonso condescend,  
To put himselfe in other mens subiection,  
And leaue his state to forren powres protection.

41  
But Agramant of comfort all bereft,  
Forsooke the shore, and lanced to the deepe,  
To thinke in what estate his Realme was left,  
Does make him bitterly to wayle and weepe,  
From right hand now they sayd vnto the left,  
And Eastward all the night their course did keepe,  
Vntill a storme that rose within a while,  
Did cause them harbour in a little Ile.

42  
A little Ile voyde of inhabitants,  
But full of Hares, and Conies, and of Deare,  
With couerts great, of trees and slender plants,  
That had not bene cut downe in many a yeare:  
For there was nothing to supply their wants,  
Onely some tokens plainly did appeare,  
That fishers vied there their nets to drye,  
The while the fish in sea do quiet lye.

43  
Here onely in the harbour they did find,  
A ship that had bene weatherbeaten sore,  
*Gradaffo* forced by contrary wind,  
Came in that ship from Arly late before,  
With princely gesture, and behauiour kind,  
Each king salutes the tother on the shore;  
For well they lou'd together, and were late,  
Fellows in arms neare Paris walles and gate.

*Gradaffo.*

44  
The king of Sericane with no small griefe,  
Did heare the storie of their late distressie,  
And which did comfort Agramanté chiefe,  
His person offerd these harms to redresse,  
But that he shall in Ægypt finde reliefe,  
He greatly doubts, and thinketh nothing lesse,  
*Pompeys* example teacheth you (he said)  
That banisht men finde there but sorie aid.

*Pompey betrayed  
in Ægypt.*

45  
But sith the case so stands, and that you say,  
English *Asolfo* with a Nubian host,  
And mad Orlando, who this other day  
As I did heare, for loue his wit had lost,  
Haue done such hurt, I haue bethought a way,  
That at this time I thinke will profite most:  
I will Orlando challenge hand to hand,  
Who (sure I am) in my hands cannot stand.

46  
Were he once dead, the rest I count as straw,  
And for the Nubians, though I cannot dreame  
How they should come, yet know I how to draw  
Them backe again from yours, to their own Reame  
Those other Nubians, whom a diuers law  
Sunders from these, as well as Nylus streame,  
Shall with Arabian and Macrobian forces  
Assaile them, (these haue gold, & those good horses,

*The Arabian  
horses of great  
account.*

47  
The king of Affricke praised this offer kind,  
And called it a good and blessed storme,  
That causd him such a friend as this to find,  
And thanks him for his offer: but the forme  
Of it (he said) doth no whit please my mind,  
No though thereby I might all harmes reforme,  
And that I might Bilerta towne regaine,  
I would not do mine honor such a staine.

48  
If any man must challenge him, then I  
It is, that am in honor tide vnto it,  
And whether I shall kill or else shall die,  
I am resolu'd, surely I will do it:  
Nay then sir (said *Gradaffo*) I will trie  
Another way, if you assent but to it,  
We two will make one challenge thus: to fight  
Against Orlando and some other knight.

49  
So I be one (tho *Agramant* replide)  
I care not, though I second be or furst,  
For in the world is not a man beside,  
To trust whose courage more then yours, I durst.  
*Sobrino* that stood all the while aside,  
Into such speech, vpon the sudden burst,  
Hath age (quoth he) brought me in such contempt,  
To be excluded from so braue attempt



*Tooke in the  
Morall of this.*

50

Disgrace me not so much, to leaue out me,  
Age hath not tane away my vigor cleene,  
Skill and experience good companions be,  
Age knoweth whatsoeuer youth hath beene;  
Wherefore let me be one, and you shall see,  
That I am stronger, then perhaps you weene:  
To this request of his they soone agree,  
And so they send their challenge three to three.

51

They send a Herald, as it is the vse,  
The challenge to *Orlando* stout to beare,  
With number like to meet at Lippaduse,  
And so by combat, end all matters theare:  
The while each side should grant the other truse,  
And all acts of hostilitie forbear;  
This Lippadusa is a little Ile,  
Distant from Affricke shore some twentie mile.

52

The Herald made good hast, and went apace,  
And vld all helpe of oares and sailes he could,  
And comming to *Orlando* with good grace,  
His message and the challenge plaine he told:  
Amids Biserta in the market place,  
He found him parting summes of coyne and gold,  
(Of that same sacked towne the many spoiles)  
Vnto his men for guerdon of their toiles.

53

Now when *Orlando* this braue challenge hard,  
He did accept it, and did much reioyce.  
And gaue vnto the Herald in reward,  
Of many sumptuous gifts great store and choise;  
He knew before the death of *Mandricard*,  
And heard of *Durindan* by common voice,  
How that *Gradaffe* had it, whom to find,  
A voiage vnto th' Indies he assignd.

54

But knowing that he need not go so farre,  
And that his great good fortune so had wrought,  
That he should send to offer single warre,  
Whom he farre of had purposed to haue sought;  
He now doth hope that long they should not barre  
Him of his sword, that he so deare had bought,  
Eke *Brigliadore* he hopes now to regaine,  
That did in *Agramantés* hands remaine.

55

He chuseth for his friends to take his part,  
In this so great and dangerous a fray,  
His cousin, and that faithfull *Brandimart*,  
Both whom he oft saw tride before that day;  
Armours and horse, and swords on eu'ry part,  
He seekes to get for them the best he may,  
For none of them had armour of his owne,  
As I before this time haue made it knowne.

56

*Orlando* when he first of all fell mad,  
Lost both his sword and armour thame howre,  
The tothers twaine, the *Sarzan* taken had,  
And now they were safe lockt vp in a towre:  
In *Africa* their armour was byt bad,  
The warres in *France* did dayly theirs deuowre:  
They seldome had in those parts any store,  
And *Agramant* what was, had had before,

57

Such as he could, though it were olnd rustie,  
He caused to be scowrd and furb slit new,  
And eu'rie day with his companions trustie,  
He talked of the fight that shou enlew.  
One day, as in a morning fresh an stie,  
They walkt vpon the shore, they saw  
A great ship vnder saile with treble top,  
Saile to the shore, without all stay or stop.

58

No saylers, passengers, nor anie guide,  
Within the ship to be discouerd were  
But as the tempest draue her and the tide,  
She came, and safely so arriued there:  
But here a while the emptie ship shall bide,  
And these three knights, because the loue care  
Vnto *Rog* and *Renaldo* both,  
T oue hem longer mak oth.

59

You heard how they themselues aside did draw,  
And of their owne accords their combat cease,  
When as they saw, against all right and law,  
On either side the battell to increafe:  
They were so earnest, neither of them saw  
Which side was first, that brake their vowed peace:  
Wherefore they aske of those that neare them came,  
Which king of this foule breach should haue the  
(blame.

60

*Rogero* had a valiant trustie man,  
That serued him with faithfulnessse and care,  
Who neuer since the combat first began,  
Had lost the sight of him, and being ware  
Of this new breach, with all the speed he can,  
He did his masters sword and horse prepare,  
And brought it him, and wished him to vse it,  
But for that day *Rogero* did refuse it.

61

Howbeit from thence he did his course direct,  
And promise with *Renaldo* doth renew,  
That if his king were first did oath neglect,  
And shewd himselfe in promise so vntrue,  
That he would leaue him and his wicked sect;  
This said, he bad *Renaldo* then adew,  
Demanding all he met, who was in fault,  
Of this vngodly and vniust assault.

62

Of all the world he heares it plainly spoken,  
How that of youthfull *Agramantés* part,  
The law of armes, and late sworne truce was broken  
Which now was turnd vnto his losse and smart;  
Yet thinks he, men would deeme it were  
In him of faint or of vnfaithfull hart,  
To leaue his Master in so great distresse,  
Although his falshood had deseru'd no lesse.

63

The thought thereof draue him to no small muse,  
If better twere for him to go or tarrie,  
If he do go, he much shall her abuse  
Whom he so oft had promised to marrie;  
Againe he thinketh that he cannot chuse,  
In his returne to *Affricke* but miscarrie,  
He knowes how periurie offendeth God,  
How ouer it ay hangs a heauie rod.

*use in the  
next booke, if  
24. staffe.*

*Rogero cousin to  
Orlando.*

*Sententia.*

On



64

On to er side, he cares the great disgrace,  
 M would im te to him his Lord to leaue,  
 d thinke it co es of fearfull heart and bafe:  
 What it some m n perhaps his scuse receaue,  
 en they now, and vnderstand the case:  
 et m say, he doth his Lord deceaue:  
 nd that a man such promise may forsake,  
 As at the first, vnlawfull was to make.

65

All that same day, and all that night ensuing,  
 He did the atter with himselfe debate,  
 His loue, his Lord, on either side renewing  
 The doubtfull question, each in diuers rate:  
 t noble minde, the greater shame eschewing,  
 itly to relecue his masters state,  
 Much d he *Bradament*, much tho t he on her,  
 But more lo ' nis dutie and his

66

Wherefore resolved to depart the Reame,  
 He sought at Arly, ships him to transport,  
 But neither at the sea, nor in the streame,  
 Could he there find a ship of any sort,  
 For *Agramaut* in hast and feare extreame,  
 Had all from thence, or burnd them in the port,  
 Which when *Rogero* once did vnderstand,  
 He went vnto *Marfilia*-ward by land.

67

In Arly, nor from Arly all the way,  
 He saw no liuing Turke, but manie a corse,  
 He mindeth at *Marfilia*, if he may,  
 To get a ship, by faire meanes or by force,  
 That into *Affrica* shall straight conuay  
 Him and *Frontino*, his well tried horse:  
 But while such thoughts he in his mind contriued,  
 Great *Dudon* with his nauie there arriued.

68

Th at *Dudon*, whom king *Agramant* on seas  
 oft, when erst his men were slaine:  
 Hefled, his frends tane priſners, and in theale  
 Seauen kings that erst in *Affrica* did raigene;  
 A man as then, might hardly cast a peale  
 Into that streame, or anie little graine,  
 The Nauie, and the prises, in such number,  
 Did so the riuer pester vp, and cumber.

69

But *Dudon* selfe was newly come on land,  
 And his chiefe priſners he had set on shore,  
 And as in way of triumph made them stand,  
 The chiefe behind, the meaner set before,  
 With souldiers garded of his choicest band,  
 Who with their warlicke voices euermore,  
 Made that same towne, and all the places round,  
 Of *Dudo* praise, and *Dudons* name to sound.

70

*Rogero* when saw these bands appeare,  
 First thought it was the fleet of *Agramant*,  
 But when as he approached now more neare,  
 He saw how much his guesse of truth did want;  
 fees his captiues frends, with heauie cheare,  
*Bambyrage*, *Agricalt*, and *Ferurant*  
*Balaſtro*, *Rinedont*, and *Manilard*,  
 And *Nasamon*, that wayle their hap so hard.

71

*Rogero* eould by no meanes it endure,  
 To see in miserie his noble frends,  
 He doubts his prayre no succour can procure,  
 And therefore he to trie his force intends:  
 His lance he presently doth put in vre,  
 With which not few vnto the ground he sends;  
 His sword he drawes, and therewith in short space,  
 He doth an hundred hurt, kill, maim, displacer

72

Now *Dudon* heares the noife, the harme doth see,  
 Done by *Rogero*, yet to him vnknowne,  
 He sees his men displac't and foyled bee,  
 And by one onely man their hurt is growne:  
 He takes his horle, and to that end that he  
 May venge these harms, or ioyn, thereto his owne,  
 He setteth in his rest, a mightie lance,  
 To proue himselfe a *Palladine* of France.

73

He bids his men in order to retire,  
 That of the field they two may haue good scope:  
*Rogero*, that to rescue did desire  
 His frends, and now had put them in some hope:  
 And seeing vertuous *Dudon* did aspire,  
 In combat hand to hand with him to cope,  
 Did deeme he was the Captaine chiefe and guide,  
 And with great courage toward him did ride.

74

First *Dudon* came, but when he nearer came,  
 And saw *Rogero* had no speare in sight,  
 He cast away his owne, as counting shame  
 To vse aduantages in any fight.  
 Then saith *Rogero* to himselfe, this same  
 Is token of a most braue minded knight;  
 And sure, except mine aime be much amisse,  
 One of the *Palladines* of France he is.

75

Wherefore he mmds, ere any more ensue,  
 Or any force of either part were donne,  
 To learne his name: and asking him, he knew  
 How that he was the Dane *Vggers* sonne;  
 Now (saith good *Dudon*) let me know of you  
 Your name, before our combat be begonne:  
*Rogero* in like sort him satisfied,  
 And so they both each other then defied.

76

Now *Dudon* had that Axe or iron Mate,  
 Wherwith he wonne such fame in many fights,  
 As proued him to be of that same race  
 Of *Palladines*, so braue and worthe knights:  
*Rogero* hath the sword that cuts apace,  
 And frustrateth all charmes, where ere it lights,  
 So that he had the vantage, had he vld it,  
 But for that time, it seemed he refused it.

77

The cause was he was afear'd perchance:  
 It would nd his louing *Bradament*,  
 For bein ski ull in the lines of France,  
 He knew that *Dudons* mother was her Ant:  
 So though this conquest might his name aduance,  
 He doubts her loe, it may not little daunt:  
 For *Turpin* thinks, this was the onely reason,  
 That *Dudon* scaped killing at that season.

vengeance.

A phrase of  
 each that ships  
 stood so thicke a  
 man could not  
 a pease into  
 ater for  
 them.



Rogero neuer soynd, and seldome strake,  
But flatling, and his sword was so good Steele,  
The backe so thicke, as it no hurt did take,  
Yet oft therewith he made good Dudon feele

Such thundring knocks, as caus'd his head to ake,  
And made him readie many times to reele,  
But least much reading may annoy your eyes,  
To lay this booke aside I you duile.

## Morall.

In Agramant that from being so victorious, fell into so great extremity, Princes may consider the great instability of Fortune: or to speake more truly and Christianly, they may see how God can ouerthrow them, when in their own conceits they are at the very highest. In that their folly is dispraised that trust to others protection, and stand not upon their own strength, the lamentable examples of many Princes that we haue heard of in this age, and some that we haue seene, may proue the truth of that principle; nor doth it only hold in Princes affairs, but euē in the case of meaner subiects, according as a good friend of mine, perhaps vpon some good, or (peraduenture) bad experience of his owne, wrate many yeares since:

If you be wise, this rule well minde,  
Trust none for you to sue or pray,  
Not friend most fast, nor kin most kinde,  
In that your selfe can do or say.

Further whereas Sobrino notwithstanding his age, is chosen to be one of the three in the challenge, offering himselfe thereto, we may note thereby, that old men are not only to be honored for their wisdom but also employed in aduice for their constant courage, if themselves be willing thereto, and not to be contemned, (a vice that on me is too much giuen vnto) specially by young men that thinke they know all things, and indeed know lesse then nothing. It is a tale well knowne, and worthie to be well marked, how one day, the people of Athens being set in their theater to behold playes, two old men came in, & no man once offerd to giue them place, til they came where the Lacedemonian Ambassadors sate: they straight rose, and in reuerence of their gray heads, not knowing the men, they gaue them place, which act when the people commended with great applause, the forenamed Ambassadors gaue them that pretie tuch, which hath euer since stucke by them; That the Athenians knew what was honest and commendable, but would giue others leaue to do it.

## Historic.

In the first staffe of this booke, he vseth three similitudes to this effect, as we say in English, to sling water into the Teams

To beare pots (as is said) to Samos Ile,  
(Where earthen vessels in great store are wrought)  
Or Owles to Athens, Crocodyles to Nile.

Of Samos vessels I will recite onely that verse that was made of Agathocles:

Fama est, fictilibus ornasse Agathoclea regem  
Atque abacum Samio saepe onerasse luto,  
Fercula gemmatis cum poneret horrida vasis,  
Et mileret opes, pauperiemq; simul  
Querenti causam, respondit rex ego qui sum  
Sicaniz, figulo sum genitore natus.  
Fortunam reuerenter habe, quicunque repente  
Diues, ab exili progrediare loco.

Concerning the Owles of Athens, Tully vseth the phrase Hoc est Athenas noctuam mittam. But the much for the plentie of those birds, as because they had a coigne stamped with the same: as appeares in Plutarke in the life of Lyfander, where it was laid to the charge of a great officer named Gilippus, that he roosted too many Owles in the penthouse of his house, which was indeed, money that he had stolen in that kinde of coigne, and hidden there.

The Crocodiles of Nilus are famous, neither are any of those beasts in any other riuer, but one in Affrica called Senega that falls into the Atlantick Ocean: and because it hath Crocodiles, some hold it for an arme of Nilus, though, in my opinion, with as little reason, as some say Lundy the Ile betweene Cornwall and Wales, to be part of Ireland, because it hath no snakes in it. Of the Crocodile I count this worth the noting, that being bred of an egge, he groweth to be twelue or foureteene foot long, which no creature doth beside. Hanniball being ouercome by Scipio, fled to Antiochus, and doubting of his fickle disposition went to Prusia king of Bithinia, who by his counsell and policie ouercame Eumenes in a sea fight, which benefite and seruice notwithstanding, the said Prusia would haue betrayed him to the Romanes, but Hanniball seeing no meanes of escape, tooke poyson, which he carried about him of purpose in a ring and so made away himselfe.

Jugurth likewise betaking himselfe to the protection of Bocchus king of Mauritania his sonne in law, was by and bound, and deliuered to Sylla, who caried him to Marius, in whose triumph he was after led at Rome, and forced (as some write) to leape off an high arch, or as other will haue it, starued after in prison.

Pompey being vanquished by Cæsar, fled to Egypt to Ptolomey, whose father had bene much beholdin in times past to Pompey, but he for feare of Cæsar's displeasure made his head to be cut of.

## Allegoric

In Rogero that notwithstanding all his oaths and promises to marrie Bradamant, and become a Christian, yet with a regard of worldly reputation is caried away, and taketh shipping into Affrica, may be allegorically vnderstood, how our sense and vnderstanding, not hauing the helpe of grace to confirme it, is caried away into the sea of errors, and tossed with waues of diuers passions, and in the end suffers shipwracke as here Rogero did, though after deliuered by prayer and faith, as is shewed in the next booke.

## Allusion.

The great perill that Brandimart was in, leaping of the wall of Biserta into the towne, alludes to the like fact of Alexander, who was in the like perill at the Citie of Ossiadracus in India; where also (as Justin testifieth) he received a very dangerous wound.

The end of the annotations vpon the 40. booke.





Brandimante

Orl Bea Sob On Gra Bran

Orl Bran

As Fio

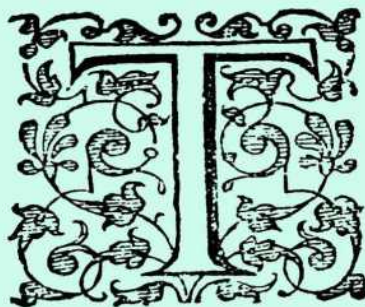
RUGGIERO



## THE ARGUMENT.

*His prisoners Dudon to Rogero giues,  
Who in a tempest all were drowned quite,  
Rogero onely scapes the storme, and liues,  
And then is Christend, and beleuees a knight.  
Neare Lippadusas steepe and  
Sixe valiant knights, a combat passe ad sight,  
Where Sobrine hurt, the Marquesse lame on ground,  
Good Brandimart receiues a deadly wound.*

Simile.



**T**hat odor sweet wherewith  
an amorous youth  
Of either sexe, their gar-  
ments do perfume,  
Or head or beard, when  
(full of louing ruth)  
In flames of Cupids fire  
they do consume:  
We say that odor perfect  
was in truth,

And of his goodnesse we do much prelude,  
If so a good while after it be felt,  
And that the sweetnesse be long after smelt.

2

That pleasant iuyce that *Icarus* vnwife,  
Did cause his meeu (to his great harme) to tast,  
And did the Gauls to Italie entise,  
Where they committed so great spoile and wast,  
Was doubtlesse perfect good, and of great price,  
If so at twelue months end it pleasant last.  
The tree that doth his leaues in winter nourish,  
Without all question did in sommer flourish.

Simile.

*This Icarus was  
not sonne of De-  
dalus, but of  
Bacchus.*

Simile.

*Horace saith,  
Fortes creantur  
fortibus. Est in  
Iunonis est in e-  
quis patrie virtus  
etc.  
That vertue is  
clemencie and  
gratitudo.*

The bountie that so many hundred yeare,  
In your most Princely stocke did euer shine,  
Is to the world an open prooffe and cleare,  
That he, from whom was first deriuid your line,  
Was sure a great, and worthie minded Peare,  
And had that noble vertue and deuine,  
Which chiefly makes a man so rare and od,  
As in that one, they most resemble God.

4

I shewd you in the booke that went before,  
How good Rogero tooke great care and heere,

That as in other acts he shewd greates store  
Of vertues rare, that other men exceed,  
So in this fight he shewd as much or more.  
Then he had done in any other deed:  
With noble mind ambitious to all good,  
For glory thinking full, but not for blood.

5

Good Dudon found (for well discerne he)  
How that Rogero him to hurt forbare,  
How though he had great vantage in the fight,  
Yet that to vse the same he still did spare;  
Wherefore though he were ouermatcht in might,  
Yet therewithall he shewd this speciall care,  
That though Rogero were in force superiour,  
Himselfe in coultie would not be inferiour.

6

Perdie sir let (saith he) our combat cease,  
Your courtisie hath alreadie conquerd me,  
I cannot winne, and therefore seeke I peaces;  
And I (saith tother) will to peace agree:  
I onely craue this grace, that you release,  
Those seau'n, whom standing there i' the d's I see,  
Those were the kings, whom late neere Asstrike shore  
Had taken bene a day or two before

7

At his request thus Dudon gaue remission,  
But ere they went, he made them first to sweare,  
That neither they, nor none by their permission,  
Gainst any Christen state, should armour bear  
He gaue them also home in like condution,  
Till the the shotters. Still that was the tre,  
Who no more could stand in the shotters,  
For Asstrike immediately took the shotters

The



8

Th's had those kings their ransomes all remitted,  
And with *Rogero* shipt themselves that day,  
And then to faithlesse winds themselves committed,  
They weigh their ankers, and their sayles display:  
A frendly gale at first their iourney fitted,  
And bare them from the shore full farre away:  
But afterward within a little season,  
The wind discouerd his deceit and treason.

9

*discription of  
tempest.* First from the poop, it changed to the side,  
Then to the prore, at last it wherled round,  
In one place long it neuer would abide,  
Which doth the Pilots wit and skill confound:  
T' surging waues swell still in higher pride,  
Protens flocks did more and more abound,  
And seeme to them as many dead threa- n,  
As that des with diuers w

10

Now in their face the wind, straight in their backe,  
And forward this, and backward that it blowes,  
Then on the side it makes the ship to cracke,  
Among the Mariners confusion growes;  
The Master ruine doubts, and present wracke,  
For none his will, nor none his meaning knowes,  
To whistle, becken, crie, it nought auails,  
Sometime to strike, sometime to turne their sailes.

11

But none there was could heare, nor see, nor marke,  
Their cares so stopt, so dazeld were their eyes,  
With weather so tempestuous and so darke,  
And black thick clouds, that with the storme did rise  
From whence sometime great gastly flames did (parke,  
And thunderclaps, that seemd to rend the skies:  
Which made them in a manner deafe and blind,  
That no man vnderstood the Masters mind.

12

Nor lesse, nor much lesse fearfull is the sound,  
The cruell tempest in the tackle makes,  
Yet each one for himselfe some busnesse found,  
And to some speciall office him betakes:  
One this vntide, another that hath bound,  
He the Main bowling, now restraines, now slakes:  
Some take an oare, some at the pompe take paine,  
And powre the sea into the sea againe.

13

*Virail.  
Fecit aduersa  
feris fluctusque  
ad sidera tollit:  
v- inquit-  
v- g- n- b-* Behold a horrible and hideous blast,  
That *Boreas* from his frozen lips doth send,  
Doth backward force the sayle against the mast,  
And makes the waues vnto the skies ascend:  
Then brake their oares and rudder eke at last,  
Now nothing 'est from tempest to defend,  
So the ship was swaid now quite aside,  
And to the waues laid ope her naked side.

14

Then all asid staggering ship did reele,  
For one side quite beneath the water lay,  
And on the tother side the verie keele,  
About the water plaine discerne you may.  
Then thought they al hope past, & down they kneele  
And vnto God to take their soules they pray,  
Worse danger grew then this, when this was past,  
By meanes the ship gan after leake so fast.

15

The wind, the waues, to them no respite gaue,  
But readie eu'rie houre to ouerthrow them,  
Oft they wer hoist so high vpon the waue,  
They thought the middle region was below them;  
Oft times so low the same their vessell draue,  
As though that *Caron* there his boat would show the  
Scant had they time and powre to fetch their breath,  
All things did threaten them so present death

16

Thus all that night they could haue no releafe,  
But when the morning somewhat nearer drew,  
And that by course, the furious wind should cease,  
(A strange mishap) the wind then fiercer grew,  
And while their troubles more and more increafe,  
Behold a rocke stood plainly in their vew,  
And right vpon the same the spitefull blast,  
Bare them perforce, which made them all agast.

17

Yet did the master by all meanes assay,  
To steare out roomer, or to keepe aloofe,  
Or at the least to strike sailes if they may,  
As in such danger was for their behoofe.  
But now the wind did beare so great a sway,  
His enterprises had but little prooffe:  
At last with striuing yard and all was torne,  
And part thereof into the sea was borne.

18

Then each man saw all hope of safetie past,  
No meanes there was the vessell to direct,  
No helpe there was, but all away are cast,  
Wherefore their common safetie they neglect,  
But out they get the ship-boat, and in hast,  
Each man therein his life strives to protect,  
Of King, nor Prince no man takes heed or note,  
But well was he could get him in the bote.

19

Among the rest, *Rogero* doth suppose  
The safest way to be, to leaue the ship,  
And being in his dublet and his hose,  
He nimble downe into the boat did skip,  
But after him so great a number goes,  
Before they could the rope vwind or slip,  
The boat at length did sinke with ouerlading,  
And to the bottome carry'd all her lading.

20

Twas lamentable then to heare the cries,  
Of companies of eu'rie sort confused,  
In vaine to heau'n they lift their hands and eyes,  
And make late vowes, as in such case is vsed,  
For ouer them the wrathfull sea doth rise,  
As though to giue them eare it had refused,  
And made them hold their peace by hard constraint,  
And stopt the passage whence came out the plaint.

21

Some swam a while, some to the bottome ranke,  
Some flete vpon the waue, though being ded,  
*Rogero* for the matter neuer shranke,  
But still about the water keeps his hed,  
And not farre off he sees that rockie banke,  
From which in vaine he and his fellows fled:  
He thither laboureth to get with swimming,  
In hope to get vpon the same by climbing.

G g

*ir. 1. Antead  
que  
vira intendant  
omnia mortem.*

*They that have  
bene at the sea  
do vnderstand  
these phrases*



22

With legges and armes he doth him so behaue,  
That till he kept vpon the floods aloft,  
He blowes out from his face the boistrous waue,  
That readie was to ouerwhelme him oft.  
This while the wind aloofe the vessell draue,  
Which huld away with pafe but slow and soft,  
Fró those, that while they thought their deth to shun  
Now dide perhaps before their glasse was run.

23

O hopes of men vncertaine, vaine and fraile,  
The ship that all forfooke, as quite forlorne,  
When all her wonted guides and helps did faile,  
Her saylers drownd, and all her tackle torne,  
A safe course held with broken mast and saile,  
And by an Eddie from the rocke was borne,  
And eu'n as if the storme had changd his mind,  
It went with merrie gale afore the wind.

*He turnes to Rogero againe in the 47. chaffe of this booke.*

24

And where with marriners it went awry,  
Now wanting them, it went to Affricke right,  
And came on land vnto Biserta ny,  
And gently on the sands it did alight,  
What time *Orlando* then was walking by,  
Conferring with his fellowes of their fight,  
The which was vndertaken by them three,  
Against three Princes of no meane degree.

*Orlando.*

25

And for they saw the ship was fast on ground,  
They tooke a boate and went on her aboard,  
With mind to question whither she was bound,  
Or what good marchandise she can affoord;  
But vnder hatches lading none they found,  
Saw good *Rogeros* armour, horse, and sword,  
Which he behind him left, when in bad taking,  
He tooke the boat, the ship it selfe forsaking.

26

*Orlando* vewd them well with good regard,  
And hauing chiefly markt the noble blade,  
He knew it was that famous Ballisard,  
With which he did some yeares before inuade,  
*Fallarius* garden, spite of all her guard,  
Who by strong charms, the sword and garden made  
It may be you er this haue heard the tale,  
And how this sword from him *Brunello* stole.

*All this hath reference to Bosardos booke.*

27

And after to the good *Rogero* gaue it,  
Who late had left it in this wofull wracke,  
Glad was *Orlando* now againe to haue it,  
That oft had triall both of edge and backe;  
He deern'd that God, did eu'n of purpose saue it,  
Now to supply therewith his present lacke:  
And after oft he said, and thought indeed,  
That God did send it him at so great need.

28

At so great need, when as he was to fight,  
Against *Gradasso* king of Sericane,  
Who had, beside his great and passing might,  
*Renaldos* horse, and fearfull *Dudrindane*,  
*Rogeros* armour though it looked bright,  
Yet was it not as thing so precious tane,  
As being prisd more for the sumptuous shew,  
Then for the goodnesse, which they did not know.

29

And sith himselfe for armour did not care,  
And neuer did the dint of weapon feare,  
He doth that armour to his cosin spare,  
But not the sword, for that himselfe doth weare:  
The horse, that was of shape and goodnesse rare,  
Had *Brandimart*, and thus deuided were,  
Among these three, in guerdon of their paines,  
An equall share, and portion in the gaines.

30

Now each prepard against the day of fight,  
Braue furniture, with cost of many a crowne:  
*Orlando* on his quarter, bare in sight,  
High *Babels* towre with lightning stricken downe: *Looke.*  
His cosin had a Lyme hound argent bright,  
His Lyme laid on his backe, he couching d ne,  
The word was this, vntil' he com th,  
The and such as him meth.

31

But *Brandimart*, who as I erst made mention,  
Had heard his fathers death, went all in blacke:  
Of braueries he now had no intention,  
Left men might thinke, he did discretion lacke,  
He car'd for no deuice, nor new inuention,  
Nor ware he sumptuous clothing on his backe,  
He onely had one border richly set  
With stones, but darkned ouer with a net.

32

A net that *Fiordeliege* his dearest Queene,  
With her owne hands against that day did make, *Fiordeliege.*  
But neither then, nor all the time betweene,  
That first she vndertooke it for his sake,  
Till she had done it, was she euer seene  
To laugh, or smile, or any ioy to take:  
Her heart still heauie was, her looke still sad,  
And yet herselfe did know no cause she had.

33

But still in feare, and still in doubt she is,  
Her spouse by death, shall now from her be tunderd:  
Oft times herselfe hath seene him be, ere this,  
In greater fights, an hunderd and an hunderd,  
Yet neuer did her heart so giue amisse,  
Wherefore at her owne feare she greatly wonderd:  
And eu'n that reason made her feare the more,  
Because she was not vld to feare before.

34

Now when each thing in order fit was set,  
The chāpions three were shipped with their horses:  
Vnto *Astolfo* and to *Sanfonet*,  
The charge was left of all thos Christen forces,  
But dolefull *Fiordeliege*, although as yet  
To hide her sorow, she herselfe inforces,  
Yet when the wind away the vessell beare  
She bursteth out to open cries and teare

35

With *Sanfonet* *Astolfo* tooke much  
To bring her to her chamber from the shore,  
Who lying on her bed, she still doth plaine,  
That she hath lost her spoute for euer more:  
To seeke to comfort her it was in vaine,  
For talking made her feare increate the more,  
But now the worthie champions in this while,  
Were safe arriu'd at *Lippadusa* Ile.

• No



36  
 N<sup>o</sup> sooner set they foot vpon the land,  
 But (on the Easterne side) they pitcht a tent,  
 Because perhap that part was nearest hand,  
 Or else vpon some politicke intent:  
 On tother side, with such an equall band,  
 Came *Agramant*: but sith this day was spent,  
 They all agreed all fight to be forborne,  
 Vntill the verie next ensuing morne.

37  
 A watch was charged then on either part,  
 That neither side the tother may deceaue,  
 But ere it yet was darke, king *Brandimart*,  
 (Though not without *Orlandos* speciall leaue)  
 meane a wondrous fauour to impart  
 To *Agramant*, if he the same receaue:  
 For why the to the tother oft  
 As frenes, ad in France to

38  
 Now after ioyning hands, and salutation,  
 The noble minded *Brandimart* begun  
 To vse vnto the Turke an exhortation,  
 That with *Orlando* he the combat shun:  
 Affirming vnto him with protestation,  
 Would he belecue but in the Virgins sonne,  
 That he both present peace would then assure him,  
 And all his Realmes in Affricke safe procure him.

*Brandimartis  
 speech to Agra-  
 mant.*

39  
 Because you are, and haue bene deare to me,  
 Therefore (he saith) this counsell you I geene,  
 And sith I follow it my selfe you see,  
 Thereby you may be sure I it belecue;  
 Christ is my God, a God indeed is he;  
 An Idol *Mawmet* is, that doth not liue:  
 Wherefore deare Sir, I do desire to moue  
 From errors foule, your selfe and all I loue.

40  
 This is indeed the way of truth and life,  
 All other wayes but this, do leade astray;  
 Why should you liue in error and in strife.  
 When in true peace, and knowledge liue you may?  
 Tempestuous cares this world hath euer rife,  
 And if your present state you would but way,  
 You plainly may perceiue your venter such,  
 As you to win but little hazard much.

*Orlando sonne of  
 Milo.*

41  
 What if you could the sonne of *Milo* kill?  
 Or vs that come with him to win, or die?  
 Thinke you that then you shall haue all you will?  
 Thinke you your state you can restore thereby?  
 No sure, the state of *Charles* is not so ill,  
 he quickly can our lacke supply;  
 re deare Sir, vnto my counsell listen,  
 All wo well, if you would be a Christen.

*Sentence.  
 Ad consilium ne-  
 cessarium ante-  
 quam vocetur.*

42  
 Thus much *Brandimart*, and more beside  
 He would haue said, to peace him to exhort,  
 Saue that with scornfull speech, and full of pride,  
 Fierce *Agramant* this wise, did cut him short;  
 madnesse meere it is (thus he replid)  
 In you, or any man that in such sort,  
 Will counsell and aduise men what to do,  
 Not being cald of counsell thereunto.

43  
 And where you say, to this loue mou'd you chiefe,  
 That you haue borne, and still do beare to me,  
 Herein you pardon must my hard beliefe,  
 While in *Orlandos* companie you be;  
 I rather thinke dispaire, and spite, and grieve,  
 Hath mou'd you hereunto, because you see,  
 Your soule is damned to eternall fire,  
 To draw vs thither with you you desire.

44  
 What victories, or else what ouerthrowes,  
 I shall hereafter haue, God onely knoweth,  
 Not you nor I, nor yet *Orlando* knowes,  
 God onely where he list, the same bestoweth:  
 But as for me, no feare nor foolish shewes,  
 Shall daunt my courage, how so ere it goeth,  
 Die first I will with torment and with paine,  
 Much rather then to yeeld, my stocke to staine.

45  
 Now when you list, depart from hence you may,  
 As little thank, as slenderly rewarded,  
 And if to morrow you the Champion play  
 No better, nor no more to be regarded,  
 Then you haue plaid the Orator to day,  
*Orlando* sure will be but weakely guarded;  
 And these last words, in manner such he said,  
 As that thereby much choller he bewraid.

46  
 Thus parted they, and rested all that night,  
 But readie they were all by breake of day,  
 All armd, and readie for the future fight,  
 Small speech was vsd, no lingring, nor no stay,  
 They couch their spears, & run with all their might:  
 But while I tell you of this bloody fray,  
 I doubt I do vnto *Rogero* wrong,  
 To leaue him swimming in the sea so long.

47  
 The gallant youth had labourd many an howre,  
 To swim, and saue himselfe from being drown'd,  
 The surging waue still threats him to deuowre,  
 But guiltie conscience more doth him confound;  
 He thinks that God will of his mightie powre,  
 Sith he foreslowed when he was on ground,  
 To be baptizd in waters fresh, and fitter,  
 To sowse him now in waues both salt and bitter.

*Rogero.*

48  
 He now remembers he had plighted troth,  
 To *Bradamant*, nor done as he had spoken,  
 How to *Renaldo* he had made an oth,  
 And that the same by him was foully broken;  
 Most earnestly he now repents them both,  
 And calls to God for mercie, and in token  
 Of true contrition voweth out of hand,  
 To be baptizd, if ere he come to land.

49  
 And that he would renounce all Turkish lawes,  
 Nor gaine it a Christen Prince once weapon carrie,  
 But serue king *Charles*, and aid the Churches cause,  
 And from the same hereafter not to varie,  
 And neuer seeke delay or farther pause,  
 His vertuous spouse Dame *Bradamant* to marrie  
 (Twas strange) no sooner he this vow had ended,  
 But that his strength increast & swimming mended.

G g ij



50

And where before he greatly was affrayd,  
That those same surging waters him would drowne,  
He thinketh now they do his swimming ayd:  
And sometime rising, sometime going downe,  
He passeth on with courage vndismayd,  
And scarce he seemed once to wet his crowne:  
That so with cunning part, and part with strength,  
He reached to the little Ile at length.

51

The rest of all his company was drownd,  
Nor euer was a man of them scene more,  
But by Gods onely grace, *Rogero* found  
This little Ile, and clammerd vp the shore:  
And finding it a small and barren ground,  
A new feare rose, no lesse then that before,  
Least in a place of needfull things too scant,  
He should be staru'd with penurie and want.

52

But yet with constant mind and vnappald,  
Resolud to suffer all that God would send,  
Vpon the rocke with much a do he crald,  
And gat vpon the leuell ground in th'end;  
When lo an aged man, whose head was bald,  
And beard below his girdle did descend,  
That was an Hermit that did there inhabit,  
Came forth to him in godly reu'rent habit.

53

And comming neare he cride, ô *Saul*, ô *Saul*,  
Why persecutest thou my people to?  
As erst our Sauour spake vnto Saint *Paul*,  
Then, when he gaue to him that blessed blow.  
Behold how God when pleaseth him can call,  
From sea, from land, from places high and low,  
When you did weene him farthest he was nighest,  
So strong an arme, so long reach hath the highest.

54

Thus spake this Hermit so deuout and old,  
Who by an Angell in his sleepe that night,  
Of good *Rogeros* comming was foretold,  
And of all chances should on him alight,  
With all his valiant actions manifold,  
That he had done, and should performe in fight,  
And of his death, and of his noble race,  
That should succeed him after in his place.

55

Now (as I said) this wife, this Hermit spoke,  
And part doth comfort him, and part doth checke,  
He blameth him, that in that pleasant yoke,  
He had so long deferd to put his necke,  
But did to wrath his maker still prouoke,  
And did not come at his first call and becke,  
But still did hide himselfe away from God,  
Vntill he saw him comming with his rod.

56

Then did he comfort him, and make him know,  
That grace is nere denide to such as aske:  
(As do the workmen of the Gospell show,  
Receiuing pay alike for diuers taske)  
Prouided that our prayre of zeale do grow,  
And serue not as a vifer or a maske:  
This did the man of God *Rogero* tell,  
And so from thence he led him to his cell.

57

The cell a chappell had on th'Easterne side,  
Vpon the Wester side a groue or berie,  
Forth of the which he did his food prouide,  
Smal chear God wot, wherwith to make folk merie  
Yet fortie yeare he had that liuing tride,  
And yet thereof it seemd he was not werie:  
But eating berries, drinking water cleare,  
He had in strength and health liu'd fourscore yeare

58

Now kindled had the man of God some wood,  
And on his boord he set a little frute,  
The youth to drie his cloths, not farre of stood,  
For why, to change he hath no other sute;  
Then he by th'old mans teaching vnderstood  
The faith, and how to Christ he must impow  
Th'ardon is finnes; yet neare the later,  
He t be baptizd in

59

And so he was the next ensuing day,  
And afterward he rested in that place  
A while, and with the man of God did stay,  
Resoluing him of eu'rie doubtfull case:  
Sometime of heau'n, and of the later day,  
Sometime of earth, and of his noble race,  
That should in time to come, bold mightie Reames  
As was reueald to him in former dreames.

60

And further vnto him he doth repeat,  
How his chiefe house should be surnamed Este,  
Because in time to come king *Charles* the great,  
Should say to them in Latin words, *Hic este*,  
Which is as much to say, be here the feat,  
In which you shall hereafter euer rest ye,  
And many future things to him he told,  
Which were too long for me now to vnfold.

61

This while *Orlando* and king *Brandimart*,  
With *Marquesse Oliuero*, as I told,  
Met with those three of the contrarie part,  
Young *Agramanté* and *Gradasso* bold,  
With good *Sobrino*, who for valiant hart,  
Giues place to few of them, though being old;  
Each spurres his horse, that ran a wondrous pace,  
And of their blowes refounded all the place.

62

In this same course, each plaid his part so well,  
That vp to heau'n flew shiuerd eu'rie lance,  
The hideous noise did cause the seas to swell,  
And some report, twas heard as farre as *Frances*;  
*Gradasso* and *Orlando* as befell,  
Did meet together, were it choic or chance;  
The match seemd eu'n, saue that their hiffer,  
And made *Gradasso* seeme to runne the hiffer.

63

The weaker horse on which *Orlando*  
Was brused so with this so fearful knocke,  
As now he could no longer beare his lode,  
But sinking downe, lay senselesse with the knocke;  
*Orlando* then did make but small abode,  
His courser lying senselesse like a stocke,  
Sith that with neither raines nor spurres he sturd,  
He left his saddle, and drew forth his sword

*Agramant**In the Acts of  
the Apostles.**Sentence.**Of age and de-  
mation looke in  
the Morall.**Iugum Christi  
suauē.**The house of Este**He turnes again  
to Rogero in the  
43. booke. 188. ff.**The combat of  
the sixe knights.*



64

With *Agramant* the *Marquesse* hand to hand  
Did most, betwene them equall went the game,  
*Sobrino* was by *Brandimartés* hand,  
Cast from his horse, I know not how it came,  
But at that time it could not well be scand,  
If so the horse or horseman were to blame:  
But whether beast or rider wanted force,  
*Sobrino* certaine downe was from his horse.

65

King *Brandimart* nere offerd once to tuch  
*Sobrino*, when he saw him downe in vew,  
But to *Gradasso* that had done as much  
Vnto *Orlando*, in great hast he flew;  
The *Marquesse* fight with *Agramant* was such,  
As which side had the vantage no an knew,  
For when their stauers were shiu and r t,  
Their they vld incon

66

*Orlando* who by hap a horse di lacke,  
And saw *Gradasso* bent another way,  
Whom *Brandimart* did hold so hardly tacke,  
That he enforced him thereby to stay;  
I say the *Palladine* then looking backe,  
Saw old *Sobrino* standing in his way,  
And toward him he go th with looke so fierce,  
As though his eye, as well as sword could pierce.

67

*Sobrino* gainst the force of such a man,  
Sought with his surest ward him selfe to saue,  
And as a Pilot doth the best he can,  
To shunne the furie of the surging waue,  
Eu'n so this well experienc't Turke began,  
Himselfe in this great danger to behaue,  
With sword and shield his best defence he made,  
Against the fearfull edge of that same blade.

68

Which blade, of such an edge, in such an arme,  
No maruell if to pierce it seldome faile,  
Against the which in vaine was any charme,  
For though his shield was steeld, his cote of maile,  
Yet quite through shield and armour it did harme,  
To saue his shoulder all could not auaille.  
But he to wound *Orlando* was not able,  
For God had made his skinne impenetrable.

69

The valiant Earle redoubled still his blow,  
And thinks from shoulders off to cut his head,  
He, that the force of *Clarimont* did know,  
Gaued backward, o his ground still trauerled,  
But in his trauerfing he was so slow,  
That with one blow he laid him downe for dead,  
Th fell flatling, but with force so maine,  
As cruss is helmet, and amazzd his braine.

70

Downe fell S backward on the ground,  
From whence ong time it was er he arose,  
*Orlando* thinks that he was safe and sound,  
And that he was starke dead he doth suppose:  
Wherefore since single foe he no where found,  
Vnto *Gradasso* presently he goes,  
To whom king *Brandimart* in armes, and horse,  
In sword, inferiour was, perhaps in force.

71

But yet the noble minded *Brandimart*,  
Vpon *Rogeros* horse *Frontino* mounted,  
With that same *Sarasin* so plaid his part,  
As if his forces he but little counted:  
And sure *Gradasso* not in skill, nor hart,  
But in his sword and armour him surmounted:  
Enforcing him oft times to stand aloofe,  
Because his armour was of no good prooffe.

72

But good *Frontino* bare away the bell,  
For being readie to the riders hand,  
It seemd where euer *Durindana* fell,  
*Frontino* had such wit to vnderstand,  
That euer more he did escape it well:  
But all this while it hardly could be scand,  
In tother twaine on which side fortune works,  
In *Olinero*, or the king of Turks.

73

*Orlando* had (as late before I told)  
Left good *Sobrino* on the gound for ded,  
Wherefore on foot he goes with courage bold,  
To succour *Brandimart* if ill he sped;  
But in the way by hap he did behold,  
*Sobrino's* horse that without rider fled,  
*Orlando* straight into the saddle valted,  
Not looking if he went vp right or halted.

74

One hand his sword, the tother hold s his raine,  
And so he rideth to *Gradasso* ward,  
Who when he saw him come, did not refraine,  
But to encounter with him straight prepar'd:  
To fight with one of them, or else with twaine,  
It seemd he little reckoned nor car'd;  
He minds and hopeth to effect it soone,  
To make them both to thinke it night ere noone.

75

Yet for a while king *Brandimart* he leaues,  
And turnes him to the Earle, and with a thrust  
Whereas his armour weakest he perceaues,  
There doth the fierce *Gradasso* hit him iust,  
And enterd, bur his cunning him deceaues,  
*Orlando's* skin be pierced neuer must.  
But when with *Ballisard* *Orlando* strake,  
His helmet, coate of maile, and shield he brake.

76

So that both in his face, his breast, and side,  
He wounded sore the king of *Sericane*,  
Who maruels much what strange chance did betide  
For neuer erst such sore hurt he had tane:  
He thought there could not be a blade beside  
To pierce his coate, he hauing *Durindane*;  
And sure that blow had him dispatched clearly,  
If it had had more strength, or come more nearly.

77

He sees that now he must take better heed,  
And not rust armour, but a surer ward,  
To seeke to saue himselfe he now hath need,  
And looke vnto his limbs with more regard:  
Now while twixt them the fight did thus proceed,  
Good *Brandimart* did see he might be spard,  
Wherefore to breath himselfe he then retired,  
Still ready t'ayd each part, if cause required.

G g iij

S. 1116

*Orlando was al-  
tyed to the horse  
of Gradasso.*



78

Now had *Sobrin* long laine in a trance,  
 With that same brule, and with that bloody wound,  
 Giv'n him by that great *Palladine* of France,  
 That at two blowes had laid him on the ground,  
 With much ado he doth himselfe aduance,  
 And standing on his feet, and looking round,  
 He thought his Master was in weakest case,  
 And to his aid he moues his silent pace.

79

At *Oliuer*'s backe he comes vnspide,  
 Who tole on *Agramant* did fixe his eyes,  
 And that same horse that *Oliuer* did ride,  
 He hought behind in such despightfull wise,  
 That wanting strength, he fell downe on his side,  
 And was not able any more to rise:  
 And which was worse then his vnlookt for fall,  
 His foot hung in the stirrop therewithall.

80

*Sobrin* doubled then his blowes againe,  
 Thinking from shoulders off his head to pare,  
 But yet the Steele made that attempt but vaine,  
 That *Vulcan* temperd erst, and *Hector* ware:  
 King *Brandimart* at *Sobrin* runnes amaine,  
 When of his doings he was well aware,  
 And ouerthrew him quite, and stoutly smote him,  
 But th'old fierce man, soone on his feet vp got him.

81

And once againe at *Oliuer* he flies,  
 And once againe he thinketh him to kill,  
 Or at the least cause him he shall not rise;  
 But he that had his better arme at will,  
 Layd with his sword about him in such wise,  
 As that he kept himselfe from further ill:  
 And made his foe, that was of no great strength  
 Stand distant from him, almost twise his length.

82

The *Marquesse* hopes ere long to ease his paine,  
 If he can cause *Sobrin* stand aloofe,  
 Who bled so fast, as now from fight t'abstaine  
 He thought it would be best for his behoofe:  
 Now *Oliuero* all his force doth straine,  
 And to get loofe he maketh manie a prooffe,  
 But still his foot was fast to his great hurt,  
 And still the horse lay tumbling in the durt.

83

This while king *Brandimart* doth go to find  
*Traians* sonne, and now he hath him found,  
*Frontino* now before, and straight behind,  
 That good *Frontino* that can turne so round:  
 The horse was sure and of a passing kind,  
 The *Sotherne* kings was readie, strong, and sound:  
 He had that famous courser *Brigliadore*,  
 The which *Rogero* gaue him late before.

84

But sure the Turke great ods in armour had,  
 For he had one of prooffe, well tridge, and sure,  
 And *Brandimart's* was indeed but bad,  
 Such as he could in warning short procure,  
 Wherefore to change it now he would be glad,  
 And that he shall, his heart doth him assure:  
 So that he waxed stouter still and bolder,  
 Though *Agramant* had hurt him in the shoulder.

85

*Gradasso* further had about his thye,  
 Him giu'n a blow, not to be tane in sport,  
 But yet the king did so the fight apply,  
 And laid on loade in so couragious sort,  
 As that he wounded his left arme thereby,  
 And pricked his right hand (thus they report)  
 But all this was but May game and dight,  
 Vnto *Gradasso*'s and *Orlando*'s fight.

86

*Gradasso* hath *Orlando* halfe disarmd,  
 And made him with one blow his shield forsake,  
 He could not wound him, for his skin was charmd,  
 But yet his headpeece on both sides he brake:  
 But him *Orlando* hath in worse sort harmd,  
 Beside that hurt of which beore I spake,  
 He hath draw'd blood of him in many a place,  
 As naid in throte, and face.

87

*Gradasso* sees himselfe with blood besmeard,  
 And smarting paine in many places found,  
 And sees that Earle like one that nothing feard,  
 Stand whole, and quite vnwounded safe and sound;  
 Wherefore with both his hands his sword he reard,  
 With mind to cleaue him, rather then to wound,  
 And eu'n as he defin'd, with all his strength,  
 He strake him on his head, at halfe sword length.

88

And sure had clou'd him to the saddle bow,  
 Had it another then *Orlando* bene,  
 But now as it had false flatling thoe,  
 The blade rebounded from him bright and cleene,  
 But yet that Earle was daz'd so with the blow,  
 I thinke some starres on ground by him were seene;  
 He lost his bridle, and his sword had mist,  
 Saue that a chaine did bind it to his wrist.

89

The horse on which the good *Orlando* rode,  
 Was eke so scared with the fearfull sound,  
 As there he durst no longer make abode,  
 But on the sands at randon runneth round,  
 And beares *Orlando* as a senselesse lode,  
 That with the paine still stood as in aound,  
 And had *Gradasso* little harder spurred,  
 He might haue tane the Earle ere he had sturred.

90

But as he rode, he saw king *Agramant*,  
 Vnto extreamest point of danger brought,  
 For why the valiant sonne of *Monodant*,  
 Had loofd his beauer, and such hold had caught  
 Vpon his gorget, that but small did want,  
 Eu'n with one stab his last end to haue wrought:  
 For why the noble minded Christen Prin  
 Had wonne his sword from him a good while since.

91

*Gradasso* doth no more that Earle pursue,  
 But maketh hast king *Agramant* to ayd,  
 And vnto *Brandimart* that nothing knew,  
 Nor of no such misfortune was affrayd,  
 He comes behind his backe quite out of vew,  
 And both his hands at once on sword he layd,  
 And in that sort, he strake with all his might,  
 Full on the helmet of the noble knight.



92  
Oh heau'nly Father grant a resting place  
In Paradice, for this thy Martyrs spirit,  
That hauing runne all his tempestuous race,  
He may with thee an harbour safe inherit.  
Ah Duriudan, hadst thou so little grace,  
So ill to quite thy noblest Masters merit,  
That in his sight thou could of life depriue,  
His best and kindest frend he had aliue?

93  
The sword did pierce a double plate of Steele,  
That little lesse was then two fingers thicke,  
Good Brandimart gan with the blow to reele,  
It pierced had so deepe vnto the quicke,

In this booke may be noted the notable fondnesse of those men, that in auoiding of the lesse danger, fall into the greater, as Morall.  
they did that forsooke the ship, and leapt where they were all cast away, and the ship it selfe saued. In that  
Rogero in his extremitie of danger, feel of conscience, & straight hath recourse to God by prayer and vow,  
it is a good president for others to do the indeed most men are apt to do so, but all the matter is, to performe  
the effect of their vow & promise God after, for that few care for, according to that saying, made a proverbe in Italian,  
Scampato il pericolo giabbato il santo,  
When danger is scaped, the Saint is — mocked.

But the example of Rogero may moue vs to more true deuotion; and this speech of the good old Hermit, let euerie one apply to himselfe that hath need of it, and it may fortune do him as much good as a sermon; for indeed it is most sweet and comfortable and verie true doctrine, and well befeeming the person of a deuout old man (as I called him in the 54 staffe) for seldome goeth deuotion with youth, be it spoken without offence of our Peckedcuanted Ministers: as there goes an old tale of three things that a blind man could see, for when his boy told him that there was brought a verie braue horse, then saith the blind man, I see he is fat: the boy marvelled how he knew it; next he told him, there came by a passing faire woman, then I see she is young (quoth the blind man) well guessed Master said his boy. Lastly, came by a deuout preacher: Sir quoth the boy, here comes a good Priest, then he is old said the blind man, and that guesse was so right, the boy was affraid his Master had had his eyes againe. For indeed age and bodies chastised with fasting and studie, are companions of deuotion: as a frend of mine was wont to say in Italian,

Da medico rognoso,  
Dio mi guarda } Da alchumista stracciato,  
Da monacho ingrossato.

God defend me from a mangie Phisition, (for the Phisition that cannot cure the itch in himselfe, will hardly cure other greater diseases in another.) From a ragged or beggerly Alchumist, for he that cannot get himself good clothes, will hardly turne lead into gold. From a corpulent or fat fed Friar: for he that feeds his owne bodie fat, is not likely to giue of the best spirituall food of the soule.

In Brandimart that laboreth to perswade Agramant to peace, we may note a noble disposition, and excellent good nature, that being verie stout, and treating of peace (as they say) with his sword in his hand, yet endeuoured to take vp the quarrell before it came to blood, which though it be a thanklesse office many times (as here it hapned to Brandimart to be scorned for his labour) yet ought not that to terrifie a good mind from so honest an office. And sure the cause why great quarrels rise vpon small matters, betweene great personages, and are afterward so long ere they be reconciled, and so hollowly reconciled at last, is that some of a wicked pollicie, seeke to keepe them at variance, thinking it (as the proverbe saith) best fishing in troubled waters: but neither S. Peter that was the good fisher of men nor his Master, were of that opinion, but do say contrarily, Beati pacifici.

Of the house of Este, it was first called Ateste, but after (as mine Author hath deliuered) it was turned to Este, by Historie. reason of that speech, Hic este Domini, and Fornarius writing vpon this place affirms the same.

In the deuises or impreises of Orlando and Oliuero, may be noted the decorum they vsed, for Orlando being a known Allusion.  
and approved warrior, giues a more terrible deuice, yet referring the honor to God, in most Christian manner, of striking down and confounding his enemies with lightning. Oliuero whose deuice is the spaniell, or Iyam hound couching with the egna, doth with great modestie shew therby, that the spaniell or hound that is at commandement, waiteth, till the fowle deare be stricken, and then boldly leapeth into the water, or draweth after it by land: so he being yet a young man, waited for an occasion to shew his valed, which being come, he would no longer couch, but shew the same.

In this kind we haue had many in our time, as the happie 17. day of Nouember can witnesse, that haue excelled for excellencie of deuice: of which if I should speake at large, it would aske a volume by it selfe. My selfe, haue chosen this of Oliuero for mine owne, partly liking the modestie thereof, partly (for I am not ashamed to confesse it) because I fancie the spaniell so much, whose picture is in the deuice, and if any make merrie at it. (as I doubt not but some will) I shall not be for for it: for one end of my trauell in this worke, is to make my frends merrie, and besides I can alledge many examples of wise men, and some verie great men, that haue not onely taken pictures, but built cities in remembrance of seruiceable beasts. And as for dogges, Doctor Caynes a learned Phisition and a good man, wrote a treatise in praise of them, and the Scripture it selfe hath vouchsafed to commend Tobias dogge.

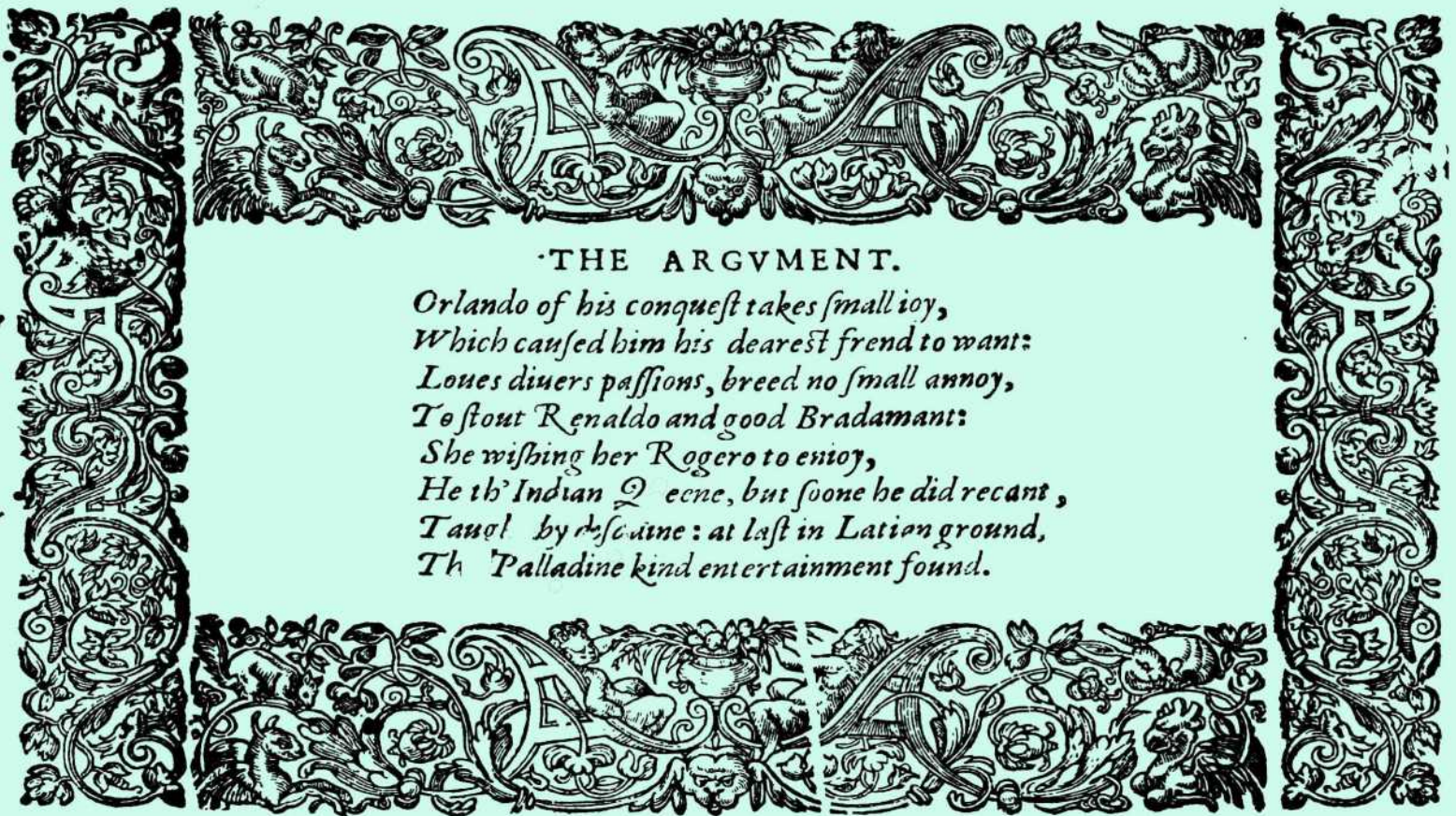
Here end the annotations of the 41. booke

G g iiii









## THE ARGUMENT.

*Orlando of his conquest takes small ioy,  
Which caused him his dearest friend to want:  
Loves diuers passions, breed no small annoy,  
To stout Renaldo and good Bradamant:  
She wishing her Rogero to enjoy,  
He th' Indian Queene, but soone he did recant,  
Tanol by descaine: at last in Latien ground,  
Th' Palladine kind entertainment found.*

of wrath.



<sup>1</sup> Hat iron band, or what  
sharpe hard mouthd bit,  
What chaine of diamond  
(if such might be)  
Can bridle wrathfulnesse  
and conquer it,  
And keep it in his bounds  
and due degree?  
When one to vs in bonds  
of frendship knit,

And dearly lou'd, before our face we see,  
By violence or fraud to suffer wrong,  
By one for him too craftie, or too strong.

<sup>2</sup> And if before we can such pang digest,  
We swarue sometime from law, and run astray,  
It may be well excusd, sith in ones brest,  
Pure reason at such time beares little sway:  
*Achilles* when with counterfai't crest,  
He saw *Patroclus* bleeding all the way,  
To kill his killer was not satisfide.  
Except he hal'd and tare him all beside.

<sup>3</sup> since when in his brow,  
*Alfonso* wounded was with cursed stone,  
And all his re and souldiers thought that now,  
His soule fro rth to heau'n had bene vp flone,  
They kild and spoild, they car'd whom nor how,  
Strong rampiers, walls, to them defence were none,  
But in that furie they put all to wracke,  
Both old and young, and all the towne to racke.

<sup>4</sup> Our men were so enraged with this fall,  
To thunke they had their Captaine lost for ay,

That to the sword they put both great and small,  
That happend then to come within their way:  
And so their fortune did preuaile withall,  
That they the Castle did regaine that day,  
In fewer houres, to their great fame and praise,  
Then had the Spaniards got it erst in dayes.

<sup>5</sup> It may be, God ordained (as I guesse)  
That he that time should wounded be so sore,  
To punish that same sinne and foule excesse,  
His foes committed had a while before,  
When *Vesidell* forlorne and in distresse,  
Did yeeld, and should haue had his life therefor,  
Yet was he kild when they had him surpris'd,  
By men whose greater part were circumcised.

<sup>6</sup> Wherefore I iustly may conclude thus much,  
That nothing can more hotly kindle wrath,  
Then if one shall the life and honor tuch,  
Of our deare friend, or do him wrong or scath.  
Now (as I said) *Orlando's* grieve is such,  
And such occasion of iust grieve he hath,  
He sees his friend, for lacke of better heeding,  
Lye flat on ground, and almost dead with bleeding.

<sup>7</sup> As the Nomadian Shepherd, that a Snake,  
Along the grasse and herbes hath slyding scene,  
Which late before with tooth most poytond strake  
His little sonne, that plaid vpon the greene,  
Doth bruse and beat, and kill him with a stake:  
So goes this Earle with blade most sharpe and keene  
And yet far more with wrath an choller whet;  
And *Agramant*, was then the first he met.

Simile.

book: the Hi-  
oryo t ok.



8

Vnhappie he that in his passage stood,  
His sword was gone as I declar'd before,  
Himselfe belmeared all with his owne blood,  
Braue *Brandimart* had wounded him so fore;  
*Orlando* comes, and in his wrathfull mood,  
With *Ballifard*, that payes home euermore,  
He strikes (by fortune were it or by art)  
Iust where the shoulders from the head do part.

9

Loofd was his helmet, as I erst did tell,  
That like a Poppie quite fell off his hed,  
The carkas of the Lybian Monarke fell  
Downe to the ground, and lay a long starke ded,  
His soule by *Charon*, ferrie-man of hell,  
To *Plutos* house or Stigian lake was led.  
*Orlando* staid no whit, but straight prepar'd,  
To finde *Gradaffo* eke with *Ballifard*.

10

But when *Gradaffo* plaine beheld and saw,  
Of *Agramant* the wofull end and fall,  
He felt an vnaccustom'd dread and aw,  
Who neuer wonted was to feare at all;  
And eu'n as if his owne fate he foresaw,  
He made the *Palladine* resistance small:  
Feare had so maz'd his head, and daz'd his sence,  
That for the blow, he quite forgot his fence.

11

*Orlando* thrust *Gradaffo* in the side,  
About the ribs, as he before him stood,  
The sword came forth a span on tother side,  
And to the hilt, was varnisht all with blood,  
By that same thrust alone it might be tride,  
That he that gaue it was a warriour good,  
That with one thrust did vanquish and subdew,  
The stoutest champion of the Turkish crew.

12

*Orlando* of this conquest nothing glad,  
Doth from his saddle in great hast alight,  
And with a heauie heart and coun'nance sad,  
He runnes vnto his deare beloued knight,  
He sees his helmet cut, as if it had  
Bene clouen quite with axe (a wofull sight)  
And eu'n as if it had bene made of glasse,  
And not of Steele, and plated well with brasse.

13

The *Palladine* his helmet then vnties,  
And finds the scull clou'n downe vnto the chin,  
And sees the braine all cut before his eyes;  
Yet so much breath and life remaind within,  
That he is able yet before he dyes,  
To call to God, for mercie for his sinne,  
And pray *Orlando* ioyne with him in praying,  
And vse to him this comfortable saying.

14

My deare *Orlando*, see that to our Lord,  
Thou in thy good deuotions me commend:  
Likewise to thee commend I my deare *Fiorde-*  
And *liege* he would haue sayd, but there did end;  
Straight Angels voyces with most sweet accord  
Were heard the while his spirit did ascend,  
The which dissolued from this fleshly masse,  
In sweetest melodic to heau'n did passe.

15

*Orlando* though he should reioyce in hart,  
Of this his end so holy and deuout,  
Because he knew his louing *Brandimart*,  
Was taken vp to heau'n, without all doubt,  
Yet flesh and blood in him so playd their part,  
That without teares he cannot beare it out,  
But that he needs must shew some hange in chear  
To leese one more, then any brother deare

16

This while *Sobrino* brused in his hed,  
And wounded sorely in his side and thye,  
Vpon the ground to great a streame had bled,  
It seemd his life in perill was thereby;  
And *Oliuero* little better sped,  
On whom his horse still ouerthrowne did lye,  
e striuing, but his striuing did not boot,  
ger at l tie his brused foot

17

And sure it seemes he had bene worse apayd,  
Had not his dolefull coffin quickly come,  
And brought to him, both quicke and needfull ayd,  
Before the paine had him quite ouercome:  
His foote that long had in the stirrop stayd,  
Was therewithall so void of sence, and numme,  
That when he stood vpright, he was not able,  
To tuch the ground, much lesse tred firm & stable.

18

So that indeed *Orlando* in his hart,  
But little ioy of so great conquest had,  
He wayles the death of his deare *Brandimart*,  
And that his kinsman was in state so bad:  
Now lay *Sobrino*, though aliue in part,  
Yet with a looke so chearlesse and so sad,  
And so much blood his aged veines had bled,  
That doubtlesse in few howres he had bene ded;

19

Saue that *Orlando* with compassion moued,  
To see him ly so lorne, and so distressed,  
Gate him such needfull things as best behoued,  
And charitably made his wounds be dressed:  
So kindly, that some kinsman deare beloued,  
And not his foe, a man might him haue guessed:  
Such was this Earles good nature, fierce in fight,  
But fight once done, from malice free or spight.

20

The horse, and bodies of the other twaine,  
He tooke away, and left their men the rest,  
To be dispos'd to their owne priuate gaine,  
Or to interre their Lords, they thought best.  
But here, that in my story I do faine,  
*Fredericke Fulgoso* (as I heare) hath guest,  
Sith at this Ile he late arriuing found,  
In all the same no leuell foote of gr

21

Nor doth he probable it deeme  
That sixe such knights as had in armes no peare,  
On horsebacke should a combat vndertake,  
Where no one foot of plaine ground doth appeare.  
To which obiection I this answer make,  
That then, in times now past seau'n hundred yeare,  
Plaine ground there was, but now some inundation,  
Or earthquake might procure this alteration.

Wherefore

A true praise of  
a noble wound.



22

Wherefore *Fulgoso*, honor of thy name,  
Bright *Fulgor*, causing all thy stocke to shine,  
If in this point thou hadst imputed blame  
To me, perhaps before that Prince deuine,  
From whom thy countries good and quiet came,  
And did it first to loue and peace incline,  
Informe him now, that eu'n perhaps in this,  
le of truth or likelyhood doth not misse.

23

saffe. 144.

This while *Orlando* looking from the shore,  
A little Frig t did farre of descree,  
That both with sayle, and with the helpe of ore,  
Vnto that ile, seemd in great hast to flie;  
But ere of this I tell you any more,  
I must to France as fast as I can hie,  
To see if they be n errie there or sad,  
Now they from hence the Turks exulted ha

24

Bradamant.

First let vs see how faithfull *Br. ant*,  
Doth take his absence whom she loueth most,  
Who in his oth, due care of faith did want,  
Which he had tane in sight of either host:  
Now sure she thinks his loue and faith too scant,  
To heare he quite had left the Christen cost:  
If in his publike oth he be vniust,  
Whereto alas, then whereto can she trust?

25

And still returning to her former plaints,  
And still bemoaning her vnluckie fate,  
With which her selfe she too too well acquaints,  
She calls herselfe accurst, and him vngrate,  
Yea blaming God himselfe, and all his Saints,  
For not redressing this her wofull state,  
She scarce abstaines high blasphemie to speake,  
That God vniust, and that Saints powres are weake.

26

Then she *Melissa* (absent) doth reprove,  
And curst that Oracles perswasion blind,  
That lapt her in this Laberinth of loue,  
Whence she her selfe by no meanes can vnwinde,  
But to *Marfisa* all the rest aboue,  
She open layes her stomacke and her mind,  
With her she chides and vtters all her choller,  
And yet she prayes her comfort this her doller.

27

*Marfisa* comforts her in all she may,  
And tels her what a vertue Patience is,  
And partly doth excuse *Rogeros* stay:  
And further giueth her her faith in this,  
That find he wilfully delay,  
constraine him mend all is amisse,  
that he refuse to do it,  
o fight wi him and so compell him to it.

28

onsence.

With this she did art her paine asswage,  
For why it is in sorrow great reliefe,  
To those of either sex or any age,  
To haue some friend, to whom to tell their griefe,  
now if *Bradamant* be in such rage,  
No lesse is he that of her house was chiefe,  
I meane *Renaldo* that cannot expulse  
Loues fire, from eu'rie sinew, veine and pulse.

29

I thinke I need not now to you repeat,  
A thing by me so oftentold before,  
By name that loue and that affection great,  
That to *Angelica Renaldo* bore:  
Nor did her beautie cause so much his heat,  
As did that spring of which he dranke such store,  
Now all the other Palladines were free  
From all their foes, now Cupids thrall is he.

30

An hundred messengers he sends about,  
Himselfe the while an hundred wayes more riding,  
To aske of her, or else to finde her out,  
Who hath her now, or where is her abiding.  
At last, because he thinketh out of doubt,  
That *Malagige* of her can learne some tiding,  
He asketh him (but blushing sore with shame)  
If he knew what of th'Indian Queene became.

31

His cosin wonders at so strange a case,  
And in his mind thereon long time he mused,  
That when *Renaldo* had both time and place,  
Her offers large and kind he still refused,  
When both herselfe did sue to haue his grace,  
And many of his friends perswasions vsed:  
And *Malagige* himselfe among the rest,  
Had prou'd him oft with prayre and with request.

32

The rather eke, because *Renaldo* then,  
By taking her, had set his cosin free,  
Who then was kept close prisoner in a den,  
And for that cause in perill slaine to be:  
He marvels that he now would seeke her, when  
No hope, nor cause there was, and further he  
With angrie looke, did bid him call to mind,  
How in this point he had bene too vnkind.

33

But good *Renaldo* now quite of tune,  
Pray' th him old quarrels from his mind to moue,  
And doth most earnestly him importune,  
Vnto his helpe, his skill and bookes to proue:  
Which made his cosin so much more presume,  
Vpon his reconciliation and true loue,  
And promist to assist him if he may,  
And for his answer he prefixt a day.

34

And straight from thence he go' th vnto the place,  
Where he was wont the spirits to coniure,  
A strong vast caue, in which there was great space,  
The precepts of his Art to put in vre:  
One spright he calls, that of each doubtfull case  
Of Cupids court, could giue him notice iure:  
Of him he askt what bred *Renaldos* change,  
By him he heard, of those two fountaines strange.

35

And how *Renaldo* by misfortune led,  
First happen'd of that hatefull spring to drinke,  
Which his dislike of that faire Ladie bred,  
And made her loue, and profferd seruice stinke:  
And how againe, by some ill starre misled,  
He drank of th'other spring, which could him thinke  
onely to be loued and admired,  
Whom erst he hated more then cause required.



Looke in the  
story.

36  
Moreouer he to *Malagigi* shewd,  
How that same famous Indian Queene (nay quean)  
Had on a Pagan youth herselfe bestowd,  
Of parentage, of state, of liuing meane:  
And how from Spaine they in a galley rowd,  
All Christendome and Spaine forsaking cleane,  
And passing both with safetie and with ease,  
(In ventrous barks of Catalyn) the seas.

37  
Now when *Renaldo* for his answer came,  
His learned cosin seekes him to perswade,  
Vnto some better thought his minde to frame,  
Nor further in this gulf of loue to wade;  
Alledging what a slander and a shame,  
It was to fancy one her selfe had made,  
Not like a Queene, but like a vile maide Marian,  
A wife, (nay slaue) vnto a base Barbarian.

38  
In fine he said, she was to th' Indies gon,  
With her *Medoro*, and was welcme there:  
*Renaldo* not a little musd thereon,  
Yet all the rest he could with patience beare,  
And for the paine, he counts it small or none,  
So he at last might finde her any where;  
Wherefore of it he had no care nor keepe,  
Nor could that make him once to breake his sleepe

39  
But when he heard that one of birth so base  
Had with his mistres laid his knife a boord,  
It seemd this strake him speechles in the place,  
He was not able to pronounce a word:  
His heart did quake within, his lips like case  
So trembled, answer he could none afford;  
But ouercome with anguish of the passion,  
He flang away from thence, in carelessse fashion.

40  
And much lamenting this her foule abuse,  
He vowes to follow her what ere in'ue,  
But yet to *Charles* he faineth this excuse,  
That sith *Gradasso*, of his word vntrue,  
Had tane his horte contrary to the vse  
Of valiant Knights, he meanes him to pursue;  
Alledging that it were his great dishoner,  
To let *Bayardo* haue a forren owner.

41  
And that a Turke should boast another day,  
That he by fight did him thereof bereaue.  
King *Charles* (though loth) yet could not say him nay  
To such an honest sute, but gaue him leaue;  
Which tane, alone from thence he goes his way,  
And all his frends in Paris he doth leaue:  
With *Guidon*, *Dudon* stout to him do proffer  
Their company, but he refusd their offer.

42  
Away he goes alone, yet not alone.  
Griefs, teares, and plaints, still his companions are:  
And oft in heart he bitterly doth grone,  
To thinke that erst he should so little care,  
For her great loue, which wisfully forgone,  
He now esteemes at rate so high and rare,  
He could haue wisht (thus was his mind perpl  
But one day to enioy, and die the next.

43  
Then he bethinkes with no lesse griefe, nay rage  
How she could finde in that her lofty hart,  
To let her loue on such a sorry page,  
The merites all, and seruice put apart,  
Done vnto her eu'n from her tender age,  
By men of high renowne and great defart:  
Thus with a fired hart, and watre eyne,  
He rode vntill he toucht the bankes of Rhy

44  
Ere long into Ardenna woods he enters.  
Soone after he *Basylea* quite had part:  
Ardenna woods, whence many come repencers,  
And in that ferrest haue bene sore agast,  
To trauell through the same *Renaldo* ve ers,  
When suddenly the skie did ouer cast,  
And there arose a blacke and hideous storme,  
A then eard a monster of strange forme.

45  
She seem'd of worthie rape, but in her hed,  
A thousand eyes she had, that watch did keepe,  
As many eares, with which she harkened,  
Her eyes want lids, and therefore neuer sleepe,  
In steed of haire, her crowne snakes ouerspred,  
Thus marched she forth of the darknesse deepe,  
Her tayle one Serpent bigger then the rest,  
Which she with knots had tyde about her brest.

46  
This sight, *Renaldos* mind appald so sore,  
He feesles his heart alreadie gan to tayle him,  
And sith it neuer had done so before, (him:  
He marvels what, (the goody care) now should aile  
Yet still his minde misgaue him more and more,  
To see the monster comming to assaile him,  
He nathlesse counterfets his wonted boldnesse,  
Though quaking hads bewraid his inward coldnesse

47  
The monster straight assaulted him, much like  
To one that parfet was and skild in fence,  
And when againe he with his sword did strike,  
He missed, and could doe her none offence.  
Much doth *Renaldo* this ill match mislike,  
And little wants to quite distraet his sence,  
Right blowes and reardemaine he striketh many,  
But yet he cannot hit her right with any.

48  
The monster stickes a Serpent in his brest,  
That strake his heart in to a freezing cold,  
Another fixed is below his crest,  
And on his necke and moulders taketh hold  
*Renaldo* thiukes to get him gone is best,  
And spurres away with all the speed he coul  
But that vile monster was not lame to  
But ouertooke him, and leapt vp behind him.

49  
And whether he go straight, or cwide,  
The monster sitteth sure and holds him fast,  
He knowes not how to be from her vntide,  
Nor any meane within his mind can cast,  
His heart eu'n quakes within him, and beside  
That he was with this hideous plague agast,  
He sorrowd so not knowing how to mend it,  
He loth'd his life, and did desire to end it.

Looke in  
the story.



50

He spurres amaine, and purposely he takes  
The rugged wayes, the worst that he could find,  
By craggie Rocks, and hills, through briers & brakes  
Through coppies thicke, by narrow paths and blind,  
But sure the knight the matter much mistakes,  
He cannot from the monster him vnwind.  
And like it was, great harme had him betyded,  
Had not for him, bene helpe in time prouided

51

*Hegorie is  
inde is the  
is back*  
For loe a knight, vnto his succour went,  
All armd shining Steele, and on his shield,  
He bare a yoke in lundry peeces rent,  
And flames of fire all in a yellow field,  
So weaponed he was, as if he ment  
To make all that encountred him to yeeld,  
A sword and speare he had, and to the same,  
A place from whence he threw continuall flame.

52

His Mace was stor'd with euerlasti. g fire  
That euer burned, and did neuer wast,  
No other weapon neede one desire,  
To make good way with, where(eu'r he past,  
And sure *Renaldos* danger did require  
Quicke remedie, wherefore the knight doth hast:  
And when he saw this monster and did vew her,  
With his stiffe speare forthwith he ouerthrew her,

53

But this same fall did her no whit annoy,  
Wherefore to vse his speare he now misliketh,  
He onely will his fierie Mace imploy,  
And with that same the monster foule he striketh:  
Then she no longer could her force enioy,  
*Renaldo* while she fled, occasion piketh,  
To scape away, as him that knight perswaded,  
While he this monster more and more inuaded.

54

*the prosperitie of  
raouisie.*

Now when the knight had with his fierie Mace,  
Driu'n backe this monster to her darksome den,  
Where she for spite doth beat her head and face,  
Repining at the good of other men,  
Then to *Renaldo* he doth ride apace,  
And when he had soone ouertane him, then  
He offerd in kind sort, with him to ride,  
From out the darksome places him to guide.

55

But when *Renaldo* was from danger free,  
And that same knight by whom his safetie came,  
So courteously to come to him did see,  
He cech to him in kind words he did frame,  
And due him many thanks in hye degree,  
And then besought him he might know his name,  
The emperor and all his court might know,  
Did so great grace on him bestow.

55

The knight in courteous manner thus replide,  
I would not ye should take it in displeasure,  
That I my name from you a while shall hide,  
But ere the shadow grow a yard by measure,  
all you tell: thus onward still they ride,  
*Renaldo* being pleasd to stay his leaue,  
So long they went together till they found,  
A christall spring that ran along the ground.

57

At which full oft the herdmen, that did dwell  
Neare those same woods, haue in their louing fits,  
Drunke loue away, with tasting of that well,  
And of those passions purged cleane their wits:  
Now (for the knight that rode with him could tell  
That for *Renaldos* ill, this Phisicke fits)  
He doth aduite him there to stay a space,  
And make that well their baite and resting place

58

*Renaldo* of the motion well allowth,  
And lighteth straight, and to the well doth go,  
Both for that heat and trauell bred his drowth,  
And that the monster had disturbd him so;  
Vnto the christall well he puts his mouth,  
And greedily drinks downe fise gulps or mo,  
And from his brest doth with one draught remoue  
His burning thirst, and his more burning loue.

59

Now when that other knight that with him went,  
Saw him lift vp himselfe from that same brooke,  
And found he did his foolish loue repent,  
And that he now that humor quite forsooke,  
Then to declare his name he was content,  
And looking with a graue and lostie looke,  
He said, *Renaldo*, know I hight *Didaïne*,  
That came to loose thee from loues foolish chains.

60

This said, he vanisht from *Renaldo* quite,  
His horse nor him he could not after see,  
*Renaldo* marvels at this wondrous sight,  
And lookes about, and saith, what where is he  
At last he thinks tis some familiar spright,  
That by good *Malagigis* sent might be:  
To rid him of that tedious care and wo,  
That many months had him afflicted so.

61

Orelse that God to him this helpe did lend,  
Of his especiall grace and louing kindnes,  
As erst he did vnto *Tobias* send,  
His Angel to deliuer him from blindnes:  
But let it Angel be, or be it fend,  
*Renaldo* takes against him no vnkindnes:  
He thanks and praises it, and doth acknowledge,  
To haue receiu'd of him grace, wit, and knowledge

62

Now, that same great mislike and hate returned,  
Offaire *Angelica*, whom late he loued,  
Now he despised her and greatly scorned,  
To thinke that he for her one foote had moued:  
Yet onward into *India* ward he iourned,  
As for *Bayardos* sake it him behoued:  
Because both honor did compell him to it,  
And to his Prince he vndertooke to do it.

63

He rides to *Basile* next ensuing night,  
Where verie late before, some newes were hard,  
How that *Orlando* challeng'd was to fight,  
And for that fight, how he himselfe prepar'd,  
N that *Orlando* newes hereof did write,  
But one that came from *Sycill* thitherward,  
Affirmed he had heard the same reported,  
many that to *Sycily* resorted.

Hh

*Of this Well you  
heard in the first  
booke.*



64

These newes do set on edge *Renaldos* hart,  
He faine would present be at this conflict,  
He faine would take therein *Orlandos* part,  
To whom he bounden was in bands most strikt,  
Of friendship, of allyance and defart:  
Wherefore he takes post horse, and spurd and prickt,  
And changd both beasts, & guides each tē miles end  
And toward Italy he still doth bend.

65

And when he did passe the streame of Rhine,  
And then beyond the Alpes, he soone doth goe,  
To Mantoa, and ere the Sun decline,  
He passed ore the stately streame of Poe,  
Here he did doubt, and did not soone designe,  
If he should trauell all the night or noe:  
Till at the last a well behaoured knight,  
And full of curtesie, came in his sight.

66

This knight forthwith vnto *Renaldo* went,  
And askt him if he were a marride man,  
*Renaldo* maruels what the question ment,  
But answerd yea, then tother straight began,  
And praid him, that he would be then content,  
To be his guest, at such cheare as he can:  
Offering to shew him, while with him he tarride,  
A fight well pleasing vnto all were maride.

67

*Renaldo* glad so good a bait to make,  
And no lesse willing, haps moit rare to heare,  
Would not the offer of this knight forsake,  
Of entertainment good, and friendly cheare,  
But onward with him doth his iourney take,  
Vntill he saw a goodly place appeare,  
So well set forth, both for the shew and fence,  
As seemd not for a priuat mans expence.

68

The porch was all of Porpherie and Tutch,  
On which the sumptuous building raised was,  
With Images that seemd to moue, see, tuch,  
Some hewd in stone, some caru'd and cut in brasse,  
Likewile within, the beautie was asmuch:  
Beneath a stately arch, they straight did passe,  
Vnto a court that good proportion bare,  
And was each way one hundred cubites square.

69

And either side a Porch had passing faire,  
That with an arch, is on two cullomns placed,  
Of equall sise they seemd euerie paire,  
Yet fundrie works, which them the better graced;  
At each of these a wide, large easie staire,  
Without the which, all buildings are defaced,  
And those same staires, so stately mounting, led  
Each to a chamber richly furnished.

70

The cullomns hie, the chapters guilt with gold,  
The cornishes enricht with things of cost,  
The Marbles fet from farre, and dearely sold,  
By cunning workmen carued and imboist,  
With Images, and antikes new and old,  
(Though now the night thereof concealed most)  
Shew that that worke so rich beyond all measure  
Could scant be builded with a Princes treasure.

71

But nothing did so much the sight enrich,  
As did the plenteous fountaine, that did stand  
Iust placed in the middle, vnder which  
The Pages spred a table out of hand,  
And brought forth napry rich, and plate more rich,  
And meates the choicest of the sea or land:  
For though the house had stately roomes full many  
In summer season this was best of any.

72

This fountaine was by curious workmen brought,  
To answer to the rest with double square,  
Eight femall statues of white marble wrought,  
With their left hands, an azure skie vp bare,  
Which raining still, expelled heat and drought,  
From all that vnder it, or nare it are,  
In their right hands, was *Amaltbeas* horne,  
By which one of those eight statu borne.

73

Each of these statues, both their feete,  
Vpon two Images of men below,  
That seemd delighted with the noise so sweete,  
That from the water came, that there did flow,  
They also seemd the Ladies low to greete,  
As though they did their names and vertues know:  
And in their hads they hold long scroles of writings  
Of their owne pennings and their owne enditings.

74

And in faire golden letters were the names,  
Both of the women wrote, and of the men,  
The women were eight chaste and sober dames,  
That now do liue, but were vnborne as then:  
The men were Poets that their worchie fames,  
In time to come, should praise with learned pen;  
These Images bare vp a brazen tressell,  
On which there stood a large white Marble vessell.

75

This tooke the water from the azure skie,  
From whence, with turning of some cocke or vice,  
Great store of water would mount vp on hie,  
And wet all that same court eu'n in a trice;  
With sight of these *Renaldo* fed his eye,  
So that his host could scarcely him entice,  
To feed his stomacke, yet he oft him told,  
His meate would marre and fallets would be cold.

76

Then downe at last they sat them at the boord,  
And pleasant talke did helpe digest their meate,  
His host that was no niggard, did affoord  
Great store of delicates, to drinke and eate,  
And all this while *Renaldo* spake no word,  
Although he did it oft in mind repeate,  
And though his tongue did itch, to pray  
What twas that would please marride men so we

77

At last he put him mannerly in minde,  
Of that he first did promise him to shew,  
Eu'n then he plainly saw his host inclinde  
To inward grieve, and did more pensiuue grow,  
With secret sighs, and leauing halfe behinde;  
At last a Page came in with curtie low,  
And beares a standing cup of gold most fine,  
Without of gemmes, and full within of wine.

With

Heere you must  
begin to reade the  
tale of the Man-  
suan knight  
that had the  
married mans  
suppe.

That horne sig-  
nified plentie,  
copia cornu  
Of *Amaltbea*  
look in the table.

*Il Salato e freddo*  
the Italians say



77

With this, the Matter of the feast did smile,  
And on Renaldo lookt with pleasant cheare,  
But one that well had marked him that while,  
Might see more griefe then mirth, in him appeare:  
Now noble guest (quoth he) within a while,  
You shall see prou'd, a strange conclusion heare,  
Th needs must be full welcome to be tried,  
all that are in bonds of wedlocke tied.

78

For sure I thinke (he said) each husband ought,  
Make search if so his wife esteeme him dearly,  
If fame, or shame, by her to him be brought,  
If man or beast, he be reputed mearly:  
The burthen of the horne though it be thought  
eigh so heauie, and to touch so nearly,  
No ubt but many get them in their marriage  
Yet elethem, they be so light in carriage

79

But if a man by certaine may know  
How that his wife to him is true and iust,  
He hath more cause more kindnes her to show,  
Then he that liues in right, or wrong mistrust:  
For some without a cause do iealous grow,  
Whose wiues are chaste, and free from lawlesse lust:  
And some y for their wiues truth durst haue sworne,  
Haue for their labours, in their head a horne.

*This booke begins with a Morall against wrath; and reuenge, excusing rather then allowing them that yeeld to that bloodie passion: but let all noble minded men (I speake to men of the sword) if they do as Orlando did, reuenge the death of their deere friend, yet after take example of Orlandos clemencie towards Sobrino, whom (after the furie of the combat was past) he made to be cured. Tully in his Oration pro Marcello, hath many excellent sayings to this effect, to praise Cæsar and, all such being able to reuenge, yet rather chuse to forgieue: as in one place he saith, verum animum vincere, iracundiam cohibere, victoriam temperare, &c. Hæc qui faciat, non ego eum summis viris comparo, sed simillimum Deo iudico. To ouersome the passions of the minde, to bridle ones anger, to moderate the victorie, &c. who doth these things I compare not him to the best sort of men, but I liken him to God himselfe. Further in the same oration he calls wrath an enemy to wisdom: and our commo English prouerbe saith, the hastie man neuer wanteth woe: all which I calledge rather to proue mine authours saying true: that it is hard to bridle wrath, and to temper reuenge; and consequently the more commendable for those that can do it: according to the saying, pulchra quæ difficilia; and therefore the more noble and great a man is either in byrth or fortune; the more honorable it is for him to be spare and not bloodie in reuenge; Possit & nolle nobile. And euen in this last booke, you read how hurtfull desire of reuenge falleth oftime to him that desireth it; for Agramant came of purpose into France to be reuenged vpon Charles, and was as you see, first expelled out of that Realme, and after bereft of his life.*

*Of Alfonsoes hurt you may reade in Guycchardin, and how his men recovered the Bastia from the Spaniards, who had certaine Moores with them at that time; and therefore he saith (of men whose greater part were circumcised.) Fulgoso or Fregoso, was Archbishop of Salerne, and as it seemes, had carped at Ariostos verse of Lyppadusa: but he defends the matter prettily, alledging that an earthquake; or inundation had destroyed all the leuell ground. The like reproofe had Virgil about the hauen of Mongibello, which he describes at the roote of that hill, where indeed there was none: and the like excuse is made for him; that it filled with the continuall casting vp of stones out of the burning hill. Catala are the chiefe house of Spaine, alledged here by the Poet, for their good successe in discovering the Indies, though ortugal's Lusitani not Catalani deserue the praise of it.*

*that a faulted Renaldo signifies Iealousie that he had, that another posselt his loue: the knight that deli- Allegorie.  
Disdaine, that with the heat of noble courage, signified by the fierie Mace, ouerthrew the monster, and him quise away: it is so plaine in the verse it needs no exposition.*

*The cup that Renaldo was offerd, puts me in minde of the like fanisie, in the Historie of Herodotus in the second booke, Allusio  
Briefely it is thus. Pharao King of Egypt, hauing by ill hap, lost his eyesight, was aduised (by some Oracle) to bath his eyes in the vrine of a chaste woman. Wherefore first he proued his wiues, and after diuers other great Ladies, but he found none did him good but one poore gentelwoman, wherefore being recovered of his sight, he put all the other to death, and married that one: but because the matter of the cup is continued in the next booke, I shall speake more to this effect, in my notes pon the same.*

80

Now sir, if you beleuee your wife is true,  
As sure till one do finde contrarie prooffe,  
I thinke both you, and all men ought of dew;  
For that no doubt is best for their behoofe,  
Here you shall see it tride within your vew,  
For which I prayd you harbour in my roofe:  
This cup (said he) if you desire to know it,  
By drinking in the same, will clearly show it.

81

Now drinke hereof, and proue this passing skill,  
For if Acteons armes, be on your crest,  
Do what you can, you shall the liquor spill,  
Beside your mouth, vpon your lappe and brest,  
But if your wife be chaste, then drinke your fill,  
No such mischance your draught will then molest.  
Thus much he said, and fixt on him his eyne,  
And thinkes Renaldo sure would spill the wine.

82

Renaldo halfe allured to assay,  
To finde a thing, which found he might repent,  
Did take in hand the golden cup straight way,  
As if to quaffe it off, were his intent:  
Yet first he doth the certaine danger way,  
To which by tasting such a cup he went.  
But giue me leaue a while some breath to take,  
Before you heare what answer he did make.

*Acteons armes were hornes giuen him by Diana, wherupon a pleasant fellow wrote this disticke of one that had married a light huswife. Thaida se credidusse, sed illa Diana est, Namque Acteoneum dabit Gauræ caput.*





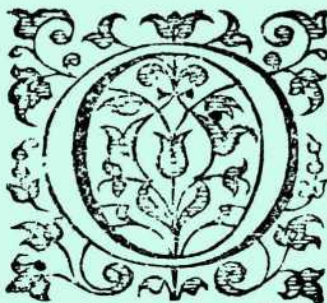


## THE ARGUMENT.

*Renaldo heares two tales to like effect,  
 Tone of a Bargeman, tother of a knight:  
 Both prouing that rewards will soone infect  
 The mindes of chastest dames, and make them light:  
 To Lippaduse he doth his course direct,  
 But first Orlando first had his fight:  
 That Hermit that Rogero did baptise,  
 Heal'd Oliuer, and Sobrine in likewise.*

Against Ambition.

In noble men.



**C**urst, o greedie, o vnfa-  
 ciable  
 Desire of gaine, I do not  
 maruell iure,  
 If thou the base and filthy  
 minds art able,  
 To caule to stoope vnto  
 th' earren lure,  
 we see some per-  
 sons honorable,  
 Can learce thy weake and base assaults endure,  
 Who if they could thy foule entilements shun,  
 No doubt but they great glory should haue won.

**S**ome men can measure earth, and sea, and sky,  
 And tell the change and caule of eu'ry reason,  
 And wade so farre with wit, or mount so hy,  
 They search both heau'n & hel with depth of reason  
 But when thou com'st in place then by and by,  
 Thou putt'st their daintie tastes to out of reason,  
 Th' place their whole delight, their hope their  
 craue in heaping wealth. (health)

**S**ome men in warres hath great renowne,  
 And gets the conquest in each bloudie strife,  
 And wins this fortresse, and that walled towne,  
 Opposing his stout brest to penils rife,  
 Thou onely conquerst him, and thrusts him downe,  
 And keepest him thy prisoner all his life:  
 Some men, excelling in each art and studdie,  
 Thou doest obscure, with base desires and muddie.

As prof. 11-12

In some honora-  
ble men.

**W**hat should I speake of dames of worth not small,  
 That hauing louer, men of great defauts,

Oppose their honours, as a brazen wall,  
 Against their suits with vnrelenting hart?  
 But come some miser, base deformed squall,  
 That saue his riches, hath no worthy parts,  
 They breake the wall, and make therein a gap,  
 To take the showre that fell in Danaes lap.

**N**or without cause hereof complaine do I,  
 Take me that can, for I do rightly take it,  
 Nor from my matter do I swaue awrie,  
 Or by a vaine digression do forsake it;  
 Yet to my former speech I not applie,  
 But tending to a future tale I spake it:  
 Now let me tell you of Renald first,  
 That with one draught wold swage his double thirst.

**B**ut whether that his courage did him faile,  
 Or that on more aduise, he changed minde,  
 He thought and said, what should it one amale,  
 To seeke a thing he would be loth to finde?  
 My wife a woman is, cleare sex is fraile,  
 I yet am to beleue the best endinde;  
 I know I cannot better my beleife,  
 And if I change it, it will be my grieife.

**W**hat good may come by such a straight clypyall,  
 Into my fences surely cannot sinke,  
 Much hurt may come, there can be no denyall,  
 I eteuing feuer thote whom God doth shoke:  
 Wherefore to make so vnaccustomed trall,  
 Vere sinne, and tempting God as I do thinke:  
 Then drinke this cup, (quoth he) that lill, not I,  
 am not, nor I minde not to be drinke.

Ull m

*Ouid.  
 Auream uen-  
 rē sunt secula:  
 plurimas auro  
 venit honor, au-  
 ro consolator a-  
 mor.  
 Danae had a  
 chryseid, which  
 fell in her lap.  
 Looke in the  
 Table.*

*One thirst was  
 for a cup, she is  
 ther so knowe as  
 in a chryseid.*

*Sequence, accord-  
 ing to the say-  
 inge. The first  
 line is from  
 Ouid.*

Sentence

Sentence.



8

Simile.

This was ne  
considered  
Aganido.

God would such skill from mortall men be hid,  
And eu'n as *Adam* wrought his ouerthrow,  
By tasting fruit, that God did him forbid,  
So he that curiously will search to know,  
All that his wife hath said, or what she did,  
May fortune at the last him selfe bestrow:  
And shall confound him selfe (this thinke I verily)  
And liue in sorrow, that did erst liue merily.

9

Thus such said good *Renaldo*, and withall  
He thrust away that hatefull cup of wine,  
And then he saw of teares, a streame not small,  
Flow from the master of that house his eyne:  
Which past, he said, now foule may them befall,  
That first procurd this miserie of mine:  
To proue (which I shall sorrow all my life)  
That, which bereft me of my dearest wife.

10

Why was not I (said he) with you acquainted,  
Ten yeares ere this, to take aduise so sound,  
Before my heart was thus with sorrow tainted,  
Of which no ease can now, nor end be found:  
But that you may, as in a table painted,  
Behold my griefes, I will to you expound,  
What causd this mine vncomparable woe,  
And then you sure will pittie me I know.

11

Banaco.

*Cadmus* some of  
*Agenor*, turned  
into a Dragon,  
built the towne  
of Thebes.

Not farre from hence you left a little towne,  
About the which there runnes a prettie lake,  
That fals into this streame of great renowne,  
But from *Banaco* first his head doth take,  
Erected when those walls were beaten downe,  
That erst *Agenor*'s dragon there did make;  
There was I borne of house and stocke not base,  
Though of meane wealth inferiour to my race.

12

Sentence.  
Tully saith, *La-  
us proprius iocun-  
ditur in ore* and  
*Cato* old ver  
*Nec se collaudas  
nec reculpaueris  
in se.*

But though to me dame Fortune was but spare,  
That by my birth small wealth to me there grew,  
Yet Nature did with bountie great and care,  
Supply that want, by faire and comely hew,  
My seemly personage, my beautie rare,  
To me the liking of full many drew:  
My qualities thereto, were quaint and iollie,  
Although I know to praise ones selfe is follie.

13

Within this towne a great rich man did tarrie,  
Well learnd, and wise, and old beyond all credit,  
For ere he dide, he on his backe did carrie,  
Full sixscore yeares and eight at least, he fed it:  
An hundred yeares he liued solitarie,  
But after that (you know what humor bred it)  
He lou'd a dame, and with his wealth so wrought her  
That at the last he gat of her a daughter.

14

Sentence.

And least the daughter should proue like the mother,  
To sell her chastitie for filthie pelfe,  
Which whosoever fels, it quite vndoth her,  
Although she thinks she doth enrich her  
Therefore he bred her farre from sight of othe  
And by the helpe of many a hellish elfe,  
Which by his skill in Magicke, he could master  
He built this house of Tutch and Allablast.

15

He causd chaste old women, her to nourish  
In this same house, in which she grew so faire,  
And in those yeares when youth doth chiefly flourish,  
He let not any thither to repaire,  
That were in looks, or speech, or manners whorish,  
But contrary, he causd in Marble faire,  
Or else on tables to be drawne and carued,  
All such whose chastities had praise defarued.

16

Nor onely such as haue in ancient times,  
Bene patterns true of manners chaste and pure,  
And haue opposd against all fleshly crimes,  
Most chaste and vertuous thoughts (a buckler sure)  
By which their name to such high honor climes,  
As their great praise shall uermore indure:  
But such as shall excell in times to come,  
Of which those eight, that erst you saw be some.

17

Now when this aged fire with his skill,  
Procur'd his daughter be thus choicely bred,  
It was my hap, (shall I say good or ill?)  
That I was deemd most worthy her to wed:  
And that old man bare her so great good will,  
He gaue to me this house thus furnished,  
With needfull things within it and without it,  
And all the lands in twentie mile about it,

18

But her owne shape, so pleas'd my heart and eyne,  
That for the rest I did but little care,  
For needle workes, and for embroderies fine,  
I thinke her skill with *Pallas* might compare;  
To heare her play or sing, a thing deuine  
It was, her stroke so sweete, her voyce so rare:  
In other sciences, her skill was such,  
As was her fathers, or almost as much.

19

Great was her wit, no lesse then wit, her fauour,  
As might in senselesse stones affection moue,  
To this she had a sweete and kind behauour,  
As more then all the rest ingendred loue,  
It seem'd her sole delight was in my fauour,  
Out of my sight, she was most loth to moue:  
So liued I, and still had liued so,  
But that my selfe did worke my selfe this wo.

20

For when her father finishd had his life,  
Full five yeares after I had got his daughter,  
Then grew the causes of this wofull strife,  
That vnto sorrow turne hall my laughter;  
For when I doted most vpon my wife,  
And of the world the chiefeest ieuell thought,  
A dame of noble birth, of person seemel  
Did hap to fall in loue with me extreem y.

21

This dame, for passing skill in Magicke art,  
Was comparable to the best magicion,  
But yet for all her skill, my constant hart,  
She could not moue nor turne on no condition:  
To cure her mialladie, or ease her smart,  
I still refused to be her Phisition,  
Because, the med'cin that of me she sought,  
As iniurie vnto my wife I thought,

*Chaste old women*  
for if they haue  
beene chaste &  
when youth, they  
become all gene-  
rall.

*These eight were*  
those that suppor-  
ted the foundation  
in the xly. booke.

*It was a faire,*  
dame.

*Pallas* was ex-  
cellent in all curi-  
ous works. Look  
in the Table.

*Look in the*  
illusion.

Yet



22

Yet was her bewtie much, I must confesse,  
And great her offers she to me did make,  
Beside the loue she did to me professe,  
Would moue a man some care of her to take;  
But my wiues loue, did me so firme possesse,  
all reiected, onely for her sake,  
And that which most to her my liking drew,  
Was that I found her still so kind and trew.

Sentence.

23

The good opinion, and the strong surmise,  
I had of my wiues chastitie and truth,  
Would without doubt, haue made me to despise  
The Dame, whose bewtie bred to Troy such ruth,  
And all the wealth, though laid before mine eyes,  
that Iuno offerd to the Troian youth,  
my refusa<sup>n</sup>, and her oft repulses,  
No part of her great loue, from her expulses.

Helen,  
ru, looke on  
Tale.

24

*Melissa*, so was this inc<sup>o</sup>ntesse name  
Perceiuing still in vaine to me she sowed,  
Once finding me at leysure, to me came,  
And in most cunning sort, her suit renewed,  
And secretly she kindled iealous flame  
Within my brest, which oft I since haue rued.  
She saith, I do but well so true to be  
Vnto my wife, if she were so to me.

25

But how know you (saith she) your wife is trew,  
That of her faith as yet no prooffe haue made,  
You neuer let her go scant from your vew,  
When none can come to vice her to perswade,  
Not none can see her, none to her can seue,  
Tis easie to resist where none inuade.  
To praise her truth vntide, is too much hast,  
Your care, and not her vertue keeps her chaste.

Sentence.

26

But get you but from home some little while,  
That men to sue to her might take occasion,  
And thinking you are absent many a mile,  
With letters and with gifts to make inuasion,  
And then if you shall finde in her no guile,  
Except she yeeld to gifts, and to perswasion,  
So she haue hope to do it vnespied  
Then thinke your wife is chaste, when that is tryed.

27

With these and such like words th'Inchantresse fly,  
Did make me do that hat hath me vndonne,  
By name, to giue consent my wife to try,  
could by such assaults be wonne:  
hall ell assur'd (said I)  
To know y returne, what she hath donne,  
whether she, with these so great assayes,  
Haue at my hands deserued blame or prayse.

28

Forsooth (saith she) I will on you bestow,  
A drinking bowle, not much vnlike that cup,  
With which *Morgana* made her brother know,  
*Genewras* fraud, when he thereon did sup.  
Who drinks hereof, his wiues truth plaine shal know  
If he be chaste, he drinks the liquor p,  
But if a cuckold to carrowle doth thinke,  
He sheddeth in his bolome all the drinke.

the king  
Marcus of or-his is in the  
boun- risur  
and Lancelot.  
looke in the  
Tale.

29

Now ere you go, the cup I wish you tast,  
And you shall drinke, perhaps and shall not spill,  
Because as yet, I thinke your wife is chaste,  
As neuer being tempted vnto ill:  
But try againe when as a month is past,  
And you shall see I trow, a prettie skill,  
For then I grant, that if you drinke it cleanly,  
Abooue all men, you blessed are not meanly.

30

I tooke her offer, and I tooke the say,  
Of that lamecurtied cup, with sweere successe,  
I find my wife vnspotted to that day,  
As I my selfe was sure, and she did guesse:  
Now straight (quoth she) to part from hence away,  
For one or two months space, your selfe addresse,  
Then try at your returne, how you haue sped,  
If you drinke cleane, or if the drinke you shed.

31

But now this parting such a penance seemed,  
As I in deed could by no meanes endure,  
Not that of my deare wife, I ought misdeemed,  
For her of all the rest, I thought cocksure;  
But that her company I so esteemed:  
Well then (*Melissa* saith) I will procure,  
If you will do, but what I shall you teach,  
That you shall change your cloths, your shape, and

32

And so you shall your selfe to her present,  
And make your selfe a plaine and perfect prooffe.  
I foolishlie to this deuice assent,  
And so it hapt that hence, not farre aloofe,  
A knight of large reuenue and of rent,  
Dwelt at *Giabana*, fit for this behoofe,  
His personage was braue, his purse well lyned,  
His years but young, to *Venus* all inclyned.

(I peach.

Giabana, it is so  
be pronounced  
Iabana, a towne  
upon the river of  
Poe.

33

That gallant youth had one day bene a halking,  
His hawke by hap, into my garden flew,  
He comming thither, found my wife a walking,  
And much he likt her, at the very vew;  
But when he had a while with her bene talking,  
To burning loue, his warme affection grew,  
That after that, full many wayes he prou'd her,  
If his request to grant, he could haue mou'd her.

34

But hauing still such short and sharpe repulses,  
He meanes no more, in that fond suit to wade,  
But from his thought, her shape he not expulses,  
That first to giue the bold attempt him made;  
So well *Melissa* knew to touch my pulses,  
To take his forme, she doth me soone perswade,  
I straight was chang'd I know not how nor wheare,  
In face, in clothes, in speech, in eyes, in heare.

Looke in the  
Allusion.

35

Now hauing to my wife a tale deuild,  
As thou h to th' East I then my iourney tooke,  
And b like this youth, so strange disguild:  
In o , in voyce, apparell, and in looke,  
ame as fly *Melissa* me aduild,  
And she did like my Page or Lackie looke,  
Vpon her arme she beares a little flasket,  
in which, of iewells rich she hid a casket.

Hh iij



36

I that well knew each roome, came in securely,  
 Into the houle, my Page and I together;  
 There where my Ladie late alone demurely,  
 For neither groomer as then, nor maid was with her  
 Then I expound my suit, and that more surely  
 he might beleue my words, I needs would giue  
 earls Rubies, Dyamonds of passing price, (her,  
 The wicked baies, to draw good minds to vice.

Sentence.

37

I baould esteeme this gift but small  
 To that she might of me in time expect:  
 I said, her husbands absence fit did fall,  
 And wisdom bids occasions not neglect:  
 I prayd her weigh my constant loue withall,  
 Which long had lasted, though without effect,  
 And last, I ware I had some grace deferred,  
 That had so long, that had so truly serued.

Sentence.

38

At first she blusht, and lookt with lowring cheare,  
 And would not hearken, but did still retire,  
 But th' Orient Pearls, and stones that shon so cleare,  
 Did mollifie her heart, to my desire:  
 She softly saith, but so as I might heare,  
 That for the thing, which I so oft require,  
 She grant it would, and would on me bestow it,  
 So she were sure that none beside might know it.

39

This answer was to me a poysond dart,  
 To strike my soule, in desperat disease,  
 And straight my heart, my head, and eu'rie part,  
 I felt a frozen ielousie to lease:  
 And presently *Melissa* by her art,  
 Restor'd my shape (as she could do with ease.)  
 How lookt my wife (think you) when by my trapping  
 She found herselfe thus foulietaken napping.

40

We both do looke like ashes, pale and wan,  
 We both stood dum, we both cast downe our eye,  
 Scarfe able was my voyce (do what I can)  
 To serue my turne, while I did thinke to cry:  
 Then wouldst thou wife vnto another man,  
 Mine honour sell, if he the same could by?  
 She held her peace, and answer made me none,  
 But onely wept and made a piteous mone.

41

The shame was much, but much more the disdain,  
 That of my foolish vltage tane she hath,  
 Within due bonds she could not it containe,  
 But that it brake to spite, to hate, to wrath:  
 Resolu'd with me no longer to remaine,  
 When *Phobus* charret trode his Westerne path,  
 That euening in a small barge of her owne,  
 Downe streame she swimmeth, as if she had flowne.

42

Betimes next day she doth vnto that knight,  
 Herselfe present, that her before had loued,  
 In whole disguised shape, I her last night  
 Both gainst mine owne, and gainst her honour proued  
 You well may iudge it was a welcome fight  
 To him, that long before such suit had moued,  
 From thence she sends to me this message plaine,  
 That she would neuer come at me againe.

43

Ah woe was me, for from that houre to this,  
 She bydes with him, where me they lout and scorne,  
 And I that could not see my sugred blys,  
 Now by forgoing it, am quite forlorne;  
 Nor can I say but iust my penance is,  
 Which still growes more, and will till I be worne,  
 And sure one yeare, of life had quite bereft me,  
 Saue for one onely comfort that was left me.

44

This onely comfort brought me some releefe,  
 That for the space of ten yeares, all my guests,  
 (Though many of their wiues had great beleefe)  
 Yet still they shed the drinke vpon their breasts:  
 To finde so many partners in my greefe,  
 Aswageth much the paine that me molests,  
 You onely selfe hath bene the onely stranger,  
 That hath refusd a draught of so great danger.

45

My ouermuch desire to sift iere,  
 In so precise, and in so straight a fort,  
 Doth cause that now I shall not all my life,  
 Liue on good houre, endure it long or short:  
 Clad was *Melissa* that procurde this strife,  
 But soone I turnd and marred all her sport,  
 For finding she, was of my harme procurer,  
 I hated her, and could no more endure her.

46

But she that finds herselfe disdaind mearty,  
 Where she had hoped to haue found reward,  
 And me, whom she profest to loue so dearly,  
 Her loue and kindnes nothing to regard,  
 The greefe hereof did tuch her mind so nearly,  
 To leaue this countrey she forthwith prepar'd,  
 And euer since farre hence she is abyding,  
 Whereas of her, we heare no newes nor tiding.

47

Thus told the wofull knight, in dolefull wise,  
 This ruefull tale vnto his noble guest,  
 Who with compassion moued, thus replies;  
*Melissus* counsell certes was not best,  
 That did without discretion you aduise,  
 To anger waspes, or so to stirre their nest,  
 And you your selfe did greatly overshoot you,  
 To seeke a thing, whose finding would not boot you

Sentence is in  
 Latin, *Noli ir-  
 ritare Crabrones.*

48

What maruell is it if your wife were wonne  
 With gifts, and were to lightnes soone alluered?  
 Is she the first (thinke you) that so hath donne?  
 No, nor the last, be you well assured,  
 Yea, minds full sound haue wa powre to inn  
 Such baies, and haue not such a  
 Haue you not heard of men that haue for gold,  
 Their masters and their friends most dearest so

49

You should not with a dart so fierce assayle,  
 If her defend herselfe to see you fought,  
 What, know you not stone walls cannot auayle,  
 Nor Steele, if gold be to the batt'ne brought?  
 Now sure your selfe of duetie more did fayle,  
 In tempting her, then she in being caught,  
 Perhaps if she had tempted you so so,  
 Your folly would haue bene as much or more.

Horace  
*Aurum p-  
 dios & satellites  
 corruptum  
 amat saxa.*



50  
Thus spake *Renaldo*, and withall he rose,  
And prayd he might betake him to his rest,  
He minds a while himselfe there to repose,  
And after to depart he doth request;  
Small time he hath, and that he would dispose  
With great regard, for so he thinks it best:  
The gentle knight doth tel him when it please him  
He may within his chamber rest and ease him.

51  
But if you will vnto my counsell harke,  
And that you haue (as you pretend) such hast,  
I will appoint for you a little barke,  
That shall with oares conuey you safe and fast,  
There may you sleepe the while you find it darke,  
When your stomake serues you, take repast:  
Thus may you rowne the streame in safety sliding,  
When one whole night, & saue a whole daies riding.

52  
*Renaldo* this good offer both accept,  
And gaue him heartie thanks, then tooke his barge:  
He found his host with him had promise kept,  
And makes of needfull things prouision large:  
No sooner was he settled, but he slept,  
But yet before he gaue the steerman charge,  
If that to sleepe too long it did befall him,  
When he came neare *Ferrara*, then to call him.

53  
Now did the knight of France in quiet sleepe,  
And past by diuers townes of count the whiles,  
And still the barge a pace most swift doth keepe,  
Vpon that hand, where *Poe* make diuers Iles:  
And now the softe colour gan to creepe  
To th' *Esterne* skie, when hauing past some miles,  
*Bandeno* then the steerman wakt *Renaldo*,  
When they discouerd both rocks of *Tealdo*.

54  
Whereon when as the knight his eye had fixt,  
He saith, O happie place that I behold,  
Of which, by vew of wandring starres and fixt,  
My cosin *Malagigis* oft foretold,  
How that by heau'nly doome it was prefixt,  
On thee to lay such blessings manifold,  
As that thy glorie to such height should rise,  
Of *Italie* to hold the chiefest prise.

55  
Thus good *Renaldo* spake, the while his bote  
Downe that same streame did swim, or rather fly,  
And when the knight came nearer he did note  
The place, that seemed then all wast to ly,  
A water all on flote:  
Did he much reioice thereof, for why,  
Knew that that same towne in future time,  
Ordaigned was to great renoune to clime.

56  
His cosin *Malagige* and he whileare,  
Had past that way, what time his cosin told,  
That when the Ram had tane the golden spheare,  
That fourth is plait in height, seu'n hundred fold,  
There should there be the brauest Iland there,  
That euer sea or streame, or lake did hold,  
So well replenished that none should dare,  
When this *Nausicas* Iland to compar.

*ausica* named  
the  
Ile of *Corin*, of  
which *Alcinous*  
*Ulysses* speaks.  
*Alcinous*, in cu-  
randa plus  
equo operata  
mensura.

57  
And that it should for building faire, disgrace  
*Tiberis* Ile, that *Capry* they do call,  
And that th' *Helperides* should giue it place,  
For passing fruits, and sundrie sorts withall:  
Beside, more store of beasts, for vfe or chase,  
Then *Circes* erst did keepe in field or stall,  
That *Venus* with her sonne, and all the Graces,  
Should chute this seat, and leaue all other places

*Of these you may  
looke the table if  
you be not instrum-  
ted in the histore.*

58  
And that a certaine Prince should this fulfill,  
So prouident, so stout, so wise, so stayd,  
As hauing powre vnto his will,  
Should with strong Rampires fence his town (he said)  
That toes should haue no force to worke her ill,  
Nor the should neuer need of forraigne aid:  
And that the man by whom this must be donne,  
Should be both *Hercles* Sire, and *Hercles* sonne.

*This is said to the  
praise of Alfonso  
Duke of Ferrara*

59  
Thus while the knight of France with great delight,  
Did call to mind, what should another day,  
Vpon that happie Citi e there alight,  
His water-men did giue so lustie way,  
That of the place he soone had left the sight,  
And keeping on the right hand all the way,  
They went beyond *Saint Georges* in an howre,  
And passed by *Giabanas* ditch and Towre.

60  
And now *Renaldo*, as doth oft befall,  
That one conceipt another out doth driue,  
Began the knight to memorie to call,  
That last did him kind entertainment giue,  
That had iust cause this City more then all  
To hate, and should haue still while he did liue:  
The curled cup he further cald to minde,  
In which men may their spouses falsehood finde.

*In this Citi e  
dwelt he that  
keps his wife*

61  
And last of his hosts later speech he thought,  
Concerning that same cup, and how they sped,  
I meane his guests, that that same triall sought,  
Into their boloms still the liquor shed:  
Now he doth halfe repent he mist the draught,  
Yet was he glad thereof, for why (he said)  
Had it falne well, what had I got thereby?  
If not, in what a case had then bene I?

62  
I now belecue so well, as hauing tried  
With good successe belecue I better should not;  
So that I might haue well bene damnified,  
But by my triall men my state I could not:  
But what grieve had it bene if I had spied,  
By my most deare *Clarice*, that I would not?  
Much may they leese, but gains get small or none,  
That will in play a thousand lay to one:

*Clarice wife to  
Renaldo.  
Sentence.*

63  
These later words so lowd and plaine he spake,  
(Thou to himselfe) that he that steard the bote,  
Who his speech and gestures heed did take,  
The words, and meaning of his words did note:  
Wherefore a further cause of speech to make,  
As one that though he ware a liu'ie core,  
Yet was well spoken, and of good bold sprite,  
He straight doth fall to reason with the knight.



64  
In fine, the summe of all their argument,  
Was that his wit was much to be controld,  
That sought to make too great experiment,  
Of womens truths, more then their force can hold:  
or she that can with chaste and firme intent,  
aintaine her truth, against assault of gold,  
ight eu'n as easilie defend the same,  
gainst a thousand swords in midst of flame:

65  
To this the Bargeman said, you sure may sweare it,  
They must not be assayld with darts so fierce,  
For their soft breasts, too tender are to beare it,  
Sith coats of sounder prooffe, such shot will pierce:  
And sure a prettie tale (if you would heare it)  
I could (saith he) to this effect rehearse,  
Of one who though his wife had sore offended,  
By her, in greater sinne was apprehended.

66  
I meane the tale of that *Adonio*, which  
The great grift gaue vnto the Iudges wife,  
A little dogge that made his owner rich,  
A thing that in these parts is knowne so rife,  
The knight replide, mine eares to heare it ich,  
For neuer yet I heard it in my life:  
Then if it please you, heare it now you shall,  
The Stears-man said, and thus began his tale.

Here begins the  
Steersmans tale.  
Vlpian wrote  
of the ciuill law.

67  
There was a learned Lawyer, cald by name  
*Anselmus*, borne here in our neighbour towne,  
That so long studied *Vlpian*, till he came,  
To be a Iudge, and weare a scarlet gowne,  
And hauing won great wealth he woo'd a dame,  
For bewtie and for state of great renowne;  
They wedded were, for better and for worse,  
So he her person lik't, so she his purse.

68  
Her qualities and hauiour past the rest,  
She seemed all of louelynes composed,  
Not fit indeed for him, that was to rest,  
And to his bookes, more then to sports disposed:  
Wherefore foule iealous thoughts his mind posselt,  
And that his wife plaid false, he still supposed,  
Yet cause was none, of her so to misdeeme,  
Saue that too faire, and wittie she did seeme.

69  
Now in the selfe same Citie dwelt a knight,  
(Too neare a neighbour to this man of law)  
That was of that same stocke descended right,  
That had their offspring from the serpents iaw,  
From whence the Fairy eake, that *Manto* hight,  
And built our Citie, doth her lynage draw,  
This knight that was *Adonio* cald by name,  
Was much enamord on the louely dame.

Of *Manto* looke  
in the Historie.

70  
And that he might attaine this Ladies loue,  
He doth begin to spend beyond all measure,  
In clothes, in feasts, his calling far aboue,  
In shewes, in playes,  
To beare the charge thereof it would behoue,  
To haue that Emperour *Tiberius* treasure,  
So as I weene ere winters twaine were past,  
His lands were quite consum'd, he spent so fast.

This *Tiberius*  
was a iust, and a  
Christia Prince,  
looke in the Ta-  
ble.

71  
Wherefore compeld to strike his loftie sayles,  
He sodainly surceast his statelie port,  
The house, now that the Lords reuenue sayles,  
Stood solitarie, quite without resort:  
There were no Peasants, Partriges, nor Quayles,  
His pittance now was growne but bare and sho  
And he that earst was king of all this easting,  
Playd least in sight, now doubting of arresting

72  
And therefore lothing to be knowne or seene,  
He purposed in this place not long to tarry,  
But with a minde to leaue his country cleene,  
He stole away fro thence all solitarie:  
Her onely loue, that of his heart was Queen,  
In all his woes he still with him doth carrie,  
But lo, when as his Ebb did seeme most low,  
Good fortune made his tyde most high to flow

73  
For as he wand'rd here and there abroad,  
He saw how that a sturdie clowne and stout,  
With sturdie staffe, layd on no little load,  
Vpon a bush, still beating there about:  
*Adonio* in the place makes some abroad,  
And askt the cause, of that same country lout,  
Who told him that a monstrous Snake and huge,  
Had taken that same bush for a refuge.

*Ouid in the  
third of the me-  
tamorph-  
has a tale of  
veiras, that with  
smiting of two  
snakes changed  
his shape.*

74  
And told him further, he that stir did make,  
With minde to finde, and kill it ere he part,  
*Adonio* for his crest did giue the Snake,  
And therefore lou'd and fauord Snakes in hart,  
As from whose kinde he did his gentrie take:  
Wherefore vnto the clowne he doth impart  
His minde so farre, at last he him perswaded,  
To let alone the Snake he so inuaded.

75  
This done, he went as he was bent before,  
Farre from his country, where he was vnknow  
And so indur'd till seu'n whole yeares and more,  
Of woe, and want, quite ore his head were blown.  
But that great loue he to his mistres bore,  
Him forst, though now all out of fashion grown,  
With bushie beard, leane cheekes, & ragged cloths,  
To turne vnto the place that most he lothes.

76  
In this meane time, our towne had cause to send,  
Some sage Ambassadour to the Pope,  
That must vpon his Holyntes attend,  
And for his suit to take a who care scope:  
The Iudge by lot was chosen to  
(O cursed lot that killed all his hope)  
To shunne this office he tryes many shifts,  
By scuses, promises, by praies and gifts.

77  
But finding that he straued against the streame,  
At last against his will, he takes the place,  
Though to depart into another Reame,  
It seemed vnto him, a grieuous case:  
His iealousie therewith grew most extreame  
Misdoubting his wiues truth, so long a space,  
Yet nath'les her, in graue and frendlesse speech,  
To haue great care thereof, he doth beseech.

He



Sentence.

78

He saith, a woman cannot take vpon her,  
With bewtie, riches, nor with high Nobilitie,  
To claime the true dilerued prayle of honer,  
chastitie do faile by her fragillitie,  
is is the vertue that defends her owner,  
And now she may (he saith) with great facillitie,  
taine grea praise, and show thereof great prooffe,  
ile he is forst, to stay so farre aloofe.

79

These words he spake, and many such as these,  
Thereby to moue her, to continue true,  
And she (poore soule) yet free from such disease,  
His parting thence, did much lament and rue;  
She fears that sooner men should draine the seas,  
draw her mind so to forget her due,  
Ye first she will n' dye the death she saith,  
Much rather then to falsifie her faith.

80

The Iudge appeald with this her protestation,  
Began to haue of her the lesse mistrust,  
But yet his fond and iealous inclination,  
So moues him, that search further needs he must:  
He had a friend that could by coniuration,  
Foretell of future matters true and iust:  
That were it skill in Magicke, or in starres,  
His guesse was such, as that it seldome arres.

81

He speaketh to that friend to this effect,  
That he his wiues natiuitie would cast,  
To learne if he did right or wrong suspect,  
That she would in his absence liue vnchast:  
The man thus praid, the figure doth erect,  
And in their place the Planets all he plait,  
*Anselmus* leaues him busie, and next day,  
Doth come to heare him what he hath to say.

82

Twas long before th' Astronomer would speake,  
As loth to speake, that would the Iudge offend,  
With many excuses triuolous and weake,  
He shifts him off, but vrged by his frend,  
He told him flatly she would wedlocke breake,  
And that she would to him proue false in th'end,  
Not mou'd by bewty, not by suit desired,  
But eu'n for luces sake directly hyred.

83

Now when *Anselmus* former bad beleefe,  
Was newly reconfirmd Spheares supernall,  
It doubtlesse did so much augment his greefe,  
Ith he his torture past paines infernall:  
And then al rest, this greeu'd him cheefe,  
And to his next a course was eternall,  
To thinke that Auarice should her entise,  
pon her chastitie to set a price.

84

Yet to preuent all that such minde might breed,  
Most earnestly he bendeth all his powre,  
For (as they say) man is compeld by need,  
To rob the Church, and hallow'd things deuowre,  
His Jewells, plate, and stocke that did exc ed,  
He all in her hands, that present howre,  
And made it al her owne by deed of gift,  
nd told her plaine what was herein his drift.

*Darius return  
me, etiam est.*

85

He saith he giues it her on this condition,  
Not that she should strue to increase or mend it,  
For why (he said) she should haue free con mission,  
To sell, to giue, cast it away, and spend it,  
But onely that she should auoyd suspition,  
Of wedlocke breach, and by no meanes offend it:  
On this condition, all he then bequeaths her,  
That he may find her such as now he leaues her.

86

He further doth her earnestly exhort,  
That presently when he is gone away,  
She should for more eschuing of relort,  
Not any longer in the Citie stay,  
But at his countrey house, where in good sort,  
Till his returne, the season passe she may:  
Belike, he thought in tillers of the ground,  
And country swaines, entilements none are found.

87

His louely wife *Argia*, all this space,  
Still hanging on his necke while he did speake,  
With kindly teares bedewed all his face,  
And much it greeu'd her to be iudgd so weake,  
And to be deemed so deuoyd of grace,  
That in his absence she would wedlocke breake,  
Her manners haue not bene so light and vicious,  
She saith, to moue him to be thus suspicious.

88

I should too long in this one matter dwell,  
If all that past betweene them two at large,  
When he departed, I to you should tell,  
Stil itterating that his former charge:  
Now on his way he goes, God speed him well,  
The griefe was great that did his heart surcharge,  
But thus they part, her eyes all full of teares,  
His minde of ieaiousies, and thousand feares.

89

This while *Adonio* looking pale and wan,  
As earst I told, and ouergrowne with heare,  
To trauell to his country-ward began,  
In hope that no man now would know him theare,  
He trauels in the secrett fort he can,  
Vnseene, vnkowne, till he arriued wheare,  
He rescude had the snake, seu'n yeares before,  
That by the clowne pursued was so sore.

90

Arriuing at this place by breake of day,  
He saw a Ladie walking neare the lake,  
Who though she seemd attyrd in strange array,  
Yet for some great estate one would her take,  
Her count'nance did such maiestie bewray:  
She toward him with stately gate did make,  
And looking on him with a gracious cheare,  
She spake these words so loud as he might heare.

91

Gentleman, though you do not know my face,  
Yet am I bound to you, and am your frend,  
I am your son, and of *Cadmus* race  
Our stocke doth lineally descend,  
I am that *Manto*, th' in yond same place,  
To build that towne did first begin and end,  
And Mantua, according to my name,  
is cald, as you perhaps haue heard by fame.



*Of Fayries, looke  
in the Historie.*

I am a Fayrie, and to make you know,  
To be a Fayrie what it doth import,  
We cannot dye how old so ere we grow:  
Of paine and harmes of eu'rie other sort  
We tast but yet no death we nature ow;  
But which is worse then if our liues were short,  
Each seu'nth day we constrained are to take,  
Vpon our selues the person of a snake.

92

To be transformd to Serpents vgly hew,  
That creepeth still, and on his bellie goth,  
Is such a griefe to vs, to tell you true,  
Not one of vs but then to liue doth loth.  
Now that I further may declare to you,  
From whence this kindnesse that I spake of, growth,  
Know this, what day we haue this cursed shape,  
We hardly dangers infinite escape.

93

*Thence comes the  
saying (canope-  
sus & angne)*

No liuing thing is lothed more then they,  
So that no sooner one of vs is spyde,  
But we are chaft and hunted out straight way,  
And if we finde no place our selues to hyde,  
They lay on load, and beat vs so that day,  
That we the paine thereof long after byde,  
And who would not rather one death haue chused,  
Then beaten euermore to be and brused?

94

Now Sir, the benefit that I confesse  
I haue receiu'd, in which your merit stands,  
Was this, some seu'n yeares since, or not much lesse,  
As you did wander ou'r these woods and lands,  
You saued me from danger and distresse,  
I should haue sufferd at a villens hands:  
Who though he could not slay me, neare the latter,  
Did seeke with cudgill me to bruse and batter.

95

For why those dayes that we be snakes (she saith)  
And creeping groneling, bellies on the ground,  
The heau'ns, that other times our heft obay'th,  
Denyes their aid, in vs no force is found:  
Sometimes the Sun at our command'ment stay'th,  
The stedie earth doth moue and runneth round,  
And we can by our powre, cause in a trife,  
Ife turne to flame, and fire congeale to Ife.

96

Now heare I come, your courtisie to requite,  
Which seu'n yeares since, I to me done did note,  
Now to reward you I haue powre and might,  
While I am free from serpents cursed cote,  
Three times your fathers wealth, you shall ere night  
Possesse, and I will set you so affote,  
You neuer shalbe poore, to your liues end,  
But euer haue the more, the more you spend.

97

And (for I know that in your former knot,  
In which loue bound you first, you still are tide)  
I will direct you so, by wayes I wot,  
Your sure shall not be vnto you denide.  
Now that the iealous Iudge at home is not,  
Go thither straight, and I will be your guide,  
She now is at her husbands countrie village,  
Attending there good huswifrie and tillage.

98

99

She further doth at large to him deuise,  
How he shall go, in what apparell clad,  
How he shall tempt her, in what manner wise,  
And how to grant his suit, she should be glad;  
Then told she how she would herselfe disguise,  
For why, for euer in her powre she had,  
Except the dayes, in which she was snake,  
What shape she list, vpon herselfe to take.

100

Thus she disguised him like a Pilgrime poore,  
That on his shoulders doth a waller beare,  
And doth for Gods sake beg from doore to doore,  
A gowne of Fryers gray she made him weare,  
A strange apparell for a gallant woer:  
Into an Island dog, with shagged heare,  
As white as Ermin, and the pre-est elfe,  
That euer nature made, she charged herselfe.

101

And thus vnto Argias they resort,  
First to some vtter roomes, in which were byding,  
The Hinds and Laborers of meaner sort,  
Heare he with certaine pypes of his prouiding,  
His dog made dance, and make such prettie sport,  
That glad was he could bring his mistres tyding,  
Who needs would see as much as they had scene,  
Such was the Doctors destinie I weene.

102

Adonio to her presence thus admitted,  
Commands the dog which in all points obayd,  
His turnes, his dances, and his gestures fited,  
So due and iust, to all the Pilgrime sayd,  
They must to see a dog so rarely witted,  
And marking still the qualities he playd,  
In seeing them they take great mirth & pleasure,  
And prayd the little dog beyond all measure.

103

Much wonder first but after much desier,  
Bred in the Iudges wife, the dog to get,  
She bids the nurse the dog to buy or hier,  
And try what price the man thereof would set:  
Dame (said the Pilgrime) had your mistres by her,  
In coyned gold, as much as euer yet,  
A womans thought did wish, it would not boot,  
Of this same dog of mine to buy on foot.

104

And plaine to shew that that was true he sayd,  
And that it rather better as then worfe,  
He tooke her straight as with him and prayd,  
The dog to giue two duckes to the nurse,  
The dog but shooke his ear and out he  
The gold; there take and put it in  
Adonio saith, and thinke what price is able,  
To buy a dog that is so profitable.

105

What ere I aske, this dog to me will bring,  
Embroiderd gownes and kirtles cloth of gold,  
A chaine of pearle, a iewell, or a ring,  
In shorter time then it can well be told;  
It tell my Lady this, she hath a thing,  
Or which alone my Spaniell can be sold,  
To pay me gold or coyne, I coun. it dodging  
It I will sell it her, for one nights lodging.

*This was plaine  
dealing.*

This



106

This said, he sent by her as for a token,  
A gem of passing price, then newly made;  
The nurse rewarded thus, and fairely spoken,  
dvd (perhaps) to trafficke in such trade,  
W<sup>at</sup> backe therewith, and hauing fitly broken  
Th<sup>e</sup> matter first, her mistres doth perswade,  
To buy the dog, and said she might atchieue it,  
With such a price, as is no losse to giue it.

107

At first, the fayre *Argia* backward drew,  
As partly, being loth to breake her faith,  
And partly doubting all could not be trew,  
The which the tatling nurse before her laith;  
But she with othes doth her first tale renew,  
that such offers seldome come she laith,  
In fine she wan her mistres to agree,  
Next day more p<sup>er</sup>uadly the dog to see.

108

*Adonis* next apparance in the place,  
Became the Doctors ruine and confusion,  
Such duckets, such spur<sup>e</sup> yals in like case,  
Such gems he shewd indeed, or by illusion,  
He mollifi'd thereby my Ladies grace,  
And mou'd her make the bargaine in conclusion,  
And this did (then perhaps) the rather moue her,  
When as she knew he was her ancient louer.

109

Thus her true louers presence, and his prayer,  
The comforts of her nurse, that whorish drudge,  
The great rewards he presently did pay her,  
The absence long of that same iealous Iudge;  
And lastly, hope that sure none would bewray her,  
Wipt from her conscience scruple all and grudge,  
So that she tooke his dog, and for his labor,  
Gane him free leau<sup>e</sup> to play vpon her taber.

110

Thus now *Adonis* frankly reapt the fruit,  
Of that faire Ladies loue that he had wonne,  
The which he followd still with sweet pursuit,  
Vnto their likings both: this while the Sun,  
Before the Iudge full ended had his suit,  
Through twife six signes his yearely course had run,  
And home he came at last, suspecting fore,  
That which th<sup>e</sup> Astronomer had told before.

111

But ere vnto his owne house he would go,  
First of th<sup>e</sup> Astronomer to aske he ment,  
If so his wife had taryd ch<sup>it</sup> or no,  
Since he from home on his Ambassage went:  
The cunning man, th<sup>e</sup> meant the troth to show,  
Doth calculate, how starres were bent,  
And then that he the planets well had vewd,  
That she had plaid the quean, he doth conclude.

112

And that it was befallne as he foreshowed,  
How she, with mightie gifts and bribes allured,  
Her selfe vpon another had bestowed.  
The wretched Iudge, with no small grieve indured,  
To heare these newes, & though too true he trowed  
The same, yet seeking to be more assured,  
He als the nurse aside, at his home conning,  
d seekes to sit her with no little cunning.

113

With diuers circumquaques and deuises,  
He seeketh of the nurse to finde the trace,  
But she in speech so warie and so nice is,  
As one belike well studied in the case,  
That all his cunning speech her not intices,  
But that she still denide with shamelesse fa<sup>ce</sup>,  
That which she knew, and whereof her perswasion  
Had bene in part, though not the chiefe occasion.

114

When as the iealous Iudge long time in vaine,  
Had tempted her with promiles and gifts,  
And that he saw for all his search and paine,  
He found lesse certentie, the more he fits,  
He doth expect to try a further traine,  
As one not vnacquainted with such drifts,  
He watcht a time, when they should fall to bralling,  
As still where women are, is oft befalling. *Sentence.*

115

And as he thought indeed so fell it out,  
The testie nurse one day not pleased well,  
Came vnto him at their next falling out,  
And of her owne accord, the truth doth tell:  
Thinke you, when as the Iudge had heard her out,  
How he did chafe, and fret, and fume, and swell,  
So neare vnto his heart and braine it sits,  
It little wanted to haue reau'd his wits.

116

And in this agonie resolu'd to dye,  
And finish both his owne dayes and his wiues,  
And so his grieve, and her great shame thereby  
To wipe away, with ending both their liues,  
He turneth to the Citie by and by,  
As that same desperat desire him driues,  
And thence a trustie seruant with instruction,  
He lends of purpose for his wiues destruction.

117

He bids him tell *Argia* in his name,  
That on the sodaine he was false so sicke,  
That but to him without delay she came,  
The doubt was great she should not find him quic.  
Wherefore her iourney with more speed to frame,  
To ryde behinde this man, who in a thicke,  
That was right in the way vnto the Citie,  
Had charge to kill her there without all pitie.

118

And straight accordingly the seruant went,  
To say and do, as much as he was bidden,  
But she foretold of that their fell intent,  
(For nothing from her little dogge was hidden)  
And taught withall, the same how to preuent,  
Away with this saue seruant she is ridden,  
And in few howres arriued at the wood,  
Where he was purposed to haue shed her blood.

119

Then did he tell to her his masters will,  
And drew his sword a speedie death to giue her,  
He onely offerd, ere he would her kill,  
To grant time, to pray God to forgiue her:  
I can tell you by what manner skill,  
She did her selfe forth of his hands deliuer,  
But gone she was, he seeking all about,  
And for his life he could not find her out.

11



120

Backe went the fellow, with astonied face,  
With trembling heart, and courage all dismayd,  
And made his master, at the wondrous case,  
Lesse then he had bene afore afayd,  
He knew not how; by Faery *Mantos* grace,  
His wife could when she list, haue helpe and ayd,  
For why the nurse that did the rest vnfold,  
I knew not why, but this she neuer told.

121

The Doctour now was plagu'd with griefe extreame,  
Far more then euer he had felt before,  
What erst was but a mote, is now a beame,  
Nor he one iot reuenged is the more;  
His shame will now be blazd ou'r all the Reame,  
And all men now, will laugh at him therefore,  
The former error, might haue bene concealed,  
But this to all the world wil be reuealed.

Proverb.

122

He thinks that sure, vpon this plaine detection,  
Of his felonious mind, of which I spake,  
She will, to keepe her out of his subiection,  
To some great Lord, forthwith her selfe betake,  
And liue in spite of him, with such protection,  
And so a mocking stocke of him to make,  
But most he doubts, least to some man she goth,  
As is a leacher, and a ruffian both.

123

Wherefore so foule a mischief to preuent,  
He spares no paine, no trauell nor no cost,  
To eu'rie towne, in Lombardie he sent,  
With letters and with messages in post;  
And further, he himselfe in person went  
To seeke his wife that was so strangely lost,  
But all in vaine, for why of her abiding,  
No inckling he could heare, nor any tyding.

124

And to conclude, at last he cald his man,  
That man that made to him the strange report,  
And bids him show the place, and if he can,  
Where his lewd mistres vanish in such sort:  
The seruant straight to leade the way began,  
And to the place, together they resort,  
But (which was strange) where erst he left a wood,  
A wondrous stately Pallace now there stood.

125

The fayre *Argia* caused had this space,  
Her Faery to erect there for her pleasure,  
An house of Allablaster in the place,  
Adorn'd and trimm'd with cost beyond all measure:  
Twere hard to thinke, much lesse to tell with grace,  
What beautie was without, within what treasure;  
My masters house, fro whence last night you came,  
Was but a paltrie Alehouse to this same.

*His master was  
the knight of  
Mantua, as  
whose house Re-  
maldo supped.*

126

Of costly Arras, there was so great plentie,  
Of beds of silke, imbroiderd, fresh, and new,  
As furnisht chambers, more then ten mestwentic,  
And halls, and whatsoeuer was in vew,  
Cups, candlesticks, and bowls of stones most dentic,  
Of precious substance, and of fundrie hew,  
To be imploid for eating and for drinking,  
And store of gold, and silke beyond all thinking.

127

Now sir, the wretched Iudge, as I said erst,  
That out to seeke his wife had here assignd,  
And findes this house, in state as I rehearst,  
Where he had nothing thought, but woods  
With wonder great his mazed head was pea  
And doubred not a little in his mind,  
If so himselfe were sleeping then or waking,  
Or if his troubled brayne, were in due takin

128

He sees a Gipsen standing at the doore,  
All blab-lipt, beetle browd, and bottre nozed,  
Most greasie, nastie, his apparell poore,  
His other parts, as Painters are disposed,  
To giue to *Esop*; such a Blackamore  
Could not be scene elsewhere, as he suppose  
So vile a visage, and so bad a grace,  
To make eu'n Paradise a lothsome place.

129

*Anselmus* seeing none but this same drudge,  
Went vnto him, and praith him make it knowne,  
Whose house is this: the Gipsen tels the Iudge,  
That he himselfe, the stately house doth owne:  
The Iudge, that he doth mocke him sure doth iudge  
And prayes the certaine truth to him be showne:  
The Negro doth affirme with many an oth,  
That that which he had said before, was troth.

130

And that he plainly might the truth perceauce,  
He prayes him vew the house at better leasure,  
And offreth him free libertie and leaue,  
Of any thing was there, at his owne pleasure,  
For him or for his frends, to take, and leaue,  
And eu'n as of his owne, to make free seasure:  
The Doctor marvels that such liberalitie,  
Could be in one, of so base show and qualitie.

131

But yet the Iudge, so fayre and kind intreated,  
In frendly sort, doth from his horse alight,  
And sees the house, as I before repeated.  
With wonder great, and with as great delight,  
So richly furnished, so Princely seated,  
So brauely built for vse, as well as sight,  
And eu'rie part with other so agreeing,  
He could not satisfie his eyes with seeing.

132

Now when the Iudge came backe againe, he told  
He nere saw house, so pleasing to his eye,  
And sweares he thought at ten times *Crasus* gold,  
Were scant a price, so good a house to buy:  
Yet may (the Negro saith) house be sold,  
Though not for coyne (for not  
Yet for some other ware, which sure I guesse,  
You will esteeme at price a great deale lesse.

133

In fine, he made to him the like request,  
As Sodomits did make for guests of *Lot*;  
The Iudge his motion doth and him detest,  
Who though fiew times repulst, yet ceaseth not,  
But him with so large offers still he prest,  
That in conclusion, like a beastly sort,  
So as it might be done, in hugger mugger,  
The Iudge agreed, the Negro him should

This



134

*Argia* that there by vnscene had stayd,  
And leene him false into the sinne forenamed;  
Disclod her selfe, and sharply did vpbraid  
is filthy fact, that iustly might be blamed;  
Iudge (said she) reputed wise, and stayd,  
Sine thus? wherewith the Doctor was so shamed,  
He wisht th earth would cleaue vnto the center,  
That he to hide himselfe, therein might enter.

135

But she exclaimeth on him still anew,  
For his more shame, and for her more excuse,  
And said, what punishment were fit for you,  
For this foule sinne, against all natures vie?  
did no lesse then death to me thinke dew,  
such a small and naturall abuse,  
h one that l 'd me, and whose gift was such;  
A pen such houses are not worth so much.

136

If one death did vnto my fault belong,  
One hunderd deaths were fit to thine to giue,  
And though my selfe am in this place so strong,  
That if I list, thou shouldst no longer liue,  
Yet will I do to thee no further wrong,  
But pardon thee, and thou shalt me forgieue,  
And quite each other, all old debts and driblets,  
And set the hares head, against the goose gyblets.

137

And let henceforth peace follow in effect,  
As ought to be betweene the man and wife,  
Nor euer tone to tother once obiect,  
Our former fault in all our future life:  
The Iudge was glad, and did it not neglect,  
To take this frendly end of cursed strite;  
Thus as good frends, they liued many a yeare,  
And while they liu'd, they lou'd each other deare.

138

there the steers-man did his storie end,  
With which he mou'd the worthy knight to lafter,  
Who blam'd the Doctor, that did so offend,  
And talked of the same a good while alter:  
But much he did *Argias* wit commend,  
Or at the least, the wit of her that taught her,  
To make the Iudge into that net fall in,  
In which her selfe was false with far lesse sin.

139

Now when the Sunne gan mount vnto the South,  
A little Table in the Bay was spread,  
And then the knight began to feed his mouth,  
When sleepe his eyes and talke his eares had fed:  
The Mantuan charges, him allowth,  
e Ac t s that that same country bred,  
The while his swimming vessell doth forsake  
\*The pleasant country, and vnpleasant lake.

140

From thence, he held his course still forward right,  
\*The Riuer running straight as any lyne,  
Which when they passed had with speedie flight,  
Vpon the tother hand they did decline:  
\*A by a ditch, and standing poole in sight,  
f that day, were spent full howers nine,  
nro Rauenna as they were commanded,  
hey went, and there the braue *Renaldo* landed:

141

Although *Renaldo* could but seldome boast,  
Ot store of coyne, yet now such store he had,  
As to the Bargemen of his frendly host,  
He gaue a largesse such, as made them gl  
From thence to Rimini, he went in po  
And changing horses still, now goo w bad;  
That night at Mountefior, he did but sup,  
And so t Vrbyno, ere next Sunne was vp.

142

Then *Caglie*, and from thence the Alpes he past,  
Thenth Vmbrys and Etruscians; thence to Rome;  
And so by Barke, to Ostia in great hast  
He went, and to that Citie he doth come,  
Which good *Aeneas* many ages past,  
Ennobled with his fire *Anchyses* toome:  
Then straight by sea he went vnto this Ile,  
Where I did leaue *Orlando*, since a while.

143

I meane that Ile, that Lippadusa hight,  
Wherein the famous warriors, three to three,  
The combat that I spake of erst did fight,  
The which *Renaldo* longing sore to see,  
With ores and sayles, made all the hast he might,  
But yet for all his hast, it would not be,  
The wind did for his purpose serue so slacke,  
More then an houre too late it kept him backe.

144

So that eu'n much about that time he came,  
When as *Orlando* had that conquest wonne,  
In which vnto his euerlasting fame,  
Two Turkish Princes, vnto death were donne;  
Yet was some sorrow mingled with the same,  
Both for the death of *Monodantés* sonne,  
And *Oliueros* hurt, of which he found  
Such griefe, he could not let his foote to ground.

145

Now as the Earle *Renaldo* did imbrace,  
He could not chuse, but shed a streame of teares;  
When as he show'd him, in the present place,  
Good *Brandimart*, to whom such loue he beares;  
Lye newly slaine, with pale and liuellesse face:  
Likewile to weepe, *Renaldo* not forbears;  
To see his death, and eke his cosins bruse;  
So grieuous, that his foote he could not vse.

146

*Renaldo* comforts them in all he may,  
Although himselfe of comfort tasted least,  
And chiefe to thinke by his vnluckie stay,  
He was come tardie, to so gre aft:  
This while the wofull seruants d' conuay,  
Their masters coarces, to the towne distrest,  
I meane Biserta, where they made it knowne,  
Which side preuaild, and which was ouerthrowne.

147

Of this same conquest that *Orlando* wonne,  
*Astolfo* and stout *Sanfons* were glad;  
Yet ioyd they not, so as they would haue donne,  
If *Brandimart* his death then had not had:  
The fall of noble *Monodantés* sonne,  
Strake them into a dumpe and made them sad,  
But who shall now impart to *Fiordeliege*,  
The wofull losse, of her deare Lord and liege?

1 i ij

*Driblets used for  
fussy reckonings.  
A proverb used  
in Eng*

*\*This lake is Pa  
dua, of which  
irgil speaks,  
praising the store  
of fish, but now  
is almost dry.  
The  
she rea Lon-  
g when he runs  
straight myle  
lon  
is a long  
ditch goes to Ra-  
uenna 12. myle  
long, but now it is  
scant nauigable.  
Plinie writes of  
it, and calls it  
Fossa Messana-  
ria.]*

*That Citie is  
called Trapania*

*Orlando.*



*Fiordelieg her  
doe come.*

148

Her selfe had dreamt a strange dreame ouernight,  
Which had her minde, in fearfull sort dismay,  
Shee saw the bales of her loued knight,  
Which were imbroidred blacke this other day,  
With fitts of red were powdred all in sight,  
And on them shee, like storme of haystones lay;  
That shee had done it so, shee sure beleueed,  
And with the thought thereof, was greatly greeued.

149

Shee further thought, that to her selfe shee sed,  
Did not my Lord command me blacke to make it,  
What ment I then to mixt it so with red,  
And in so strange a manner to mistake it?  
An ill presage in her this fancie bred,  
And for an euill token shee did take it, (her,  
Then came these newes which none imparted with  
Till th'English Duke, and *Sansonet* came thither.

150

When they came in, and that shee well had heeded  
Their count'nances, in such a conquest sad,  
No further newes, no further notice needed,  
To make her know, they brought her tidings bad:  
Forthwith her grieve, and sorrow so exceeded,  
Scarce any powre her vitall spirits had,  
But presently in pale, and deadly sound,  
Shee fell in wofull trance vpon the ground.

151

But when that life came to his course againe,  
Her tender cheekes, and her fayre haire shee tare,  
Oft calling on his loued name in vaine,  
Whose losse had bred in her such wofull care,  
Shee screeches and cries out, with grieve and paine,  
Like those with deuils that possessed are,  
Or as the *Menades*, with sound of horne,  
In furious manner all about were borne.

*Menades, were  
they that sacrific-  
ed to Bacchus.*

152

This man, and that, to lend shee doth intreat  
Her life, wherewith her selfe shee murder may,  
Straight to the hau'n shee runnes with furie great,  
There where the bodies of the dead kings lay,  
With minde to mangle them, and brute and beat:  
Then to the sea shee will, there is no nay,  
And passe to Lippaduse, and there abide,  
And end her life, by *Brandimart*s deare side.

153

Ah *Brandimart* my loued Lord (shee said)  
What ment I without me, to let thee part?  
Ay me vnluckie wench, in that I staid,  
And was not present there to take thy part;  
Mine eye might vnto thee, haue bene in aid,  
My voyce might haue assisted thee in part,  
And if *Gradasso* thee behind had stricken,  
One cry of mine, might thee both warne & quicken

154

Or else perhaps, so well I might haue sped me,  
As to haue stept the blow and thee betwene,  
If thou hadst scapt, although it did belieue me,  
I would haue said, that it had happie bene:  
Now dye I will, though death no whit can sted me,  
And though I know, my death is fruitlesse cleene,  
Whereas if I had dyde in thy defence,  
My death had profit bred, and not offence.

155

And if the heau'ns had bene so hard in this,  
That I could not haue holpe thee in the place,  
At least my last farewell, and solemne kisse,  
I should haue giu'n thee, and thy louely face,  
Bedewd with teares, and ere to heau'nly blisse  
Thy soule had flowne, I should haue had the space,  
To say, depart from hence in peace, my deare,  
And know, I haue not long to tarrie heare.

156

Is this (deare *Brandimart*) is this thy raigne,  
Of *Damagyre*, whose scepter I should take?  
Is this the dowre, thou doest to me ordaine?  
Is this the royall seat, of which you spake?  
Ah fortune hard, how friuolous and vaine,  
Dost thou my hopes, and my designements  
Ah why cease I, with so great godd is rest me,  
To cast away what euer else is left me?

*Damagyre the  
Realme of which  
Brandimart was*

157

With this, againe so great her furie grew,  
Shee made vpon her selfe a fresh assault,  
And her faire haire, shee rent, and tare anew,  
As if her haire, had bene in all the salt,  
Eu'n from her tender cheekes the bloud shee drew,  
Still dewing them, with watry teares and salt:  
But let her here awhile lament, and mourne,  
For to *Orlando* I must now retourne.

158

Who with his kinsman that did now require,  
Some cunning Leach his grieuous wound to cure,  
And (for to *Brandimart*: hee did desire,  
To giue an honorable sepulture,)  
To that hill went that doth the night with fire  
Make cleare, and doth the day with smoke obscure,  
And to the winde did fauour his intent,  
In twentie houres, he came to *Agrigent*.

*The mount. Es-  
ta, in Sicilia.*

159

Here when they were downe from their ships alighted,  
The Sunne eu'n then preparing to go downe,  
They sent abroad and in great hast inuited,  
The chiefe Nobilitie of all the towne:  
Straight at the shore, of torches store was lighted,  
And many men of honour and renowne,  
When as *Orlando* to the shore retourned,  
Went with him to the corps, and with him mourned

160

There *Bardyn* stood, a man well stricke in yeares,  
And in such sort to wayle hee did perseuer,  
That with abundant shedding of his teares,  
Men thought hee would haue lost his eyes for euer;  
To blame the heu'ns, and starrs, not for beares,  
But roaring like a Lyon in a teau,  
Tare his gray haire, and all about it sprinkled,  
And spared not his aged skin, and wrinkled.

161

When as the *Palladine* approached neare,  
Straight doubled was the mourning noyse and crye,  
Each strid who should most sorrowfull appeare,  
And eu'rie one liit vp his voice on hye;  
*Orlando* with more heauy heart, then chear  
Still keeping fixed on the beare his eye,  
When silence first, by silence procur'd he had,  
Pronounc't these words, with mourning voyce & sad

O I put



*Orlandos fa-  
merall Cras-  
of Brailimart.*

162

O stout, o deare champion mine, and frend,  
That here art dead, but liu'it in heavenly feat,  
Where thy great ioyes shall neuer haue an end,  
or euer be impaird with cold or heat:  
Yet pardon me in that I do offend,  
Thy wayle my woe, and miserie so great,  
My sorrow not, for thy parting hence,  
But that my selfe am so long absent thence.

163

To thinke that he is seuerd now so far,  
In whom I ioyd, this doth my paine increase,  
I was with thee, in tempests, and in war;  
Why am not I with thee in calme and peace?  
O n'rie flesh, that me from blisse doth bar,  
Why cannot I obtaine a like release,  
I am still I was com'artner of thy paine,  
Why am I kept from part of so great gaine?

164

To you the happie guerdon and the gaine,  
To vs the losse, and damage all is left,  
France, Germanie, and Italy complaine,  
Their chiefe defence, and their chiefe buckler rest:  
How shall my Prince, and vncle now sustaine,  
(Depriu'd of so good helpe) so great a heft,  
Thy losse of succour hath bereaued wholie,  
Both holy Church, and eake the Empire holie.

165

The Pagans whom thou dantedst in thy life,  
How will they gather heart now with thy death?  
How will they stirre new storms of fearfull strife,  
Now hauing so good meanes, to gather breth?  
But how great sorrow, will thy dearest wife  
Sustaine? me thinks I heare eu'n now she teth  
I am to blame, and that she hates me most,  
And saith by me, she hath her worlds ioy lost.

166

Yet *Fiordeliege*, this comfort may reuiue  
Both thee, and all that for his death are sorie,  
That all the valiant knights that him suruiue,  
Haue cause to enuie, and admire his glorie:  
The *Deij*, nor the knight, that lept aliue  
In *Curtian lake*, so prais'd in Latin storie,  
Nor *Codrús* by the Greekes so magnified,  
With greater praise, nor honor neuer dyed.

*M Curtius, looke  
in Lake.  
Iooke in the  
Horse.*

167

These words, and such as these *Orlando* spake,  
The while the Fryres, bath white, & blacke, and gray  
A solemne, and a long procession make,  
In goodly ranke, and in deuout array:  
That God to hea , the dead mans spirit take,  
*Requiem eternam*, for his soule they pray,  
And tapers in the midst, before, behind,  
Did cause that knight, like to the noone day shind.

168

Then diuers Earles, and knights, the hearse vphold,  
All ouer which a mantle rich was spred,  
Of purple silke, embroderd braue with gold,  
And with fayre pearle, and stone well garnished,  
Of e uall cost and bewtie to behold,  
The coffin was, that held the bodie ded,  
Rouided by the *Palladine* to be,  
For his calling, and his high degree.

169

Three hunderd people, of the poorer sort,  
Of dwellers that inhabited the towne,  
Vnto the funerals did then resort,  
And vnto each was giu'n a mourning go e;  
An hunderd Pages, mounted in good sort,  
On warlike steeds, clothd to the grou adowne,  
And both the Pages, and the galla t steeds,  
From top to toe, were clad in mourning weeds.

170

Then bare they diuers banners fayre displayd,  
And painted diuers armes, that he obtaind  
From armed bands alone, without all ayd,  
And had to *Cesar* and to *Peter* gaine:  
With hunderds more, all in blacke gowns arrayd,  
To whom were diuers offices ordaind,  
And last *Renaldo*, and *Orlando* came,  
But *Oliuero* staid (for he was lame.)

171

It long would be ere I could it rehearse,  
And tell what ceremonies vted weare,  
Nor can I comprehend them well in vearse,  
How orderly they were accomplisht there:  
Vnto the chiefeest Church, they bare a hearse,  
The while nor old nor young, to weepe forbear,  
His noblenesse, his value, and his youth,  
Did breed in all their hearts, so wondrous ruth.

172

Now when the women finisht had, and donne,  
Their bootlesse weeping, and their fruitlesse paine,  
The Priest had said, their *Kyrieleysonne*,  
And all the rites, that there vnto pertaine:  
The carkasse of great *Monodantes* sonne,  
So chested, on two collumns to remaine  
*Orlando* causd, till time he might procure,  
A costly, and more stately sepulture.

173

From Sicilie *Orlando* not departs,  
Till he for Tutch, and Porpherie had sent,  
And all that were most skilfull of those arts,  
Had talkt with all, and told them his intent:  
Then *Fiordeliege* comming to those parts,  
Her time, her trauell, and her treasure spent,  
To make the tombe most stately for her spouse,  
At which to spend her future time she vowes.

174

And sith her plaints and teares she neuer tired,  
In that selfe place she meanes er dayes to passe  
And for her husbands soule, she still desired  
Continuall Dirges, and perpetu Masses  
From company her selfe she quēt retired,  
And to the place (such her deuotion was)  
That by the tombe, she built a litle cell,  
In which till death, she purposed to dwell.

175

*Orlando* diuers messages did send  
To her, and after that in person went,  
To fetch her into France, and did pretend,  
That her to place with *Galeran* he ment,  
Or if the time, in p yre she still would spend,  
He would a Nunrie build for that intent,  
Or that he would, if so she so had rather,  
Attend her to her country, and her father.

Ii iij

*Orlandos mother*



176

But at the tombe she tarride obstinate,  
And would fro thence by no meane be remoued,  
Still sing, saying, both betime and late,  
Penne and prayers, for him that she so loued,  
Till death in th'end, cut off her dolefull date,  
And sent her soone, to find her deare beloued:  
But now the nights of France, from Sicill parted,  
For losse of their companion heauie harted.

177

And *Oliuer* still of his foote complained,  
For why no salue, nor surgerie preuailed,  
But that he was with grieve so greatly pained,  
They doubted that his life would then haue failed:  
Thus while they all in doubtfull dumpe remained,  
The man that steard the barke in which they failed,  
Did make to them this motion sage and wise,  
And they agreed to follow his aduise.

178

He told them that not far from thence there dwelled,  
An Hermit in a solitarie place,  
That so in sanctitie of life excelled,  
That he could remedie each doubtfull case;  
Diseases diuers were by him expelled, (grace)  
Dumb, blind, and lame were heald (such was his  
And that he could with one signe of the crosse,  
Allay the waues when they do highest tosse.

179

In fine, he told them sure there was no doubt,  
To find reliefe, eu'n present at the hands  
Of that same man, so holy and deuout,  
As scarce his match, was found in many lands.  
*Orlando* hauing heard the Pylot out,  
Inquired of the place, which way it stands,  
And presently the place to him was shewd,  
And toward it, in hast they sayd and rowd.

180

Next morning they discouerd all the Ile,  
But kept aloofe, so as their ship might flo at,  
And there they cast their anchor, and the while,  
Conuayd the wounded *Marquesse* in a boat,  
Vpon the shallow waues, scant halfe a mile,  
Vnto the blessed Hermits simple coat,  
That verie Hermit, that before but late,  
Had brought *Rogero* vnto Christian state.

181

The man of his dwelling heare,  
Came forth, and met *Orlando* at the gate,  
And welcomd him, with kind and frendly cheare,  
Inquiring of his errand, and their state,  
(Although to him, it was apparent cleare:  
For God th' night, had sent his Angell late,  
To tell the Sainr thereof) *Orlando* layd,  
His errand was, to get his kinsman ayd.

182

Who had a great and grieuous mayme receaued,  
In fighting for the Empire, and the faith,  
And was of hope and comfort, quite becheued.  
But of good cheare (the godly Hermit said)  
Who trust in God shall neuer be deceaued;  
Yet oymntment none vnto his hurt he layth,  
But first to Church he go'ith, and makes his prayre.  
Then with great boldnesse, doth to them repayre.

183

And calling on that trebble sou'raigne name,  
Of God the Father, Sonne and holy Ghost,  
He blest the knight, that maymed was and lame,  
(Oh wondrous grace, of which Gods saints may boast)  
Straight to his vie each vaine and sinew came,  
No part of all his former strength was lost,  
And as it pleased God, of his great grace,  
*Sobrin*o present was then in the place.

184

And being now so weake with bleeding brought,  
That eu'n his vitall sprites were almost spent,  
And seeing plainly such a wonder wrought,  
So great, so gracious and so euident,  
To leaue his Macon he thereby was taught;  
And to confesse our Christ omnipotent,  
He prayd in most contrite, and humble mann  
To be a souldier vnder Christian banner.

185

The iust old man did grant him his request,  
And Christend him, and did his health restore,  
At which *Orlando* stout, and all the rest,  
Reioyced much, and praysed God therefore.  
*Rogero* eke as ioyfull as the best,  
Increased in deuotion more and more,  
To see those mysteries deuine, and Oracles,  
Confirmed so by plaine apparent miracles.

186

Thus all this companie in sweet consort,  
In this same blessed Hermits house do stay,  
Who doth them all, most fatherly exhort,  
To bend their whole endeouours all they may,  
That in this Inne, where mans abode is short,  
They seeke to wash away the dirt and clay,  
That some call life, and greatly do commend,  
And sole to heau'n, their eyes and hearts to bend.

187

Then sent *Orlando* to his ship in hast,  
For bread and wine, and other daintie dishes,  
And this old man, whom abstinence and fast,  
Had made forget the tast of beasts or fishes,  
Of charitie, they prayd some flesh to tast,  
And he therein consented to their wishes,  
And when they all had eate to their contents,  
They found discourse of sundry arguments.

188

And as in speech it often doth befall,  
That one thing doth another bring to light,  
*Rogero* was at last knowne to them all,  
For that *Rogero*, that excelled in fight;  
The first that him to memorie'd call,  
Was *Sobrin*, who did know him well by sight.  
The next that knew his louely looke and stately,  
Was good *Renaldo*, that fought with him lately.

189

They all do come to him with frendly face,  
When of his Christendome they vnderstand,  
And some do kisse him, others him embrace,  
In kindest sort, some take him by the hand,  
But chiefly *Renaldo* strives, to do him grace:  
Yet if that you desire to vnderstand,  
Why more then all the rest *Renaldo* sought it;  
Turne ore the leafe and there you shalbe taught



In the tale of the Mantuan knight may be gathered this good morall, that it is no wisdom to search for that a man would not find: and how the first breach commonly of the sweet concord of matrimonie, groweth of ieaiousie, I must confesse, these be two knauish tales that be here in this booke, and yet the Bee will picke out hony out of the w r of them. For mine owne part I haue euer bene of opinion, that this tale of the Mantuan knight, is simply the worst ag a women in all the booke, or rather indeed that euer was written. The hosts tale in the xxviij booke of this worke, is a b one: M. Spencers tale of the squire of Dames, in his excellent Poem of the Faery Queene, in the end of the vij. Canto f the third booke, is to the like effect, sharpe and well conceited; in substance thus, that his Squire of Dames could i three yeares trauell, find but hree women that denyed his lewd desire: of which three, one was a courtesan, that rei ted him because he w ted coyne for her: the second a Nun, who refused him because he would not swear secreteacie, the ti rd a plain countrey Gentlewoman, that of good honest simplicitie denyed him: which also hath some liknes with that of Pharaos I spake of in the notes vpon the 42. booke: but this of the Mantuan knight, passeth the all, if you marke the secret drift of it: shewing how a woma of so excellent education, so great learning, so rare beautie, so fine wit, so choise qualities, so sweet behauiour, so abundant wealth, so dearly beloved by her husband, could so easily be conquerd with the sight of three or foure

and then for his comfort, how for ten yeares after, he being a great house keeper, all his married guests that came him spilt the drinke in their bosomes. This tale (admitting it to be true or probable) would argue women to be of ing couetousnes, but loe how easily all this is not onely to be excused for them, but retorted vpon men: for assuredly it is nely the couetor senes of men, that maketh women (as we interpret it) to sell their chastities: for women indeed care for nothing but to b loued, & where they assure themselves they are loued, there of their kind and sweet dispositions, they bestow loue againe. Now because men can protest and swear, and vow that which they thinke not, therefore no maruel if women are hard of beleefe, and thicke listd to heare them: but when they come to giue things that cost money, and that the coyn begin to walke, w ich they are sure men esteeme so dearly, as they venter both body and soule for it many times, then no maruall if they be iene them, and thinke them to be in good earnest, and consequently yeeld to that they denyed before. But to go forward with the rest of the morall, both men and women may gather this morall out of both these tales; t as all vice is odious and base, so that which a bodie is hired vnto, is most shamefull and detestable.

Of the Faery Manto I cannot affirme any thing of truth, whether she were a Faery or a Prophetesse, but this I finde writen of her, that when Thebes was razed by Alexander, this Manto daughter of Tyresia, being learned in Magike as well as her father, came vnto that part of Italy, where Mantua is now, and there her sonne Ocnus (as Virgil will haue it) built that Citie, and called it after his mothers name.

Historic.

Ille etiam patrijs ignem ciet Ocnus ab oris,  
Fatidicæ Mantus, & Thusci filius amnis,  
Qui muros; matrisque dedit tibi Mantua nomen.

Concerning those braue men with whom Orlando compareth Brandimart, the Decij. M. Curtius, and Codrus of the Decij, one of them had a dreame or vision, that told him how in the battel which he was to fight next day with the Latins the Captain of one side, and the army of the other side should perish, wherupō he being then Consul, ran wilfully on his enemies and was slaine, and so gat the victory for the Romans. His son Decius did the like after him: Curtius leapt into the gulfes, that was prophesied should neuer be stopt, till the most precious iewell the Romans had were thrown into the same.

Codrus dyed thus, the Dorians hauing warre with the Athenians, the Oracle told them of Athens, that if Codrus ere slaine by the enemies, then the Athenians should haue the victorie: this newes being noised in the Dorians campe, they gaue straight charge that none should kil Codrus: but he minding to dye for the defence of his countrey, counterfaieted himselfe like a Pedler, or such like, as came to the campe of enemies, and picking a quarrell there of purpose with some of the souldiers, was slaine among th.

The cuppe presented to Renald is allegorically to be vnderstood for suspicion, which whosoener drinketh of, it is Allusion.  
great ods he sheds it so into his bo me, as he shal drinke the worse after it while he liues, and therefore Renaldo said wel,

Drinke of the cup, ( ooth he) that list, not I, I am not, nor I minde not to be drie.

For the Mantuans tale, it is not vnlike to that of Cephalus in Owds Metamorphosis, in the seuenth booke, where he Allegoric.  
tels how in the like sort changed by negromancy, he tempted his wife so farre,

Dum census dare me promitto, loquendo  
Muneraque augendo, tandem dubitare coegi.

I haue heard of a Gentle man that would needs court his owne wife in a maske, causing her to be told he was some other man; and made loue so long to her, till he found himselfe more gracious with her, then he had cause to boast of.

As for the Faery Mauxo, whether there be any Faeries or no, I wil not dispute the matter, but I haue heard strange tales reported by credible persons, of these witches and spirits whatsoever they be: and I haue heard it of mong the sim-pler sort, that he that can please the Queene of Faeries, shall neuer want while he liues; and it seemes the like opinion hath crept into other countries, though taken but as a fable, or as the saying is,

It may be in my Paternoster indeed,  
But sure it neuer shall come in my Creed.

Marrie for the shaghaired dog, that could dance to please Ladies so well, and had such pretie qualities, I dare vndertake my seruant Bwrgy (whose picture you may see in the first page of the booke, and is knowne to the best Ladies of England) may cōpare with any Pilgrims dog that serued such a saint this seuer yere: only he wants that qualitie to shake ickats out o' i eares. But now to leaue these toying tales, and fall to the soberer matter, the solemne funeralls of Blandim and Orlandos mourning, alludes to the buriall of Pallas, or Pallante in Virgil: Bardino to Acetes: and O. lando

Aeneas: but his here is set forth with deuout and Christian termes, and therefore more to be commended.

Here end the notes of the 43. booke.

I i iij

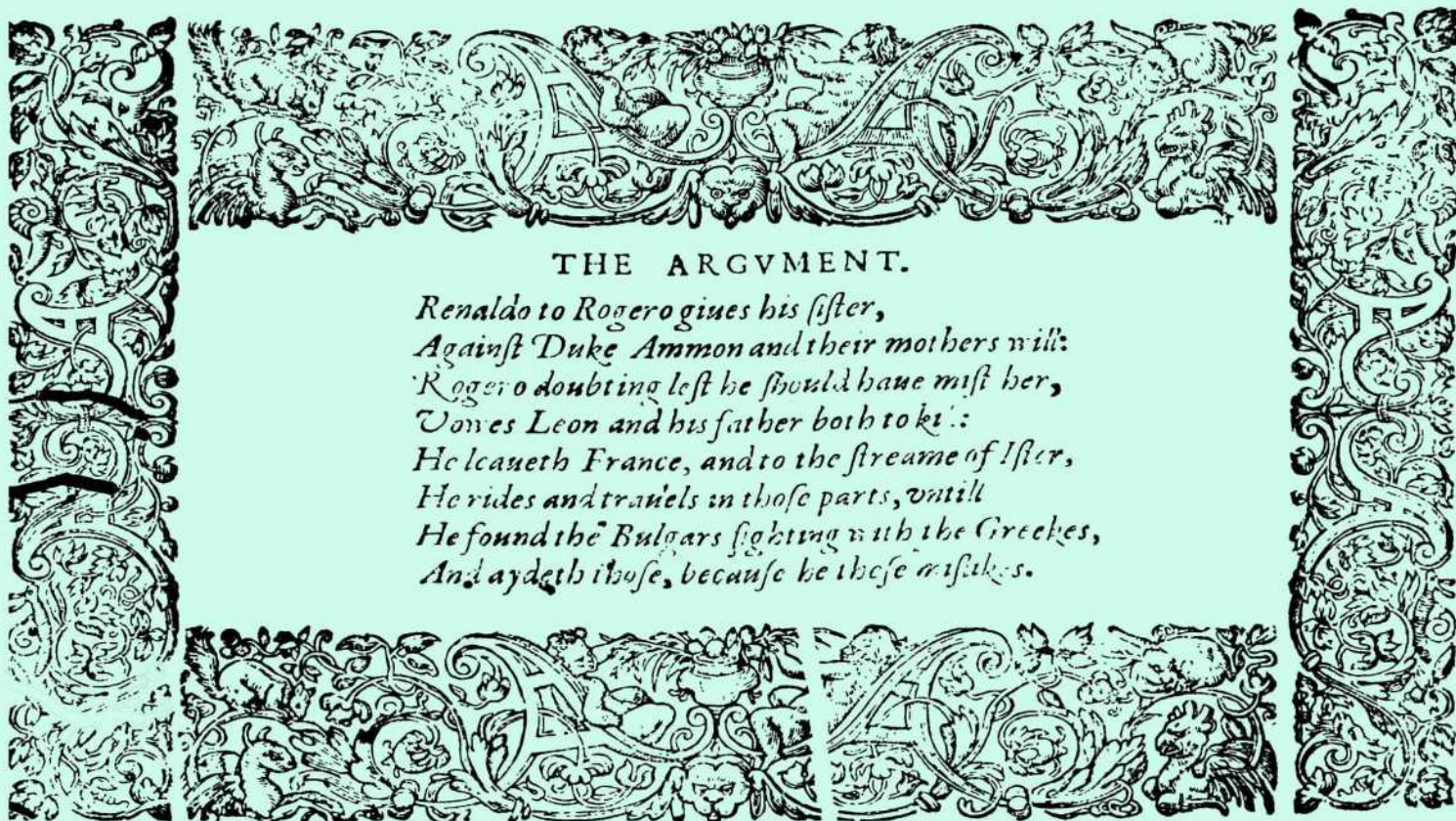




Ruggiero. Rinaldo

Eremita.





## THE ARGUMENT.

*Renaldo to Rogero giues his sister,  
Against Duke Ammon and their mothers will:  
Rogero doubting lest he should haue mist her,  
Vowes Leon and his father both to kill:  
He leaueth France, and to the streame of Ister,  
He rides and trauels in those parts, vntill  
He found the Bulgars fighting with the Greekes,  
And aydeth those, because he these mistakes.*

Of friendship.

**O**f times we see, in house  
of meane estate,  
In fortune bad, and chances  
ouerthwart,  
That men doe sooner lay  
aside debate,  
And ioyne in sound accord  
with hand and hart,  
The princes courts, where  
riches gender hate,  
And vilde suspēct, that louing mi-  
nd doth part,  
Where charitie is cleane consumed  
and vanished,  
And frendship firme, is quite  
out and banished.

Hence comes it that twixt Princes and great Lords,  
Agreements all, and cou'nants are so fraile,  
To day Kings, Pope Emperors make accords  
To morrow deadly warres, with tooth and nayle:  
And why? their thought stil vary from their words,  
They keepe not othes but for their owne auail:  
Nor weigh they wrong or right, or reckon of it,  
But as the same may turne to their owne profite.

Now though such men, as yet were neuer taught,  
What frendship is, nor euer knew the same,  
(For frendship neuer growes where there is nought  
But shewes disgiuld, in earnest or in game)  
Yet if ill fortune them so low haue brought,  
To meete in meaner place, they straight do frame  
Their proud hy minds to frendship true and plaine,  
Which erst they knew not y did disdain.

aintlik man, had in his Cell more powre,  
Is guests in firme and sound accord do binde.

Then others should haue had in Princely bowre:  
And more, this frendship was of such a kind,  
That euer after, from that present houre,  
Eu'n to their ends, they all agreed in mind:  
Appearing to this old man and deuout,  
As white within, as Swans are white without.

He found them all both gentle kind, and meeke,  
And not in sort of which I erst complained,  
Of those that neuer thinke and speake alike,  
But euer go with speech, and visage fained.  
They cleare forgot all grudge, and old dislike;  
No signe, nor memorie thereof remained:  
But loue together, as if they had come,  
All of one feede, and lame all in one wome.

But good Renaldo could by no meanes  
To shew Rogero kindnesse great and loue,  
Both for his prowesse great and valiant brest,  
Which hand to hand, in fight he late did proue:  
And for his courtie, that did passe the rest,  
And was praise worthy all the rest ouer:  
But chiefe the cause was this, because bound,  
His friends to him had sundry waye bound.

He knew, for often he had heard it told,  
How first Rogero laued Richardet,  
Whom then Marfilio kept in cruell hold,  
Because with child he did his daughter get:  
And further, Bonos onnes should haue bene for  
But them Rogero did at freedome set.  
These things in honor true, and reputation,  
He knew were matters of great obligation.



8

And though before he could no kindnes show  
 To hi while he profest himsef a Turke,  
 Yet ow that him a Christian he did know,  
 He ld now let his loue no longer lurke:  
 Which when the Hermit saw, he was not slow,  
 A farther k dnes, them between to worke: (them)  
 He moues m (sith he so good friends had seene  
 That he might make affinitie betweene them.

9

He said it was foreshowd him from on hie,  
 That by the ioyning their two lines in one,  
 Such ofspring should arise, as vnder sky  
 To passe or match the same, there should be none;  
 Wherefore, he wisheth them, that by and by  
 By his aduise, they would agree thereon:  
*Renaldo* at his motion straight allowes,  
 That *Bradamant* should be *Rogeros* spouse.

10

*Orlando*, *Oliuero* soone to that,  
 Gane their good will, and fauour, and assent,  
 Affirming that all France may ioy thereat;  
 They little knew how good Duke *Ammon* ment,  
 To match his daughter higher farre, and that  
 King *Charles* thereto did willingly consent:  
 To *Leon* namely *Constantynos* haire,  
 Emp'rour of Greece, who sought the Lady faire.

11

Duke *Ammon* meant not such a match to shunne,  
 But yet his answer he a while deferred,  
 Vntill such time as with his absent sonne,  
 He had on such a weightrie cause conferred:  
 Not doubting but he thereto would be wonne,  
 And glad to haue his sister so preferred;  
 But yet, though herein he did nothing doubt him,  
 Yet would he not retolue thereon without him.

12

But now *Renaldo* absent from his father,  
 Ignorant of that imperiall plot,  
 Vnto *Rogero* promist her the rather,  
 Becau'e his pre'ent friends mislikt it not;  
 But chiefe that he by th'Hermit's speech did gather,  
 That God ordaind it by eternall lot;  
 And of his father firmly he belieued,  
 At such alliance he could not be grieved.

13

All that same day and halfe the next,  
 They made abode with that same faintlike fire,  
 Still preaching, teaching them the blessed text,  
 Expounding eu'rie place at their desire:  
 The marrine with their long tarrying vex,  
 Oft sent t hem to the ship retyre,  
 Becaus d blew well to serue their turne,  
 Compe them in fine, to make returne.

14

*Rogero* that had liu'd in long exile,  
 (Now glad to do as that old man would haue him)  
 D th bid farewell, and left that happie Ile,  
 hen he had learnd y faith that sole must saue him,  
 rlando vnto him his sword this while,  
 And *Hecto* armes, and good *Frontino* gaue him,  
 Both to de lare his loue so much the more,  
 And that he knew they had bene his before.

15

And though the Palladine in common sence,  
 Had iustler claime vnto the blade enchanted,  
 As hauing wonne it in his owne defence,  
 Forth of the garden with foule spirits haunted,  
 Whereas *Rogeros* title and pretence,  
 Came from *Brunello*, that of theft was taunted,  
 Yet gaue he it of his good nature meerly,  
 Although his right thereto appeared cleerly.

16

Then by the holy man they all were blessed,  
 And to their ship they made their backe repaire,  
 Their oares for waues, their sails for winds adressed.  
 Which then blew verie temperate and faire:  
 No feare of wracke, no doubt to be distressed;  
 No need there was of vowes, or yet of praire:  
 But here I leaue them sailing in aire wether,  
 Till th English Duke and them I bring together.

17

Who when the victorie he vr lerstood  
*Orlando* got, of which he was lesse glad,  
 Because the same was wonne with so much blood,  
 And sith now France no feare of Affricke had;  
 To send *Senapo* home he thought it good,  
 And therefore with a count'nance graue and sad,  
 Yet kind and frendly he did giue him thanke;  
 For lending him his aid, so free and franke.

18

And *Dudon* sent a little while before,  
 All that his great triumphant Nauie backe,  
 Wherewith he plagued had the Turks so sore,  
 And brought them all to ruine great and wracke:  
 Which ships no sooner toucht that Affricke shore,  
 And quite disburdend of the people blacke,  
 Buteu'rie ship his shape forakes and leaues,  
 And all of them were turnd againe to leaues.

19

And now on parting were the Nubian bands:  
 Some mounted, some on foote pel mell together,  
 The winds tha wont to moue the troublous sands,  
*Astolfo* gaue th king in bagges of leather,  
 So firmly tyde, d in so sure bands,  
 As feare they need t any change of weather:  
 And will'd him, whe they were past all ieoperty,  
 That they should gra it vnto the wind his liberty.

20

*Turpino* writes that they no soone came,  
 Vnto the mountaine Atl ston roote,  
 But that their horses, ston againe became,  
 And to they all went homr a aine on foote:  
 But after how each thing wit them did frame,  
 In this discourse to tell it shall no boote:  
 Now tell we of your English Dukes proceeding,  
 Of his returne to France, and of his speeding.

21

Who hauing rulers for those parts ordained,  
 That might as pleas'd, them ruine or repaire,  
 No longer then in Affrica remained,  
 But vnto France he quickly did repaire.  
 By land or sea, to trauell he disdaind,  
 But with his winged beaft he cuts the aire,  
 And quickly came to Prouince where he did,  
 As much as erst th'Euangelist did bid.

Which

Looke in the  
 Allegorie of  
 myracles.



22

Which was that enterd into Prouince, he  
Should take away his saddle and his raines,  
And grant him liberty, and set him free,  
And put him now vnto no further paines:  
For Cinthias speare, in which our lost wits be,  
That maketh of our losses greatest gaines,  
Had made his horne long since to loofe his sound,  
That now no vertue in the same was found.

23

Now th'English Duke vnto *Marfilio* came,  
And iust at that same time arriued there,  
When those three Palladines of worthy fame,  
*Sobrin* and *Rogero* landed were:  
Mu was their ioy, yet lessond was the same,  
And outward shewes thereof they do forbear:  
reat a sadnes in them all it bred,  
To thinke their friend king *Brandimart* was ded.

24

But *Charles* that from *Sicilia* notice had,  
How those two kings were slaine, and *Sobrine* taken,  
And *Brandimart* deceau'd (which made him sad)  
And that *Rogero* had the Turkes forsaken;  
his minde now well apaid and glad,  
at such a peise, he from his necke had shaken,  
Which for a long time had so grievous wayed,  
As he therewith was welny ouerlayed.

25

Wherefore to do them honour, as was meete,  
That with their courage did his crowne sustaine,  
He sent his Peeres and nobles them to greet,  
Vnto the verie confines of his raigne:  
Himselfe in person, after did them meete,  
With Lords and Princes of his chiefeest traine:  
And neare the town, the Queene with many a Ladie  
Came forth, to do them honor all that may be.

26

King *Charles* himselfe with chearfull friendly face,  
The Palladines, their kinsfolke and their friends,  
The noble men, and people meane and base,  
To make them for their merits for e amends,  
With friendly shouts did fill vp e place,  
Each man and enery child his e extends,  
And cride on those two house f account,  
That of *Mongrana*, and of *C arimount*.

27

Now to the Prince *R* did bring,  
And told him how e was apparent haire  
To *Rifa*, and of that gre t house did spring:  
And while they spake these words, *Marfisa* faire  
Saluted him in presence of the King,  
Bu *Bradamant* (who thither did repaire)  
Yet kept her selfe loofe with more respect  
Least openly she should her loue detect.

28

Then *Charles* doth welcom him with words most sweet,  
And vsd him like a man of rare account,  
And for he was allighted on his feet,  
For reu'ence sake, againe he made him mount;  
And cheeke by cheeke, to ride through eu'ry street:  
He knew and ioyd, that at the sacred fount,  
*Rogero* by the hermit was baptised,  
e by forme letters was aduised.

29

In triumph and in feasts they spent the day,  
And riding through the towne at sundry h res,  
Some straw Greene leaues, or rushes in the w ,  
Some cast downe garlands made of sundry flowres.  
The streets were hanged all with rich array,  
And damfels from the windowes high and towres,  
To gratulate their prosperous deeds d haps,  
Cast showres of Roses from their ten laps.

30

At eu'ry corner, market-crosse or gate,  
High arches triumph-like were new erected,  
Some of *Bylertas* fall and wofull state,  
Which they had ouerthrowne and quite deiected:  
Some of the combat that was fought so late,  
With playes and new deuises vnexpected:  
Thus dedicate, and thus entitled wholly,  
To those Redeemers of the Empire holly.

31

With gratefull sound, of instruments and voyce,  
With sundrie sweet and muscull conforst,  
The people shew how greatly they reioyce,  
With Iubiles, and shoutes, and playes, and sports.  
Then *Charles* and all his knights, and Barons choise  
To his owne house, and his owne court resorts:  
And there with tilting, turneis, and with playes,  
They spent a few of then ensuing dayes.

32

*Renaldo* taking time, vpon a day,  
The marriage matter to his father brake,  
And told him he had promist by the way,  
His sister should for spouse, *Rogero* take:  
By which, allyance such procure they may,  
As men may count great folly to forsake:  
In which himselfe the further did proceed,  
Because *Orlando* was thereto agreed.

*Renaldo moves  
the marriage for  
Bradamant.*

33

With much disdain this speech Duke *Ammon* hard,  
Affirming, he presumptuously had donne,  
To promise so, sith he had now prepar'd,  
To match her to the Greekish Emp'rors sonne:  
And not this priuate knight, who he had hard,  
Had not one foote of land scant vnder Sunne:  
Alas (quoth he) poore gentrie small auails,  
And vertue lesse if land and riches failes.

*Sentence.  
The common opi-  
nion of the people*

34

Bu iessie *Ammons* wife, dam  
Do call her sonne vngrate an gant,  
And thinks to worke so by herwise aduise,  
To make an Empreffe of her *Bradamant*:  
*Renaldo* much condemne h that deuise,  
Nor will not of his word one tittle waie  
But said his sister (vnder their corre  
Would therein ruled be by his direct oc

*Looke of this in  
the Moral.*

35

The mother (in her daughter much beguild)  
Perswades with her, and comforts her to say,  
That she will rather dye and be exild,  
Then match so meane, when higher match she may  
She saith, she will not take her for her child,  
If she will let her brother beare such sw  
Wherefore (saith she) be bold, and do ic it,  
And with your brother, giue me leaue try it.



36

Poore *Bradamant* doth silent stand and still,  
She dares not scarce in thought, for reu'ence sake,  
Gain say her mother, or withstand her will,  
On tother side, she dare not promise make,  
Of that, which to performe did passe her skill,  
And was aboue her powre to vndertake:  
No powre she had in this, nor great nor small,  
For long this, loue sealed on it all.

37

She dares not giue consent, nor yet deny,  
She onely sighes, and answer maketh none,  
But when she is alone that none are by,  
Vnto her selfe she makes a piteous mone;  
She makes her brefts and her faire haire to trie  
In part her grieve, for why she beates the tone  
In spitefull wise, the tother short she teares,  
And thus she speakes amid her plaints and feares.

38

Wo me, shall then my will and fancie varie  
From hers, whose will should rule and gouern mine?  
Shall my will to my mothers be contrarie,  
Or that disdaine, my mother doth designe?  
Shall I presume with such a man to marrie,  
At whom my parents both do so repine?  
What fowler blot can staine a damfels praise,  
Then when her parents will, she disobayes?

Sentence.

39

Shall then my mothers reu'ence, and my fires,  
Make me my deare *Rogero* to forget?  
And to new loues, new hopes, and new desires  
Betake my selfe, and him at nought to set?  
Or shall the reu'ence which their age requires,  
And which my selfe hath borne them euer yet,  
Be now forgot, and I be wholly bent,  
To mine owne ioy, and solace, and content?

40

*Vide meliora  
probuque,  
Deseruiora sequi*

I know (alas I know) my dutie well,  
But powre I haue not to performe the same,  
fancie reasons rule doth quite expell,  
And my well orderd thoughts, put out of frame:  
And tyrant Loue, gainst whom who dare rebell,  
Makes me cast off all teare of others blame:  
My speech, my deeds, my thoughts he doth dispose,  
And ruleth them, against my will God knowes.

41

To *Al* hter, and to *Beatrice*  
I am, but vn am a slaue,  
Though I do now refuse their wise aduise,  
Of them I may hereafter pardon haue:  
But if I Loue resist, who knowes the price,  
Or who can free from his great furie saue?  
He will to harken to my scuses,  
But fl cently, for such his vse is.

42

With much adoe, and with long time I drew  
My deare *Rogero*, to the Christian faith,  
What profite doth thereof to me, enfew,  
It will ill hap my purpose good gainfaith?  
doth the Bee, not for himselfe renew,  
he hony that in combes he safely laith:  
but soone of my life they shall me reauce,  
Then ford: me my *Rogero* deare to leaue.

Smile.

43

But though herein I disobey my mother,  
And father to, which I to do am loth:  
What though? yet I therein obey my brother,  
That is reputed wiser then they both:  
*Orlando* eke, for me speakes tone and tother,  
And fauour will this match, how ere it goth;  
And sure I am, the world doth of them twaine,  
Make more esteeme then all our house again

44

Sith then the world esteemes and calleth those,  
The glorie and the flowre of *Clarimour*,  
Lesse shame it is for me, as I suppose,  
If that I suffer men of such account,  
Of me in marriage matters to dispose,  
That all my kin in credit do surmount:  
B side they haue the word directly spoken,  
But to the Greeke the matter is but broken.

45

But now if *Bradamant* her selfe torment,  
And doth her euill hap bewaile and blame,  
No doubt *Rogero* is as macontent,  
Who had some priuie inckling of the same:  
He secretly doth his ill state lament,  
And curseth fortune that vnconstant dame,  
That had for wealth, so sparing left his lot,  
Which diuers base vnworthy men had got.

46

In each thipg else that nature man can graunt,  
Or that is got by industrie or art,  
He knowth, and each man saith that none can vaunt  
To haue a greater, no nor such apart: (daunt,  
His strength was such, no strength the same could  
His person past his strength; his noble hart,  
His Princely manners, and his braue behaour,  
Wan each mans loue, each mans applause & fauour.

47

But this same vulgar sort vntaught and rude,  
That as them list distribute praise and shame,  
And (saue th wife and learned) include  
All men that li on earth, within that name;  
For Myters, stat nor crownes, may not exclude,  
Popes, mightie k nor Keyfars from the same:  
But onely wisdom graue, and learning cleare,  
Gifts giuen from hea n, that are not common heare

Sente

Seuence.

48

This vulgar sort (to tell my meaning out)  
That sauing wealth and riches, nought admyre,  
And nothing thinke prais worthy them without,  
And in their base conceit can looke no hyre:  
That be one neu'r so leard so wise, so stout,  
Well shapt as eye can see, or heart desire,  
Well borne, well qualited of so er carriage,  
They nought esteeme all these in case of marriage.

Sentence.  
Of the common  
opion of making  
marriage.

49

Well (saith *Rogero*) if that *Ammon* needs  
Will make an Empresse of his daughter deare,  
At least this hast he makes, is more then needs,  
Let him yet giue me respite but one yeare:  
And if in that same yeare, I do such deeds,  
That both the sonne and fire, anquish clear :  
When both their crowns I conquerd haue & one  
Then I may worthy be, to be his iunc.



50

But if he straight the marriage do effect,  
With *Constantinos* heire in so great hast,  
And will *Renaldos* promise quite neglect,  
And eke his Consens, which so few dayes past,  
Before that blessed man of Gods elect,  
And that good Marquesse, they did bind so fast:  
they shall long me so, what then shall I.  
nat can I do in such a case but die?

51

Should I do? shall I then be auenged  
that me contraries in this wile?  
Let me be blamed herein, or commended,  
therein be deemd a foole or wile:  
But could my state alas, be then amended  
By th'old mans death? no, no, far otherwile:  
but this wou'd not worke my more content,  
But rather contrarie my first intent.

52

My first intention was, and yet is still,  
That *Bradamant* should beare me loue, not hate,  
Now then if I her fathér here should kill,  
Or ouer attempt against her brothers state:  
not cause of me to thinke then ill,  
And to refuse me for her spouse and mate?  
What shall I do? alas then shall I beare it?  
Ah no perdy, first I will dye I sweare it.

53

And yet I will not die, but Ile destroy  
That *Leon* that procur'd my harme and wo,  
And is disturber of my chiefeft ioy,  
Him and his father I will kill also:  
Faile *Helen* to the louer lewd of Troy,  
Not cost so deare, nor longer far ago,  
*Proserpin* cost *Perythous* price so hye,  
As I will cause them this my griefe to buy.

Paris

Looke of Perythous in the story

54

But were it possible (my deare) that thou,  
Canst leaue thine owne *Rogero* for Greeke?  
Yea though that all thy brothers disallow  
This match, which *Ammon* doth fondly seeke?  
s, I feare that thine owne inde doth bo  
To his desire, and could far better leeke,  
When with thy selfe, thou dost these offers scan,  
To haue a *Cesar* then a priuate man.

55

Can then the dignitie and glorious name,  
Of pompous shewes, and of imperiall feat,  
The noble heart of *Bradamant* so frame,  
Her vallew rare, and vnto defeat,  
And go from her first promise, to her shame,  
Which me she made with many vowes and great?  
No sure I know me will them all forsake,  
Much rather then vnlay, that once she spake.

56

These words *Rogero* spake, and many such,  
And oftentimes he spake them in such sort,  
That diuers ouerhard him, in so much  
That they were told, by more then one report  
To *Bradamant*, whom they did chiefly tuch,  
Who tooke them not (you may be sure) in sport:  
as her priuate griefe was great before,  
so this report shew'd her more.

57

But most it grieu'd her and aboue the rest,  
That he mistrusted she would him forsake  
At any mans commandment or request,  
And specially for this same Grecians sake:  
Wherefore to moue this scruple from his brest,  
And this foule error from his minde to take,  
She gate her pen and inke one night full late,  
And to *Rogero* such like words she wrote.

58

My deare, as erst I was I still will bide,  
While life shall dure, yea eu'n when life is past,  
Though toward me, loue shew his grace, or pride,  
Or fortune raise me vp, or downward cast:  
My stable faith, shall neuer faile nor slide,  
For calme, nor storme, but as a Rocke stand fast,  
Against the surging waues still vnremoueable,  
So shall my faith stand firme and vnreproueable.

*Bradamants*  
lett r,  
*Rogier* qual  
sempre fui tal  
esser voglio.

59

First shall a file, or knife of droffie lead,  
The Dyamond to sundrie figures carue,  
Ere any chance by Fortunes frailtie bred,  
Or powre of loue, shall cause my course to swarue:  
First shall the streames runne backe vnto their hed,  
Ere I will iustly such a blame defarue:  
Or ere I shall, for chances good or ill,  
Giue my consent to change my settled will.

60

To thee *Rogero* mine, a good while since,  
Of me, and of my heart I gaue dominion,  
I should my selfe of lightnes great conuince,  
If I so to daynly could change opinion:  
As for my true allegiance, sure no Prince,  
Is faithfuller belou'd of dearest minnion:  
For me you need no fortresse nor no towre,  
To be defences against forren powre.

61

You need no bands of men to entertaine,  
To keepe this fortres, strength euough haue I,  
For riches make on me assault but vaine,  
So base a price, no gentle heart can buy:  
Nor noble birth, nor name of crowne or raigne,  
Which oft doth dale the common peoples eye,  
Nor beautie, to the which light minds incline,  
Though greater see I neuer shall then thine.

62

feare not, no man powre  
e to other figure to tra me,  
Loue did your shape therein so depe ingraue,  
As now it can receiue none other forme:  
My heart is not of wax, nor why Loue gaue,  
(When to his worke he did it first conforme)  
An hundred strokes with cheeffell male,  
Ere he could fetch therefrom one li oc

63

Pure Iuorie, gemmes, and eu'rie hardest stone,  
That most withstandeth steele, a man may burst,  
But other figure yet receiue they none,  
Then that to which they formed were at first:  
My heart is not vnlike a precious stone,  
Or Adamant, or what so cutteth worst:  
Loue sooner shall it breake in thousand lints,  
Ere other beauties bring it to new prin

K k



64

These words she wrote, and many more to these,  
That in with faith, with loue, with hope so fed,  
O'rce to cure each desperate disease,  
Or rather to reuiue him being ded:  
But when they thought them safest from the seas,  
And in the hau'n securely harbored,  
A new and daime tempest rose so fore,  
As draue in backe to sea from sight of shore.

65

For worthy *Bradamant* that had assignd,  
To shew her meaning plaine was, and direct,  
And calling wonted courage to her minde,  
And quite reiecting womanly respect,  
Came vnto *Charles*, and spake in such a kind;  
My Leige, if ere my seruice did effect,  
Ought worth your highnes thanks, at your command  
Let not your grace denie me one demand.

66

But promise me, vpon your Princely faith  
And royall word, which I may surely trust,  
To grant one suit, what ere your handmaid praith,  
And I will promise that it shall be iust.  
(Beloued worthy mayd, the Emp'r's faith)  
Your many seruices confesse I must,  
Deserue no lesse, and frankly here I vow it,  
If of my Realme you aske part, Ile allow it.

67

My suit is that your highnes will not yeeld,  
That I (said she) may any husband haue,  
That shall not first of all, with speare and sheeld,  
Or else with sword in hand him so behaue,  
As that he can withstand me in the feeld,  
Behold the onely fauour that I craue;  
I would be his that proues himselfe so stout,  
The rest may be content to stand without.

68

Most noble maid (the Emp'r's straight replide)  
Thy stout demand, well to thy minde doth sute,  
Therefore by me it may not be denyde,  
It is so noble and so iust a sute:  
Now (for she sought not this her suit to hide)  
All they that heard thereof, sure were not mute,  
But eu'n ere night it publisht was so rife,  
As it was knowne to *Ammon* and his wife.

69

And thereup presently conceaued,  
Against their daughter, great disdain and  
For by such morton plainly they perceaued,  
She to *Rogero* most deuotion hath:  
Wherefore to th'end she might be quite bereaued  
All hope, follow that forbidden path,  
From thence they traird her by a flight,  
And then their castle that same night.

70

This was a fortresse that but few dayes past,  
The Prince had giu'n to them vpon request,  
Betweene *Perpignan* and *Cirtasse* plait,  
And neare the sea, not of importance least:  
Here as a prisoner they did keepe her fast,  
With mind to send her one day vnto th'East,  
They purpose, will she, nill she, she must take  
Dor *Leon*, and *Rogero* quite forsake.

71

The Damsell, though not kept with watch or guard,  
Yet bridled with the Parents awfull raine,  
Did keepe her close, with good and due regard,  
And of their rigor did no whit complaine:  
But yet to this her thoughts were full prepar'd,  
To bide imprisonment or any paine,  
Or death it selfe, by torture or by r.cke,  
More rather then from promise to go backe.

72

*Renaldo* finding that his suttie fire,  
Had tane his sister thus from out his fi  
Nor able as his promise did require,  
*Rogeros* suit to further add assist,  
Forgets he is his sonne, and in his ire,  
Rebukes his Parents, but say what he list,  
They are content to giue the rds to loosers,  
But in their daughters match th y will be chensers.

73

*Rogero* hearing this, and greatly fearing,  
Least *Leon* should by loue, or by constraint,  
Possesse his Lady by his long forbear'ng,  
He minds (but none he doth therewith acquaint,)  
To giue a speedie death to *Leon*, sweari  
That he of *Cesar*, will make him a saint,  
And that he will, except his hope deceiue hi  
Of scepter, life, and loue, and all becaue him.

74

And in his minde resolu'd full thereon,  
Don *Hectors* armor that from *Mandricard*  
He late had wonne, forwith he putteth on,  
*Frontino* eake he secretly prepar'd:  
But Eagle on his sheeld he would haue none,  
I cannot tell you well in what regard;  
In steed thereof an argent Vnicorne,  
In field of Gewls by him, as then was borne.

75

One onely trustie seruant and no mo,  
He takes with him his purpose to conceale,  
He giueth him in charge where ere he go,  
That he his name to no man do reueale:  
Thus *Mosa*, he past with pace not  
And *Austria*, to *Vngarian* common weale:  
And vpon *Isters* bar'e, such speed he made,  
That in a while he came vnto *Belgrade*.

76

Where *Saua* doth into *Danu* all,  
And all along that streame he might discouer  
Ensignes and banners all imperiall,  
That nye the streame in mbers great did houer:  
Great was their multitude, *Grecians* all,  
Who with a hope that citie to recouer,  
Which late before from them the *Bulgars* wonne,  
Were thither brought by th'Emperor and his sonne.

77

Twixt *Belgrade*, and the streame in warlike rankes;  
The *Bulgars* stood eu'n to the mountaines ridge,  
Both armies waterd at the riuers bankes,  
The *Greekes* endeuord there to cast a bridge:  
And for that end prepared b's and pl's,  
The *Bulgars* sought their purpose to abridge:  
Scarfe had *Rogero* vew'd them wel, and sec'd them  
But that there fell a skirmish betwixt them.

The

*Far d' Auguste*  
*diuo*, for when  
the Emperors  
ad, they  
eised them and  
sa them *Davi*  
whic poris  
much as *saints*.



78

The Greeks were foure to one, beside they haue  
Good store of boats with many a planke and boord,  
And to the place a sharpe assault they gaue,  
And mean to passe although there were no foord:  
But this was but a policie, and braue,  
For *Leon* so this while himselfe besturd,  
That with a compasse that about he fet,  
he and his, the streame past without let.

79

lesse then twentie thousand men,  
Anks he secretly doth ride,  
gau to them a fresh alarum then,  
d for, vnwares, and vnespide:  
sse the Emp'ror *Constantino*, when  
w his sonne, on land on tother side,  
yning plank to planke, and boat to boat,  
all his powe, an easie passage got.

80

The Bulgar Captaine that *Vatran* high  
And was a valiant warrior and a wife,  
Endeuord b th by policie and fight:  
To be e bront, but nothing could suffice:  
both by multitude and might,  
Vnhorsed him, and ere he could arise;  
Sit e to yeeld him prisner did disdaine,  
ong a thousand swords he there was flaine.

81

Till then, the Bulgars valiantly made hed,  
But when they saw their king and Captaine flaine,  
So great a terror in their minds was bred,  
In their faint hearts no courage did remaine:  
*Rogero* seeing how the Bulgars fled,  
And none to stay or bring them backe againe:  
To helpe the weaker part resolueth briefly,  
For hate of *Constantine*, but *Leon* chiefly.

82

He spurres his horse that like the winde doth runne,  
And makes them stand, that fled wi ainting brest,  
And hauing spide one brauer the e Sunn  
A gallant youth, more forward an the rest:  
me was *Constantinos* sist sonne)  
At him *Rogero* runnes with in rest:  
He brake his shield and coa e brittle glasse,  
And through his bodie ma e the speare to passe.

83

He leaues him dead, and *Ballifard* he drawes,  
And with that blade he shewd himselfe so stout,  
Who meeteth wit i to repent haue caule,  
He presseeth in ong thickest rout:  
Ones shall he clea e o the verie iawes,  
ds, leggs, and armes flew all the field about:  
T e streame that erst did r n as Christall cleare,  
Vermillion now doth to the oht appeare.

84

No man that saw, much lesse th felt his blowes,  
Dare once make head again hem, or resist them,  
*Rogero* in the field triumphant goes,  
The Bulgars now march freely where it list them:  
Nor er one amongst them all that knowes,  
What wight it at did so well assist them:  
This c nge saw pro ur'd in little space,  
Who lat he en s in chase.

85

The young *Augustus* standing on a hill,  
A place aboue the rest much eminent,  
Seeing one man his men to slay and kill,  
And that their losse and flight was euident:  
He wonders at his courage and his skill,  
And thinks that God had sure some Angel sent,  
To plague the Grecians for their old offences,  
And for the Bulgars succours and de ccs.

86

He sees both by his armes and Vnicorne,  
That sure he was a knight of forraine Nation,  
And where as some, more hate wold him haue borrt  
He rather held him in more admiration:  
His heart, whom vertuous thoughts did still adorne,  
And euer was of noble inclination,  
Made him extoll him for his deeds of armes,  
Although his men by him receiu'd such harmes.

87

Eu'n as a babe, whom sometime mou'd with ire,  
The mother beats with rod; or with it chafeth,  
Runnes not vnto the sister, nor the fire,  
But to the Mam, and sweetly her imbraceth:  
So now though *Leons* men are made retire,  
And though *Rogero* killeth them and chafeth,  
Yet his great vlew maketh *Leon* loue him,  
Much more then hate him, for the harm he doth him

88

But if that *Leon* loue him and admire,  
Me thinks he hath but forrie recompence,  
For why *Rogeros* hope and sole desire,  
Is to do *Leon* damage and offence:  
He lookes for him, and oft he doth enquire,  
Which way he was, but still the diligence,  
And long experience of the warie Greeke,  
Do caule *Rogero* him in vaine did seeke.

89

Don *Leon* saw his souldiers flie so fast,  
He sounds retreit, and to his father sent  
A messenger forthwith, in all post hast,  
And of his message this was chiefe content;  
To let him vnderstand how things had past;  
And wish him flie for teare of being shient:  
Likewise him selfe and his, hast all they may,  
Backe ore the streame themselues then to conuay.

90

et for all his hast, his men were  
e with hast were dr the streames)  
The Bulgars now did conque rs remaine,  
That erst in perill were to loose their Reame:  
The knight of th' Vnicq ne, they all see plaine,  
Cau'd all their good; wherefore with ioy extreame,  
To him they go acknowledging  
That all their glorie did from hi

91

Some kisse his hands, and some do kisse his feete,  
And in most humble manner him salute,  
They thinke for him a praise diuine were meete,  
owre diuine they do to him impute:  
They send their chiefeest Captaines him to meete,  
And all of them to him do make thi ute.  
And vp to heau'n their ioyfull voyces g,  
That he wold be their Captaine, g e, king.

Kk ij

Simile.

This was a true  
noble nature.



92

Rogero vnto them this answer made,  
That he will be their guide as they thinke best,  
But that he will not come into Belgrade,  
Nor staffe, nor scepter touch at no request,  
Vntill that *Leon* that did them inuade,  
He haue once slaine, or tane him at the least:  
For why a thousand miles for this alone,  
He riden had, and other cause had none.

93

This said, forthwith he biddeth them adew,  
And would no longer stay at their desiring,  
But that way *Leon* fled, did him pursew,  
(For flight it was indeed, and not retyring)  
Howbeit *Leon* and his men that knew,  
What in such case for safetie was requiring,      (past  
Brake downe the bridge, when they the streame had  
And so as then they made the passage fast.

94

Rogero failing of his first intent,  
Did seeke some place to passe to tother side,  
Along that streame till all that day was spent,  
And all that night vncessantly doth ride:  
Betime next morne vnto a towne he went,  
To ease his wearied bodie, and beside,  
To make his horse amends for so great wrong,  
In keeping him without a bait so long.

**Morall.**

How truly and vpon how iust cause mine author blameth Princes for their weake keeping promise, and their continuall breaking of leagues ( be they made euer so solemnly ) I thinke our presenttime can witnesse , in which it is hard to say, whether any two Princes in Europe at this day be assured each of others loue : the reason is plaiue,

They weigh not wrong nor right, nor reckon of it,  
Further then it may tend to their owne profit.

*And as the fault is theirs, so sure they have a great punishment for it, which is, that they live in perpetuall feare one of another, and ever one iealous of anothers greatnes: it was a happie time (if ever there was a time) when it was otherwise.*

In dame Beatrice we may note the notable ambitious humor of women, specially in matching their children above their calling, which I touched more at large in the notes of the fift booke neither are the wiser sort of men free from this folly, for if they may match their daughters, so as they may say my Lord my sonne I thinke they haue God almightie by the toe (as the prouerbe saith) whereas many times they haue the diuell by the eare; but those that glorie so to make their sunnes their Lords, I would haue them heare that verse of Martiall to him that called his father his Lord.

Seruum te dicis natum ingenuęque ateris,  
Cum dicis dominum Sosibiane rem.

A slave thou art by birth, of this I gather,  
For evermore thou saist, my Lord my father.

istor-

Perytho swould needs take vpon him by the helpe of Hercules to steale away the daughter of the king of Molossus, but being thus deuoured by Cerberus a great dogge that the said king kept, and Theleus was after rescued by Hercules the fable of Cerberus went to hell together to steale Proserpina, for so was that kings daughter named.

**Allegoric. .**

In the many lets that Rogero hath ear he can get Bradamant, the Allegorie is continu fromt eginning to the end of the whole worke, to shew how hardly a man comes to a true contentment and peaceable life in this world (which is figured in the match with Bradamant) man having still enemies bodily or ghostly to hinder or interrupt the same.

### Allusion.

In Bradamante again, the instant love to Rogero, he alludes to a Lady of the house of Colonna, that married Luigi Gonzaga, and many of his adherents.

95  
*Vngardo*, one of reckning good and state,  
 Held this same towne to *Constantino* deare,  
 And footmen had, and horsemen got of late,  
 Since of these warres he did first tidings heare:  
*Rogero* finding none to watch the gate,  
 More boldly enterd finding passage cleare:  
 The towne it selfe within he likewise found,  
 With meat and drinke, and lodging to aboue

96  
Now where *Rogero* led that same night  
One of Romania, happend there to oſt,  
That preſent was at that ſecedent fight,  
When as *Rogero* holpe the Bulgars hoſt:  
And at that time did him ſo ſore affright,  
That though of his eſcaping he might boſt:  
Yet ſtill he feard him, and ſtill did doubt him,  
And ſtill he thought that Vnicorne about him

97

Wherefore when as he saw that sheeld, he knew  
This was the man that eu'n before so late,  
So many of the Grecian armie slew,  
Straightway he hasted to the castle gate.  
And that he may haue audience, he doth se  
For matter that concerns the Realme and state:  
But when he was admitted, what he told,  
Within the booke ensuing ile unfold.

Here end the notes of the 44. booke.



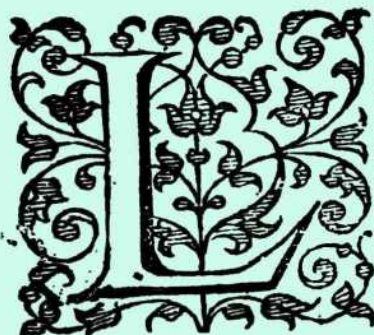




## THE ARGUMENT.

*The noble Leon doth Rogero saue,  
In Theodoras cruell prison pent;  
Soone after, Leon doth Rogero crane,  
To win him Bradamant: he doth assent:  
And fought with her xij. houres a combat brane;  
Of which he after did so sore repent,  
In sorrow great, he thought to end his life,  
To thinke another should possesse his wife.*

*The vnstablenes  
of Fortune.*



**L**ooke how much higher  
Fortune doth erect,  
The clyming wight, on  
her vnstable wheele,  
So much the nigher may  
a man expect,  
To see his head, where  
late he saw his heele:  
*Polycrates* hath prou'd it  
in effect,

And *Dionysius* that too true did feele:  
Who long were luld on high in Fortunes lap,  
And fell downe sodainely to great mishap.

*Looke in the  
Allusions.*

On tother side the more a man is pressed,  
And utterly ou'rthrowne by Fortunes lowre,  
The sooner com state to be redressed.  
When wheele shal bring the happy houre:  
Some from the blocke haue grown to be so blessed,  
Whole realmes haue bene subiected to their powre,  
As *Marius* and *Pentidius* lample is,  
In former g and *Lews* of France in this.

*Looke in the  
florie.*

That *Lews* ance (the storie well is knowne)  
That to *Alfonso*s sonne, did giue his daughter,  
Who was at Saint *Albinos* ouerthrowne,  
And eu'n with much adoe escaped slaughter;  
A like misfortune by like danger grow  
*Coruino* escaped but a little after:  
And hauing past that moment by good chance;  
One Hun arie, the tother France.

Tis manifest in stories new and old,  
That good and ill, each other do succeed,

And worldly blisse hath but a slender hold,  
Wherefore a man of wisedome, will take heed;  
And on his fortune neuer be too hold,  
Although his state and riches farre exceed:  
Nor yet in fortune ill, dispaire or doubt,  
For euermore her wheele doth turne about.

*Rogero*, as did repeat,  
Now auing oth repulst the sonne and fire,  
Grew to such pride therewith, and such conceat,  
(Ambition euermore aspiring hire,  
He thinkes by fortune and his force so gr  
To kill Don *Leon*, which was his chiefe desire,  
And for that purpose aid he asketh none,  
But thinketh sure, to do the feat alone.

But she that cannot suffer nor abide,  
That any long should of her be our boist,  
Now in the midst of all his prai d pride,  
When in her fauour he aff ed nost,  
Did cause him of this knight to be discride;  
Who went vnto *Vnga* do straight in post,  
And told him how that man that put to flight  
The Greekish host, would lie in towne that night.

He said, twas happend eu'n as one could wish,  
If so they mard not all by ill contriuing,  
That he was taken now as is a fish,  
That to the net approcheth  
Or rather layes it selfe into the dish,  
And makes resist one, nor  
Much did th at these reioyce,  
And shewd me by gesture and by voyce.

And







22  
Her mother eke, though wroth and malcontent,  
Yet both for nature, and for honours sake,  
Good store of costly clothes incontinent,  
Both gownes and kirtles she for her doth make;  
Thus *Bradamant* with both her parents went,  
Vnto the Court, where she small ioy did take,  
She scarce esteemed it a Court to be,  
When that her louer there she could not see.

23  
As one that saw in Aprill or in May,  
A pleasant garden, full of fragrant flowres,  
Then when fresh earth new clad in garments gay,  
Deckes eu'ry wood and groue, with pleasant bowres  
And comes againe on some Decembers day,  
And sees it mard, with winters stormes and showres,  
So did this Court to *Bradamant* appeare,  
When as she saw *Rogero* was not heare.

24  
She dares not aske of any man for feare,  
Least such a question might her loue accuse,  
Howbeit secretly she lendeth eare,  
To others talke, as in such case men vse:  
Each man saith gon he is, but none knowes wheare,  
For to the Court, of him there came no newes,  
And he himselfe, when as he thence departed,  
His purpose vnto no man there imparted.

25  
Oh in what feare and rage these newes do set her,  
To heare *Rogero* was in manner fled,  
She thinks that sure, because he could not get her,  
And that her father nay, to him had sed,  
That now he sought of purpose to forget her,  
And shunne her sight, that all his sorrow bred;  
She thinks that he from thence himselfe withdrawes,  
For this alone, and for none other cause.

26  
more then all, this doubt her heart assayles,  
Th was gone to seeke some forren loue,  
th that of his purpose here he fayles,  
To speed some otherwhere he straight would proue  
As from a boord men driue out nayles with nayles.  
So with new loue he woud her loue remoue;  
But straight another thought that thought gainesair  
She thinketh her *Rogero* full of faith.

27  
And there-vpon he erepr nds,  
That she her loue ould abuse,  
Thus in her minde, one and him defends,  
And then another, doth him accuse,  
And she her thought to eiter fancie lends,  
And in great doubt she is, which part to chuse;  
But whe she had her selfe bethought,  
She lea vnto best pleasing thought.

Then chiefe, when in her mind she doth  
*Rogeros* promise, which he bad her trut  
She thinks to him the iniurie is great,  
That caus y she now should him mistrust,  
And eu'n a e were present, she doth beat  
Her till doth harbor thoughts vniust,  
My sinn'd (she saith) which now I curse,  
But that used it is cause of worse.

29  
Loue was the cause (quoth she) that in my hart,  
Your face and grace ingraued hath so seemely,  
And therewith hath set forth each vertuous part,  
Beleeving thee so sweetly and so trimly,  
That sure no dame, that knowes well what thou a  
Can chuse but fall in loue with thee extreemly,  
And therewithall, with all her powre indeu  
To win thy loue, and make thee hers fo

30  
Oh if that loue had thy thoughts well  
As it hath grau'd thy in my min  
In how great ioy, and ife should I the  
For well I know, that be true and ki  
Then iealousie, the plague of hell,  
(To which alas I am much inclinde)  
Should quickly cea and I should free me  
Nor would I in heart, once thinke

31  
But as a miser, hoording vp his treasure, *Simi*  
Doth doubt in abience still, that theeues be there,  
So I when thou that art mine onely sure,  
Art absent far from me (I know not w  
I straight suspect, and straight I doubt fal  
And straight my hope grows lesse, & mo feare  
Which though I thinke both bootlesse, and  
Yet still I doubt, and still I do mistrust.

32  
But yet no sooner shall the pelasing light,  
Of thy sweet count'nance come vnto mine eyes,  
O thou my ioy, o thou my liues delight,  
(Though where thou art I cannot now deuise)  
But that true hope, false feare shall put to flight,  
And knowledge plaine, all doubts shall satisfie,  
Come then my deare, and hasten thy returning,  
Ere hope & feare shal wait me quite with mourning

33  
As when ht hath spred her mantie blacke, *Simile.*  
Fain arted ke, are wont to be affrayd,  
again the day-light doth come backe.  
seeme of better cheare, and well appayd:  
do faint, when as my deare I lacke,  
But in his presence I am vndismayd:  
Come then my deare *Rogero*, come vnto me,  
Before that hope and doubt do quite vndo me.

34  
As in the night, each little fierie sparke, *Simile.*  
May plainly be discerned wit ur eyne,  
But when the day doth come en shall marke,  
That all are damp and d long shine,  
So kindels feare, in minde with doubt made darke,  
Vntill my Sunne in my orizon shine.  
Turne then my dear and with thy light illame me  
And driue away th care that doth consume me.

35  
As when the Sun decl es to South most low, *Simile*  
The land doth leel he beautie that she had,  
And winter stormes breed raine, and ife, and snow.  
The pleasant birds all silent sit and sad:  
So when as thou from me  
O shining Sunne, whose beame glad  
A thousand fear vniust a  
Make winte. to my at paine.

Shine



36  
Shine then on me, O my cleare Sun, and bring  
Thy beames more nye, this snow and ice to thaw,  
Refresh these branches witherd in their spring,  
And do no more thy selfe so farre withdraw:  
As *Philomena* dolefully doth sing,  
When as her young ones all destroyd she saw,  
Or as the Turtle early mourns and late,  
She hath lost her deare beloued mate.

37  
*Bradamant* still . . . nd plaines,  
 . . . *ogeeo* had he . . . oue reiected,  
 . . . alt teares her l . . . ely cheeks distaines,  
 . . . tly, for feare to . . . detected:  
 . . . she knowne that . . . was bound in chaines,  
 . . . eu'rie houre a cru . . . ath expected,  
 . . . grieve of . . . de thin . . . you, would she . . . hen  
 . . . was so grie . . . alreadie . . . his sake! (take,

38  
But loe, th . . . eau'nly goodnes so ordai  
That *Theodoras* rage, and cruell spight,  
Against her . . . isner, whom she keeps in chaines,  
And me . . . to kil with torture all she might,  
 . . . g him aliue for greater paines,  
Came . . . o the care of *Cæsars* sonne one night,  
An . . . t into his heart to saue and cherish,  
 . . . not to suffer so great vallew perish.

39  
The noble *Leon* that *Rogero* loues,  
(Not knowing tho that this *Rogero* was)  
Whom his rare vertue, and great vallew moues,  
Which he did thinke, all humane farre to passe,  
Deuising sundry wayes, this one he proues,  
And by the same, he brought the feate to passe,  
So that his cruell Ant could not espy him,  
Nor once complaine that she was wronged by him.

40  
He speaketh in . . . secrett sort he can,  
Vnto the bloody wretch that kept t  
And prayth him shew him the co . . . emned an,  
For why he must examaine him he sayes:  
 . . . t a valiant man that was his man,  
He takes with him fit for all bold assayes,  
The cruell layler, that no fraud suspected,  
In all points did as *Leon* him directed.

41  
He leadshim secretly vnto the den,  
Where good *Rogero* was in prison pent,  
Nor tooke he wit . . . any of his men,  
But as their gu . . . , the . . . most of them went:  
Who when they sa . . . l . . . ime best serued, then  
 . . . longer to defer th'occ . . . sion ment,  
But . . . wares they at aduan . . . ge catch him,  
 . . . nd with a sodaine stab they . . . dispatch him.

42  
Then open they the trap doore . . . of hand,  
And downe they let the ladder that was by,  
And *Leon* with a lanterne in his hand,  
Of light conceald, went where the knight did ly,  
Fast bo . . . with bitter band.  
Not in the wate . . . but t . . . areto so ny,  
The ver . . . am . . . such, iat one might guesse,  
That sole . . . r lesse.

43  
With great compassion *Leon* him imbraced,  
And sayd, sir knight, the vertue you haue showne,  
With sured knots, my loue hath knit and laced  
To you, since first the same to me was knowne,  
So as my heart and thoughts are wholly placed,  
To seeke your safetie, rather then mine owne,  
Vnting, your welfare and your loue to win,  
To leese my fires good will, and all my kin.

44  
To tell you true, the Emp'rours sonne I am,  
*Leon* by name, as yet to you a stranger,  
To set you free, of purpose now I came,  
And put my person, and my state in danger  
That both my father greatly me may blame,  
And looke vpon me euermore with anger;  
The losse at Belgrade which you wrought him late,  
Makes him to beare to you so sharpe an hate.

45  
These sugred words, and many more beside,  
Which were for me too tedious to repeat,  
He spake, and then his bands he all vntyde,  
And secretly he causd him moue his seat:  
*Rogero* in this wise to him replyde,  
Your curtesie is such, your gift so great,  
To giue me life, that you shall ay command it,  
When euer it shall please you demand it.

46  
Thus *Leon* in this secret sort vnknowne,  
*Rogero* from the prison doth conuay,  
And sent him to a castle of his owne,  
Whereas he might secure in silence stay,  
Vntill this tumult all were ouerblowne,  
And till againe for him regaine he may,  
His armes and gallant horse, and famous blade,  
Kept by *Vngardo*, Lord of Nouengrade.

47  
The keeper slaine, the next ensuing morne,  
The prison gates, from off the hinges heat  
The chaines, and manicles, in peeces torne  
Each man might see, but none by whom perceaued:  
All thought that *Leon* had him hatred borne,  
Wherefore of him, they no mistrust conceaued,  
he cause he had of hate, each man doth know,  
name his late receaued ouerthrow.

48  
At . . . reat curtel . . . hat *Leon* ed,  
*R*ge. . . nders m . . . and t . . . it strange,  
And sore he was in n . . . ough confused,  
And sodainly he feel . . . a wondrous change,  
His heart relented . . . hate refused,  
And turnde it all to loue, by sweet exchange,  
Wh . . . earst malicious, cruell was, . . . hatefull,  
 . . . rned now to kinde, and milde, . . . retull.

49  
So deepe . . . is head and heart it sinks,  
Th . . . poss . . . ed all his soule and sence,  
 . . . this . . . die when he wakes or winkes,  
 . . . ay do to him so: . . . recompe  
To spend eu'n all his future dayes (he . . . inkes)  
Sole in his seruice, and in his defenc . . .  
Could not requite, no scarce the twent  
Of so great curtesie, and so great desert



50

In this meane while, the newes was come from France,  
Which *Charles* had notifide to many a nation,  
Of her that would be woo'd by (word and lance,  
In single fight (so said the proclamation: )  
*Don Leon* was quite out of countenance,  
To heare of this her strange determination,  
And as a man that well his owne strength knowes,  
Himselfe too weake for her he doth suppose.

51

And long debating how he might supply,  
His want of force and courage, by his wit,  
In fine he purposed with himselfe to try,  
This new made fréd, whose name he knows not yet,  
Although he well could wnesse with his eye,  
That for no braue exploit he was vnfit,  
He hopeth by his manhood and his aid,  
To conquer and to haue that hardie maid.

52

But two things he must do before he goes,  
One is the minde of this same vnkowne knight,  
Vnto this hardie enterprise dispose,  
The tother is, to bring him to the fight  
So secretly, as none might it disclose,  
And all that while to keepe himselfe from fight;  
First then, in earnest tort he doth intreat  
*Rogero* take on him this hardie feat.

53

Much might the Greeke preuaile by eloquence,  
The which he vld to leade him thereunto,  
But more preuayld the bond of recompence,  
So firme as no time euer could vndo,  
That though the motion bred him great offence,  
And seemd a thing vnpossible to do,  
With gladder looke then heart he doth reply,  
Deare sir, I nothing may to you deny.

54

hough he no sooner had this word pronounced,  
But t he felt such griete did gripe his hart,  
s damnation were to him denounced,  
Such pangs he had, such torture and such smart:  
But yet his promise giu'n he not renounced,  
Nor from the same once purposed to depart,  
For first a thousand deaths he ment to chule,  
Then one request of *Leons* to refuse.

55

Dye sure he shall (he thi ks) for it caue  
His loue, he kn ie can yde ali  
For either sorrow im reauce,  
Or if that nature shall with rrow striue,  
Of his owne hands he wi his path receaue,  
And so his foule from hated harbor driue,  
Each other thi gon earth, to him seems po  
But missing to liue he thinks impossible.

56

Then die he must, onely he doubts wh  
Of death, were for his state and fanci  
Once this conceit did come into his  
To lay fight his naked open brest:  
Might him slay, he deemeth in his minde,  
That death, in death might make him blest,  
But sees what follow would of this;  
Th: *Leon*, should his purpose misse.

57

And then himselfe of promise eke should sayle,  
Which was not to dissemble, but indeuer  
That *Leon* in his wooing might preuayle,  
And make dame *Bradament* his owne for euer:  
Thus though that diuers thoughts his minde assayle  
Yet wholly in that thought he doth perseuer,  
That moueth him most plaine to d ale and trow.  
And to all other thoughts he bids adew.

58

This while *Don Leon* fathers leaue,  
With such retinue as required  
Of knights and squyres his natiue soyle  
And went to see the dar he so desired:  
*Rogero* did of him befo receaue,  
His armes and horse, a in strange clothes at red,  
Day after day they heir iorney frame,  
That t the last to aris walls th y came.

59

*Don Leon* to Citie would not go,  
But neare vnto the same he pitcht a tent,  
And by Ambassage made the king know,  
How he was come, and vnto what inte  
King *Charles* was glad, and did his gladn  
With gifts, and vnto him in person went:  
*Don Leon* tels what did his comming breed,  
And prayes he may dispatched be with speed.

60

And that King *Charles* that noble maid would caufe,  
To come the day ensuing to the feeld,  
That would (against all common wedlocks lawes)  
Be wood and wonne, with onely sword and sheeld:  
King *Charles* her cals, and she that askt no pause,  
Vnto the mo willingly did yeeld,  
And so accordingly t ext day she came,  
Vnto the lists prepared for the same.

61

That day th went before the day of  
*Roger* with as great content,  
Asc tha ma condemned spend the night,  
which before his execution went,  
chuld to fight all clad in armour bright  
Because as then to be vnkowne he ment,  
And (for to hurt her, was not his pretence)  
Saue sword, he vld no weapon of offence.

62

Lance he would none, not that he feard the lance  
Which first *Argalia*, then *Astolfo* bare,  
Which forced men beside eat to dance,  
And vnto many men pro t care,  
For neither he that vld i in France  
Nor any of those othe was aware,  
How all those feats re by incantment  
Saue that same kin that gaue it to his sonne.

63

Likewise *Astolfo* an he Dordon dame,  
That with that sp re full many did vnhorse,  
Thought not that i from Nigromancy came,  
But from their sleight, and their owne proper force,  
They thought with any spe re to  
But now *Rogero* did both spea  
Refuse, because if ie d vld  
He though *Brade* owne.  
Need.

Simile.

ame Lancia

time king ala-  
frons, father of  
Anelica



64  
Needs must the damsell call to minde the steed,  
For why she kept him long at Clarimount,  
And vsed him with her owne hands to feed,  
And made of him a speciall deare account:  
Wherefore *Rogero* that tooke speciall heed,  
To go vnknowne refusd on horse to mount,  
Or any other thing by which he may,  
is dearest loue himselfe bewray.

65  
further needs another would take,  
new against is Ballifard,  
nor armor no defence could make,  
hof dge so keene, w ofe mettall was so hard,  
Of new sword likew he (for her sake)  
tes the edge, so grea as his regard,  
us himself both we ning and disguising,  
e into the field at *Ph* rising.

66  
And that one for *Leon* might hi  
Vntill the controuerfie were discided,  
He wears v his backe Don *Leons* cote,  
The gol agle with the head deuided,  
aking both was like, from foot, to throte)  
Thus hen all things were readily prouided,  
Th ne presents him in the open greene,  
tother kept him close, and was not scene.

67  
But *Bradament* now farre in other rate,  
Herselfe in readines for fight doth set,  
And if the knight do his swords edge rebate,  
As fast the damsell her swords edge doth whet:  
She wisheth with a heart most full of hate,  
Her sword a passage to quic uld get,  
Yea comfort her it would d o her good,  
If she with eu'rie blow coul draw the blood.

68  
Eu'n as a Barb orse that runnes a race  
And for the igne thereof hath long e  
Against his will, doth stay his runn g pace,  
With swelling nostrils and with eares erecte  
the noble damsell in like case,  
That o *Rogeros* presence naught suspected,  
Did swell with wrath, and burnes like flaming fier,  
Vnto the combat, such was her desier.

69  
And as oft times vpon some fearfull clap  
Of thunder, straight a hurlewinde doth arise,  
And lifts the wau loft, from *Thetys* lap,  
Eu'n in a mo vp v o the skyes,  
The Herdm n doubt of some great mishap,  
out some tree, or caue, lose hidden lyes,  
So amant with rage o nger driuen,  
slayl *Rogero* when the fig was giuen.

70  
But neuer did a stiffe and aged ok,  
Against the Northerne blast more firmly stand,  
Nor better doth a rocke, indure the stroke,  
Of sur ing waues, still wallowing to the land,  
Then rded in the cloke  
Of *Hecto*, arm orces did withstand,  
hough the de with spite and hate,  
pon his a d pate,

71  
Sometimes she giues a blow, sometime a thrust,  
According as her vantage most she spide,  
And still she watcht, if she could hit him iust  
Betweene the plates, or where the same were tide;  
Twas well the cote was such as one might trust,  
For she doth search it still on eu'rie side,  
And inwardly she fretteth in her minde,  
That nought fell out of that she had assignd.

72  
So shall you see some men besiege a towne, *Simile.*  
Wel walld, and strongly flankt with rampiers mayne,  
Assault it oft, and striue to batter downe  
Some towres or gates, with perill great and payne,  
And wast their time, and spending many a crowne,  
To loose their men about the same in vayne,  
No more the damfels force did now preuayle,  
To pierce a plate, or to vnriuet nayle.

73  
Sometime forth of his helmet and his sheeld,  
She made the sparks of fire fly out in sight,  
Still smiting him with blowes not soft, nor seeld,  
Sometime at reardemaine, and oft downe right,  
As thicke as haylstones that vpon the feeld,  
Or on the tyled houses do alight:  
But still *Rogero* close lyes to his ward,  
And not to hurt her, still he hath regard.

74  
Oft standing still, now turning, then retiring,  
He makes his foote accompanie his fist,  
With sword, with shield, with slip (cause so requiring)  
He wards the blowes, or shunnes them as him list  
And euer not to damage her desiring,  
When he might hit, of purpose still he mist,  
Yet in such wise, that she her selfe was ware,  
And all the rest, that he the same forbare.

75  
But *Bradament* when she her selfe bethought,  
What was containd in th' Emperors Edict,  
That whoso eu'r with her a whole day fought,  
ould haue her at the end of such conflict,  
ith all her force endeuord still and fought,  
o gall her aduersarie and afflict;  
nd now the more she troubled was in minde,  
see the Sun to West so low decline.

76  
er hope esse and lesser grew,  
re incr ill more and more,  
Her louing aduerla  
That she had fought ithall the day before:  
As laborers whol or' by taske was dew, *Simile.*  
That loyterd haue now are sad therefore,  
Wh night drawes on bestur thei lasie bones,  
il their strength, and light fayl oth at once.

77  
Alas goo amant, if thou didst know,  
T hom thou wishest so much ill,  
ghath bene thy frendly foe,  
eth thee (perhaps against his  
Thou wouldest first haue kild thy selfe trow,  
Then of his blood one little drop to  
Thou that distst now so curse him an him  
Wouldst neither of them do, if thou di him



78

But *Charles* and all his Lords, with full perswasion  
That this so valiant champion, *Leon* was,  
To praise him highly now they take occasion;  
And sith his strength did hers so greatly passe,  
They thinke for her, there now was no euasion,  
The matter brought to such a narrow passe.  
Each man esteems this match for her most fit,  
Each man allowes, each man commendeth it.

79

Now gan Don *Phebus* dip his golden rayes,  
(To swage their burning) in the Westerne seas,  
When *Charls* himselfe comes to them both & prays  
The damsell now her furie to appease,  
And giueth sentence, that without delayes,  
Don *Leon* may her marrie when he please:  
*Rogero* doth himselfe no whit disclose,  
But armed full backe to the tent he goes.

80

Don *Leon*, brotherly doth him imbrace,  
And then he holpe him to vntie his beauer,  
And with great kindnes kissed all his face,  
And said that he was bound to him for euer,  
And that no time, such merit could deface,  
Which to reward he would for aye indeuer,  
Affirming frankly of his owne meere motion,  
That all he had, should be athis deuotion.

81

I neuer can such curtesie requite,  
Scant in this life (he saith) or in the next,  
No though I should surrender all my right  
Vnto my crowne, and all thereto annex.  
*Rogero*, that in speech tooke small delight,  
And was with inward passion so perplex,  
Restord to him his armes, that he had worne,  
And tooke againe his sheeld of th'Vnicorne.

82

pretending (as he truly might pretend)  
He *arie* was, and would himselfe repose,  
therefore to his tent vnto that end,  
All priuat vnaccompanyd he goes;  
At midnight horse to take he doth intend,  
At midnight priuily from bed he role,  
And armed, and mounted thence away departed,  
But why nor whither, he to none imparted.

83

And thus away he secretly doth  
And giues *Frontino* leaue to use the  
Now neare a wo the riuer side,  
(He neuer looking to coast it lay)  
He faine would die, and me death he cride,  
He thought death onely c is paine allay,  
He onely wissh'd death, to end his grieve,  
That while liues, is sure past all reliefe.

84

Ah wretch (said he) of whom can I com  
For sodain reauing me of all my bliff,  
Shall I so great an iniurie sustaine  
Of wh else shall I be aueng'd for this  
I did the guilt, and now I feeble the paine,  
Nor can but iust the torment is,  
For ment doth properly belong,  
To it is the author of the wrong.

Sentence.

85

But had I done my selfe the wrong alone,  
I might perhap forgiue my selfe the same,  
Though surely cause, nor reason there is none,  
To pardon such a fact, so worthie blame:  
But now I haue to her bene cause of mone,  
To suffer that, it were perpetuall shame;  
So though I should no iust reuengement take,  
For mine owne cause, yet must I for her

86

This wrong reuene will, I must,  
By onely death, it t offence was  
To dye, I loone shall ide the way I tr  
The care thereof, my inde no whit  
Oh that I had long si bene layd in dust,  
Ere that I iniured m care so much,  
I would I had bene t to death before,  
When I was pris vnto *Theod re*.

87

If I had then e martyr and tormented  
With all the plagues her mallice could deuise,  
At least my deare, my death would aue lamented,  
With teares, from out her christall ing eyes:  
Now when she knows, that I haue thus  
To *Leon*, to betray her in this wise,  
My part of her, vnto a stranger giuing  
She will haue cause to hate me dead and liui

88

Now while the knight did thus lament and plaine,  
The Easter parts of heau'n, with light were cleared,  
And *Phebus* from his golden house againe,  
Lift vp his head, wherewith all creatures cheared,  
Betake them to their ordinarie paine:  
And then vn *ogero* it ppeared,  
That he was in a wo, a most fit place,  
For one of such a minde, in such a case.

He lights, and off he takes *Frontino* le,  
And m libertie, and thus he yes,  
My allant ast so good, so seruiceable,  
haue found thee still at all assayes,  
heare I set thee free, and were I able,  
As I am willing, to set forth thy prayse,  
Thou doubtlesse shouldst not need that horse enuie, *Pegasus, eorne*  
That was tane vp from earth vnto the skye. *the Table.*

90

Nor should *Arions* prayles make thee sory,  
Nor *Cillarus* that *Castor* did bestryde,  
Nor any prais'd in Greeke, o tin story,  
For why (thy shape and readin cside)  
Of all these famous steed o ne n glorie,  
As thou maist do, it ca no e denide,  
Of them none passet ee in co mmentati  
Nor iustly challen an such reputation.

91

Thou hast bene cherish'd and loued deere,  
By such a Nymph so faire and so diuine,  
As all the world can hardly show her peere,  
She hath thee fed, with that fayre hand and fine,  
I meane my loue, but ah why liue I he  
Sith now I may no longer c une?  
No longer mine she is ah  
Why end not as by sword!



92  
Now if *Rogero* thus himselfe tormented,  
And could the birds and beasts, to mone his plaint,  
For none but birds and beasts, the place frequented,  
Whom he with his great sorrow might acquaint;  
No doubt the damsell was as ill contented,  
And made a greater, or as great complaint,  
Sith for her selfe she nothing hath to say,  
She to *Leon* longer should say nay.

3  
all meanes possible sh  
she will her  
king *Charles*  
of his promise  
he worst shall hap,  
with her hands of life  
sent death she rathe  
her belou' *Rogero* to

nes to trye,  
eroicaue,  
all his Lords to lye,  
deceau:  
meanes to dye,  
er selfe bereau,  
nent to chuse,

*Brad. manes  
complains.*

94  
How cometh it to passe (said she) care,  
That at this time thou art so farre from hence?  
How canst thou know which all the world did heare,  
So strange be concealed from thy sense?  
If thou hadst heard it, sure thou wouldst appeare;  
For that my drift, that was my sole pretence,  
Ah, ill fortune euermore accurst,  
can I deeme, but eu'n the very worst.

95  
Why then *Rogero* mine, can you alone,  
Not know that all the world doth know beside,  
For had you known it straight you wouldst haue flown  
Of purpose hither combat to haue tride;  
Thou sure art tane, or slaine, for third is none:  
It may be, *Leon* that thou raisest,  
Hath like a traytor, set for thee a trap,  
And thou art tane therein by some mishap.

96  
I gat this griefe of *Charles* to marry none,  
But one that were in fight for me to  
Assured thou shouldst be that one alone,  
For no mans force but thine I did regard;  
I thought none else could vanquish me alone,  
But loe how God doth this my pride reward,  
That he that neuer erst in all his life  
Did manly deed, hath wonne me for his wife.

97  
I wonne and vanquished, because  
He matched still my force at all assayes,  
But *Charles* doth iudge rightly of the cause,  
And therefore must seek some new delayes;  
Ah if I now tinct in casting clause,  
I shall be cold vnconquered all my dayes,  
By which I know vnconquered is dome wonderd,  
Nor am I first that vnder it, but an hundred.

98  
Sufficeth me that in the being true  
Vnto my loue, I others all excell,  
And passe the patterns either old or new,  
Or neare or far, eu'n wherefou'r they dwell:  
The will that instantie adew,  
That may encrease to my doing well,  
So I and *Leon* not match together,  
Let me be wau' by either.

99  
This *Bradamant* vnto her selfe doth say,  
And oft she breaks her speech with sighs and tears,  
And that night that enlured that lucklesse day,  
To sleepe or close her eye lids she forbears,  
But when *Apollo*s beames had driuen away  
*Nocturnus* shades, then lo supernall spheares,  
By which all humane actions are directed,  
Brought helpe to her, when least it was expected.

*Nocturnus said  
to be the god  
of the night.*

100  
For why *Marfisa*, that braue minded dame,  
The next day came and sowed new seeds of strife,  
Alledging that it was great wrong and shame,  
A forrener should haue her brothers wife;  
And swears her selfe could not endure the same,  
And that she would by combat gage her life,  
According as the law of armes allows,  
To proue *Rogero* was her lawfull spouse.

101  
And if dame *Bradamant* would it deny,  
She saith, she will it to her face auer,  
Ashauing witness bene with care, and eye,  
That good *Rogero* was assur'd to her  
With words, as folkes in mariages apply;  
And adding she would vnto law refer,  
If to the damsell to her noble brother  
Affianced, might iustly take another.

102  
Now whether this she spake were false or trew,  
I know not, but she spake it with intent,  
To stop the mariage likely to ensue  
With *Leon*, which she studi'd to preuent:  
Some thought perhaps that *Bradamant* it knew,  
And that twas done in part by her consent,  
As hauing no more safe nor honest way,  
Vnto her left, to say Don *Leon* nay.

103  
In euill part these newes the Emp'rour tooke,  
And called for the damsell by and by,  
And told her what *Marfisa* vnderooke,  
(And loe by hap, Duke *Ammon* then stood by)  
She fixed on the ground her silent looke,  
And to the question, said nor no nor I,  
That by her gesture, eu'rie one did take,  
That that was true, that earst *Marfisa* spake.

104  
This made *Orlando* and *Renaldo* glad,  
That this might procure a lawfull meane,  
To make the match by forepromist had,  
And hinder this new match, and dash it cleane:  
For sith Duke *Ammon* those first banes forbad,  
And vnto *Leons* did wholly leane,  
To see pretence of law, they both had rather,  
Then take by force, the damsell from her father.

105  
For if pretence may stand for  
*Leons* match it then would breake,  
Cause of warre, or shedding blood:  
In great wrath, thus wise speakes;  
This is a tale indeed of *Robinhood*,  
Which to beleue, might show more but weak,  
But thinke not that I will be so besot  
Though this were true, that you haue inly plotted.



106

For presuppose, which yet I not confesse,  
My daughter was by folly so allured,  
And that they are, which none of wit could guesse,  
Each vnto other, man and wife assured:  
I pray you yet, the time more plaine expresse,  
When this was done, how long it hath indured,  
This (sure I am) tis but a tale deuised,  
Except it were before he was baptised.

107

And if twere done before his Christen state,  
To stand vnto the same I am not tyde,  
Wherefore this caueat is put in too late,  
Her owne desire she hath not had denyde:  
Now tis not fit, a Prince of such estate,  
As for her sake, aduenterd to haue dyde,  
Should by our Emp'rours promise be deluded,  
And by such craft, be from his right excluded.

108

You should haue spoken then of this contract,  
Before our king had sent his proclamation,  
I meane not thus to haue my credit crackt,  
For more then so, I weigh my reputation:  
Thus pleaded he against that precontract,  
The which to breake was his determination,  
To either part his care the Emperor lends,  
Yet partially, to neither side he bends.

109

Looke what a murmure winds do make in woods,  
When Zephyrus mild blasts among them are,  
Or when one hears from far the saltish floods,  
When Eolus and Neptune are at square:  
So did the common people in their moods,  
Talke of thele matters, and the same compare,  
And as the manner is (for nine dayes space)  
This was the newes and talke in eu'rie place.

110

is man Rogero, Leon that defends,  
ing to the fancies of the men,  
yet it seemd Rogero had most friends,  
Scarfe had the stranger one, for tothers ten,

*Simile. Ouid.  
Qualis succin-  
ctis ubi trux in-  
sibilas Eurus.  
Murmura pne-  
u siut, vel qua-  
lia fluctus  
Aquores faciunt  
si quis procul au-  
diat illos.  
A wonder  
nine daye*

Morall.

This booke began with an excellent Morall, of the variablenesse and varietie of Fortune, which as it is plainly set downe and notably proued by examples, so if a man wil rightly apply it to his owne state, I know not whether any thing in this whole worke hath bene, yea or can be said to better purpose, not onely for humanitie, but in some sort for diuinitie. For in matters of the world who knoweth not, that the wisest counsell a man can giue, and the wisest course a man can kee is this, *Ut nec oppressus sis aduersus rebus neque secundis*, neither to be abasht with aduersitie, nor puffed vp with prosperitie: and in diuinitie the more diuines haue writ(en) the two onely rocks at which our vessells make shipwracke, the Si- dis that drown so many thousand Christians in this their passage, are these two extreames, of presumption and dispaire: betweene which two, he that can keepe his course euen is vnpossible he should miscarrie, but by wond. and euen most wilfull negligence.

In the great curtesie vsed by Leon toward Rogero, and afterward by Rogero toward Leon, as is shewed both in this booke and the next, we may note first the wonderful effects of vertue, that breeds love, not in strangers onely, but euen in enemies: secondly we may see that a man of a reasonable nature, thinks himself more bound to requite a bene then to reuenge an iniurie. For to fayle in reuenge often proceedeth of vertue, but to be vnthankfull is a most hateful thing euen in the greatest, and can neuer prouest, but from a most vile nature.

In Charles may be noted the iust and moderate dealing of a wise and discreet Prince, who when the controuersie was as hard to discover where the right was, in the hearing of the referred it to the determining of the free Court of Parliament, his owne wit, and that he meant to haue it decided openly and indifferently, and yet he did wisely remoue from himselfe, the enuie and grudge that might grow to him by giuing a definit sent in a cause so ambiguous, which a wise Prince will eschue as much as he can, when the matter shall concern great personages.

But as I said, the king to no side bends,  
And hauing duly weighd the matter then,  
He points the mariage day to be deferred,  
The case vnto his Parliament referred.

111

Next day Marfisa made another offer,  
Sith that none could, during her brothers life  
Wed Bradamant, and be assured of her,  
Her brother should (for ending of the strife  
To Leon hand combat proffer,  
So she might be the last ruiuers wife;  
And he that tother could not battell kill,  
Enioy her might alone his owne will.

112

Charles vnto Leon doth impart these newes,  
As he before the other did impart,  
That offer Leon would not refuse,  
But sith he thought it would, with all his hart  
He minds to gaine the matter so to vse,  
The knight of th'Vnicorne should play his part,  
He little knew that in great care and anguish,  
The noble knight did now consume an anguish.

113

But missing him, he quickly did repent,  
That he accepted had that stout defiance,  
And therefore straight to seeke the knight he  
In whose tryde force, he put his whole affiance;  
Him to Rogero to oppose he ment,  
And all his friends and all his strong alliance:  
Wherefore to shun both danger great and scorne,  
He sent to seeke the knight of th'Vnicorne.

114

To all the Cities, and towne he sends,  
And all the villages are there about,  
And mounting on his horse himselfe intends  
To go in person and to seeke him  
But neither he nor all Regeros fren  
In France, haue euer light on him I doubt,  
Hath not Meli a holpe him at his need,  
In the booke ensuing, you may reed.

Polocrates,



Polycrates, was king of Samos, a man so exceeding fortunate, that he took no exploit in hand were it neuer so difficult, but he brought it to the end he desired, so as being willing (as it seemed) to moderate this great enuie of his fortune, with a voluntarie mishap, he threw one day into the sea a iewel of exceeding great value, with purpose to leese it, and thereby to frame to himselfe a cause of sorrow: but his good fortune would not suffer it; for a Fisherman, not long after bringing him a faire fish for a present, this iewel was found in the bellie of that fish, and so most strangely recovered. Yet behold, this fortunate Polycrates going with an armie against Darius, was taken prisoner by one Orontes one of Darius Captains, and after hanged vpon the top of a high mountaine: doubtlesse a notable example for such as make fortune their Godde (if any such there be) who haue indeed, no reason to thinke they are aduanced by fortune, but even the guilt of their owne base and vicious minds, worthy of no part of Polycrates aduancement, but even his last.

Dionysius a tyrant of Sicilie (and sonne of that tyrant that spoiled the Churches, and tooke away a cloke of gold from Iupiter, saying, a cloth clo as lighter for summer, and warmer for winter: and tooke away Aesculapius golden beard, saying, it will sawcie part so him to haue a long beard, and his father Apollo to haue none) This Dionysius (that we maye know well the children of them prosper, that scorne the false gods and beleene not in the true) continued his fathers crueltie in Syracuse, and was by them inforced to flye the Realme; so as being a runnegate hauing no meanes to liue, he went to Corinth, and led there a priuate and meane life: as in the life of Tymoleon in Plutarke is set downe at length, and is verie well worth reading, for the many prettie sayings and pleasant scoffings that were giuen him, and caused by him, againe, that, of one that in uerison comming into the roome where Dionysius sat (in a blinde tauerne, or alehouse), shooke his goales, (so they used to do, that came to the presence of tyrants, to show they had no weapons about them) tush saith Dionysius this was needlesse at your comming in, but at your going out it would not be amisse, to see you steale nothing with you. et this vertue Dionysius had, (if a tyrant can haue any vertue) that he bare his aduersitie not onely patiently, but euen pleasantly, which is surely praiseworthy, according to that I spake before in the Morall, not to be abashed with euill fortune, which also Dionysius himselfe confessed he had gotten by Philosophy: and sure it is a point of good courage to be able to beare aduersitie, according to that saying:

Fortiter ille facit, qui miser esse potest.

Of Marius I need not speake much, considering how largely his whole life is set downe in the forenamed Plutarkes liues, onely I will adde a word of Valerius Maximus opinion of his fortune. Nothing in the world (saith he) could be more variable then the state of Marius: For if you will place him among the vnfornate, you shall find him most miserable, if among the happie, you shall finde him most fortunate.

Two examples are alledged by mine author of this age. Lewes the 12. of France, and Mathia Coruino of Hungary. Of these two a word: Charles the 8. king of France conceiuing some displeasure against the Duke of Orleans; father to this Lewes, cut off his head, and was in some doubt and mammerring if he should not do as much to his sonne; yet after many hard aduentures, it was his hap at last to be king of France.

Mathia Coruin was kept in close prison by Vladislaus king of Hungarie, because his elder brother had slaine the erle of Cyglia, vncle to him. but the king dying young and without issue, this Mathia was made of a prisoner, a Prince: but of his kind of sodaine change, our Realme hath one example, that passeth not onely these, but all (I thinke) that haue bene heard of, or written: and that is the Queenes most excellent Maiestie that now is, who from the expectation of a most vnderfuerd death, came to the possession of a most renowned kingdome: for what greater extremity could one come to? or what greater felicitie might one come to? She that was sent for from Ashbridge, with commandement to be brought either aliuie or dead, she was committed to the Towre of London; she that was so taken and so straightly examined: she that demanded if the Eudy lances scaffold were taken downe, doubting to play on the same such another Pageant; she that doubted murdering her keeper had bene an ill disposed man; she that sent word to her seruants, at came to know how she did (tanquam ouis) lastly, she that wrote in the window at Woodstocke with a Diamond;

Much suspected by me, } quoth Elizabeth prisoner:  
Nothing proucd can be.

Became of the sodaine a crowned Queene, with greater applause then either Lewes in France, or Coruino in Hungary, and not onely hath raigned, but doth raigne most happily. which her highnesse troubles, my selfe haue the better cause to remember, because the first worke I did after I could write Latin, was to translate that storie out of booke of Martyrs into Latin, as M. Thomas Arundell and Sir E. Hobby tell; who had their parts in the same taske, being then chollers in Eaton as I was, and nmaely that last verse I remember.

Plurimi de me male suspicantur,  
Attamen de me mala non probantur.

Elizabetha  
carcere clauf

And thus much for example of the change of fortunes.

In Bradaman fight against Rogero, we may see how our opinion blinded with a false supposition, is often times most vehemently against that it would be loth to ouerthrow, if rightly informed.

The cruell minde of the Theodora alludes to the cruelty of another Theodora, wife to Iustinianus, who exercised Allusion.

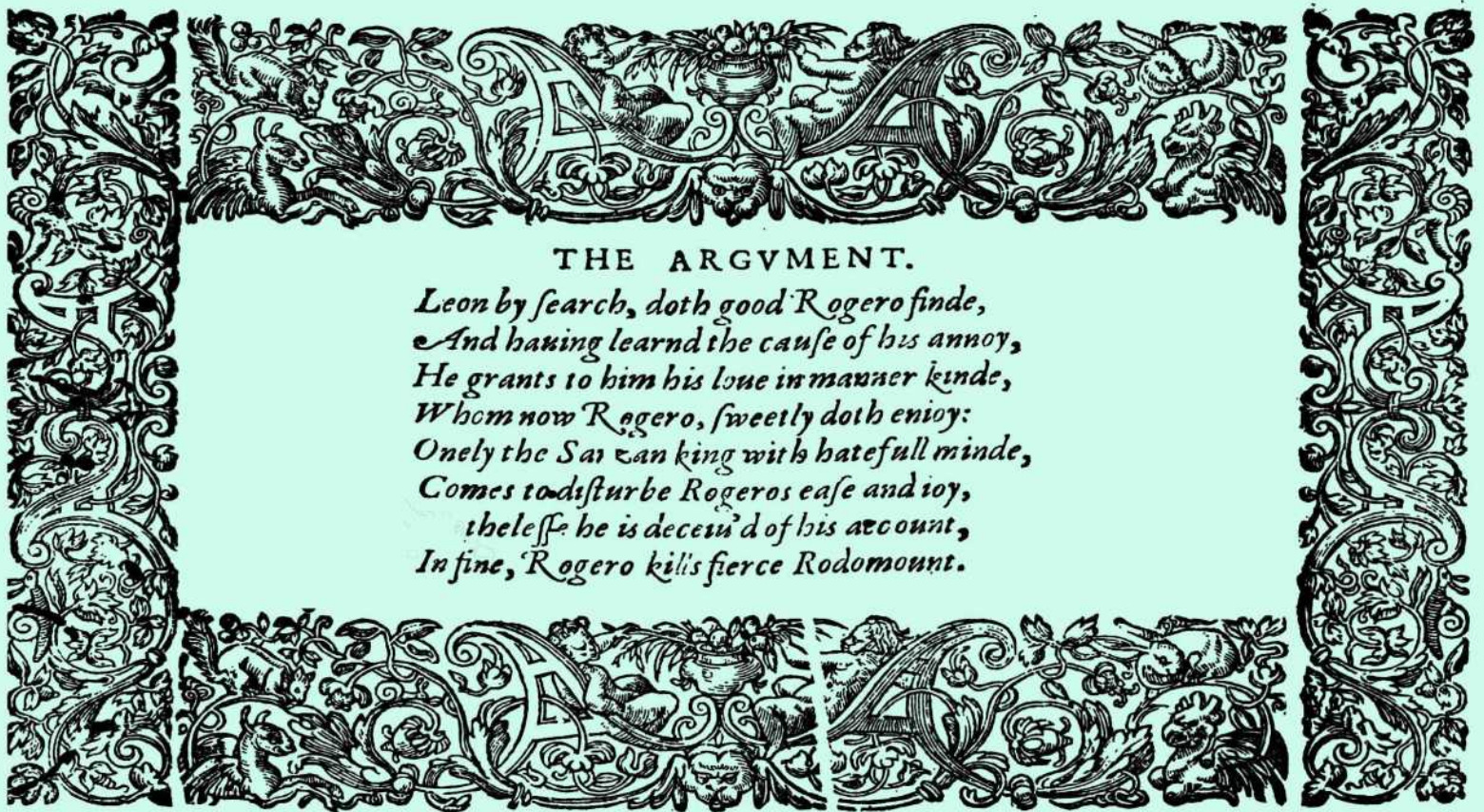
Here end the notes of the xlv. booke

L I i j



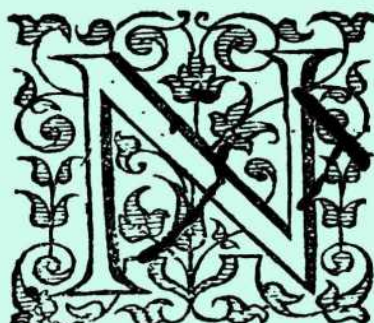






## THE ARGUMENT.

*Leon by search, doth good Rogero finde,  
And hauing learnd the cause of his annoy,  
He grants to him his loue in manner kinde,  
Whom now Rogero, sweetly doth enioy:  
Onely the Sarcan king with hatefull minde,  
Comes to disturbe Rogeros ease and ioy,  
thelesse he is decei'd of his account,  
In fine, Rogero kills fierce Rodomount.*



**N**ow if my compasse, and  
my card be trew,  
I am not farre from that  
red cost,  
Where I shal pay my vow,  
and promise dew,  
vnto my Saint, of whose  
great o' ce I boist:  
I looked ea with pale,  
and chearl e hew,

For feare in this wide Ocean to be lost,  
now me thinke I see, I now see surely  
The hau'n, in which I harbor shall securely.

**2**  
Harke, harke, what peals of Ord'nance great and Guns,  
Are shot in token of congratulation,  
Harke how they sound the Trumpets, & the Drums,  
To gratulate m' happie nauigation:  
See how on er shore the people runs,  
To see m' tter m' ong per'grination,  
Behold a crew of erlesse knights, and dames,  
Now I discern t em, ow I know their names.

**3**  
But least my ip should perish in the port,  
As oft it d h befall for want of heed,  
I will go forward in my first report,  
And tell to you how well the prince did speed  
That sought Rogero, who in wofull sort,  
Di ine and languished, and wisht indeed,  
Sith t amant he might not marry,  
To dye all mf tlesse, and solitary.

But sage Me at ha uer o ,  
To make that match (as of benefed)

And euermore did take great care, and thought;  
That good Rogero Bradamant might wed,  
By her great skill in Magicke art so wrought,  
She had continuall notice how they sped;  
Two sprites she did imploy for that intent,  
And still as one came home, another went.

**5**  
By them, she quickly had intelligence,  
How he had tane so inward grieve and g  
He taryd in a wood with firme pretence,  
To pine himselte away, with want of meat:  
Melyssa parteth presently from thence,  
And with some secret words she did repeat,  
In likenesse of a horse a sprite she tooke,  
And to met Leon, that for him did looke.

**6**  
she sai im, fir, if you e  
So gracious, as y nce makes me weene,  
If your good minde with your good lookes agree,  
If so you haue not lest all pittie cleene,  
Come then, o come and helpe, and ioyne with me,  
ayd the brauest knight, that ere was seene,  
ho for one curteous part that he hath done,  
(Except you helpe) is like to be wdone.

**7**  
Th , stoutest, and the prowest knight,  
er carryd shield, or blade fo drew,  
Tie seemlyest, and most worthy n ded wight,  
That euer was in age, or old, or n  
Is like to perish in most wofull pi  
Except he may relieued be by you  
Come quickly then, vnto his aide p dye,  
And suffer bt so br an to ye.



8

Don Leon straight supposed in his minde,  
That this same knight, of whom the stranger spake,  
Was he whom long he sought and could not finde,  
And he for whom such care himselfe did take:  
Melissa leads the way, he close behind  
Doth follow her, and so good shift they make,  
That in some twaine, at most in three houres ryding  
They came there where Rogero was abyding.

9

Now being at the place to which they hasted,  
They both alighted there, with minde to stay:  
There saw they how he pinde away and wasted,  
For in two dayes before, nor all that day,  
No liquor he had drunke, nor meat had tasted,  
But in his armor on the ground he lay,  
And made a pillow of that noble sheeld,  
With th'Vnicorne vpon vermillion feeld.

10

Here as I said, he lay along and mused  
On his owne miserie, and on that wrong,  
With which he had his loue so much abused,  
And bites for griefe, his hands, and lips, and tong;  
And his conceits, and wits were so confused,  
To set his thoughts vpon one thing so long,  
And hauing on his griefe so firmly fixt them,  
He saw not them, although he were betwixt them.

11

Don Leon harkned to his lamentation,  
And heard him often call himselfe vnkind,  
And saw him vexe himselfe in such a fashion,  
As vnto pittie great his heart inclin'd:  
He finds that loue bred all this molestation,  
But yet whose loue it was he did not find,  
He heard how sundry times himselfe he blamed,  
But all that while his loue he neuer named.

12

And er pitying much his wofull case,  
Alth'gh awhile he silent stood and mute,  
Yet after stood before him face to face,  
And with great louingnesse doth him salute,  
And with affection great doth him imbrace,  
Intreating him, and making speciall sute,  
That he would tell him plaine, and make him know  
What cause had bred him to great sorrowe and wo

13

Rogero loth to liue, esolu'd to dye  
Prayes Leon now to tell him no more,  
But he most sweetly doth to him reply,  
That God hath made a salve for eu'rie sore,  
If men would learne the same how to apply,  
And that no one thing may auayle man more,  
To cure a griefe, and perfectly to heale it,  
Then if he do vnto some friend reueale it.

14

And sure (said he) I take it in ill part,  
Because you trust not me, that am your self  
Not onely, but with your late frendly part,  
You bound me vnto you, to my liues end,  
But was eu'n when you with hatefull hart,  
At Belgrade sate, did me and mine offend,  
Thinke not I will still procure your good.  
Both with lands, riches, and with my blood.

15

Why should it grieue you to declare your griefe,  
To one that may perhaps your losse repayre:  
Bad haps are holpe with hope, and good beliefe, *Sentence.*  
Wherefore a wife man neuer will dispayre:  
I hope my selfe shall bring you some reliefe,  
By force, by policie, or else by prayre,  
When all meanes haue bene tryde, and all hope past  
Then dye, at least keepe that vnto the last.

16

These words so earnestly Don Leon spake,  
And with such efficacie him selfe praid,  
Beseeching him, his frendly counsel take,  
That tother now, with kinde selfe ouerlaid,  
Was forst an answer vnto him to make;  
But in his answer, sodainly he staid,  
And stammerd twise, he could bring it out,  
Dispaire still mouing him to causelesse doubt.

17

Good sir (he said) when I my name shall show,  
As I do meane, and that eu'n by and by,  
You will be then full well content I trow,  
To grant me leaue and libertie to dye:  
I am Rogero (if you needs will know)  
That went from France (and if I shall not lye)  
Mine arrant was, your fire and you to kill,  
And would haue done it, had I had my will.

18

And all because indeed I then supposed,  
Your onely life, did let me of my loue,  
Man purposes, but all things are disposed, *Sentence.*  
By that great God, that sits and rules aboue:  
Behold it hapt I was thus ris' close,  
And there I did your no courtship route,  
For there you did me suffer great sorrowe to turne,  
As all my hatred into loue I turne.

19

And hauing thus said me with so great desart,  
And ignorant, that I Rogero was,  
You did your secrets vnto me impart,  
And praid me win for you, that warlike lasse,  
Which was all one, as to haue askt my hart;  
Yet loe for you, I brought the same to passe,  
Now take her to your selfe, and much good do you,  
More good then to my selfe, I wish vnto you.

20

But yet it shall forbid me not to dye,  
As now I trust I shall, ere many dayes,  
For liue as well without a soule can  
As without her, that holds me in ill payes.  
And sure tis best for your sake, for why  
While I do liue, she is not lawfully yours,  
For we two are betwixt, and law allow  
One woman, but of one to be the spo

21

Don Leon with these newes was so accrazed,  
He seemed in a traunce, he knew not how,  
And on Rogero stedfastly he gazed,  
Nor euer mouing lip, nor ha  
But like an Image long he stood  
That some hath hallowd to per  
This act of his he doth vow,  
He thinks the before had neuer beene.



22  
So that he did not (when he knew his name)  
Repent him of the good he had him done,  
But rather greatly did increase the same,  
Proceeding in the course he had begunne:  
Wherefore to shew from how great stocke he came  
And that he was indeed an Emperors sonne:  
Although in other things he was inferior,  
In courtesie, he meanes to be superior.

23  
And thus (he said) my deare gero know,  
If I as well had knowne you person, when  
As by your meanes I had a ouerthrow,  
And uoyled me at all my men:  
That great vertue that you there did show,  
Should eu'n in manner like you mou'd me then;  
And so I would all malice haue remoued,  
And so I would your vertue gre haue loued.

24  
That once I dislike Rogeros name,  
re I knew you, I must needs confesse,  
But t t I now continue should the same,  
Assure your selfe I purpose nothing lesse:  
And if when first I to the prison came,  
To set you free from danger and distresse,  
I knowne had all the truth, yet then I vow,  
I would haue done the same I will do now.

25  
And surely, if I would haue done it then,  
When I had reason to haue borne you hate,  
Much rather now I ought to do it, when  
Not doing it I should be most vngrate,  
And most vnthankfull of I other men;  
th you your loue, your li le estate,  
Haue freely giuen r me, as you gaue it,  
Of me againe, so cry y shall haue it.

26  
More due to you then me, the Damzell is,  
Whom though I much esteeme of due de  
Yet not so much, that if I her do misse,  
Straightwayes the griefe thereof should kil my hart:  
Nor shall your death auantage me in this,  
Sith you in her already claime such part,  
That lawfully while you abide in life,  
She can by no meanes be anothers wife.

27  
As for my part, first I will quite forsake  
Both her, and all my worldly ioyes beside,  
Then it shall said, that for my sake,  
A noble knigl of so great worth had dide:  
This onely th I vnkindly take,  
That you that a ere my kindnes tride,  
Would rather chuse to end your daies with griefe,  
Then at my nds haue comfo t and reliefe.

28  
These words Don Leon spake, and many more,  
Which now would be too tedious to recite,  
efuting good Rogero euermore,  
conclusion, being vanquishd quite:  
aid, I resist no more,  
I will not die; t when shall I requite  
r courtesie that wise aue giuen  
My life, when greater woe end

29  
Now had Melisse caused to be brought,  
Both cordiall meates, and wines of her puruaying,  
And made him take y same, who now with thought,  
And tasting long, was eu'n almost decaying:  
His horse likewise (as nature hath them taught)  
Came where he heard the other horses naying:  
Don Leon caused his lackies him to get,  
And then his saddle on his backe to set.

30  
And so Rogero with Don Leons aid,  
With much adoe, did clammer to his seat,  
So greatly was his former strength decayd,  
With which he ouerthrew an army great:  
And lately did withstand that warlike maid,  
So weakly weapond, as I did repeat:  
And thus with all conuenient speed they might,  
They brought him to an Abbey that same night.

31  
Where all the night, and three dayes that ensued,  
They staid, and had of needfull things good store,  
Vntill Rogero had his strength renewd,  
Which had with fasting long, bene weakned fore:  
Then priuily among them they conclude,  
To turne to Paris, where the night before,  
A few Bulgarians, came with an embassage,  
And this was all the substance of their message.

32  
They said how that the people of their Nation;  
To whom Rogero late such aid did bring,  
Beyond all hope, beyond all expectation,  
Had therefore cholen him to be their king:  
Reiecting all their owne kings generation,  
And all his royall race (no vtuall thing)  
So much they loued him, so well they leeke him,  
And therefore sent to Charles his court to seeke him.

33  
Rogeros lackey that had bene their guide,  
Told eake his masters friends how he had sp  
As namely how the Greekes he damnifide,  
And how the Bulgars hauing lost their hed,  
hose him for king, how he alone did ride,  
To Nouengrade, where he was tane in bed,  
nd vnto Theodora was presented,  
Who purposed to haue him sore tormented.

34  
And how he heard commonly was spok  
That ruell er clotely flew  
And that the Prison ga nt and broken,  
And he was gone, but whither no man knew:  
Now while Rogeros man such things did open,  
Rogero clotely out of all mens vew,  
Did come to towne, and there that night did stay,  
an he and Leon, came to Charles next day.

35  
Don Leon in arme Rogero led,  
then deuised them betweene)  
fe c te, and armes apparelled,  
t hat e of late by all the people seen  
Then when dame Bradamant had con uated  
With Leon, (as they falsely then did e ne)  
That batterd sword, that cote, that pluu all torne,  
That headpeece now, was by Rogero woe ne



36

By which each man eu'n at first sight surmised,  
This was that knight that had the Ladie wonne,  
Don *Leon* selfe bare faced, vndisguiled,  
Came richly clothed, like an Emp'rors sonne,  
And with retinue not to be dispised:  
And when he had to *Charles* due reu'rence donne,  
*Rogero* by the hand he then did take,  
On whom all eyes were fixt, and thus he spake.

37

This is that stout and well approued knight,  
That did with *Bradamant* fight hand to hand,  
Whom sith she neuer tooke nor put to flight,  
But that he did twelue houres her force withstand,  
(Most worthy sir) to haue her, ought of right,  
If your edict we rightly vnderstand:  
And therefore now accordingly he commeth,  
To lay his claime to her, as best becommeth.

38

Besides his right by proclamation knowne,  
That iustly doth all others claime debarre,  
I thinke the vallew that he now hath showne,  
Proues his sufficiencie in feates of warre:  
If loue may win her, she is sure his owne,  
His loue to her doth passe all others farre;  
And here he stands prepared to auer,  
By law or force, that he hath right to her.

39

King *Charles* and all his court did greatly muse  
At this, for why till then they little thought,  
That he before did them so much abuse,  
But that himselfe had that same combat fought:  
This while *Marfisa*, that with flying newes  
Of this same strange report was thither brought,  
Scant him to end his speech she would permit,  
But presently this wife she answerd it.

40

Sith now *Rogero* absent is from hence,  
I might his right against this knight defend,  
proue that this is but a vaine pretence,  
Because the strife shall not so easely end:  
I that his sister am, in his defence,  
And in defence of this same cause intend,  
To fight with whomsoever in this place,  
As shall deny his title, or disgrace.

41

words she spake with such disdain,  
That some that knew her (haile  
Did feare she scan d eu'n then refraine,  
But without leave to kill him straight endeuer:  
Now *Leon* thinks it best no longer faine;  
And forthwith pulling off *Rogeros* beauer,  
Loe here himselfe now readie prest (he sai  
To answer all shall to his charge be laid.

42

Simile. looke in  
the historie.

As old *Aegens* at his curled boord  
Amazed sat, to finde his spouses wile  
When to his sonne she poyson did affo  
And if he ingred had a little while,  
And had not knowne the handle of his sword,  
Had kild his sonne, he gate by *Pitheus* guile:  
So stood *Marfisa* mazed in the place,  
When as she saw and knew *Rogeros* face.

43

And straight she runnes, and on his necke doth fall,  
And long it was ere from him she could part,  
*Renald*, *Orlando*, *Charles*, afore them all  
Embraced him, and welcomd from their hart:  
Good *Dudon*, *Oliuer*, with ioy not small,  
And old *Sobrinio*, health to him impart,  
Eake all the other Lords and knights, and quyes,  
To bid him welcome shew most prompt desires.

44

Don *Leon* that in speech was eloquen  
When eu'rie one had done his gratulation,  
Begins to tell to *Charles* incontinent,  
And all the rest, *Rogeros* commendation  
And how he to the vulgars succour lent,  
(To no small danger of the Greekish men  
And shewd such able courage and such force,  
As him to loue *Rogero* did enforce.

45

So as when he was after take and brought,  
To her that vowd with ornaments him to slau  
Himselfe in spite of her, and all that sought  
To hurt *Rogero*, brought him safe away:  
For which kind part of his, *Rogero* thought  
Himselfe so bound to him, that he last day,  
Did him that courtesie that sure doth passe,  
The greatest courtesie that euer was.

46

He further doth from point to point declare,  
What for his sake, *Rogero* had atchieued,  
But after this, with anguish great and care,  
The losse of his belou'd so sore him grieved  
As he to pine away did raigle repaire,  
Had not his or leuiued:  
All which so rufull  
Scarfe was an ey but ares with blindnes shed.

47

Then spake he to that obstinate old man,  
I may Duke *Ammon*, that faire ladies fire,  
And with all skill, and Rhetoricke he can,  
He wooes his loue, and pacifies his ire:  
That by intreatie at the last he wan,  
Himselfe to go in person, and desire  
*Rogeros* pardon; praying him in th'end,  
take him for his father-in-law and frend.

48

Th while to *Bradamant* the ioyfull tiding  
Was quickly brought, by none then ne report,  
Who in her chamber all her so yding,  
Eschewd all solace, shunning all  
Whereby the blood about he har abiding,  
Was drawne now thence such daime sort,  
or ioy so ouerfild er,  
That eu'n the furies had almost kild her.

49

Quite speechlesse, liuelesse sinking to the ground,  
(So strange a quame her tender heart did feele)  
And she in whom such force was lately found  
For want of strength did here and thither  
But neuer did thiefe with either bound,  
Condemned to the rope, the axe, or wheele,  
And blindfold to die,  
Ioy moret care som man on cric.

Simile.

The



50

The houses of Mongrane, and Montalbane,  
Reioyce at these their branches newly knit,  
But by *Maganza* comfort small is tane,  
For in their hearts they sorrie were for it:  
*Anselmus*, *Falcon*, *Gynamus*, and *Gane*,  
Dissembling yet their thoughts with craftie wit:  
But for a tir e of vengeance they do watch,  
As doth the Fox, the hurtlesse Hare to catch.

51

Beside old quarrels and th'ir ancient hate,  
New matters done of late did them displease,  
Although the king, and wise men of the state,  
For e' common quiet, did the same appease:  
The death of *Pynabello* flaine but late,  
And *Bertolage*, did mach their mindes disease  
Yet now in thew they do dissemble deepe,  
And close in minde they do their malice keepe.

52

In this me me time, th' Ambassadors that came,  
To *Charles* his court, by those *Bulgarians* sent,  
Reioycing now that things so well did frame,  
In humble manner to *Rogero* went:  
And did salute him king, as in the name  
Of all their countrimen incontinent,  
And so accordingly did lowly greete,  
Their new made Prince, and kneeled at his feete.

53

They told him how their Scepter and their Crowne,  
Was safely kept, alone for his behoofe,  
In *Adrianopolis* their chiefeft towne;  
And for they knew by many a former prooffe,  
That *Consta* stra to keepe them downe,  
Th' pray to aloofe;  
Affir. ing that if ere there,  
The fo' of Gree the would not feare.

54

*Rogero* granteth them their iust request,  
And promist to defend them from the Greekes,  
And vowes if God permit, to do his best,  
To be with them within some thirteene weekes:  
*Leon* bids them set their hearts at rest,  
He tels them that their choise so well he leekes,  
He on his Princely word will vndertake,  
Twixt *Constantine* and them, firme peace to make.

55

Thus each thing framed now in so good sort,  
As could e' wisht thought, or by deuise,  
But neithe *ogeros* good report,  
Get fauour ambitious *Beatrice*,  
Nor person that st the common sort,  
Nor feats of armes n which he wan the prizes  
And of the high, Europe n  
But o to see him m e a king.

56

In royall sort this marriage they prepare,  
(Whose charge it was, the state wil make it knowne)  
*Charles* bare the charge, and tooke thereof such care  
were a daughter of his owne:  
Of her an at the merits are,  
And had to many wayes bene showne;  
He thought had ceded measure,  
If he had spen th n ha se asure.

57

He kept an open court by proclamation,  
Where nine dayes space, who list may freely haunt,  
Men of their owne, and men of forren Nation,  
To all of them he did safe conduct graunt:  
And all that stood vpon their reputation,  
That fought their foes in single fight to daunt,  
Had licenſe franke, to challenge whom they lists,  
For euermore prepared were the lists.

58

In open fields they pitched tents great store,  
Beside with Oken boughes they made such bowtes,  
Strawing the pauements of them euermore,  
With fragrant *Roses* and sweet smelling flowres;  
That neuer had the like bene seene before,  
Nor neuer since, from that same age to ours;  
Besides the furnitures of silke and gold,  
Was more then can conueniently be told.

59

Th' innumerable people of each sort,  
From Greece, from England, Italy and Spaine,  
Th' Ambassadors that thither did resort,  
Beside each seuerall Prince, a seuerall traine,  
Did cause the citie walls to seeme too short,  
To lodge them all, so they in fine were faine,  
In houels, boothes, in tents, and in pauillions,  
To lodge some thousands, if I say not millions.

60

Onely *Melissus* care was to foresee,  
The marriage chamber should be well attyred,  
Which by her skill she ment should furnisht be,  
For long to make the match she had aspired:  
Which now that she accomplished did see,  
She thought she had the thing she most desired:  
For by her skill in Magicke, she did know,  
What passing fruit, forth of that branch should grow

61

Wherefore she plac't the fruitfull wedding bed,  
Amid a faire and large pauillion, which  
Was eu'n the sumptuousest, that ere was spred,  
Of silke, and beaten gold wrought eu'rie stich:  
And more, from ouer *Constantins* hed,  
At *Thracyan* shore, where he his tents did pitch  
Fast by the sea, for his more recreation,  
She tooke the same to his great admiration.

This fiction  
pauillion, is so  
saſe occasion to  
praise *Hippoliso*.

62

Were that *Leon* gaue conſent theret  
Or that e' did the her skill t vaunt,  
To shew what one by Magicke art can do,  
That haue the skill the fends of hell to daunt:  
(For what cannot their powre atchieue vnto,  
When for our plague, God leaue to them wil grant?)  
Thrace to Paris in twelue houres it came,  
I trow she sent one in the duels name.

63

She can be carrid at nooneday,  
antino, Emp'ror then of Greece,  
the staues, the cords they brought away,  
The pinnes, the hoopes, and eu'rie li le peece:  
She placed it whereas she meant to laie  
*Atlantas* Nephew, with his new made Neece:  
In this pauillion she did place their bedding,  
And sent it backe when timiht was wedding.

*Rogero* Nephew  
to *Atlans*.



64

Two thousand years before, or not much lesse,  
This rich pavillion had in Troy bene wrought,  
By faire *Cassandra*, that same Prophetesse,  
That had (but all in vaine) in youth bene taught,  
Of future things to giue most certaine guesse,  
For her true speech was euer let at naught:  
She wrought this same, with helpe of many other,  
And gaue it *Heclor*, her beloued brother.

*Or, as I suppose  
- upon crumbe  
Turne.*

65

The worthiest wight that eu'r man did behold,  
That should proceed forth of his noble line,  
She here portrayd, in worke of silke and gold,  
O' precious substance, and of colour fine:  
Alto the time and season was foretold,  
Both of his birth, and of his praise diuine:  
Don *Heclor* of this gift great count did make,  
Both for the worke, and for the workers sake.

*Hippolito of  
victors race.*

66

But when himselfe by treason foule was slaine,  
And Troy was by the Greekes defaced quite,  
Who enterd it by *Synon*s subtle traine,  
And worse enswd thereof then Poets write:  
Then *Menelaus* did this great relicke gaine,  
And alter on king *Proteus* hapt to light,  
Who gaue to him dame *Helen* ere he went,  
And for reward receiu'd of him this tent.

*Proteus, looke in  
the table.*

67

And thus to *Egypt* at that time it came,  
Where with the *Prolemeys* it long remained,  
Till *Cleopatra*, that lasciuious dame,  
As by inheritance, the same obtained:  
As *Agrippas* later by sea then tooke the same,  
What time in Rome *Augustus Caesar* raigned:  
And then in Rome, while Rome was th' Empires seat  
It staid till time of *Constantine* the great.

*That was he,  
that gaue Rome  
to the Pope.*

68

Emp'ror *Constantine* I meane, of whom  
Ally for euer shall lament,  
Who when belothed *Tibris* bankes and Rome,  
Vnto the cite of *Byzantium* went,  
A place of more receipt, and larger roome,  
And thither this pavillion then he sent:  
Of which the cords were golden wire and silke,  
The stauies and pinnes, were lurie white as milke.

69

wrought such diuers faces,  
More then *Apelles* e' it with his fill drew,  
A queene in childbearing, to whom the graces  
With pleatant grace perform'd *Lucyus* dew:  
*Joue*, *Mercurie*, and others in other places,  
And *Venus* do receiue the babe borne new:  
The sweetest babe that to the world came for  
From it's first age, eu'n downe vnto the fourth.

*The first age gold  
The 2. silver.  
The 3. brasse.  
The 4. Iron.*

70

*Hippolito* they name him, as appeares  
Wrote in small letters on his swathing bands,  
And wh' he is a little growne in yeeres  
On one side fortune, tother Vertue stands:  
Then in another picture diuer Peeres,  
Clad in long rayments, sent from forren lands,  
Vnto the father and the mother came,  
To begget' e' babe in great *Coruynus* name.

*These were Am-  
bassadors sent by  
Coruino so bring  
Hippolito to  
Hungaris.*

71

They part from *Hercles* with great reuerence then,  
And from that infants mother *Flinore*,  
Vnto *Danubia* ward, and there the men  
Still runne to see that infant and adore:  
Also the king *Coruynus* wonders when  
He saw in him both wit and iudgement more,  
In thote his tender childish yeeres and greenie.  
Then many times in older men had bene.

72

One doth endeuour in his childish hand,  
Of the *Strigonian* Realm to put to the mace,  
But euermore the tender youth doth stand,  
So high in that same noble Princes grace,  
That it he warre in manly *Almans* land,  
Or in the *Turkes*, or any other place;  
*Hippolito* is euer by his side,  
And learneth vertue vnder such a guide.

73

Another place shewes how he doth dispence  
His youthfull time in Discipline and art,  
*Fusco* instructs him in the hidden fence,  
Of ancient writs, and precepts doth impart,  
What actions praise, what actions breed offence,  
What be reward of good and ill desert:  
All which the picture did so well expresse,  
That at the meaning eu'rie one might guesse.

*Fusco schoolema-  
ster to Hippolito*

74

Loe where as yet a boy in *Vatican*,  
Among the grauest Card'nals he doth sit,  
And speaks so wisely, that they all began,  
To wonder at his towardnes and wit:  
What manner man (if on the world man)  
Would this man prove? *Petrarch* here how fit  
They seeme to say: oh the thith decline,  
What holy age were that what l'opie time?

*He was  
a Cardinal*

75

Within another part described were  
His youthfull sports, when he more strong did grow  
Of in the mountaines he doth meet a Beare,  
Of times a Pore, in marriish grounds and low:  
He rides his Genet fierce, and void of feare,  
He chaletth oft the Buck, the Hart and Roe,  
And, by his horse swift pace, doth ouer-ride them,  
And then doth with his sword in twaine deuide them.

*Of his aduises*

76

Of Poets then, and of Philosophers.  
About him you shoud see a worthy band  
To make him know the course w' ring starres,  
How heau'n doth moue, & why th' earth doth stand  
Or reading of Elegies, or v'ce of w'ces,  
Fine Epigrams, Odes hald to desert'nd:  
For sometime instruments of musick hearing,  
In a his a s'aspe. l grace appeari.

*Of his studie and  
company*

77

Then on another part was to be vewd,  
His vertues, each one by it selfe distinct,  
First Prudence, Temperance, and Fortitude,  
And Iustice, and afitt vnto them linkt  
So nye, that who with it is  
The rest may seeme or blotte or extinct:  
Good bountie, giuing and spending,  
A speciall g otherle ng.

*His vertues.*

*His bountie.*

One



78

This one place shewes he aids vnluckie *Sforse*,  
Him euermore most faithfully assisting,  
Sometime with policie, sometime with force,  
Him helping, and his enemies resisting:  
Of Fortunes change he doth but little force,  
In woe and woe, in one faith still persisting:  
He comforts him when euill haps do grieue him,  
In dangers he doth saue, in want relieue him.

His true friend-  
ship

79

Then stands he studying a another season,  
And for his countries safte taking care,  
He searcheth, and he finds by depth of reason,  
And finding, to his brother doth declare  
Their most vnnaturall and filthy treason,  
Some of his owne blood for him prepare,  
doth deserue such name to haue,  
Some yet fre, to famous *Tully* gaue.

His of his  
conscience.

Pater pater.

80

Fast by he stands all clad in armour bright,  
And to reuege the Church he runnes in post,  
Sodaine souldiers, raw and armed light,  
Against a settled and well ordred host:  
Yet did his onely presence so affright,  
The aduerse part, that one may rightly boast,  
It quencht the fire, ere it to burne began,  
So he may say, I came, I saw, I wan.

His exploits in  
warre.Cesars words,  
vidi, vici.

81

Here stands he by his native riuer side,  
And straight encounters with the strongest flecte,  
That euer yet Venetians did prouide,  
Gainst or Turke, but he doth boldly meet,  
And vanquished tooke them at one tide,  
And though the gaine was sweet,  
All (saue the price) he let into his brother,  
For onely that, not b another.

82

Thus this Pauillion, as before I told,  
The which *Melissa* brought so farre from thence,  
Did please the knights, and daries that did behold,  
The goodly imaginie, and rich expence:  
Though they had not any to vnfold,  
The meaning of the same and hidden sence;  
But yet by good *Melissas* wife instruction,  
Dame *Bradamant* did know their whole construction

83

*Rogero* markt likewise with great attention,  
Those goodly figures calling to his minde,  
That oft nckle that Prince made mentron,  
*Hippolito*, the owre of all his kinde:  
But now kin *Charles* whose care is and intention,  
To giue to all men cert inment kinde,  
Made playe of these, with sundr sports and great,  
And euer the tables fild

84

There, men might plainly see vnderstand,  
The courage and the stren of eu'rie knight,  
Sometimes in single wise, now band to band,  
and turnaments resembling fight,  
per hand,  
In all his exercise and night:  
In leaping, running, wrastling and in dancing,  
All men him about the rest g.

85

But on the last of these dayes festiuall,  
Then when to take away they did prouide,  
What time king *Charles* was set amid thefn all,  
Eu'n iust betweene the Bridegrome and the Bride,  
Behold they saw a goodly man and tall,  
That seemd directly toward them to ride.  
Most proudly mounted on a courlers backe,  
But yet his horse and he, all clad in blacke.

86

This was fierce *Rodomont*, king of *Algyre*,  
Who at his late receiued foile, and lorne  
Of *Bradamant*, inflamd with spight and ire,  
All use of horse and armor had forsworne,  
Till one whole yeare, one month, one day expire,  
But liue that while an Hermit all forlorne:  
For so the knights were wont in ancient times,  
Of their owne selues, to punish their owne crimes.

That was in the  
35. booke.

87

And though this while he oft had notice how,  
King *Agramant*, and how king *Charles* had sped,  
Yet nathelesse, for not breaking of his vow,  
Forth of the doores he neuer put his hed:  
But when the yeare and month were ended now,  
And day beside, himselfe he furnished,  
With armor new, new horse, new sword, new lance,  
And came therewith vnto the court of France.

88

Not once alighting nor so much as rising,  
For reu'ence sake, to bow his head or knee,  
He bare the count'nance of a man despising,  
Both *Charles*, and all those Peeres of great degree:  
At this each man amazed stands deuising,  
What proud and sawcy fellow this might be,  
From talking and from eating each man stayes,  
To hearken what this loslie warrior sayes.

89

Now when he was to th'Emp'ror come so nye,  
That he *Rogero* fully did confront,  
With stately voice, and with disdainfull crie  
(He saith) I am the king of *Sarza Rodomont*,  
That thee *Rogero* flatly here desie,  
And ere the Sunne go downe make full account,  
To proue thou hast bene false vnto thy Prince,  
And openly of treason thee conuince.

90

For though thy treachery be knowne so cle  
In being cristend, thou canst not deny it,  
Yet that to all the are,  
I offer here in single fight to trie it:  
Or if thy courage faile, any re  
Will take on them thy quill, to supply it,  
I will accept of any one or more,  
Yea, not to faile, of six or halfe a score.

91

*Rogero*, when he first had licence craued  
Of *Charles*, the wife to *Rodomont* replide,  
(And said) he e'r had his honour saued,  
And who so said contrarie, lowdly lide:  
For he had to his Prince himselfe behafed,  
Most loyally eu'n to the day he did  
And said he there was readie to maintain,  
That yet his faith had neuer



92

And that himselfe was bold enough and strong,  
With him to buckle hand to hand alone,  
And that he hopte to make him feeble ere long,  
He had enough, perhap too much of one:  
Straightwayes *Renaldo* to auenge this wrong,  
*Orlando*, and the Marquis would haue gone,  
*Marfisa* with the brothers white and blacke,  
And *Dudon* would be on the Pagans iacke.

93

Alledging, that sith he was newly marrid,  
For him to fight, it was against all vte,  
But from their speeches his opinion varid,  
And sweares that that for him was no excuse:  
Those armes that erst the famous Tartar carid,  
He takes, nor will he make one houre of truse:  
To arme him, all those states their aids afford,  
King *Charles* himselfe, holpe to put on his sword.

94

His wife takes care his Curats well may fit,  
*Orlando* tyes his spurres, *Marfisa* bold  
Doth fast vpon his head his beauer knit,  
*Astolfo* is content his horte to hold:  
His stirrop, *Dudon*; others thinke it fit,  
To rid the lyfts, and driue out young and old:  
*Renaldo*, *Namus*, *Oliuer*, take charge  
To Martiall it, and make it cleare and large.

95

Simile.

Faire dames and damzels stand with lookes dismaid,  
With feare and trembling, like to fearfull Doues,  
Whō some black tēpest-bringing cloud hath fraid,  
And driu'n from fields, to throwd in houses rooues:  
(Downe falls the haile w<sup>h</sup> which the corne is laid,  
And profitlesse vnto his owner proues)  
So do they this fierce Pagans forces feare,  
Which sure they iugde, *Rogero* cannot beare.

96

Nor onely do faint people so surmise,  
But many knights of worth, the same did weene,  
That cald to mind what erst before their eye,  
To their griete they had in Paris seene:  
When he with fire and sword in fearfull wift,  
Did welny spoile the towne, and wast it cleene:  
Of which the worull signes did still appeare,  
And would remaine yet many a month and yeare.

97

Sentence.

*Rogero* more feard then all the rest,  
Not that he thought in strength or skill well tride  
The Pagan past, nor valiant brest,  
Or that he had more reason of his side,  
(Which vnto vict' auailes not least,  
When men by com<sup>mon</sup> quarels do disside)  
Yet still her minde is sad, her lookes vnchearefull,  
Nor blame her though, for loue is euer fearfull.

Sentence.  
Elt res solliciti  
plena timoris  
anor.

98

Great suit she makes, great labour to procure,  
That vpon her she may the quarr take,  
Yea if to haue bene flaine she had bene sure,  
To saue her spouse, but all in vaine she spake:  
The champions now their lances put in vre,  
And each with couched speare the tother strake:  
The states like lfe in shiuers small did flie,  
The plants did mount vnto the skie.

Simile.  
Simile.

99

The Pagan that his lance did full direct,  
Against the middle of *Rogeros* sheeld,  
Did smyte on it to small or none effect,  
For *Vulcan* had the same most firmly steeld:  
The tothers Target had no knowne defect,  
Yet to the stroke it did a passage  
Yet was it thicke, a quarter of a foote  
Of bone, and linde with plaed sic to boote.

100

And saue the lance sustained not the blow,  
But at the first did breake and was disp  
So that the peeces of it seem'd in show,  
To haue bene featherd foules (as I rehearfed)  
That stroke had finished that strife I throw,  
And had his Curats and his bodie pearced.  
But now it brake, and both gaue stro  
As made both hortes cruppers kille the groun

101

The riders neare the lesse fate firme and stedie,  
And laboured so well with spurre and rane,  
Their hortes were got vp on foot die,  
The men to fight addresse themselves againe  
With swords; their hortes both were strong & redie  
And each with skill some vantage sought to gaine,  
And where they thought their armors were most  
With force they straued to pierce & enter in. (thin,

102

Fierce *Rodomont* had not that Serpents hide  
He vnde to weare, nor yet that shauing blade,  
That he was wont to carrie by his side,  
For *Nimrod* his great ancestor first n a  
He lost those armes, and eside,  
Then when as *Brada* nuade,  
At that same church, here h emonth since,  
Entomb'd *Isbell*, at pee lesse Prince.

103

He had another armor good and sure,  
But not like that so passing tough and hard,  
But neither this, nor any else could dure,  
Against the piercing edge of Ballisard:  
No mixture such, no metatll was so pure,  
No charme so strong, but that this blade the mard:  
*Rogero* so besturd him with this blade,  
Moue then on hole, in tothers coate he made.

104

Now though a little while the Pagan cokes  
His hurts receiu'd, with vnappaled minde,  
Yet when he saw his blood, a felt t rokes  
So smart, that still they seem'd the cke to finde:  
To so great wrath and rag it oukes,  
Eu'n like the sea turmo ring winde, *Simile.*  
He hurles away his shield, adener,  
sto cleaue *Rogero* cauer.

105

With force as great he rikes, and as extreame,  
As doth that engin in the Riuier Poe,  
Borne twixt two shippe, vpon the stately streame,  
Enforcing downe with many a heauie bloe,  
Some peece of timber, arped  
I say the Pagan smote *Rogero*  
Had not the charmed helmet bene of force,  
He doubt would haue clou'n him & his horse.  
Rogero

Simile.  
The likenes as  
bridge.



106

Rogero sitteth sitting in his seat,  
His hand the bridell left, his thighes their hold,  
Rodomont giues another blow as great,  
To maze him more by all the meanes he could:  
And last a third, but now he so did beat  
His blade of n . . . ree, it would not hold,  
But burst in twain . . . is continuall hammering,  
And left me Pag . . . in no little mammering.

107

But yet for this . . . th not refraine,  
But still inuades the . . . night that wants defence,  
So had the blow . . . az'd his head and braine,  
So dazed had t . . . blow his wit and fence:  
The Pagan . . . nds to waken him againe,  
 . . . lose with him, and so from thence,  
 . . . him by the necke with all his force,  
 . . . doth him enforce.

108

He . . . but yet . . . ground he touched scant,  
But that . . . inflam'd with wrath and shame;  
 . . . lookir . . . he saw faire Bradamant,  
Wh . . . se blun did shew how ill she tooke the same:  
Yea eu'n offounding she did little want,  
And still her fainting colour went and came;  
Which scene, Rogero with his sword intends,  
For this so great disgrace to make amends.

109

The Pagan with his horse would ouer-runne him,  
And iustles him, but he with little paine,  
Doth step aside, and warily doth shunne him,  
And wi . . . hi left hand takes the horses raine:  
(So as the . . . cby no hurt hath done him)  
The while he . . . his sword againe,  
And with tw . . . thru . . . ie Pagan harme,  
One in his . . . ig . . . anothe . . . his arme.

110

he Turke with whom a peece did yet remaine,  
Of that same blade that was in peeces flowne,  
Smote on Rogeros headpeece so a . . .  
As had wel-ny againe him ouerthrowne:  
 . . . Rogero now perceiuing plaine,  
 . . . antage that was erst to him vnknowne,  
Takes him by his left arme with all his force,  
And (will he nill he) puls him from his horse

111

Were it his strength or sleight, I cannot tell,  
But so he fell, no ods was them betweene,  
My meaning is tha . . . on his feete he fell,  
For in the . . . rds, Rogeros odds was scene:  
Rogero that . . . know his vantage well,  
To keepe him now . . . bay his best doth weene;  
It is not best . . . he doth suppose,  
With such . . . strong, and big

112

He further saw what store of blood he spilt,  
So now he hopes by waril . . . roceeding,  
To force his foe to yeel . . . and leaue the tilt, . . . ding:  
Whose strength decai . . . stil more & more with blee-  
 . . . Turke then takes the pomell and the hilt  
Of his owne sword, . . . with force so exceeding  
Did . . . the same, he smote the knight so sore,  
He stund him more then eu'r he was before.

113

It strake him twixt the shoulders and the head,  
And gaue to him a blow so firme and sound,  
That good Rogero therewith staggered,  
And scant could keepe his feete vpon the ground:  
The Turke to close with him then hast'ned,  
But loe his foote did faile with former wound,  
So that his too much hast (as oft we see)  
Did hurt, and made him fall vpon his knee.

114

Rogero lost no time in manfull wise,  
To strike fierce Rodomont in brest or face,  
And holds him short, and so his force applies,  
He laid him on the ground, but in short space,  
In spyte of him, the Pagan doth arise,  
And with small kindnes he doth him embrace:  
And then they striue, heaue, shoue, thrust to and fro,  
And either seekes the tothers ouerthrow.

115

Each striues with all his skill, and his abilitie,  
By force to lay the tother on the ground,  
Now Rodomont was growne to some debilitie,  
By meanes of more then one receiued wound,  
Rogero had great practise and agilitie,  
And vldeto wrastle, and he quickly found  
His vantage, which he did not ouerslip,  
But on his weakest side his foe doth trip.

116

The Turke most full of wrath and of despight,  
Vpon Rogeros necke tooke stedfast hold,  
Now drawing toward him with all his might,  
Now thrusting him backe from him all he could:  
And by and by he heau'd him quite vpright,  
As strong *Antheus* was in time of old:  
Rogero notwithstanding sure doth stand,  
And labord still to haue the vpper hand.

117

Full oft the valiant knight his hold doth shift,  
And with much prettie sleight, the same did slipp  
In fine he doth applie one speciall drift,  
Which was to get the Pagan on the hippe:  
And hauing caught him right, he doth him list,  
By nymble sleight, and in such wise doth trippe:  
That downe he threw him, and his fall was such,  
His head-peece was the first that ground did tuch.

118

The Turke with such an hard and heauie fall,  
Was ore perplext, and brused in suc  
His wounds fell fresh on bleeding . . . erewithall,  
And make the place Vermillio . . . ere he lyes.  
Rogero giues him respite veri . . . all,  
But keepe him downe a . . . I nor let him rise:  
And presently presents his dagger point  
Vnto this throat, and to his chiefeft ioynt.

119

As those that dige and search for golden ore,  
Within Pa . . . ian, or Iberian hills,  
Not vnderpro . . . sure the ground before,  
Oft for a plague of their too greedie wills,  
With sodaine ruine, are surprisde so sore,  
As to get forth againe, doth passe their skills:  
So was the Turke held downe, and prest  
By braue Rogero his triumph

M m

Smile.



120

Who now his naked dagger did present,  
Vnto the tothers vizer at his eye,  
And with sharpe words he told him that he ment,  
Except he yeeld, to kill him by and by:  
But Rodomont, that rather then relent,  
Or shew base mind, a thousand deaths would dy,  
No word doth speake, but straue him selfe to sundert  
From him, or if he could to get him vnder.

121

Eu'n as a Mastiue fell, whom Grewnd more fell,  
Hath tyrd, and in his throat now fastned hath  
His cruell fangs, yet doth in vaine rebell,  
Though vnder him, and seekes to do some skath:  
For still the Grewnd preuailes, and doth excell  
In force of breath, though not in rage and wrath:  
So doth the cruell Pagan striue and straine,  
To get from vnder him, but all in vaine.

*Simile, and a ve-  
rie apt compar-  
son, for a grehound  
will overcome a  
mastiue in conti-  
nuance of fight, as  
hath bene tried.*

Morall.

This last booke of Ariosto is so full of examples of courtesie, as me thinke we should offer it gr<sup>at</sup> discount<sup>er</sup> we should not pike out some good Morall from it, to recommend to your consideration that haue peruse read over the booke; the first and chiefest courtesie is in Leo, that manageth the whole matter so well for Rogero, knowing the content of all parties like a well deuised Comedie: then Marfilas kindnes is to be praised, that would haue light in the face of her brothers honor. Thirdly Ammon doth well to aske pardon of Rogero for his hard vsage: then the Bulgars are to be allowed for their thankfulnes to make him king for his good seruice: Further Charles the Emperour is to be extolled for his Princely regard in honoring and feasting them so bountifully at the marriage: Lastly Bradamant and the whole crew that would haue enerie one haue taken vpon them Rogeros defence against Rodomont, and Rogero not permitting it, yet they disdained not to do him the seruice to helpe to arme him, to put on his spurres, to stay his horse, to hold his sterop: in all which I doubt not but the noble minded readers will finde sufficient matter both to commend, and to imitate without my further labouring to set forth the same. Onely one note I may not omit, yea though I were sure to be chidden by some of you (faire Ladies) for my labor, namely, the strong ambition of your sex, which we call weake; For you see how my author in the 55. staffe of this Canto hath deliuered to vs, that Beatrice the mother of Bradamant, would neuer be wonne to accept Rogero for her sonne in-law, neither for his gentrie, nor his personage, nor his wit, nor yet her daughters owne choise and affection, till she heard he was chosen a king: which is a stirring humour of women, it seemed how that (neuer too much praised) Sir Philip Sidney was well acquainted with in his Arcadia not onely the stately Pamela, to reiect the naked vertue of Musidorus, till she found well cloathed with the title to a scepter, but euen Mistres Mopla, when she sate hooded in the tree to beg a boone of Polixenes, to a nothing but to haue a king to her husband, and a lusty one to, and when her pitifull father Danietas (for want of a better plaid Apollos part) told her she should haue husbands enough, she praid doubtly they might be all kings: and thus much for the Morall.

Historic.

Aegeus king of Athens, hauing no issue, went to the Oracle of Apoll, to know how he might do to haue a sonne, and receiuing a doubtfull answer, asked counsell of Pytheus of Troe, that was in those dayes counted a deepe wise man; who scanning the meaning of the obscure verse, which was this

Optime vir non ante pedem dissoles vtri  
Exsertum claras quam tu remearis Athenas.

*In English not verie cleanly thus.*

Good sir take heed how ear it falls, what vessell you do broch,  
Before vnto the cittie walls of Athens you approach.

you and out stich a mysterie in the verses, that he persuaded him ear he parted thence, to take the paines (or I might haue said the leasure) to lie with his daughter Ethra: Aegeus hauing done the feat, and being b like (as many men are) sorie when he had done, tooke his leaue to be gone; but ear he went he tooke Ethra aside, and showed her where he had hidden his sword and his shoes vnder a hollow stone of great weight, charging her that if she be a sonne, so soone as he were off strength to remove that stone, she should send him with those tokens to him as p<sup>er</sup> suit y as may be. In fine she bare that famous Theseus, who comming to Athens as a stranger, Medea then wife of Aegeus, persuaded her husband to poyson him at a banquet, to which the old man assented: but when he was readiet drinke Aegeus saw the sword l<sup>ie</sup> idle, and calling it to mind, ouerthrew the cup and saue the life of his sonne: of which v<sup>er</sup>se le<sup>et</sup> better ter to enforme him selfe, may reade more at large in the life of Theseus written by Plutarke.

Allegoric.

In that mine author brings in for the conclusion of his whole worke, that Roger immediately vpon his marriage to Bradamant, killeth Rodomont: which is the Allegoricall sence thereof, that Rodomont which is to be vnderstood vnbri- dle eat and courage of youth (for in all Rodomonts actions you shall finde him described, eu<sup>er</sup> most furi<sup>ous</sup>, hastie, and impacient) Rodomont Isay, is killed and quite vanquished by marriage; an howsoe<sup>er</sup> the v<sup>er</sup>se must be cast away: which the common saying doth proue, distinguishing in ordinarie speec, a bachel<sup>er</sup> from a married man, by these good fellow, and an honest man.

122

But with long struing and with wondrous paines,  
He freed his better arme, and void of aw,  
His dagger that in his right hand remaines,  
Which in this later bick'ring he did draw,  
He seekes to stabbe into Rogeros raines;  
But now the valiant youth that he saw,  
Then for his satries sake rained,  
To kill the cruell Turke hat gr<sup>at</sup> edild<sup>ed</sup> ned<sup>ed</sup>

123

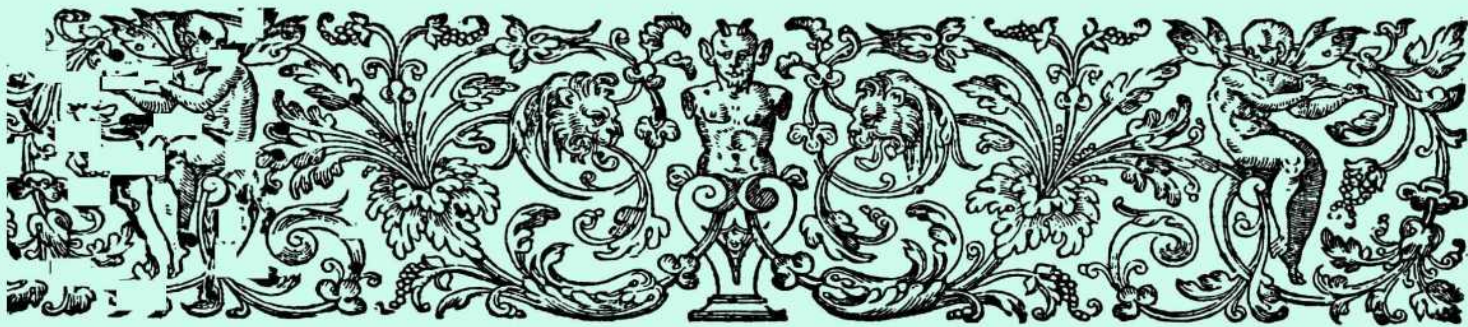
And lifting his victorious hand  
In that Turke face he stuck his dagger t<sup>ill</sup> it  
Vp to the hilts, and quickly made him die,  
And rid him selfe of trouble in the  
Downe to the lake, where damne phosts do lie,  
Sunke his disdainful soule, now cold as If  
Blaspheming as it went, and cursing lowd,  
That was on earth so loftie and so p



In Rodomonts punishing of himself, by forswearing the use of armor, a yeare, a month, and a day, he alludes (I think) Allusion. to one Bucycaldo a Frenchman, gouernor of Genewa, who being a goodly tall man of personage, was ouerthrowne and vanquished by Galeazzo Gonzaga a little man of stature, but of great spirit, and for that cause he vowed neuer to beare armes againe: but in the death of Rodomont to shew himselfe a perfect imitator of Virgil, he endeth iust as Virgil ends his *Aeneads* with the death of Turnus,

*Vitaque cum gemitu fugit indignata sub umbras.*

Here end the notes of the 45. and last Canto of *Orlando Furioso*.



A BRIEFE AND SUMMARIE  
ALLEGORIE OF ORLANDO FURIOSO,  
NOT VNPLEASANT NOR VNPROFITABLE  
for those that haue read the former Poeme,



When I had finished this translation of *Orlando Furioso*, and being almost proud in mine owne conceit, that I had in these my young yeares, employed my idle houres to the good liking of many, & those the better sort, I happened to reade in a graue and godly booke these words: *So diuines do hold (for examples sake) that the glory of S. Paule is increased dayly in heauen, and shalbe to the worlds end, by reason of the* ayly do profue by his writing, and rare exemplar life vpon earth, as also in the con- ie part, that the terments of Arius, Sabellius. er wicked heretickes, are continually augmented by the numbers of them, who from time to time are corrupted with their seditious and pestilent writings; If it had stayed there, it would neuer haue troubled me, but immediatly followes, *The like they hold of dissolute Poets, and other loose writers, which haue left behind them lasciuious, wanton, and carnall deuices, as also of negligent parents, masters, teachers, &c.* This saying (gentle Reader) was such a cool to me, and did so cut the combe of that leasing conceit from mine, that I could not tel whether I should repent me or not of my former taken paine. For this was a malicious taunt of a wr looking *Zoylus*, but a graue reprehension, and commi on of a deuout and diuine ter; Now though the Epithetons of *Dissolute* and *L* make me partly presume that uthor is out of the foresaid dangers, whose worke cannot iustly be deemed asci, wanton, n ugh I haue spoken as I thinke sufficiently in my Apologie, to satisfie all i-fferent readers, both for mine authors defence and mine owne excuse, yet because I know in mine owne conscience, ll the verses in this worke be so full weight, but they shalbe tryed in so seuer a balla me will be found matoo light. would endeouour all I might to supply that defect, with the more and soher nsideration of the Allegorie; which, as I haue partly touched in euer y se l booke, so now I intend to present to your consideration the whole ho of t same, to make as it were a rehearsal Oration of it, which I haue placed in latter end,

*In the Resolution, of the accounting day.*



Simile of a  
surfet.

and as it were for a farewell, as men do at a great dinner, in which they haue almost surfeited vpon sundrie sorts of meats, more delicate then wholsome, yet in the end close vp their stomakes with a peece of a Quince, or strengthen and helpe their digestion with a cuppe of Sacke; whereas to a temperate feeder vpon wholsome meats, both of them are superfluous. Also I do the rather place it in the end of my booke, because common, that which men reade last stickes best in their memories, and so I wish this to do, in as it were the verie kyrnell and principall part, or as the marrow, and the rest but a profitable shell; or according (as I said in my Apologie, vsing *Tall* like to the pill that is lapped in sugar, and giuen a child for a medicine, who otherwile would not be drawne to take the simple drugge though it were to save his life. But to come to the matter, mine author (as you may see from the beginning) applyeth his whole worke, and referreth all the parts thereof to two principall heads and common places: namely, *Armes* and *Loue*: in both which, men commit great oversight.

Armes.  
Loue.

from both which, proceed many great enormous disorders, both in publicke For these two faults of wantonnesse and wilfulnesse, are so coupled common that they seeme to be borne at a burthen therewith, and as it were acceptable; and a man might almost canonize him for a Saint, that hath passed the next of his youth, and not offended in one of these: but many doubtlesse offend in them. And this is the cause that mine authour hath propounded many examples, but specially two, in the which men may see their frailtie in the latter of these (which I will handle first) namely in the passion of loue. As first *Orlando*, who with a long and tedious voyage, guardeth *Angelica* from the Indies; then hath her taken from him among his friends, after looseth her, and by sundrie aduentures pursuing her, and yet missing most narrowly of his purpose, in the end falleth starke madde for her, till by Saint *Iohn* his wits are sent him againe, which is as much to say, till by the grace of God and the light of the Gospel, he discouereth the darknes he walked in, and so comes againe to himselfe.

Orlando.

Rogero.

Secondly and principally in *Rogero*, whom he faineth to be of infinite value, and of courage able to ouercome a thousand of our common miseries, but yet ouercome himselfe of this passion of loue, without any resistance: this is the reason that he is borne away vpon a horse with wings (which would not be gouerned) vp into the aire, to the countrey of *Alcyna*, (which we may easily see to be the court of pleasure:) by which mine authour giues vs to vnderstand that the principall occasion of our euill proceedeth of this, when our appetite not ruled by reason ruleth vs, as *Horace* writeth and may be applyed to any passion that striueth with reason:

Alcyna, the  
court of pleasure.

*Ira furor brevis est, animum reue, qui nisi paret  
Imperat, hunc frenis, hunc tu compeſce catena.*

Idlenes, cap-  
taine of all  
other filthie  
vices.

Wherefore the same appetite is that passionate desire of the minde that are so often counsailed to restraine. Now to this desire to this inordinate lusting, ioyned idlenesse, as an assistant and great furtherer; as I partly noted in the fourth booke of *Ouid*, *Otiā si tollas, &c.* This idlenes is syned by the Poet, verie grosse and violent, drunken and drowſie, ryding vpon a Tortoise in token of his slowe he (forsooth) of a monstrous band, of which some haue heads like dogges, for haue necks like snakes, some are mounted vpon Oxen or Asses, some haue countenances and gestures of Apes, some are armed with speares with forkes, with hookes, with branches (all out of the chen) of all which, what other meaning can be gathered but this, that idlenes and the not betaking ones selfe to some honest trauell, causeth men to become drunk gluttons, backbiters, reprochers, iesters, parasites and promoters, with other monstrous and filthie vices, though worthie to be punished, yet not worthie to be named.

Where-



Therefore the auncient fathers haue not without great iudgement and iust cause placed  
 1<sup>st</sup> among the seauen deadly sinnes, being so precise in the consideration thereof, that  
 the haue deliuered their opinion thus farre of it, that though simply to be idle is not a  
 mortall sinne (as they terme it) yet so to be idle as to be kept thereby from some good ex-  
 ercise, as hearing of Gods word, or helping our brother that wanted our assistance, may  
 make mortall.

Now, because in common sence it had not bene fit nor probable, that  
 spirit and noble courage (as his *Rogero* is described to be) should be daun-  
 tamed all and base companie as these were, therefore you see he defends  
 himselfe against them most resolutely, though their assault seeme terrible, and their num-  
 ber infinite, and in despite of them he proceedeth towards the house of *Logestilla* (by

*Logestilla be-  
tokens vertue.*

vertue) by that craggie and painfull way, and shunneth the other way to  
 meanes of the good warning *Astolfo* had giuen him of the daunger thereof.

These yong Ladies sent from *Alcyna*, which as I noted in the seuenth booke,  
 of honourable and chaste loue; these wanne him without any resistance, and  
 resolute warriour, a dissolute louer: but trow you he can come to *Alcyna*

name of a louer? no, if he be poore, there is no place for him in dame Plea-  
 must spend, he must giue, he must lash it out. *Erisila*, a couetous wretch, keeps

*Erisila.*

age which is vnderstood that many men are stopt from this course of folly, in re-  
 gard of the great charge and expence thereof, and so stay at this bridge; and though no con-  
 sideration of vertue withhold them, yet feare of the charge doth terrifie them. But when *E-*  
*risila* is once ouerthrowne, then they are presently receiued into the bosome of *Alcyna*,

then all the cheare, sporting, dauncing and courting that can be imagined is applied to the  
 welcoming of this youthfull *Rogero*. Thus he is drowned and vterly ouerwhelmed in this  
 gulf of pleasure, which mine author hath set downe so liuely, as it were the very picture  
 of the Prodigall Sonne spoken of in the Scripture, giuen ouer to all vnthriftinesse, all loose-

nesse of life and conuersation. But because the Poet knew very well, that youth of it selfe  
 hath many good qualities of nature, if the same were applied, and that many yong men com-  
 ming to themselves, haue become notable members of their countreys, and worthy  
 patternes of prouidence; therefore he deuisech most excellently a meane whereby

*Rogero* vnwineth himselfe out of the bonds of *Alcyna*, shewing how one day being got-  
 ten from her (a thing that seldome happened vnto him) *Melissa* recalled him againe, and  
 gaue him that Ring that discouered *Alcynas* trumperies, and made her odious in his sight:

so as now he cursed her in his heart, as was a curse that euer he had set his loue so basely.  
 This is to be vnderstood, that a man sotted in the fond pleasures of this world, entring  
 into godly consideration with himselfe of his owne estate, heareth *Melissa*, which is to be

*Consideration.*

vnderstood the diuine inspiration of the grace of God, calling him from the damned course  
 of life, to an honest and vertuous course; and by that Ring which signifieth reason, he  
 discouereth the odious filthinesse of that which seemed to him before most pleasant and  
 amiable.

Therefore not without verie good cause doth the notable writer (I noted in the be-  
 ginning of this treatise) lay downe in the very first chapter of his booke the daunger and  
 inconueniences that grow to men for lacke of consideration, vsing also in another place  
 among many other diuine similitudes this one, that men are caried by inconsideration to

their euersliding ruine with their eyes closed, even as Hawkes are caried hooded verie qui-  
 etly, which if their sight were free, would neuer leaue bating till they had broken their  
 lines, or vterly tyred themselves: but notwithstanding that the Ring of Reason ma-

*Simile.*

him discern these people deformities of *Alcyna*, yet it is foolish to see what won-  
 impediments are set in his way ere he can discharge himselfe of this receiued mi-

The Faulkner, the horse, the hawke, the dogge, that do all assaile him after a strange fa-  
 the particular Allegorie whereof, I touched in the eight booke, though to say truth



I needed not so curiously to haue sought for such a hidden meaning in them, when as verie things themselves are so vntemperatly vsed by many, that they keepe them from ciuities and more honorable actions: How many men giue themselves so extreame to these hunters, haukes, hounds, and horses, that they cannot scarce afford an houre to the studie of wisdom and temperance? though I do not vtterly condemne the honorable vse of them all, for recreation, so as a man would remember, *Ne quid nimis*, or English Prouerbe saith, Too much of one thing is good for nothing.

Now when these difficulties be ouercome, then yet for a great while way full, the weather is hot, the Sunne parcheth, *Rogero* rideth soli without compnie or good fellowship; and by and by another temptation assailes him: Ladies sporting themselves by the sea side would stay him; one offers him wine increasing his thirst with the sight of it, another inuites him to alight, the third railes vpon him for his inciuillitie: The first of these is our concupiscence, that with a perpetuall thirst keth vs couet things hurtfull for our selues: the second is ease, that is loth to much labour, but is still perswading vs to giue ouervertuous workes, because they are painfull: the third is the mockerie and lewd vse of the world, as I haue noted in this place, to iest at such as liue austerely and vertuously, as though it were a folly in mind, whereas indeed, it is the onely noble disposition that may be, to follow and resist pleasure.

These three women though *Rogero* fled away, yet they followed him, which signifieth, that our owne imperfections euermore follow vs, neither can we be ridde of them, and it suffiseth not to ouercome them once, but that we must wage continuall battell with them. Now against this perpetuall miserie we are strengthened by discipline, & made able to withstand them, which is signified by the wise and graue Pilot, that transport *Rogero* by sea, from *Alcyna* to *Logestilla*; and in sooth it may well be called a sea, in which querie waue is readie to ouerwhelme vs, and euerie storme able vtterly to discourage us, if we had not a good Pilot both safely to guide vs, and chearfully to encourage vs, by what entertainment we shall finde, if we come once into her harbour.

## 40

In the tenth  
booke.

*There is the food that fills and neuer cloyeth,  
There is the loue, the beautie and the grace,  
That maketh him most best that them enioyeth,  
To which compar'd all other ioyes are base:  
There hope nor feare, nor care, nor minde annoyeth,  
Respect of persons, nor regard of place,  
The minde still finding perfect contentation,  
Resting it selfe in vertuous contemplation.*

## 41

*There are (saith he) some better lessons taught,  
Then dancings, dallings, and daintie dyet,  
There shall you learne to frame your minde and thought  
From will to wit, to temp  
This is the path by which you may be brought  
Into the perfect paradise of quiet:  
This is the Pilot to *Rogero* told,  
And all the while their course they forward hold.*

This encouragement and comfort was somewhat, but by and by they discovered a great nauie sent from *Alcyna*, which vndoubtedly had surpris'd them, had not *Logestilla* which drawne



rawne from the Greeke, is to say wisdome) sent a whole armie in their ayde : which signifieth writings, exhortations, instructions, examples, and precepts, that haue power in them, both to confound *Alcyna*, and to recouer all that had bene wonne by force, in former times from *Logestilla*.

The foure vertuous Ladies that are sent to guard *Rogero*, as appeareth by their names and by their Epithets giuen them by mine author, are the foure cardinali vertues, iustice, prudence, temperance, and fortitude. Which though it be well described in the foresaid x. book in the last booke, where he prayseth a Cardinals vertues, I meane to adde a fift vnto them, and makes them fise, it doth much better:

77

*Then on another part was to be vewd,  
His vertues, each one by themselves distinct,  
Prudence, and temperance, and fortitude,  
And Iustice, and a fift so nearely likt  
To these, that who with it is not endued,  
The rest may seeme blotted, or quite extinct,  
Bountie imployd in giuing and in spending,  
A speciall grace to all the other lending.*

These be the Captaines of that Armie Royall, that can ouercome legions, nay millions of vices: and sure if you will not allow the last of them for a principall leader, yet you must at least, make him treasurer and paymaster, or else it is great doubt that for lacke of pay, you will be driuen to Cassyre your bands. But to proceede, perhaps it will seeme strange to some, as it did to my selfe at the first reading, how it comes to passe that *Logestilla* and *Alcyna* are the one legitimate, the other a bastard; and that the bastard hath vsurped vpon the other state, and hath scarce left her aboue one strong hold. The exposition is this.

The nature of man (by which is vnderstood our appetite or affection,) which ought to be subiect vnto reason, and to be gouerned thereby, this nature (I say) was at the first a lawfull child of God, was the spirite of God framed to his owne likenesse, there to gouerne and rule by reason and wisdome, so that afore nature was corrupted, all the partes of our minde were in a perfect accord and harmonie, vnder the gouernement of reason, or rather euerie one setting forward it selfe to vertuous actions: but when this first perfection was lost, and that same great rebellion was made, to the ouerthrow of that quiet and settled state, the heart became so weake, as it was not able to endure the continuall assaults of the flesh that assailed it, and in the end was content to take part with them, against the reasonable part of the minde. And now euerie part of the body engenders such seeds of concupiscence, that nature is become a bastard siter to reason, and vsurpes that gouernement that is due onely to her, and leaueth her onely one castell, which was so strongly situated that it was impregnable: so that now reason is retired as it were to her principall fortresse, to the head, the rest of this kingdome being possessed (by *Alcyna*) by pleasure and fond delights. Now then, what maruell is it, if this new *Hercules*, described by mine author, do with so great diffultie, and through so many impediments, clāmer vp to this high seate of *Logestilla*, built with such rare workmanship, and of such pure stuffe, that a man may in the walls thereof, see euen into his very soule and conscience:

*In these men see the vertue, and the vice,  
What cleaueth to their inward soule and vice.  
Who lookes in such a glasse may grow so wise,  
As neither flatering praises shall him blind,  
With tickling words, nor undeserued blame,  
With forged faults shall worke him any shame.*



As for those gildings and paintings, that were in the Pallace of *Alcyna*, though the show of it were glorious, the substance of it was drosse, and nothing but Alcume, and cosenage: but these of *Logestilla*, be precious stones indeed, of inestimable vallue. The looking glasse and mirrour, that will shew vs how our soule and our minde is spotted with he that would vse such a glasse, what a notable Antidote it would be against the poyson of flatterie?

You faire Ladies, that spend so many houres in looking and prying if this shadow fit handsomely, if your rebatoes be well set, if your <sup>and</sup> on your heads, and the pendent iust in the middle of your foreheads, <sup>the staff of the</sup> matters you will not beleue your maids eyes, but you will see it your selues, <sup>are you</sup> so credulous to beleue lyers and flatterers, that tell you your chastities and <sup>her womanlie</sup> vertues be extolled and praysed, and will not looke in that true glasse, to see if <sup>you</sup> deserue or no?

It is true, that men are no fit iudges of themselves, because commonly parciall in their owne cause, yet is it as true, that he that will dispose indifferentlie of himselfe, can do it better then any bodie else, because further into his owne minde and heart, then any one else can. But now <sup>come to</sup> this faire house of *Logestilla*, to which I would so fayne inuite you all and Ladies, that reade this discourse, here be sweete gardens, here be wholesome herbes, here is the continuall spring: Here that vnbridled horse, that bare away *Roccos* so farre out of Europe, is taught to obey the rodde and the rayne, and made seruiceable and at commaundement. Further, by the helpe of the ring (as was touched before) manie that had bene transformed into brute beastes, were restored to their shape againe: these were such as were so drowned in vice, and in beastlie pleasures, that <sup>part of the</sup> reasonable man was left in them. *Astolfo* was restored to his shape, that <sup>one turned</sup> into a myrtle, (now the myrtle was said euer to haue bene *Venus* tree. <sup>cause he</sup> was so entangled in Venerie, that he could not get himselfe out of it, <sup>is fayned</sup> to haue taken roote in the ground as the tree doth, and so was <sup>that without</sup> *Melyssas* assistance he could not haue stirred from thence. <sup>see mine</sup> Authour vnder a prettie fiction, hath brought you to behold <sup>who</sup> miserie of the life of man, and there in the beginning of the seuenth booke, he exhorteth men to consider the meaning of his tale,

*Wherefore to some my tale may serue a fable.  
Whose wits to understand it, are fit able.*

But now because there are diuers kindes of errours, in this laberinth of loue, and as diuers means by which men offend, as there are diuers sortes of men that offend; therefore you <sup>perceiue</sup> how my authour hath fille the whole booke with sundry examples both of <sup>men</sup> and women: as beside *Orlando* whom I spake before, whose madnesse gaue the name to his worke, calling it *Orlando Furioso*, ther is *Sacrapant*, that followes *Angelica* the Indies, and is still foded out by her with fair <sup>es</sup>. There is *Renaldo*, that is extreame in loue with her, till the water of diuine draue away, and cooled the heat of his affection, and th <sup>full of examles of</sup> and women, that in this matter of loue, haue bene notable in one kinde or o <sup>of</sup> which I will touch some speciall ones, and omit the rest, as not so much worth the standing vpon.

The ordinarie <sup>of loue</sup> are set downe to vs of the good and the bad in couples <sup>*elica* and *Doralice*</sup> of the worse kinde, and *Olympia* and *Bracar* of the better sort. In *Angelica*, the excellentnesse of her beausie red such an ex-  
ding pride, that disdayning the greatest and worthiest Princes hat liued in



she cast herselfe away at last vpon a poore seruing-man, for a iust recompence of her to aughtie conceipt. In *Doralyce*, is set downe a patterne of great lightnesse of manners and hauiour, that first louing *Rodomont*, and being forcible taken by *Mandriward*, yet in one night was so well pacified toward him, that she was content to tarrie with him, and in the end refused *Rodomont* openli for him, (though in so doing one might make a reasonable excuse for her. but a tere when *Mandricard* was slaine, she could haue found in her

*Roderigo* also. In *Olympia* contrarie, we see an honest chaste loue, though hath it in my opinion some reproofe, namely that it was too sodaine violent. But in the worthy *Bradamant* is a perfect patterne of true honorable loue to *Roger*, merited first by his value, by his courage, by his behauiour, by his worth, which made her worthie of her loue. In her you shall finde no rashnesse, no want of constancie, of faith, all other due regards: for neither could her sundry ouerthwart chances, neither the length of time, (which is wont to breed alterations,) nor the obstinate couetous father, nor the vaine ambition of her mother, nor the state and Empire of *Leon*, promised riches and treasures his Father and he possessed, once withdraw her from her first loue. Further, *Bradamant* did not rashlie fall in loue, as did *Olympia*, but through the propheticke *Melyssa*, and tokens from aboue, did encourage her to her honest forgiuing her of her noble posteritie, and of all those blessings that accompanie the same: so as indeed, in her onely we haue a patterne of honest and commendable loue before marriage.

Now there are in like manner two payre of married women, one worthie all reproch, the tother meriting all praise. The shamelesse *Orygilla* and her filthie *Martano*, are a patterne of base and filthie loue, grounded vpon ribauldrie, and continued with all fraudulent practises that may be; in which also the fond affection, and doting fancie of *Grifino* is to be pitied that could not see her trecherie til with notable shame and scorne, he felt the fruits fit.

Another patterne of lewdnesse in all kindes, is the tragicall life of the abominable *Gabryne* for her filthie lust, brake all the lawes of hospitalitie and humanitie: First tempting *Fylandro* most impudentlie, then accusing him most falselie, lastlie circumuventing him most subtilly, and making him with a most rare crueltie to kill her husband, and marrie her selfe; and finallie when she grew wearie of him she found the meanes to poyson both him and the Phisition, and not resting there, spent all her life after in working all kinde of treason and mischiefe, euen to her last gaspe, which she fet out on the gallowes. Such *Gabrynas* and *Medeas* as this perhaps there are in the world, that to effect their diuellish purposes, will not sticke to practise any kinde of trecherie and poysoning, yea and take a pride and felicitie when they can ouerthrow noble houses, set great men together by the eares, cause bloudshed, and ruine, and hurlyburly in Cities and common wealthes, and cause brothers to cut off one anothers head: wher vpon that old verse may seeme to haue bene made vpon some ground.

*Non audet Stigijs Plauto tentare, quod audet  
Presbiter, effrenis plana, fraudis anus.*

But now in recompence of these two passing lewd women, we haue two excellent vertuous women: *Fiordeliege* married to *Brandimart*, and *Isabell* espoused to *Zerbino*. Which, I thinke mine author hath deuised to haue great aduersities, and to haue lost their husbands vnfortunatly, to the end to lay before all chaste and vertuous matrones an example, the trouble that happen to their husbands, must be a meane to set forth their praise the more. And indeed, to attribute to them the highest point of glorie in this kinde that may be, you see how he maketh them leese their husbands euen in the prime of their owne



yeares: *Orbino* slaine in France, and *Brandimart* in Barbarie, and both of them nam'd their wives at their last houre, to shew how dearely they loued them; which causeth e to breake into such piteous lamentations, as would moue not onely a tender hearted adie but euen a valiant hearted man, to shed teares with compassion. Further, the deathes of both these Ladies, in sundry kindes are most admirable: *Ferdeliege* builds her a little roome in the sepulcher of her husband, and there becomes an Anchorite. *Isabella* falling into the hand of the barbarous *Rodomont*, and hauing no way to save her chastitie from violence, deuised a meane to redeeme it with the price of her life: Oh worthy *bell* at d be painted in Tables, and set foorth in clothes of Arres, for an example to a y ui La. of constant chastitie.

But now to goe forward, we haue to consider likewise of the inchaunted Pallace, which as it were in an infinite laberinth, so many braue young men of great honour loose themselves in seeking their loues, and when they would depart thence, they find themselves called backe, and thinke they see their faces, but when they come, ohinke them, they vanish out of their sights, and turne to shadowes. This inchantment referred to loue, that painteth forth in our fancie, the Image of the party loued, as to vs the sweete speech, the seemely behauiour, the gracious lookes of our Iewell of worship: but neither can we finde it when we seeke for it, neither doth the Image make a pose, still labouring to attaine to the end which more do misse then hit, and yet when they do attaine to it, for the most part they grow as wearie, as before they grew fond. We may say that *Dido* was in this laberinth, when as *Virgil* describeth her:

*At Regina graui iam dudum sanciacura,  
Vulnus alit venis, & caco carpitur igni,  
Multa viri virtus animo, multusq; recurat,  
Gentis honos: haerent infixi pectore vultus,  
Verbaq; nec placidam membris dat cura quietem*

Wherefore this passion may well be called *That tickling wound* that cruel foe, as it is in the first booke. And no maruell if *Rogero* once againe, hauing lost his ring of reason, be drawne into this inchaunted Pallace. Onely *Astolfo* (taught by a booke *Logestilla* gaue him, to take away a fantastickall Image, or some such witchcraft as lay vnder the threshold) dissolued the inchantment. But whereas it is said that *Atlanta* did build it, thereby to keepe *Rogero* in an idle life, therein he toucheth the fond tendernes of diuers parents ouer their children, who bringing them vp in wantonnesse, ease and pride, make them the more apt to fall into this enchanting laberinth. Many more examples are alledged by mine author: as that prettie Comickall tale of *Ariodant* and *Genewra*: the fantastickall tale of *Norandino* and *Lucyna*, that were lapt in goates skinnes: the death of *Marganorres* two sonnes: the tale of the Mantuan knight that had the married mens cure. All which haue good Moralities, and may be fitly applyed to this common place of loue.

Now the other common place is of armes, which indeed is more pertinent to matters of state, (as to the more propriate life and manners,) and in this mine author hath carried his inuention verie daintie, and well worth the marking. For he propoundeth to vs the example of two mightie Emperours, one of which directeth all his counsels by wisdom, learning, and Religion; But the other being rash, and vnexperienced, ruined himselfe and his countrie: and in this storie though much of it be fayned, yet are set downe the verie ordinarie causes, and the vsuall sequels of all such garboyles and troubles. It is almost an vsuall matter to reade of young Princes, that being left in peace and prosperitie, and hauing so much wealth they know not what to do withall, straigh follow their full humour of reuenging some (I know not what) old iniuries, and be put in hope by such hare-brayne Counsellours as *Rodomont* and his fellowes foreat conquestes and



d in the end ouerthrow indeed great armies, not of their enemies, but of their owne, as, the Oracle mocked *Crasus*:

*Crasus Halim penetrans magnam peruertet opum vim.*

So did *Hanniball* in Italie (tho' he indeed he preuayled a great while) led thereto by a dreame, as some writē. Now in these matters of warres, the chiefe fault commonly is, in those Counsellors that put a sword into a mad-mans hand, by putting such conceits to Princes heads. Yet w<sup>th</sup> *Agramant* hath his graue *Sobrino*, that aduised him at the first not to inuade other mens countreyes, but to keepe his owne; that aduiseeth him to prevent mischief in time, and to sue for peace: that aduiseeth him to put the matter to combat of one man, and the partie overcome to pay yearely tribute: and finally, that counsellet him with faithfull counsell, but with valiant seruice, sticketh to him to the last; but his rashnesse and follie ouerthrowes all the good that could be done him. These youthfull Counsellours, on whom *Agramant* did so much relye, did not follow him by their fond perswasions to his ill succeeding warres, but also in the heat thereof, when their seruice should haue stood him in most need, and in a manner quite confounded him with their continuall iarring and squaring among themselves about matters of small or no importance: So that, as *Agamemnon* was with for ten *Nestors*, and could haue bene content to haue spared *Achilles*: so *Agramant* had iust cause to haue wished for ten *Sobrinos*, and to haue spared *Rodomont*, and the other great champions. And by the way it is to be noted, how Poeticallie mine author sendeth Discord among them, and where she was found, as you might reade in the fourteenth booke. Now to *Agramant* is on the other side opposed *Charles*, a graue and well stayed Prince, wise and valiant, not parciall in doing iustice, bountifull in rewarding seruice, and which is all in all, deuout without hypocrisie, and putting indeed his affiance in God, and consequently in his extremities is ayded by God; and in the end obtaining a most happie victorie, driuing both his enemies out of his countrey, and gayning from them a great part of theirs. Further my author hath set downe diuers formes (as I may call it) of valiant men, though not all in a sort to be imitated, but some rather great to be reprobued; *Mandricard* is described to be exceeding full of courage, and withall verie quarrellsome, and yet with good successe: He takes *Doralyce* from her guard, he fights with *Orlando*, with *Rodomont*, with *Marfisa*, and still he holds his owne. But this good fortune is a cause to fooles of their ouerthrow; for (as our English Prouerb saith) *So oft goes the pitcher to the water, at last it comes broke home*. *Mandricard* would needs quarrell with *Rogero* about their cognisance, and by him is slaine after all his brauerie. This is written for a warning to such as are of *Mandricardos* disposition, to take heed of *Mandricardos* end.

Likewise in *Rodomont* there was exceeding strength of bodie, as well as courage of minde, but the same was gouerned with no deliberation; which caused him to attempt, and to giue ouer things attempted very sodainly, which finally turned to be hurtfull to himselfe as well as to others.

On the other side, *Orlando* was a franke natured man, valiant & curteous, *Ferram* stout, but too full of cravking, and therby procuring himselfe enmities: *Orlando* full of ciuillencie as well as courage: *Zerbino* a patterne of a most noble & thankful nature, and though not fortunate, yet most famous in despite of fortune.

*Rogero*, the verie Idea and perfect example of a true knight, that will by no meanes break his faith and his honour, that seekes no aduantage of the enchanted sheeld, that to be grateful to *Don Leon Augustus*, would leese both loue and life, and finally, that in defence of his honour killeth *Rodomont*.

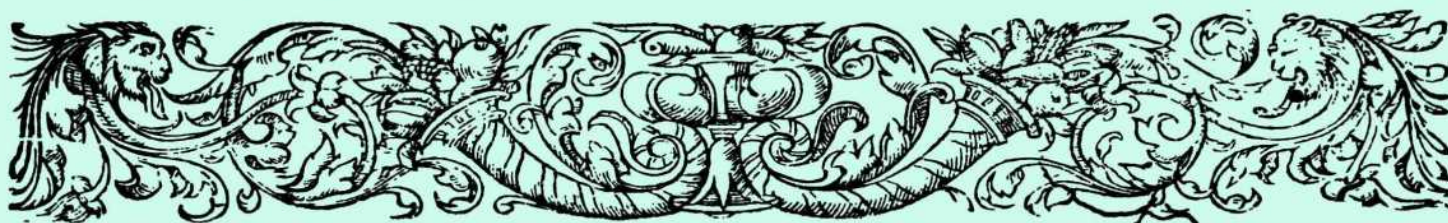
ther, as I haue often noted in the seuerall bookes, it is a verie pleasing thing to see the due punishment of the wicked doers, and the procurers of euill, as besides those noted, you may see that none scapeth of the xxxij. kings that came out of Affrick, but



*Rogero* and *Sobrino*, the one a perswader to peace, the other, a iust warriour, and true his word.

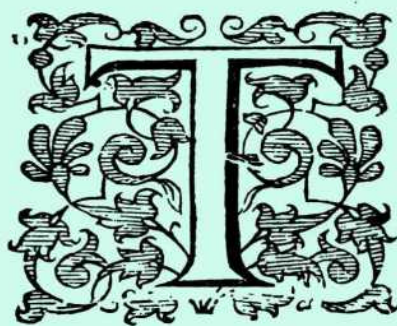
Beside, in *Astolfo* is a praise of learning, who with his sounding horne, by which is can eloquence, and with his booke (betokening wisdom) oth the gifts of *Logestilla*, becometh a tamer of monsters, as well as a conquerour of men, and accomplissheth greater matters alone, then all the rest do with their force and arme.

Further, in the praise of learning, and to moue Princes to fauour learning, he shewes how onely the pen of the learned is that that preserues the good fame of Princes, as for the common foolish Pamphlet-writers he condemneth them, likening them to Vultures, carrelling Crows, and chattering Pyes, that are not able to saue their friends name from the lake of obliuion, because their writings are not durable. Thus much I thought good to note of generall Allegorie of the whole worke, to giue you occasion to ruminare, as it were to digest that, which you before in reading, did perhaps swallow downe without chewing. Now me thinke it is euen high time to take away, and bid much good at least no harme do it you, or if you thinke it will for all this, the best phisicke I can prescribe you, is to take a leafe or two of *S. Matthewes Gospell*, or of *S. Pauls Epistle* and restore you to your perfect health.



# THE LIFE OF ARIOSTO BRIEFLY AND COMPENDIOUSLY GATHERED OUT OF SVNDRIE ITALIA writers, by IOHN HARRINGTON.

Who are worthy to have their liues written.



Those that performed anie notable worke in their liues, either for the profite of their countrey, or for aduancement of learning, or in any other thing that hath made them worth the talking of after their deceasse, haue for the most part both bene recorded in the Histories of the times, and also had their names eternized by speciall Treatises written of their liues; by which the ensuing ages might know their country, their parentage, their time of birth, their education, their disposition, their actions, and their end: Whether it be that men are willing to prosecute their deserts with a thankfull remembrance after their deaths, as it were for a kind of recompence of their trauell in this life, whether for the encouragement of those that liue, to make true hunt after fame. Neither one haue men of good deserts bene praised for their vertues, but also the haue bene blazed for their faults, that those whom desire of fame cannot allure to well doing, yet feare shame and ignominie, may terrifie from leud actions. In both which kinds, diuerse haue employed their pennes, both in former ages and now of late, to the great good and delight of the studious reader. Witnesse *Plutarks* liues called his Paralels, comparing the notable men of Rome and Greece: *Suetonius* booke of the twelue *Cesars*: anothers after him of ten Emperours (excellently written in Italian): And of our owne countrey an our owne language, the *Mirror of Magistrates*, in which the life of all of many great person is very well set downe, and in a good verse. Now (as I say) this being a common custome and as it were a due reward to men of good desert, no marvel if this Poet, whose worke

*Plutarks liues*  
*The xij. Cesars.*  
*The x. Emperours.*  
*The Mirror of Magistrates.*



work hath bene acceptable to so many thousands, haue also found this fauour, haue  
 life written, which hath bene done by three Italians that I haue read, namel *Giero-*  
*amo Porro* of Padoa, *Gierolamo Garofala* of Ferrara, and by *Simon Fornari* of Reggio:  
 out of whose three reports I haue gathered this compendious treatise, to satisfie such as  
 are desirous to know what his *Ariosto* was, whom I haue so greatly extolled in my Apo-  
 logic, as a benefactor of all studious mindes, and on whose worke I haue employed so much  
 time to put into English, and to bestow so many notes as I haue done vpon the  
 expounding of his Allegories, and whatsoeuer else I iudged fit for the readers of weaker ca-  
 pacities.

First therefore you must know, that the house or name of the *Ariosti* came first out of *Ariosto his pa-*  
 Bologna, (not some haue vainely surmised deriued of the *Aristy* or *Ariouisti*) for yet *rentage.*

name is remaining in Bologna in good account and reckning, and was long since  
 tion for gentry and wealth, that *Margues Obyso* the third of the house of  
 it no disparagement to him to marrie a wife out of that stocke, called *Lippa*  
*Ariosta*. his Ladie was of excellent beautie and wit, and bringing with her vnto Ferra-

ot the *Ariosti* of her kin and followers, by her fauour and countenance, they so  
 well fetthere their nests in Ferrara in her life, that they held euer since the account of  
 gentlemen the better sort: But (admit their familie were of good reckning before)  
 yet the excellencie of this famous man we now treat of, by the consent of all that write

of it, hath greatly increased the account and credit thereof. His fathers name was *Ni-* *His father.*  
*cholas Ariosto*, and both his father and vncles bare offices in their countrey of good va-

lew, his mothers name was *Aria* of the house of *Malagutse* in Reggio, as appeareth *His mother.*  
 in one of his Satyres where he nameth her. Now though this *Lodowike Ariosto* were

his fathers eldest sonne, yet he had foure brothers and fiue sisters, the names of his bro-  
 thers himselfe set downe in his second Satyre, *Charles, Alexander, Galasso, and Gabriell*,

where also he complaineth that *Mercurie* was no great friend to his house, meaning *His brothers.*  
 that their wealth was but small, because none of them had vsed to increase it by traf-

ficke or merchandize. Now though his father were a man of good reckning, as ha-  
 uing bene in his youth a companion of Duke *Borso*, and after that an officer to Duke *Her-*  
*cules*, in a good place, namely his *Maiordomo*, which I take to signifie as much as great

after or steward of his house, and often employed as Ambassadour from him to the  
 Pope, and to the king of France, and consequently receiued of him great preferments,  
 as well in dignities, as renews and fees, yet it seemeth that he liued euer so at the vt-  
 termost of his abilitie, that he pursed vp little to the increase of his stocke, and thereby

left his heire no verie rich man. But to speake of the sonne of whom I chiefly intend my  
 discourse, certaine it is that from his verie childhood, he shewed great tokens of forward-  
 nes in all studie, but specially in Poetrie, in so much that his father yet liuing, he trans-  
 lated the tale of *Pyramus* and *Thisbee* into verse, making in a manner a Comedie of it,

*His towards  
 in his child-  
 hood.*

and so caused his brothers and sisters to play it. Howbeit his father being vtterly vn-  
 learned, and rather regarding what studie would be most profitable to be followed by  
 sonne, then what his inclination did best serue him to, compelled him to studie

the ciuill law in which hauing pooded some yeares verie displeasantly, and with no great  
 prooffe, at last left it vtterly, and fell to more sweete studies; for the barbarousnesse of the  
 phrase agreed not with the sharpnes of his conceit, in so much that he writeth of himselfe

(though rather pchaps of his modestie, then that it was so)

*Passar, vent'anni mi trouaua, e vopo  
 Hauer di Pedagogo, ch'a fatica  
 Inteso haur i quel che tradusse Esopo.*

That is to say, that being twentic yeare old, he had need of a schoolmaster conster



*Esopes* fables; though I see not how that could be, considering that being verie young, they say he made and openly pronounced an Oration in Latine, that gaue euen then great hope of him: the best likelihood is, that when his father set him to the Law, which he had no minde vnto, that then he lost his Latine againe, which is one done, and so was glad to fall to it freshly, after he came to mans estate, he did verie studiously, reading manie bookes, and especially *Horace*, whom he studied so thoroughly, that he was able to expound diuers hard and obscure places, which were then neuer vnderstood, and it is obserued, that when *Leo* the tenth was Pope, both his holinesse and diuers great Prelates in Rome fauored him greatly, euen in that respect. Thus as I said, his naturall inclination carrying him chiefly to Poetrie, he gaue himselfe to read those Poets that were of best account, both in Latine and Italian, his worke w shewes, in his oft and excellent imitations of them, and his gift was such that though his youngest brother *Gabriel* wrote reasonable well, and by meanes of a had, gaue himselfe wholly to studie, yet he came so farre short of him that no comparison: so that as one said of *Tully*, *Satis est non modo in vna familia sed in vna ciuitate esse vnum Rhetorem*; it is enough to haue one good Orator not onely in a family, but euen in a whole Citie: So one may say of *Ariosto*, it is enough that all Italy had one so excellent a Poet. Yet he was often wont to lament as before him *Petrarch* and before them both *Ouid* is noted to haue done, that his father still draue him from Poetrie, as that verse witnesseth,

*Abi lasso, quando hebbi al Pegaseo mela  
L'eta disposta, e che le fresche guancie,  
Non si videan anchor fiorir, d'un pelo  
Mio padre mi caccia con spiedi e lancia  
Non che con sproni, a volger testi e chiose.  
Em' occupo cinq, anni in quelle ciancie.*

But to proceed, when he had prettily entered himselfe in Poetrie, and was of the age of foure and twentie, his father departed his life, and as I in part noted before, left him no rich man, whether that the inheritance was deuided among all the brothers, as in some places of England and Wales, the custome of the Gaulesinde alloweth, or that his liuing stood most vpon offices and fees that dyed with him: but thus they write, that he was then greatly perplexed with the charge of so great a familie, and with bestowing his sisters, and prouiding for his brothers, that he was euen readie to haue giuen ouer all his studie, had not emulation that he had with a Gentleman of his owne name and kinne, called *Pandolfo Ariosto*, still renewed in him his former disposition: but in proceffe of time this *Pandolfo* dyed, with which his friend and cosin were greatly discouraged and for a time againe discontinued but yet so as the world before that time had some conceit of his hapnesse of wit, and of his gift in well writing: In the end being toward thirtie yeares, he was for his good parts entertained into the seruice of Don *Hippolite* Cardinall of Este, at fauour of learning and good witts, and one that kept continually in his court great store of excellent learned men, among whom *Ariosto* was receiued in verie honourable sort: and yet to this time he had not written any worke of fame, but some few Sonnets forbearing belike to write till he were well stuffed with matter; as wise builders beginne not their buildings till they haue brought their Lumber and stone and timber in place, lest one should stay for the other. At his very entrance into this Cardinals suite, he determined, as it should seeme, to make some Poem, finding strength to serue and though he could haue accomplished it very well in Latine yet he chose rather

His seruice of  
Cardinall  
*Hippolito*.



his native tongue, either because he thought he could not attaine to the highest place of praise, the same being before occupied by diuerse, and specially *Virgil* and *Or d*, or because he found it best agreed with his matter and with the time, or because he had a desire (as most men) to enrich the owne language with such writings as may make it in more account with other nations: but the first of these was the true cause indeed, for when *Bembo* would haue dissuaded him from writing Italian, alledging that he should winne more praise by writing Latine, his answer was, that he had rather be one of the principal and chiefe Tuscan writers, then scarce the second or third among the Latines: adding, that he found his humor (his Genius he called it) best inclining to it. Wherefore going forward with that resolution, of all the Poems that were then in that kind in manner of history they were called *Romanzi*, which in French signifieth briefe notes of occurrents) he chose *Boyardo*, vpon whose worke he would ground, both because he said *Boyardos* worke was cry mans minde, as also because he would shunne the bringing in of new names, and of matter, which he thought would be nothing so pleasant vnto his countrymen, as that of which they had some tast already, and yet withall a desire to know further of being by *Boyardo* left vnperfect. Thus (as I said) he began this worke of his entituled *Orlando Furioso*, being about the age of thirtie yeares, and being entred into the seruice of Cardinall *Hippolito*, howbeit he did not so wholly giue himselfe either to reading for the enriching of his owne wit, or to writing, for the pleasure and profit of others, that he withdrew himselfe from such honorable seruices as he was called to. For when Pope *Iulio* the second had intended to make warre vpon the Duke of Ferrara (whose brother Cardinall *Hippolito* was) master *Lodowicke Ariosto* was chosen as a most fit man to go of Ambassage to him, to pacifie his wrath; the which busines he managed so well, that he waite great reputation of wisdom and discretion at his returning: Howbeit, it was not long after his returne, but that the forenamed Pope, being indeed a man of an vnquiet spirit, and giuen all to the warres, leuied a great power against the Duke, and shipped many of his souldiers, to send them ouer Po the great riuer that runnes by Ferrara, these were met by the forces of the Duke vpon the water, and in that seruice *Ariosto* himselfe demeaned himselfe verie valiantly, and tooke one of the best shippes and best stored with victuall and munition in all the flecte. But these armies being dissolued, the Duke thought good once againe to send to pacifie that same ouer terrible Prelat; and euerie man shunning the office, knowing the furious nature of *Iulio*, *Ariosto* againe for the seruice and safetie of his countrie, aduentured to go, indeed an exceeding aduenture, for the wayes safe in time of warres to go so weakly guarded; neither was that Popes displeasure supportable where he placed the same; yet through both these dangers he waded, and presented himselfe to the Pope; but finding by some priue intelligence, that the place was too hot for him, he gat home againe with great perill to haue mard all his fine inuention, with the losse of that head from whence it came. For this seruice notwithstanding he was greatly both praised and fauoured. Now when things after by the good cesse of the Duke grew to more quiet, then he also betooke him to his quiet studies, & consequently did produce an excellent Poem: But sodainly, when he had made so much thereof, as hee gave great hope to at it would proue an excellent peece of worke, he happened to fall into the Cardinals displeasure, by meanes that he refused to go with him into Hungarie, which though the said Cardinall tooke verie displeased; yet knowing the valew of the man, and his worth, he would not disgrace him openly, though he wanted no enemies to feed and further that ill conceit in him; which master *Lodowicke* finding, was so greatly discouraged, that he intermitted his writing many yeares: and to id the matter, one taking occasion of this eclipse of the Cardinals fauour, put him in suit for a peece and of his ancient inheritance, which was not onely a great vexation to his minde but a charge to his purse, and trauell to his bodie; for vnder the clattering of armour, the noise of great Ordenance, the sound of trumpet and drumme,

Why he wrote  
not in Latine

So did Virgil  
by Homer for  
the same cause

His employ-  
ments.

His ambassage

His seruice by  
sea.

His second am-  
bassage.

His danger to  
haue been put  
to death!

His troubles.



His fauour &  
credit with  
Alfonso.

His Comedies  
he made.

His felicitie in  
translating  
out of Spanish  
& other tongues

His temperance  
in diet.

the neying of hories do not so much trouble the sweete Muses , as doth the brabbling of Lawyers , the paltering of Attorneys , and the ciuill warre or rather most vnciuill disagreeing of forsworne Iurors . Thus was good master *Lodowike* interrupted of his course of writing fourteene whole yeares , euen to the death of the Cardinal high time he had , or rather he tooke to himselfe more libertie of leisure to follow his owne humor and priuate studie , and in proceesse of time finished to great perfection that , which he had begun with great expectation. Yet did the Duke *Alfonso* allure him by all means he could to his court, vsing him like a companion rather then like a seruant , and offering him great offices and preferments if he could haue made him serue him in ordinarie ; but he louing his libertie more then any preferment , refused both his and other great offers of great Princes and Cardinals , as also of Pope *Leo* the tenth , a great fauourer of learning and good wits , of all whom notwithstanding he receiued many graces , and some good giftes ; but for countries sake , and of his gratefull nature he was euer rely of Duke of Ferrara ; and finding that the Duke did delight in his writings , ally in fine Comedies , he made foue : *La Casseria* , *Isuppositi* , *la Lena* , *il Negliante* , *la Scholaistica* : but of this last he made but three act , and it was finished by his brother *Gabriel* . These Comedies the Duke did so highly esteeme , that he built a verie sumptuous stage in a faire large hall at Ferrara , of purpose for a place to haue them plaide and represented in his court : and he vsed other great tokens of fauour to him , but specially ( which is indeed the onely true token of fauour in a Prince ) he gaue him great rewardes , enabling him thereby to build a conuenient house in Ferrara , with a delicate garden to it , in which he vsed often to sit and walke , and make verses , and writing diuers other both wittie and pleasant discourses , or translations out of French or Spanish , with such felicitie and good grace in the Italian , that his doings were in great account with all the Princes of Italy , and they sent him manie giftes for copies of them : but office of charge he was exceeding loth to take, saying, that he would not sell his libertie for the best Hat in Rome , meaning a Cardinals Hat : further he would confesse of himselfe that he was variable in his desires , and in his disposition , and therefore would be tide to nothing . For his dyet he was verie temperate , and a great enemy of excesse and surfetting, and so carelesse of delicates, as though he had had no perseuerance in the tast of meates, in so much as one day a friend of his in sport, used a Muskite to be set before him in steed of a Partrich, but by mistaking of the seruing that set it on the boord, another Gentleman happend to tast it, and so the iest was discouered, and he writeth of himselfe in one place,

*Io non ho troppo giusto de vinande,  
Che Scalcegia, fui degno d'esser al mondo  
Quando videro i huomini di giande.*

His marriage  
doubtfull.

His sonnes bastards.

This is to say, that his tast was not delicate , and that he was fit to haue liued in the world when they fed on Akornes : howbeit , for women I cannot much raise his temperance, for he is noted to haue had dishonest company with one *Alexandra* , though some say he was married to her priuie , and durst not be acknowne of it for feare to leese some spiri- all liuings that he had , which were not lawfull to be held by a married man , but howsoeuer it was , his two sonnes were counted but base borne , though both of them prospered reasonable well in the world , their names were *Virginio* and *Gian Battista* , *Virginio* became a spirituall man , and his father surrendred some of his liuings vnto him , the other became Captaine of a band of the Duke and a man of good account with the Duke . Also there was a Ladie called *Genetra* a faire modest Ladie , whom he made great profession of loue vnto , but whether he toyed her or no, it is not knowne , and therefore we may imagine the best he fell in loue with one ( whether



ther that were this *Genewra* or no, I know not, ) in Florence in the house of *Vespucci*, a kinswoman of his, finding her one day dressing of a cote like an armour for one of her sonnes, against he should go into the great shew that they haue there on midsummer eue (as they were wont to haue here in London, ) whereupon he made that comparison in the 54. stanza of the xxiiij. booke of *Orlando Furioso*, of the wound that the noble *Zerbino* Pince of Scotland, had receiued of *Mandricardo*:

*The Prince so eager was he felt no smart,  
Yet ran the blood out of his brest amaine,  
And of his armour all the former part,  
With crimson streame of blood it did distaine:  
So haue I seene her hand, that to mine hart  
Hath bene a cause of anguish great and paine,  
When she a purple seame or flowre hath drawne,  
In silver kirtle, or in sleue of lawne.*

Also his prettie fantasticall beginning of the fife and thirtieth Canto in the first and second stasse, with the first and second and third of the sixteenth Canto, do proue that he was subiect to that passion of loue, but withall, that his loue was placed vpon women of good worth and of great modestie. Now though I dare not excuse him in this so great a fault, yet partly in respect he was vnmarried, partly because these white diuels haue such a tempting power vpon the earth, me thinkes I should easily obtaine a pardon for him, of all you that reade this short discourse of his life. But omitting this one peccadillo, in all his other proceedings he was verie modest, and iust, and affable, and verie graue and discreet, as he well approued, when after the death of *Leo* the tenth, he was (though halfe against his will) employed by the Duke, as a Lieutenant or high shreue, in the countrie called *Graffignana*, bein then full of factions and diuisions, which he so orderly gouerned, and so well quieted, that he left them all in good peace and concord, leauing among them a verie good report of his wisdom and equitie, and winning not onely the loue of the better sort, but also a wonderfull reuerence of the wilder sort of people, and a great awe euen in robbers and theeues: as appeared one day by a chance that happened to him in the time of that forenamed office. For as he rode one day with fife or sixe horses, in one of the most licentious and disorderly parts of the countrie, he was to passe neere *Rhodea* by a companie of armed men that lay dispersed in the shade, and by meanes of the dissension and falling out of two men of some reckening in that countrey, called *Domenico*, *orotto*, and *Philippo Pacchione*, there were dayly diuers ryots and outrages committed thereabout vpon the passengers by such kinde of men, so as he rode by them not without some doubt to haue bene assaulted: but being past them about a lones cast, the chiefe of the companie demaunded of his man that rode hindermost, what his masters name was, he told him Master *Lodovico Ariosto*, whereupon straight the partie armed as he was, ran after him: *Ariosto* stayed seeing him come after him, doubting in his minde to what purpose he came, but when he came nearer, he craued pardon of him, that he had not done his duty vnto him in his, shewing him how he was *Philippo Pacchione*, desiring his acquaintance, and offering to be at his commaundement with all humilitie and courtesie.

Another peece  
of seruice in  
*Graffignana*.

Loue of the  
people of all  
sorts.

Not long after this, hauing occasion about some matter of his office, to haue some conference with one of the principall Gentlemen of *Lucca*, and appointing the same Gentleman to meete him at a towne called *San Pellegrino*: at his comming thither, he found onely the said Gentleman there ready to attend him, but also diuers others: with Ladies and gentle men that came of purpose to see him, drawne by the sound of his learning and wit, where they feasted him and entertained him verie noblie, euerie one according



Menecmi of  
Plautus.

who could do him most courtesie. Immediately after this commission of his was expired, he was earnestly dealt with to haue bene Ambassadour to Pope Clement, but he would by no meanes accept it. At his comming home giuing himselfe still to writing, the Duke intreated him to translate the Menecmi of Plautus into Italian, which he did with so fit phrases of speech, and so agreeable to the Italian tongue, that it was not counted among the least of his praises: and as for all the others Comedies of his making, they were of such estimation, that they were often represented vpon the stage, and for the most part by Gentlemen, in much that Don Francesco of Este, that was after Marques of Massa, the first time that the Lena was plaid, to grace it the more, rehearsed the Prologue thereof himselfe in publike.

A pretty chace.

One of his Comedies called Casseria, he beganne in the life time of his father (though he intermitted it many yeares after) and one prettie accident they haue noted about it, which shewes his notable gift that he had to apply to imitation in his Poetrie, all that might with good iudgement be vsed in it. It fortuned his father one day grew into some choller with him, and rebuked him verie sharply, and with a long speech and many words for some matter that he laid to his charge, imputing to him verie great blame for it, and all the while he made him no answer, but gaue him full scope and libertie to take his pleasure with him: soone after his brother Gabriel, when his father had turned his backe, began to reason with him vpon the same subiect, and to lay to his charge the same arguments; but he easily refuted him, and with verie good and sound reasons iustified his doing. Why then? (quoth his brother) what ment you, you did not satisfie my father at the first, as you might easily haue done with so reasonable an answer? In troth (said Lodowike Ariosto) to tell you true, I was thinking of Erofilos part in my Comedie I haue begunne of Casseria, and me thought my fathers speech to me, was so fit to be assigned to that part of an old man chiding his sonne, that I forgot while I was thinking to make such a part in sport, that I heard such a

An early riser

part plaid in earnest. In making his Furioso, he would rise sometime at one or two of the clocke in the morning, when he lay at his friendes houses, as well as when he was at home, and then he would cause an old seruant of his one Iohn de' rescia to bring him pen and inke, and so would write many verses when he found himselfe well disposed to it, and then he had a great pleasure to reade them to his friend, both Gentlemen and faire Ladies, among whom by the pleasantnesse of his wit and his good grace, he was euer well accepted. The Duke of Ferrara tooke him for so good a companion, that when he rode an iourney, he would desire to haue him with him, and a litle times he tooke great pleasure to haue him reade to him, as well other bookes as his own, he had so good a grace in reading, and so sweete a pronounciation, and yet not delighting to heare himselfe (a fault that many other haue bene noted of) but alwayes giuing a spirite to that which he read, whether it were his owne writing or other mens, and as he himselfe could pronounce verie well, so was it a great penance to him to heare other pronounce ill, that which himselfe had written excellent well. In so much as they tell of him, how coming one day by a Potters shoppe that had many earthen vessels readie made to sell on his

A good companion  
upon the  
way.

His good pronounciation.

A prettie tale  
how he vsed a  
Potter

shoppe, the Potter fortuned at that time to sing some staffe or other of Orlando Furioso, I thinke that, where Renaldo requesteth his horse to carrie him, in the first booke, the 32. staffe:

*Ferma Baiardo mio: Del ferma il piede  
Che l'esser senza te troppo mi n. ioce.*

Or some such graue matter fit for a Potter, but he plotted the verses out so ill fauouredly (as might well beseeme his durtie occupation) that Ariosto being at least making semblance to be in a great rage withall, with a little walking ticke had in his hand, beeing full of the pots; the poore Potter put quill beside his song, and almost beside



beside himselfe, to see his market halfe mard before it was a quarter done, in a pitifull sowe manner, between railing and whining, asked what he meant to wrong a poore man that had neuer done him iniury in all his life: yes, Varlet, quoth *Ariosto*, I am yet scarce euen with thee for the wrong thou hast done me here afore my face, for I haue broken but halfe a dozen pots of thine, that are not worth so many halfe pence; but thou hast broken and mard a fine stanza of mine worth a marke of gold.

He built (as I partly touched before) a pretie conuenient house and being demaunded *His manner of building.* why he did not build it in more stately manner, considering what sumptuous pallaces, what stately porches, what goodly fountaines he described in his *Furio*, he answered, that words cheaper laud together then stones. Vpon the front of his doore he wrote a verse, that of the builders of this latter age can truly write, or at least if they could, I would say their were strongly built indeed, for more then the third heire:

*Parna, sed apta mihi, sed nulli obnoxia, sed non  
Sordida, parua meo sed tamen are domus.*

That is to say:

*This house is fit, all, but fit for me, but hurtfull vnto none,  
But yet not stately, as you see, yet payd for with mine owne.*

One fault in his building was, he would often set vp and pull downe many parts thereof; and he would say of himselfe, he vsed his house as he did his verses, mend them so much, that he mard them quite. For indeed, as a tree planted in an orchard, if it be once pickt and pruned, it doth further the growing of it, but if a man be euer fiddling about it, it will lese the naturall beautie, and hardly keepe life: so is it with one of his stanzas or staues, s we call them, at the first conceiuing of it, one may mend that which he shall sodainly let downe, but if one will still be turning and wresting of it, he may it leese the grace it had at the first. But what fault soeuer himselfe did finde

certaine it is that to all the great Princes of Italie they were acceptable, as witnessthe the diuers great and honourable gifts they gaue him, as namely a pension of twentie pound by the yeare in Millan with an office to it giuen him by *Hyppolyto*, many suites graunted him by the Duke of *Ferrara*, with great rewards from Pope *Leo* the tenth, from Cardinall *Farnese*, from Cardinall *Bykiena*, and chiefly from Marquesse *Vasto*; and diuers other meaner states that for breuities sake are omitted.

And because I would also draw to an end, will a little rine ouer that that hath bene sayd, with some that hath bene forgoon, conclude, beginning from his birth. He was borne the yeare 1474. in the Castle of Rheggio, his father being then gouernour of the Castle, it stands in Lombardie; he was tall of person, of complexion melancholy, giuen much to studie and musing, and would therewith sometime forget himselfe, he was of colour like an Oliue, somewhat tawnie in his face, but faire skinned otherwise, his haire was blacke, but he quickly grew bald, his forehead was large, his eye-browes thinn, his eye a little hollow but very full of life and very blacke, his nose was large and hookod, as they say the Kings of Persia were, his teeth passing euen and white, his cheeks

*He was borne 1474.*

his beard very thin, his necke well proportioned, his shoulders square somewhat stooping, as almost all that looke much on bookes in their to be, his hand somewhat drie, and a little bow-legged. His counter-

*Tytiano* that excellt drawer so well to the life, that a man would thinke aliue; he was honoured with the Lawrell by the hands of the renowned Emour *Charles* the fift, in the year 1532. which was a yeare before hee dyed. Now for

fit as we haue partly touched before, he was of nature affable, not proud, taking lesse vpon him then others did yeeld vnto him, yet putting vp no knowne iniurie not of his betters; somewhat amorous in his youth, very secret, passing studious, by na-



ture fearefull vpon the water, and therefore when hee went out of a shippe at any time he would see others go before him, vsing that saying, *De puppe nouissimus exi*: though for mine owne part I see no great reason for it. Further, he was not veruero on horse-backe, for they say he would light at euery place of danger, though others neuer it. He loued not to go much abroad out of his owne countrey, in so much as he writes in one of his Satyres,

*Che vuol Andare a torno, a torno vada  
 Egga Ingleterra, Vngheria, Francia e Spagna,  
 A me piace habitar la mia contrada  
 Vista ho Thosana, Lombardia Romagna  
 Quel monte che diuide, e quel che serra  
 Italia, e vn mare e l'altro che la bagna  
 Questo mi basta, il resto della terra  
 Senza mai pagar l'hoste, andrò cercando  
 Con Tolomeo, sia il mondo in pace o in ouerra.*

To this effect in English:

*Who list to ride about, about may ride,  
 See England, Vnghery, and France and Spaine;  
 I loue in mine owne country st'lt to bide,  
 In viewing which, I sure haue taue some paine.  
 Thoscan, Romagna Lombardie, &c.  
 The hills that Italie diuise, and diuide,  
 Suffiseth me, the rest of all the maine  
 With Tolomey to search and eu'ry cost,  
 In peace or warre, and neuer pay mine host.*

His writings  
 do shew he had  
 great skill in  
 Cosmography.

For his workes, I haue touched them before; as of the fiue Cantoes that follow *Furioso* I am partly of opinion they were not his, both because me thinke it far in f of stile from the other, and beside it is not like y that a man of his iudg t, ha g made so absolute a peece of worke as his *Furioso* is, and hauing brought euery m, er to a good and well pleasing conclusion, would as it were marre all againe, and set them all by the eares, and bring *Rogero* into the Whales bellie, and *Astolfo* with him for compa- nie, a little before were conquerours of the world, nmatchable for courage learning; b o proceede is end, h ied til he was 59. yeares old, and tow his latter en he grew sickly, and by much in e m, tred his stomacke; his sic lle grew first as they write by meanes of ill digestion, he bein grosse feeder, an chewing his meate well, so that in the end it weakned him very much. That very night that he sickned and tooke his bed, there happened a great mischance. that was (in the opinion of most men) a presage of his death. The goodly Hall that *Alfonso* had beautified with the most sumptuous Stage that had bene seene in *Ferrara*, (purposely for *Ariosto's* Comedies) was fiered by mischance, and consumed a great part of the Dukes pallace beside. Now if fire (as one *Artimedorus* writeth) betokeneth fame and greatnesse, then this vnfortunate fire fort ing at such a time as it did, may yet serue as a meane to enoble the more this fasti mans the and as Co- mets are said to foreshew the death of Princes, so this terrible fir - last e o ma v as it did, might be thought to foretell his death, chiefly since it consu th work at was built for his great fame and honour. He tooke his sicknesse not onely pati l n cheerfully, affirming that he was willing to die, and so much the rather becau i, that the greatest Diuines were of opinion, that after this life we should know one not cr- affirming to his friends that were by, that many his friends were departed, w very great desire to visite, and that euery houre seemed to him a yeare til it ht see the m. In fine, he dyed in *Ferrara* the eighth of Iuly, 1533. and th gh he were wort y of all honor, yet



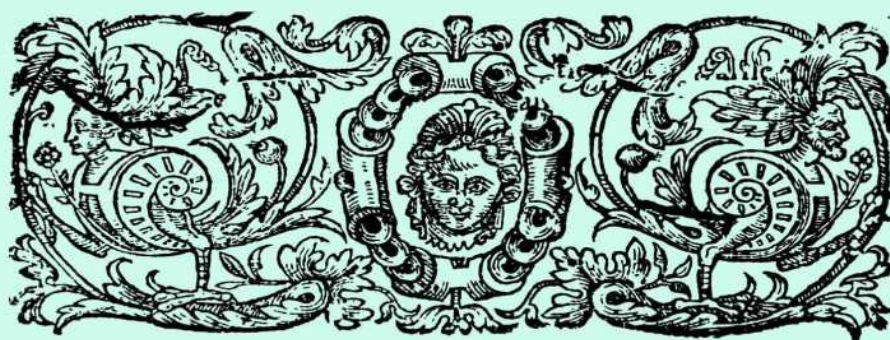
yet this was all the honour he had done at that time, that the Monkes of *S. Benet* buried him in their Church (and contrary to their custome, which is neuer to go to burials) went with iall, and that there was scarce a man that could write, but did honor him with a ph, his bones were after taken vp by one *Sygnor Augustino*, and layd in a very faire with his statue from the girdle vpward, in the forenamed Church of *S. Benet*. And close vp this whole discourse of his life, with the greatest prayse, hee was a most chaste and honest man, as appeared both by his great care he had of his aged mother (whom he speaks of often in his *Satyr*s and other writings (saying in one place.

*T'eta di cara madre, mi percuote, De pietà il cuore.*

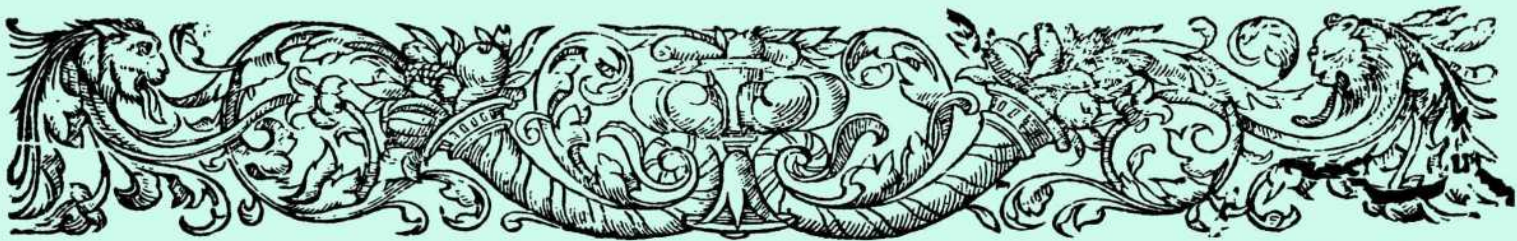
and also by this example that is recited of him, of an aged Priest it hauing three or foure fat benefices, was in great doubt to be poysoned for greedinesse of them, by some of his next Aduowsons, and in respect of the great honestie of *M. Lodowike Ariosto*, let him before all his owne kinne or friends with whom he would sojorne as himselfe and indeed it was a good boost,

*Mane a voi ne de pui giunti a lui  
D'amicitia fidar' inqua si volle  
Io di fuor tutti sc'elto vinco fui.*

To conclude, his learning, his good behauiour, his honestie, made him both beloued of good men in his life, and bewayled of all honest men in his death, so as me thinke reading ouer his life, I could find in my heart to wish (sauiug for some very few things) *Sic mihi contingat viuere sicq; mori.*







# AN EXACT AND NECESSARIE

## TABLE IN ORDER OF ALPHABET, VVHERE

### IN YOV MA READILIE FINDE THE NAMES

of the principall persons treated in this work, with the chiefe matters that concerne them.



**A** *Cleon*, pag. 85. a notable hunter and a cuckold, and for that cause feyned to haue had hornes for the latter of the two properties, and to haue bene deuoured with his own dogs for the former, because he was beggered and consumed by them.

*Aglaure*. 307. daughter of *Erichonius* king of Athens, she is said to haue bene turned to a stone, and her fault was this, because she presumed to looke vpon *Erichonius*, that was committed to her custodie by *Pallas* with charge not to presume to open the basket he was kept in.

*Agramant* Emperour of the Turkes, sonne of *Tramano*, alias king of Affricke, alias the Southern king. He came into Fraunce to auenge his fathers death. pag.

He besiegeth Paris very straightly. 61. musters his men. 103. assauleth Paris. 110. continueth his assault. 113. 2. is repulsed and besieged in his tents. 142. is rescued. 21. is troubled with the contention of his Princes, and is able to compose them. ibid. is discomfited by *Renaldo*. 254. flieth to the siege of *Biserta*. 320. his Oration to *Marsilio*, *Sorano* and the other Princes. ibidem. his challenge on *Rogeros* head. 322. takes an oth of truce. 323. breakes the truce 326. discomfited by land. 331. flieth to sea. ibidem. is men mutinous. ibidem. discomfited at sea by *Dudon*. 332. flies, and would kill himselfe. 336. meeteth *Gradasso*. 337. sends a challenge to *Orlando*, three to three. 337. his stout answer to *Brandimart*. 345. fights and is disarmed by *Brandimart*. 348. is slaine by *Orlando*. 352.

*Agrican* king of Tartarie and father to *Mandricard* pag. 7.

*Albracca* a towne in the East Indies pag. 7.

*Alcyna* a famous witch or Faerie. She tooke *Astolfo*, and transformed him to a mirtle. pag. 44. entertaines *Rogero*. 50. the description of her beauty. ib. the description of her deformitie. 53. she pursues *Rogero* by land. 58. by sea. 59. she is discomfited by *Logestilla*. ibid.

*Aldiger* bastard sonne of *Bono* entertaineth *Rogero* the 35. booke. staffe 63. hurt by *Mandricard*. pag. 210.

*Almonio* a Scot, seruant to *Zerbino*, the rem-

pest with *Isabella*. 96. goes to *Rochell*. 117. findes 194. brings *Od* ibidem. executes him

*Gabrina* booke 2. staffe. 36.

*Alzird*, a galla young man king of *Tremisen* kild by *Orlando*. 93.

*Amalthea* was *Iupiters* nurse. By *Amaltheas* signific. plentie.

*Amazo* ke tales. 153.

*Amazons* a name of warlike women, so named of and *μαζα*, which is ou *μαζα*, without bread, because they feed on.

*Angelica* called also the Indian Queene, daughter of *Galafron*, came from *India* with *Orlando* and is taken from him by the Emperour *Charl*. 1. pag. 2. giuen to the Duke of *auier* to keep, and scap th out of his tent. 16. meets *Renaldo* and runnes from him. ibidem

meets *er* ant and goes w to take *aya*. meets *Renal* o aine. pag. leaues *ald* and *Sacrapant*, and meets with an ermit pag. yes from h and is pursued by his bag. 59. her horse offest with a spirit, caries her into the sea, and after to land. ibidem. her lamentation. ibidem. she is cast into a sleepe the Hermit, but yet he is not able to winne her maidenhead. pag. 60. is caried to the Ile of *Ebuda*. ed naked the shore. ibid. is found by *Rogero* and deli vanisheth from him by helpe of the ring. 82. her beautie. 83. she comes to *Atlants* enchaunted Pallace, and by the ring would disclose her selfe onely to *Sacrapant*. 90. she is leene & followed by *Orlando* and *Ferraw*. 91. vanisheth from them ibid. takes away *Orlandos* helmet. 92. she is sory because *Ferraw* git. ibidem. she findes *Medow* wounded. 147. heales him, woes him, weds him giues her host the bracelet *Orlando* had giuen her. ibid. meets with *Orlando* in his madnetie 18. scapes r him and goes to the Indies and giues her whole st

*Anglant* the place of *Or*  
*Anselm* Earle of *Maganza* fat  
ries his son 179. condemnes *Zerbino*  
*Anselmus* 1 Doct. of law looke tales.  
*Antheus*, a giant of great strength and stature of *Neptune* and the earth, looke in the 23. booke.

*Aquilant* to *Griffino* sonne of *Marques* *Orliuero*: the elder fights with *Orillo*. 117. goes to *Ierusalem*



# THE TABLE.

lem. 11<sup>e</sup>. meets with *Martano*. 139. beats him, brings him and *Origille* to *Damasco*. 140. goestowards France  
2. is in a tempest. ibidem. came to the country of the  
ma20. . . . . scapeth thence. 157. taken prisoner by  
172. goe with *Renaldo* to rescue *Charles*. 252.  
4. *Bradamants* m. iage 402.  
rachne, an excellent woman in needle worke, and  
no, and is fayned to haue compared with *Pallas*  
e, and therefore to be turned to a tpyder.  
jennad a huge Forrest or thicket in France, where  
he fathneth the two mountaines of loue and disdaine. pag.

*Aretusa* daughter of *Nereus* and *Doris*, one of *Dia-*  
companions till . . . . . rauished her, and gat her  
child, whereupon *Liana* turned her into a riuer  
aring her name.

*Argalia* sonne of *Galafron* brother to *Angelica* slaine  
his g<sup>o</sup>st appears to him. pag. 3.

*Gia* wife of *Polinyse*. . . . . being killed, &  
yrrant *Oreon* forbidding on paye of oath to bury  
him, yet she buried him and liued after a widdow.  
307.

a looke tales. 164.

*Ariodant* a Gentleman of *Italie* a louer of *Genevra*  
33 n<sup>e</sup>. . . . . *Lurcanio*, and is parted. 38. . . . . knowne to  
the king Scots 41. is married to *Ge. . . . .* 42. rescues  
*Zerbino* in . . . . . 125. . . . . more spoken of by the  
author.

*Arria* wife of *Peto* of *Padon*, her husband being con-  
demned kild her . . . . . fight, protesting that  
death was pleasant to her so long as she left him aliue  
37.

*Artesia* wife of . . . . . *ausoleus*, she built . . . . . famous  
r for her . . . . . d, that was counted one of  
the wonders of the worl, in hon r of . . . . . sumpt-  
uous tombes . . . . . are called *Mausolea*.

*Astolfo* king of *Lombardie* looketales 225

*Astolfo* called the English Duke, sonny of *Oton* king  
of *England* turned into a mirtle. 43. wages *Rogero* of  
cina. ibid. comes to *Logestilla*. 58 . . . . . from *Logestil-*  
la. 114. receiues a booke of her and a horne. ibidem.  
takes *Calligorant*. 116. ouercomes *Or* . . . . . 8. goes to  
*Damasco*. 140 meets *Marfisa*. 141. . . . . her part. ibid.  
goes toward France. 142. is in a tempest. ibidem. comes  
to the *Amazons* country. 149. with his horne scareth  
the *Amazons*. 157 turns to *England*. 169. dissolues the  
enchanted Pallace. 170. gets the Griffith horse. 171.  
meets *Bradamant*. 177. leaues his horse *Rabican*, his  
armour and the enchanted speare with her. 18. goes  
about the wor . . . . . comes to *Senapo*. 275. driues a-  
way the *Harpias*. 281. heares the wofull tale of *Lidia*.  
ibid. ops vp the mo . . . . . the c . . . . . 84. washes him-  
selfe . . . . . goes vnto *Paradise*. 285. conferres  
eues by his meanes *Orlandos* wit.

*Lethe*. 292. comes from *John* 319  
takes the wind in a bag . . . . . ibid. turnes

or es. ibid goes to *Biserta* 328. . . . . *Du-*

ibid. makes ships of leaues. ib. releas diuers *Chri-*

ibid. . . . . ibidem. restores *Orlando* his wit. 336.

*rta* . . . . . home *Senapo*. 37. leaues *Affri-*  
ca 377. lets goe the . . . . . horse ibid. . . . . to France  
ibid. is at *Bradan* . . . . . mariage. 402.

*Afreca* daughter of *Astrens* a iust . . . . . g, and therefore

she was called *Iustice*. 114.

*Atlant* vncle to *Rogero*, a great Magician makes a  
Pallace by enchantment. 12. fights with *Gradasso* and  
*Rogero*, ouercomes them and carries them prisoners  
into the said Castle. 13. fights with *Bradamant* and is  
ouercome by her. 26. ouerthrowes his inchaunted  
Castle, and lets free *Rogero*, with the rest of his prilo-  
ners. 17. makes another inchaunted Pal ace for *Rogero*.  
90. dyes, and his . . . . . lost parteth *Rogero* and *Marfisa*.  
302.

*Aurora* is feyned by the Poets to haue leued *Tytho-*  
nus, sonne of *Laomedon*, and to . . . . . ue married him: but he  
growing old she fell in loy . . . . . h *Cephalus*.

## B

*Ballifard* *Rogeros* sword that had bene sometime *Or-*  
landos & stolen by *Brunello*, giuen to *Roge* o, was found  
by *Orlando* in the ship 344 restored to *Rogero*. 376.

*Bardino* findes *Brandimart*. 329. perwades him to  
go home. 330. bewayles his death. 370.

*Bayardo* *Renaldos* horse ranne from his m . . . . . r twife.  
pag. 2. and 3 is found by *Sacrapant*. pag. 6. reco . . . . .  
pag. 10. is found by *Gradasso* pag 274 recovered . . . . . in  
by *Renaldo*.

*Bertolage* one of the house of *Maganza* slaine by *Ri-*  
cardet. 207.

*Bireno* taken prisoner by *Cimosco*. 71. deliuered by  
*Orlando*. ibid. married to *Olympia*. ibid. fals in loue with  
the king of *Frislands* daughter, and betrayeth *Olympia*.  
74 is hanged by *Oberto*. 86.

*Biserta* a towne in *Barbary* assaulted by *Orlando*, and  
*Astolfo*. 335. is taken. 336. is sacked. 338.

*Boreas* the Northerne winde, is fayned to haue ra-  
uished *Orithia* and to haue begotten of her *Calas* and  
*Zet*.

*Bradamant* meets with *Sacrapant* and ouerthrowes  
him. pag. 6. betrayed by *Pinnabell*. pag. 14. meeteth *Me-*  
lissa in *Merlins* caue. pag. 18. is shewed all her poster-  
tie. 19. 20. instructed how to take the ring from *Br* . . . . .  
lo. 23. meets *Brunello*. ibidem. sends *Rogero* . . . . . 52.

meets *Melissa* againe . . . . . is instructed . . . . . her femall  
poet . . . . . oo . . . . . of the in . . . . . ment, . . . . .  
no, auoyd it. 101 is freed by *Astolfo*. 170. meets *Pina-*

ell. 173. kills him. 174. meets *Astolfo*, and of him hath  
*Raby* no and goldelaunce. ibid. goes to *Montalbano*.

178 sen . . . . . to *Rogero* by *Hippalca*. 179. she re-  
ceiues *Rogeros* letter. 247 he complaint. ibidem. icalous

of *Marfisa*. 259. another complaint. ibid. and. 261. her  
dispaire. ibidem. she meets wit *Vllanie* the Queene of

*Islands* messenger 262. she winnes a lodging at *Sir*  
*Tristrams* Castle. ibidem. she makes a stout Oration for

*Vllanie*. 265. she ouerthrowes three kings againe. 272.

she meets *Fiordeliege*. 292. ouertl. rowes *Rodomount*. 393.

sends a chalenge to *Rogero*. 294. ouerthrowes diuers  
knights. 295. fights with *Marfisa*. 299. angrie with *Roge-*

ro and makes another complaint. 300. pacified. 301. a-  
gaine fights with *Marfisa*, but is reconciled 303. af-

saults *Marganor*. 312. deliuereth him to *Vllanie* to be  
put to death. 313. goes to the campe. ib. enters into the

battaile. 327. chalet . . . . . gramant. 331. complains to *Mar-*  
*fisa* of *Rogero*. 353. refuseeth *Leon*. 378. her complaint.

ibid. lues . . . . . rres, and obtaynes to haue a Proclama-  
tion for the combat with whomsoeuer would marrie



# THE TABLE.

her. 308. writes to Rogero to comfort him. 379. her complaint of his absence. 386. she fights with Rogero taking him for Leon. 389. another complaint. 391. she is married to Rogero. 402.

*Brandimart* sonne of *Monodant*, king of *Damagyre*, husband to *Fiordeliege*, goes out of *Paris* to seeke his friend *Orlando*. 63. is in *Atlants Pallace*. 90. set free by *Astolfo*. 170. meetes *Fiordeliege*, and goeth with her to *Rodomonts* bridge. 254. is taken prisoner by *Rodomont*. 255. released by *Astolfo*. 328. taken againe by *Fiordeliege*. 329. sees *Orlando* mad and attempts to take him. 330. assaults *Bylerta* and is the first that enters it. 335. is one of the three in the challenge. 338. hath *Frontino* giuen him. 340. bidem. his Oration to *Agramant*. 345. he fights with *Agramant* and discomfitteth him. 348. he is deadly wounded by *Gradasso*. 349. his speech at his death. 352. his stately funeral, at which *Orlando* makes a funerall Oration. 370. is tombe built by his wife. 371.

*Bransard* lieutenant to *Agramant* in *Barbarie*, sends newes of the anger *Africa* was in. 320. redcemeth *Bucifer*. *Dudon*. 327. kills himselfe. 336.

*Brigliadore*, as much to say, Bridle of gold, the name of *Orlando*'s horse. 87. cast off by *Orlando* in his madnesse. 184. found by *Mandricardo*. 200. giuen by *Rogero* (who had slaine *Mandricard*) to *Agramant*. 247. wonne by *Orlando*. 352.

*Brunello* is met by *Bradamant*. described by *Melissa* to her. 21. is *Bradamant*'s guide to *Atlants Castle*. 25. is bound by her vnto a tree, and hath the enchanted ring taken from him. 26. musters his men before *Agramant*, and was vnbound by *Isolir*. 104. is arrested by *Marfisa* and carried away by her. 220. is brought backe by *Marfisa* ten dayes end to *Agramant*, and there deliuered a false villaine to be hanged. 258.

*Brutus* was *Porcia*: this *Brutus* was the stout *Roma* and far for his tyrannie, married the daughter of *Cicero*, shewing of her husband's teares to her and kild her. *Martiall* saith.  
*Coniugis audisset fatum cum Porcia Bruti,*  
*& subtracta sibi quereret arma dolor,*  
*Non dum scitis ait mortem non posse*  
*credideram satis hoc vos decuisse patrem,*  
*Dixit & ardentes avido bibit ore fauillas,*  
*Inunc & ferrum turba molesta nega.*

*Brigars* a people of *Europe* in part of *Mesia* vpon the riuer *Danubium*, where it is called *Ister*, assaulted by *Leon*. 380. put to flight. 381. rescued by *Rogero*. *ibid*. they make *Rogero* king. 382. send *Embassadors* to *France* to *Rogero*. 397.

*Bulligant* gouerns those of *Lyon*. 104. *Ptolomie* calls that *Citie Germanica*.  
*Bucifer* king of *Algar* taken. 327. redcemeth *Dudon*. 328. slaine by *Oliuero*. 336.

*Calai* and *Zet* were sonnes of *Boreas*, and had wings or so fayned, because they sayled in swiftnesse.  
*Calligorant* a Giant taken by *Astolfo*. 116. is carried

about the country by him. 117. comes where *Orillo* was. *ibid* and from thence goeth with *Astolfo* to *Ierusalem*. 118. *Astolfo* giueth him to *Sansonet* gouernour of *Ierusalem*. 119.

*Castor* and *Pollux* sonnes of *Iupiter* and *Leda* of her in likeness of a swanne, others to *Hele* led *Tyndarides*, they deliuered the sea of *Pirate* therefore are counted Gods of the sea. That *Pollux* was immortall, and when *Cerberus* sought *Iupiter* that he might part his mind with him, whereupon they are an example of brotherly loue.

*Catalynes* the chiefe family of *Aine*, of the house of *Arragon*, and are often myne author for the whole state of *Spaine*. 104.

*Ceres* called the Goddess of corn, mother of *Proserpin*.

*Charlemaine* sonne of *Pipin* gateth his ther against the Saracens. 1. takes vp the quarrel about *Angelica*. 2. is ouerhrowne by the *Turks*. *Charles* beset in *Paris* sent *Renaldo* into *England* pag. 1. He expectes the assault and maketh publick prayer vnto God for his owne prayer. *ibid* the *English* succours into *Paris*. 125. heares not the spoyls *Rodomont* did. 126. his Oration. 129. he sets on *Rodomont* *ibid*. driues him away out of *Paris*. 138. is discomfitteth *Agramant* made retire. *ibid*. is rescued by *Renaldo*. 254. *Christ* 318. takes an oath of truce. 2. welcomes *Rogero* into *France*. 376. makes a Prayer at request of *Bradamant*. 385. his vprightnesse in iudging the controuersies. 392. he makes a sumptuous feast at the marriage of *Bradamant*. 398.

*Cim* son of *Freezelan* *Orlando* *Circellan* antresse, daughter of *Su* and a squire called *Artes*, shee is the daughter of *bea*.

*Cleopatra* queene of *Aegypt*, being feasted *Antionie* had her to a banquet, and dissoluing one huge pearle in vinegar dranke it, and it was thought that respect a banquet of inestimable value.

*Clytemnestra* wife of *Agamemnon* plaid the whore in his absence, and at his returne it is said shee had a Musitian plaid chaste tunes to her, and so long shee continued honest, but when he dyed *Aegisthus* corrupted her: her sonne *Orestes* in reuenge of his fathers death slue her.

*Cloridan* a companion of *Medore* goes to seeke the carkasse of *Dardanello*. 143. kills the Christians. *ibid*. kills two Scots. 146. is kild. 146.

*Corebo* one of *Zerbins* men his defence of *Isabella* 97. is lauded. 194.

*Dalin* *Genewras* maid lauded and kill *Renaldo*. 29. couers *Polynessos* treacher and goes to *Nunric*. 42.

*Danae* daughter of *Acrisius*, mother to *Perseus*, shee being lockt vp in a tower by her father accompanied by a serpent, it is said that *Iupiter* in the shape of a serpent lay with her in her lap, with helpe of which shee bore her child.

*Danubius* the greatest riuer of *Europe* farre North begins

*Dardanelles* the strait betwixt *Europe* and *Asia* is called the Hellespont.

*Dardanello* the strait betwixt *Europe* and *Asia* is called the Hellespont.

*Dardanello* the strait betwixt *Europe* and *Asia* is called the Hellespont.

*Dardanello* the strait betwixt *Europe* and *Asia* is called the Hellespont.

*Dardanello* the strait betwixt *Europe* and *Asia* is called the Hellespont.

*Dardanello* the strait betwixt *Europe* and *Asia* is called the Hellespont.

*Dardanello* the strait betwixt *Europe* and *Asia* is called the Hellespont.

*Dardanello* the strait betwixt *Europe* and *Asia* is called the Hellespont.

*Dardanello* the strait betwixt *Europe* and *Asia* is called the Hellespont.

*Dardanello* the strait betwixt *Europe* and *Asia* is called the Hellespont.

*Dardanello* the strait betwixt *Europe* and *Asia* is called the Hellespont.

*Dardanello* the strait betwixt *Europe* and *Asia* is called the Hellespont.

*Dardanello* the strait betwixt *Europe* and *Asia* is called the Hellespont.

*Dardanello* the strait betwixt *Europe* and *Asia* is called the Hellespont.

*Dardanello* the strait betwixt *Europe* and *Asia* is called the Hellespont.

*Dardanello* the strait betwixt *Europe* and *Asia* is called the Hellespont.

*Dardanello* the strait betwixt *Europe* and *Asia* is called the Hellespont.

*Dardanello* the strait betwixt *Europe* and *Asia* is called the Hellespont.

*Dardanello* the strait betwixt *Europe* and *Asia* is called the Hellespont.



# THE TABLE.

begins in Germanie, and in long running it is called I-  
riuers fall into it, and haue of them nauigable.  
dane son t Almont musters afore Agramant.  
38. is killed by Raldo. 142. found  
edore. 143. is buried by him and the helpe of  
147.  
scene of arthage famous for the fabulous

ht by the Angell Michaell. 108. found in  
Abbe mid sent to the Pagans camp ibidem. beaten  
21 sent ag ne. 217.

alice comming from Sp e is taken by Mandri-  
the 06. sends priuily to odom ibidem. agrees well  
Mandricard. 107. p. Zerbino and Mandricard.  
parts Rodomont and Mandricard. Lib. 24. staffe 2.  
away by a spirit in her horse. 213. reiects Rodo-  
mont. 221. her speech to distwade  
ght 242. her lightnes. 246.

looke tales of Marganor. 3  
ndon released by olfos meand. and made Ad-  
irall 328. discomfited Agramant by 332. fights  
Roger on land 332. giueth him seven kings. 342.  
ies into Paris 376. is at Bradamants mariage. 402.  
Dur an rlandos sword taken by Mandri. 24.  
booke. 4 c. wonne for Gradasso. 246. by Gra-  
dasso in battaile with Orland. 246. then to Rogero by  
37

## E

Ebuda, I finde no But Ebude belles in our  
Brittish sea.

icelladus the grea t of all the Giants that rebelled  
Iupiter, for this cause they saie that he was laid  
ount Aetna, a at the cause of the quaks  
there, is with he curre's change sides.

Erethoni Vulcan had feede like a serpent  
and deuised a coach to hide them. 307.

Estad wife of Capaneus kild with lightning t the  
assaul t Thebes, his bodie being burned as the man-  
n of buriall s in those dayes, his wife leapt into the  
e with it and ded. 07.

## F

Ferraw a Spanish knight fights with Renaldo for An-  
gelica. pag. 2. lost his helmet in the water. ibidem. takes  
Renaldo vp behind him. 3. meets with the ghost of Ar-  
galia. ibidem. vowes to winne Orlandos helmet. ibid. is  
in Atlants Pallace. 90. freed by Angelica. 91. fights with  
Orlando. 92. pursues Angelica and sees her. ibidem. gets  
Orlandos helm 1. musters his band of the king of  
Spaines guard. 104. 1. lores the battaile lost. 138. his O-  
ratio hid ouerthrowne Bradamant. 295.

Fiordeligi Brandimart goeth to seeke him. 63  
Randos madnesse Lib. 24. staffe. 46. sees the  
weene Mandricard and Zerbino, goeth to-  
ffe 59. comes to Rodomonts bridge.

uuo of Orlandos madnesse. 253. inds Bran-  
mart. 254. sees him ouerthrowne and taken. ib. meets  
dam. 1. shows her Rodomonts bridge. 293. deli-  
gence from Bradamant. 294. meetes

Bardano and go with him to Affrica. 3. finds Bran-  
dimart. ibid. sees Orlando and describes 1. ibidem. she  
makes a blacke Caparison for Brandimart. 344. her  
dreame and speech. 370. her death. 371.

Fiametta, looke tales.

Fiordebspina, looke tales.

Frontino the name of Rogeros horse is kept by Bra-  
damant. 28. sent by her to Rogero. 178. is taken by Rodo-  
mont. 179. recouered by Bradamant. 293. sent againe to  
Rogero. 294. found by Orlando in a ship. 344. restored to  
Rogero. 375. his praise. 389.

Fusberta Renaldos sword. 10.

## G

Gabrina, looke tales e flies from Orlando. 99. meets  
Marfisa. 158. is committed to Zerbino's protection. 1  
robs Pinnabels corse. 179. betrays and accuses erbi.  
180. flies and is misused by Mandricard. 182. is par-  
ned of life by Zerbino. 194. committed to Odrickes pro-  
tection and by him hanged. Lib. 24. staffe 38.

Ganimed is fayned by the Poets to be I usters cup-  
bearer, and to haue bene caryed vp by an eagle, it is  
taken generally in the worst part for Bardassas.

Genewra, looke tales.

Gibbellins, looke Gueffs.

Gradasso king of Serycane taken by Atlant into  
enchanted Castle. 13. is deliuered by Bradamant. 27. in  
Atlants Pal ace. 0. freed by Astolfo. 170. come to  
Agamant 216. helps to arme Mandricard. 218. falls out  
with him. ibid. receiues Durindane of Rogero. 246. fights  
with Renaldo. 255. fights againe. 273. parted and finds  
Bayardo. 274. slips at Arlie. 274. meets Agramant in  
great distresse. 337. is one of the chalenge three to three  
and kils Brandimart. 349. is killed by Orlando. 352.

Grandonio, the gouernour of the Algarbies, which  
dwell in promontorie cald Celticum Promontorium. 104.

Griffin fights with Orillo. 117. is in loue with Origilla.  
118. goeth with Astolfo to the holy land. ibid. heares of  
Origilla. 119. he finds her. 121. goeth to Damasco. 119.  
heares his hostes tale. 130. winnes the prize there. 133.  
departs thence. ibid. is betrayed by Origill and Martano.  
ibidem. is carted. 134. kils and beats the people of Da-  
masco. 137. is reconciled to Norandine. 120. meet his  
brother Aquilant. 140. receiues a costly our of the  
king m. is ouert wne by Astolf. 141. frended by  
him. ne go with him and others towards France. ib.

on the sea with a tempest. 142. comes to the shore  
of the Amazons & heares their law 149. scapeth thence  
158. is ed and taken by Pinnabello to oblerue his  
law. 172. fig it ence thereof. 173. is ouerthrowne  
by Rogero. 174. goeth toward France. ibid. meets with  
Renaldo and is entertained into his band. 252. is at Bra-  
damants mariage. 402.

Griffith horte brought vp by Atlant, and lost by him  
26. flies away with Roge. 27. carries him to Alcinas Ile  
43. carries Melissa and Astolfo from Alcinas Ile. 58. brings  
them to Logestilla. 77. is brought by Melissa to Rogeros  
riding. ibidem. Rogero is carried by him ou the world  
ibidem. breaks his bridle and flies to A int. 83. is got-  
ten by Astolfo. 171. flies with Astolfo ouer the world. 274  
carries him vp to Paradise. 285. brings him backe againe.  
319. is let loose by Astolfo. 376.

Gueffs and Gibbellins two notable factions rising first  
of two brothers in and spreading very farre.

Guidon Sau e in the Amazons land fights with  
Marfisa. 1. rtain her and her company. 153. tels  
the tale of the Amazons. 154. scapeth thence hauing



made prouision. 157. ouerthrowes *Richardetto*, *Alardo* and *Guicchiardo*. 251. fights with *Renaldo* till Sunne set. *ibid.* makes himselfe knowne vnto *Renaldo*. 252. goeth with him to ayde *Charles*. *ibidem.* is at *Bradamants* marriage. 402.

## H

*Hecuba* wife of *Priamus* fell mad for sorrow of the death of her son *Polidorus*. *ibid.* is fayned to haue bene turned to a dogge.

*Helena* daughter of *Leda*, she that was taken by *Paris*.

*Hercules* sonne of *Jupiter* and *Alcmene*, his twelue labours be knowne, howbeit *Stephen* in his *Hiostrical Dictionary* sets downe 34. labours.

*Hillarion* a passing deuout Hermit.

*Hippolyte* *Bradamants* maid caries *Frontino* towards *Rogero*. 175. meets *Rodomont* and is robd *ibidem.* meets *Rogero* at *Merlins* caue. 209. retunes to *Bradamant*. 211. deli- *gates* letter, and comforts her. 246.

*Her* Prince of Greeke Poets.

## I

*Iason* sonne of *Æson* and *Alcmene* comming to *Lemnos* was entertained by *Hippispile*, and after won the Golden Fleece.

*Indus* or *Inde* a riuer of the East, a very huge riuer of which India taketh name.

*Iroldo* a Christen Captaine.

*Isabella* found by *Orlando* in a caue. 94. recites to him the cause of her being there. 96. is deliuered by *Orlando*. 98. prayes him to be her Protector. 99. finds *Zerbino*. 180. departs with *Zerbino* fro *Orlando*. 182. helps to gather *Orlandos* arme. *Lib.* 24. st. 43. entreateth *Doralice* to part the fray. *ibid.* staffe. 57. laments *Zerbinos* death and becomes a Christen. *ibidem.* staffe 73. meets *Rodomont*. 231. is woqed by him. 235. saues her chastity with Tasse of her life. 236. her praise. *ibid.* her tombe. *ibid.*

## L

*Lad* *co* *lexanders* o *si* rs, so swi *th* flight of foete that leare e print of his o *Teen* *the* sand. 270.

*Laodemia* wife to *Protesilaus* loued him so dearly, that hearing of his death, she pyned away with griefe. 307.

*Leon* sonne of *Constantine* repulic *ogero*. 31. deli- uers *Rogero* not knowing him from prison. 38. goeth into France to wooc *Bradamant*, and wthnes her by *Rogeros* meanes calling himselfe the knight of the Vni- corne. 389. disturbed and chalenged by *Marfisa*. 391. misseeth *Rogero*. 392. finds him and recomferts him 396. brings him to *Charles* 398. his speech. *ibidem.* frees the *Bulgars* from further warre by promise. *ibid.* is at *Rogeros* marriage. 402.

*Lidialoo* tales. 281.

*Logesti* a defendeth *Rogero* against *Alcina*. 76. the description of her ho *by* which is nient vertue. 77. en- tertaines *Astolfo*, and c *liuers* him a booke and a horne and lets him depart. 114.

*Lucina* looke tales. 129.

*Lurcanio* brothe to *Ariodant* an *Italian* Gentleman acculeth *Genewra*. 36. fights wi *is* . 38. is hurt by *Dardanello*. 138.

## M

*Malagige* rescued by *Rogero* and oth- *rs.* 26 *ex* 7 pounds the pictures at *Merlins* vell. 208. *carie* away *Doralice*. 213. go *h* with *Renaldo* *Charles*. 247. coniuereh to finde t. *aule* of *Ken* case. 353. is at the wedding 402.

*Mandricard* sonne of *Agricane* king wonne *Hectors* armes. 105. he seekes *Orlando*. *ibid.* *Doralice*, carries her away & wooc her. 106. yes wi *her*. 107. fights with *Orlando*. 181. parted. 182. meets *brina*. *ibidem.* fights wi *Zerbino* and hurts him. 1 staffe 49. winnes *Dr* *adane*. *ibid.* fights with *Rod* *ibid.* staffe 80. is parted st *3*. ouerthrowes *Kuba* to and his brothers. 210. fights with *Marfisa*. *ibid.* m. quarrels with *Rogero*. 211. reproued by *Rodomont*. *ibid.* fights with *Rogero*. 212. fights with *Marfisa*. *ibid.* m. *ar* ted. 213. reic *ramant* 216. quarels wit *Rogero* and *fisa*. 217. with *Gradasso*. 208. is ch. *Doralice*. 221. *all*swaded from fight by *Doralice*. fight with *ero*. 244. is kild 246.

*Manilard* ouerthrowne by *Orlando*. 93.

*Marfilio* king of Spaine musters his men o a 104. *h* *ration* to *Agramant* 320. he fl *ss* in *Spaine*. 327.

*Marfisa* sist *et* *et* *A* *go* and goeth to *Damasco*. 140. takes away the prize. *ibid.* is re and honored. 141. goeth with *Astolfo* and o *ers* toward France, and are tosl *est*. 142. arriues with them at the *Amazons* Citie. 149. ghts with *Guidon*. 152. scapeth hence. 157. part from her companions in *M* *is* *lia*. 1 *meets* *Gabrina* and carries her behind h ouert *ro* yes *Pinnabell* for l *o* at her. *Zerbi* o & ommitts *Gabrina* to his c *159* m *ts* *Rogero*. 20. aids him to rescue *er* *and* *Vuian*. 207. c *nes* st *Merlins* caue. 208. fights with *Mandricard*. 210. aids *Aramant*. 215. craues battaile with *n* *card*. 217. a *esteth* *Brunello*. 220. brings him b *ke* to *Agramant*. 25 *ith* *Bradamant* *is* ouerth *n* 299 fights againe. 300. fights with *or* *ro*. 302. parte by *Atlan* *ibidem.* frends wi *a* *Bra* *amant*. 303. goeth with *Bra* *ant* and *Rogero*. 307. aids *Vilanie* and her companions. 30 *cares* the tale of *Marganor*. 309. leads *Marganor* captiue. 312. calles a Parliament and makes a law for women. 313. goeth with *Bradamant* to *Charles*. 317. meets *Charles* and makes an Oration. 318. she is Christned. 319. fights with *Agramant*. 327. chalet him. 331. disturbeth *Dor* *Le* from marrying with *Bradamant*. 397. makes a ch *to* *Leon* on *Rogeros* behalfe. 392. was about to *Rogero* not know- ing him. 398. is wedd *2*.

*Marganor* looke ta *cs*. 309. his *he* *illed*. 313.

*Mart* *a* whooremaster keeps *villa*. 1 *a* *am* himselfe. 33. betrayes *issin*. *ibid.* *i* *no* again *im*. 134. beaten by *Aquilan*. 1 *ed* openly. 140.

*Mausoleo* e tombe of a king so na *feuen* wonds.

*Medea* uell woman, a notable *itch*, she *ied* her owne brot *er*, nd her owne sonnes. she sent *Cressa* a litle boxe for *token*, in which was clofed such arti- ficiall fire, that as soone as it was opened it burned her and



# THE TABLE.

and all the Pallace she was in.

*Medore* page of *Dardanell* goeth to seeke his masters  
sto be it. 143. kills many Christians asleepe.

144. hurt by a Scot against *Zerbino* will 147. found by  
and heale oed, and married by *Angelica*.  
Epigra c. 148. escapes *Orlando* hardly. 239.  
ast India. 24.

*Jaime* with *Bradamant* a *Rogeros* posteritie 19.  
20. instructeth her how to take the ring from *Brunello*.  
21. goeth deliuer *Rogero*. 52 speech to *Rogero*. 53  
60. forts *radamar* 2. in *odomonts* likenes breaks  
the uce. 326. meeteth *Leon* iowes him *Rogero*.  
3. ringeth the rich *P* lion y *Nigromancie*. 399.  
*radamants* mariage 402.

*Temphis* the chiefe itie of *Egypt* neare to which  
the rami s were made.  
ounta n. 208. his hall in *Sir Tristrams* lodge  
and stories thereof. 258. the English *Prophet*, of him  
shall reade in the es of the this booke. pag 22.  
*Morgana* a passing tech much spelt of in *Boyar*-  
book of *Orlando Inaportato*.

## N

*Nere* ponne of *Caropeus* and *Aglaia* a paining beau-  
tifull young witnes *Homer* ouer thote that came  
ainst *Troy*. 29.

*Nestor* is said to haue liued three ages, which some  
count. 90. yeares, some.

*Nilus* the famous river of *Egypt* so called of king *Ni*-  
or as some will haue it of the *Greeke* *neay* *neay*, that  
slime, for with the slime thereof it enricheth all  
some doubt whether it haue any heau a all but  
ruanes ou of the g eat, it fals deuided into the sea  
in seuen bran herefore *Quid* calls it in the 1. *Met*.  
*Se emfluuus*.

*Nera* lino, looe in the tales, makes a great f 129.  
recei th *Griffin* into fauour 139.

## O

*Oderick* tb *erbino* for *Isabella*. 97. would haue  
rauisht her. 98. wo eth *Corebo*. ibid. n. is brought by  
*Almonio* to *Zerbino* lib. 24. staffe. 70. is pardoned by him  
ib. staffe 35. breaketh promise and is hanged. ib. staff. 38.

*Oberto* king of *Ireland* comes to *Ebuda* and meetes  
*Orlando* there. 85. fals in loue with *Olimpia*. 86. marries  
her ibidem.

*Olimpia* looke tales: she is deliuered by *Orlando* and  
married to *Biren* 1. betrayed by him and left on the  
shore. 75. is found *Orlando* at the Ile of *Ebuda*: and  
her t utie described sh deliuered. 85. *Oberto* fals in  
loue with her marries er ibidem.

*Oro* sent prisoner to *Biserta*, set free by *Astolfo*.  
328 assaults 335. slue *Bucifar*. 336. is one of the  
three in the chal nge. 33. hat *Rogeros* arri our giuen  
him. 344. his preyle a lyme. nd with th word (till  
he comn eth) ibid. he is hurt by his horse fall. 348. is  
healed by the Hermit. 372. comes into *Fr* nce with *Or*-  
land. d *Rogero*. 376. is at *Bradamants* n mariage. 402.

*O*ie a strumpet loued by *Griffin*. 112. is found with  
*Martano*, executeth it. 122.

*Orillo* a Nigr ancer looke tales. 116.

*Orlando* comes from the East Indies with *Angelica*

and hath her taken from him. pag. 1. troubled in his  
sleepe by a dreame. 62. he leaues *Paris*. 63. comes vpon  
the *Pagans* campe. 65. passeth into *Britanie* and is put  
backe to *Antwerpe*. 66. heares the state of *Olimpia*. ibid.  
challengeth *Cimosco*. 69. kills him. 70. flings the harque-  
bush into the sea. 71. comes to *Ebuda*. 84. kills an *Orke*  
ibid. sets free *Olimpia* againe. 85. backe to *Brita*-  
nie. 87. illuded with the likenesse of *Angelica*. 89. pur-  
sues *Angelica* 91. fight *Ferraw*. 92. lost his helmet  
ibid. toyld two bands *Pagan*. 93. findes *Isabella*. 94.  
deliuers her. 98. hang the outlawes. ibid. deliuers *Zer*-  
*bino*. 180. fights with *Mandricar*. 181. is parte 182.  
hears newes of *Angelica*. 18 fais *Starke* mad. 15.  
mad parts of his. 193. wr. stles with *Rodomont*.  
meetes *Angelica* and almost catcheth her. 239. comes  
to *Biserta*. 242. troubles *Astolfos* armie in his madnes.  
329. is bound & made wife by *Astolfo*. 330. assaults *Biser*  
*ta*. 334. rescues *Brandimart* at *Biserta*. 336. lackes the  
towne. 338 accepts *Agramants* challenge. ibid. findes  
*Ballifard* in a voyde ship. 344 fights the three  
to three. 348. kills *Gradasso* and *Agramant*. 35 etes  
*Renaldo*. 359. comes to *Sicilie*. 370. he makes *Bra* *li*-  
*marts* funerall. 371. his Oration. ibid. comes to the *Her*-  
*mit* and meetes *Rogero* there. 372. goeth backe in  
*France* with him. 376. is at *Bradamants* mariage. 402.  
*Orke* a monstrous fish.

## P

*Paris* sonne to *Priamus* louer of *Helena*.

*Paris* fiered by *Agramant*, and quenced by rayne  
from heauen. 61. assaulted by *Agramant*. 110. entred  
by *Rodomont* and set on fire. 111.

*Paule* the first Hermit or Anchorit, it is said of him  
that a crow brought him euerie day halfe a loafe of  
bread, and that *Anthonie* a deuout man going to see  
him, the crow brought him that day a whole loafe.

*Penelope* wife of *Vlysses* famous for her chastitie in  
the long absence of her husband: hauing many impor-  
tunate suitors in her husbands absence she prayd them  
to r pite her till she had ended a wo, which she had  
Begt to weaue, and that being granted, looke what  
she oue she vndid at night.

*Pegasus* a horse that had wings, this horse is sayd to  
be bred of the blood of *Medusa*: and that *Bellerophon*  
thinki o ride him vp to heauen, fell from him, but  
the horte he urse ill and was made a starre.

*Phæbus* or *Apollo* taken r Sunne.

*Pinnal* son of *Anselmus* of *Maganza* meets with  
*Bradamant*. 12. lets *Bradamant* fall into *Merlins* pit 14.  
steales her horse. 17. ouerthrowne by *Marfisa*. 158.  
takes *Griffin*, *Aquilant*, *Euidon Sauage*, & *Sanfonet* pri-  
soners. 172. makes them sweare to his law. ibid. is met  
and killed by *Bradamant*. 173.

*Polinesso* Duke of *Albany* betrayeth *Genevra* by *Da*-  
*lindas* meanes. 3. is killed by *Renaldo*. 38

*Polidorus* son of *Priamus* killed by *Potti* *nestor* for  
couetounes of the gold that *Priamus* lent with him.

*Pollux* looke *Castor*.

*Prasildo* a Christen Captaine.

*Progne* killed the sonne *Itis*, and is fained to haue bin  
turned into a sw w.

*Prote* ou d a God of the sea called *Vertumnus*  
because he is said to turne himselte into all shapes.



# THE TABLE.

*Proteus* king of Egypt spoken of in the .46. booke.

*Puliano* a king musters afore *Agramant*. 105. slaine by *Renaldo*. 154.

*Pyramides* certaine towers of incredible height built by the Princes of Egypt, of this looke in the seven wonders of the world.

## R

*Rabican* *Astolfo's* horse. 54.

*Renaldo* fell out with *Orlando* for *Angelica*. 2. lost his horse, & in seeking of him found *Angelica*. ibid. fought with *Ferraw*. ibid. rides behind him. 3. parts from him and finds his horse. ibid. he finds *Angelica* againe. fights with *Sacrapant*. 10. is parted by the illusion of *Hermit*. ibidem. he takes his horse againe. ibidem. he goeth to Paris. 11. is sent in Embassage. ibid. arriues in Scotland. 28. goeth toward the Court. ibidem. is intertained by an abbott and his Monks. ibidem. heares of *Genevras* danger. ibid. is guided to the Court. 29. meetes with *Dalila*. ibid. heares the tale of *Genevra*. 32. 33. 34. 35. fights with *Polineffo* and kills him. 38. sues for aid to the Scottish king. 58. goeth by sea to England and is feasted there. 59. brought by Silence to Paris. 123. his Oration. ibidem. he encourageth the Scots. 125. kills *Dardanell*. 142. troubled with ielousie of *Orlando*. 216. comes to Mountalbano. 247. goeth to succour *Charles*. ibid. meetes *Guidon*. 251. fights againe with *Gradaffo*. 257. fights againe. 273. looseeth *Bayardo*. 274. a champion for *Charles*. 222. fights with *Rogero*. 223. is troubled with his old loue. 353. heares of *Malagige* where *Angelica* is. 354. asketh leaue of *Charles* to go to India. ibid. assayed by a monster and deliuered by a knight. 355. comes to the knight of Mantua. 356. refuseth to tast the cup to trye cuckoldes. 360. goeth by water to Rauenna. 369. meetes *Orlando* at Lyppaduse. ibid. meetes *Rogero* at the Hermits. 372. promisseth him *Bradamant*. 376. comes with him into France. 377. fals out with his father about *Rogero*. ibidem. and. 391. is at *Bradamant's* mariage. 402.

*Riderdet* gat *Isordespina* with child and inould be dyed, & is let see by *Rogero*. 200. comes to *Aldig's* house. 202. g. seue *Malagige* and *Finian*. 203. meetes *Marfisa*. 204. *Finian* and *Malagige*. 207. dines at *Merlins* caue. 20 ouerthrowne by *Rodomont*. 210. by *Guidon*. 211. is at *Bradamant's* mariage. 402.

*Risee* or *Riphe* moines in Scythia.

*Rodemont* king of Algier a man of passing strength musters afore *Agramant*. 105. enters Paris. 110. doth much spoile. 122. leaues Paris. 138. meetes *Discord*, *Pride* and ielousie with *Doralices* messenger. ibid. takes *Frontino* from *Hippalca*. 179. fights with *Mandricard*. Lib. 24. staffe 80. parted, staffe 93. fights with *Rogero*. 212. parted. 213. rescues *Agramant*. 217. fals at variance with *Mandricard* & with *Sacrapant*. 219. refused by *Doralice* goeth a discontent. 221. his inuectiue against women. 222. his hosts entertainment. 233. meetes *Isabella*. 231. kills the Priest. 232. is drunke and cuts off *Isabella's* head. 235. makes a mbe, a vow and a brigde. 236. is cast by *Orlando* into the water. 227. ouercomes *Brandimart*. 254. is ouerthrowne by *Bradamant*. 293. enters into a cell for shame of his coyle. 294. challenges *Rogero* *Bradamant's* mariage.

401. is killed by *Rogero*. 404.

*Rogero* taken by *Atlant*. 13. deliuered by *Bradamant*. 27. carried away by the Griffith horse. ibid. comes to *Alcinas* Ile. 41. is warned by *Astolfo*. 42. its wi monsters. 46. is rescued by two ladies. ibid. throwes *Eriffila*. 49. is intertain by *Alcina*. 50. ned by *Melissa*. 53. discouers *Alcina's* lusions. ceiuces *Alcina* and flies. 57. is impeachr 58. tempted in his by three Ladies. 59. by sea. ibid. deliuered by *Logestilla*. ibid. parted from *gestilla* on the winge. 60. horse. 77. sees the musters in England. 78. goes to Ireland. 79. *Angelica* tied rocke. ibidem. ouer Orke y helpe his shield. 80. lends *Angelica's* g. ibid. leeseeth 83. leeseeth his horse. 84. is carried by a traine ther enchanted Pallace of *Atlant*. 90. freed on chaned Pallace. 170. goes with *Bradamant*. 1 quisheth *imabells* foure knights by his throwes a way the shield. 174. sets free *Richard* st. 10. comes to *Idiger*. 202. v. tes to *Bradamant*. meetes *Marfisa*. 204. rescues *Malagige* and *Finian*. 20 dines in *Merlins* caue. 208. goes with *Hippalca*. 2 finds *Rodomont*. 211. fights with him and *Mandricard*. 212. 1. rted. 213. rescues *Agramant*. 217. offers to *Rogero* and *Mandricard*. 218. kills *Mandricard*. 245 is sore hurt by him. ibid. is chalenged by *Bradamant*. 294. parts *Marfisa* and her. 300. fight with *Marfisa* at is parted. 302. tels *Marfisa* of his race. 303. milet mariage to *Bradamant*. 304. assaults *Marganor*. 312 goes backe to the campe. 313. champion for *Agramant*. 322. fights with *Renaldo*. 323. is parted 326. fight with *Dudon*. 339. takes shipping. 43. suffers shipw. 344. comes to an Hermit. 346. christned. ibid. meetes *Orlando* & *Renaldo*. 372. hath of *Bradamant*. 376 comes into France with them. 377. d by *Bradamant's* parents, his complaint 37. to kill *Leon*, and c. himselfe knight of the Vi. 380. is king of the Bulgars. 381. is prisoner to *Theodor* deliuered by *Leon*. 387. fights for him with *Bradamant* and wins her. 389. his complaint, and 390. selfe to death 390. is rescued by 391. 6. marries *Bradamant* killeth *Rodomont*. 404.

## S

*Sacrapant* makes great lamentation for *Angelica*, his complaint begins. 4. st. 41. *Angelica* discloseth herselfe to him. ibid. he encounters with *Bradamant*. 5. is ouerthrowne. 6. his horse being slaine takes *Bayardo*. ibid. fights with *Renaldo*. 10. is parted by illusion. ibid. is deliuered from the enchanted Pallace. 90. freed by *Angelica*. 91. leeseeth her, and seekes her. 101. is out by *Rodomont*. 22. oues him. 221. taken, and goes home. 29

*Sampson* a man of great strength. 100. n of iii Scriptur is vertue w sin his houre, sine 1000 men with the i bone of a. 106.

*Sanfone* ouernor of Ierusalem, intertain *Astolfo*. 119. goes to Amasco. 140. wins the prize. 141. comes to the Amazons land. 149. scapeth thence. 150. is rescued by *Astolfo*. 328. h lpes to take *Orlando*. 330. aults *Bilert*. 335. remaine in Affrica. ibid

*Scipio* a famous Capraine of the Romans.

*Senapo* blind, looke tales. 275. healed of his eyes. 390. lends



# THE TABLE.

lends *Astolfo* men and money. *ibid.* his men assault *Bilestia*. 335.

*Sobrius* Prince and graue counsellor to *Agramant*.  
*rsbe* *cnim*. 104. his good counsellor to *Agramant*.  
 221. his answer to *Marsilio*, a good Oration. 321. flies  
*gramant* by sea. 334. misliketh of the breach of  
*truc* 27. with *Agramant* from killing himselfe,  
 him. 337. is one of the challenge 3. to 3.  
 d by *Orlando*. 347. ghs *Oliuers* horse. 348  
 372. comes to *Francis* 577. is at the marriage  
 nt. 402.  
*ilano* fa *Dorali*, king of *Granada* a rich  
 pri of *S* *ie*, being wat with the riuer of *Be-*  
*thi*. 534.

## T

*Tagus* a riuer in *Lusitania* or *Portugall*, it hath  
 gold n and in some places : by this riuer it is that  
*Pün* writes that *Mares* conceite with the wind, and  
 bring forth colts exce ding swift, but they liue but  
 three yeares.

*Tiberius*. 363 there were many of that name, e-ne suc-  
 ceeded *Augustus*, and built wond'rful sumptuous buil-  
 dings in the Ile of *Capri*, and gaue himselfe to drinke  
 and filth of life, in so much that being named *Ti-*  
*berius* they nicknamed him *Biberus*. *Mero*.

*Tiberius*. 364. was a good Emperor and a Christian,  
 it written of him, that hauing spent much money to  
 good and Christian vles. and beginning to want, he saw  
 a crosse of stone lyin; on the ground, and for reuerence  
 that should not be troden on, caused it to be digged  
 up, and vnder that a other, and so a third, till at the  
 last he found an infinite treasure that had bene there  
 hidden, which he tooke as a giue sent by God and  
 employed it to good and princely works.

*Tithonus* to *Aurora*, and had by her a gift

*Agramant* aine by *Pypin* king of  
 oned in the fift age.

*Affrica*, so called because three sun-  
 dry people do inhabit of it, the *Tiri-*  
*ans*, *Sidonians*, and *Arabians*.

*Tristrams* lodge, looke *Tales* 103.

*Turpin* Archbishop of *France* alledged often by  
 mine Author, an ancient Historiographer.

## V

*Virgil* called the Prince of the Latine Poets.

*Vlysses* son of *Laertes* the famous Grecian captaine,  
 a notable traueuer *Qui mores hominum multorum vidit*

& *vrbes*, a man of great policie, passing eloquent: the  
 notable exploits that are attributed to him would be  
 too long to set downe, but in his Oration in *Ouids* *Me-*  
*tamorphosis* they be repeated by him, *Si mea cū vestris*  
*valuisse vota Pelasgi &c.*

*Vllany* sent by the queene of *Island* with the golden  
 shield. 262. defended by *Brady* *rcnr.* 2 is ound by  
*Bradament* halte stripped, and goes to *Marrano*. town  
 with her. 308. puts *Mar* or to death. 313.

*Vulcan*. 10. is faine by the *P* to keepe a in  
 the hollownes of the unt *Ætna*, and there to worke  
 thunderbolts for *Iupiter*.

## Z

*Zenocrates* a *Stoike*, a man of no great wit, but of  
 wonderfull continencie, for when some youths of  
*Athens* had couenanted with a harlot to tempt him to  
 her companie, and the said *Zenocrates* hauing supped  
 with them and drunke well that night, with a pro-  
 uoking to venerie, yet the harlot was not able to tempt  
 him, notwithstanding that she was her crafts master, or  
 at least mistres, wherefore they demaunded their mo-  
 ney againe, but she auoyded them thus, that her bar-  
 gaine was to tempt a man and not an image.

*Zerbin* Prince of *Scotland* musters his men by the  
*Theams*. 78. his armes the *Lyon*. *ibid.* his comely shape.  
*ibid.* loues *Isabella*. 97. sends *Odericke* for her. *ibid.* go-  
 uerns the vaward of *Renaldos* battell. 124. fights vali-  
 antly. *ibid.* kils two Spaniards. 125. in perill to be slaine  
 is rescued by *Ariodant*. 125. aiter by *Renaldo*. *ibidem*.  
 chaseth his enemies all night. 144. spares *Medoro*, and  
 pursueth him that did hurt him. 146. 147. takes old *Ga-*  
*brina* into protection. 159. heares newes of *Isabella* by  
*Gabrina*. 160. fights with *Hermonide* for her. 162. is be-  
 trayed by her. 180. deliuered by *Orlando*. *ibidem*. findes  
*Isabella*. 181. pardoneth *Odericke* with singular clemen-  
 cie. 194. commits *Gabrina* to his keeping. *ib.* 24. st. 35  
 gathers *Orlandos* armour. *lib.* *eodem*. st. 47. fights with  
*Laſcaris* in defence of *Durindane*. *eodem*. st. 51. dead-  
 ly hurt. st. 56. his last lamentation. 67. diēs. 67. his stat-  
 ly  
 tombe made by *Rodomont* where *Isabella* and he are  
 lay 36.

*Zenxes* of him I haue spoken in the Notes of the 33.  
 Bo onely I will adde this that I spake not of there;  
 how he pāu. a bunch of grapes, and  
 the birds pecking at the gree nd fault with his  
 owne worde, saying the boy was not well dra for  
 if he had, the birds would haue bene affraid to haue  
 come so neere.

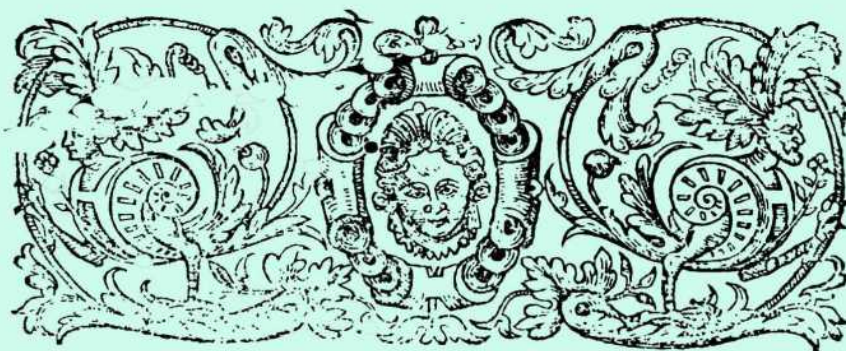


# THE PRINCIPAL TALES IN ORLANDO FVRIOSO THAT MAY BE READ BY THEMSELVES.

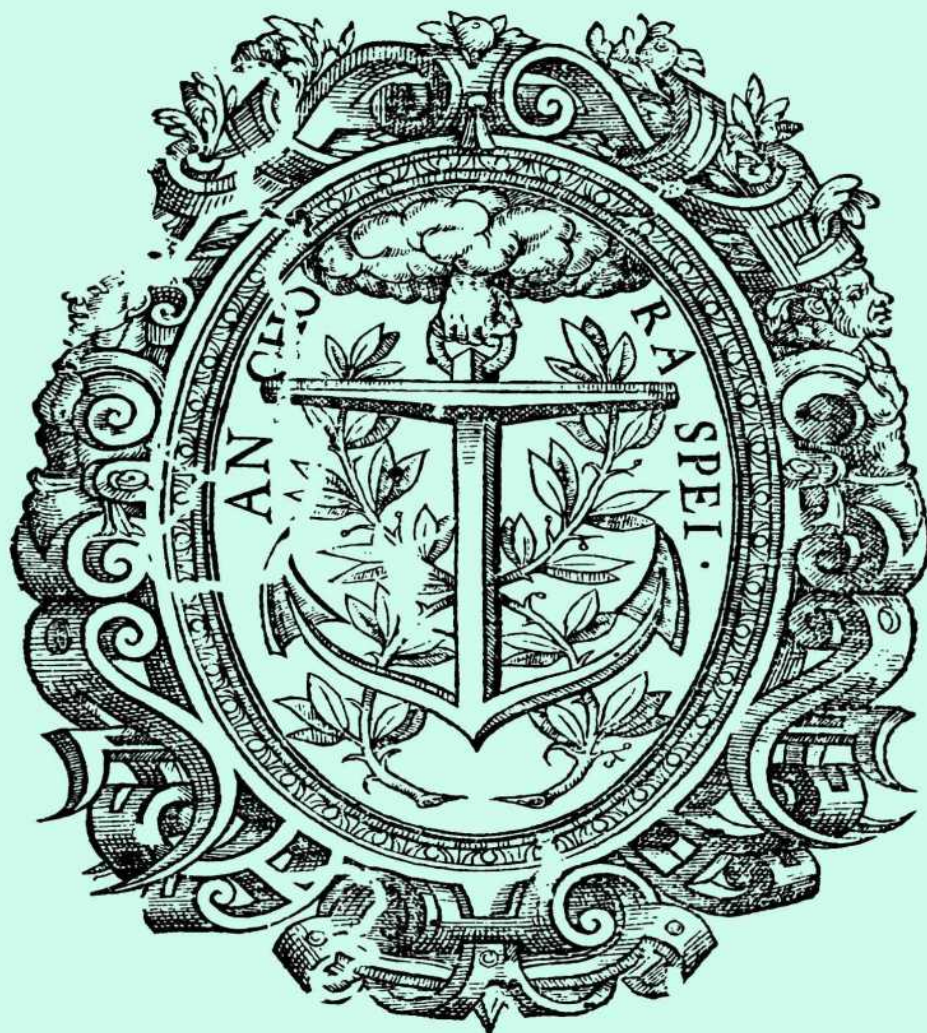
- 1 *Tale of Genewra begins pag. 28. staffe 42.*
- 2 *Tale of Altolfos turning to a tree. pag. 43. staffe 26.*
- 3 *Tale of Roveros comming to Alcina. pag. 45. staffe. 54.*
- 4 *Tale of Pr te . d the Orke. pag. 60. staffe. 46.*
- 5 *T of Olimpia. pag. 66 staffe. 16.*
- 6 *Isabella ag. staffe 67.*
- 7 *Tale of sending discord and Silence. pag. 107. staffe 59.*
- 8 *f Callioorant. pag. 115. staffe 30.*
- 9 *ale of Oril o. g. 116. staffe 49.*
- 10 *ale of Origille. pag. 121. st.*
- 11 *Tale of Lucina and Norandino. pag. 129. staffe 20.*
- 12 *Tale the Amazons. pag. 153. staffe. 5.*
- 13 *Tale of Gabrina. pag. 162. st.*
- 14 *Tale of Orlandos madnes. pag. 183. staffe. 78.*
- 15 *ale of Fiorde spina. pag. 199. st.*
- 16 *Tale of mine Host with Rodomonts inuectiue against women. pag. 222 staffe 93.*
- 17 *Tale of Trilstrams lodge. pag. 263. staffe 77.*
- 18 *Tale of Senapo. pag. 275. staffe 93.*
- 19 *Tale of Lidia. pag. 281. staffe 6.*
- 20 *Tale of Astolfo going to Paradice and finding Orlandos wit. pag. 284. staffe 49.*
- 21 *Tale of Marganor. pag. 308. staffe 26.*
- 22 *Tale of the Mantuan knight. pag. 356. staffe 66.*
- 23 *Tale of Adonio called the Stears mans tale. pag. 364. staffe 66.*
- 24 *Tale of Leons courtesie to Rogero. pag. 385. staffe. 11.*

*For other things, as Orations, Letters, complaints, and the like, you shall finde them in the Table in the name of those whom they do most concerne.*

F I N I S.







Printed at London by

Richard Field, for John Norton  
and Simon Waterson.

1607.